Fabyans cronycle

newly prynted/wyth the cronycle, actes, and dedes done in the tyme of the regne of the moste excellent prynce kynge Henry the vii. father vnto our most drad soue-rayne lord kynge Henry the .viii.

To whom be all honour, reuerẽce, and joyfull contynaunce of his prosperous regne, to the pleasure of god and weale of this his realme

A M E N.

Prentyd at London By wyllyam Rastell.

1533

CVM PRIVILEGIO.



CMC

MVSEVM
BRITANNICVM

¶ The table of the fyrste volume of Fabyanes cronycle.

Albyon / and why thys ile of olde tyme so was called, it apereth in the fourth lefe the fyrst chapptre.

Brute the sonne of Syluius / and of hys ovygynall and fyrste cõmyng into thys lande. ca.ii. folio. iiii.

Brute of hys fyrst landynge. ca.iii. fo.v.

Thys Brute the son of Syluius Posthumus, descended of the noble blode of Troyans, entred fyrst þ ile of Albion which he after named Bry tayne and now is called England, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thousande lxiii / and before the incarnacyon of Chryst, as in the begynnyng of this worke is more openly shewed / & reyg ned yeres.xviiii. Troynuaunt or London of thys kynge was fyrst foũ ded.ca.iiii. fo.v.

Locrinus or Locryne, the eldeste sonne of Brute / beganne hys reygne ouer Bryptayne in the countrye called Leogris or Logiers, that after was named myddell Englande, in þ yere of the worlde.iiii.thousande.lxxxviii. and reygned yeres.xx. capi.v. folio. vi.

Gwendoloena or Gwendoleyn, þ wyfe of Locryne, began to reygne as quene ouer the Bryons or countrey of Logiers, in the yere of the worlde iiii.thousande.C.vii. and reygned ye res.xv.ca.vi. fo.vi.

Madan the sonne of Locrine and of the sayd Gwendolyne, began hys reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thousande.C. and xcii / and reygned after the agrement of many wryters and moste peres.xl. ca.vii. fo.vi.

In the seconde yere of thys kyngs reygne ended the thyrde age of the worlde. And Daupd began to reygne ouer Israell.

Memprycus or Memprycius the sonne of Madan, beganne hys rule ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.M.C.lxii / & the yere before Chrystes incarnacyon, and reygned yeres.xx. ca.viii. folio. vi.

Ebrancus or Ebrank the sonn of Memprice, begã to rule the Brytõs in the yere of the worlde.iiii.M.C. lxxxii.& reygned yeres.xii. Thys kyng made the citie of yorke, þ town of Icynete, & the castelles of Dun barre & Eddynbourgh in Scotland ca.ix. fo.vii.

Brute viii scutum or Brute Gre neshelde, sonne of Ebranke, was made ruler of the Brytons, in þ yere of the worlde.iiii.M.ii.C.xlii / & reyg ned yeres.xii.ca.x. fo.vii.

Leylus or Leyr the sonne of the forenamed Brute, beganne hys rule ouer Brytayn, in the yere of þ worlde iiii.M.ii.C.iiii.and ruled yeres.xxv Thys kynge founded the towne of Carleyll.ca.xi. fo.vii.

Lud Hurdibras or Rudibras the sonn of Leyl, begã hys dominõ ouer þ Brytõs, in the yere of þ worlde.iiii. M.ii.C.xxix.& ruled yeres.xxxix. This kyng made wynchester, Caun terbury, & Septõ now named Shaf tysbury.ca.xii. fo.vii.

Baldud the sonne of Lud, began hys dompnyon ouer the Brytaynes, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thousād iii.C.xviii/ and reygned yeres.xx. Thys kynge founded the towne of Barhe / and the bathes wythin the same after some wryters. ca.xiii. folio. vii.

Leyr or Leyer the sonne of Baldud was made ruler ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.M iii.C.and.xxxviii/and ruled yeres.lx. Thys kynge made the towne of Leycestre.ca.xiiii. fo.vii.

Cordeilla the yongeste doughter of the forenamed Leyer, beganne to rule the Brytons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thousande.iii.C.xcviii. & ruled yeres.v.ca.xvi. folio.viii.

Cunedagius with Margamus his neuewes, sonnes of the two sisters of Cordeilla, beganne theyr dominyon ouer Brytayne, in the yere of ỹ worlde iiii.thousande.iiii. hundreth and.iii. & cōtynued yeres.ii.ca.xvii. fo.viii.

This Cunedagius forenamed, after that he in batayll hadde slayne Margamus, beganne hys seruyce ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. M. iiii. C. v. and ruled after moste wryters yeres.xxxiii. ca.xviii. fo.ix.

Reynaldus or Rilainus the sonn of Cunedagius, beganne to rule the Brytons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thousande.iiii.C.and.xxxviii. & reygned yeres.xlv. The.xxxii. yere of this kyng was Rome bylded, of the twoo bretherne Remus and Rōmulus / whyche was the yere of the worlde ca.xix. fo.ix.

Gurgustius Gurguslo or Gorbodian, the sonne of Riuallus, was made ruler of the Brytons, in ỹ yere of the worlde .iiii. M. iiii.C. lxxxiii. and ruled yeres.xxxviii.ca.xx. fo.ix.

Sicilius or Siluius the brother or sonne of Gurgustus, began hys dompnyon ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thousand.v.C. and.xxi.and ruled yeres.xlix. ca.xxi. folio. ix.

Jago or Lago the neuewe of Gurgustius, was made ruler of Brytayn in ỹ yere of the worlde.iiii.thousande v.hundreth.lxx.& reygned yeres.xxv. ca.xxii. fo.ix.

Kinimacus the brother of Jago, and after some wryters the sonne of Siluius/began hys seygnyorye ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the worlde iiii.thousand.v.C.xcv. & ruled yeres .liiii. In the.xiiii. yere of thys kynge ended the.iiii.age/& the Jewes were captyued by the Babylons. Also Jsopus or Jsoppe the feyner of fables, in the latter days of thys Kinimacus in the countre of Grece, florysshed & fayned hys fables.ca.xxiii. fo.ix

Gorbodug whome Geffrey of Mōmouth nameth Gorbodugo, soñ vnto Kinimacus, began hys dompnion ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thousande.vi.C.xlix.& ruled yeres.lxii. Aboute the.xxvi. yere of this kynges reygne was Holiferne slayne of Judyth the wydow in the chamber of Papilio. As hath Jacobus Philippus.ca.xxiiii. fo.ix.

Ferrex with hys brother Porrex, sonnes of Gorbodug, begā iointly to rule ỹ Brytōs, in ỹ yere after Adam iiii.M.vii.C.& xi.& ruled yeres.v. Here endeth the lyne or ofspryng of Brute.ca.xxv. fo.x.

The

The story age, that after ꝑ deth of the forsayd brytherne/the Brytõs, because there remayned no heyre of them, were in great dyscorde a longe season, & were subdued vnder diuers kynges. But bycause ꝑ forsayd auctours do nat certyfye ꝑ terme of this dyscorde, and also do wryte dyuersly of the reygnes of the forsayd kynges so that some do assyne very few or no certayn yeres, and some other many yeres, so that in thaccomptyng of the yeres and of tymes there appereth a great alteracyõ. Therfore it is to be noted, as affermeth Ranulph monke of Chester, Guydo, Galfryde and other/ that Cunedagius onely began to reygne in the yere of the world. iiii. thousande. iiii. hundreth and. v. And he reygned. xxxiii. yeres. whyche maketh the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. iiii. C. and. xxxviii. And furthermore the forsayde authours wyth other affirme, that the. ii. brytherne Belinus and Brennus, dyd enter Italy wyth a great noumber of men, in the xi. yere of Artararses the. xi. kynge, of Perse. whyche was the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousand. viii. C. and. xv. and the. viii. yere of the reygne of the forsayd brytherne, as sayeth Martynus super Cronicas. whereby it playnly appereth, that from the laste yere of Cunedage, vntyll the eyghte yere of the forsayd brytherne, there passed. iii. C. xxvii. yeres And further more all wryters affirme, that ꝑ sayd Belinus and Brennus dyd succede theyr father Dunuallo/ and that the sayde Dunuallo reygned. xl. yeres. The fyrst yere of whole reygne was the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. viii. C. xlviii. So that from the laste yere of Cunedage, vntyl the fyrst yere of the sayd Dunuallo, there passed. iii. C. xxix. yeres. Of the whych yeres, there passed from the fyrst yere of Rtuallus or Renaldus vntyll the laste yere of Dozrer. ii. hũdreth. lxxviii. yeres. By whyche accompte it appereth, that the Brytõs, after the deth of the forsayd brytherne, were in dyscord by the space of. ii. yeres. And so the laste yere of the forsayde dyscorde was the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousande viii. hundreth. lxvii.

¶ Thus endeth the fyrst parte of thys worke that conteyneht. viii. hundreth & .iiii. yeres.

Dunuallo dũuallo, ꝑ whiche of some wryters is named Donobant, and sonn of Cloton duke or kynge of Cornewall, was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousande. vii. hundreth lxviii. and reygned yeres. xl. Thys was the fyrste that bare crowne in Brytayne. Thys also founded the towne of Malmesbury and of Ypes. Thys also began the. iiii. pryncipall hye wayes. ca. xxviii. fo. x.

Belinus and Brennus the twoo sonnes of the forenamed Dunuallo, beganne to reygne ioyntly ouer Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousande, eyght hũdreth, and. viii. and ruled yeres ioyntly, and Belynus alone. xxvi. Thys Belinus made the towne of Carleyll. Also in London he caused to be made the hauen of Billyngsgate/ and ended the. iiii. wayes begonne of hys fader. Thys also made a tẽple in Londõ, & named it the Temple of Concorde/ whyche after some wryters oppynyõs shulde be the Temple barre, now the parysshe churche of the temple as appereth. ca. xxix. cum fo. xl.

In the tyme in whyche these two bretherne reygned, auctours somwhat dyscorde. For Policronicon sayeth that Belinus wyth Brennus dyd inuade Italy and besege Rome in the.CC.i. yere after the trãsmigracion of Italy. And also that the same tyme Furius Camillus was dyctatour of Rome. whereby it appereth that Rome was spoyled of them about the yere of the worlde.iiii.M. viii.C.and.r.But Jacobus Philippus wyth other sayth that ỳ forsayd Furius Camillus was dictatour of Rome about the yere of our lord.iiii. M.viii.hundreth.lvi. whereby there appereth a dyfference of.xlvi.yeres. But Radulphus monk of the order of Cystercien erreth very farre, that affermeth in hys cronycle that ỳ said bretherne began to reyne ouer Britayn in the yere of ỳ worlde.iiii.M.v. C.and.iiii.whych dyffereth frome other aboue.ii.hundreth and.l.yere. And where it is noted of some, that ỳ sayde Belynus reyned.x.yeres / that is supposed for the tymes of hys reyn after hys returne from Italy. The victory of the sayd bretherne is shewed in the story folowyng.

Gurguintus or Gurguyn the son of Belyn, was made kynge of Britayne, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thousande.viii.C.and.xxxiiii.& reygned.xix.yeres.ca.xxxii. fo.xiii.

Guithelinus or Guitellius called in the Englysshe cronycle Guentolyn, the sonne of Gurguintus, was made kynge of Britayne, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thousande.viii.C. and.liii. and reygned yeres.xxvi. Alexander the great began to reygne aboute the.xxi.yere of thys kynge. ca.xxxiii. fo.xiii.

Sisillius or Cecilius the sonn of Guithelinus, began his reygne ouer the Britons, in the yere of the worlde iiii.thousande.viii.C.lxxix. and reygned yeres.vii.ca.xxxiiii. fo.xiiii.

Kymerus or Kymere the sonn of Sisillius, begã hys rule ouer ỳ Britons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.M. viii.C.lxxvi.and ruled yeres.iii. ca.xxxv. fo.xiiii.

Elanius the sonne or brother of Kymerus, beganne hys reygne ouer Britayne, in the yere of the worlde iiii.thousande.viii.hundreth.lxxxix. & reygned yeres.ix. ca.xxxvi. folio. xiiii.

Morindus or Warwyth the bastarde sonne of Elanius was made kynge of Britayne, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thousande.viii.hundreth xci. and reygned yeres.viii. ca.xxxvii. fo.xiiii.

Gorbomannus or after the Englysshe cronycle Grandobyan sonne vnto Morindus, was ordeyned king of Britayne, in the yere of the worlde iiii.thousand.viii.C.xcviii. and reygned yeres.xi.ca.xxxviii. fo.xv

Archigallo the second sonne of Morindus, beganne hys dompnyon ouer the Britons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thousande.ix.C.x.& reygned yeres.v.ca.xxxix. fo.xv.

Elidurus the.iii. sonne of Morindus, began hys dompnyon ouer the Britons, in the yere of the worlde iiii.thousande.ix.C.xv.and ruled yeres.v.ca.xl. fo.xv.

Archigallo beforenamed, was by the compassyõ of hys brother agayn restored to hys former dygnyte, in ỳ yere of the worlde.iiij.thousande.ix. hun-

hundzeth.rr.and reygned after yeres.r.ca.rli. fo.rb.

Elidurus befozenamed, was agayne of the Bzytons made kynge, in the yere of the wozlde.iiii. thoulād ir.hundzeth.rrr. and reygned yeres ii.ca.rlii. fo.rb.

Uigenius oz Wigenius wyth Peridurus hys bzother, whyche in the Englyshe cronycle are named Hygamus and Petitur, bzethern of Elidurus, depoled by ftrength theyz layde bzother, and began theyz reygne in ỹ yere of the wozlde .iiii. thoulande.ir hundzeth.rrrii. and reygned ioyntly and alone yeres.ir. Thys peridurus oz Petitur made the towne of Pykerynge after the oppynyon of dyuerle wzyters.ca.rliii. fo.rb.

Elidurus befozenamed, was the thyzde tyme reftozed to the crowne, in the yere of the wozlde.iiii.thoulād ir.hūdzeth.rli.and reygned.the thyzd tyme yeres.iiii. Galfride layeth ỹ durynge the lyfe of the fozelayd bzethern, thys was incloled in the towze of London.whych yf it be trew, than is nat trew that the floure of hyftozys affermeth, whych layeth that the towze of London was bylded of Caflibelan.ca.rliiii. fo.rbi.

Gozbonianus oz Gozbomannus the lon of Elidure, was made kyng of Bzytayne, in the yere of the wozld iiii.thoulande.ir.hundzeth.rl b. And after hym reygned.rrrii.kynges, as in the ftozy is after declared/ ỹ which wyth the layd Gozbonnaus by the reaſon that folowety occuppyed yeres lrrr bi. And in thys tyme duke Hanniball of Cartage about the yere of the wozlde began to warre agaynft the Romayns. And Scipio Affrican vanquyfhed Hanyball aboute the yere of the wozlde.b.M.ỹ ir.And about thys tyme Judas machabeus duke of Jfraell began to be theyz capptayne/ that is to lay in the yere of the wozlde.b.thouſande.rlbi. oz there about.ca.rlbi. fo.rbi.

To make the ftozyes to agre, and to kepe the ozder of the yeres begon, fyrſt it is to be noted that as the weth Ranulph wyth diuers other, Julius Ceſar made Bzytayn trybutary to Rome in the.rlbiii. yere befoze the incarnacyon of Chzyſte, oz in the yere of the wozlde fyue thouſande.C.li. which was in the.ir.yere of Caſſybelan. From whes takyng from ỹ tyme of Caſſybelā befoze the trybute payd ir.yeres, & foz the tyme of the reygne of Lud.ri.yeres/ it folowety congruently that kynge Lud beganne to reygne in the yere of the wozlde fyue thouſande. C.rrri. And ſo frome the laſt yere of Elidure, vntyll the begynnyng of the reygne of Lud, oz in the tyme of ỹ.rrriii.kynges/ there paſſed.C.lrrrbi.yeres.

Lud the ſonne of Hely laſt kynge of the fozſayd.rrrui, was ſtablyſſhed kynge of Bzytayne, in the yere of the wozlde fyue thouſande. C.rrri.and reygned yeres.ir. Thys kynge made Ludgate the weſtgate of London, and walled a parte of the ſame, and named the cytye Caerlud. ca.rlbii. fo.rbi.

Caſſibelan the bzother of Lud was ozdeyned kynge of Bzytayn, in the yere of the wozlde fyue thouſand.C.rlii/ and reygned oz he were made trybutary to the Romaynes yeres full and moze.biii. ca.rlbiii. folio. rbi.

The begynnyng of thys trybute as hath Peter Pytaupenſis, Poly-

cronycon and other authours, was in the yere of the worlde.v.thousand C.li/& the.xlviii. yere before Cristes comynge. And Eutropius sayeth in hys cronicle, that Caius Julius did conquere Bretayn by.ii.yeres before he was create emperour/and he regned as emperour.ii.yeres. And furthermore the sayde Eutropius affermeth, that Octauian Augustus successour of the sayde Julius, began to regne in the yere of the worlde.v. thousande.C.lviii. and that he regned full.xli.yeres before Cryste was borne. whyche sayeng Jacobus Philippus and other auctours affirme. wherby it followeth, that Julius Cesar subdued Bretayne.xlviii. yeres before the comyng of Cryste, and the yere of the worlde, as before is sayde, v.thousande.C.li. And so it appereth that Cryst was incarnate in the yere of the worlde after the account of the lxx.interpreters.v.M.C.xcix.

¶ Thus endeth the seconde parte that conteyneth.iii. C.lxxviii.yeres .*.

CAssibelan, as before is sayde, was made tributarie to the Romayns, in the yere of the worlde v.M.C.li. and regned after, yeres vii.ca.l. fo.xviii.

Temancius or Tenancius brother to Cassibelan, was of the Britaynes ordeyned kyng, in the yere of the worlde.v.thousande.C.and.lvii. and regned yeres.xviii .ca.lii. folio. xviii.

Kymbelinus the sonne of Thénācius, was made kyng of the Britōs, in the yere of the world.v.M.C.lxxx. & regned yeres.xxxv. All writers agre that regnyng thys kyng, oure sauyour Jesus Christ was incarnat. And than began the.vi.age. ca.liii. folio. xviii.

Of the tyme of thys kynge Kymbelyus reygn, dyuers auctours trete very darkly, for fewe of them do nat accoūt any yeres/for the tyme of hys reygne, excepte Peter pictauiensis, & the auctours of the Englysshe boke, whych affirme hym to regne.xl.yeres. But Galfrido of Monmouth sayth, that whanne he had regned. yeres he begate.ii. sonnes. But the floure of hystoryes wytnesseth hym to regne.xxxv.yeres, and ỹ Jesus Christ was borne in.xxx.yere of hys reygne, whych wyth other cronycles or tymes dothe somwhat better agre.

Guiderius the sonne of Kymbalyne, was made kynge of Britayne, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyō xvi/& in the yere of the worlde.v.M. ii.C.xvii. and regned yeres.xxviii. ca.liiii. fo.xix.

Aruiragus the brother of Guiderius, began to regne ouer the Britons, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon.xliiii.and regned yeres.xxx. In thys tyme Glouceter was buylded of Claudius. And in the.xxvi. yere of thys kynges regne, whych was the.lxx.yere of the incarnacyō of our lorde/began the fyrst persecuciō of the chrysten men vnder Nero. ca.lv. fo.xix.

Marius, whyche the Englysshe cronycle nameth westmere, sonne of Aruiragus, was made kyng of Britayne/ in the yere of our lorde.lxxviii. and in the yere of the worlde. and regned yeres.ii. Chester towne of thys kyng was founded. westmerlande also of thys kynge toke hys name.

name. And about the .xxi. yere of this kynges reygne was the second persecucyon, vnder Domicianus. And also the thyrd persecucyon about the xxv. yere of thys kynge vnder Tratianus. ca. lvii. fo. xx.

Coilus the sonn of Marius, was made kyng of Brytayne, in the yere of our lorde. C. and. xxvi. and the yere from the fyrste Adam /and reygned yeres. liii. And about ỹ. xlv. yere of thys Coilus, was the fourthe persecucyon, vnder Marcus Antonius Aurelius. ca. lviii. fo. xxii.

Lucius the sonne of Coilus, begã hys reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of oure lorde an. C. lxxx. ⁊ of the worlde. and reygned yeres. xii. Thys was the fyrste chrysten kyng in Brytayne. The image of Crysti at the northe dore in the church of Poulys, was founde in the ryuer of Thames by thys Lucius. But an other authoure sayeth that it was founden in ỹ. xiiii. yere of Coilus or in the yere of the worlde. C. xl. ca. lix. folio. xxii.

Of thys Lucius auctours do dout fully treate. For Galfride sayth that Lucius dyed in the yere of our lorde C. lvi. And Guido de Calũpna sayth that Lucius was crystened in the fore sayd yere. And Peter pictauiensis sayth that Lucius began to reygne in the yere of our lorde. C. lxxx. ⁊ that he receyued the fayth in the. viii. yere of his reygn. And the Floure of hystoryes sayth that he reygned .xii. yeres after the fayth by hym receyued. Furthermore it is shewed in a certeyne table hangyng on the northe parte of the quyre of Poules in London, hat the sayd Lucius was crowned kyng of Brytayne in the yere of grace. C. xxiii. and that he reygned .lxxvii. yeres. And the Englyshe cronycle agreeth therwith of hys coronacion/ but it sayth that he reygned but only xii. yeres. And so there appereth a great dyscord betwene these wryters But all agreen that the sayd Lucius was conuerted to ỹ fayth in the tyme of pope Eleutherius/ which after the concordance of many storyes was made pope about the yere of our lord C. lxxviii. wherfore Galfrides sayng is to be denayd, that sayth, he died in the yere of grace. C. lvi. and also the sayeng of Guydo for receyuyng of ỹ fayth. And rather we ought to gyue credence to the foresayde table or to Peter pictauiensis that affermeth ỹ sayd Lucius to reygne. xii. yere. But some wryters that wrote the actes ⁊ the reygnes of kynges, haue ouerskypt as it semeth the tyme whyche Lucius reygned before he receyued the fayth. And if he reygned before he receyued the fayth. xx. yeres and ỹ he receyued the fayth in hys. xx. yere, ⁊ reygned after. xv. yeres/ they haue accõted the. xv. yere whyche he reygned as crysten kynge, and haue lette passe the other. xx. yere. And so is it to be thought that the forsayd auctour Peter pictauiens dyd. whych reason beynge alowed, the sayde table maye agre wyth the sayd Peter wythoute any greate dyfference whyche testyfyeth ỹ sayd Lucius to reygne. lxxviii yere as kynge. After whose deth in so moche that he dyed wythout any law full heyre/ a great contẽcion sprange amonge the Brytons that endured by. xv. yeres, as shall apere by the sequel. Trouth it is after all hystories, that Seuerus a Romayne succeded Lucius in Brytayne. But because ỹ tyme is not certaynly sette whan the sayd Seuerus subdued the Brytõs/ therfore it is to noted, that whanne it was shewed to the Romaynes of the sedicion and discorde of the Brytõs, and of

& of the sleyng of the Romayns than beyng in Brytayn / the senate sentte thyder the forsayd Seuerus wyth .ii. legions of men. whych bare thé selfe so manfully, that in shorte whyle he compelled the Brytons to obey to the senate. whyche Policronicon affermeth to be about the yere of our lord C.xcv. In whyche yere as hath Jacobus Philippus, the sayde Seuerus began to raygne ouer the Romayns. But that dysagreeth from other Cronycles. For Eutropius, Matheolus & the forsayde Jacobus Philippus sayth, that whan the sayde Seuerus had subdued the Arabyes, Parthys, and Gallys after many battayls he came into Brytayn. where he beynge troubled wyth dyuers chaunces/ at laste died in ꝑ towne of yorke. where by it is to be supposed that in ꝑ ende of hys reygn he came hether, & about the .xii. yere of hys reygne ouer the Romayns which was the yere of our lorde .ii.C.vii. and that after he reygned ouer the Brytons .v. yere. wherefore it euydētly apereth, that the forsayd dyscord dured .xv. yeres/ whych tyme Brytayne was wythoute a kynge.

Thus endeth the thyrde parte which conteyneth CC.lvi. yeres .·.

SEuerus emperour of Rome, as before is shewed, in the .xii. yere of hys empyre, and yere of oure lord .ii.C.ꝛ.vii/ beganne hys reygne ouer the Brytōs, and yere of ꝑ world /and reygned as kynge yeres .v. The fyrst persecucyon of the chrysten men, was vnder this Seuerus, about the yere of our lord .ii.C.x ca.lxi. fo.xxii.

Bassianus the sonn of Seuerus, began hys reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde .ii.C.xii/ & the yere of the worlde /and reygned yeres .vi. ca.lxii. folio. xxii.

Carassius a ponge and lusty Brytayne of vnknowē blode, by meanes as in hys story sheweth, began hys dompnyon ouer the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde .ii.C.and.xviii. and yere of the worlde. & ruled yeres .viii.ca.lxiii. fo.xxiii.

Here agayn authours forget ꝑ yeres of the kynges folowyng. Of whyche I nat greatly marueyll. For in thys tyme muche discencyon was among the Romayne prynces/ & also amonge the Brytons cyuyll warre ceased nat. For they were so styrred wyth dyscencyon and warre, ꝑ none coulde occupy the kyngedome any determynate tyme. For whyche cause and suche lyke, authours coude nat assyne any certeyne tyme to the prynces as me semeth. But that we maye come to some knowlege/ Policronicon sheweth that constantius ꝑ was father to Constantine the great, was sente by the senate into Brytayne, about the yere of our lord .ii.C.lxxix. and in the seconde yere of Probrus emperour / that he shuld subdue to ꝑ Romayns Coelus than there kyng. From the whych tyme of the coming of the sayde Constantius vntyll the last yere of Bassianus accountynge bakwarde, there passed .lxi. yeres. In the tyme of whych yeres there reygned in thys Ilelande these .iiii. kynges that is to say Carassius, Allectus, Asclepiodotus, and Coelus.

Allectus a duke or senatour of Rome, began hys dompnyon ouer the Brytons, in the yere of oure lorde .ii. C.xxvi. & of the worlde /& reygned yeres .vi. ca.lxiiii. fo.xxiii.

Asclepiodo-

Asclepeodotus, or after the Englysshe boke Asclepades/ began hys reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde god. CC. xxxii. And the yere of the worlde /and reygned yeres. xxx. The fyrst persecucyon of crysten men was about the yere of our lorde. CC. xxxviii. vnder Maximian. The. vii. persecucyon was in ỹ yere of oure lorde. CC. lv. vnder Decius. In ỹ whych pope Fabyan was martyred. The. viii. persecucion was in the yere of our lord. CC. lx. vnder Valeryan whych was the. xviii. yere of thys Asclepiodotus. ca. lxv. folio. xxiiiii

Coelus or Coyll erle of Colchester, by cryptyng of the Brytõs was made kyng of Brytayne, in the yere of oure lorde. CC. lxii. & reygned yeres. xxvii. Thys kyng after moste wryters made the towne of Colchester in Esser. ca. lxvi. fo. xxiiii

Constancius a senatoure of Rome, by reason of maryage knyt wyth Eleyn doughter of Coelus, beganne to reygne as kyng of Brytayne, in ỹ yere of our lorde. CC. lxxxix. and of ỹ worlde and reygned yeres xxx. The. ix. persecucyon of the crystẽ men was vnder Aurelianus. Saint Albon protomartyr in the tyme of thys Constancius as some haue, in ỹ x. persecucyõ whych was vnder Diocliesian and Maximian, was martyred. ca. lxvii fo. xxiiii

Constancius surnamed the great, sonn of Constancius and of the holy Helcyne, began his reygne ouer Brytayne, in the yere of oure lorde. iii. C. xix. and of the worlde. /and reygned as kyng yeres. x. ca. lxviii folio. xxv

Octauius duke of Jesses or Jewelles, and after named Westsaxõs/ by exorte power began hys reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of oure lorde. iii. C. & xxix. and of the worlde. and reygned yeres. liiii ca. lxxi fo. xxvii

Of thys kynge folowynge called Maximus or after some Maximianus, wryters dyuersly speke / so that some say he raygned few yeres. But in the concordaunce of cronycles, it playnly apereth that the sayd Maximis began to reygn ouer the Brytõs in the yere of our lord. iii. C. lxxxii / & that he was slayn of Theodosius the elder in the thyrd yere of his reygne, whych began to reygne in the yere of our lord. iii. C. lxxxviii. And so it appereth playnly that he reygned ix. yeres.

Maximius or Maximianus, the sonn of Leonyne brother to Traherii vncle to Helcyne, began hys reygne ouer Brytayn, in the yere of our lord iii. C. lxxxii/ and reygned yeres. ix ca. lxxii. fo. xxvii

Saynt Ursula wyth her felowes in thys kynges tyme were martyred of Enanus and Melga.

Gracianus an offycer or feede knyght of Maximius, began to oppresse the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde. iii. C. xc/ and tyrannysed yeres iiii. ca. lxxiiii fo xxviii

The storyes agre, that after that Gracian was slayne/ Brytayne was vered a longe whyle wyth ofte dyscẽsions & cyuyll warre. But how longe thys dyscord dyd last authours trete diuersly/ for some say it lasted. l. yere, & some. xl. & some. xxx. Therfore to know ỹ certeyntye it is requisite that we dylygently serche, howe many yeres passed frõ the last yere of Graciã vntyll the

vntyll the begynnynge of the reygne of Constantyne/ or the certayn tyme whan Constātyne was made kyng. who as witnesseth Guydo was crowned at Cicester in the yere of our lord iiii.C.xxxv. The floure of hystoryes sayth also that in the thyrde yere of Theodocius the ponger emperour, Constantyne began to rule the Brytons. whych Theodocius begāne to reygne in the yere of our lorde.iiii.C.xxxi. wherby it apereth, that from the last yere of Gracià vntyll the begynnyng of Constantyne, there passed about.xl.yeres. But the very trewtule is ỹ in the yere of grace .iiii.C.li. the Saxons fyrst pierced Brytayne, and in the thyrd yere of Uortigern. From whych takyng awaye for the reygne of Uortigern.ii.yeres, & fro the reygn of Constācius.v.yere, & fro the reygn of Constātyne.x.yere / it folowth ỹ the sayd dyssencion or mystery of the Brytons lasted.xxxix. yeres full. And here ended the trybute that was payd to the Romayns, that had endured aboue.iiii.C.lx.yeres.

Thus endeth the fourth parte that encludeth.CC.xxv yeres.

The line of the kynges of Fraunce.

Pharamundus the sone of Wercomicus, began hys reygne as fyrst kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde.iiii.C.xx/ and the mystery of the Brytons the.xxvi.yere/ & reygned yeres.xi. ca.lxxviii.
folio. xxxi

Clodius or Clodio, or after some Crynitus and Capillatus the sonne of Pharamude, was ordeyned the seconde kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde.iiii. hundreth and.xxxi/ & the.xxxvii.yere of the mystery of the Brytons/ and reygned yeres.xix. capi.lxxix. folio.xxxi

Here begynneth the fyfthe parte.

Constantinus the brother of Aldroenus kyng of lytell Brytayne, beganne hys reygn ouer moche Brytayne, Anno domini.iiii.hundreth and.xxxiii/ and the yere of Clodio than kynge of Fraunce the thyrd yere/ and reygned yeres.x.
capi. lxxx
folio. xxxii

Constantinus the sonne of Constantyne before tyme a monke, was made kynge of moche Brytayne, in the yere of oure lorde .iiii. hundreth and. xliii / and the. xiii. yere of Clodio than kynge of Fraunce/ and reygned yeres.v. ca.lxxxi
folio xxxii

Uortigerus or Uortigernus duke of Cornewayll or Consuil of Jesses, was by treason made kynge, in the yere of our lorde foure hundreth and lxviii / and the.xviii. yere of Clodio than kynge of Fraunce / and reyned yeres.xvii. The Saxons or Englysshemen, in the thyrde yere of this kynges reygne fyrste entred thys Jlande. capi.lxxxii
folio. xxxii

Meroneus neuewe or nert allye vnto Clodio, was made kynge of Frenchemen, in the yere of our lorde iiii.hundreth and.l / and the seconde yere of Uortiger than kynge of Brytayne/ and reygned yeres.x.
capi.lxxxv folio.xxxiiii

Chyldericus

Weroneus neuewe or next of Allye vnto Clodio, was made kynge of Frenchemen, in the yere of our lorde iiii.C.and.l / and the seconde yere of Uortiger than kyng of Brytayne / & reygned yeres.x.ca. lxxv. fo. xxxiiii.

Chyldericus or Hylderycus the sonne of Weroneus, was ordeyned kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of oure lorde .iiii.C.and.ix/ and the.xii. yere of Uortiger than kyng of Brytayne/ and reygned yeres.xxiiii. ca.lxxvi. folio. xxv.

Uortimerus the sonn of Uortiger, was made kyng of Brytayne, in the yere of our lorde.iiii.C.lxxviii/ & the iiii.yere of Chylderych than kyng of Fraunce/and reygned yeres.vii. ca.lxxviii. fo.xxvi.

Uortigernus before named, was agayne restored to the kyngdome, in the yere of our lord.iiii.C.lxxi/ and ỹ xi.yere of Chylderyche than kyng of Fraunce/and reygned yeres.ix. In thys kynges tyme aboute the yere of our lorde.iiii.C.lxxvi.the kyngdome of Kent the fyrste kyngdome of the Sarõs, began vnder Hengystas ap pereth. fo. xxvii. ca. lxxix. folio. xxvi.

Aurelius Ambrosius the seconde sonne of Constantyne, and brother to Constancius the monke slayne by reason of Uortiger, was made kyng of Brytayne, in the yere of oure lorde iiii.C.lxxxi/and the.xi.yere of Chylderych than kyng of Fraũce/and reygned yeres .xix. In thys kynges tyme about the yere of our lorde.iiii.C.lxxxii.beganne the kyngedome of Southsaxones vnder Ella and hys sonnes. And also in thys kynges tyme that is to saye in the yere of our lorde.iiii.C.lxxx.xii.begãne the kingdome of Estangles vnder Uffa. But Gupdo sayeth it beganne in the yere of oure lorde.v. hundreth lxx. as appereth. capi.xciiii.fo.xxxviii.

Clodoueus the sonne of Chyldericus or Hyldericus before named, was ordeyned kynge of Fraunce, in the yere of oure lorde.iiii. hundreth lxxxiiii/ and the thyrde yere of Aurelius thanne kynge of Brytayne/ and reygned yeres .xxx. Thys was the fyrste crysten kynge whyche receyued the fayth of sayne Remygius aboute the yere of oure lorde.iiii.hundreth.xciv. whereby it appereth that the fayth came into Brytayne aboue iii.hundreth yere before it came into Fraunce.capi.xcvii. fo.xxxix.

Uter surnamed Pendragon, the yongest sonne of Constantyne & brother to Aurelius, was made kyng of Brytayne, in the yere of our lorde.v. C/and the.xvi.yere of Clodoueus thã kyng of Fraunce/and reygned yeres xvi.ca.c. fo.xli.

Clotharius or Lotharius the sonn of Clodoueus, beganne hys reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of our lorde.v.C.and.xiiii/and the yere of Uter than kyng of Brytayne/ and reygned yeres.l.ca.c.i. fo.xlii.

Arthurus the sonn of Uter begãne hys reygne ouer the Brytõs, in ỹ yere of our lorde .v.C.and.xvii / & the.iii. yere of Lotharius thanne kynge of Fraunce/and reygned yeres.xxvi. In thys kynges tyme the kyngdom of Sarõs begã vnder Serdicus about the yere of our lord.v.C.xviii. ca.c.iiii. fo.xliii.

Constantius the sonne of Cador, began hys reygne ouer the lande of Brytayne, in the yere of our lorde.v.

C.ℨ.xliii/and the.xxix.yere of Lothacius than kynge of Fraunce/ ℨ reygned yeres.iii. Totila kyng of Ostragathoris, about this time spoyled Rome ℨ other cytyes in Italy. ca.c.vii. folio. xlv.

Aurelius Conanus the neuewe of Cõstantyne, begã hys reygne ouer Bzytayne, in the yere of our lozde .v. C.ℨ.xlvi / and ỳ.xxxii.yere of Lothacius fozenamed /ℨ reygned yeres .ii. In thys kyngestyme the kyngdome of Nozthumbers began vnder Ida, about the yere of our lozd.v.C.xlvii. ca.c.viii. fo.xlvi.

Uoztipozius the sosi of Aurelius Conanus, began to rule the Bzytõs, in the yere of our lozd.v.C.ℨ.xlviii/ℨ the yere of Clothare kyng of Fraũce xxxiiii/and reygned yeres.iiii. ca.c.x. fo.xlvii.

Walgo the bzother of Uoztiporius, begã hys reygne ouer the Bzytons, in the yere of our lozd.v.C.and lii / ℨ.xxxviii.yere of Lothayze fozname/ℨ reygned yeres after moste accozde of wzyters.xxxv. ca.c.xi. folio. xlvii.

Chilpericus the.iii. sonñ of Clotharius, began hys reygne ouer the Frenchmẽ, in the yere of our lozde.v. C.ℨ.lxiiii/ℨ the.xiiii.yere of Walr thã kyng of Bzytayne / ℨ reygned yeres xiiii.ca.c.xii. fo.xlvii.

Careticus a Bzyton of vncowthe byzth began hys tyzãny ouer the Bzytons, in the yere of our lozd.v.C.lxxx ℨ.vi/ℨ.xxii.yere of Chylperyche than kyng of Fraũce/and tyzannyzed yeres.iii.ca.c.xviii. fo.liii.

Here it is to be noted that after ỳ sayd Careticus was expulsed out of Bzytayne/the Bzytõs abode in Cambzias these partes, ℨ fought oftẽwith the Saxõs. Of whose captaynes fro thys Careticus vntyll Cadwan, the story remẽbzeth none. yet by ỳ cõcozdaũce of other cronycles ℨ hystozies, it apereth ỳ betwene the laste yere of Careticus ℨ begynnyng of the reygn of Cadwan, there passed about .xxiii. yeres as apereth by ỳ sequell. Furthermoze in this tyme Ethelbert king of Kent receyued the fayth about the yere of oure lozde.v.C.xcvi. Thys Ethelbert bylded Poules church. And about the yere of our lozd.vi.C. xiii.began the kyngdome Estsaxons vnder Sebertus.

Lotharius oz Clotharius ỳ sosi of Chylpericus, begã hys reygne ouer the Frẽchmẽ, in the yere of our lozd.v C.lxxxviii/ℨ the.ii.yere of Careticus than kynge of Bzytayne / ℨ reygned yeres.xliii.ca.c.xvii. fo.lvi.

Cadwanus duke of Nozthwalis, was of ỳ Bzytons chosen kyng, and begã to reygne ouer a parte of Bzytõs, in the yere of our lozde.vi.C.and viii/ℨ the.xxv.yere of the secõde Clothayze/ℨ reygned yeres.xxii. In this kynges tyme the kyng done of Mercia began vnder Penda. ca.c.xxviii. folio. lxiiii.

Dagobertus ỳ fyzst of ỳ name, ℨ sonñ of ỳ secõd Clothayze, begã hys dominiõ ouer ỳ Frẽchemẽ, in the yere of our lozd.vi.C.ℨ.xxxi/ℨ ỳ.viii. yere of Cadwan than kyng of Bzytayne/ ℨ reygned yeres.xiiii. Saynt Denys with hys felowes were soũd by this king by myzacle.ca.c.xxxi. fo.lxv.

Cadwallus the sosi of Cadwañ began hys reygne ouer a parte of Bzytayne, in the yere of our lozde .vi.C.ℨ xxxv. and the .iiii. yere of the fyzste Dago-

Dagobertte than kynge of Fraũce/ & reygned peres.xl viii. ca.c.xxxiii. folio. lxvii.

Clodoueus the yõgest sonn of Dagobertus, begã hys reygne ouer the Frenchmẽ, in the yere of our lord. vi. C. & xlv / and the.x. yere of Cadwall than kyng of Bꝛytayn/ & reygned peres.xvi.ca.c.xxxvi. fo.lxxi.

Clotharius ỹ thyꝛde of that name and sonne of Clodoueus, was made kyng of Fraũce, in ỹ yere of our lorꝛd vi.C.lxii / and the.xxvi.yere of Cadwall than kyng of Bꝛytayne/ & reygned peres.iiii.ca.xxxvii. fo.lxxii.

Theodoꝛicus the bꝛother of ỹ foꝛnamed Lothayꝛe, began hys reygne ouer Fraũce, in the yere of our lorꝛde vi.C.lxvi/and the.xxx.yere of the foꝛe sayd Cadwall than kynge of Bꝛytayne/and reygned peres.iii. ca.c.xxxviii. fo.lxxii.

Chylderycus oꝛ Hylderycus ỹ.iii. sonne of Clodoueus, began his reygne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lorꝛd. vi.C.lxix/ & ỹ.xxxiii.of Cadwall yet kyng of Bꝛytayne/and reygned peres.ii.ca.c.xxxix. fo.lxxi

Cadwaladꝛus, oꝛ after Bede Cedwalla, sonne of Cadwallo, began to rule the Bꝛytõs, in the yere of oure lorꝛde.vi.C.lxxx.and.iii/ & the.xii.yere of Theodoꝛicus thã kyng of Fraũce/ and reygned peres.iii. ca.c.xl. folio. lxxiii.

Of the tyme of the raygne of this Cadwalader, autours wꝛite diuerslye and shew of him as of.ii. seuerall persones. Foꝛ Galfryde & other say that whan he had reygned .xii.peres, he went to Rome, & thereof pope Sergius was made a monk, and dyed in the yere of our lorꝛd. vi.C.lxxix. which sayeng differeth farre from other authours. Foꝛ Guido de calũma sayeth in hys woꝛke that he shortly gathered of the kynges of Bꝛytayne, that whan Cadwallader that also is named Cadwalla sonne of Cadwallon had peasslably gouerned Bꝛytayne iii.peres, he went to Rome & of pope Sergius was made monk/ & ended hys lyfe in the yere of our lorꝛd. vi.C. lxxxix. whych sayng Policronicon in hys.v.boke & .xx.chappter affermeth, where he nameth the sayd Cadwalader king of Bꝛytons and westsarõs, and that kyng Iewo oꝛ Iue was hys successour. And so by these authours & other which Policronicõ alledgeth foꝛ hym, as Beda & other, whych name thys Cadwalader Ced walla, it apereth that it wasone person & that thys tyme he reygned ouer the Bꝛytons and westsarones, whyche was last kyng of the stok of the Bꝛytons And because the kynges of westsarõ in pꝛoces of tyme subdued all the other kinges, therfoꝛe I wyll obserue the oꝛder of them vntyll I haue bꝛought thys ilande to one monarchy. Here endeth the lyne of the kynges of Bꝛytayne whyche contynued frõ the fyꝛst Bꝛute by. M. viii. C. & xxii. peres.

Thus endeth the fyrst parte whyche includeth. CC. liii.

Iewe oꝛ Iue of ỹ blod of Sarons, oꝛ after som wꝛiters Iuo, beganne hys reygne ouer the westsarones to rekyn after the departing of Cadwalader, in the yere of oure lorꝛde. vi. hundꝛeth. lxxx. and. vii / and the.xvi.yere of the seconde Theodoꝛicus thaune kynge of Fraunce / and reygned yered.xxxvii. ca.c.xli. folio. lxxvi

Clodoueus the.iii.of that name, & secõd sonne of the second Theodoricus, was made kyng of Fraũce, in ỹ yere of our lord.vi.C.xc / and the.iii. yere of Jewe thã kyng of westsarones, & reygned yeres.iii. ca.c.xlii. folio. lxxvi.

Chyldebertus the second sonñ of Theodoryche, begã hys reygne ouer the Frẽchemẽ, in ỹ yere of our lord.vi C.lxxx.& xiiii/& the.vi.yere of Jue yet kyng of westsarones, & reygned yeres.xvii.ca.c.xliii. fo.lxxvi.

Dagabertus ỹ secõd of ỹ name, & sonne of Chyldeberte, was auctorysed kyng of Frẽchmẽ, in ỹ yere of our lord.vii.C. & x / and the.xxiii.yere of Jewe yet kyng of westsarones / and reygned yeres.xi.ca.c.xliiii. fo.lxxvi.

Daniell ỹ was named Chylperyk a clerke, was made kyng of Frenchemen, in the yere of our lorde.vii.C.& xxi/& the.xxiiii.yere of Jewe yet king of westsarons and reygned yeres .v. ca.c.xlv. fo.lxxvi.

Ethelardus the neuewe of Jewe, begã his reygne ouer ỹ westsarõs, in the yere of our lord .vii.C.& xxiiii / & the thyrde yere of Daniell than king of Fraunce/and reygned yeres.v. ca.c.xlvi. fo.lxxvii.

Theodoricus the secõd of ỹ name, and sonne of the seconde Dagobert, began hys reygne ouer Frenchmen, in the yere of our lord.vii.C.& xxvi/& the seconde yere of Ethelardus than king of westsarones/and reygned yeres.xiiii.ca.c.xlvii. fo.lxxvii.

Cutbertus ỹ neuewe of Ethelard, began to reygne ouer the westsarõs, in the yere of our lord.vii.C.& xxix/& the thyrd yere of the secõd Theodoricus/and reygned yeres.xvi. ca.c.xlviii. fo.lxxix.

Hyldericus or Chyldericus the seconde of ỹ name, & sonne of Theodoricus, was made kyng of Frenchmẽ, in the yere of our lord.vii.C. and xl/ & the.xi.yere of Cutbert than kyng of westsarons/& reygned yeres.x. Here endeth the lyne of Meroneus, & begynneth the lyne of Peppyn .ca.c.xlix. folio. lxxix.

Sygebertus the neuewe of Cutbert, began hys reygne ouer the west sarõs, in the yere of our lord.vii.C.& xlv/& the.v.yere of Hyldericus the second than kyng of Fraũce/ and reygned yeres.ii.ca.c.l. fo.lxxx.

Kenulphus of the blode & lyne of Cerdicus, begã hys reygne ouer the westsarõs, in the yere of our lord.vii. C.& xlviii/and ỹ.vii.yere of Hyldericus thã king of Fraũce/and reygned yeres.xxxi.ca.c.li. fo.lxxxi.

Pipinus the secõd sonne of Charles Martellus, was fyrst made king of Fraũce of ỹ blode, in ỹ yere of our lord.vii.C.& l/and the second yere of Kenulphus thã kyng of westsarõs/& reygned yeres.xviii.ca.c.lii.fo.lxxxi.

Carolomanus wyth Charlys surnamed ỹ great sonnes of Peppyn, began to reygne ouer Fraũce, in ỹ yere of our lord .v.C.lxviii / & the.xx.yere of Kenulphus / and reygned yeres ioyntly and Charles alone.xlvii. This Charles was ỹ fyrst emperour of Romayns of the stok of the Frẽchmen/and reygned.xiiii.yeres. ca.c.liii. fo.lxxxii.

Brightricus of the forenamed blod of Cerdicus, was made kyng of west sarons, in the yere of our lord.vii.C. lxxvii/and ỹ.x.yere of Charles than kyng

king of Fraũce/& reygned yeres.xbii
About the.ir.yere of thys kynge, the Danes fyrste entred this ile as more playnly apereth in ỹ storȳ folowyng. ca.c.lbii. fo.lxxxbi.

Egbertus, or after the Englysshe boke Edbyrght, the soñ of Alumundus, begã hys reygne ouer the westsarõs, in ỹ yere of our lord.bii.C.lxxx and.xb/& i the..xxbii.yere of Charles than kyng of Fraũce/and reygned yeres.xxxbiii. Thys kyng cõmaunded the Sarõs to be Anglys/& Brytayn to be named Anglia, that in Englãd. ca.c.lbiii. fo.lxxxbi.

Lodouicus the fyrste of ỹ name & sonne of Charles the great, beganne to reygne as emperour and kyng of Fraũce, in the yere of our lord.biii.C and.xb/& ỹ.xx.yere of Egbertus thã kyng of westsarons/ and reygned yeres.xxbi.ca.c.lix. fo.lxxxbii.

Adeulphus or Ethelwolphus the sonne of Egbertus, began hys reygn ouer the westsarõs and other, in the yere of our lord.biii.C.and.xxxii/and the.xbi.yere of Lowys the fyrst than kyng of Fraũce/& reygned yeres.xxii ca.c.lxii. fo.xci.

Charles the second of that name, & yongest sonne of the fyrste Lowys surnamed Balled, beganne to reygn ouer the west parte of Fraunce, in the yere of our lord.biii.C.&.xli/& the.ir. yere of Adeulphus/and reygned yeres.xxxbiii. The countre of Flaunders in thys Charles dayes began fyrste to bere name, as after in the ende of hys storȳ is shewed. ca.c.lxiii. fo.xcii.

Ethelwaldus the eldest sonne of Adeulphus, began hys reygne ouer the westsarõs, in the yere of our lord biii.C.&.lb / and the.i.yere of Charles the Balled than kyng of Fraũce/ and reygned but one yere. ca.c.lxbii. folio. xcbi.

Ethelbertus the seconde sonne of Adeulphus, was auctorysed kynge of westsarõs, in the yere of our lorde biii.C.and.lbi/& the.xi.yere of Charles the Ballyd yet kyng of Fraunce/ and reygned yeres.bi. In the tyme of thys kynges reygne/ the.bii. Johan whyche was a womã was admitted for pope, aboute the yere of oure lorde.biii.C.lbiii, as sayth Jacobus Phylyppus.ca.c.lxbiii. fo.xcbi.

Ethelbredus the thyrde sonne of Adeulphus, was made kyng of west sarons wyth other, in the yere of our lorde.biii.C.&.lxii / & the.xbiii.yere of Charles forenamed yet kynge of Fraũce/& reygned yeres.biii. In the tyme of thys kynges reygne, sayntc Edmond kynge of Eest Angles was martyred of the pyrincys Danus and Martyrus.ca.c.lxix. fo.xcbi.

Aluredus or Alphredus the.iiii. sonne of Adeulphus, in ỹ yere of our lorde.biii.C.lxxii, began hys reygne ouer the westsarõs/& the.xxxi. yere of Charles forenamed yet kynge of Fraũce/and reygned yeres.xxbiii. ca.clxxi. fo.xcbiii.

Lowys Balbus, the secõd of that name & sonne of Chales the balled, began hys reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in ỹ yere of grace.biii.C.lxbiii/ and the.bi.yere of Alerude thã kyng of westsarons/ & reygned yeres.ii. ca.c.lxxiiii. fo.ci.

Lowys & Charles the sonnes of Lowys Balbus, beganne to reygne ioyntly ouer ỹ Frenchmẽ, in the yere of our lord.biii.C.&.lxxx / & the.biii.

B. iii. yere

pere of Alurede than kyng of weſtſar ons/and repgned peres.v. ca.lxxv. folio c.ii.

Lowys the.iiii.of ỹ name,& ſonne of Charles laſt remẽbꝛed, began hys reygn ouer Fraũce, in ỹ pere of grace viii.C.lxxx.and.vi/& the.xiiii. pere of Aluredus yet kyng of weſtſarons /& repgned peres viii.ca.lxxvii.fo.c.iii.

Eudo oꝛ Oddo the ſoñ of Robert erle of Angeowe, began hys repgne ouer the Frẽchmen,in the pere of our loꝛd.viii.C.lxxx.& xb / and the .xviii. pere of Aluredus yet kyng of weſtſar ons/and repgned peres.ix.ca.lxxviii. folio. c.iiii.

Edwarde ſurnamed the elder, & ſonne of Alurede oꝛ Alphꝛede, began hys repgne ouer the moꝛe part of En glande,in the pere of our loꝛde.ix.C. and one/& the.vi.pere of Eudo than kynge of Fraunce / & repgned peres xviii.ca.c.lxxix. fo.c.iiii.

Charles ſurnamed the Simple,& ſoñ of the.iii.Lowys, beganen hys repgne ouer the realme of Fraũce, in the pere of our loꝛde.ix.C.iiii / & ỹ.iii. pere of Edward than kynge of Eng lande/and repgned peres.xviii. ca.c.lxxxi. fo.c.vi.

Radulphus the ſonne of Rychard duke of Burgoyne,began his repgn ouer Fraũce, in the pere of our loꝛde ix.C.& xvii/& the.xi pere of Edward yet kyng of Englande/ & repgned pe- res.xii.ca.lxxxiii. fo.c.viii

Ethelſtanus the ſoñ of Edward the elder,begã hys repgne ouer the moꝛe partye of England,in ỹ pere of our loꝛd.ix.C.& xxv.& the thyꝛde pere of Rauffe thã kyng of Fraũce/& repg ned peres.xvi.Thys kyng bꝛoughte Bꝛytayne oꝛ Englãde to one monar- chy.But yet after ſome wꝛyters Alu rede dyd it.ca.c.lxxxiiii. fo.c.viii.

Lowys the.v. of that name, and ſonne of Charles the Symple, begã hys repgne ouer Fraũce, in the pere of our loꝛd.ix.C.& xxxiiii / & ỹ.ix.pere of Ethelſtane thã kyng of Englãd/& repgned peres.xxi.ca.c.lxxxvi. fo.c.x.

Edmoũd the bꝛother of Ethelſtane & ſonne of Edward the elder, began hys repgne ouer Englãd, in the pere of our loꝛd.ix.C.& xli. / & the.vii.pere of ỹ.v.Lowys than kyng of Fraũce/ and repgned peres.vi. ca.c.lxxxviii. folio. c.xiii.

Edꝛedus the bꝛother of Edmoũd, begã his repgne ouer Englãd, in the pere of our loꝛde.ix.& xlviii/and ỹ.xiii pere of ỹ foꝛenamed Lowys yet king of Fraũce/and repgned peres.ix. ca.c.lxxxix. fo.c.xiiii.

Lotharius the eldeſt ſoñ.of ỹ.v. Lowis,was anoited king of Fraũce, in the pere of our loꝛd.ix.C.& xl/ and viii.pere of Edwardus thã kynge of Englãd/& repgned peres after moſte wꝛyters.xxxix.ca.c.xc. fo.c.xiiii.

Edwynus ỹ eldeſt ſoñ of Edmoũd bꝛother of Ethelſtane, was enoynted kyng of Englãde,in the pere of oure loꝛd.ix.C.lvi/ & the ſecõd pere of Lo thayꝛe thã king of Fraũce/& repgned peres.iii.ca.c.xcii. fo.c.xvi.

Edgarus the ſecõd ſoñ of Edmoũd & bꝛother of Edwyn, begã to repgne ouer Englãd, in the pere of grace.ix. C.& lx/& ỹ.v.pere of Lotharius than kyng of Fraũce/& repgned peres.xvi ca.c.xciii. fo.c.xvi.

Edward the ſoñ of Edgare ſurna named

named the Martyr, begā hys reygne ouer the ile of Englād, in the yere of our lorde .ix.C.lxxvii / & the.xxii. yere of Lothayre yet kyng of Fraūce/and reygned yeres .iiii.ca.c.xxvi.folio.c.xix.

Egelredus ꝑ sonn̄ also of Edgare, was made kyng of Englād, in ꝑ yere of grace.ix.C.lxxx.& one / & the.xxvi. yere of Lothayre yet king of Fraūce/ and reygned yeres.xxxvi. ca.xcvii. folio. c.xx.

Lowys ꝑ.vi.of ꝑ name, & sonne of Lothayr/begā his reygn ouer Fraūce in ꝑ yere of our lorde.ix.C.lxxxvi/& the v.yere of Egelbertus thā king of England/& reygned yeres.iii. In thys kyng endeth the lyne of Peppyn ca.cc.i. fo.c.xxiiii.

Hugt Capet ꝑ sonn̄ of Roberte ꝑ tyraūt,descended of Hugh le graūde begā to take vppō hym or vsurpe the crowne of Fraūce,in the yere of oure lorde.ix.C.& ix/and ꝑ.ix.yere of Egelrede/and ruled yeres.ix. ca.cc.ii. folio. c.xxvi.

Robert the sonn̄ of Hughe, began to reygne ouer the Frēchmē,in ꝑ yere of our lorde .ix.C.lxxx / and.xviii.yere of Egelredus than kyng of Englād/ and reygned yeres .xxx. ca.cc.iii. folio. c.xxvii.

Edmoūde Ironhyde the sonne of Egelredus, with also Canutus ꝑ sonn̄ of Swanus, begā to reygn ouer Englāde, in the yere of our lorde.M.and xvii/& ꝑ.xix.yere of Robert thā kinge of Fraūce/& reygned one yere. ca.cc.iiii. fo.c.xxvii.

Kanutus which in ꝑ Englysh boke is named Knougth,begā after the deth of Edmoūd to reygn alone ouer Englād,in the yere of grace.M. and xix/& the.xx.yere of Robert thā kyng of Fraūce/and reygned yeres.xix. ca.cc.v. fo.c.xxviii.

Hery the sonn̄ of Robert begā hys dompnyō ouer Fraūce, in the yere of our lorde.M.& xxix/& the.x.yere of Canutus thā king of Englād,& reygned yeres.xxxi.ca.cc.vii. fo.c.xxx.

Harolde surnamed Harefote ꝑ sonn̄ Canutus,began to reygne ouer England,in the yere of our lorde.M.and xxxix/& the.x.yere of Henry thā kyng of Fraūce/and ruled yeres.iii. ca.cc.viii. fo.c.xxxi.

Hardiknutus or Hardiknought, ꝑ sonn̄ of Canutus & of Emma, was made king of Englāde,in the yere of our lorde.M.& xli/& the.xii.yere of Hery thā kyng of Fraūce / and reygned yeres.ii. In this kyng ended the line of the Danes, that had cōtynued in thys lāde in great persecuciō aboue ti.C.l.yeres.ca.cc.ix. fo.c.xxxii.

Edward the holy cōfessour, & sonn̄ of Egelredus and of Emma his laste wyfe,begā hys reygn ouer the realm of Englād,in the yere of oure lorde a M.and.xlii/& the.iiii.yere of Henry thā kyng of Fraūce / and reygned in vertue and holynes yeres.xxiiii. In this kynges tyme the chapell of walsynghā was fyrst bylded,in ꝑ yere of our lorde.M.lxi.ca.cc.x. fo.c.xxxiii.

Philippe the fyrst of ꝑ name and sonn̄ of Hery,begā to gouerne ꝑ Frēchmē,in the yere of our lorde a.M.lxviii and the.xvi.yere.of Edward the confessour thā kynge of Englande/and reygned yeres.xlviii.

Godfrey of Bulyō & nat Boleyn̄, i this Philippes tyme gat by strēgth the citie of Hierusalē/& was crowned kynge

king of ꝑ ſame, in the yere of our lo:d M.xcix.ca.cc.xv. fo.c.xxxviii.

Harolde ꝑ eldeſt ſoñ of erle Goodwyn, begā to regn ouer Englyſhme in the yere of our lo:d.M.lxvi/and ꝑ viii.yere of Philippe than kynge of Fraunce/and regned yeres.ix. ca.cc.xvi. fo.c.xxxviii.

Thus endeth the.vi.parte that contayneth.iii.C.lxxxi.yeres.

WIllyam duke of Nor:mādy the baſtarde ſonne of Robert the.vi duke of the ſayd p:ouynce, begā hys regne ouer the realme of Englande, in the.xv.day of Octob:e, and yere of our lo:d.M.lxvii/ꝑ.ix. yere of ꝑ fy:ſt Philipe yet kyng of Fraūce & regned yeres vpō.xxii. In the.xx. yere of thys kyng, the church of ſaint Poule wyth a great parte of Lōdon was burned. Thys kyng foūded the monaſteryes of Batell and Barmūdeſey. ca.cc.xx. fo.c.xlii.

Wyllyam ſurnamed the Rede and ſonne of wyllyam Cōquerour, began hys regne ouer Englād, in the moneth of July & yere of our lo:d a.M. lxxx.ix.ix/&.xxxi.yere of Philippe fo:e named yet kyng of Fraūce & regned yeres.xii.ca.cc.xxiii. fo.c.xlvii.

Henry ſurnamed Beawclerke and thy:d ſoñ of wyllyam Conquerour, begā hys regne ouer Englād, in the yere of our lo:d.M.C. & one / and in the.xliii.yere of the fo:eſayd Phylyp yet kyng of Fraūce/& regned yeres xxxv.ca.cc.xxvi. fo.c.l.

Lowys ſurnamed the greate, and ſonn of ꝑ fy:ſt Philippe, was enoynted king of Fraūce, in ꝑ yere our lo:d M.C.&.vii/and ꝑ.vi.yere of the firſt Henry than kynge of Fraunce/ and regned yeres .xxix. capi.cc.xxx. folio c.lv.

Stephan erle of Bolopng & ſonn vnto the erle of Bleſens, & of the wyues ſyſter of Hēry the fy:ſt, begā hys regne ouer Englāde, in the yere of grace.M.C.&.xxxvi/and the laſt yere of Lowys the great/& regned yeres xix.ca.cc.xxiii. fo.c.lvii.

Lowys the.viii.of ꝑ name and ſoñ of Lowys the great, begā his regne ouer Fraunce, in the yere of our lo:d M.C.xxxvi/& the fy:ſte yere of Stephan than kyng of England / & regned yeres.xiiii. ca.cc.xxiiii. folio. c.lx.

Henry the ſeconde of that name, & ſonne of Gefrey Plantaginet and of molde the empereſſe, begā hys regn in Englande, in the yere of our lo:de M.C.and.lv/and the.xix. yere of Lowys the.viii.than kyng of Fraunce/ and regned yeres.xxxv. Saynt Edwarde the confeſſour was trāſlated in the.ix.yere of thys kyng. And about the.xvi.yere of hys regne ſait Thomas of Caunterbury was martyred. cap.cc.xxxvi. folio. c.lxii.

Philippe the ſecond of that name ſurnamed a Dieu doñe, ſonne of the viii.Lowys, beganne hys regne in Fraunce, in the yere our lo:d a thouſande.C.and.lxxix / and.xxiiii.yere of Henry the ſeconde than kyng of Englande/and regned yeres.xliii. ca.cc.xli. fo.c.lxviii.

Thus endeth the table of the fy:ſte volume.

FOR THAT IN the accomptynge of the yeres of the worlde, from the creacyon of Adam vnto the incarnacyon of Criste, ben many & sondery opynyons/ as the Hebrewes, whych accompt for the sayde terme. iii. thousande. ir. hundred. lxiii. yeres/ the seuenty interpretours reken. v. M.C. lxxx. and xix. yeres. Some there be, that reken v. M. lxxx. and xix. yeres/ and some v. thousande. CC. & xxviii. yeres. In the thyrde boke & fyrste chappter of Polycronycon ben also shewed dyuers opinyons, wherof the gretest nomber and most certayne is v. thousande and. CC. yeres. And in other places also, some reken mo, and some haue lesse/ by reason wherof the tymes ben diuersly sette and accompted/ as the fyrst foundacyon of Rome/ the subuersyon of the famouse cytye of Troye/ the fyrst buyldynge of the cytye of London/ & dyuerse other old thinges. But for I se, ỳ the accõpt of ỳ seuenty interpretours is of holy Beda, and many other holy wryters allowed and folowyd: therfore I entẽdynge to shew in this rude worke folowyng, what yere of ỳ world Brute entred fyrste thys ile, then called Albyon, and now England/ purpose to kepe the sayde accompte, wherof the partyculers ensewe: that is to wyt, fyrste from Adam to Noe flowyd. xxii hundred and xlii. yeres

From Noe to Abraham flowed. ir hundred and .xlii. yeres.

From Abrahã to Dauid flowyd ir. hundred and xl. yeres.

From Dauid to the captyuyte of the Jewys passed. viii. hundred. lxx. and v. yeres.

And from the captyuyte to the commynge of Cryste .v. hundred. lxx. & tenne yeres.

The whyche in all make. v. thousande, a hundred, lxx. and xix. yeres.

After which accõpt moste accordynge to the purpose of thys worke, all be yt that dyuerse opynyons thereof ben left in writyng and of dyuerse autours: the famous cytye of Troye was subuerted of ỳ Grekes, as wytnessyth holy Eusebius and other, in the yere of ỳ world. viii. M. and. xxiii.

Also folowyng the sayd accompt, as wytnessyth the forsayde Eusebỳ & dyuerse other, the cyte of Rome was begon to be buylded in the xi. yere of Ezechias then kynge of Juda/ the whyche yere maketh after the sayde auctours, the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousande, foure hundred, lxx. And ỳ sayd auctours affirme, that the sayd cytye of Rome was edifyed after the subuersion of Troye, viii. hundred and xlvii. yeres. By whych reason it must folowe, that it was buylded in the yere of the world, as ys aboue sayde.

Peter pictauiensis and other testifye, that Brute entred fyrste the ile of Albyon, now called Englande, in the .xviii. yere of the pryeste & iudge of Israel named Hely. And as affermyth dyuers auctours/ the sayde Hely beganne to rule the Israelites, the yere of the thyrde age: that is from Abraham to Dauid. viii. hundred. lxi. whych maketh the yeres of ỳ worlde foure thousande and. xlv.

Whereunto yf there be ioyned the aboue sayd. xviii. yeres: then muste yt folow, that Brute shuld entre this lande, in the yere of the worlde foure thousand. lxiii. To this agreeth ỳ autour of Polycronicon/ whych sayth, that Brute entred Albion. xl. yeres after the

a ter the

ter the ſubuerſyon of Troye. whych xl. yeres ioyned to the former ſayeng of Euſebius, maketh ỳ ſayd nomber of .iiii.thouſande and.lxiii.yeres.

Alſo a wryter of hyſtoryes called Jacobus Philippus, affermeth that Troye was taken by the Gzekes, in the thyrde yere ỳ Abdon or Labdon, iudged the Iſraelytes. whych began his rule ouer the ſayde Iſraelytes, after the accorde of moſte wryters / in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thouſande and .xx. wherunto yf there be ioyned thre yeres for ỳ third yere of his rule, in whyche yere Troye (as before ys ſayde) was taken/ and .xl. yeres that paſſed or Brute percyd Albyon: yt muſte folowe, ỳ Brute entred fyrſt thys ile of Albyon (as before is ſayd) in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thouſand and.lxiii.

Then by theſe foreſayd reaſons Brute toke poſſeſſion of this ile of Albyon/ in the yere of the worlde, as before is ſayde, before the buyldyng of the cytye of Rome, as by the foreſayd reaſons may be alſo prouyd.iiii. hundred and.vii.yeres: and before the incarnacyon of our bleſſyd ſauyour folowynge the ſame accompte/ a thouſande an hundred.xxx. and vi. yeres.

¶Thus endeth thaccomptynge of the yeres of the worlde, from the creacyon of Adam vnto the incarnacyon of Chryſte.

THE PROLOGE

When I aduertyſe in my remembraunce
The manyfolde ſtoryes, in order duely ſette
Of kyngꝭ & prynces, ỳ whylom had gouernaūce
Of Rome and Italye, and other further ſette
As of Jewes & Gzekes, the whyche haue no let
But that men may ſe in order ſeryoully
How longe they reygned, & how ſucceſſyuely.

Of Fraunce and other I myght lykewyſe reporte
To theyr great honour, as of them doth appere,
But to Englande yf I ſhall reporte
Ryght myſty ſtoryes, doutfull and vnclere
Of names, of tymes, and of the duraunt yere
That kynges or prynces ruled that famouſe yle
Almoſte vncertayne how I ſhuld guyde my ſtyle.

And for of cunnynge I am full deſtytute
To brynge to frame ſo great a myſtery:
I nyll preſume wythout other refute
To ioyne ſuche a worke, or yt to rectyfye
To me yt ſemyth ſo farre ſette awaye
In tyme of yeres, to other diſcordaunt
That to my dull wytte yt is not atteynaunt

To brynge in order a thynge of ſuche weyght
And cauſe yt to agre wyth other olde ſtoryes,

But yt to temptte to them that ben sleyght
And harpe in lecture, and haue kepte theyr studyes
And sought the bokes of many olde hystoryes
And haue in cronycles full experyence
To frame suche a worke by theyr great prudence.

And I lyke ỹ prẽtyse, that hewyth the rough stone
And bryngeth yt to square wyth hard strokes & many
That the mayster after may it ouergone
And pryntc therin his fygures and his storye
Any so to worke yt after his proporcynary
That yt may appere to all that shall yt se
A thynge ryght perfyte, and well in eche degre.

So haue I now sette out this rude warke
As rough as the stone not cõmen to the square
That the lerned, and the studyed clerke
May yt ouer polyshe, and clene do yt pare
Flowryshe yt wyth eloquence, wherof yt is bare
And frame yt in order, that yet is out of toyut
That it with olde authours may gree in euery poynt.

Beseechynge hym, that wyll so take the payne
Or any other, that lyste on this to loke
where any errour in this by hym is sayne
It to correcte and mende this rude boke
For by hym that neuer yet any order toke
Or gre ak scole, or sought for great cunnynge
This worke is gadered wyth small vnderstandynge.

Not for any pompe, nor yet for great mede
This worke haue I taken on hande to compyle
But onely bycause that I wolde sprede
The famouse honour of this fertyle yle
That hath contynued by many a longe whyle
In excellent honour wyth many a royall guyde
Of whom the dedes haue sprong to the worlde wyde.

But of those dedes me lyste not here to shewe
For in the sequele they shall well appere
And in shorte processe, and in as wordes fewe
As I goodly may, I shall lynke in fere
The storyes of Englande, and fraunce so dere
That to the reader yt may well be sayne
what kynges to gyder ruled thyle landes twayne.

And in the prymcypyll of the regne of euery kyng

As well of one and other more and lesse
what pere of the worlde he toke begynnynge
To guyde his realme: and farther besynesse
I wyll eke take, to shewe and expresse
what terme of peres euery prynce dyd reygne.
And in what honour he dyd his tyme mayntcyne.

The tyme also how longe the Brytons ruled,
And how by Saxons they lastely were put oute.
Then of Danes/ whyche both landes dekoyled
By theyr outrage/and of theyr fury stoute:
Of whom both nacyons stode longe in great doute,
Tyll Fraunce wyth them allyed by maryage
And Englande lastely voyded that lynage.

Then how the Normayns, by wyllyā cōquerour,
Entrede this lande, and helde the seygnory
I certayne of tyme, tyll the hygh gouernour
Restored the blode of Saxons enterly
And of the Scottes, that neuer coude apply
To kepe theyr allegeaunce/ but many a tyme rebelled
And to be true were full often compelled.

The fatall warre, that hath dured so longe
Twene Fraūce and Englande, to both theyr damage
And of the peace, that hath ben vnderfonge
Both by great othes/ and eke by maryage.
Of walys gerysheneſſe/ and of theyr lyght dotage
How they were scourged for theyr vnstedfastnesse,
wyth dyuers other, whyche I shall after expresse.

And for that London, that auncyent cytye
Hath euer persueryd in vertuous noblesse
To the great honour, as may consydred be,
Of all this lande/ in welth and great largesse
Therfore I thynke somwhat to expresse
Of theyr good order, and cyuyle polycy
That they so longe haue ruled theyr cytye by.

And of theyr rulers/ as they are yerely chosen
To rule the cōmonte by theyr discrecyon,
I shall you shewe, and to you disclosen
The names of mayres and shyryffes of that towne
And all suche actes/ as by reuolucyone
In theyr dayes fyll/ so that there shall appere
The prynces actes, whyche chaunged yere by yere.

Of Fraunce

Of Fraunce also the cronycle shall ensew
In his dewe order/ so that ye may knowe,
when they beganne theyr prynces to renewe
And from the seruage when they were kept lowe
Of the Romayns/ whom they dyd ouerthrowe
And of theyr names that they whylom dyd chaunge
Of theyr fyrst baptysme, and of theyr names straunge.

Thus in this boke maye you here and se
Of bothe landes the cronycles entyere,
wyth other maters/ whyche regystred be
Of olde wryters, suche as wrote full clere
Actes of prynces done both farre and nere,
And them engrosed wyth great dylygence:
wherby to theyr folowers myght growe experyence.

Into. vii. partes I haue this boke dyuyded
So that the reder may chose where he wyll.
The fyrste conteyneth, how the Brytons guyded
This lande from Brute, Molinncius vntyll.
And from Molinncius I haue sette for skyll
To the nynthe yere of kynge Cassibelan
The seconde parte/for that the Romaynes than

Conquered Brytayne. And thens to Seuerne
The thyrde parte I haue also assygned.
The fourth endyth then at Constantyne.
The fyfte at Cadwalader I haue also dyffned.
At the conquest I haue eke determyned
The. vi. parte. And of the Seuenth or laste
At our redoubted prynce I haue the ende caste.

Henry the. vii. whom god preserue and saue,
And hym defende from all aduersyte,
Beseechynge them that wyll the labour haue
This boke to rede/ or any parte to se
That where defaute is/ yt may corrected be
wythout dysdayne/ and that they wyll support
And ayde this worke wyth all theyr comforte.

And for this boke includeth storyes fele,
And towchyth thynges done in sondry place
So that one tyme muste wyth an other dele
To kepe the yeres, the tyme, and the space
Therfore this name yt shall now purchace
(Concordaunce of storyes) by me prouyded
The auctor sans nome fynally deuysed.

And for thys worke may haue the better spede
To prayer me thynketh yt is ryght necessarye
That I shulde fall, consyderynge my nede
That I must haue, for lacke of due studye,
where through that connynge and perfyte memory
Of thynges taken, when I was ponge and hynde
Ben farre sette of, and putte from my mynde.

By this is ignorraunce now comen in place
And oblyuyon hath sette in hys fote
So that knowlege from me they done race,
wherby in olde auctours I myght fynde some boot
In latyn and frenche, that in theyr dytees swoot
These olde wryters haue so compendyously
Sette the olde storyes in order dylygently.

But in this prayer I thynke nought to be sted
As dyddyn these poetys in theyr olde dayes,
whyche made theyr prayers to goddes abused
As Iupiter and Mars, that in theyr olde lawes,
were named goddes, and fayned in theyr sawes,
That they were goddes of batayll and rychesse
And hadde in them great vertue and prowesse.

For what may helpe these fayned goddes all
As Saturne or Mercury, or yet bryght Apollo,
Bacchus, or Neptune, or Pluto the thrall,
Eolus, Mor ynos, or blynde Cupido,
Or yet that goddesse, the fayre Iuno,
Diana, or Pallas, or Ceres the fre,
Or yet the Mulys that ben thrpes three

wherto shulde I call vnto Caliope
Moder of Orpheus, wyth swete armony
That of eloquence hath the souerayne,
Or to Carmentis, whyche by her fyrste studye
The latyne letters foude out perfytly
Syns all these were mynystres of god immortall
And hadde in them no power dyuynall

wherfore to the lorde, that is celestyall
I wyll now crye, that of hys influence
Of grace and mercy, he wyll a droppe lette fall,
And sharpe my wytte wyth suche experience,
That this may fynysshe wyth his assystence,
wyth fauour of the virgyn, his moder moste excellent,
To whom I thus pray, wyth myude and hole entent.

Aßit principio ſancte Maria meo.

Moſte bleſſyd lady, comforte to ſuche as calle
To the for helpe, in eche neceſſyte,
And what thou aydeſt, may in no wyſe apalle
But to the beſt is formyd in lyke degre:
wherfore good lady, I praye yt may pleaſe the
At my begynnynge my penne ſo to lede
That by thyne ayde this worke may haue good ſpede

THE FYRST CHAPITER.

Syns that I haue ſhewed vnto you, what ſeaſon and tyme of the peres of ỳ world Brute entred fyrſte this yle of Albyon: me ſemyth yt is cõue nyent, that I alſo ſhew how and for what cauſe yt was fyrſte named Albyon. The whych ſo toke fyrſt name, as wytneſſyth Strabo and other wri ters, of the whyte clyues or rockes, ỳ ſtande vppon the ſees ſyde, and are farre ſeen in clere wether and bryght dayes. wherof it was of olde wryters named Albyon, as yt were the whyte lande. whyche ſayenge affermyth al ſo Ranulphe & dyuerſe other: ſo that yt may certaynly be knowen, that yt toke not that fyrſte name of Albyne doughter of Dioclecyan kyng of Sy rye, as in the engliſhe cronycle is af fermyd. For in all olde ſtoryes or cro nycles is not founde, that any ſuche kynge of that name reygned ouer the Syriens, or yet Aſſyriens: nor yet any ſuche ſtorye, that his .xxx. doughters ſhuld .lee theyr .xxx. huſbandes, as there is ſurmyſed, was put in wri tynge. whyche, yf eny ſuch wonder hadde ben there wrought, ſhulde not haue ben vnremembred of the wry: ters & auctours of that partyes: con ſyderynge that many leſſe wonders are put in wrytynge by the ſayde wry ters. wherfore it ys more apparant, ỳ yt toke that fyrſt name of Albyon, as aboue is ſayde / then of Albyne dough ter of the ſayde Dioclecyon.

And as to the Geaũtes that Brute founde in this yle at his arryuayll, they myght be brought into this lãde by ſome meane of ſhyppes or other wyſe, rather then to be borne of thoſe women, as there alſo is imagyned.

Of this yle the auctours Alpherd and Beda tell many wonders / which in the fyrſt boke of Policronycon are ſuffycyently towched, where it is ſayd, ỳ this yle is called an other worlde. For as ſayth Solinus, the edge of the frenche cliffe ſhuld be the ende of the world, yf this yland ne were not. Many other thynges ben there ſpecy fyed, the whyche I paſſe ouer.

Thys yle is cloſyd on all ſydes with ỳ ſee / & ſtretcheth in length out of the ſowth into the north / haynge in the ſowtheſt ſyde Fraunce / in the ſouth yland of Spayne / in the north ỳ coũtre of Norway / & in ỳ weſte the coũtre of Irland. And hath in length from Totneſſe to Catenelley .xb. my les beyonde Mychell Stowe in Cor newayle vpon. viii. hundred myles. And to reken the brede from ſaynte Dauyds lande in walys called Me nema to Douer clyffes: it cõteyneth after moſte wryters .iii. hundred my les. And yf yt be reknyd from ỳ ſayd place in walys, vnto yarmouthe in Norffolk, not ſo much, but leſſe by .lx. myles, after ſome wryters. And Be da ſaith it cõteineth ouer .CC. miles.

And

And this ile was fyrste as aboue ys sayde, named Albyon: and secundaryly Britayne after Brute: & thyrdely Anglia of Anglis by cõmaũdmẽt of Egberte kynge of Anglys, and of westsarons: all be yt that after some wryters yt was called Anglia, after the name of the quene of this lande named Anglia: albe it that therof is founde lytell authorzyte.

This ile was fyrst cõqueryd by ỹ Romayns / and so contynued vnto them as trybutary, and vnder theyr rule, as after in the ende of the storȝ of Gracianus shall appere, ouer. iiii. hũdred yeres: secondely by the Sarõs: thyrdely by ỹ Danys: & fourthly by the Normans: and was deuyded fyrst by Brute in thre partes / as in the storie shall appere folowynge.

THE .II. CHAPITER.

BRute of the auncyent and noble blode of Troyans, dyscendyd of Eneas a Troyan and of the doughter of Pryame kynge of the Troyans: whyche Eneas receyued of his sayde wyfe a sonne named Ascanius, the whych was kynge of the countre of Italye nexte after hys father Eneas.

For so yt was, that after the forsayde cytye of Troy was, as before is sayde, by the Grekes subuertyd: Eneas, whyche entendyd to haue sauyd from dethe the fayre Polixena doughter of kynge Pryam / was for that dede by Agamemnon, duke or chyefe leder of the Grekes, eryled frõ Troy: the whyche accõpanyed wyth a great nomber of Troyans, wythin iii. yeres after his departynge from Troye, landed in ỹ coũtre of Italye. And there after dyuerse conflyctys and batayles hadde wyth Latynus then kynge of Italye: he maryed by the agrement of the sayde Latinus, hys doughter named Lauina. Upon ỹ which he gatte a sonne, and named hym Syluius Posthumus: of the whych after some wryters descendyd Brutus fyrste kynge of Albyon. But for a more concordaunce of this worke and conuenyencye of yeres, As testyfyeth Policronia, Guydo de Colũna, wryter of storyes, & other: Ascanius the fyrste sonne of Eneas, gotten vppon hys fyrste wyfe, hadde a sonne named Siluius / whyche after some wryters is named Siluius Eneas: this Siluius Eneas was father to Brute. Of this is dyuers opynyons, whereof some are manyfestly shewed in the .xxvii. chappter of the seconde boke of Polycronycon.

Then yt folowyth in ỹ story: this Brute beyng of the age of .xv. yeres, slewe his father in shotyng at a wyld beste. And as some authours haue / he slewe also hys moder in tyme of his byrth. But for the laste dede, by agrement of all wryters, he was banyshed the countre: and after by fortune landed wyth his conpanye in a prouynce of Grece / where at ỹ tyme reygned a kyng named Pandrasus, or after some wryters Pandarus: ỹ whyche kynge, as affermyth Geffrey of Monmouth, was lynyally descendyd of the blode of Achylles.

In this prouynce Brute founde many Troyans, as captiuys & thrall to the Grekes, wyth the whyche he conspyred & faughte wyth ỹ Grekes sondry tymes: & lastely for a fynall concorde tooke to wyfe the doughter of the sayd Pandrasus, named Ignogen. After whyche maryage solemnyzyd: the sayde Brute, by coũsayle of ỹ Troyans, with a certayne of shyppes well bytayled / departed out of Grece, and soughte his aduenture. whyche after many daungers of the

see

passed/he landed wyth his company in a parte or yle of Affrica named (as sayth Guydo and other) Leogecia: wythin whyche yle at those dayes stode an old temple dedycate in ꝑ honoure of Diua or Diana a goddesse of myldyleued people. The whyche temple, when Brute had approchyd anon he yode into yt/where kneelyng before the auter, wyth great deuocyon, sayde these verlys folowynge.

Diua potens nemorum: terror syluestribus apris,
Cui licet australis ire per æthereos,
Infernasq; domos, terrestria iura resolue,
Et die quas terras nos habitare velis.
Dic certam sedem qua te veneremur in ævum,
Qua tibi virgineis templa dicabo choris.

The whyche verlys are to be vnderstanden in our moder tonge as after is expowned.

Celestyall goddesse, that weldest fryth & woode
The wylde boze & beestes thou feryst by thy myght
Guyder of shypmen passyngr the ragyons flode.
The infernall howses, boz and the erth of tyght,
Beholde, and serche, and shewe where ꝙ shall syght
Tell the certayne place, where everlastyngly
A temple of Virgyns to the ꝙ shall edyfye.

After whyche prayer & obseruaunces after ꝑ pagan ryte, with great deuocyon done and exercysed aboute ꝑ auter of ꝑ sayd goddesse or idolle in those days vsed: Brute fell in a slepe. In tyme of whyche slepe apperyd to hym the sayde goddesse, and sayd to hym in maner & forme as folowyth.

Brute sub occasum solis trans Gallica regna
Insula in oceano est vndeq; clausa mari:
Insula in oceano est habitata gigantibus olim,
Nunc deserta quidem, gentibus apta tuis.
Hic de prole tua reges nascentur, & ipsis
Totus terræ subditus orbis erit.
Hanc pete, namq; tibi sedes erit in illa perhennis:
Hic fiet natis altera Troia tuis.

The whyche verlys may be englysshed as here after folowyth.

Brute, farre by weste, ouer the kynde of Frannce
Ys yle in occean there ly, all closed wyth the see
This yle wilth gyauntes whilom inhabyt by thaire
Now beynge deserte, as apte for thy people & the.
In this yle thy holy kynges borne shall be
And of this yle, thou shalt be lorde and kynge
Serche this, for here a perpetuall see to the
And here to thy children a new Troy shall spryng.

THE .III. CHAPITER.

When Brute awoke and remembred hym of this vysyon: & nō he called to hym such as he most trusted/ and shewed to them what he had seen & harde. wherof they all beynge greatly reioysed: caused great fares to be made, in the whyche they cast wyne, mylke, and other lycours, wyth dyuerse aromate and spyces of moste swetteste odour, as in the olde pagan lawes and rytes were vsed. whyche obseruaunce wyth other done: wyth great ioye and myrthe they entryd into theyr shyppes, and pulled vp theyr sayles, & toke theyr course westwarde. And so sayled by the space of .xxx. dayes passynge by many auentures and daungers/ as of Phylenes, ꝑ lake called Lacus salinarum or salte lake, or the place where salte is made, the ryuer called Malea, & Hercules pyllers/ & came lastly to the see Tyrrhen or Turon, where he encoūtred wyth a small nauy of shyppes/of the whyche a Troyane and neuew to Brute called Corineus was captayne. whē eyther of them had saluted other, & reioysed of theyr metynge: they to gyder made towarde land, and landyd in the prouynce of Gallia, now called Guyan: of whyche prouynce at that daye a prynce named Goffarr was ruler. The whyche hauyng knowlege of ꝑ landynge of these straunges: wyth his power made towarde them, & to them

them gaue batayll. But the Troyãs were victours and ouercame Gyoffarius wyth all his knyghtes.

In this batayll was slayne a noble Troyane & neuewe to Bzute named Turonus, and there buryed. wherfoze in remembzaunce of ỳ sayd Turonus Bzute buylded there a cytye, and named yt Turon as some authours testifye. But it thuld seme by the sayenge of Polycronyca/ that thylke cytye Turon was buylded afoze: all be yt that ỳ authour of Cronica cronicaꝝ affermyth it to be buylded by Bzute in remembzaũce of his sayd cosyn Turonus, whych cytye at this daye is yet of great fame wyth in the realme of Fraunce.

This done, the sayde Bzute & Corineus wyth theyz Troyans toke agayne shyppynge / the whyche after iii. dayes oz fewe dayes saylyng, landyd at an hauen oz pozte in Cozne-wayll, named at this day Totnesse: & from thens yode serchyng the land and coũtre, the yere as befoze is sayd iiii. thousande.lxiii/ befoze the buylding of Rome folowynge the fozesayde accompte.iiii.hundzed and.xx. befoze the incarnacyon of Cryste.xi. hundzed, & .xxxvi: and befoze Alexander the great conquered the wozlde, eyght hundzed and. xi: also befoze any kynge reygned ouer the Frenshe men/ oz that they were clere quyte of theyz trewage agayne ỳ Romayns, vb. hundzed and. lvi.

THE .IIII. CHAPITER.

REtourne we then to Bzute/ whyche after his landyng in this ile of Albyon: circuyd & serchyd ỳ land ouer all/ and fouñde yt full fertyle & plenteous of wode and of grasse, and gat nyshed with many fayze ryuers and stremes. And in his trauaylynge the lande/ he was encountred wyth many great and myghty gyauntes/ the whych he destroyed. Among ỳ which as reherseth that Englyshe cronicle: was one of passyng strength named Gogmagog / the whyche he caused to wzestle wyth Cozineus oz Cozyne his neuewe besyde Douer: in which wzestlinge that gyaũt brake a rybbe in the syde of Cozineus. where thorough Cozineꝰ beyng soze amoued, wyth great strength suppzysed that gyaunt, & cast hym downe the rocke of Douer. By reason wherof as affermyth ỳ said englyshe cronicle, ỳ place was named the fall of Gogmagog.

But after that ỳ name was chaũged & called the fall of Douer/ which to this daye endurith. Foz this dede and other Bzute gaue vnto his sayd neuewe Cozineus oz Cozyn the hole countre of Cozne-wayll.

And whẽ Bzute had thus destroyed the gyauntes, & serchyd the sayde yle of Albyõ thozoughly: he cõmyng by ỳ ryuer of Thamis, foz pleasure ỳ he had in that ryuer, with also the cõmodytyes therunto adioynynge/ began there to buylde a cytye in ỳ remẽbzaunce of the cytye of Troye lately subuerted, & named it Troynouant/ whyche is as myche to saye as newe Troy: whych name endured tyll the cõmynge of Lud after kynge of Bzytayne vpon the tyme of a thousande.ix.viii. yere. But ỳ sayd kyng cõmaundyd yt to be called Luddys towne/ which by shoztnesse of speche is now called London.

Then whẽ Bzute had thus buylded his cytye, & saw ỳ he was stablyshed in his realme quyetly: he thẽ by thaduise of his lozdes/ cõmaunded ỳ sayd ile & coũtre to be called Bzitayn and his people Bzytons/ and so contynued his reygne pzosperously.

In the

In the whyche tyme he stablysshed and ordred his people to lyue in tyllynge of theyr lande and otherwyse.

This Brute had receyued of his wyfe thre sonnes, wherof the fyrste was named Locrinus or Locryne / the seconde Cambrius or Cambre / and the third Albanactus or Albanakt. To the fyrst and eldest, he betoke this yle of Brytane, the whyche after was named myddell Englande / whych is to meane Troynouant, wyth all the countres there about lyenge, cōteynynge est, west, & sowth. And for this cause, and for yt shuld sounde towarde the name of the sayd Locryne: this parte of Brytayne was longe after called Loegria or Logiers.

To the seconde sonne Cambre, he beset or appoynted to hym the countre of walys / the whyche was fyrste named after hym Cambria. This in the eest syde was somtyme departed from Englande by the ryuer of Seuerne: But now in the north syde the ryuer named Dee at Chester departeth England and walys: and in the sowth the ryuer that is called Uaga at the castell of Stryngelyng parteth Englande and walys.

To the thyrde sonne Albanakt, he betoke the north parte of this yle, and named yt Albyon / or more verily the sayd countre toke after the name of the sayd thirde sonne, and was called Albania. This countre was after named Scotlande / and is deuyded from Loegria or Logiers, as sayth the holy Beda by two armys of the see, but they mete not. The eest arme of these two begynneth about ii. myles from the mynster of Eburcurynge, in the west syde of Penultoñ. The weste arme of those twayne hath in the ryght syde or somtyme hadde, a stronge cyte named Aclud, whych in the Brettysshe tunge was called Clyntkon, & stādeth vppon the ryuer called Clynt

Thus whē Brute had diuided this yle of Brytayne, as before is shewed in thre partes, and hadde holden the pryncypate therof nobly by the terme of. xxiii. yeres after most cōcordāce of writers: he dyed, and was enteryd or buryed at Troynouāt or London.

THE .v. CHAPITER.



Locrinus or Locryne the fyrst or eldest son of Brute was made kynge of Brytayne of the countre of Logiers / the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousande .lxxx. and .vii. The whych helde to his parte, as sayth Policronicon, and also Guydo de Columna, the countre that stretcheth from the south see vnto the ryuer of Humbre, as before is expressyd.

whyle this Locrinus thus reygned in Logiers: his brother Albanactus beynge ruler, as before is sayd of Albania or Scotlande, was warreyd by a duke, whome the cronycle of Engāld nameth Humbre / the which slewe Albanakt in playne batayll.

ye shall vnderstande the this Humber at the daye of his commynge in to Albania was not named Humber / but after olde wryters he was called kynge of Hunnys or kyng of Sithia without other addicyon. This kyng as before is sayde, after he thus subduyd Albanactus / held the lande of Albania, tyll after the Locrinus wyth his brother Cambre, gathered a gret power of men of armys, and rode agaynst the sayde kynge of Hunnys / and by strength of theyr Britons chasyd and subduyd the sayde Hunnys so sharpely, that many of thē with theyr kyng were drowned in a ryuer, which departyth England and Scotland. And for so myche as to the wryter of the

the storye of Brytons, his name was declared to be Humber: therfore the sayde auctor affermyth, that the sayd Humber ỳ ryuer toke the fyrste name of hym / whyche yet contynueth to this daye.

Furthermore testyfyeth the sayde auctour, that after this victory thus obteyned by these two forsayde brotherne: this Locrinus enamowred hym selfe vppon a fayre wenche named Estrylde, and doughter of the forenamed Humber/and her kept vnlefully by a certayne of tyme. where wyth his wyfe named Guendoloena beynge sore dyscontent / erected her fader and frēdes to make warre vppon the sayde Locryne her husbande. In the whyche warre lastly he was slayne/when he hadde reygned or ruled Loegria or Logiers after the cordaunce of moste writers.xx.yeres: and was buryed by his fader in the cytye of Troynouaunt/leuyng after hym a ponge sonne gottē vppon his wyfe named Madan.

THE VI. CHAPITER.

Guēdoloena or Guēdoleyne the wyfe of Locrinus, a doughter of Corineꝰ duke of Cornewayle/for so myche as Madan her sonne was ponge to gouerne the lande: was by cōmune assent of all ỳ Brytōs made ruler of the yle of Brytayne, the yere of the worlde.iiii.thousande, a hūdred and.vii. And so hauyng possession of the sayde yle, wele and dyscretly she ruled yt, to the comfort of her subiectes/ tyll the tyme her sonne Madan came vnto hys lawfull age. At the whiche season she gaue ouer the rule and dompynon to hym/ after she had ruled (as before ys sayde) thys yle xb. yeres.

THE VII. CHAPITER.

Madan the sonne of Locryne & of Guēdolyne before named: was made ruler of Britayne, in the yere of ỳ worlde iiii. thousande. C. and .xrii. Of thys is lytell or no memory made by any wryters / excepte that some wryte of hym, that he vsed great tyranny amonge his Brytons. Neuertheleſſe all or the more pte of writers agreen/ that he ruled this ile of Britayn by ỳ terme of.xl.yeres. At ỳ ende of which terme, he beynge at his dysporte or huntyng, was of wyld bestes or wolues slayne or deuoured: and left after him two sonnes, as sayth Policronica, named Menprecius & Manliꝰ.

THE VIII. CHAPITER.

Menprecius the eldest sonne of Madan was made ruler of Brytayne/ in the yere of the worlde. iiii thousande.C.lxii. But he reygned not lōge in peace. For his ponger broder Manlius, of a malycyous and couetyse mynde entendynge to be kynge, and to expell or subdue his brother: excyted the Britons in such wyse to rebell agayne Menprecius, ỳ great and dedly warre contynued longe amonge them. Howe be yt lastely by mediacyons of frendes, a daye of communycacyon in louynge maner atwene these two bretherne was appoynted. At whyche daye of assemble Menpriciꝰ by treason slewe his brother Manlius / after whose deth he lyued in more tranquylite and rest. where through he fyll into slowth, and by meane of slowth into vnlefull lykynge and lechery/ and by that

that vyce into hatered of his subiectes by takynge of theyre wyues and chyldet: and fynally became so vnhappy, ꝑ he forsoke his lefull wyfe and concubynes, and fyll into the synne of Sodomye. Thus from one vice he grew into a nother, so that he became odyble to god and man: and lastely goyng on huntynge, and lost of his people, was distroyed of wyld bestes, when he had reygned .xx. yeres: leuyng after hym a goodly ponlynge begoten of his lefull wyfe named Ebzanke.

THE .IX. CHAPITER.

EBzanke the sonne of Menyzcius was made ruler of this lande of Bzytayne, in the yere of the wozlde foure thousande a hundzed, lxxx. and. ii: and had, as testyfyeth Policronica, Gaufryde, & other wzyters .xxi. wyues: of the whych he regreped .xx. sonnes and. xxx. doughters, wherof the fayzest was named Gwales, oz after some Gualea. He sent these doughters to Albia Siluius, whych was the .xi. kynge of Italye, oz the .viii kynge of Latynes, to the ende to haue them maryed to the blood of Troyans. This Ebzanke was also a man of fayze stature, & of great strengthe, & by his power and mpght he enlarged his domynyon, in so myche that he wanne and occupyed a great parte of Germania by ꝑ ayde and helpe of the Latynes, and retourned thes wyth great pzay & ryches. After whych retourne, he buylded the cytye of Caerbzank now called yozke: whych shulde be, as sayth the authour named Flos histozianꝝ, oz the Floure of histozyes wzyten in frenche, in the .xxiii. yere of ꝑ reygne of the sayd Ebzanke, which accompt to folow, ye shuld seme that Troynouant oz London was buylded before the sayd cytye of yozke, about an hundzed and .xl. yeres: supposyng the cytye of London to be begonne in the seconde yere of Bzutes reygne.

Also he buylded in Albania oz Scotlande the castell of Maydens, the whych is called Edynbozgh. After which edyfyces ended and made: he wyth a great armye sayled into Gallia nowe Fraunce, and subdued the Gallis, and retourned wyth great triumphe and rychesse. And when he had guyded this lande of Bzytayne nobly by the terme of .lx. yeres, after moste concozdaunce of wzyters, he dyed, and was buryed at Caerbzank oz yozke, leuynge after hym foz hys heyze his eldest sonne (as sayth Gaufryde) named Brute Greneshyelde.

THE .X. CHAPITER.

BRute Greneshyelde, the sonne of Ebzanke, was made gouernour of this lande of Bzytayne, the yere of the wozlde. iiii. thousande. ii. hundzed and xlii. Of this Bzute is no memozy made touchynge any fame, excepte ꝑ Gaufryde sayth that he ruled this lande of Bzytayne (his fader lyuynge) a certayne tyme, & after his fader by the terme of. xii. yeres. The whyche yeres expyzed oz endyd: he dyed, and lyeth buryed at Caerbzank oz yozke, leuynge after hym a sonne named Leyll.

THE .XI. CHAPITER.

LEillus oz Leyz son of Bzute Greneshielde, was made ruler of Bzytayne, in ꝑ yere of ꝑ wozld iiii. M. CC. & liiii. This was a iuste mã & a louer of peace & equyte, & in his tyme made the town of Caerleyz oz Carlyle, and ruled this lande well and honourably by the terme of .xxv. yeres, as testyfyeth the fozenamed Gaufryde: and after dyed, and was buryed at Caerleyz be fozesayde.

But of this Leyz speketh some dele the aboue named authour Floure of ꝑ hystozies

hystoryes sayeng, ꝑ in the ende of his reygne he fyll to slowth and vnlefull lykyng of his body: by meane wher of cyuyle stryfe began to grow with in this realme/ꝑ which was not pacifyed by some termes after his dayes: the whyche sayenge is not denyed by the forsayd authour Gaufrid. This Leyll lefte after hym a sonne named Lud, or after some wryters he was named Lud Hurdibras.

THE XII. CHAPITER.

LUd or Lud Hurdibras ꝑ son of Leyll, was made ruler of the lande of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde .iiii.thousande.ii. hundred and.lxxix. This also of Gaufryde is called Hurdibras: the whyche after he was stablyshed in his reygne/ appeasyd and drewe to accorde of the dyscorde and varyaunce that hadde spronge in his fathers lyues tyme. The whych discretely appeasyd and endyd/he buylded the towne of Kaerkyn, nowe called Caunterbury: the towne also of Kaerguen, now callyd wynton or wynchester: and also a towne called Moũt Paladour, now named Septon or Shaftisbury. In the tyme of buyldyng, of which town of Septon, as affermyth myne authour Gaufride, an egle there spake certayn wordes, ꝑ which he sayth he wyll not declare or wryte for any certaynte. Thus when this sayde Lud hadde ruled this lande nobly by the terme of.xxxix. yeres, he dyed, & lefte after hym a sonne named Baldud.

THE .XIII. CHAPITER.

BAldud ꝑ sonne of Lud Hurdibras, was made gouernoure of Brytayne in the yere of the worlde iiii. thousand. iii.hundred and.xviii. This as testifyed Gaufryde, Polycronica, and other, was well and sufficyently instructe in the conuynges or sciẽces of astronomy & nigromancye. By thẽ he made the hote bathes wythin the town of Caerbadon, now named Bathe: the whyche towne or cytye he also buyldyd. But to that repugnyth wyllyam de Malmesbury, sayenge that the forsayd hote bathes were made by the industrye, or of the industry of Julius cesar fyrste emperour of Rome. This Baldud as affermyth the forsayd authour Gaufride: taught this lore of nigromãcy thorough his realme: & fynally toke in yt such pryde & presumpcyon/ꝑ he toke vpõ him to flie in ꝑ ayer. But he fyll vpon the temple of his god Apolyn, & theron was all to torne/ when he had ruled Brytayne by the space of .xx.yeres, leuynge after hym a son named Leyr.

THE .XIIII. CHAPITER.

LEyr ꝑ sonne of Baldud was made ruler ouer ꝑ Brutõs, the yere of ꝑ worlde.iiii.M. ccc.& xxxviii. This Leyr was noble of cõdicyõs, & guyded his land & subiectes in great welth. He made ꝑ towne of Caerleyr nowe called Leycester or Leycester. And all be yt ꝑ this man helde longe the pryncypate of Brytayne: yet of hym is nothynge left worthy memory, excepte that Gaufryde sayth, ꝑ he receyued of his wyfe .iii. doughters onely wythout any son/ whych were named Gonorilla, Ragan, and Cordeilla, the whych he mych loued/but moste specially he loued the yongest, Cordeilla by name.

whẽ this Leyr or Leyth after some wryters, was fallen in competente age, to knowe the mynde of his thre doughters, he fyrst asked Gonorilla the eldeste howe well she loued hym: the whych callyng her goddes to recorde, sayd she loued hym more then her owne soule. wyth this answere the father beynge well contented, demaunded of Ragan the seconde doughter, howe well she loued hym.

To

To whom she answered, and affermynge wyth great othes, sayde that she coude not wyth her tong expresse the great loue that she bare to hym: affermynge furthermore, that she loued hym aboue all creatures. After these pleasaũt answeres had of those two doughters, he called before hym Cordeilla ỳ yongest. The whych vnderstãdyng ỳ dyssymulacyõ of her .ii. susters, entẽdyng to proue her fader, sayd: most reuerent fader where my ii. systers haue dyssymuled wyth the with their pleasaũt wordes fruteles, I knowyng ỳ great loue & faderly zele, that toward me euer before this time thou hast borne (for ỳ whych I may not speke to the otherwyse thẽ my cõscyence ledyth me) therfore I saye to the father I haue loued the euer as my fader, & shall cõtynually whyle I lyue, loue the as my naturall father. And yf thou wylt further be inquisityfe of the loue that I to the bere: I ascertayne the, that asmyche as thou arte worthy to be beloued/ euen so myche I loue the and no more.

The fader wyth this answere beynge discõtent: maryed his .ii. elder doughters, that one vnto the duke of Cornewayll, & that other vnto the duke of Albania or Scotlande & deuyded wyth thẽ two in maryage his lande of Britayne after his deth, and the one halfe in hand duryng his naturall lyfe. And for the thyrde Cordeilla reserued nothynge.

It so fortuned after, that Aganippus, whych the cronycle of England named Agamp and kyng of Fraũce/ harde of ỳ beaute and womãhode of Cordeilla, and sent vnto her fader, & aryd her in maryage. To whome yt was answered, that the kynge wold gladly gyue to hym his doughter, but for dowar he wolde not departe with: for he had all promysed vnto hys other two doughters.

Aganippus thus by his messagyers enfourmed: remembred the vertues of the forenamed Cordeilla/ & wythoute promesse of dowar maried the sayde Cordeilla.

But here is to be noted/ ỳ where this Aganippus or Agamp is called in dyuerse cronicles kyng of Fraũce: yt can not agre with other hystories, nor wyth the cronycle of Fraunce. For yt is testyfyed by Polycronica, by Peter Pictauẽce, by mayster Robert Gagwyne, by byshop Antonyne and many other cronicles: that lõge after thys daye was no kynge in Fraunce/ nor longe after yt was called Fraunce: but at this daye the inhabytauntes therof were called Galli, and were trybutaryes vnto Rome wythoute kynge, tyll the tyme of Valentinianus emperour of Rome/ as hereafter in this worke shall be manyfestly shewed.

The storye of Britons sayth, that in the tyme that Leyr reygned in Britayne: the land of Fraunce was vnder the dompynon of .xii. kynges, of the whych Aganippus shuld be one. The whyche sayenge is full vnlyke to be trew, whych myght be prouyd by many reasons, which I passe ouer for length of tyme.

THE .XV. CHAPITER.

Hen yt foloweth in the story, after this Leyr was fallen in age, these forsayde two dukes thynkyng longe or the lordshyp of Brytayne was fallen to theyr handes: arose agayne theyr father (as testifyeth Gaufryde) and beraft hym the gouernaunce of the land vppon certayne cõdycyons to be contynued for terme of lyfe: the whyche in processe of tyme more and more were minyshyd, as well by Maglaunus as by Henynus huldãdes of the forenamed Gonorild & Ragan. But moste

displeased Leyr the vnkyndnesse of his two doughters, consyderynge theyr wordes to hym before spoken and sworne / and now founde & proued them all contrarye.

For the whyche he beyng of necessyte constrayned: fledde his lande, & sayled into Gallia, for to be comforted of his doughter Cordeilla. whereof she hauyng knowlege, of naturall kyndnesse cõforted hi: & after shewynge all the maner to her husbande, by his agrement receyued hym & his to her lordes courte / where he was cherished after her beste maner.

Longe yt were to shew vnto you ỹ circumstaunce of ỹ vtterans of the vnkyndnesse of his two doughters, and of the wordes of comfort gyuen to hym by Aganippus and Cordeilla, or of the coũsaile and purueyaũce made by the sayde Aganippus & his lordes for restorynge of Leyr agayn to his dominyõ. But fynally he was by the helpe of the sayde Aganippus restored agayne to his lordshyp / and so possessed, lyued as ruler & gouernour therof by the space of .iii. yeres after. In whych season dyed Aganippus. And when this Leyr had ruled this lande by the terme of .xl. yeres, as affermeth dyuerse cronycles, he dyed and was buryed at his towne of Caerleir or Leycestre: leuynge after hym for to inheryte the lande his doughter Cordeilla.

THE .XVI. CHAPITER.

COrdeilla the yongeste doughter of Leyr / was by assente of the Bryttons made lady of Brytayn / in the yere of ỹ world .iiii. thousande iii. hundred & .lxxxviii: the whyche guyded the lande full wysely by the tyme or space of .v. yeres complete. The whyche tyme erryued and rõne her .ii. neuewes called Margan and Cunedagꝰ, sonnes of her .ii. susters came vpon her land / and made therin great waste and destruccyon / and at the laste toke her and cast her into a stronge pryson / where she beynge dyspayred of ỹ recouery of her estate (as testifyeth Gaufryde) slewe her selfe, whenne she hadde reygned as before is declared, by the terme of fyue yeres.

THE .XVII. CHAPITER.

CUnedagius and Margan neuewes as before is sayde, of Cordeilla, departyd this lande of Brytayne betwene them, in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousand .iiii. hundred and .iii. That is to wyt the coũtrey ouer and beyond Humber fyll to Margan towarde Catenesley: and the other parte of the lande towarde weste as reherseth Gaufride, fyll to Cunedagius.

After two yeres were ronne & ended / some euyll dyspolyd came vnto Margan, and sayde, that to hym yt was great reproche and dyshonour (consyderynge that he was comen of Gonorilla the elder suster, & of Maglaunus her husbande / & Cunedag was descended of Ragan the yonger and Hemnius her husbande) that he had not ỹ rule of all ỹ land: to whych sedycyous plons Margan gyuynge credence, was supprysed with pryde and couetyse / and anon by theyr coũsayle assembled a great hoste & made warre vpon his sayde brother / brennynge and destroyeng his land without mercy. wherof Cunedag beynge ware, in all hast gaderyd his people: & after certayne message sent to hym of the reconcylyacyon / seynge there was no peace to be made, but by the iudgement of batayll, he mette with his brother in playne felde: where ỹ goddes were to hym so fauourable, that he slewe myche of the people of hys

his brother, and cõpellyd hym to fle. After whyche victory thus had, he purſued Margan from coũtre to coũtre, tyll he came wythin the countre or prouynce of Cambria or walys: in the whyche coũtre the ſayde Margan gaue one other batayll vnto his brother Cunedag: but for he was farre the weker, he there was ouercomen and ſlayne in the felde. whyche felde or coũtre, where the ſayd Margan fought & was ſlayne, is to thys daye called Glaumargan/ whych is to meane in our vulgare tung, Margan lande. And thus was Margan ſlayne, whan he hadde regned wyth his brother two yeres.

THE .XVIII. CHAPITER.

CUnedagius before named the ſonne of Hemnius and Ragan põger doughter or myddell doughter of Leyr, was made ruler and lorde of all Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thouſande .iiii. hundred .x.v. Of the whyche is nothyng worthy memorye lefte in wrytyng: but that he guyded ỹ lande after the deth of his brother well and honorably by the terme of .xxxiii. yeres. After which terme ended, he dyed and was buryed at Troynouant or London: leuynge for his heyre a ſonne (as teſtifyeth Gaufryde) named Rinallo or Rinallo/ or after ſome wryters Reynguolde.

THE .XIX. CHAPITER.

BJuallus the ſonne of Cunedagius, was made gouernoure of the Brytons/ in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thouſand .iiii. hundred and .xxxviii: the whyche of wryters is called fortunat and reſtfull. This Rinallus ruled ỹ Brytõs with great ſoberneſſe, & kepte the lande in great welthe and proſperyte/ all be yt that of hym is lefte no ſpecyall memorye of acte done in his tyme/ except myn authour ſayth, that in ỹ tyme of his reygne yt reyned blood by the ſpace of .iii. days contynually wythin the lande of Brytayne. After the whych reyne enſued ſo great excedynge nõber of multitude of flyes/ the which were to the people ſo noyous and cõtagyous, that they ſlewe myche people. And after that (as ſayth an olde authour, whoſe name is vnknowẽ) enſued great ſykeneſſe and mortalytie, to the great deſolacyon of thys ſayde lande.

Then yt foloweth in the ſtory, whẽ this Rinallus hadde reygned, after moſte cõcordaunce of wryters, by the terme of .xlvi. yeres: he dyed, & was buryed, as teſtifyeth the ſayde olde authour, at Caerbrank or yorke/ leuynge after hym a ſonne (as wytneſſyth Gaufride) named Gurguſtius.

In the tyme of the reygne of thys kynge, after moſte concorde of wryters: ỹ famous cytye of Rome ſhuld be buylded/ as is ſhewed more playnly in the treatyſe in the begynnyng of this warke.

THE .XX. CHAPITER.

GUrguſtius the ſonne of ỹ fore named Rinallus, was made ruler of Brytayne/ in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thouſane .iiii. hundred lxxxiii. This in ỹ cronicle of Englãd is named Gorbodiam ſonne of Reygnold. Of the which is lytell memorye made, other of his reygne or of his dedes by any authours or wryters of ỹ hyſtorye of Brytayne/ excepte the aboue named olde authoure, and the authoure called the floure of hyſtorres, wytneſſyth, that he reygned xxxviii. yeres: leuynge after hym none heyre of his bodye begotten/ and laſtely dyed and was buryed by his fader at Caerbrank or yorke.

Rome as aboue ys towched, was fyrſte buylded & edyfyed in the tyme

of Riuallus/and after moſte wryters In the yere of the worlde.iiii.thouſande.iiii.hundred.lxx: after the bupldyng of Troynouāt or London. iiii. hūdred .vii. yeres: whych folowyng that accompte ſhulde be in the. xxxii. yere of the forſayde Riuallus.

THE .XXI. CHAPITER.

SIſillius, or after ſome wryters, Siluius the brother of Gurguſtius, as affermeth the forēſayde olde cronycle, was made chyef ruler of Brytayne/ in the yere of the worlde. iiii. thouſande. v. hundred and.xxi.

This in ỹ engliſhe boke is named Seyſill. Of the whych is no mencyon made nother of his reygne nor dedes, excepte that Geffrey of Monmouth wryter of ỹ hyſtoryes of Brytons, ſayth that he reygned two yeres: whyche ſayenge is not accordaunte wyth other wryters. But more to the cōuenyency of tyme and agrement of other cronycters, accordyng to the ſayeng of the forenamed old authour: he reygned by ỹ terme of.xlix. yeres/ and after dyed & was buryed at Caerbadon or Bathe/ and lefte after hym none heyre of his body begotten.

THE XXII. CHAPITER.

IAgo or Lago/ ỹ coſyne of Gurguſtius, as wytneſſeth Gaufryde, as nerre inherytoure, was made gouernour of Britayne/in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thouſande.v. hundred .lxx. This alſo ys bmmynded of wryters, other for reſtfulneſſe of tyme, or elys for rudeneſſe of his dedes, that clerkes lyſte not to ſpede any tyme in wrytynge of ſuch dedes. Of hym is nothynge ſpecyfyed, ſauynge the forenamed olde authoure ioyneth to his tyme of reygne.xxv.yeres: and alſo he ſayth he dyed wythoute iſſue, and was buryed by hys coſyn at Caerbrank or porke.

THE .XXIII. CHAPITER.

BInimacus the ſonne of Siſil ſi? as ſome wryters haue, but more verytably as ſayth the olde cronycle, ỹ brother of Lago, was made ruler of Brytayne / in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thouſand. iiii.hūdred.lxxx and xv: the whyche (as his brother before hym) paſſed his tyme without any notable actes or dedes: ſo that of hym is no more memorye made, thē of his brother. For the more party they that wrote the ſaytes & dedes of Brytons, make but a ſhorte reher ſayll of theſe.v.kynges/ ỹ is to ſaye, from Ryuallo to Gorbodug/ſayeng that after Ryuallo ſuccedyd Gurguſtius/ after hym ſuccedyd Lago, to Lago ſuccedyd Kinimacus/ & after Kinimacus ſucceded Gorbodug. Of theſe.v. kynges or rulers is made ly tell other mencyon. Thenne yt foloweth in the ſayd olde cronicle/ that when this Kinimacus had reygned liiii. yeres: he dyed and was buryed by his brother at Caerbrāk or pork: leuynge after hym a ſonne, as teſtyfyeth Flos hiſtoriarū/ whych ſonne was named Gorbodug.

THE .XXIIII. CHAPITER.

OGorbodug the ſonne of Kinimacy, was made ruler of Brytayne / in the yere of the worlde folowynge the forēſayde accompt. iiii. thouſande. v. hundred and. xlix. whych all ſo paſſed his tyme lyke vn to the forenamed dukes or kynges/ wythout any ſpecyall memory of honour noted by wryters. This by moſt lykelyhode to brynge hiſtoryes to accorde: ſhulde reygne ouer the Brytons the terme of .lxiii. yeres. whych terme endyd, he dyed and lyeth buryed at new Troy or Lōdon/leuyng after

after hym two sonnes named Ferrer and Pozrer / oz after some wzyters Ferreus and Pozreus.

THE .XXV. CHAPITER.

FErrer wyth Pozrer hys bzother, sonnes of Gozbodug: were ioyntly made gouernours and dukes of Bzittayne / in the yere of the wozlde foure thousande . vii . hundzed and .xi / and contynued in amyte a certayne tyme. After whyche tyme erpyzed, as witnessyth Policronica and also Gaufride, Pozrer beynge couetouse of lozdeshyp: gaderyd his peple, vnwetynge Ferrer his bzother / entendynge to destroy hym. wherof he beynge warned, foz lacke of space to assemble his people / foz sauegard of his persone, fled sodeynly into Gallia oz Fraũce, and aryd ayd of a duke of Gallia named by Gaufryde Gunhardus oz Suardus: the the whych duke hym ayded and sent hym agayne into Bzytayne with his hoste of Gallis. After whose lãdynge his bzother Pozrer with his Bzytõs hym mete, and gaue to hym batayll: in the whyche batayll Ferrer was slayne with ꝑ moze part of his peple.

But here dysco zdeth myn authour wyth some other wzyters, and wyth the cronycle of Englande: foz they testyfye, that Pozrer was slayne, and Ferrer suruyuyd. But whether of them was lyuyng, the moder of these two bzethern named wlden settynge a parte all moderly pytye: with help of her women entred the chambze (of hym so lyuynge) by nyght / and hym there sleppynge slew cruelly, and cut into small peces. And thus dyed the two forenayde bzetherne / after they had thus ruled Bzytayne in warre and peace to the agrement of moste wzyters. b. yeres.

THE .XXVI. CHAPITER.

HEre now endeth the lyne oz of spzynge of Bzute / after the affermaunce of moste wzyters. Foz Gaufride saith after the deth of these forenamed bretherne / great discozde arose amonge the Bzytons / ꝑ which longe tyme among them continued: by meane wherof the people and coũtre was soze vered and noyed vnder .b. kynges. And further saith Guydo de Columna, that the Bzytons abhozred the lynage of Gozbodug / foz so myche as hyzte that one bzother slew that other / and moze foz the innaturall dyspospcyon of the mozder, that so cruelly slew her owne chylde.

The cronycle of Englande sayth, that after the deth of the two forenamed bzetherne / no ryghtfull enherytour was lefte on lyue. wherfoze the the people were bzought in great discozde / in so myche that the land was deuydyd in foure partyes. So that in Albania was one ruler / in Loegria oz Logiers one other ruler / in Cambzia the thyzde duke oz ruler / & in Coznewayle the .iiii. duke oz ruler. But of these .iiii. dukes the englisth cronicle alloweth Clotoñ duke of Coznewayll foz moste ryghtefull heyze.

Policronyca sayth that after ꝑ deth of the forezsayde two bzetherne, great dysco zde was in the lande / whyche greuyd the people soze vnder .b. kynges. But he nother reheseth the names noz the tymes of theyz regnes / excepte he addeth to, that the sayde dysco zde contynued tyll the tyme of Volluncius Dumuallo. So ꝑ here appereth no tyme certayn, how lõge this barpaunce and dysco zde amõg the Bzytons contynued. But who so lyst to loke vpon a dzaught made by me in englisth in ꝑ beginnyng of this boke: he shall se there (yf he please to

caste ouer the tymes and yeres there expressed) that this forsayde discorde contynued nere to the terme of .li. yeres. In whyche draught or conceyte yf any man here fynde errour: of his goodnes lette hym amende & correcte yt / and all other places where he shall by good proke fynde place of correccyon.

THE XXVII. CHAPITER.

THus here endyth ỳ fyrst parte of this worke, conteynynge or dyuyded in .vii. partes, as before is shewed. And in a waye of a thanke to be gyuen to our moste blessyd aduocate & helper of all wretches, that to her lyste to call / I meane ỳ moste blessyd vyrgyne our lady saynt Mary moder of Cryste / for ỳ her grace hath fortheryd this worke hytherto / and for to impetrate of her the grace and ayde of her moste mercyfull contynuaūce to accomplysh this worke begonne as before is shewed, vnder supporte of her most bouteous grace here wyll I wyth humble mynde salute her wyth the fyrste ioye of ỳ .vii. ioyes whych begynneth,

Gaude flore virginali &c.

Moste virgynall floure of all moste excellent
Persynge of angelles the hyest Hierarchy
Joye and be glad, for god omnipotent
Hath the lyft vp, and sette moste worthily
Aboue the nomber and glorious company
Of his blessyd sayntes, wyth moste hye dignite
Nexte after hym moste honoured to be.

This fyrst parte to be accompted from the fyrste yere of Brute, vnto the laste yere of the forsayde dyscorde, or vnto the fyrste yere of Mulmutius: includyth of yeres .vii. hundred and foure.

Thus endeth the fyrste parte.

THE SECONDE PARTE.

THE .XXVIII. CHAPITER.



Mulmutius Dunuallo or as some haue Dunuallo Mulmutius, the sonne of Cloten as testyfyeth the englyshe boke, & also Gaufride: was benquesshour of ỳ other dukes or rulers / and began his reygn ouer the hole monarchy of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousand vii. hundred & .xlviii. This is named in the englyshe cronycle Donebant: the whyche was a noble man, & causyd to be made wythin the cytye of Troynouant a temple, and named it the temple of peace. The whyche after some opynyons is that place or feld / where ỳ market of wollen cloth is holden called or named Blakwelhall. He also made many good laws the which were long after vsed & called Mulmutis lawes. These lawes holy Gildas wrote wyth great dylygence out of the brettisshe speche into latyne. And longe tyme here after ỳ, Aluredus kynge of England turned those lawes oute of latyne into englyshe. He also gaue prpuylege to temples, to plowghes & cytyes, and to the wayes ledynge to ỳ same. And as some authours wytnesse / he begaune the foure hye wayes of Brytayne / the whych were fynysshed and perfyted of Belinus his sonne, as after at length shall be declared. The olde cronycle testyfyeth ỳ this Mulmutius, whyche he in his boke nameth Molle, made the two townes of Malmesbury and Tyes. And all other writers affirme, that this Mulmutius, after he hadde stablysshyd his lande, and sette his Brytons in good

good and conuenyent order: by the aduyce of his lordes / he ordeyned hym a crowne or dyademe of gold / & caused hym selfe to be crowned wyth great solempnyte after the vsaunce of pagane lawe then vsed. And for this cause, after the opynyon of some wryters / he is named the fyrste kyng of Britayn. And all ỳ other before re hersyd are named rulers, dukes, or gouernours.

Then ỳ foloweth in the storye / when Mulmuti⁹ had guyded ỳ land well and honorably by the terme of xl. yeres: he dyed and was buryed in the forsayde temple of peace within Troynouant or Lõdon / leuynge after hym two sonnes named Belinus and Brennus.

THE .XXIX. CHAPITER.

BElinus and Brenn⁹ the two sonnes of Mulmutius: beganne to raygne ioyntly as kynges of Brytayne / in the yere of the world iiii. thousande. viii. C. & viii: so that Belinus held to hym Loegria or Logiers, walys, and Cornewayll / and Brennus held to his parte all ỳ land ouer & beyonde Humber. with which partycyon eyther of them was cõtented & pleasyd, as testifyeth Polycronica, by the terme of .v. yeres. After the whyche terme endyd and expired Brennus entendynge to haue more lande or all: arose agaynste his brother Belyne, and made vppon hym mortall warre. In the whych warre Brennus was ouersette, and was cõpelled to flye the land and sayle vnto Armorica now named lyteil Britayn or as sayth Gaufryde, into a countre called Allebrog, as after shalbe more playnely declared / and there allyed hym after the forsayde terme (as be fore is sayd) of. v. yeres was expyryd as affermeth Policronica. For Gaufryde sayeth in his boke made of the hystory of Brytons / ỳ after ỳ terme of. v. yeres afore sayde were expyred and runne, Brennus by sterynge of yonge and cuyll counsayll, entendyng as before is sayde: sayled vnwetyng his brother into Norway, and there maryed the doughter of Elsunge or Elynge then ruler or duke of Norwaye. when this was shewed vnto Belyn, consyderynge the sodayne departyng: in all haste he sealyd Albania and all the other lande appertenyng to Brenne into his owne hand, and strengthed the cytyes and other stronge places wyth his owne sowdyours. wherof when Brenne was warned: he in all possyble haste assembled a great people of the Norwayes, and toke hys shyppynge to sayle into Brytayne. And as he was keppynge his course vpon the see: he was encountred wyth Guilthdaeus kynge of Denmarke, the whych had lyen in awayte for hym, for loue of ỳ wenche ỳ Brennus had maryed: for before tyme he had requyred her of Elsungeher fader. whẽ those .ii. flotes were mette: strong shotte and fyght was vppon both partyes. But fynally the Danes ouercame the Norwayes or Norganys, and toke the shyppe by strength whych the wẽche was in / ỳ whych anone was brought vnto the shyppe of Guilthdake: and Brenne wyth a fewe of his shyppes lefte was fayne to sauegarde hym selfe by flyght.

when Guilthdake hadde thus obteyned ỳ victorye, entendynge to haue sayled towarde Denmarke: in shorte whyle after ỳ tempestes came so hydous vppon the see, that hys nauye was deuyded and scatered that one frome the other / in suche wyse that he was in fere to haue ben drowned. And at the ende of fyue dayes not wetynge where he was / wyth few

wyth fewe shyppes landed in the coũ trc of Northumberlande, where at that tyme was Belyn prouydyng de fence agayne his brothers cõmyng. wherof when word was brought vn to Belyn of the landynge of the fore sayde Danoys prynce wyth a small company: he reioysed yt, and cõmaũ ded hym wyth his shyppes & compa= ny to be put in sure holde & keppynge.

It was not long after but Brẽne hadde reculyd and gaderyd to gy= der the more parte of hys nauye be= fore (as ye haue harde) chased. And when he hadde theym newely ryg= gyd and vytayled/ he herynge of the aryuayll of Guilthdacus in Nor= thũberlãd with his wife, sent word of manace vnto his brother Belyn/ wyllyng hym to sende vnto hym his wyfe wrõgfully rauyshed by Guilth dacus/ & also to restore vnto him his land & patrymony/ or ellys he wold shortely inuade his lande, yt for to waste, & his enymy to destroye. The whych desyre or request of Belynus was playnely and shortely denyed. whych knowlege had: Brenn⁹ shor ly after landed in a parte of Albania, and made towarde his brother / and his brother towarde hym: so ỳ theyr hostes met nere vnto a wood named at that day Calater or Calaterium, where betwene them was a mortall batayll/ in so myche that mych peo= ple fyll vpon both partyes. But last ly the Bryttons wanne the felde, and chasyd the Norgans or Norways vnto theyr shyppes / chasynge & sle= penge them without pyty. And as af fermeth myne authour, ỳ fyght was so cruell and sharpe: that there was slayne to the nomber of.xl. M. men.

After this dyscumfyture Brenne was constrayned to flee / and wyth fewe in nomber recouered the lande of Gallia.

Belinus hauyng thus victorye of his enemyes/ after thankes and obla cyons made vnto his goddes, after the pagane law: he then assembled his lordes at Caerbrank or yorke, to haue theyr aduyse what he shuld do wyth the prynce of Denmark. In ỳ whych counsayle yt was concludyd/ that the forsayd Guylthdac⁹ shulde holde and do homage to the kynge of Britayn for the land of Dẽmark, and yerely bere to hym a certayne tri bute. whyche done wyth suerty and hostages taken: the sayde Guylth= dacus wyth his loue was sette at ly= bertye and leue, to retourne into his owne countre: whych yerely tribute as testifyeth the englyshe cronycle, was a thousande pounde.

THE .XXX. CHAPITER.

Then yt foloweth in ỳ hystory, when Belyn hadde thus vyc tory of this enemyes, and was alone possessoure of this realme of Bry= tayne: the lawes before made by his father he cõfermed, and ordeyned in= stryce to be mynystred thorough the lande. And for so myche as the. iiii. wayes begon by his fader, were not perfyghtyd and endyd: he therfore causyd workmen to be called, and set theym to paue wyth stone the sayde wayes, that they myght suffycyently be knowen of all waygoers or trau= ayllers of the countres as hereaf= ter ensuyth.

The fyrst of these iiii. wayes was named Fosse, the whyche stretchyd oute of the southe into the north / and begynneth, or at that dayes be= ganne, at the corner of Totnesse in Cornewayle, and passed forth by De uynshyre, Somersetshyre, & so forth by Tutbury vpon Cottelwolde, be= syde Couentre vnto Leycestre, & from thennes by wylde playnes towarde Newerke, and endyth at the cytye of Lyncoln.

The

The ſecond waye was named wat lyngſtrete/ the which ſtretcheth ouer thwarte ꝑ wayes of Foſſe out of the ſoutheſt into the noꝛtheſt. This begaune at Douer, and paſſeth by the myddell of Kente ouer Thamys beſyde London by weſte of weſtmynſter/ and ſo foꝛth by ſayute Albanys in the weſte ſyde of Dunſtable, of Stratfoꝛd, of Towceter, and of wedon/ by ſouth kylyngburne of kyllebouꝛn, by Athelſtoñ, vnto Gylbertes hyll, that now is named wꝛekyn/ and ſo foꝛth by Sheuaꝛñ paſſynge beſyde wꝛokceter, & foꝛth vnto Stratfoñ to the myddell of walys vnto a place called Carꝛdycan/at ꝑ Iꝛyſh ſe.

The thyꝛde waye was named Ermyngſtrete. The whyche ſtretcheth out of the weſte noꝛthweſte vnto the eeſt ſoutheeſt, & bygynneth at Menema, the whych is in ſaynt Dauies lande in weſte walys/ and ſo ſtretcheth foꝛth vnto ſouth Hamptoñ.

The fourth and laſt waye is called oꝛ was called Kykenyldis ſtrete. The which ſtretcheth foꝛth by woꝛceter, by wycombe, by Birmyngham, by Lychefyld, by Derby, by Cheſterfyeld, by yoꝛke. And ſo foꝛth vnto Tynmouth: ꝑ whych was ſuffycyẽtly made. He graũted & confermed thẽ all ſuche pꝛiuyleges as beforꝛe were graũted by Dꝛuallo his fader. The whych pꝛiuyleges with other lawes by hym made, who ꝑ is deſyꝛous to know: let hym rede ouer ꝑ trãſlacyon ꝑ holy Gildas made of Mulmutius lawes out of Bꝛytyſhe ſpeche into latyne/and there he ſhall ſe the circumſtaunce of euery thynge.

In this whyle that Belyn was thus occupyed aboute the nedes of his land/his bꝛother Bꝛenne beyng, as beforꝛe is ſayde, in a pꝛouynce of Gallia takynge ſoꝛe to inynde hys expulſyon from his naturall coũtre, not hauynge any comfoꝛte how he myght attayn to his foꝛmer dignite, laſtely reſoꝛted (wyth .xii. perſones onely accompanyed) vnto the duke oꝛ ruler of that pꝛouynce oꝛ countre.

Foꝛ ye ſhall vnderſtande that at thoſe dayes (as teſtyfyeth Eutropi9 and other wꝛyters) the Gallis occupyed dyuers countres. And therfoꝛe Titus Liuius, whych wꝛote ꝑ actes and dedes of the Romayns, made diſſyncyon of the Gallis/and nameth them that Bꝛẽne ladde, when he beſeigyd the cytye of Rome and after ꝑ capitoyll, Cenonenſes Galli/ which is to name the Gallis of that coũtre where the cytye of Cena than ſtode & yet doth (as teſtyfyeth the authour of cronica cronicarũ, and other) in a countre of Italy named at this day Etruria. The whiche cytye, as affermen the ſayde authours, was fyꝛſte buylded of the foꝛeſayde Gallis, in ꝑ tyme of Bꝛenne beyng theyꝛ duke oꝛ leder, bꝛeforꝛe the commynge oꝛ incarnacyon of Cryſte. iii. hundꝛed .lxxx. & vi. yeres: whyche maketh the yere of the woꝛlde folowynge the accompte of this woꝛke. iiii. thouſand. viii. hundꝛed and. xiii. yeres.

Then ye folowyth in ꝑ ſtoꝛy, when Bꝛenne was comen to the pꝛeſence of the duke named by myne authour Gaufride Segin9 duke of Alebrog/ the whyche is to vnderſtande duke of Armoꝛica, now named lytell Bꝛytayne, as by Policronica and the engliſhe cronycle is ſuffycyently declared/and ſhewed vnto hym his aduerſyte & trouble: ꝑ ſayd duke receyued hym into his courte. And foꝛ he was perſonable & well maneryd, hauyng great experyence in hawkynge and huntynge, and other pꝛopertyes appertaynynge to a gentylman: he had hym in ſhoꝛte whyle in eſpecyall fauour beforꝛe any noble man of hys courte. By meane wherof, he laſtly maryed his doughter/ vpon condycyon

cyon that yf he dyed wythout Jſuemale, that he then ſhuld be ruler of ꝑ countre. And yf yt happened hym to haue an heyre male: that then yt not withſtãdyng, to ayde and helpe hym to recouer his lande before loſte.

The whych condycyons well and ſuerly vpon the dukes partye, by the aſſent of ꝑ nobles of his lãde aſſured: the ſaid duke within cõpas of ꝑ ſame yere dyed. After whoſe deth when by a conuenyent terme, yt was knowen that the ducheſſe his wyfe was not wyth chyld: all the lordes to Brẽne dyd homage, & became his men. To the whych lordes the more to wynne theyr loues, he departed mych of his treſour: and ſhortly after with theyr aſſente gadered a great armye / and ſo in all haſt ſayled into Britayne to make new warre vppon his brother Belyne/ & after a certayn tyme there landed. Of whoſe landyng when Belyne was enfourmed: he in all haſte gaderyd his Brytons in great nomber, & made towarde hym as to hys mortall enemye. But the moder of the two brethern named Cõnuuẽa, or after the englyſh boke Cornewey/ conſyderynge ꝑ mortall hateryd atwene her two chylder, and in partye of theyr both perſones: of a moderly and naturall ꝑty, went atwene her two ſonnes, and dyd her in ſuch dyſcrete maner and moderly cõpaſſyon, as ſhewyng her breſtes and other demeanures, that at length ſhe accorded them. After whych accorde both bretherne with theyr lordes and frendes ſped them vnto Troynouant or London/ and there after many thynges orderyd and made for the weale of ꝑ land: they cõdeſcended & agreed to lede theyr both hoſtes into Gallia for to ſubdue to them the ſayde countre. And in as goodly haſte as they might ꝑpare for ꝑ tourney, they toke ſhyppyng, & ſo ſayled into a parte of Gallia brennyng & waſtynge ꝑ countre without ꝑty. And as wytneſſyth myn authour Gaufryde, in a ſhorte whyle they ſubdued a great parte of Gallia Italy and Germania.

But here I entend to leue the farther preſſe of myn authour Gaufryde for ſo myche as here he varieth from other writers of authorite, as Eutropius, Titus Liuius, & other, that dyd great dilygence in wrytynge of ꝑ dedys & actes of the Romayns, and of other peple dwellyng at thoſe dayes in Italia, Gallia, & Germania. For where the ſayd Gaufryde ſayth, ꝑ at ſuch tyme Belyn and Brenne made warre in Italye/ Gabius & Porſena were at that day conſules of Rome: that ſayeng is farre dyſcordaunt vnto the other forſayd authours. For as they affirme at the tyme whenne Brẽne beſegyd Rome, Claudius Emilius, & Lucius Lucretius were conſulis/ & Furius Camillus was at ꝑ tyme dictatour of Rome / and none lyke vnto the other were cõſules many yeres before nor after.

But trouth yt is that the ſayde .ii. bretherne dyd many great actes in ꝑ forenamed countres/ but not all acrordynge wyth the ſayeng of ꝑ ſayd Gaufride. For where he referreth all thoſe dedys to bothe bretherne: the forenamed Titus Liuius ſpeketh but of Brenne onely, as yt ſhall ſomedele be touched hereafter. wherefore to folowe the moſte wrytters / when Belyn hadde dwelled a certayne of tyme wyth hys brother Brenne in thoſe partyes: by agrement of them both, Belyn retourned into Britayn and Brenne remayned there.

THE .XXXI. CHAPITER.

When Belinus or Belyn was retourned into Brytayne: he repayred olde cytyes, and buyldyd vpon

pon the ryuer of Uske a cytye, and called yt Caerusk nere vnto the ryuer of Seuerne. This city was after namyd ỳ cyty of Legiõs, for so mych as ỳ legions of Romaynes were lodgyd wythin ỳ same citye/ & now yt is called Caerleon or Carleon. Also he buylded an hauen wyth a gate there ouer wythin Troynouãt / in ỳ summet or pynacle wheron was set a vessell of bzalle/in the which was closyd the asshes of his bzent body when he was dede. This gate was long after called Belyns or Belins gate/ but at this day yt is called Belyngesgate.

In this whyle that Belinus was thus occupyed in Bzytayne, his bzoder Bzenne desyrous to wynne fame and honoure buylded in Italy and other partes of Gallia these cytyes and townes folowynge.

Mediolana or Mylleyn in Lũbardy
Pappa or Papy.
Burgamum or
Sena or
Comum or
Bzixia or
Uerona or
Uincentia or
Cremona or
Mantua or

The whyche cytyes and townes were buylded of the Gallis, or at the leste new repayzed, in the tyme that Brenne was theyr leder or duke/ all be yt that some wzyters wold meane that Comum & Cremona were buylded after Brenne was dede. Policronica wytnessyth, that the Senons, whych he meaneth by ỳ Gallis dwelyng aboute the cytye of Sena/ by ỳ ledyng of Bzennus ouercame the Romaynes. xi. myle from Rome, at the ryuer Albia, & chasyd them to Rome and toke the city vnto the Capitoll/ & after leyd syege to ỳ same Capitol. And vppon a nyght whyle the wardeyns of ỳ Capitoll slepte: ỳ Frenshe men or Gallys by a waye vnder the erth / came into the Capitoll & were lykely to haue wonne it. But a noble Romayne named Manlius or Manlius Torquatus, awoke by the cryeng or noyse of a gander or gãders. The which Manlius awakyng the other Romaynes, put of the Gallys. For whych cause ỳ Romayns long tyme after helde a feste of ganders, ỳ fyrst daye of June.

Neuertheless afterwarde they called it Inõs feste, for so mych as they thought that Juno ỳ goddes had by her influence gyuen that grace vnto the ganders, that they shuld by theyr noyse awake the Romayns. But yet the Gallis or frenchmen held ỳ Romayns so shozt, ỳ they were cõpelled to gyue vnto Bzen theyr duke a thousand poũde weyght of gold, as therof is wytnesse Tit' Liuius. And further moze sayth ỳ sayd Liuy', that ỳ Gallis slewe of the senatours many in nomber, the whych fyrste they supposed hadde ben goddes bycause of theyr ryche apparell, whych they sat in. But shortly after this the forenamyd Furius Camillus, whiche was called agayne frõ the citye of Ardea, where he was outlawed before, & by the comontye of Rome in this nede made agayne dictatour.

The which pursued Bzenne and his people, and to theym gaue batayll, slayng of them a great multytude, and wanne from them all the golde and ieweliys that before tyme ỳ Gallis hadde wonne of the Romaynes. The whyche dede was done, as wytnessyth the forsayd Titus Liuius, the yere after the buyldyng of Rome iii. hundzed and. lxv. whych was the yere of the worlde, folowynge the accompt of this worke foure thousand viii. hundzed and. xxxv: and before Crystys incarnacyon kepynge the same accompt. iii. hundzed and. lxiiii.

c Theu

Then yt folowyth in the storye of Brenne, when he was thus dyscomfyted of the Romaynes: he tourned his people towarde the Macedones or Grekes, and dyuyded his people in two hostes. wherof he retayned ỳ one with hym, and that other he sent into a countre called then Gallacia, and after Gallogreci, and lastly Galates. Then Brenne ouercame the Macedons with theyr duke Bosten and after spoyled the goddes & theyr temples/ & sayde in his game, tyche goddes muste gyue to men somedele of theyre tycheise. Also he spoyled the temple of the god Apolyne Delphicus standynge in the hyll of the mounte Parnasus. wherfore as testifyeth the wryter Policarpus: the people of that countre prayed to god for helpe/ and sodaynly the erth begamne to quake, and a great parte of the hyll fell vpon the hoste of Gallis, and thē slew. And after that ensued and fyll to grounde hayle stones of suche greatnesse, ỳ yt slew one other great parte of the sayde hoste/ & duke Brennus was sore wounded: wherby he fyll in suche dyspayre, that he slew hym self with his owne swerde. No man shall wonder, though thys Apolyn toke wreche of thē that spoyled the goddes and theyr temples. For god sufferyd Apolyn to destroy many nacyons, because of theyr trel passes and euyll lyuynge. For yt is certayne that spyrytes of the eyre may vse theyr shrewdnes in thē that be of myslyueue and vse euyll dedes. For grace is withdrawen from such maner of men: wherfore the spirites haue the more power to hurte and greue them.

Then syns I haue here shewed vn to you the fyne or ende of Brennus, I shall nowe retourne my style vnto his brother Belynus, the whyche, as before is touched, endeuoryd hym aboute the weale of hys lande of Bretayne and his people durynge ỳ tyme of his reygne, in executyng of many notable dedes, the whyche for length of tyme I ouer passe: so that lastely he dyed and was buryed, as before is sayde at Belius or Belinus gate wythin Troynouante or London/ when he had reygned wyth his brother and alone, after the most concordaūce of wryters. xxvi. yeres, leuyng after hym a sonne called Gurguyntus, Gurguynt Brabtruc, or after some wryters Gurguynt Barberous, whyche is to meane Gurguynt wyth the red berde.

THE .XXXII. CHAPITER.

Of Urguintus or Gurguynt the sonne of Belyne, was made kynge of the lande of Bretayne, in the yere of the worlde foure .M. viii. hundred and .xxviii. This in the englyshe cronycle is named Cozynbratus or Cozynbatus. The whych for so myche as the trybute before graūted by Guilthdak kyng of Denmark, vnto the kynges of Bretayne for a perpetupty, was denayed: he arrayed his army and nauye, and sayled into Denmarke/ and there wasted and harmed the countre wyth iron and fyre: in such wyse that at length the kynge of Denmarke, wyth the assent of his Baronage, graunted to paye and contynue the forsayde tribute yerely of a thousande pounde. After whyche victorye thus hadde of the Danys: he wyth great tryumphe retourned towarde Britayn. And in keppynge of hys course/ he encountred wyth a nauye of .xxx. sayle beside the yle of Orchades full of men and women/ of whyche flote the chyefe captayne was called after moste wryters Bartholomew. The whyche when he was brought vnto

the

the kynges presence, shewyd that he wyth his people were putte or eryled out of the countre of Spayne, and were named Valenses / and had sayled longe tyme vppon the see, to the ende to fynde some prynce, that wold gyue to them a dwellynge place, and they to become his subiectys & holde theyr lande of hym / besechynge the kynge to haue compassyon of them, and to graunt to them some place to enhabyte them in / & that they shulde no lenger dwell in theyr shyppes, cõsyderyng theyr vytayle was spent by reason of theyr long lyeng vpon ỹ see. After whych requeste thus made by theyr captayne / the kyng with the aduyse of his barons, graunted vnto them a voyde and waste countre, whyche was and is the fartheste ile of all the iles / towarde the weste / the whych yle as sayth the Englyshe cronycle, was then named Irelande, after the name of theyr captayn called in the Englyshe cronycle Irlamal. But who so wyll knowe the fyrste cause of the nampnge of this yle Irlande: Jette hym rede the. xxxii. and xxxiii. chappytres of the fyrste boke of Policronica / and there he shall fynd ỹ more certaynly of ỹ fyrst nampnge therof, with many other thynges touchynge ỹ sayd yle, the whych I ouer passe for length of ỹ mater. For there he shall be sufficiently enfourmed of that, and also of other thynges.

Then yt foloweth in the story, after this Gurguintus was retourned into his lande of Britayne: he ordeyned to be stablyshed & kepte ỹ lawes made by his forefaders / & exercysyd iustyce to his subiectes, and guyded his lande well and nobly by the terme, after moste writers, of .xix. yeres / and then dyed, and was buryed at newe Troye or London, or at Caerleon / leuynge after hym a sonne named after myne authoure Guyntheliñus, but after some he is named Guyntellius.

THE .XXXIII. CHAPITER.

Guintheliñ or Guintellius ỹ sonne of Gurguintus / was made kynge of Britayne, in the yere of the world .iiii. thousande. viii. hundred and .liii. This is named in the englyshe cronycle Gwentolyne, the whyche guyded his lande and Brytons with great mekenesse and sobernesse. He hadde also a noble wyfe called Marcia, instructe and lerned in many sciẽces / the whych amonge other noble dedys by her done, studyed and broughte forth a certayne good and conuenyent lawe amonge the Brytons / the whyche was named longe after the Marcyan lawe. This lawe for that yt was thought both good and necessary, Aluredus, whyche longe after was kynge of Englande, translated oute of Britysshe into Saxon speche / and then was yt called after that translacyon in the Saxon tonge Marthelage, whych is to meane the lawe of Marcia. To this womã for her wysdome was committed all the gouernaunce of the lande / in so myche, as wytnessyth myne authoure Gaufryde and other, she reygned as quene of Britayne a certayne tyme after her husbande was dede. But the yeres of her reygne be accompted with the yeres of her husbande, or wyth the yeres of her sonne Sisillius / so that no tyme asserteyned is to her deputed or sette.

Then yt foloweth, whẽ this Guintheliñus hadde reygned well and mekely by the terme of .xxvi. yeres, he dyed and was buryed at newe Troy or London, leuyng after hym a sonne named Sisillius or Cecilius.

THE .XXXIIII. CHAPITER.

SIsillius or Cecill⁹ the sonne of Guynthelinus, was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousande. viii. hundred & lxxix. This in the Englysh cronycle is named Seyzyl. Of whych no mencion nor worthy memory is made. Al be yt that Gaufryde meaneth, ꝑ this Sisillius was but .vii. yeres of age when his father dyed. wherfore the charge of the realme was committed vnto Marcia his moder / the which guyded yt well and suffycyently tyll her sayde sonne came to his lawfull age, and then resygnyd to hym all ꝑ rule: whyche so contynued/but how longe he reygned Gaufryde expresseth not. wherfore I now folowe the sayenge of the forenamed authoure called the Floure of hystoryes, which affermeth hym to reygne onely .vii. yeres / all be yt the Englysshe boke sayeth he reygned .xv. yeres, whyche agreeth not so well wyth the concordaunce of other hystoryes & tymes.

This Sisillius, as Gaufryde wytnessyth, left after him a sonne named Kymarus/ whome the englysh boke nameth Kymor.

THE .XXXV. CHAPITER.

KImarus the sonne of Sisillius/ was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousande. viii. hundred .lxxx. & vi. This in the englysshe boke is called Kymor/ of ꝑ whych is made no mencyon nother of hys tyme of reygne, nor of his dedes.

For the more partye of wryters rehersse in moste breuest & shortest maner, ꝑ after Kimar⁹ reygned Elan⁹. After Elan⁹ Morindus. But ꝑ old cronycle, whych I haue before tyme spoken of, sayth that this Kymarus, which he nameth Kymarch⁹ Elan⁹, was a wylde yonge man, and lyued after hys pleasure. wherfore as he was in his dysporte of huntynge, he was by his cupll willers slayne, whē he hadde ruled skarsly .iii. yeres.

THE .XXXVI. CHAPITER.

ELanius the sonne of Kymar⁹, as wytnessyth the forsayde Floure of cronycles, but the broder of Kimarus as sayth Gaufride/ was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde foure thousand. viii. hundred. lxxx. and .ix. the whyche in the englysshe boke is named Howan. Of this also is no mēcyon made nor memory nother of acte nor of reygn, but as the forenamed olde cronycle sayth, that Kymarus and Elanius was one persone/ and reygned as be fore is sayde: but the abouesayd writer called Floure of hystoryes sayth, he reygned fully two yeres.

THE .XXXVII. CHAPITER.

MOrindus the bastarde sonne of Elanius, as sayth Gaufryde and other/ was made kynge of Brytayne, in ꝑ yere of ꝑ worlde foure thousande. viii. hundred. lxxx. and .xi. the whych in the englysshe cronicle is called Morwith. This as witnesseth Gaufryde, was goten vppon the concubyne of Elanius named Tanguestela, and was a man of worthy fame in dedys of chyualry / but he was so ouercome with wrath & cruelnesse, ꝑ lyghtly he slew all men that hym tened or angred. He was also beauteouse of persone and lyberall of gyftes/ and wyth that he was of a merueilouse strength, in so myche that he had not his pere wythin his realm of any man of noble byrthe.

In his tyme came into Brytayne a prynce oute of a countre called Mauretania/ the whyche countre at those dayes is assygned by Strabo ꝑ wryter, to be betwene the kyngdomes of Hunga-

Hungary, and of Beame/the whych prynce wyth his cruell & fyers people wasted the lād of Britayne with iron and fyre wythout pytye: wherof Mozindus beynge warned/ in all haste gaderyd his people, and hym mette/ and faught in such wyse, that he chasyd the sayde prynce agayne to the see, and toke many of his sowdyours as prysoners, the whyche in satysfyeng of his cruelnesse and tyranny, he caused to be put to deth in his syght by dyuerse maners of tormentes / as by heedynge, fleynge, brennynge, and other cruell executyons. Lastely as testyfyeth Guydo de Columpna and other, this Mozindus walkynge or rydynge vppon the see stronde espyed a wōderfull monstre, the whych of his corage and knyght hod he thought to slē. And by a māly corage and force assayled this monstre or beste, fyghtyng wyth yt a certayne of tyme. But in conclusyon he was deuoured and swalowyd of the sayd monstre: after he had reygned, after moste wryters, by the terme of viii. peres / leuynge after hym, as wytnessyth Gaufryde, fyue sonnes, wherof the fyrste was named Gorbomānus: the secunde Archygallo, the thyrde Eldurus, the fourth Vigenius or Nigenius, and the fyfte or yongest, Peredurus.

THE .XXXVIII. CHAPITER.

Gorbamānus the fyrste sonne of Mozind'/ was made kyng of Bryptayne/ in the yere of the worlde foure thousande. viii. hundred. lxxx. and. xviii. This in the englyshe cronycle ys named Granbodyan / the whyche as testifyeth Gaufryde, was a iuste and ryghtwyse man to ỳ godes and to his people, and yelded to eyther partye that was his / that ys to say to his goddes he yelded due reuerence & sacrifyce/ and to the people iustyce & equyte. And he renewed and repayred all olde temples thorough his realme, and buylded some newe. And in his tyme was more welth and plente in his realme, mych more thē was in any of his predecessours dayes. But fynally to ỳ great sorow of all his Brytons/ he was taken wyth sykenesse, and dyed wythout issue of his body, when he hadde reygned after moste wryters by the terme of .xi. peres.

THE .XXXIX. CHAPITER.

Archigallo the seconde sonne of Mozindus, and broder vnto Gorbomānus, was made kynge of Bryptayne, in the yere of ỳ worlde foure thousande. ix. hundred and .x. This in the englyshe boke is named Artogayll/ the whyche folowed nothynge the workes of his brother, but gaue hym selfe all to discencyon and stryfe/ and imagyned causes agayne his nobles to put them from theyr goodes and dygnytyes and in theyr places to sette and ordeyne vnnoble and of rude byrthe and maner/ and from the ryche by synystre and wrongfull meanes he plucked theyr ryches and goodes. By whyche inordynate meanes he enryched hym selfe and impouerysshed his subiectes. For whyche condycyons his lordes & subiectes murmuryd agaynst hym/ and lastly of one assent toke him, or more verely, depryuyd hym of all honour and kyngly dygnyte, when he hadde reygned after moste concordaunce of wryters fyue yeres.

THE .XL. CHAPITER.

Eldurus the thyrde sonne of Mozindus, and the brother of Archigallo/ was by one assent of the

Brytons made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde .iiii. M. ir. hundred and .xb. This in ỳ englyshe cronycle is named Hilider or Elodyr. The which became so myld and benygne to the Brytons, that they gaue to hym a surname, and called hym Eldure ỳ meke. For he amõge other dedys of mekenes, as he was vpon a daye in his dysporte of huntynge, in a wode nere vnto Caerbrãk or porke called Calater, or after some wryters Caltras: he fande his elder brother Archigallo late kynge, maskelyng or wandrynge in the thykest of the woode/ whome louyngly and charytably he in secrete maner conueyed vnto his owne mancyõ into ỳ cytye then named Ildud or Acliut: And as affermeth myn authour Gaufryde, to thentent to brynge his brother to his former dygnytye as after folowerh: the sayd Eldurus fayned hym selfe syke/ and in all haste sente his messagers aboute his realme to gather and assemble the Barons of his lãde. And when the daye of assemble was cõmyn, and his lordes accordynge to his commaundement were present: he called them one by one, as they were of honour, into his secrete cubycle or chamber/ & there by his wyse & discrete wordes as well in benygne and louynge maner, as other wordes and countenaunce appertaynyng to his royall power and dygnyty/ he gat graunte of his sayd lordes, that they shuld ayde & strẽgeth hym to theyr powers, to brynge hys brother Archigallo to his former honour and regally. After which graũt by the lordes made: he assembled a counsayll of his Brytons at Caerbrank or porke/ & there caused suche meanes to be made to the cõmons, that in conclusion when the sayd Eldurus hadde ruled the lande. v. yeres as kynge, he there resygned his crowne and all kyngly power vnto his sayde brother Archigallo.

THE XLII. CHAPITER.

When Archigallo was thus restored to his kyngly dygnyte, he remembred well the cuyl lyfe that before tyme he had ladde, and the punishement which he had suffred for ỳ same. wherfore in eschewynge of lyke daunger: He chaunged all hys olde condicyons, and became a good and ryghtwyse man, mynystryng to the people equyte and iustyce/ & bare hym so nobly agayne his lordes and rulers vnder hym of his landes, that he was beloued & dradde of all hys subiectes/ and so contynued duryng the terme of his naturall lyfe. But fynally he payde the dette of nature, when he hadde reygned nowe lastly after moste wryters .x. yeres/ & was buryed, as sayth the sayde olde cronycle at Caerbranke or porke.

THE XLIII. CHAPITER.

Eldurus before named was agayne by one assent of ỳ Brytons made kynge / in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousande .ix hundred & xxx. But his two yonger bretherne Vigenius and Peredurus, hauynge of hym indignacyon, that he was for his vertue and good gouernaũce so well fauoured with the Brytons: of malyce conspyred agayne hym/ & gatheryd an army of soudiours, & made a felde wyth hym. And in the felde toke hym, and commaũded hym vnto the towre of Troynouãt as sayth Gaufryde, there as a prysoner to be sauely kepte. After & when he hadde reygned nowe laste by the space, as wytnesseth the old cronycle .ii. yeres.

THE XLIIII. CHAPITER.

Vigenius and Peredurus ỳ yongest sonnes of Mozinde, and

and bretherne of Eldurus before sayde/ were ioyntly made kynges of Brytayne / in the yere of the worlde foure thousande.ir. hundred & .xxxii. These two bretherne are named in ỳ englesshe cronycle Higanius and Petytur / the whych as testifyeth Gaufryde departed ỳ land betwene thé, so ỳ all ỳ land from the water of Hũber westwarde, fyll to Uigenius or Nigenius: & the other part of the land with also Albania or Scotlande, fyll vnto Peredurus. But after the sayngе of Guydo de Columna, Uigenius or Nigenius was not kyng, but alonely Peredurus/ the whych, as he sayth, helde his brother Eldurus in pryson by his owne assent, for so myche as Eldurus was not wyllyng to be kynge. And as affermeth the sayde Guydo/ this Peredurus was cruell and tyrannous to the Britayns, and slew and entreated ỳ lordes in moste cruell maner. wherfore he became so odyous to them / that they rebelled agaynst hym and slew hym.

This sayeng contrarieth and enpugnyth myne authoure Gaufryde, sayeng ỳ Uigenius dyed after he had reygned.vii. yeres. After whose deth Peredurus sealyd all the lande into his owne rule/ & ruled yt wyth great soberneſſe, in such wyse that he excelled or was preysed aboue all his brethern, so that Eldurus was clene forgoten of the Brytons. The englysh cronycle also sayth that this Peredurus founded the town of Pikeryng. But fynally he was taken wyth sodayne sykeneſſe / whereof he dyed, when he had reygned wyth his brother and alone, after the accorde of moste wyters.ir. yeres/ leuynge after hym no chylde to be his heyr.

THE .XLIIII. CHAPITER.

Eldurus before named so soone as Peredurus was dede, for as myche as he was next heyre to the crowne / was taken forth of pryson and made the thyrde tyme kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of ỳ world.iiii. thousande.ir. hundred and.xli. The whyche as before tyme he had vsyd hym selfe so he contynued styll in my nystrynge to all persones ryght and iustyce all the dayes of his lyfe. And lastely beynge of good age he dyed, whé he had now reygned after moste concordaunce of wryters.iiii. yeres/ leuynge after hym a son named Gorbonianus or Gorbomanus. And as wytnesseth the olde cronycle, and the englysshe cronycle/ ỳ fore named Eldurus was buryed at Caerleyl or Karlele.

THE .XLV. CHAPITER.

Ye shall vnderstande ỳ to the deth of the foresayde Eldure, the wryters of the storye of Brytons wryten dyuersly/ so that the one varyeth greatly from the other, both in ỳ names, and also in the tyme of theyre reygnes/ the which wold aske a long tyme to reherse in order the dyuersyte of that one from the other/ & also to some reders ỳ mater therof shulde be but small pleasure. wherfore to suche as ben desyrous to knowe of ỳ tyme and season that passed betwene the laste yere of Eldurus, & the fyrst yere of Lud/ in whych passe tyme reygned in Britayne.xxxii. or after some wryters.xxxiii. kyngs: let hym loke in a table before ỳ begynnynge of this worke. And there he shall se my concept for ỳ declaracyon of ỳ yeres passed or spent betwene the forsayd two kynges Eldurus and Lud/ prayége hym or them that so shall loke in the sayde draught, that yf I haue in any poynte erryd, that of theyr goodnes they wolde wyth good delyberacyon correcte and amende yt. But for it semeth to me, that of al such authours as I haue redde or seen, Guydo de

Columna reherseth moſt breuely the paſſetyme of the ſayde kynges: ther fore I purpoſe here to reherſe his ſayenge, as he hath left yt to vs in latyn.

THE XLVI. CHAPITER.

OR Dorbonian⁹ or Gorbomānus the ſonne of Regny ſonne of Eldure / was made kynge of Bry tayne, in the yere of the worlde foure thouſande.ix. hundred and .xlv. After whom ſucceedyd Margan. After Margā Emerian⁹ brother to ỳ ſayd Margan / the whyche Emerianus was depryuyd for his crueltes. And after hym reygned.xx. kynges ſucceſſyuely the one after the other / of the whyche, as ſayth myn authour Guydo, is no mencyon made / eyther for theyr rudeneſſe, or ellys for crueltye or dyſcordaunte meanes or maners vſed in ỳ tyme of theyr reygnes / the whyche myſorder clerkes diſdayned to wryte or put in memory. And nexte the laſte of theſe forſayd.xx. kynges ſuccedyd Blegabridus a conynge muſycyan: the whyche for his excellence in that facultye, was called of the Brytons god of glemen.

After Blegabrid⁹ was thus kyng and dyed, ſucceded .ix. kynges / of whome for the former cōſyderacyon is nother name nor tyme of reygne put in memory. The laſte of whyche ix. kynges was by the agreemēt of all wryters named Hely / whych Hely after ſome wryters reygned. xl. yeres, & after ſome but bare. vii. monethes. In the whych. xxxiii. kynges tymes, paſſed or flowed (that is to ſay from the laſte yere of Eldure vnto the laſte yere of the forſayde Hely, as by the formed table apperyth) a hundred and. lxxxvi. yeres. whyche ſayde Hely lefte after hym .iii. ſonnes, named Lud, Caſſibellanus, and Nenrius.

THE XLVII. CHAPITER.

LUd the eldeſte ſonne of Hely, was made kyng of Bry tayn, in the yere of ỳ worlde. v. thouſand a hundred and. xxxi. This mā was ho nourable in all his dedes / for he edyfyed new temples, and repayred the olde. He alſo repayred olde cytyes & townes / and ſpecyally in the cytye of Troynouant he cauſyd many bryl dynges to be made / and gyrde the ſayde citye about wyth a ſtrong wall of lyme and ſtone. And in the weſte parte of the ſayde walle he arteryd a fayre and ſtronge gate, and commaūded it to be called Luddys gate, whych at this daye is clepyd Ludde gate. And for he loued myche this cytye: he vſed myche & moſte to lye there. By reaſon wherof yt was called Caerlud or Luddys towne / and after by corrupcyon or ſhortynge of the ſpeche, yt was named London, whych name at this daye remayneth and abydeth.

This Lud alſo, as wytneſſyth Gaufryde, was ſtrōge and myghty in armys in ſubduynge his enymyes. He was alſo lyberall of gyftes and plentuouſe in his houſhold / ſo ỳ he was myche loued and drad of his Brytōs. But when he hadde contynued hys reygn with great honour by ỳ terme of .xi. yeres: he dyed, & was buryed in his gate called Porrlud or Ludgate / leuynge after hym, as wytneſſyth Gaufryde, two ſonnes, Androgeus, & Tenancius or Tenancius.

THE XLVIII. CHAPITER.

CAſſibellan the brother of Lud was made kyng of Bry tayn, in the yere of the worlde. v. thouſand a hundred and. xlii. For ſo myche as the .ii. ſonnes before named of Lud were to ponge or inſuffycyent for to take on hand ſo great a charge. But as wyt-

as wytnessyth the olde cronycle, and also the authour of the Floure of hystoryes: thys Cassybellan was not made kynge, but ruler or protectour of the lande, for the tyme of the nonage of the forsayde brethern: all be yt myne authour Gaufryde sayth, ꝑ after Cassibellan was sette in auctorite/he became so noble and lyberall, that his name sprange farre/and by his exercysynge of iustyce, the Brytons ought to hym more fauour, the to eyther of his neuewes. Howbeyt he cherysshed them, & brought theym forth accordyng to theyr byrth. And when they came vnto yeres of discrecyon, he gaue to Androge⁹ the cytye of London, wyth the dukedome or the erledome of Kent/and to Temancius the dukedome of Cornewayll.

In this season was Caius Julius, the whyche is moste commonly called Julius Cesar, sente by the senate of Rome as felowe and counsull wyth Lucius Bubulus into Gallia nowe called Fraunce, for to subdue them vnto the empyre of Rome. The whyche Julius beyng vppon the see syde, after he had ouercome the Gallis, and beholdyng the whyte clyues or rockes of Brytayne: enquyred of the countre, and what people dwelled therin. And when he was sufficyently enfourmed of all the commodytyes therof: he had great wyll to bryngе the sayde countre vnder the yocke of the Romaynes, for so myche as at those dayes a great parte of the worlde was tributary to Rome. But as sayth myne authour, fyrste he exorted the Britons by wrytyng & messagers, to gyue trybute vnto Rome. wherfore Cassybellan haupnge indygnacyon wrote vnto hym sharpe & short answeres, shewyng that he and euery noble man was bounde specyally to kepe his coūtre from seruage/ and to kepe his subiectes, that they myght enioy lybertye and franchise. The whyche to obserue, he wold do the vttermost of his power & myght, wyth the which answere Julius beynge nothynge cōtentyd, in all haste made redy his naup and people, and sayled towarde Brytayne. And whē the Romaynes were comyn nere the land of Brytayne, & shuld haue landed: ꝑ Brytons pyght sharpe stakes and longe vppon the bankes/ which caused theym to wynne lande wyth great daunger. And not longe after theyr landynge, Cassibellan wyth a stronge hoste of Britons encountred the Romaynes/gyuynge or yeldyng to them suche fyght and batayll that they were fayne to resorte to theyr shyppes for theyr suertye. Not wyth standyng ꝑ, as witnesseth Gaufride and other/ Julius after he hadde renewed his knyghtes, and also ryggyd his naupe: he came agayne the seconde tyme, entendynge to subdue the land to the empyre of Rome. But as before tyme he was by the manhode of the kynge and his Brytons manfully and knyghtly wythstāden and chasyd: so this seconde tyme he was in lyke wise ouercome, and compelled to flee wythout honoure. For whych dyctory thus twyes obteyned by the Brytons, Cassibellan entendynge to gyue thanke vnto his goddes, and rewarde to hys knyghtes: in goodly haste caused an assemble to be made of his lordes & knyghtes at the cytye of Caerlud or London. where after dew obseruaunces done to theyr goddes, after ꝑ vse of theyr pagan lawes, a great and solemne feste was holden by the kynge to all that wolde come, wyth moste lyberalytye and plentye in all that was necessarye to such a feste. And the more to encrease the kynges honoure/and to the more comforte and dilectation of his lordes and other there beynge

present

ꝑsent: there was all maner kynd of games that at those dayes were exercysed and vsed. Contynewynge whyche feste, two noble and yonge knyghtes amonge other happened to assey eyther other in wrastlyng/ wher of that one was neuew to kyng ℞ al sibellan named Hirelda/and ꝑ other named Eucinus, was allyed vnto Androgeus erle or duke of London. By meane of this wrastlynge dyuy syon or vnsyttynge wordes fyll betwene the two yonge knyghtes, ꝑ after wordes ensued strokes/by meane wherof partyes were take on eyther syde, whyche ranne to gyder in great ire and malyce, so that on eyther part many and diuers were hurte ℞ woun ded. Among whome Hirelda neuew to the kynge was slayne/ whych caused great dysturbaunce in the courte and amonge the lordes.

When the knowlege of the deth of Hirelda was brought vnto ꝑ kyng: he was therwyth greatly amoued/ ℞ entendynge dewe iustice to be hadde ℞ mynystred by thaduyce of his Barons, caused the forenamed cosyn of Androgeus Eucinus to be sommoned for to appere before hym ℞ hys counsayll, and there to acquyte hym of suche cryme as to hym was layde for the deth of Hirelda before slayne. But Eucinus by counsayll of Androgeus wythstode that commaundement/ and shortly after the sayde Androgeus and Eucyne departed the courte wythoute takynge leue of the kynge.

The kynge dysdaynynge this demeanure of Androgen/ after diuers monycyons to hym gyuen, gathered his knyghtes and made warre vpon Androgeus. wherfore he cōsyderyng after many ways ℞ meanes thought ꝑ he was not of power to wythstand the kynges great indignacyon/ sent his letters vnto Caius Julius Cesar, shewynge to hym the circumstaunce of the mater / and aduoydynge hym of all gylt, besought and prayed him in moste humble wyse, that he wolde shortly retourne wyth his army into Brytayne/ ℞ he wyth his hole power shuld be redy to ayde and helpe hym agayne the Brytons.

Of this message was Julius very glad/ and in all haste made towarde Brytayne wyth a great power. To whom ꝑ wynde was so fauourable/ ꝑ in short tyme after this message he drew nere ꝑ land. But as affermeth myne authour Gaufryde/or he wold lande, fervnge the treason of Androgeus, he receyued frō hym in hostage his sonne named Scena, wyth. rrr. other of the moste noble of his lordshyppe/ ℞ that done he landed wyth the helpe and ayde of Androgeus. wherof when Cassibellan hadde warnynge, in all haste he made towarde the Romaynes / and in a valey nere vnto Dorobernia now named Canterbury, there he foūde the hoste of ꝑ said Julius lodged, ℞ with him Androgeus with all his power. After whych knowlege had eyther of other/ wyth theyr habyllemētes of warre eyther greued other, tyll at legth both hostes mette hande for hand and faught vygerously, in such wise that many fell on eyther partye.

But when the Brytons, as sayth Gaufryde, hadde longe foughten ℞ knyghtly defended the Romaynes: Androgeus with his peple came by a wynge of the Brytons / and them so sharpely assayled, that they were constreyned to forsake the feld and place ꝑ they before had kepte. The whiche flyght dyscōforted so the other, that fynally all fledde and gaue place to the Romaynes, the which pursued ℞ slewe them withoute pytye. So that Cassibellan wyth his Brytons that were lefte, were fayne to gette them

to a

to a place of fuerty/ there to reste tyll they myght newly prouyde to wyth stande theyr enemyes.

But fynally as all wryters agre, Julius helde the kyng so shorte, that for an vnyte and concorde he was fayne to become trybutary to the Romaynes, and to paye to them yerely a certayne trybute, whych Gaufryd affermeth to be. iii. thoulande poud. And when the sayde trybute was set in a fuertye/ so that the sayd Romaynes were wyth yt contented, and Julius hadde accomplyshed his wyll & pleasure in thynges to hym thought necessary: he with Androgeus departed the lande, and so spedde hym towarde Rome/ where soone after he was agayn, by the will of ỳ most of ỳ senatours made emperour. And this tribute thus was graũted when Cassibellan hadde reygned as kynge of Britayne fully. viii. yeres and more.

THE .XLIX. CHAPITER.

THis begynnynge of this trybute payde by Cassibellan vnto the Romayns, shuld seme by most concordaunce of wryters to be vpon xl. and. viii. yeres before Cristes incarnacyon, or after some .l. But for proofe of the fyrste sayenge/ I haue shewed my concepte in the tabyll before named/ the whych I remytte to the correccyon of such as haue pfyte vnderstandynge in calculynge of hystoryes and tymes.

And here I make an ende of the seconde parte of this worke/ in pelynge graces to oure moste consolatryce, that moste blessed virgyne oure lady saynt Mary, the whyche here I agayne salute wyth the seconde of the forsayde. vii. toyes, whyche begynneth,

Gaude sponsa chara dei. &c.

Be ioyous thou spouse of god moste dere

Thou fayrest of all that euer was bore
Thou clerest of lyght euer in the day be shyned moste clere
The moste illumyned by meanes full ryght
And thorowe the vertue of thy full myght
Causest the worlde to be resplendissaunt
By meane of thy pees, which is full habundaunt.

This seconde parte to be accompted from the last yere of the dyscorde of the Bryttons to the ende of the. ir. yere of Cassybellan, includeth of yeres. iii. hundred. lxxx. and. iii.

THE THYRDE PARTE.

THE .L. CHAPITER.

THus maye we vnderstande, that by the apoyntmẽt before made/ Cassibellan contynued styll as kynge and gouernour of this land of Brytayn/ whyche by moste cũcordaunce of wryters hadde reygned before or he were made trybutarye vppon. ir. yeres/ whyche sayde. ir. yeres made the yere of the worlde folowynge thaccompte before expressyd, fyue thousand a hundred .l. And after he reygned by thagremẽt of all wryters as kyng of this lande, fully. viii. yeres. So that in all before the graũte of ỳ tribute, and after/ he reygned vppon. xbi. yeres.

THE .LI. CHAPITER.

NOwe then haue I shewyd to you how that Julius Cesar by ayde and helpe of Androgeus erle of Kent/ made this land of Brytayn trybutarye to the Romaynes, when Cassibelan had ben kyng of the sayd lande vppon. ir. yeres/ whych. ir. yeres I haue sette for the ende of the seconde parte of this worke. So that the. r.

the.x. yere of Cassibellan is the fyrst yere of the thyrde parte of the sayde worke. Then as all writers testifye/ Cassibellan contynued after the departynge of Julius, as kyng by the terme or space of.vii. yeres as before is declared. In the tyme of ꝑ whych vii. yeres is none noble acte nor dede of hym put in memory or wrytynge.

But for some wold thynke that after Caius Julius Cesar, hadde thorough helpe of Androgeus erle of Kent, and eldest sonne of Lud, thus as before is sayde, subdued Cassibellan: that the sayd Julius wold haue restoryd the sayde Androgeus to the crowne of Brytayne, as his ryghtfull inherytaūce/ and clerely to haue expelled and put oute the sayd Cassibellan from all kyngly dygnyty. To this answereth the olde cronycle and sayth, that Cassibellan was not the sonne of Hely, but that he was the eldeste sonne of Lud, by reason wherof he was fyrste made kyng/ and so as ryghtfull heyre contynued durynge hys lyfe, kynge of Brytayne. The whych when he hadde regned.ix. yeres or he were trybutary, and.vii. yeres after as affermeth the sayde olde cronicle in all.xvi. yeres/ he ded dyed wythoute issue, and was buryed at Caerbranke or yorke.

THE .LII. CHAPITER.

Emanci⁹ or Tenancius the yongest sonne of Lud, as affermeth Gaufryde, was made kyng of ꝑ Brytōs, in the yere of the worlde fyue thousande a hundred and.lvii. This is named in the englyshe cronycle Tormace, and not kynge, as the sayde boke affirmeth. But his elder brother, whych in the sayde boke is named Androgen, was after the affyrmaunce of the sayd englyshe cronycle made kynge. But the forsayd Gaufryde and other testifyen/ that for so myche as Androgeus ferde to be euer hated of ꝑ Brytons, for his treason wroughte agaynst the kyng and the lande: he therfore chase to go with Caius Julius to Rome, rather thē to be kyng of such as he thought wolde neuer haue hym in theyr loue and fauoure.

Then yt foloweth in ꝑ storye, this Tenāctius ruled the land with great dylygence and iustyce/ and defended the lande well and knyghtly agayne all alyaūtts and straūgers/ & payde his trybute to the Romaynes ꝑ Cassibellan had graunted/ and lastly dyed when he had regned after most wryters.xviii. yeres, and was buryed at Caerlud or London/ leuynge after hym a sonne, the whyche was called Kymbeline.

THE .LIII. CHAPITER.

Kymbelinus or Kymbelyne the sonne of Tenancius/ was of ꝑ Brytōs made kynge, in the yere of the worlde .v. thousande a hundred and .lxxx. This man as wytnesseth Guydo was brought vp at Rome amonge the Romaynes, & there made a knyght/ and had of them suche fauoure, that he was at lyberty to pay the trybute or not. Of hym is lytell memorye made/ excepte all wryters agreen, that in ꝑ season that he was kynge, our sauyoure Cryste Jesus was incarnate of that moste blessyd virgine our lady saynt Mary. which shulde be to accorde hystoryes, in the xlii. yere of his regne.

Of the regne of this Kymbelyn authours wryte dyuersly/ so ꝑ some shewe no yeres, and some but fewe, whych can not accord wyth the tyme of other cronycles. But the authour of the hystorye called Floure of hystoryes wytnessyth, ꝑ he regned.xxxv. yeres. The whyche sayeng who lyst to se ꝑ table before rehersed: he shall

there

there haue knowl ege, that this sayd auctoure accordeth beste wyth other storyes and cronycles.

And when that this Kymbelyne had reygned gloryously ouer ỹ Bry tons by all the season before expressyd, he dyed & was buryed at Caerlud or London / leuynge after hym two sonnes named Guyderius and Aruiragus.

NOw before haue I shewed vnto you in ỹ later chappter, ỹ Criste was incarnate, in the .xix. yere of Kymbelyne / whyche maketh the yere of the worlde, that is to saye frō the fyrste creacyon of Adam to the incarnacyon .v. thousande a hundred lxxx. and .xix. the whyche accompt is approuyd by holy Isodore, Beda, and other.

Then Cryste was incarnate the yere of ỹ world, as before is expressed.

From Noes flood or after. ii. thousande.ix. hundred and.lvii.

After Abraham.ii thousande & .xvii.

After Dauid kyng of Israell, a thousande and.lxxv.

From or after the trāslmygracyon of the Iewes to Babylon, v. hūdred lxx. and.x.

After Brute entred Britayne.xi.hundred and.xxvi.

After Alexander the great, nere hypon. iii. hundred and.xxv.

After the buyldynge of Rome. vii. hūdred and .xxix.

And in the begynnyng of ỹ. xlii. yere of Octauius Augustus, then emperour of Rome.

THE .LIII. CHAPITER.

GUyderius the fyrste sonne of Kymbalyne / beganne his reygne ouer the Britons, the yere of the worlde. v. thousande. CC. & .xvi. And the yere after Cristes incarnacyon ỹ xvii. yere. This man was weithy & trusted mych in his strēgth. And for he thought the Romayns hadde the forenamed trybute with wronge: he therfore of a knyghtly courage denyed to the Romaynes the sayde trybute. wherfore Claudius whych was vncle vnto Caius Caligula the. iiii. emperour of Rome: came into Brytayne with a great armye of Romaynes / & as wytnessyth Policronica, cō queryd and wanne agayne the sayde trybute wythout great fyght. And ỹ done / he also subdued the yles of Orchades or Orkeys, whych stande beyonde Scotlād within the great Ocean / and after tourned agayne to Rome the. vi. moneth after that he came thens.

The cronycle of Englande, and also Gaufryde saye, that in the hoste of the Romaynes was a captayne named Hame or Hamo / the whych entendynge hurte and destruccyon of ỹ Brytons, chaunged his shelde or armure, & dyd vppon hym the armure of a Britayne. And by that meane as a Briton myscladd, he entred into the thyckest of the hoste / and lastely vnto the place where as kynge Guyderius faught, & shortly after slewe the kynge. But Aruiragus seynge this sodayne myschyefe, to the ende ỹ the Brytons shulde not gyue backe: he hastely caused hym selfe to be armed wyth the cognysaunce of the kynge. And so for kyng cōtynued the fyght, wyth such mahode, that the Romaynes were put to flyght.

Thus by accorde of wryters Guyderius was slayne of the foresayde Hamo / when he hadde reygned ouer the Brytons by the concordaunce of other hystoryes .xxviii. yeres, leuyng after hym none heyre of his body to guyde the lande after his deth.

THE .LV. CHAPITER.

ARuiragus the yongest sonne of Kymbelyne, and brother

to Guyderius before slayn, was ordeyned kyng of Bryttons, in the yere of our lorde. xliiii. This in the englyshe boke is named Armager/ the whyche as there is shewed, well and knyghtly mayntayned the warre agayne the Romayns, and after slew the forenamed Hamo nere vnto an hauen or porte of the see. And hym so slayne, threwe gobet meale into the same see. And for this skyll, was this hauē longe tyme after called Hamōs hauen/ whych at this daye is called Southampton.

Then yt foloweth in the. viii. chapyter of the .iiii. boke of Policronicon, that Claudius after dyuers happes of batayll, toke Aruirag⁹ to his grace/ & brought his doughter Gennissa by name from Rome, and maried her vnto Aruiragus. And for he wolde make the place of ꝑ maryage more solemne, he therfore called the towne of mariage Claudiocestria after his name, the whych before was called in brytysshe tunge Caerleon, & after Glouernia after a duke of Demecia that hyght Glorio/ but nowe this towne is named Glouceter.

All otherwyse telleth the englyshe cronycle/ & sayth that Armager scomfyted Claudius, and compelled hym to gyue his doughter Gēnissa or Gēnen to the sayde Armager to wyfe/ wyth condycyon that the Romayns shulde neuer after that daye clayme any trybute of Brytayne, excepte alonely fealte/ whyche sayenge appereth doutefull for dyuers causes. wherof one is, that the sayde Armager shulde not constrayne Claudius to gyue his doughter to hym/ for so myche as the sayde Armager hadde neuer seen the sayde Gennen before tyme, nor knewe not of her cōuersacyon. Then meruayle yt were, that he shulde force her father to gyue hym a wyfe, that he hadde casi no loue vnto before tyme. One other reason is, that the sayde cronycle testyfyeth/ that after he hadde maryed the sayd Gennen, he was at London crowned kynge of Englande. For I wold thinke if he had ouercome Claudius, as there is surmytted, he wold fyrste haue crowned hym selfe kyng, and then haue maried his doughter. But by the same reason yt certifyeth more strenger the former sayenge of Policronica. For by all lykelyhode Claudius wold not suffer hym to be crowned kyng, tyll he hadde full performed his promyse in maryage of his doughter.

And all be yt that myne authoure Gaufryde varyeth not myche from the englyshe cronicle: I thynke in ꝑ doynge he toke example of Homer⁹, that wrote the dedis and actes of the Grekes/ the whyche shewed and put in memory all the noble actes by thē done, and specyally in the recuyll or boke made by hym of the syege of Troye. But the other dedys concernynge theyr dyshonoure/ he hyd yt as myche as he myght. And in lyke maner do many other writers, which I passe ouer. And so Gaufride for he was a Bryton, he shewed the beste for Brytons.

Then yt foloweth, after the solemnysacyon of this maryage, whyche was with all honour fynyshed: Claudius sente certayne legyons of his knyghtes into Irlande to rule that countre, and retourned hym selfe to Rome.

THE .lvi. CHAPITER.

It was not longe after the departynge of Claudius: but ꝑ Aruiragus rode aboute his realme, and wyth great dylygence repayred cytyes and townes before decayed & broken wyth the strength of the Romaynes/ and entreated his subiectes

wyth

wyth ſuche iuſtyce and good order, that they loued and dread hym more then any of his progenitours. This in tracte of tyme made hym welthy. And by meane of this welthynes enſued pryde / ſo ỹ hym thought great ſhame to be vnder the rule or guydynge of ỹ Romayns / wherfore laſtly he denyed the tribute before graũted. wherof when knowlege came vnto ỹ ſenate of Rome: in all haſt was ſent a duke of Rome called Veſpaſyan, wyth a certayne of legyons to ſubdue Aruiragus.

ye ſhall vnderſtand, that a legyon of knyghtes, is .vi. thouſande. vi. hundred .lxvi.

when Veſpaſyan was landed in Bꝛytayne, as teſtifyeth Polycronica / he ſpedde hym ſo, that in ſhorte whyle he ſubdued Aruiragus to the empyre, and cauſyd hym to graunte payment of the forſayde trybute. which was done, as ſayth Gaufride by entreatye of the quene Gennilla, and of no conſtraynt nor coaccyon.

when Veſpaſyan hadde thus recouerỹd the trybute, he then alſo made ſubiecte to the empyre / an yle in the ſee lyenge vpon the ſouthſyde of Bꝛitayne, now called the yle of weyght, and after retourned to Rome.

when Aruiragus was thus ſecondely bꝛought vnder the pocke of ỹ Romayns: he became more mylde towarde them / ſo that whyle he lyued after he payed hys trybute wyth leſſe grudge, and contynued hym in theyr fauours, in ſuche wyſe that he was of theym well beloued. And ſo laſtely dyed when he hadde ruled the Bꝛytõs well and nobly by the terme of .xxx. yeres / and was buryed at Caergloſ, Caerleon, Clau dioceſtria, or Glouceter / leuynge after hym a ſonne named Marius.

THE .LVII. CHAPITER.

Marius the ſonne of Aruiragꝰ was ordeyned kynge of Bꝛytons, in the yere of our lorde. lxxiii. This in the cronycle of Englande is named weſtmer. whych Marius, as wytneſſyth Gaufryde, was an excellent wyſe man / and guyded his Bꝛytons moſte honourably, and in grete proſperyte and welthe. In the tyme of the reygne of this Mariꝰ a duke or kynge of a nacyon called Pyctes / whych as wytneſſyth Virgilius, are deſcendyd of a people called of olde tymes Scythis. They alſo are named Gothis or Hunys. This forſayde leder of Pictes is named of Gaufryde Londricus / the which landed wyth a great naup, in the prouynce of Albania now called Scotlande / and ỹ beganne to waſte with iron and wyth fyre. wherof whẽ Marius was warned / he in all haſte aſſembled his knyghtes, and made towarde his enymyes / and gaue vnto them ſtronge batayll. In the whych Lõdꝛicus or after ſome Rodicꝰ was ſlayne, and a great parte of his people were ſlayne. In remembꝛaunce of whyche victorye, kynge Marius lette arrere a great ſtone / and in this he commaunded to be grauen Marii victoꝛia, whych is to meane the victorye of Marius.

wyllyam of Malmeſburye ſayth, that this ſtone was arered in mynde of Marius the conſull of Rome.

The englyſhe cronycle ſayth, that this batayll was foughte in a place, the whyche now is called Stanymore. But where ſo this ſtone is ſet / the countre there aboute was longe after called weſtmaria, and nowe weſtmerlande.

Then ỹ folowyth in the ſtorỹ, that

when the reſydue of the people of Lodricus, whyche were fledde from the felde, vnderſtode that theyr hedde & captayne was ſlayne: they made hũble requeſt vnto ꝑ kynge, ꝑ he wolde accepte thẽ vnto his grace/ and that he wold graunt to theym ſome lande and countre to dwell in. whych graũted vnto thẽ a place in the ferre ende of Scotlande, whyche is named of myne authoure Catheneſia, where the ſayd Scythis or Pictes fyrſt inhabyted them. And for ſo myche as the Bꝛytons dyſdayned to gyue vnto thẽ theyr doughters in marryage: therfoꝛe they acqueynted them wyth the Iryſhe men, and maryed theyr doughters, and grewe in ꝓꝛoces into a great people. And foꝛ this allyaunce atwene the Iryſhe and them: theyr countre, as wytneſſyth Polycronycon ꝑ .rrr.vii. chappter of hys fyrſte boke, was called Irlande, and after Pictauia, & laſtely Scotlande.

And when Marius had thus ſubdued his enemyes/ he attendyd and ſette his mynde to the common wele of this lande and ſubiectes / and contynued ꝑ reſydue of his lyfe in great tranquillite and reſte. And ſo laſtely payde his naturall tribute, & was buryed at Caerleyll, leuyng after hym a ſonne named Coill⁹ or Coyll, whẽ he hadde reygned after moſte wyꝛters .liii. yeres.

THE .LVIII. CHAPITER.

COyllus the ſonne of Marius was after the deth of his father made kynge of Bꝛytons, in the yere of oure loꝛdes incarnacyon a hũdꝛed and. rrvi. This was from hys infancy noꝛyſhed and bꝛought vppe amonge the Romaynes in Italia or Rome/ by reaſon wherof he was to theym louynge and kynde, and they vnto hym. And he, foꝛ ſo myche as he knewe the power of the Romayns great/ in auoydyng of warre & other daunger, payde vnto them the foꝛeſayde trybute duryng his lyfe. This Coillus alſo, as wytneſſyth Gaufryde, was a lyberall man of gyftes/ by reaſon wherof he obteyned great loue of his nobles, and alſo of his cõmons. And as ſome authours haue: this Coyll made the towne of Colcheſter/ whych at this daye is a fayꝛe town in the ſhyꝛe of Eſſex. But other aſcribe yt to Cocll or Coill, that was kynge nexte after Aſclepeodotus.

But when this Coillus hadde reygned in ſouerayngne peace by ꝑ terme of. liiii. yeres, he dyed and was buryed at Caerbꝛank or yoꝛke / & lefte after hym a ſonne, the whyche was named Lucius or Lucy.

THE .LIX. CHAPITER.

LUcius or Lucy the ſonne of Coillus, was made kynge of Bꝛytons, in the yere of oure loꝛde a hundꝛed and. lrrr. The whych in all actes and dedes of goodnes folowed his foꝛefaders/ in ſuche wyſe that he of all men was beloued and dꝛad. Of this is litell or none acte notable put in memoꝛye/ exceptꝛ that all wꝛyters agꝛee, that this Lucius ſent to Eleutherius then pope of Rome certayne pyſtles or letters, pꝛayeng hym that he & his Bꝛitons myght be receyued to the fayth of Cryſtes chyꝛche. wher of the pope beynge very ioyous and gladde / ſente into Bꝛytayne two noble clerkes named Faganus and Duuianus: or after ſome, Fugacius and Dimianus. Theſe two good and vertuous clerkes were honourably receyued of Lucius / the whych by theyr good doctrine and vertuous examples gyuynge, cõuerted the kynge and a great parte of the Bꝛytons.

But foꝛ ſo myche authours & wꝛyters

ters wryte dyuersly of ꝑ tyme of this recepuynge of the fayth by Lucius/ so that the one varyeth greatly from the other: therfore I haue shewed in the forenamed table, that yt shall vnder correccyon appere, ꝑ the fayth was receyued by Lucius, as afferme=eth Petrus Victauiens. the. viii. yere of the reygne of the sayde Lucius. And ꝑ yere after Cristes incarnacion a hundred .clxxviii. The whych Lucye after the fayth thus by hym receyued, by the aduyce of the forsayde clerkes, and wyth the instruccyons sent to theym by the forsayde pope Eleuthery: instituted and ordeyned, that all or the more partye of Archeflampnys and flampnys/ whyche is to meane archbysshoppes and bysshoppes of the pagan lawe, whyche at that daye were in nomber, as wytnessyth Gaufryde and other. iii. of the archeflampnys, and .xxviii. of the flampnys/ were made and ordeyned archebysshoppes & bysshoppes of ꝑ chyrch of Criste, as after folowyth.

Archeflampnys bysshoppes constytuted.

THE .LX. CHAPITER.

The fyrste of the archeflampnys see, rule, or iurysdyccyō/ was as wytnessyth Gaufride & Polycronica, at London, the seconde at yorke, and the thyrde at Caerusk or Kaergloū or Glouceter. To these. iii. archbyshopes were subiecte the forsayd .xxviii. flampnys or bysshoppes. To the archebysshoppes see of London was subiecte Cornewayll and all myddel England vnto Humber. To the archebysshoppes see of yorke was subiecte all Northumberlande, from the bowe of Humber, wyth all Scotlande. And to the thyrde archbysshoppes see, whych was at Glowceter, was subiecte all walys. In whych prouynce of walys were. viii. bysshoppes, where as now ben but iiii. And at ꝑ daye Seuarus departed Brytayne and Cambria or walys. But in the tyme of Sarons, after they had the rule of the lande of Brytayne, as testifyeth wylhelmus de Pontific. all be yt that saynt Gregory had graunted vnto London prymuylege of that archbisshoppes see: neuertheles saynt Austayn, the which wyth other was sent into Englande by the forsayde Gregorye, tourned the archebysshoppes see out of London into Caunterbury, after the deth of saint Gregory, by meanes of prayer of kyng Egbert or Ethelbert, and other cytyzeyns & burgesys of Caunterbury/ where yt hath contynued to this daye/ except that for the tyme of Offa kynge of Mercia or Mercheryk, for dysplesure that he hadde to the cytezeyns of Caunterburye by=name and toke from theym that dygnyte/ and worshypped Adulphe bysshop of Lychefelde wyth the pall of Caunterbury by the assent of Adryan the fyrste of that name then pope. Neuertheles in the tyme of Kenulphus, whyche not longe after was kynge of the sayde Mercia or Mercheryk/ yt was agayne restoryd to Caunterbury.

The worshyp of ꝑ see of yorke hath endured there alwaye and yet dothe, though Scotland be withdrawē frō his subiectcyon. The archbysshoppes see of Caergloū or Glowceter, was tourned frō thēs to Menenia, whych is in ꝑ west syde of Demecia vppon the Irysshe see, whiche now is called saynt Dauids lande. In this prouynce from the dayes of saynt Dauid, vnto the dayes of Sampson bysshop/ sat. xxiii. bysshoppes. But in the sayde Sampsons dayes then archebysshop, fyll such mortalyte thorowe

walys of the yelowe cuyll called the Jaundyes/that myche people therof dyed. wherfore the sayde Sampson toke wyth hym the pall, & sayled into Armorica or lytell Brytayne/and was there byshoppe of Dolence or Dolences. And from that tyme vnto the fyrst Henrys tyme kyng of Englande/ hadde sytten at Menenia or saynte Dauids .xxi. byshoppes, and all wythoute pall. But whether yt were for lacke of connynge, or ellys for pouerty, it is not assertayned. Neuertheless alwaye from the tyme of the sayde Sampson vnto the forsayde Henry the fyrste tyme/ all the byshoppes of wales were sacred of ỳ byshoppe of Menenia or saynte Dauids. And the archebyshop of Menenia was at all tymes sacred of ỳ byshoppes of walys, as of his suffragans, and made no profession nor obiection vpon any other chyrche. But after these dayes other byshoppes ỳ sat there/were compelled to be sacred at Canterbury. In token of whyche subiection Bonyface archbyshoppe of Caũterbury, & legate of the crosse/ sange in euery cathedrall chyrche of walys a solemne masse, whyche was done by the sayde Boniface in the tyme of Henry the seconde beynge kynge of Englande.

But now ye shall vnderstãde there ben but two primates or archbyshoppes in all Englande and walys. That one ys at Caunterburye, and that other is at yorke. To the primate of Caunterburye ben subiecte xiii. byshoppes in England, and .iiii. in walys. And the primate of yorke hath but two suffragans in Englãd, which be the byshoppes of Caerleyll and Durham.

And who so wyll be further instructe of the order and chaũges of byshoppes see in Englande lette hym rede ouer the .lii. liii. lv. lvi. and lvii. chappyters of the fyrste boke of Polycronycon/ or a pte of holy Bedys worke, whyche he compyled of the same mater called historia Anglicana: and there he shall haue euery thyng sette out clerely and truely.

And for to contynewe my processe of Lucius as wytnessyth myne authoure Gaufride/ when he hadde as before ys sayde stablyssyd & orderyd the forsayde archeflamyns and flamyns/ and that they were also confermed of the pope: he then endowed them wyth such landes and possessyons, as before tyme were occuppyed or gyuen to the maynteynynge and vpholdynge of the pagan rytes and lawe vsyd before tyme. And the temples of idollys thorough his land he caused to be dedycate to Jesu Criste and his sayntes/ & honoured them wyth myche great and large gyftes. And when he had done, after moste accorde of wrytters by ỳ terme of .xii. yeres: he dyed and was buryed in ỳ cytye of Claudiocestre or Glouceter without heyre of his body/the which after grewe to great damage of the Brytons, as after shalbe shewed.

Of this Lucius yt is shewed in a table hangynge vpon the wall of the north syde of the yle, in the backe of the quere of saynte Paules chyrche in London/ that the sayde Lucius reygned ouer the Brytons .lxxbii. yeres. And ouer that the authoure of cronica cronicarum testyfyeth, that after Lucius had receyued the fayth, he assembled a great hoste of Brytons and sayled ouer into Gallia or Fraunce/ and thens into other countres passynge by Becia and the cytye called Augusta/ & there subdued many of the enmyes of Crystes fayth/ where after many vertuouse dedys he restyd in good peace. And his suster called Emerita, as sayth the said authour, was also martyred for Cristes

stes sake. But of this sayeng & other the doute is assoyled in the forsayde table in ꝑ begynnyng of this worke/ where yt shall apere, that he reygned but. xii. peres, as above is shewed.

And for so myche as in this Lucius endeth for a tyme the lyne of Britōs, and the lande after this daye was ruled some dele by the Romayns: therfore I will here ende the thyrd parte of this worke. And for ꝑ good spede I haue hyderto had/ and to the ende to impetre the more grace in accomplyshyng ꝑ other dele of this worke: I here salute our moste blessyd lady wych the thyrd lope of the forsayde vii. lopes, whyche begynneth.

Gaude splendens vas virtutum &c.
Hayle and be glad thou vessell moste shynynge
Of vertues and grace, at whose commaundement
The hole courte of heuen is euer and byddynge
And thou also arte amonge them ment
Moste benygne and happy to euery good entent
As dygne moder of Jesu, with moste excellence
Honoured in glorye, with all theyr assystence.

This thyrde parte to be accompted from the ende of the .ix. pere of Cassibellan, to the laste pere of Lucius, includeth of peres two hūdred & .xii.

TRouth yt is, as affermyn all wryters / that after the deth of the forenamed Lucius, for so myche as of his body remayned non heyre: the Brytons amonge them selfe fyll at great dyssaunce and warre. The whyche warre and trouble endured to the greate dyssourbaunce of the lande. But howe longe, the certayne is not sette out by any wryter that I haue seen/ excepte the englyshe cronycle sayth, that yt endured. l. peres. The whych sayeng vnder correccyō can not stande wyth the concordaunce of other wryters/ as yt is more playnly declared in the forsayde table.

where also yt shall appere, that the sayde dyscorde amonge the Brytons contynued but onely .xv. peres.

After whyche terme of .xv. peres erpyred, as after more clerely shall be shewed: Seuerus beynge themperour of Rome, begaune his domynyon ouer this lande of Brytayne. So that ye shall nowe vnderstande that ꝑ laste pere of this discorde was the pere of our lorde two hundred & vii. By reason wherof yt folowyth, that the sayde .xv. peres ioyned vnto the forsayde thyrde parte: that the thyrde part cōteyneth and includeth of peres .ii. hundred and .lvi.

¶ Thus endeth the thyrde parte.

THE FOURTH PARTE.

THE .LXI. CHAPITER.

SEuer a Romayn at this daye emperour of Rome/ begaune to rule this lande of Brytayn in the pere of our lordes incarnacyon .ii. hūdred and viii. The whych as wytnesseth Gaufryde, was before tyme sent from the senate of Rome with two legyons of knyghtes into Brytayne, to appease the warre and stryfe amonge them/ and also for to wythstāde the Pictes and other enymyes, whych dayly inuaded the land. For dyuers wryters agree, that this Seuer was made emperoure, the pere of Cristes incarnacyon a hūdred. lxxx. and .xv / and ruled the sayd empyre after the most wryters .xvi. peres. By whych rule yt shuld appere that he shuld be take for gouernour of this realme of Brytayne, the. xii. pere of his empyre.

It is sayde of this man, that after he had subdued the Parthis and the Arabis, he was named Particus/ & was sent, as before is sayde, of the senate of Rome into Bretayne/ where he caused to be made at the coste of the commonte, a walle of turues and great stakes of the length, as wytnesseth Policronica of a hundred & .xii. myles/ as in the .xviii. chappter of his .iiii. boke appereth. This walle after the exposycyon of the sayde Polycronica, began at the ryuer of Tyne, and endured to the Scottyshe see/ or from the ende of the lordshyp of Deira, vnto the sayde Scottyshe see/ or after some writers from Durham, to the see beforesayde.

Then yt foloweth, the Pictes with their leder Fulgenius / issued from Albany or Scotlande into the lande of Bretayne/ and destroyed myche of ꝑ coūtre beyonde Durham. wherfore this Seuerus with and hoste of Brytons and of Romaynes mette wyth the sayde Fulgenius in a place nere vnto yorke, where after sore fyght the sayd Seuerus was slayn/ when he hadde ruled this lande after moste concordaunce of writers by ꝑ terme of .v. yeres/ and was after buryed at yorke, leuynge behynde hym two sonnes, that one named Geta, and that other Bassianus.

THE .LXII. CHAPITER.

BAssianus the sonne of Seuerus and of the moders syde a Bryton/ beganne to rule this lande of Britayne in the yere of Cirstes incarnacyon two hundred and .xii. Of this man spekyth nothynge the englyshe cronycle. But trouth yt is, as wytnesseth Gaufride and other, that after / ꝑ deth of Seuer⁹ stryfe arose betwene the Brytons & the Romaynes, then beynge wythin the land of Bretayne. For the commons helde for their kynge Bassianus, for so myche as he was borne of a Bryton woman. And vpon that other party in lyke maner the Romayns alowed Geta for their kyng, because he was descended of a Romayne. And as farther affermeth the forenamed Gaufryde/ for this dyscencyon a batayll was hadde betwene the sayd two brethern/ in ꝑ whych Geta was slayn, and Bassianus remayned for kynge of all the lande.

But frō this sayeng varyeth greatly Eutropius, and other that wryte of the cronycles of Rome. For by thē yt is witnessed, that Geta was slayn at a cytye named Edessa, when he faught agayne the Parthiens / and Bassianus succedyd his fader in the dignyte of emperoure/ which as in ꝑ sayde cronycle of Rome is testyfyed, was also called Marcus Aurelius Antonnius and Caracalla a man of ryght euyll condycyon, and vnreasonable of lechery, so ꝑ he laye by his stepdame named Iuliana and wedded her, and dyd other many cruell dedys / and lastely he was slayne at the forenamed cytye of Edessa, when he had ben emperour vpō .vii. yeres.

In the tyme that Bassianus was thus kynge of Brytayne, one named Carassius a Bryton of lowe byrthe, but valyant and hardy in mercyall dedys: purchaced of the senate of Rome the keppynge of ꝑ costes of Brytayne, and to wythstāde the malyce of straungers, as Pictes and other. By meane of this, Carassius drewe vnto hym many knyghtes, & specyally of the Brytons/ promysynge to them, ꝑ if they wold make hym kyng he wolde clerely delyuer them from all scruytude of ꝑ Romaynes. where thorough ꝑ Britons (as wytnesseth Gaufryde) rebelled agayne Bassianus/ and wyth their duke and leder Carassius, arreryd agayne hym dedely warre

ly warre. By meane wherof Bassianus was slayne, when he hadde ruled this land by moste concordaunce vi. yeres.

THE .LXIII. CHAPITER.

CArassius a Briton of vnknowen byrth was of the Brytõs made ruler, in the yere of our lord .ii. hundred and .xviii. the whych as before is touched, was by the senate of Rome deputed for a substytute or a ruler vnder the Romaynes, as yt is shewed in theyr cronycles, in the absence, or whyle Bassianus then emperour of Rome and kynge of Brytayne, was occupyed aboute the nedes of the empyre. This Carassius for that he was not of power to withstande the Pictes / or for the fauoure that he bare towarde thẽ for aydyng hym agayne the Romayns: he gaue to them the countre of Albania, that now is called Scotlande.

But ye shall vnderstande, þ here is not ment all Scotlande. For as wytnessyth Policronica / this parte þ was gyuẽ thus to the Pictes, was the south parte of Albania, and beganne at Twede, and endurynd to the Scottysh see. Of the kynde of those Pictes is somwhat shewed before in the story of Marius / but more after shall be shewed of them in conuenient place, bothe of theyr offsprynge and maners.

Then yt foloweth in the story, whẽ the Romaynes hadde knolege of the deth of Bassianus / anon they sent a duke frõ Rome named Alectus with iii. legyons of knyghtes, for to slee Carassius, and to subdue the Brytons to the empyre. To the whyche Alectus fortune was so fauourable, that he chased Carassius, and lastely slew hym / when he hadde ruled the Brytons by moste accorde of wyters viii. yeres.

But Jacobus Philipp⁹ authour of a boke named Supplementũ cronicarum sayth, that in the tyme that Maximianus or Maxymyan surnamed Herculeus, and Diocletyan Dalmatheus were emperours of Rome: they hadde that this Carassi⁹ had taken vpon hym to were þ purpure that onely was reserued to emperours / & also þ he ruled the realm of Brytayne as to his synguler vse / and furthermore were credybly enformed, that Marsey⁹ an other substytute hadde or occupyed the eest ilẽdes wyth cruell batayll / and other prynces the great coũtre of Affrica / and many other also by the instygacyon and leuyng of one named Achilleus hadde subdued the countre of Grece. For whych sayde nouellys & tydynges / these two emperours, to the ende to reformme all these sayde rebellyons, chase vnto them two noble men / of the whyche that one was named Galerius, and that other Cõstancius, as cesars or felowes to rule the empyre. And þ done / the sayd .ii. cesars were sent with great powers, that one into Affrica, and þ other into Egypte. This forenamed Maximyan came wyth great power of people into Britayne, and ouercame the sayde Carassius more by gyle then by strength / when the sayde Carassius had ruled the Brytons, as sayth the forenamed authour Jacob⁹ Philippus, by the terme of .x. yeres.

In the whyche sayeng appereth errour, for dyuersyte of tyme and yeres. For after moste accorde of wyters / and also by the affyrmacyon of the sayde Jacobus Philippus, the sayde emperours Diocliesian & Maxymyan, ruled the empyre of Rome aboute the yere of Crystes incarnacyon two hundred and .lxxx. And this Carassi⁹ was ruler in Britayne long before, as in the tyme of Bassianus em

nus emperour of Rome, ꝑ reygned aboute the yere of our lorde two hundred .xiii. as testifyeth Polycro-ron and other.

Also a boke in frenche called la Vere de hystoryes, whyche maye be englyshed ꝑ Woder of hystoryes, sayth that this Carausius was fyrste a treasourer or such a hygh officer amõge the Romayns. By reason wherof he sought great abundaunce of ryches, and fyll by reason therof in fauoure of the senatours of Rome/ so that fynally he was made senatour, and became a man of great authoryte/ in so myche that Bassianus then emperoure made hym protector of the cyte and countre of Alexandre. But then he was supprysyd wyth suche pryde, that he exercysed tyranny and other vnlefull meanes, in so excedynge maner that the countre wared wery of hym, and conspired his deth. wherfore after punyshemẽt done vpon some of his enymyes/ he feryng the sequell and reuengement of the same: left that countre and retourned vnto Rome/ where after he had a season restyd, he was by the senate of Rome assygned for his sterneſſe vnto the rule of Bryttayne, wyth the ayde of .iii. legyõs of knyghtes. And so beynge garnyshed wyth all abylymentes of warre, entred this yle of Bryttayne/ and wyth great trauayle subdued them to the empyre/ and so contynued the lyues tyme of the emperour Bassianus.

But so sone as he was assertayned that ꝑ emperour was slayne at Edessa, as before in the story of Bassian⁹ is shewed/ thynkynge that amonge the Romaynes shuld growe stryfe & dyssencyon for the electyon of a newe emperour/ by reason of whych stryfe he myght the rather lyue so farre frõ them wythout any correctyon: confederyd wyth the Scottes and tertayne other of the Britons/ and slew many of the Romaynes, suche of the as he thought wolde not consent to his treason/ and by that meane fynally was made kynge of Bryttayne. And so contynued, as affermeth the sayde authour to accompte from his fyrst hauyng rule vnder the Romaynes, vnto the tyme ꝑ he was slayne of Alectus. viii. yeres, not wythout exercysynge of his olde accustomed tyrannyes and other vnsyttynge condycyons.

THE .LXIIII. CHAPITER.

ALectus a duke or consull of Rome, sent as before is sayd from the senate/ begãne to rule the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde .ii. hundred .xxvi. This in the englysh cronycle is named Allec. whych whẽ he had restoryd the lande to the subiectyon of Rome/ he thẽ pursued certayne of the Brytõs, that had fauoured Carausi⁹ agayne the Romayns. And in that doynge vsed and exercysyd many tyrannyes and exactyons/ by reason wherof he fyll in greate grudge of ꝑ Brytons. wherfore they entendynge to oppresse and subdue the power of the Romaynes/ purchasyd and erected a noble man of ꝑ Britons called Asclepiodotus and duke of Cornewayle. The whyche gatheryd a great hoste of the Brytons, and made warre vppon the Romaynes, and chasyd them from coũtre to coũtre, & from towne to towne/ and lastly Alectus wyth his Romayns drew hym to London, and there kept hym for his most succore. wherof beynge warned Asclepiodotus: he with his Brytons came nere vnto the sayde cyte/ where by meanes of prouocatyon on eyther partye vsed, lastely ꝑ Romaynes issued oute of the cyte & gaue batayll to the Brytons. In the

which fyght many fyll on eyther par tye/but ꝑ more on the party of ꝑ Romaynes/amonge the whyche was al so slayne Alectꝰ. wherfore a captayn of the Romaynes called Liuius Gal lus, aduertysynge this myschyef, & the great daũger that the Romayns were in: drewe backe into the cytye with the Romaynes that were lefte on lyue, and defendyd yt wyth theyr powers.

Thus then appereth, that Alectus was slayne of the Brytons/ whyche was by most accorde of writers whē he had ruled this lande vnder ꝑ Romaynes by the terme of .vi. yere.

THE .LXV. CHAPITER.

ASclepiodotus duke of Cor newayle, as sayth Gaufryde (but after the sayeng of Eutropius and Beda, he was presydente of the Pretory of Rome) began his domy nyon ouer the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde two hundred and. xxxii. The whych as before is sayde, wyth his Brytons gyrt the cytye of Lon don wyth a stronge syege/ and kepte the forsayde Liuius Gallus and his Romayns in streyte holde/& finally, as affermyth myne authour Gaufry de, with knyghtly force & violēce en tred the sayde cytye, and slewe ꝑ fore namyd Liuius Gallus nere vnto a broke there at that daye rynnynge, and hym threwe into the sayd broke. By reason wherof long after yt was called Gallus or wallus broke. And at this day ꝑ strete where some tyme ranne the sayde broke, is nowe called walbroke. And after he hadde thus venquyshed the Romayns: he helde this lande a certayn of tyme in peasyble wyse, and ruled the Brytōs wyth good iustyce/ in rewardynge & exaltynge the good men, and punyſ shynge of the euyll.

In this whyle by styrynge of dyſ= clauderous & dyuylyshe persons/ a grudge was arteryd attwene the kynge and a duke of his land called Coill or Coillus, the whyche was duke or erle of Kaercolym or Colche ster/ wherof the cause is not appa raunt. But how it was, great people were assembled on both parties/ and fynally mette in the feld, where was faughte a great and stronge batayll. In the whyche Asclepiodotus was slayne/ when he had reygned to the concordaunce of other hystories, and after the affermaunce of the olde cro nycle by the space of. xxx. yeres.

THE .LXVI. CHAPITER.

COelus erle of Colchester be gan hys domynyon ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the incarna cyon of Cryste. ii. houndred. lxii. This in the englyshe boke is called Coyll/ the whiche guyded the lande to the pleasure of the Brytons a certayne tyme. But as wytnesseth Gaufryde, when the senate of Rome had vnder standynge of the deth of Asclepiodo tus, they were ioyous of the deth of hym, for so myche as he hadde euer ben an enemye to ꝑ empyre. But for so mych as at that dayes was great dyssencyon amonge them selfe, as wytnesseth ꝑ cronycle of Rome: they coude not conuenyently sende any armye of knyghtes for to warre vp pon this Coelus. wherfore he contyn nued ꝑ longer in reste & good peas. After the cronycle regestred within the monastery of saynt Alboon/ the sayd holy martyr suffered his passyō in the yere of our lorde. ii. houndred lxxx. & vi/ whych shulde be the. xxiiii. yere of this present kynge. But thys dyscordeth from suche wryters, as af fermen the holy man to be martyred in the. x. persecucyon vnder Diocle sian and Maximian emperours.

Neuertheleſſe at length was sente from

from ꝑ senate a noble wyse man called Constancius/the whiche as affermeth the forenamed auctour, had before tyme subdued to the empyre a great part of the coũtre of Spayne. But that sayenge dysagreeth to the wrytynge of Eutropius. For the coũtre of Spayne was not subdued by hym tyll after ꝑ he was emperour.

Than it foloweth, whan this Constancius was arryued in Bretayne with his army/ anone Coelus assembled his Brytons. But for he dredyd the strength and fame of thys Constãcius, he sent to hym an enbassad, affyrmynge vnto hym cõdycyons of peace, wyth graunte of paymentes of the trybute, whych before was denyed/ or elys as meaneth Polycronica, wythin a moneth after the landynge of this Constancius, Coelus was dede. wherfore the Brytons to haue the more peace / wylyd this knyghte to take to wyfe Heleyn the doughter of Coelus, wyth the possessyon of the lande of Britayne/ which by hym was graunted. Then as before is sayde, Coelus dyed, when he had ruled the Brytons after most accorde of wrytters .xxbii. yeres.

THE .LXVII. CHAPITER.

COnstancius a senatoure of Rome, as sayth Policronica/ beganne to rule the Brytons in the yere of oure lorde two hundred.lxxx. and.ix. This as before is shewed maryed Heleyn the doughter of Coelus last kyng of Brytayne. But ye shall vnderstande, that this Constancius was fyrste maryed vnto Theodora the stepdoughter of Herculeus Maximian/ and had by her syx sonnes. So that this Heleyn was his secõde wyfe, whyche was fayrest of all maydens, and therewyth lerned, and sufficyently lettred. She is also noted of many writers to be a captyue or a prysoner to the Romaynes.

Of this Constantius lytell memoryes lefte in the bretyshe or englishe cronycles / excepte that he receyued of the foresayde Heleyn a sonne named Constantinus/the whyche after for his knyghtly & marcyall dedys, was called Constantyne the great.

But for the noble dedys of so victorious a duke shuld not be hydde, as was this Cõstantius: therfore I shall now folowe the story of Rome, whych sayth, that for so myche as in the tyme of Diocleſianus and Maximianus beynge emperours, many coũtres rebellyd agayne the empyre: therfore the sayde emperoures admyttyd this Constantius, and one Galerius as cesars, whych was a dignyte next of authorryte to the emperours. And so ꝑ empyre was at those dayes guyded by two emperours, & by two cesars. This Constãtius, as wytnesseth Policronica made subiecte to the empyre the Almaynes, & slewe of theym in one daye.ix. thousande. And after other many victorious dedys, when the sayde.ii. emperours had of theyr free wylles resygned and gyuen ouer all imperiall dygnyte: thys sayde Constantius with his forenamed felowe Galeri⁹, were made emperours/ ꝑ is to wytte Galerius was emperour of all Illiricum, whyche now is named Grecia or Grece wyth all the eest lãdes, and Cõstanti⁹ hadde to hym all the west landes. But he helde hym contente wyth Gallia or Fraunce, & Spayne with Britayn/ & graunted Italia vn to Galerius afore sayd. Then he subdued the countre of Spayne, as before is touched in the story of Coelus, and a parte of Gallia/and after soiourned and abode in this lande of Brytayne in guydynge & rulynge the same wyth great soberneſſe, and ordeyned his sonne gotten vpon Heleyn to

layne to rule Gallia and Spayne.

But for to make this story more apparant & open to ꝑ readers, and also to ꝑ herers: it is here to be noted, that Dioclesianus or Diocleſian beganne his empyre ouer the Romaynes after moche wyttes, in the yere of our lorde two hundred. lxxx. and .viii. and he was emperour. xx. yeres. And this Cõſtantius was ſent into Bꝛytayne from the ſenate as before is ſayde, in the ſeconde yere of ꝑ ſayde Dioclesian, or the yere of oure lorde two hundred .lxxx. and .ix. whyche Conſtantius after he had in due maner ſpedde the nedes of the empyre, as in ſubduynge this land of Bꝛytayne, as before is ſayde: he retourned agayn to Rome/ where he was ſhortely after made ceſar, and ſo contynued his lyfe, as before ꝑs touchyd.

And in the tyme of his beyng thus ceſar and ruler of Bꝛytayne vnder ꝑ emperour, the bleſſyd and holy protho martyr of Bꝛytayn ſayne Albons at Verolan was martyred / in the. x. perſecucyon of the chyrche, as wytneſſyth Policronicon. whyche perſecucyon beganne, as teſtyfye Eutrop⁹ and Beda, the. xviii. yere of the forenamed emperours Dioclesian & Maximyan, and endured .x. yeres/ that is to ſay in ꝑ eeſt vnder Dioclesian/ and in the weſte vnder Maximyan. The whyche was ſo ſharpe and feruent, that wythin ꝑ ſpace of one moneth, in dyuers places of the worlde were .xxx. thouſande holy men and women martyred for Cryſtes ſayth. And when the ſayde emperours had reſygned theyr vnperiall dygnyte, and lyued a ꝓyuate lyfe: this ſayde Conſtantius with his felowe Galerius, bare the empyre be-fore them, as before is touched/ ſo that he reygned as ruler of Bꝛytayn by the ſpace of .xviii. yeres and more or he were emperour. And after as emperour of the weſte partye of the empyre, and kynge of Bꝛytayn .xiii. yeres and more. And ſo in all ꝑ ſayd Cõſtantius reygned ouer Bꝛytayne .xxx. yeres. And laſtely dyed and was buryed at yꝛke, leuyng after hym ꝑ forſayd ſon called Cõſtantin⁹ with out mo that any mẽcyon is made of.

THE .LXVIII. CHAPITER.

Of Conſtantinus the ſonne of Cõſtantius, and of Helayne dowgyter of kynge Coelus, in the yere of oure lorde iii. hundred. x. xii. was made kynge of Bꝛytayne. Antonenus archbyſhop of Florence, a wryter of hyſtoryes, ſheweth in the fyꝛſt chapytre of the .ix. tytle of his wo⁹he called Sũa Antonini/ that this Cõſtantyne was made emperour, or began to rule the empyre, in the yere of our lorꝛdes incarnacyon .iii. hundred and .x. which ſayeng alſo affermeth Vincẽt hiſtoryall and other authours/ wher of the cauſe is ꝑ the ſayde authours accõpte not the yeres of the reygne of Conſtantius, but folow the accõpte of Galerius felowe of Conſtantius/ whych reygned as emperour but. iii. yeres. After the which rule yt muſte nedis folowe, that this Conſtantyne began his empyre, as the ſayd Antonius wytneſſyth/ and folowynge ꝑ other accompt yt ſhulde haye.

Then to purſue or contynue ꝑ ſtorye of this Conſtantyne/ yt folowyth ꝑ at the tyme of the deceaſe of Conſtantius his faber, he was occupyed in warres in Gallia a thoſe ꝑties. After whoſe deth he by a certayn tenne ruled Bꝛytayne, & the other landes, the whyche his faber before helde in due maner. And all be yt ꝑ at ꝑ daye he was a vnfeteous a pegan: yet he vſed no tyrannyes, nor compelled not the Bꝛytons to refuſe the lawe, and to worſhyppe idolys, as other

tyrauntes at those dayes bled. In this whyle that Constantyne ruled thus the weste parte of this empyre/ one Maxentius whych was the son of Herculeus Maximian, somtyme felowe in the empyre with Diocleſian as before is shewed / was of the knyghtes of the prætory declared emperour. This Maxentius was there worſte of all men. And as testifyeth Eusebius & other/ he fyrſt began merkely, to wynne therby loue & fauour. But when he was stablyſſhed in authorite/ he exercyſed all tyrãny, & purſued all cryſtyens wyth all kynde of torment. Also he expulſed and putte out from Rome & all honour hys fader Herculeꝰ Maximianꝰ, ꝓ entẽded agayne to haue ben emperour. Of ꝓ tyranny of this Maxẽtius when Cõſtantyne had wyttyng: he aſſembled a great hoſte of Bytons and Gallis, for to oppreſſe the malyce of the sayde Maxentius.

And for to rule and guyde this lãd of Bytane in his abſence, he deputed and ordeyned a mã of myght called Octauius/ the whych Polycronica nameth duke of Jewelliſ, that after were named weſt Saxons. And when the sayde Conſtantyne had all prepared for his voyage: he betoke the lande of Bytayne vnto the sayd Octauius, and after ſpedde hym vpon his tourney. And as he was towarde his sayde tourney, he ſawe in his ſlepe the ſygne of the croſſe ſhynynge in the fyrmament, as yt hadde ben a brennyng lyght of fyre/ and an aungell ſtandynge therby and ſayenge: Conſtantyne toicanata/ which is to meane, Conſtantyne by this token thou ſhalte wynne victorye. when he awoke, he called this viſyon to mynde, and tolde vnto his ſecretes / by whoſe counſayll he commaunded the ſygne of the croſſe to be peynted and ſet in his baners and penons, and all his knyghtes.

THE.LXIX. CHAPITER.

When Conſtantyne had thus ordeyned the ſygne of the croſſe: he ſpedde hym forth towarde ꝓ ſayd tyrante Maxentius/ and mette with hym at a bridge called Ponte Myluium. where after lõge fyght, he chaſyd the ſayd Maxentius/ & him with a great parte of his hoſte drowned in the water of the ſayde bridge, when he had regned as emperour xpõ. v. yeres. After which victory thus had: the ſayde Conſtantyne wente vnto Rome / where he was receyued of ꝓ ſenate wyth moſte triumphe. And there cauſed the ſigne of the croſſe to be peynted in the fyght hãdes of the images, whyche the ſenatours of old tyme had areyd in worſhyp of theyr victoryes. And vnder the feet of the images / he cauſyd to be wryten: This is the ſigne and token of the lyuynge god, that maye not be ouercomen.

Soone after this, Conſtãtyne was conuertyd from his pagan lawe vnto Cryſtes fayth, by vertue of ꝓ bleſſed Vernacle as ſome haue ben / or by the good doctryne of that bleſſyd pope ſaint Syluester firſt of ꝓ name/ the whyche was made pope in ꝓ yere folowynge Cryſtes incarnacyon. iii. hundred and .xiii. Then Conſtantyne opened the pryſons, and deſtroyed the temples of falſe goddes, and dedycate them in the worſhyppe of god and his ſayntes. He alſo opened them that tofore were ſhytte and kepte cloſe / and cauſyd dyuyne ſeruyce in them to be ſayd, and gaue to the chyrche of Rome fyrſte poſſeſſyons. And alſo he ordeyned that ꝓ byſſhoppe of Rome ſhulde be hedde of all byſhoppes, & all other to be obedyent vnto hym. He alſo bare clayr

vppon

vppon his shoulders to the foundacyon of saynt Peters chyrch, as wytnesseth Policronica and other.

Of this fyrste indowement of the chyrch are dyuers thynges shewed, as reherseth Gwaldus Cambrens. saynt Hierom, and other/ the whych I ouer passe for lengthynge of tyme of this worke.

And whyle that Constantyne was thus occupyed in Rome: hys moder Heleyne then beyng ferre from hym, and herynge that he was become a Cristen man: sent vnto hym letters of recommendacyon, that he had forsaken the worshyppynge of idollys. But she dyspreysed hym, in that that he worshypped a man that was nayled vppon a crosse. But after receyte of these letters/ he wrote answere to his moder, that he shulde sufficyently proue, that he byleued and worshypped hym, that was fyrste creatour and maker of the worlde. And not onely a man but also god & man, with diuers other poyntes touchyng the fayth, whych I ouerpasse.

For reconynge and profe of thys, was after assygned. vii. score Iewes/ and Siluester wyth a certayne nomber of cristen clerkes, to dysputе the artycles of Cristes fayth. where after dyuers myracles shewed, & good profe made by holy scrypture: the sayde Iewes were confounded/ and the sayde Heleyne was conuerted vnto the fayth of Cristes chyrche/ and trauayled soon after to Hierusalem, where she by her industrye and labour fande oute the holy crosse, with the .iii. nayles that oure lorde was nayled wyth to the same crosse. wher of she lefte there a parte/ and the other dele was brought vnto Bizancium nowe called Constantyne noble. whyche cytye the sayde Constantyne greatly augmentyd wyth excellent buyldynge/ and therin also caused to be arrayd a chyrch of mer uaylous beautye, & named yt Sophia. when the emperour hadde receyued the forsayd parte of the crosse wyth the. iii. nayles: he after some authours put two of the sayde nayles in the brydell of his horse, whych he vsed in batayll. And the thyrde he caste or caused to be casten (as wytnesseth sayntAmbrose) in a swalowe of the see called mare Adriatici. whych swalowe was before that tyme so perylous, that vnnethes any shyppe escapyd that daunger/ and garnysshed the crosse wyth many ryche stones crept wyth golde/and after with great reuerence conueyde it to Rome, as in dyuerse hystories is declaryd. Then this Constantyne remoued the emperyall see vnto his cytye of Constantyne the noble/ and there for the more partye kepte his emperyall honoure, and other emperours in lyke wyse after hym. By reason wherof the emperours were longe after called emperours of Constantyne noble. This man was so myghty & mercyall in his feates and all hys dedys/ that for hys more honoure he had an addycyon putte to his name, and was called for his great myght and power, Constantyne the great. He was also the fyrste cristen emperoure/ and dyd many notable actes for the weale of Cristes fayth. Amonge the whyche seuen are noted by the forenamed Antoninus, in the ir. tytle of þ second part of his worke before named: wherof the fyrste was that Cryste shulde be worshypped as god thorough the cyty of Rome.

The seconde was, that who so of Jesu Cryste spake any blasphemy, he shulde be greuously punyshed.

The thyrde was, what persone that dyd any iniurye or wronge to a

Cryſten man / he ſhuld be depꝛyuyd
oꝛ put to ꝓ loſſe of halfe his goodes.
The fourth, that lyke as the empe-
rour of Rome is hede of all tẽpoꝛall
pꝛynces: ſo the byſhoppe oꝛ pope of
Rome is hed of all byſhoppes. The
fyfte, that what perſone fledde to the
chyꝛche foꝛ his ſauegarde oꝛ ſuerty/
that there he ſhuld be defended from
all perpll and daunger. The ſyxte,
that no man ſhuld pꝛeſume to buyld
any temple oꝛ chyꝛche wythin any cy
tye oꝛ towne, wythout the ſpecyall ly
cence of his byſhoppe. The ſeuenth,
that euery pꝛynce ſhulde gyue the.r.
parte of his poſſeſſyons to the buyl-
dyng and meyntenyng of chirches.

The whyche lawe he fyꝛſte executed/ and after wyth a pykar oꝛ mar-
toke with his owne hande, bꝛake the
groũde where as now ſtandeth ſaint
Peters chyꝛche. and .xii. cophyns oꝛ
treys full of erth he bare away vpon
his ſhulders/ as wytneſſyth the foꝛe
ſayde Antoninus and other.

But after thoſe manyfolde good dedys/ he fyll into the hereſye called
Ariannys hereſy. By meane wherof
he was ſo blynded, that he then be-
came an enymye to Criſtes chyrch, &
pſecuted cryſtẽ men, & eryled ꝓ pope
Silueſter/ oꝛ as ſome meane ꝓ ſayde
Silueſter fledde the cyte foꝛ fere.

Foꝛ this as wytneſſyth Jacobus Philippus and other wꝛyters / this
Conſtantyne was ſmyten wyth the
ezyll of lepꝛy. Foꝛ curynge wherof
iii.thouſand chyldern were bꝛought
to thẽperours paleys to be ſlayne, ꝓ
he in the blood of them myght be ba-
thed, and ſo cleſyd of his lepꝛy. But
when he ſaw the childern and the mo
ders ſoꝛowyng foꝛ them, he was mo
ued wyth pyttye, and ſayd: the dygni
tye of thẽpyꝛe cometh of myldneſſe.
Foꝛ yt is demyd, that he ſhuld dye ꝓ
ſleeth a chyld in batayll. Then what
crueltye were this to ſle ſo many in-
nocentes wylfully? yet bettet yt were
to vs to dye and ſaue thoſe chylders
lyues/ then to gette a cruell lyfe by ꝓ
deth of ſo many innocentes.

Foꝛ this myldneſſe it is redde that ſaynt Peter and Poule apperyd to
hym the nyght folowynge, warnyng
hym to ſende agayne foꝛ Silueſtre ꝓ
pope, and he ſhulde be by hym reſto
ryd to perfytte helthe. whyche was
done, and he heled as the legende of
ſayntes bereth wytneſſe.

Thus haue I ſhewed to you a part of the dedys of Conſtantyne / whych
yf I ſhulde cõtynue the hole pꝛoceſſe
of his reygne, that endured as em-
peroure by the ſpace of.xxx. yeres: I
ſhulde therof make a large volume.
But it concernyth nothynge of then-
tent of this woꝛke, as touchynge the
lande of Bꝛytayne: therfoꝛe I woll
retourne my ſtyle to Octauius from
whom I haue made a lõg digreſſyõ.

THE .LXX. CHAPITER.

IN this paſſetyme whyle Conſtantyne occupyed hym in ne-
des of thempyꝛe as aboue is ſhewed:
Octauius beynge lieutenant in the
lande of Bꝛytayne vnder Conſtan-
tyne, ruled the lande to the pleaſure
of the Bꝛytons a certayne of tyme.
But when he perceyued that he was
in fauoure of them, and that Con-
ſtantyne was fatre from hym / caſ-
tynge alſo in his mynde, that ꝓ ſayd
Conſtantyne beyng then emperour,
wold oꝛ myght not lyghtly retourne
into Bꝛitayn: he therfoꝛe with helpe
of his affynyte and frẽdes, withſtode
the Romaynes lefte in Bꝛytayne of
Conſtantyne/ and vſurpyd the rule
& dompnyon of ꝓ lande. wherof whẽ
certayntie came to ꝓ knowlege of Cõ
ſtantyne: he in all haſt ſent into Bꝛy
tayne a duke named Traherſi, the
whyche was vncle vnto Heleyne mo
der of Conſtantyne. when this Tra-
herſi was arryued in Bꝛytayne with
iii.thou

iii. legions of knyghtes: anon Octauius made towarde hym wyth hys Brytons/ and wyth hym mette nere the cytye, then called Kaerperis, now called Porte chestre or Porchestre/ but more verely in a felde nere vnto the cytye of Kaerguent, that now ys called wynchester/ whych felde then was named Maesurian. The ii. hostes mette wyth great ire, and fought ten longe whyle. But in ꝑ ende Traherñ was compelled to forsake the felde/ and after drewe wyth his Romaynes towarde Albania or Scotlande. wherof Octauius beyng warned, folowed hym/ and in the countre of westmerlande gaue vnto hym the seconde batayll, where then Octauius was chasyd & Traherñ was victour/ the whych pursued Octauius so egerly, that he cõpelled hym to forsake the lande of Britayne, and to sayle into the countre of Norway for his sauegarde.

But yt was not longe after, that the sayde Octauius gadered a newe people of Brytons & Norways, and was redy to retourne agayn into Britayne. In whych tyme, as testifyeth myne authour Gaufryde/ an erle of Brytayne that entierly loued Octauius, by treason slewe the sayd Traherñ a lytell before the landynge of the sayde Octauius. whyche shortly subdued the Romaynes and ꝑ lande to his owne vse. This should be after moste concordaunce of writers, whē Constantyne wyth also the ayde of Traherñ, hadde ruled this lande of Brytayne by the terme of .v. yeres.

THE .LXXI. CHAPITER.

OCtauy duke of ꝑ Jesus, otherwyse westsarons/ begaune his reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde .iii. hundred .xvii. This in the englyshe boke is called Octauian/ the whych as testifyeth Gaufryde, gadered in shorte whyle after so great plentye of treasoure and ryches, that he feryd no man/ and ruled this lande in peasyble wyse. So that of hym or of his actes is left lytell memorye/ excepte that when he was fallen into age, by the counsayll of Brytons he sent vnto Rome for a noble yonge man of the alye of Heleyne, moder vnto Constantyne called Maximian, as after more playnly shalbe shewed: all be yt that some adupted hym to make one Conan Meryadok his cosyne, kynge after hym. But by the instãt labour of Caradok then duke of Cornewayll/ Octauius lastly sent vnto Rome Maurice the sonne of the forenamed Caradok/ to bryngе or conuey the sayd Maximianus into Brytayne, for to mary the onely doughter of Octauius/ and by reason therof, to enioy ꝑ realme of Brytayne. This Maximian is offsome auctour named Maximius/ the whych as wytnessyth Gaufride, was the sonne of Leonyne, brother to Heleyne, and vncle vnto Cõstantyne the great. whych sayngе affermeth also Jacobus Philippy authour of a boke called Supplementum cronicarum/ wherin he nameth the sayde Maximianus a knyght of the Bryton blood.

Then it foloweth, when the forenamed Maurice had spedde his nedes, so ꝑ he came to the presence of Maximian, & shewed the effecte of his message: the sayd Maximianus to hym graunted, & in all haste prepared for his voyage into Brytayne/ & shortly after with cõuenient cõpany landed at Southampton. wherof beyngе warned Conan Meryadok: he wyth a certayne of knyghtes of his affinyte, was purposed to haue fraped with the sayd Maximian, & to haue destressed hym/ for so myche as he wel knewe, that by hym he should be put from the rule of the lande. But thys

purpose was let by the commaundement of the kynge or otherwyse, so ꝑ the sayd Maximianus was cõueyed safely to the kynges ꝓsence, & shortly after wyth consent of the more part of his lordes, gaue his doughter vnto the sayde Maximianus wyth possessyon of this ple of Brytayne. The whyche mariage solemnysed & endyd, the sayde Octauꝰ dyed shortly after. But howe long he reygned, none of the forsayde authours testifyeth/ excepte dyuers of them agree, ꝑ he contynued his reygne tyll ꝑ tyme that Gracyan and Valentinyan ruled the empyre/ the whyche beganne to reygne the yere of our lorde. iii. hũdred .lxxx. and.ii. By whyche reason yt must folowe, that the sayd Octauius reygned at the leest.liii.yeres.

THE .LXXII. CHAPITER.

Maximianꝰ or Maximiꝰ ꝑ son of Leonine & cosyn Germayn of Constantyne the great/ was made kynge of Bryton, in the yere of oure lorde. iii. hundred. lxxx. and.ii. Thys in the englyshe boke is named Maximian/ the whych as testifyeth Gaufryde and other, was stalworthy and myghty of his handes.

But for he was cruell and pursued sondele the cristen: he therfore of all writers is called Maximianꝰ the tyrant. Attwene this & Conan before named, was stryfe and debate/ and dyuers conflictes attwene thẽ was foughten, in the whyche eyther of them spedde dyuersly/ all be yt that lastely they were made frendes. So that Maximianꝰ reygned a season in quyete, and gaderyd tychesse, & treasour not all wyth out grudge. Lastely he was moued & eyted to warre vpon the Galles/ thorow whych cõsell he wyth a great hoste of Brytõs sayled into Armorica that now is called lytell Brytayne/ and bare hym so knyghtly, that he subdued that countre vnto his lordshyp/ & after gaue the sayde countre to Conan Meryadok, to hold of hym and of the kyng of great Brytayn for euer. And then commaunded the sayde lande to be called lytell Brytayne.

For this victory his knyghtes proclamed hym emperour. where thorough he beynge the more exaltyd in pryde/ passed farther in the landes of the empyre, & victoryously subdued a great parte of Gallia or Fraunce, and all Germania. For thys dede/ dyuers authours accompt hym false and periuryd. wherfore yt shulde seme that before his departynge frõ Rome, he was sworne vnto Gracian and Valentynyane emperours, that he shuld neuer after clayme any part of the empyre. And also for the brekynge of this othe/ he was after chalengyd or blamed of saynt Martyne bysshop of Turon. To whom he answered that he was compelled of his knyghtes to take vppon hym as emperour/ or elys he shuld of thẽ haue ben slayne. Neuertheleſſe the sayde bysshoppe shewed vnto hym, that for his vntrouth he shuld not longe prospere or reygne.

After that worde was brought vnto the emperours, that Maximianꝰ had wyth harde bataylles thus subdued Gallia and Germania: Gracianꝰ wyth a great hoste came down to resyste hym. But when he harde of ꝑ marciall dedes of Maximianꝰ/ he was a drade and fled backe to the citye of Lugdun or Lyõs in Fraũce. where after the sayde Gracianꝰ was slayne/ and his brother Valentinian was compelled to flee to Constantyne the noble. Then Maximianꝰ to haue the more strength to withstãde his enimyes: made his sonne named Victour felowe of the emperour. In

this

this whyle that Maximian⁹ warred thus in Italy: Conan Meryadoke, to whom as before is sayde Maximian⁹ had gyuen the land of lytell Bry tayne/for so mych as he & his knyghtes had no wyll to mary the doughters of Frenschmen, but rather to haue wyues of theyr owne blood: therfore this Conan sent messagers vnto Dionotus then duke of Corne wayll, and chyfe ruler of Brytayne/ wyllynge hym to sende his doughter Vrsula wyth a certayne nombet of virgyns, to be coupled to hym & to his knightes in maryage. The which soone after prepared accordyng ỹ request of Conan, the forsayd Vrsula accõpanyed wyth .xi. thousande vyrgyns, and were sent by her sayde father towarde lytell Brytayne/as wit nesseth the englyshe cronycle, Gaufryde, and also Policronica.

But yt shuld appere by the sayeng of Antoninus, Jacob⁹ Philippus, and other writers/ that this Vrsula with her company shulde not be sent forth of mych Brytayne, nor maryed aboute this tyme/ but in the tyme of Marcianus beynge emperoure/ the whyche began his empyre after most accorde of wryters, in the yere of our lord. iiii. hundred & .li. Of the martyrdome of these maydens dyuers authours wryte dyuersly. wherfore I remytte them that wyll haue farther vnderstãdyng in this mater, vnto ỹ legende of sayncts redde perely in the chyrche, where they maye be sufficyently taught and enformed.

THE .LXXIII. CHAPITER.

And as before is shewed Maximian⁹ beynge occupyed in warres in Italy: two dukes named Gwanus, and Melga/the whych as Gaufryde testifyeth and other, were sent from Gracian and Valentinian emperours, to punyshe and subdue the Brytons that fauoured the party of Maximian⁹/ warred sore vpon the costes of great Brytayne, and occupyed a great parte of Albania. wherof when Maximian⁹ had knowlege/ he sente into great Brytayne a knyght and captayn named Gracianus or Gracyan. The whyche wyth two legyons of knyghtes bare hym so knyghtly/ that in shorte processe he chasyd the sayd .ii. dukes into Irlande/ & helde the lande of Brytayne in good peace to the behalfe of Maximianus.

In this whyle Maximian⁹ contynuyng his warre agayn the empyre/ & entendynge to be emperour: Theodocius named the elder then emperour of the eest parte of the world, herynge of the deth of Gracyan, & chasynge of Valentynyan, wyth a great power spedde hym towarde the sayd Maximian⁹. And shortely after at a cyte in Italy named Aquilia/ toke the sayde Maximian⁹, and hym behedded. when knowlege of the deth of Maximian⁹ was comen to Gracyan, that then had the rule of mych Brytayn: he sesyd the land & made hym selfe by strength kynge of Brytayne/whe or after that Maximian⁹ had gouerned the same, by most accorde of wryters by the space of .viii. yeres.

THE .LXXIIII. CHAPITER.

Of Racianus the whych of Gaufryde is called Municeps, ỹ maye be taken for an hyred or waged knyght, or for ỹ kepet of gyftes, or berynge the chyef rule of a cytye: beganne to rule the Brytons, in the yere of oure lorde. iii. hundred. lxxx. & .i. The whych exercysyd all tyranny and exaccyon vppon his subiectes/ for the which he was had in wonder full hatered amonge the Brytons/

and amonge them cast and sought many wayes and meanes for hys destruccyon/ but he by dyuers meanes escapyd theyr daungers, and punysshed greuously all suche fautours. wherfore lastly as sayth Gaufryde they fyll vpon hym of an hole assent and kylled hym/ when he had reygned or more verely vsurped by the terme of. iiii. yeres.

THE. LXXV. CHAPITER.

After that Gracian was thus slayne of the Bzytons / the forsayd Gwanus and Melga knowynge the Bzytons to be wythout hed or ruler: assembled also people and retourned into mych Bzytayne/ wastynge and bzennynge on euery syde, and destroyed greate plenty of Bzytons, as wytnessyth Gaufryde and other.

But Policronica sayth that whan the Romayns knewe of the deth of Gracyan / they sent a knyght called Constantyne to haue the rule of Bzytayne and other countrees there about. But he was after demed an enemye to the empyre, for harme and scathes by hym done in Fraunce. wherfore by commaundement of Honozius then emperour / a knyght or erle called Constancius was sente agayne the forenamed Constantine/ and slewe hym at a place or towne called Arelet. After thys the Bzytõs were agayne vexed by the Pictes & other straunge nacyons. By reason wherof they were cõstrained to sende agayne to Rome: requyzynge them of ayde, vppon condycyon that they shuld alway be subiecte vnto Rome. The whyche request and promesse thus herde of the senate: Honozius aforenamed was sent into Bzitayne wyth a legyon of knyghtes/ whyche is. vi. thousande. vi. houndzed. lxvi. The which legyon with helpe of the Bzytons/ chasyd ỳ forsayde Pictes and other enemyes/ and taughte the Bzytõs to make a walle ouerthwart the lande from see to see / that ys to meane from the water of Humber to the Scottyshe see, and ordeyned thẽ wardeynes and kepars of the wall/ and after retourned to Rome. Thys wall as testyfyeth Policronica, was made of turuys / and strechyd from Pemiltoñ or Penultoñ, vnto ỳ citye of Aclitut or Aclitud. But for thys wall was of small strength: the enemyes before named dystroyed certayne partyes of this sayd wall, and ouerrode the countre, and toke grete prayes dayly, & dyd as mych harme as they had done before tyme. wherfore the Bzytons were constrayned to seke for newe socour to the Romayns. Then dyd Foloaynes sende an other legion/ the whyche agayne chased the sayd Pictes and other enemyes/ and made than a wall of stone of the thyckenesse of. viii. fote, and in heyght. xii. fote, in the selfe place where before Seuerus had made a dyke and wall of turfes. And ỳ done the Romaynes comforted and exorted the Bzytons to be manly and corageous to wythstande theyr enemyes/ shewyng to them forther that they shuld truste to theyr owne strengthe, for so mych as the Romayns beynge so ferre from thẽ, myght not lyghtly come from so ferre wyth an armye of knyghtes/ & also not wythout great coste and trauayle. After whyche monycyon and exortacyon thus gyuen to the Bzytons, by the mouth of the archebyshop of London, wyth other instruccyons apperteynynge to the feytes of warre: the sayde Romaynes toke leue of ỳ Bzytons, as though they shulde after ỳ tyme no more retourne into Bzitayne

But it was not longe after that the Romayns were thus departyd/ that the Pictes

the Pictes and Scottes beganne to brake out of theyr dēnes and caues. These two nacyons after some authours, shulde seme to be one. But by the declaracion of Ranulphe in his .lviii. chappter of his fyrste boke, they shulde appere to be two maner of peoples/ or at the last dwellyd in twoo sondry countres. As the Pictes in the northsyde of Scotlād, or after Beda in ꝑ southsyde, whiche conteyneth Galeway and Lodeway. And the Scottes by ledyng of theyr duke Renda shulde possede Irland: all be yt after an arme of the northe parte of the see passynge by Deyra, shuld departe the Pictes. But in the tyme that ꝑ Sarōs ruled the lande/ ꝑ Scottes by maner of treason slew the mighty men and rulers of the Pictes/ and so after kepte that countre for theyr owne. These two nacyons dyscorde in maners, but not in clothynge & in fayth, and in couetyse of the shedynge of mannes blood, they be one.

Then as before is sayde, these Pictes and Scottes entred the lande, and brake ꝑ walle before made, and slewe the wardeyns therof/ and after spoyled and robbed the coūtres, and chased so cruelly the commons and other, that they were comfortlesse. By meane wherof the Britons were brought in suche daunger and myserye/ that eyther of them robbed and slewe other. And ouer this ꝑ groūde was vntylled and vnsowen/ wherof ensued great scarcytye and hunger: and after hunger ensued deth.

Thus after one mychyef came an other/as deth vpon deth, and sorow vpon sorow, whych fyll vpō them by stryke medlyd wyth the great hūger. The whych mysery in this wyse cōtynuynge the chyef of them toke aduyse amonge them selfe/ and fynally concludyd that for remedye of this myschyef, they wolde sende vnto Actius then beynge kynge in Fraunce. whyche Aecius was mayster of the chyualry of Honorij then emperour, and occupyed in warres ma parte of Gallia. To this Aecius was sent writyng, wherof the effecte was this. To thy manhode Aecius be it vnderstanden the mysery of the Britons/ the whyche straunge nacyons chase vnto the see/ and the see dryueth vs agayne to straunge nacyons. Of the which ensew two maner of carayns/ ꝑ one by violēce of ꝑ enemyes swerd, and that other by wilfull drowneyng. But all theyr wrytynge was but in vayne/so that from the sayd Aecius, nor yet from the Romaynes, hadde they no refuge nor comfort. In this whyle the hunger encreased/and the people were so ouerset with theyr enmyes, that many of thē were as polden & toke partye agayne theyr owne neyghbours. And ꝑ other that were of more power, and dwelled farther wythin the lande/ defendyd them in theyr beste maner. Lastely the noble and wyseste of them/ and specyally ꝑ archbyshop of London wyth other of the lande, kepte a counsayll at Lō don. By the whyche yt was concludyd ꝑ an emballade shulde be made vnto the kynge of lytell Brytayne, to impetre and aske of hym ayde and comforte in theyr great necessyte. Of whyche amballade the sayde archebyshop was appoynted for the chyef and prynceppall/the whych is named of Gaufryde Guethelinus/ and of ꝑ engilyshe cronycle Gosselcyne. which sayde byshoppe wyth the other vnto hym assygned, so spedde them, that in shorte and conuenyent tyme they came vnto the presence of Aldroen⁹ then kynge of lytell Brytayn/and to hym declaryd the effecte of theyr message. The whyche hauynge compassyon of the lamentable requeste made

vnto hym

vnto hym by the sayde ambassade/ after aduyse taken of hys lordes, he graũted vnto the bysshop, vppon condycyon that yf god sent to them victory of theyr enemyes, that they shulde crowne hys brother kynge of greate Bretayne, the whyche he entendyd to sende thyder wyth a conuenyent armye. whyche condycyon the sayde bysshoppe wyth the other gladly acceptyd & fermely graũted.

So that thus it is apparant vnto you, that this lande was longe with out hedde or gouernoure / whyche length of tyme is of some authours determyned to be longe, and of some but shorte / so that lytell certentye is therof lefte.

wherfore I haue shewed and dyuers certayne reasons after myne opynyon and dull mynde, in the table before expressed / wherin it shall appere vnder correccyon, that the sayd season and tyme of this land beynge without kynge, to rekyn from the laste yere of Gracian vnto the fyrste yere of Constantyne nowe nert ensuynge, was fully .cccix. yere.

FINIT TRIBUTUM.

WE shall also forthermore vnderstande, that here endeth fynally ỹ trybute and dompynyon of the Romaynes. For after thys daye they had no trybute to them payed / nor no Romayn prynce after this dayes ruled thys lande of Bretayne. The whyche trybute and dompynyon endured from the .xl. yere of Cassybellan, vnto the tyme of Seuerus by the terme of two houndred and .lv. yeres. And from the tyme of Seuerus vnto the fyrste yere of Gracyan a houndred .lxxx. and .iii. yeres. And from the fyrst yere of Gracyan vnto the laste yere of thys mysery .xliii. yeres. So that from the yere that Julius Cesar made fyrste thys Ile of Bretayne trybutary vnto the emperre / vnto the last yere or ende of thys forsayd misery, flowyd .iiii. houndred .xxxi. yeres. But Polycronyca sayth that the Romaynes ruled and had trybute of this lande about .iiii. houndred .lxx. yeres. whyche sayeng is full lyke to be true, yf the ende of theyr dominyon be determyned at ỹ laste departyng of the Romayns out of thys lande.

AND thus here an ende of the iiii. parte of thys worke / for so myche as the forenamed Gracian was the laste of Romayne kynges ỹ reygned in myche Bretayne / or that no trybute was after this day payed vnto the Romaynes.

wherfore in gyuynge thankes to that moste blessyd virgyne our lady sayncte Mary, for the good exployte and spede had to thys tyme, and to optayne her moste habundaũt grace for the perfourmaunce of the reste or other dele of the same: I here with all humblenesse salute her wyth the iiii. ioye of the forenamed vii. ioyes, the which begynneth,

Gaude nexu voluntatis. &c.

O excellent prynesse and quene celestyall/
Be ioyous and glad, for thou eternally
By knot of charyte, and dyuyne prynceyall
Art to the hyghest ioyned celestyally
That thou may impetre, what is necessary
For thy seruauntes, thou virgyn moste pure
Of thy swettest Jhesu, and optayne it sure.

Thys .iiii. parte to be accompted from ỹ fyrste yere of Seuerus, vnto the last ende or yere of thys misery: includeth of yeres .CC. and .xxvi.

Thus endeth the fourth parte.

The fyrst parte.

The .lxxvi. Chapiter.



Ere accordynge to the promyse made by me in ꝑ begynnynge of thys worke: I shall bryngе in & shewe vnto you the begynnynge of the reygne of ꝑ kinges of Fraūce/ and set them in suche a direct order, that it shalbe apparant to the reder, that it shalbe certaynly knowē what kyng reygned in Fraūce whan such a kyng reygned in Englande. And also I shall somdele touche the actes and dedys of the sayde kynges of Fraunce/so ꝑ the cronycles of bothe realmes shall in this worke appere, and the names of the prynces which at ones reygned in Englande and in Fraunce.

Then for the perfournaūce of the same, fyrste is to be noted, that after the subuercyon of Troye by the Grekes (as in ꝑ begynnyng of this worke is shewyd) dyuers Tropans beyng vnder the rule of nobles of the same lygnage, as Helenus sonne of Priamus, Eneas, Anthenorus, & other/ serchyd ꝑ worlde & landyd in dyuers coūtrees. As Helen⁹ in Greece or Grecia/Eneas in Italia or Italy/& so of other amōg. The whych nobles one named Turchus, & an other named Franco colyn Germayns/as Turchus the sonne of Troylus, & Frāco or Francio the sonne of Ector/which sayd two colyns serchyng theyr aduenture: after many & dyuers daungers & ieopardyes passyd by the see, lastly landed in a coūtre called Tracca or Tracia in Greece. And there wyth theyr cōpany enhabyted them nere vnto a ryuer called Dion. And after they hadde contynued there a season of tyme: Turchus departed wyth a certayne of Tropans frō hys sayd colyn Francio/and sayled after into a countre called Faso the ieste. where he wyth hys people dwelled longe tyme. whyche Faso shulde be in the countre of Scithia. Of thys Turchus dyscendyd as sayth ꝑ Frēche cronycle .iiii. manet of people. That is to saye Austrogothis, Ispogothis, Wandalis, and Normans. And Frāco or Frāco remoued after wyth hys company into a countree named Pannoma/whyche countree now shuld seme to be a parte of Hungery or ioynynge nere to it. There nere vnto a ryuer called Thanais they buylded them a cytye, and named it Sicambria/by reason wherof they were longe after called Sicambri. They were also named Franci, as sayth the Frenche cronycle, after thys man Francio. Turpinus that wrote the gestes of the greate Charles/ sayth that whan Charles hadde made the countre of Spayne subiecte, and was retourned into Fraunce: he made all the bonde mē dwellynge aboute or nere vnto Paris or in all Gallia fre, in the worshyppe of sayncte Denis and of sayncte Jamys of Galis/ vppon condycyon that they shulde yerely offre foure pence to thys worke of sayncte Denis churche. By reason wherof they were named Franci, as men freed that to fore were bond. Policronica saith they were named Franci of Valentynyan the emperour, as it were for fyerclnes. But how so euer they came by that name they were called Franci as Frenschemen.

This sayd peple were also named long tyme Galli/& were tributaries to Rome & vnder theyr rule, tyll the tyme

tyme of Valentinyan emperour, a-boute the yere of Cryste. iii. houndreth .lxvi. Thys Valentinyan haupnge the rule of the west parte of ꝑ worlde made warre vppon a people called Alepnys, that dwelled nere vnto the forenamed Gallis. These Alepnys were egre of fyghte/ and ouer ꝑ they were so closyd wyth fennys & marys, that the Romaynes myghte not wynne to them by force/ wherof they often rebellyd agayne the empyre. wherfore in the ende Valentinyan consyderynge the fiersnes of ꝑ Gallis, wyth theyr nere dwellynge vnto the sayd Alepnys / couenaūted with them yf they wolde subdue the sayde people, they shulde haue releace of .r. peres trybute. whyche couenaūt well and sufficyently conferned to the Gallis/ they in shorte whyle after by theyr knyghthode and polycy, subdued or vtterly chased the sayd Alepnys. For the whyche deede they contynued the forsayde .r. peres wythout payenge of any trybute. whyche .r. peres ronne and erpyred/ ꝑ Romaynes agayn claymed the former accustomed trybute. To whom it was answered, ꝑ they had redemed the sayd tribute with the price of theyr blood, and ought not any more to be charged with any suche trybute.

wyth whych answere the Romaynes beynge sore discontentyd/ made newe warre vppon ꝑ sayd Sicābrys. Of whyche warre the Sicambrys or Gallis had the worse, and were chasyd from theyr citye of Sicambria. Then as wytnessyth Polycronica & other, they drewe nere vnto the water of Ryne/ and grewe in shorte ꝑcesse to suche a multytude & of suche strength, that they in shorte whyle after by ledynge of theyr .iii. dukes named Marcomirus, Sonnon? or Symon, and Genebaur/ warred vppon the landes of the empyre, & such as were subiecte vnto ꝑ same. wherof Theodosius surnamed the yonger then emperour beynge warned: he anone sente .ii. of his dukes wyth a greate hoste for to subdue the sayde Gallis or Sicambrys. But they defendyd them so knyghtly, ꝑ the sayde dukes were chasyd/ and as wytnessyth mayster Robert Gagwyne, a greate nomber of the Romaynes were slayne.

THE .LXXVII. CHAPITRE.

After this victory thus optey ned by the Sicambrys: they ware so stronge that they wan from the Almaynes dyuers townes and stronge holdes wythin Germania. And after that they optepned the famous cytye named Treueris/ which as wytnessyth the aucthour of Cronica cronicarum, was fyrst foundyd in the tyme of the patryarche Abrahā, before the incarnacyō of Cryst a thousande .ir. houndred .lxv. yeres. And so dayly wan vpon the nacyōs adioynynge to them, tyll they came to the ryuer of Seyn/ where they restyd them, and buylded the countre all there about. In so mych that they than named them selfe Franci / as men freed and out of all daunger of the empyre of Rome/ and theyr land after them they named Fraunce, whyche syns that tyme is greatly encreasyd. So that at this daye it is a countre of great welth & honoure, and conteyneth many prouynces & lordshyppes/ as after the assyrmans of Policronica is touchyd in ꝑ .xxbii. chappter of hys fyrste boke/ where it is shewed that Gallia which now is Fraunce, had that name Gallis of whytenesse of people. Thys Gallia or Fraunce hath in the South syde, Germania/ in the Est, the ryuer of Ryne/ in the Southest, the Alpis or the hyghe mountaynes / and in the west,

west, the see Occean, whyche is called both Brytannicum and Gallicū, whyche is to meane, Englyshe see & Frenche see. For yt departyth Englande and Fraunce, in the south see of myddell eerth, ꝑ wasshyth about by the the prouynce of Narbon. In the tyme of Julius Cesar, Gallia was departed in thre/ but for diuers happes that befell after in that land/ the countre and land that stretcheth from the Ryne to Seyn, is now called Gallia Belgica, whyche is very Fraunce. And that countre that stretcheth from Seyn to ꝑ ryuer of Leyr, is called Gallia Lugdunensis/ wher of the ouer parte hyght or is named Burgundia that is Burgoyne, and the nether parte is Neustria or Normandye.

And the countre that stretcheth fro the ryuer of Leyr to the ryuer of Geround, is called Gallia Aquitania/ whych is Guyan, and stretcheth out of the eest from the riuer of Roon, vn to the west Occean. wherof the ouer parte therof hyght Celtica, whyche is to meane Heuenly, because that hyghe mountaynes be therin.

From the water of Geroundе to the see of middell eerth, and to the Moū taynes called mōtes Pireni or great hylles of Spayne/ is cleppd Gallia Narbonensis. And now a parte ther of is called Gothia, and some Uascō nia, whyche is to meane Gascoyne.

And so Gallia is closyd aboute wyth thre noble waters/ wyth the ryuer of Ryne in the northside/ wyth the ryuer of Roone in the eest/ and wyth the Brytysshe occean in ꝑ weste. In Gallia or Fraunce ben many noble cytes, wherof Parys is hed and pryncypall/ whyche in the fyrst foundacyon was cleppd Nazydas, after Parides a Troyane, that departed from Troy wyth Eneas and other, as wytnessyth Cartipus and other wryters of hystories. But the frenche cronycle sayth it was fyrst foūded by ꝑ Sycambris, and named by them Lutecia, before the incarnacyon of Cryste .iii. hundred .lxxx. and .xb. yeres. And in the whyle that the fore named Marcomyrus was as there chefe hedde and gouernour: for the more beauty of the name/ and also in mynde of Paris sonne of Pryame kynge of Troye, of the whych he was lynyally descendyd, he therfore chaunged the name, and commaunded yt to be called Paris.

In Gallia also be these prouynces and lordshyppes folowynge/ Brabant, Flaundres, Normandye, Picardye, Brytayn the lesse, Poytowe, Gascoyne, Guyan, Tolowse, Burgoyne, Angeo, and Mayne, Prouynce, Champayne, and Aluerne. All whyche sygnouries and lordeshippes belonged or appertayned vnto the crowne of Fraunce/ all be yt that dyuers of theym hath ben gyuen oute by mariage or otherwyse. So that the kynge of Fraunce claymeth to be chyef lorde of theym, and at this daye hath the possessyon of them/ except Burgoyne, Flaundres Brabant, and Normandye/ for the whyche he is trybutarye vnto the kynge of Englande.

Then yt folowyth, when the sayde Gallis or Frenchmen hadde thus cōquered these forsayde countres, or the more parte of theym, or at lesse made theym vnto the sayde Gallis trybutary: then the forenamed Marcomyrus as theyr chyef hedde or gouernour, closyd cytyes wyth stronge walles, and buylded stronge holdes and castelles/ and after dyed, leuyng after hym a sonne garnysshed wyth all knyghtly vertue, named Pharamundas or Pharamonde.

Francis.

THE.LXXVIII. CHAPITER.

PHaramund⁹ the son of Marcomyrus beforenamed / was after the deth of his said fader, made or ordeyned the fyrst kyng of Frenchmen, by the agrement of hystoryes / & also as affermeth mayster Robert Gagwyne and other, in the yere of our lordes incarnacion foure hundred and.xx. And of the worlde, or after ꝑ creacyon of the fyrste Adam folowynge the accompte of thys worke, as before is shewed, fyue thousande vi.hundred and.xii. After Brute begane his domynyon in thys yle of Brytayne, a thousande, fyue hundred and .lvi. And the yere of mylery of the Bryptons.xxvi.

Of this Pharamundus is lytell thynge lefte in memory / except that myne authoure Gagwyne testifyeth, that he made certayne lawes whyche longe tyme endured after. But for the names of the lawes and vse of them be decke to englyshe vnderstandynge: therfore I ouerpasse theym, and folowe the story / whych affermeth, that when the sayde Pharamonde hadde ruled the Frenchme well and nobly by the space of.xi. yeres, he dyed / and lefte after hym a sonne named Clodio Crinitus or Capellatus.

THE.LXXIX. CHAPITER.

CLodio ꝑ son of Pharamonde was made kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde. iiii. hundred & xxi. And the .xxvii. yere of the fore sayd mylery of Bryptons. The which as before is sayd was surnamed Crinitus and Capellatus / by reason wher of the kynges of Frenchmen longe tyme after, were called Criniti. This to augment hys lordshyppe, made warre vpon a people called Turynges / and by great a sore fyght made them at legth subiecte to hym / which countre as sayth the freche cronycle, is a parte of Almayne. And at thys daye or tyme of this Clodio his regne / the Romaynes had no more of the land of Gallia or Fraūce in theyr rule, then that whyche lyeth from ꝑ ryuer of Leyr vnto ꝑ ryuer of Ryne, whyche is called Gallia Lugdunensis. And when he hadde thus subdued the Turynges / he then sent his espyes ouer the Ryne to se what strength they were of, that inhabyted that countre. And after reporte to hym brought of the sayde espyes, that the countre was fertyll and ryche, and the people therof but of small defence: he with his army ouer spred the countre / and after shortely beseged the cytyes of Cambrey, and Turney and them wanne. But in ꝑ cytye of Turney was a certayn nomber of Romaynes / whyche manfully defendyd the towne longe tyme. And when they preyued that they myghte no lenger holde the towne / they then manfully issued out, and gaue to the Frenchmen harde batayll. But fortune was to theym frowarde / so that they were dystressyd. After whyche countres and townes thus goten by Clodio, wyth other vyctoryous dedes by hym done: he lastely dyed, when he had ruled the frenchmen.xx. yeres wythout issue of his body.

Angli.

NOwe then lette vs retourne vnto tharchbyshop of London and the other Bryptons beyng in Brytayne the lesse / the whych vpon the promyse before rehersed, receyued of Aldroenus kynge of lytell Brytayne, his brother named Constantyne / ꝑ whych wyth a certayne nomber of knyghtes shortly after landed at Cornaille in mych Brytayne, & gaue vnto them the floure of ꝑ Bryptons

whyche

whyche before theyre landynge were hydde in dyuerse places of the lande. By whose power & marcyall knyghthod/ the enymyes of the lande were shedfully chasyd and vtterly cõfounded. whyche victorye thus by the Britõs obteyned: they of one mynde conueyde theyr chefetayne Constantyne vnto the towne of Kaerregent nowe called Cicestre/and there crowned hym (accordynge to the promyse made vnto his brother) kynge of this yle of the more Bryttayne.

THE .LXXX. CHAPITER.

COnstantinus the brother of Aldroenus kynge of lytell Bryttayn, was crowned kyng of myche Bryttayne, in the yere of oure lorde foure hundred and .xxxiii/ and the thyrde yere of Clodio then kynge of Fraunce. The whyche guyded the lande with suche manhode and polyce, that he kepte yt from daunger of enymyes/ and for tyme of hys lyfe helde yt in good quyete & reste. Of thys Cõstantyne is lytell mynde made or lefte in wrytynge / excepte that he receyuyd of his wyfe thre sonnes / the whyche he named Constante, Aurely, or Cõstantius, Aurelius, Ambrosius, and Uter, whyche was surnamed Pendragon.

But for he sawe and perceyuyd, that his eldest sonne named Constãt was dull and insolent of wytte: he therfore made hym a monke in the monasterye of saynte Amphybyll of wynchester / whyche monasterye at this daye is called saynte Swythynes abbey. And to the other two bretherne he betoke vnto Guethelinus archbyshoppe, to norysshe and brynge forth.

In the courte of this Cõstantyne, as witnesseth Gaufryde, was a Pict that was myche loued and greatly fauouryd of Constantyne/ so that he myghte at all tymes come to the kynges presence. The whyche beyng au erraunt traytoure/and sechynge conuenyent tyme to execute his detestable treason: by a secrete meane slewe the kynge in his chamber/when he hadde ben kyng, after moste wryters tenne yeres.

THE .LXXXI. CHAPITER.

AConstantius sonne of Constantyne, by meane of Uortigernus was made kynge of Bryttayne, in the yere of out lorde foure hundred and .xliii. This as before is touched, for so myche as his fader thought he was not very apt to take so great a charge as to gouerne the lande after hym, became a relygious man in the monastery before named. Or as some wryters meane, the sayd Constante of pure deuocyon that he hadde to god and saynt Amphyabyl, made hym selfe a monke vnwyttynge the kynge his fader and other his frendes.

But how or in what maner so euer he became a monke/ trouth it is that Uortigerus or Uortigernus after ꝑ deth of Constantyne, founde suche meanes that he was taken out of the abbey, and crowned kynge of Bryttayne. By meane wherof the sayde Uortiger had all the rule of the land so that Constante hadde but onely the name. This Uortyger then consyderynge the innocencye and myldenes of the kyng/ cast in his mynde how he myght be kynge hym selfe. And amonge other meanes/ founde

to haue aboute ỳ kynges persone an hundred Pictes, or after some Scottes/ ỳ whych he ordeyned for a garde for the kynges persone. which done/ he bare hym in such wyse agayne the Pictes by meanes of great gyftes & otherwyse, that they at length had Vortyger in such fauoure, that they feryd not to saye openly that Vortyger was more worthy to be kyng thẽ Constant. In this whyle Vortyger gatte into his possellyon the kynges treasour / and what was of hym cõmaunded was done, though other therat murmured and grudged. And euer in ryght and wronge he fauoured the forsayd Pictes or Scottes. The whyche at length perceyuynge his corrupte mynde, when they sawe that they had conuenyent tyme, fyll vpon the kynge, and hym slewe or murderyd.

After whych cruell dede by theym done/ they presentyd the hed of Constante vnto Vortiger, then beyng at London. wherof when he was ware/ to the ende that the Brytons shulde thynke that dede to be done agayne his mynde and wyll: wepte & made semblaunt of all sorowe and heuenes / and caused the sayde hundred knyghtes to be taken in all haste after, and theym by dome and lawe of ỳ lãdto be be heddyd/ by reason wher of he was taken not culpable, or innocent of the kynges deth. when the kynges deth was knowen to suche persones as hadde the keppyng of the two ponger bretherne, Aurelius and Vter: they in all haste for the more sauegarde of them, fledde into lytell Brytayne/ & there kept theym tyll yt pleasyd god otherwyse to purueye for theym. And thus as ye haue herd was kynge Constante slayne/ when he hadde reygned after moste wryters fyue yere.

THE.LXXXII. CHAPITER.

VOrtigernus duke of ỳ Iuelsles, or Vortiger̃ erle of Iewelles, after called westsarons/ was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of our lorde. iiii. hundred and. xl viii. and the. xviii. yere of Clodio kyng of Fraũce/ whych after ỳ deth of Constant by strength and otherwise was made kynge, and ruled the land not all wythout trouble. For yt was not longe or the Pictes, whych hauyng knowlege of the deth and iudgemẽt of theyr knightes and kynsmen, that they inuaded the north partes of the lande, doynge therin great harme and domage. And ouer that many & dyuerse of the great of the Brytons, perceyuyng that the kyng Constant was not murderyd all wythout consent of the sayde Vortyger: rebelled agayne hym/ and dayly sent and sayled ouer into lytell Brytayne, to the ayde and assystence of the forsayde chyldern of Constant/ whyche putte the sayde Vortiger to great vnrestfulnesse/ and the more for that, that he wyst not nor knewe not in whom he myght putte his truste and confydence in.

wyth these perturbaũces was medled plenty of corne & frute, ỳ the lyke therof had not ben sene many yeres passyd. wherwyth was ioyned lechery & pestylence, with many other incõueniences/ so ỳ vice was accõpted for small or none offence. The which reygned not onely in the temporalty, but also in the spiritualtie & hedes of the same. So ỳ euery mã turned the poynt of his spere agaynst the trewe & innocent man/ & the cõmons gaue them all to dronkẽnes and ydelnes/ where thorough ensued fyghtynge, stryfe, and mych enuy. Of which forsayd myschyues ensued mych mortalyte and deth of men, that the lyuyng scantly

scantly suffysed in some countres to bury the dede. And ouer this ye kyng was so hard beset with ye forenamed enymyes/that he was cõstrayned as affermyth Policronica, to sende for paynems, as the Saxõs, to helpe to withstand his enemyes and defende his lande/and also he dayly ferid the landyng of Aurely and Vther.

Vortyger thus beynge beset wyth many aduersytyes in bysyenge hys lande / and then beynge for dyuerse causes hym mouyng at Dorobernia or Caunterbury: tydynges came to hym of the arryuynge of thre longe shyppes full of armed men at the yle of Tenet. wherof fyrst he made countenaunce as though he hadde ben in doute whether it had ben the two bretherin of Constant or none. But whe the fame was blowen aboute, ye they were none enymyes: anon he caused the leders of them to be brought vnto his presence / freynynge of them the cause of they landyng & of they nacyon and countre. The whych answered vnto the kynge and sayd they were of the cõtre of Germany/ and put out of they countre by a maner sorte or lot at sodry tymes vsed within the sayde lande / the whyche was vsed for so myche as the people therin encreasyd so faste, that wythoute such prouysyon had, the cõtre should not suffyce for the people/ the whych was suche as foloweth.

At sondry tymes when the sayd cõtre was replenysshed of people: the prynces and rulers therof wolde assemble at a certayne place, and call before them the lusty ponge folkes. Of the whych they wold chose out a certayne nombre / and appoynte to them certayne dukes or leders, with all thyng necessary to the warre. And them so garnysshed/ wold cõmaunde to serche they aduenture, & to wynne some lande by they knyghthode, where they myght inhabyte them selfe. By whych vse & custome thus longe vsyd / now was fallen to they lotte, to do as they fore faders had done before them.

wherfore syns fortune had brought them to this land/ they besought the kyng, that he wold take them to his seruyce, & they wold be redy to fyght for ye defence of him and his countre. And when the kyng hadde enquyred farther: he fõude that they had two leders named Hengist and Horsus/ and they and they people were called Saxons.

The kynge thus beyng assertayned of the maner of these straũgers, and that they were of the gentyle & pagan law: sayde he was very heuy & sory, that they were myscreantes. But he was ioyous & glad of they comynge / for so myche as he had nede of suche sowdyours to defende hym and his lande agayne his enymyes. And so receyued them to hys wages and seruyce, as is wytnessed of Gaufryde and other mo wryters.

The .lxxxiii. Chapiter.

Beda the holy man sayth, that Vortyger sent for the Saxõs stronge men of armes, that hadde no lande to dwelle in. The whych came in thre longe shyppes called Obylas / and receyued a place of hym to dwell in, in the Est syde of Bretayne called the yle of Tenet besyde Kent. Guilleimus de regibus a writer of hystorys sayth, that the Saxons came oute of Germany by wyll to wynne worshyppe & lande / and not by lotte or compulsyon. And also that they worshypped at that dayes a god named woden, and a goddesse named Frya. In the worshyppe of the whyche god the

thyrde feryall daye in the weke they named wodnesd aye / whyche at this daye we call wednysdaye. And in worshyppe of the sayde goddes they called the fyfth daye frys daye / the whyche we call now frydaye.

Of these forsayde people came thre maner of people, or thre maner of names / that is to say Saxós, Angles, and Jewetes. Of the Saxons came the eest Saxons, westsaxons, & the south Saxons. Of ỳ Angles came the eest Angles, the myddell Anglis or Mercens, whyche helde myddell England, that stretcheth westwarde toward the ryuer of Dee besyde Chestre, and to Seuern besyde Shrop shury, and so forth to Bristowe / and eestwarde toward the see, and southwarde to Thamys, and so forth to London, and northwarde to Humber, and tourned downewarde and westward to the ryuer Mersea / and so forth to the weste see.

And of the Jewetys come the Kentyshmen, & men of the yle of wyght. Of the fyrst cõmyng of these Saxós into great Britayn, authours in party varrey. wherfore in the table before named / it shall appere vnder correccyon, that the forenamed Hengistus and Horsus wyth theyr compayny fyrst landed in the forsayde yle of great Brytayne in the yere of our lorde. iiii. hundred and .l. & the thyrd yere of Vortiger.

Then yt foloweth these Saxons wyth the kynges power bete downe the enymyes before sayde, and defended the land in most knyghtly wyse, so that the kyng hadde the Saxons in great loue and fauour. whyche fauour Hengistus wel apperceyuyng / vpon a season when he sawe conuenyent tyme, he axed of the kynge so myche grounde as the hyde of a bull or other beste wolde compase / which the kynge to hym graunted. After whyche graunt, the sayde Hengyste to the ende to winne a large grounde / cauysed the sayd bestes skyn to be cut into a small and slender thonge. And with the same mette out a large and great circuyte of grounde / vpon the whyche he shortly after buylded and sette a large and stronge castell. By reason of whych thonge the sayd castell was lõg afterwarde named Thonge castell / whyche was sette by the agreement of all wryters in the countre of Lyndesey. After thyse tydynges sprange into Germania, of the plentye and fatnes of the lande of Brytayne, wyth other commodytyes pertenyng to the same. By meane wherof the Saxons dayely drewe to the sayde lande / and conuenaũted with the Brytons, that the Britons shuld entende theyr worldlynes and other necessaryes / and ỳ Saxons as theyr soudyours, shuldr defende the land from incursyon of all enymyes. For the whych the Brytons shulde gyue to them competent mete and wages.

Then by the sonde of Hengiste, came wyth .xvi. sayles Ronowen the doughter of the sayd Hengist / which was a mayden of excellẽt beaute. After whose commyng / Hengiste vpon a daye besought the kyng ỳ he wold se his castell, whyche he had newely edyfyed. To whose requeste the kyng was agreable / & at the day assygned came to ỳ sayd castell, where he was ioyously receyued. And there amõge other pastetymes the sayde Ronowe wyth a cuppe of golde full of wyne presentyd the kynge, salutynge and sayeng wassayle. The kynge whych before that tyme had herd no lyke salutacyon, nor yet vnderstode what the ment / axed of her sader what she mente by that worde wassayle. To whom yt was answered by Hengist that yt was a salutacyon of good & gladnesse / and that the kynge shuld

drynke

dzynke after her ioynynge chete vn-
to this answere, dzynke hayle wher
fore the kyng as he was enfourmed
toke the cuppe of the mayden's hand
and dranke / & after beheld the weche
in suche maner, that he was wou-
ded with the darte of the blynde god
Cupide, that neuer after he coude
wythdzawe his loue from ꝑ wenche/
but lastely by inbygacyon of the de-
uyll, ared her in marpage of her fa-
der. And by force therof, as wytnes-
syth Policronica, he put from hym
his laufull wyfe / of the whyche he
had before tyme receyued .iii. noble
sonnes called Uortimerus, Catagri
nus, and Pascentius. Then the
kyng gaue vnto Hengistus the lozd
shyppe of Kent, though Gatango-
nus then erle therof therat grudged
wyth many of his Brytons.

For this and for that that ꝑ kynge
had maryed a woman of vncought
beleue: well nere all the Brytons
forsoke hym and his wozkes. Neuer
theleſſe some there were as well no-
bles & other, that cõforted the kynge
in his euyll doyng. By whych meane
and other vnlefull dedys then dayly
vsyd / the fayth of Cryste began fore
to apalle. And ouer that an hereſye
called Arianes hereſy, began then to
spzynge in Bzytayn. For the which,
two holy bysshoppes named Germa-
nus and Lupus, as of Gaufryde is
wytnessyd / came into Bzytayne ca
refourme the kynge and all other ꝑ
erred from the waye of trouth.

Of this holy man saynt Germayn/
Uincent histozyall sayth, that vpon
an euenynge, when the weder was
passynge cold, and the snowe fyll ve
ry faste / he ared lodgyng of the kyng
of Bzytayne, for hym and his compe
nye / whych was denyed. Then he af
ter sytting vnder a bushe in the feld,
the kynges hetoman passyd by / and
seynge this bysshop wyth his compa-
ny sittyng in the weder / desyzed hym
to his house to take there such powze
lodgynge as he had. wherof the bys-
shoppe beynge glad and sayne / yode
vnto the house of the sayd hetoman,
the whyche receyued hym wyth glad
chere. And for hym and his compa-
ny wylled his wyfe to kyll his onely
calfe / and to dzesse yt for his gestes
soupper, ꝑ which was also done. When
the holy man had soupped, he called
to hym his hostes, wyllynge and de-
syzynge her that she shulde dylygent
ly gader to gyder all the bones of the
deed calfe / and them so gaderyd, to
wzappe to gyder wythin the skynne
of the sayde calfe / & then it lay in the
stall before the racke nere vnto the
dame. whych done accozdyng to the
commaundement of the holy man /
shortly after the calfe was restozyd
to lyfe and forth wyth ete haye wyth
the dame at ꝑ racke. Of whych mer-
uayle all the housholde was great-
ly astonyed / and yelpyd thankynge
vnto almyghty god, and to that ho-
ly bysshoppe.

Upon the morowe this holy bys-
shoppe toke wyth hym the hetoman,
& yode vnto the presence of ꝑ kynge/
& ared of hym in sharpe wyse, why
that ouer nyght he hadde denyed to
hym lodgynge. wherwyth the kyng
was so abasshed, that he hadde no
power to gyue vnto the holy man an
swere. Then sayne Germayne sayde
to hym: I charge the in the name of
my lozde god, that thou and thyne
departe from this paleys / and trey-
gne yt & the rule of thy lande to hym
that is moze wozthy this come shen
thou arte. The whyche all thyng by
power diuyne was obserued & done/
and the sayde hetoman by the holy
bysshoppes authozyte, was serre vnto
ꝑ same dygnyte. Of whom after de-
scendyd all the kynges of Bzytayne.

¶ iiii. The

THE .LXXXIIII. CHAPITER.

Thys story is also confermed of Antonin⁹ archebysshoppe of Florence / and at lengthe by hym shewyd in the .xvii. chappter and .ix. day of the seconde part of hys worke called Som̃ Antonini. But by whō so euer thys story was fyrste wrytten: I thynke he was none that discended of the walshmen, nor yet of theyr blode. For they come all of Brytanys blode, and not of an herdman, excepte that they fetche theyr lyne from Daupd the holy kynge & prophete. Thys storye semeth to be of more fame then of credence. For other wrytters tell thys story to be done in the region of Powys by Bu dy, theyr kynge. And also for so mych as the forsayd authour maketh no mencyon of the more Brytayne nor of the lesse: it is doutefull whyther thys happe fyll in that one regyon or in that other. All be yt in the lyfe of sayncte Germayne it ys redde, that the sayde sayncte Germayne deposyd Wortiger & enhaunced the herdman, as before is declared, as affermeth Polycronica. Then it foloweth in ỹ story, when sayncte Germayne hadde restorpd some parte of Brytayne to the trewe fayth: he retourned into Fraunce, fro whens he was before comen. But in thys sayde sayenge shuld appere dyscorde in Cronycles. For as at this day was not the fayth of Cryste receyued in Fraunce, as after more clerely shall appere / wher fore no bysshoppe of Crystes fayth myghte then kepe any see in Fraunce. And also as affermeth Jacobus Philyppus and other / holy Remigius was the fyrst ỹ tourned Fraūce to Crystes relygyon / and that, after moste concorde of wrytters, to be in the yere of our lorde .iiii. hundred lxxx. and .xii. yere of the reygne of Clodoueus Lewys fyrste Crysten kyng of ỹ realme of Fraūce.

Then to furnysshe or perfourme the story of Wortiger, nedefull it is or necessary to retourne to the mater where we before lefte. And to shewe that for so moche as the Brytons wythdrewe them from Wortyger / he was therfore constrayned to holde wyth hym the Sarons. By whose counsayle he after sent for Octa the sonne of Hengyst / ỹ whych brought wyth hym an other company of Sarons.

When the lordes of Brittayne sawe and consyderyd the greate multytude of Sarons, and theyr dayly repayre into thys lande: they assembled them togyder, and shewed to the kyng the inconuenience and ieopardy that myght ensue to hym and hys lande, by reason of the greate power of these straungers / and aduertysed hym in aduoydyng of greter daunger, to expelle and put them out of hys realme or the more parte of them.

But all was in bayne / for Wortyger bare suche a mynde to the Sarons, by reason of hys wyfe / that he preferred the loue of them before the loue of hys owne naturall kynnesmen and frendes. wherfore the Brytons of one wyll and mynde crowned for theyr kynge Wortimerus the eldest sonne of Wortyger, and deprynued hym of all kyngly dygnyte / whē he hadde reygned after moste concorde of hystorpes .xvi. yeres.

THE .LXXXV. CHAPITER.

Meroneus nert of allie vnto Clodio last kyng of Fraūce, for so mych as of Clodeo remayned none issue / was made kyng of Fraūce in ỹ yere of our lorde .iiii. hundred and .ij.

and.l / and the seconde yere yere of Uortiger than kynge of Bytayne. The whyche was stronge and marcyall in all hys dedes / and there vnto ryght profytable for the realme. And amonge other notable dedes by hym done/he slewe in one day of Hunnes (the whyche by the commaundement of Attila inuadyd & dystroyed dyuers countres, as Italy, Germany, and other) an hundreth and lxxx. thousande / as is wytnessyd of mayster Robert Gagwine compyler and gaderer of the actes and dedes of Frenshmen. Thys forenamed Attila was kynge of Hunes/and led in one hoost. ii. hundred thousand men of warre, as testyfyeth Policronica. And after dyuers baytayles by hym wonne/he came into ỳ feldes called Catulyntes, the whyche conteyned an hundred legys in length and. lxx. in brede, wherof euery lege conteyneth. iii. Englysshe myles. In the whyche feldes or playnes he was encountred wyth the power of the Romaynes / in whose ayde was ỳ kyng of Fraunce Meroneus, the kynge or duke of Burgoyne, and other. where after a longe fyghte was slayne on bothe sydes the forsayde hundred and. lxxx. thousand. Of the whyche nomber the sayde kynge or duke of Burgoyne was one / as is more playnly shewed in the. xxxiii. chapiter in the. iiii. boke of the sayd Polycronicon, wyth other wonders whyche I ouerpasse.

Of thys Meroneus dyscendyd all the kynges of Frenshemen, tyll the tyme of Pepyn the whyche was father vnto Charles the greate or emperour. And fynally dyed thys Meroneus when he had reygned after moste wryters .x. yeres / leuynge after hym a sonne named Chylderych or Hylderych.

THE .lxxxvi. CHAPITER.

Hyldericus or Hildericus the sonne of Meroneus / was ordeyned kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of oure lorde god. iiii. hundred & .lx/ & the .xii. yere of Uortiger than kyng of Bytayne. The whyche ensued no thynge the wartes of hys father/but allyed hym wyth all vyce and cruelnesse, in suche extreme wyse that he became odyble vnto hys subiectes. wherfore the sayd Childerich/perceyuyng the murmur & grudge among the people/and ferynge hys sodayne distruccyon: counsayled wyth a frend and lorde of hys named Guynomadus or Guynemeus/by whose counsayle in auoydynge greater paryll, he auoyded secretely hys lande, and rode vnto the kynge of Thurynges named Belygus, of whom he was ioyously receyued. But the at departynge of the kynge from ỳ sayd Guynemeus, he toke a pece of golde and brake it in two peces / wherof ỳ one pece he delyuered vnto the kynge, & that other pece he kepte to hym self/ sayenge to the kynge that whan so euer that he receyued from hym that pece of golde, that he shulde be sure to be restored agayne to hys regalty and dygnyte.

After the kynge was departed his lande/the Frenshmen of one assent, chase for theyr gouernour and hed a Romayne named Gyll / whyche at that daye hadde a parte of Gallia or Fraunce in hys rule to the behofe of the Romaynes/ whyche parte was named or nowe is named Soysons. whā thys Gill was stablysshed in his authoryte / the forenamed Guynemeus behauyd hym in suche wyse towarde thys Gyll, that he had hym in specyall fauour aboue all the nobles of Fraunce/ and wolde execute no thynge of charge wythout hys consent

and counsayll. wherof the sayd Guynemeus beynge ware / and remembrynge how he myght restore Childerych to his former dygnyte, aduysed the sayde Gill' to sette more greuous taskys vpon the Frenschmen/ enfourmynge hym further, that yf any grudged there at, that he shuld punyshe some of the myghtyeste of them / by reason wherof he shulde fere the other.

whyche thus done accordynge to the forsayde counsayll/shortely after to brynge his purpose the better about, the sayde Guynemeus accused certayne rulers of Fraunce suche as he well knewe were great enymyes vnto Chylderych/the whych he caused to be taken and sent vnto Gill, & Gill vpon them dyd sharpe execucyon. In the whyche he so persewered, that the Frenschmen for remedy complayned theym to Guynemeus. To whom it was by hym answered, that he greatly merualyed of theyr vnstablenesse that they hadde chosen to them a kynge, and now so sodaynly wolde haue hym deposed/ shewynge furthermore that other they must call agayn Childerich that exercysyd his lyfe in voluptuousnesse of lyuynge/ or ellys they muste dwell vnder the kynge, whyche is cruell and full of blood shedynge, wyth dyuerse other exhortacyons cõcernynge the agayn callynge of Childerych to his fourmer dygnyte, whyche for length I omytte and passe ouer.

By meane of whyche exhortacyon, Childerich was secretly sent for/and receyued from his trustye frende the forsayde pece of golde / and spedde hym hastely into Fraunce. Agayne whom the forsayde Guynemeus in lykewyse sped hym/ so that they met at a castell in the countre of Champion, where they wyth other to them allyed / gaderyd a great hoste, and made towarde the forsayde Gill or Gillion. The whych hauynge knowlege of the sayde conspyracye/ordeyned an armye of knyghtes, and rode agayne his enymyes. But he was ouerset and compelled for his sauegarde to fle into the countre of Scotlons beforenamed, where he after endyd his naturall lyfe/ & Childerych was agayne restoryd & made kynge.

Childerych then thus restoryd vnto his regally/subdued soone after a Saxon prynce named Onager/& besegyd the cytye of Orleaunce, and yt receyued vnto his subiectyon and after passyd the ryuer of Leyr, & subdued to his sygnory the countre of Angeo and Mayne.

when the fame of Childerich was brought vnto Basyna the wyfe of Belygne kyng of Turryng: she anon forsoke her owne lorde, and sped her into Fraunce, and so to the presence of Childerich, whom he receyued wyth all gladnes. And when he had of her frayned the cause of her commynge: she answeryd, for that that she knewe and vnderstode to be in hym more vertue and honour, thé in any other mã at ỳ day lyuyng / she was therefore compyn vnto hym to contynue the remanaunt of her lyfe in his cõpany/addyng also therunto that yf in any countre she knew his better, she wolde then serche see and lande to haue hym to her lord or hul bande. But for she was assured, that he had no pere/ she besought hym to accepte her in his company.

THE .LXXXVII. CHAPITER.

THen Childerych puttynge apparte and forgettynge kyndenesse to hym before shewyd by her housbande Belynge / maryed the sayde Basina yet beynge a pagan. And when the fyrste nyght was comen

men that they shulde go to bedde/she exorted hym ꝑ he shulde ꝑ nyght absteyn frō all fleshly lykyng, & watche the gates of his paleys/and to make reporte to her of suche vysyons as he sawe there ꝑ nyght. To the whych he was agreable. where he so standynge, sawe fyrst a multitude of vnycornes, lyons, and lybardes, passyng forby the paleys gate. And wythin a shorte space of tyme after, he sawe a great company of berys & wolues rēnyng after the other. And thyrdly & lastly he sawe a multytude of dogges & other small rauenous bestes/ the whyche in hys syghte fyll vppon the other. ii. companyes and vtterly deuoured them all.

When he hadde sene the fyne of his vision/not a lytell astonyed, he returned to hys wyfe / shewynge to her what he hadde sene. To whom she sayd/syr of me ye shal receyue a son/ the whyche in all hys dedes shall be noble and honourable, lyke to ꝑ vnycornes and lyons shewyd to you in ꝑ fyrst vysyon. Of the whyche shall discende one other sonne, the whyche shall be rauenous and shall set hys mynde all to pyllage & rauyne, lyke vnto the rauenous wolfe and bere. And after hym shall come a chylde or chyldern that shall be of suche insolency and wastynge, that lyke as the rauenous hounde stropeth and wastyth all that he maye tere wyth hys teeth/so shall these persons waste and destroye by theyr folyes all that other noble men hath purchased to theyr handes. And the multytude whyche that ye sawe of other small rauenous bestes/betokeneth the comon people, whyche in those dayes for lacke of a good and wyse prynce shall renne eyther vppon other and robbe and fle rche other.

Of thys exposycyon the kyng was sondele troubled. But yet he recoy-

ced of the issue that shuld come of his body. Then it folowyth whan thys Chylderych hadde ouercomen some baytayles in Almayne, and them subdued to hys empyre: he lastly dyed when he had regned, wyth the. viii. yeres allowed to hys regne for the tyme that he was exyled / and wyth the residue that he regned before & after in all. xxiiii. yeres / leuyng after hym a sonne begotten vpon the forenamed Basina called Clodio or after moste wryters Clodoueus.

Anglia.

THE .LXXXVIII. CHAPITER.

OTtinerus the eldest sonne of Vortiger/was by assent of the Brytōs made kyng of Brytayn, in the yere of our lorde. iiii. hundred lxiiii/and the .iiii. yere of Chylderych than kynge of Fraunce. The whych in all haste pursued the Saxons, and gaue vnto them a great batayle vpon the ryuer of Darwent/where he hadde of them victory. And secundaryly he faught with them vppon the foord called Epsford or Aglisthorp. In the whych fyght Catrignus the brother to Vortimer, & Horsus brother to Hengyst or Colyn, after long fyght atwene them .ii. eyther of the slewe other/in whyche fyght also the Brytons were victours.

The thyrd batayle he faught with them nere vnto the see syde / where also the Brytons chasyd ꝑ Saxōs, and compelled them to take the yle of wyghte for theyr suerte.

This batayle as wytnesseth Nicedus, was more wonne by vertue of the prayers of the holy byshop sayn Germayne, than by myght of ꝑ Brytons. For when the holy man sawe ꝑ Brytons gyue backe / he helde hys handes towarde heuen, and cryed thryse alleluya/whyche is to our vnderstādyng as myche to saye, as saue vs good lorde. Thorough whyche

prayer

prayer the Brytons by dyuyne helpe obteyned ꝑ victory of theyr enimyes.

The fourth batayll was nere vnto a moore called Cole moore. The whych was long and sore foughten by the Sarons / by reason that the sayde moore closyd a parte of theyr hoste so strongly, that the Brytons myght not winne vnto them for daũger of theyr shot/ All be yt that fynally they were chasyd, and many of thẽ of cõstraynt drowned and swalowed in the sayde moore

And ouer and besyde these foure pryncypall batayles: Vortimerus had wyth the Sarons dyuers other conflictes/ as in Kent at Thetford in Northfolke, and in Esser nere vnto Colchestre / & lefte not tyll he had byrafte from them the more parte of such possessyons as before tyme they had wonne/ and kepte them onely to the yle of Thanet, the whych Vortymer ofte greuyd by such nauy as he then hadde.

when that Ronowen doughter of Hengiste apperceyued the great myschyef, that her fader and the Sarõs were in, by the mraciall knyghthode of Vortymer: she sought suche meanes, that shortly after, as testyfyeth Gaufryde and other, Vortimer was poysoned/ when he had ruled the Britons after moste concorde of wryters seuen yeres.

THE .LXXXIX. CHAPITER.

VOrtigernus fader of Vortymerus last dede, was agayn restored to the kyngdome of myche Brytayne/ in the yere of oure lordes incarnacyon foure hũdred .lxxi / and the .xi. yere of Childericus then kyng of Fraunce/ the whyche all the tyme of the regne of his sonne Vortimer, had resyd hym in the coũtre of Cambria or walys, where in this passe tyme after some writers, he buyldyd a stroge castel in a place called Genoroñ or Gwaynerein, in the west syde of walys nere vnto the ryuer of Gwana, in an hyll or vpon an hyll called Cloarcius. But the olde cronycle before spoken of, sayth ꝑ this Vortiger was kept somwhat vnder rule of certayne tutours to hym assygned in ꝑ towne of Caerlegion or Chester/ and demeaned hym so well towarde hys sonne in aydynge of hym wyth hys counsayll and otherwyse, that the Brytons for it cast to hym such a fauoure, that they after the deth of Vortimer made hym agayne kynge.

It was not longe after that Vortiger was thus set in authorite, but that Hengist perceyd this land with a great multytude of Sarons. wher of herynge Vortyger/ in all haste assembled his Brytons, and made towarde them. And when Hengistus hadde experyence of the great hoste of Brytons: he then ordeyned meanes of treaty and peas. where last lyt was concluded that a certayne nõber of Brytons, and as many of Sarons, shuld vpon a Maye day assemble vppon the playne of Ambry, now called Salesbury. whyche daye certaynly prefyxyd / Hengistus dyuyse a new maner of treason, chargyd all his Sarons by him appoynted, that eche of them shulde putte secretely a longe knyfe in theyr hose / & at suche season as he gaue to thẽ this watche or by worde, Nempnyth youe sexis, that euerych of them shulde drawe hys knyfe and slee a Bryton, not sparynge any one/ except Vortiger ꝑ kyng. And at ꝑ day before appointed the kynge wyth a certayne of Brytons not ware of this purposed treason, came in peasyble wyse to ꝑ place before assygned / where he fande redy Hengistus wyth hys Sarons. The whyche after due obeysaunce

made

made vnto the kynge/ receyued hym with a coũtenaũce of all loue. where after a tyme of cõmunycacyon had/ Hengiſte beynge mynded to execute his former purpoſed treaſon, ſhewed his watche word. By reaſon wher of anon the Brytons were ſlayne as ſhepe amonge wolues, haupnge no maner of weppn to defende them ſelf/ excepte ꝑ any of them myght by his manhode and ſtrength get the knyfe of his cnympe. Amonge the nomber of theſe Brytons was an Erle called Edolf or Edolf erle of Caerlegion or Cheſtre/ ꝑ whych ſeynge his felowes and frendes thus murdered, as affermeth myne authoure Gaufryde and other: he by his manhode wanne a ſtake in the hedge or elſys where/ wyth the whyche he knyghtly ſaued his owne lyfe, and ſlewe of the Saxons .xviii. and fledde to the cytye or towne of Ambry nowe named Salyſburye. After whyche treaſon thus executyd/ the kynge remayned wyth Hengiſtus as pryſoner.

Of the takynge of Vortyger and ſleynge of the lordes of Brytayne/ an authoure called Guillelmus de regibus ſayth, that Hengiſt agreed wyth Vortyger and hys Brytons/ and that he ſhulde enioye the caſtell by hym before made, wyth a certayn of lande therunto adioynynge for hym and his Saxõs to dwell vpon. And when the ſayde agrement was ſuerly ſtablyſhed/ this Hengiſte entendynge treaſon/ deſyred the kynge wyth a certayn nomber of his lordes to come to hym to dyner wythin his ſayde caſtell. The whych of ꝑ kynge was graunted. And at the daye aſſygned the kyng with his lordes came to the ſayde Thongcaſtell to dyner/ where he wyth his was well and honourably receyued and alſo deynte ly ſerued.

But when the kynge & his lordes were in theyr moſte myrth/ this Hengiſte had commaunded before, ꝑ his owne knyghtes ſhuld falle at varyaũce among thẽ ſelfe. whych ſo done the remenaunt of his Saxons, as yt were in partynge of frayes, ſhulde fall vppon the Britons & ſlee theym all, oute take onely the kynge. The whyche was done lyke as ye haue before harde deuyſed/ and the kynge was holden as pryſoner.

THE .XC. CHAPITER.

HEngiſtus then haupnge the kynge as pryſoner, & a great parte of the rulers of Britayne thus as before is ſayd ſubdued: was ſome deale exalted in pryde/ and compelyd the kynge to gyue vnto hym, as wytneſſyth Policronica, thre prouynces in the eeſt parte of Brytayne. whych thre prouynces ſhuld be Kẽt, Southſaxon or Suſſex, and Eeſtangilys, whych is to meane Norff. and Suff. as affermeth the authoure of the floure of hyſtoryes. But Guydo de columna ſayth, that the foreſayde thre prouynces was Kent, Eeſtſaxon or Eſſex, and Eeſtangilys/ which is Norff. and Suff. Of the whyche ſayde prouynces when Hengiſt was poſſeſſyd/ he ſuffred the kynge to go at his lybertye. And then Hengiſte beganne his lordſhyppe ouer the prouynce of Kent, and ſent other of his Saxõs to beweld the other two prouynces/ that is to ſaye Eeſtangilys and Eeſtſaxons, tyll he hadde ſente for other of his kynneſmen, ꝑ he entẽdyd to gyue the ſayd pruynces vnto.

The kyngdome of Kent here begynnyth.

THE .XCI. CHAPITER.

THus Hengiſtus beynge in the poſſeſſyon of this

prouynce of Kent: comaunded hys Sarons to call yt Hengistus lande/ wherof as some authours meane the hole lande of Brytayn toke his fyrst name of Englande. But that sayeng shall appere cõtrary, as shalbe shewed hereafter in the storye of Egbert kynge of westsarons. The whych after he had subdued ꝑ more parte of the kyngedomes of Sarõs, & made of all but one monarchye: he then cõmaundyd this lande to be called Anglia, & his Sarons Anglys/ whych after by corrupcyon of speche was called Englande, and the people Englyshemen.

This lordshyppe or kyngedome of Kent had his begynnyng vnder Hengiste, in the yere of oure lorde after moste concordaunce of wryters, and by reason of ꝑ time. iiii. hũdred. lxxvi. And the fyfte yere of Vortygers last reygne.

But Denys and other, that accõpt this kyngdome to begynne in the yere of our lord foure hundred and. lv. allowe the begynnynge therof to be when Hengistus had fyrst gyft of the same, by reason that Vortyger maryed his doughter.

This lordeshyppe conteyned the countre that stretcheth from eest Ocean vnto the ryuer of Thamys/ and had vpon the southeest Southerye/ and vppon the weste London/ vpon the northeest the Thamys aforesayd and Eestsaxon nowe Eſſex. And this lordshyppe conteyned also the yle of Thanet.

whyche lordshyppe or kyngdome endured after moste wryters, from the tyme of the fyrste yere of the reygne of Hengiste, tyll the. xxv. yere of Egbert before named, by the terme of. iii. hundred and. xlii. yeres folowynge that accompte. At whyche season the sayde Egbert then kynge of westsaxons, subdued Baldredus the kynge of Kent, and ioyned yt to hys owne kyngdome.

Al be yt that the authoure of Policronica affermeth yt to endure by the space of thre hundred and. lxviii, vnder. xb. kynges, wherof Baldredus was the laste: whyche folowyth nere vnto the accompt of Denys before named. The fyrste crysten kyng of this lordshippe was Ethelbertus, or Ethelbert/ the whyche receyued the fayth of Cryste by that holy man saynt Austayne or Augustayne, nere about the yere of our lordes incarnacyon foure hundred. lxxx. and. xbi. The whyche Ethelbert caused soone after to be edyfyed the monastery of sayne Peter and Paule, in the eest syde or ende of the cytye of Dorobernia nowe Caunterbury. He gaue vnto this Austayn and his successours byshoppes of Caunterbury, a place for the byshoppes see at Chrystes chyrche wythin the sayd cytye, & endowed it with many ryche possessiõs.

This Hengiste and all the other Sarons whyche ruled the. vii. pryncypates of Brytayne, as after shall be shewed, are called of moste wryters reguli/ whyche is to meane in oure vulgare or speche as small or lytell kynges. So that this Hengist is accompted a lyttell kynge. The whyche when he hadde thus rule of the forsayde. iii. prouynces, he sent for mo Sarons/ & gatheryd them ꝑ were sparkled abrode/ so ꝑ in these prouyntes the fayth of Chryste was all quenchyd and in slepe.

Then Hengist wyth Octa his son gadered a great strigth of Sarõs/ and faught wyth the Brytons, and ouercame the Brytons, and chasyd them in suche wyse, that Hengiste kepte his lordesshyppe in peace and warre by the space of. xxxiii. yeres, as moste wryters testifye.

THE .XCII. CHAPITER.

NOwe then lette vs retourne agayne to Uortiger/ ꝑ which when he sawe the Sarons in suche wyse encrease theyr strength, and the Brytons dayly dyscreace/ for as writeth myne authour Gaufryde, ꝑ Sarons had the rule of London, yorke, Lincolne, or Lindecolñ, and Kaerguēt, that is wyncheſter, wyth other good townes/ wherfore as affermeth the sayd Gaufryde, the kyng for fere of ꝑ Sarōs, & also for that ꝑ he was some deale warned of the commyng of the.ii. brethern Aurely and Uter sonnes of Conſtantyne: he therfore conſyderynge theſe many and great daungers, fledde into Cambria or walys, and there helde hym for the more ſuertye/ where as wytneſſyth the sayde Gaufryde he then buylded the caſtel before mynded. Of ꝑ which buyldynge and impediment therof/ and also of the gettynge or byrthe of Merlyne, and of his prophecyes he made a longe worke, the whyche I paſſe ouer for dyuerſe conſyderacyons, & retourne agayne to Uortiger.

Trouth yt is, that whyle Uortygernus was thus beſyed in walys/ the forenamed brethern Aurely and Uter prepayd theyr nauy and men of armys, and paſſed the ſee, and landed at Totneſſe as sayth the engliſh cronycle. wherof when the Brytons were ware that were diſparkyd and ſeuered in many coūtres/ they drewe to them in all haſty wyſe. The which sayde brethern when they ſawe that they hadde a competent nomber of knyghtes/ they made towarde walys to dyſtreſſe Uortyger.

wherof he beynge warned/ for ſo myche as he well knewe, ꝑ he myght not make ſufficyēt defence by ſtrēgth of knyghtes: he therfore garnyſhed his caſtell wyth ſtrength of men and vytayll/ entendynge to ſauegarde hym ſelfe by that meane/ but all in vayne. For the sayde two brethern wyth theyr armye, beſegyd the sayd caſtell/ and fynally after many aſſautes, wyth wylde fyre conſumed the sayde caſtell wyth Uortiger, and all that was therin.

Of hym yt is redde, that he ſhulde lye by his owne doughter, in truſte ꝑ kynges ſhulde come of his blood. For the whyche dede he was accurſyd of sayncte Germayne/ and laſtely ended his lyfe as before is expreſſed, when he hadde regned nowe laſte .ix. peres.

THE .XCIII. CHAPITER.

AUrelius Ambroſius the ſeconde ſonne of Cōſtantyne, and brother to Conſtancius ſlayne by the treaſon of Uortyger/ was kynge made of the Brytons in the yere of oar lorde.iiii. hundred.lxxx. & one/ and the. xxi. yere of Childeric? then kynge of Fraunce. Of thys yt is sayd, that when he hard of the dyuyſion that was in the land of Brytayne betwene Uortiger and the Sarons/ and in what maner the Sarōs had ſubdued the Brytons he in all goodly haſte wyth ayde of the kynge of lytell Brytayne, ſpedde hym into thys lande. where after the aboue sayde byctory hadde of Uortiger/ he ſpedde hym towarde yorke, as affermeth Gaufride, and there chaſyd the Sarons that helde the cytye wyth Octa or Oſca ſonne of Hengiſt/ and toke the sayde Octa, & kepte hym as a pryſoner ſomwhat of tyme.

But howe ſo yt was by treaſon of his keper or otherwyſe he brake pryſon. And he wyth his fader gaderyd after a great hoſte/ and mette Aurelius & his Brytons at a place called Crekynford, where was foughten a ſtronge & myghty batayll/ to ꝑ loſſe

of both partyes / but the more losse fyll to the Saxõs. For of them was slayne foure dukes, and .xiii. thousande of other men, & that other dele chasyd to theyr great daunger. yet this not wythstandynge Hengiste continued his lordshyppe in Kent / and Aurelius Ambrose, whyche the englyshe cronycle nameth Aurilambrose, kepte the countre called Logriers or myddell Englande wyth walys / and chasyd the Sarons ỹ dwelled in ỹ. ii. forsayd prouynces of eest Saron and eest Anglis, out of those countres.

The seconde kyngdome.

THE .XCIII. CHAPITER.

In this passe tyme a Saxõ named Ella, wyth his thre sonnes called Symen or Symon, Wlettynger, and Cissa / came wyth thre shyppes called Obilas, and landed in the south parte of Bretayne, and slewe many Bretons at a place that then was named Cuneuelshore / & chased many vnto a wood thẽ called Andresleger / and after occupyed ỹ countre, & inhabyted hym & his Sarons wythin the sayde prouynce / makyng hym selfe kyng and lorde therof. By reason wherof by his might & power the sayd prouynce or countre was after named ỹ kyngdome or lordshyp of Southsarons. The whyche after most concorde of wryters shuld haue his begynnyng ỹ .xxxii. yere after the fyrst cõmyng of Hẽgist. which folowynge ỹ accompte shuld be in the yere of our lorde. iiii. hundred .lxxxii / and in the seconde yere of Aurely then kynge of Bretayne.

This kyngdome or lordshippe had in the eest syde Kent, in the south the see and the ple of wyght, in the west Hampshyre, and in the northe Sou-

threy / and conteyned as wytnesseth Guydo Southampton, Somersetshyre, Deuenshyre / and Cornewayl. Of whyche sayde kyngdome Ethelbaldus or Ethelwald⁹ was the. iiii. kynge, and the fyrste crysten kynge. Thys kyngdome endured shorteste season of all the other kyngdomes, and passyd soonest into the other. For yt endured not aboue an hundred and .xii. yeres, vnder .v. or .vii. kynges at moste.

THE .XCV. CHAPITER.

When to returne where we left Aurely, whyche as before ye haue harde helde and occupyed the myddell parte of Bretayne wyth Cãbria or walys, dyd hys dylygence to repayre ruynous places, as well temples as other / and caused ỹ seruyce of god to be sayde and done, whyche by meane of the Sarons was greatly decayde thorough all Bretayne. And after this Aurel⁹ besieged ỹ Sarons in ỹ hyll of Badon or Badowe, where he slewe many of theym. But dayly the Sarons encreasyd & landed in myche Bretayn, as after shall appere. For shortely after a Saron named Porth / landed wyth his two sõnes at an hauẽ in Southser. After whome as some authours meane, ỹ hauẽ was after called Portsmouth, whyche kepeth the name at this day. And in lykewyse they came to lande in dyuers places of Britayne / so that Aurelius had wyth them many conflyctys and bataylles, in the whych he spedde dyuersly / for he was somtyme victour, and some season ouerset. It is wryte of hym in ỹ englyshe cronicle and other, that he by ỹ helpe of Merlyn shuld fetche the great stones now standynge vpon the playne of Salysbury, and called the stone henge, oute of Irlande, and caused theym to be sette there as they nowe stande

ſtande/in remembraunce of the Brytons that there were ſlayne and buryed in the tyme of the communycacyon had with Hengiſte and his Saxons, as before in the ſtorye of Vortiger is touchyd. But Polycronica alledgyth ỳ honour vnto Uter Pendragon his brother. In the tyme of this Aurelius, as wytneſſyth alſo ỳ ſayde Policronica / dyed Hengiſt in his bed, when he had reygned ouer ỳ kentyſh Sarons. xxiiii. yeres. After whoſe deth Octa or Oſca his ſonne, ruled ỳ ſayd kyngdome other .xxiiii. yeres. All be yt that the brytyſhe bokes, and alſo the cronycles of Enlande ſheweth/ that after that Aurelius had in batayll ſlayne Hengiſte: he toke vnto his grace Octa his ſon, & gaue vnto hym a dwellynge place in the countre of Galewey for hym & his Sarõs then lefte on lyue. which ſemeth not to be true, for mater that ſhall after enſue/ and alſo for ỳ that before is touchyd of the Pictes and Scottes, in the tyme of the myſerye of the Brytons. Then yt foloweth, this Octa nother augmented nor myſhed his lordſhyp / but helde hym therwyth contented as his fader had to hym lefte yt.

Laſtely & in the ende of the reygne of Aurely, Paſcentius the yongeſt ſon of Vortiger, whiche after ỳ deth of his fader was fledde into Irland for fere of Aurely, purchaſyd ayde of Guilamour kyng of Irlãde. And wyth a great armye inuadyd thys lande of Brytayne by the countre of walys/ in takynge the cytye of Menenia, and in waſtynge the ſayd coũtre wyth iron and fyre. In the which ſeaſon and tyme Aurelỹ laye ſyke in his cytye of Kaerguent or wynchester. For whych cauſe he deſyred hys brother Uter to gather an hoſte of Britõs, & to appeaſe ỳ malice of Paſcentius & his adherẽtis. The whych accordyngly prepared his hoſte/ & at length ouercame the hoſte of Paſcẽcius, and ſlewe hym and the forenamed Guillamour in the ſame fyght.

In this whyle and ſeaſon that Uter was thus gone agayne Paſcentius/ a Saron or other ſtraũger feynynge hym a Bryton, & a connyng man in phyſyke, by the inticemẽt of Paſcentius came vnto Aurely, where he lay ſyke/ & by his ſubtyle & falſe meanes purchaſyd ſuch fauour wyth thoſe ỳ were nyghe vnto the prynce, that he was put in truſte to mynyſtre medycines vnto the kyng. This is named of writers Coppa or of ſome Eoppa.

The whyche when he had eſpyed his tyme cõuenyent to bringe about his falſe purpoſe/ he gaue to Aurelỹ a pocyon enpoyſoned/ by vyolence wherof he ſhortely after was dede, when he hadde reygned after moſte writers vppon .xii. yeres.

The thyrde or fyfte.

THE .XCVI. CHAPITER.

IN the tyme of ỳ reygne of this Aurelius as wytneſſeth the authour of Policronica & other/ ỳ kyngdome of Eſtanglis began vnder a Saron named Uffa, about the yere of our lorde. iiii. hundred. lxx. and xii, and the. xi. yere of Aurelius. The whych kyngdome conteyned Norff. and Suff. nowe called. This hadde in this eeſt and north ſydes, the ſee/ in the northweſte, Cambrygge ſhyre/ and in the weſte, ſaynte Edmundes dytche, and Hertfordſhyre/ and in the ſouthe Eſſex. This lordſhyppe was called fyrſte Uffynys lordſhyp/ and the kynges therof were named Uffynys, or after ſome authoures the people. But fynally they were named eeſt Inglys.

The fyrſt criſten kyng of this pryn

cypate was Redwaldus the thyrde kynge/but he was not so stedfaste as belonged to his relygyon. His sonne named Corpwaldus was more stedfaste / whyche after was slayne of a mysbyleuynge man and for Crystes fayth as some wryte. But Guydo sayth that Sebertus was fyrste cristen kynge of this lordshyppe/& that he made sayut Poulys chyrch of Lõdon. This vnder.xii. kynges endured, tyll the martyrdome of blessyd sayute Edmunde laste kynge therof/ the whych was martyred nere about the yere of our lord. viii. hũdred and lxix. By the whyche reason yt shuld folowe, that this kyngdome shulde endure by the terme of .iii. C. lxxvii. yeres. And of this lordshyp, at that dayes was Elinan or Thetforde the chyfe towne. But after Guydo, this lordeshyppe shulde begynne the yere of Grace. v. hundred & lxx/ & then shuld yt endure but. ii. hundred .iiii. score and. xii. yeres.

Francie.

THE .XCVIII. CHAPITER.

CLodoueus the sonne of Childericus or Hildericus before named, was after the deth of his fader ordeyned kynge of Fraunce, in ỹ yere of oure lorde .iiii. hundred .lxxx. and .iiii / and the thyrde yere of Aurelius then kyng of Brytayne. This of some wryters is named Clodoueus Lowys. The whyche shortely after that he of this realme was authorysyd for kynge/ herynge reporte of the beaute and grete vertue of Clotildis neuewe to Gundebald kynge or ruler of Burgoyne: sente vnto hym a knyght named Aurelius to treate a maryage betwene the kynge and Clotyld or Crotild. The which Gundebald more for fere then for loue al sentyd.

The cause wherof as myn authour sayth was, for ỹ thys Crotyld was enherytour vnto the sayde lande of Burgoyne/ and that she be reason of ỹ maryage shuld recouer her ryghte and put hym from the rule therof. This Crotild had before that day receyuyd the fayth of Cryste/ and so cõtynuynge her relygyon was maryed to Clodoueus then a paynym, and so endured a certayne of tyme. But yet she left not to enduce and tourne her lorde to the fayth in all that she myghte.

And after a certayn of tyme she was delyueryd of a sonne/ the whyche by meanes of the holy man Remigius byshop of Raynes, and of the quene Crotyld, was crystyned and named Clodomerus/ the whych dyed wyth in shorte proceste after. For ỹ happe the kyng sayd that his goddes were dyscontented wyth hym, that he had suffred his chylde to be crystyned, & for wrathe therof had taken frõ hym his chylde. The quene takynge the kynges sayenge in pacyence/ conceyued the seconde sonne, whyche also by the kynges agrement was also baptysed.

This also after a certayne of tyme was vexed wyth a greuous sekenes, in suche wyse that yt was lykely to haue dyed. wherfore the kynge was then more impacyent, and blamed ỹ relygyon of his wyfe in moste impacyent maner. The whych sayenges the quene toke pacyẽtly, and put all her confidence in god/to whom both she and Remigeus prayed so effectuously, that the chylde was restored vnto perfyte helth.

Thus Clodoueus persseuerynge in his erronyous lawe/made warre vpon the Almaynes. In whych warre beynge one daye occupyed in fyght agayne hys enymyes / he wyth hys people was put to the werse, wherof

when

whan Clodoue⁹ was ware/ hauyng greate drede of hym selfe, called to mynde the often exortacyon of hys wyfe, and of the greate vertue of her goddes lawe/and sodaynly lyfte his eyen towarde heuen and sayde, god the whyche Clotylde my wyfe doth honoure, now helpe me. And yf this daye I may passe thys daunger and opteyne victory/ I shall euer after worshyp the wyth true fayth. The whyche prayer skantly fynysshed the Frenchemen by dyuyne power were so vnyed and knyt togyther, and so knyghtly wythstode theyr enemyes/ that in shorte whyle after they optey ned victory. whyche victory had/ ꝑ kynge with greate tryumphe retdur ned into Fraunce. wherof whan Clotylde was warned/ she anone receyued hym wyth all ioye and gladnes, thankynge her lord god of his great victory/ but more for that ꝑ he had forsaken hys idolatrye, and was becomen seruaunt of ꝑ onely god fourmer of all the worlde.

THE .XCVIII. CHAPITER.

IT was not longe after ꝑ blessyd Remigius was sent for. The whyche enfourmed the kynge suffycyently in the fayth of Cryst / & vppon an Festet daye folowynge, wyth great solempnyte baptysed the kynge. In tyme of which solempnysacyon doynge / the holy Cryslme or oyle by negligente of the mynysters or otherwyse, lackynge / a doue discendyng from heuen, brought in her becke or byll a vyoll fylled wyth oyle of moste sweteste sauour/and delyuered it to sayne Remigius. The which was construed to be done by vertue of ꝑ holy ghoste. And wyth thys holy oyle whan the kyng was anoynted/ the surplusage therof was kept with moste reuerence. I haue herde reporte, that this oyle is kept at the cytye of Reynes or at Parys, and that yt neuer fayleth or wasteth/and that al ryghtfull enheryteurs of ꝑ crowne of Fraunce be therwyth at theyr coronacyō anoynted. But & it happen any myghty mā to vsurpe ꝑ crowne by myghte/when the bysshoppe cometh for thys holy oyle, he fyndeth ꝑ vyoll or glasse drye, and ellys not.

To thys reporte euery man maye gyue credence as hym lyketh/ for I fande not this wryten in the gospell, nor yet in no boke of holy scrypture.

Then it folowyth after thys solempnyte done/the kynge hadde certeyne wordes to the people, in exortynge them to leue theyr idolatrye, and to byleue in Cryste and hys fayth, by whose myghte and power onely he hadde venquysshed hys enemyes. By the whyche exortacyō and other meanes of the holy bysshop Remigius/myche people were sone after conuertyd and baptysed.

Then the kyng buylded certeyne newe monasteryes / and dedycat the olde temples of idollys in honoure of Crystes sayntes. Among ꝑ which one was nere vnto the cytye of Parys, in the honour of the apostles Peter and Paule. It is wytnessed of mayster Robert Gagwyne / that before these dayes all Frenche kynges vsed to bere in theyr armes .iii. todys But after thys Clodoueus had receyued Crystes relygyon . iii. floure de lyse were sente to hym by dyuyne power, sette in a shylde of asure/ the whyche syns ꝑ tyme hath ben borne of all Frenche kynges.

The sayd authour myndeth also that in a monastery of Fraunce called the monastery of sayncte Bartylmewe/was somtyme kepte a clothe of redde sylke, whyche was named the auryfflambe, and borne for a baner in the felde agayne the Barbaris or hethen people / by vertue wherof

the frenche prynces wan many vyc-
toryes. But after whan thys precy-
ous relyke or auryssiãbe was borne
agayne Cryssten prynces/ the vertue
therof sealyd, and lastly was lost.
But yet the lyke therof is kepte at
saynt Denys / and had in greate re-
uerence of the bysshoppes and ab-
bottes of the same place.

Then it foloweth in ỹ storye/whan
Clodoueus hadde set hys realme in
due order: Clotyld calling to myn-
de the treason done to her sader, and
also the wrongfull wythholdynge of
her ryghtfull enherytaunce by her
vncle Cundebalde/ exorted her lorde
Clodoueus to sende an embassade,
& to requyre restytucyon of her sayde
ryght/ ỹ whych was sone after done.
And whan the kynge had receyued
an answere, ỹ the sayd Cundebalde
wolde not restore the sayd ryghte of
hys wyfe: he in all goodly wyse pre-
pared an armye, and made warre vp
pon the sayd Cundebalde. And after
greate waste and dystruccyon of the
coũtre: Clodoueus fynally besegyd
hym in a cytye/ & after toke the sayd
cytye by strength/ and the sayd Cun
debalde wythin ỹ same as prysoner.
But by medyacyon of frendes and
greate gyftes/ wyth also a yerely try
bute to be payed to Clodoueus, the
sayd Cundebalde was releaced and
sette at lybertye.

THE .XCIX. CHAPITER.

THis voyage thus spedde and
orderyd: the kynge lefte be-
hynde hym an armye of .v. thousand
knyghtes, vnder the gydyng of Gũ-
defyld brother of the forsayd Cun-
debalde/ and after retourned into
Fraunce. But sone after the kynges
departynge/ Cundebalde cõtrary to
the promyse before made, gaderyd
a power of knyghtes, & made warre
vppon hys sayde brother/ and lastly
beseged hym in the cytye of Vienne/
where vppon eyther parte was by
skyrmysshes & assautes great people
slayne. Al be yt in the ende Cunde-
balde wanne the cytye/ and hys bro-
ther therein beynge, he afterwarde
behedyd. About thys tyme great dis
cencyon grewe atwene Clodoueus
and the kynge of Gothys called Ale
ricus. whyche varyaũce by agremẽt
of bothe partyes was put to the iu-
gement of Theodorycus than kyng
of Longobardes or of Italyãs. The
whyche after the sayde causes were
well and sufficyently argued and de
batyd before hym and hys coũsayle:
he fynally gaue sentence ỹ a knyght
of Clodoueus shulde stande vppon
an hylle holdynge a spere vpryghte
in hys hande/ and that the kynge of
Gothys shuld throwe or lay so mych
syluer as shulde in processe couer the
poynt of the sayd spere. whyche sen-
tence as testyfyeth mayster Robert
Gagwyne, the Gothis despysed say-
enge that they had not sufficyent syl
uer wythin theyr land to perfourme
the sayd sentence. And for despyte of
the same/ certeyne Gothys espyenge
a pryncs of Fraũce named Paterne,
beynge allocyate wyth some dyuerse
Frenshmen in a lofte or chamber /
the whyche Paterne had ben solycy-
tour for the Frenshe kynge in ỹ fore
sayd mater: the sayde Gothys by
crafty and falce meanes caused the
floorth of the sayd chamber to falle/
by whyche meane the sayde Paterne
was greuously hurte, and many of
the other in lykewise, & some slayne.

wherof whan Clodoueus had wyt
tynge/ he beynge therwyth greatly
amoued, and also bycause ỹ Gothys
dysobeyde the forsayd awarde: he
gadered shortly after a greate hoste.
And after certeyne offerynges done
to saynt Martyn/ wyth also passyng
the ryuer of Vian by myracle and le-

dynge

dynge of an harte: he lastly came to the syghte of hys enemyes. Thenne Clodoueus lodged hys hoost nere vnto the monastery of saint Hillary/ where in the nyght before ỳ batayle, he receyued tokens of victory, the whyche I passe ouer.

And vppon the morne he set hys people in araye, and made towarde hys enemyes / and mette wyth them in a felde called Noglodien, nere vnto ỳ ryuer of Cleue or Clyue. where after sore and longe fyght / he slewe the abouesayde Alaricus kynge of Gothys (as sayth myne authour) wyth hys owne hande.

But here shulde seme some discorde of tyme wyth other wryters. For Cronica cronicarum, Iacobus Philippus, and other/ testifye that thys Alaricus was dede many yeres before. For he shulde be kynge of Gothys by theyr sayenge in the tyme ỳ Honorius brother vnto Archadius was emperour. whyche was aboute the yere of our lord. iiii. hundred .x.ix. that he began hys empyre. wherfore mayster Robert Gagwyne meaneth some other kynge of Gothys than Alaricy. For the sayd authours also affyrmen, that this Alaricus dyed of sodayne sykenesse at a cytye named Cesancia/ whā he had reygned after moste wryters. vi. yere.

Then it folowyth in ỳ story/ whan Clodoueus had thus optayned victory of the Gothys, and set the countre of Guyan in order: he sped hym agayne into Fraunce.

And when he was comen into the countre of Turon/ he was encountred wyth embassadours of themperours Anastasius, and presented from the sayd emperour wyth gyftes & greate ryche and honour, and also admytted for a consull of Rome, whyche at that dayes was a dygnyte of moste honour. whyche done, he remytted the sayd embassade wyth great gyftes. This sayenge is affyrmed of the other wryters /the whych shewe this honour to hym to be done, for as mych as he had ouercomen the Gothys, enemyes of Crystes fayth. But they name not the kynges name that then reygned ouer the Gothys.

Thys besynesse ouerpassed/ Clodoueus contynued hys iourney tyll he came to the monastery or chyrche of saynt Martyn. where wyth great deuocyon accordyng to hys former promysse/ he offered his sede that he occupyed that iourney agayne the Gothys. And after for that he entended to occupye the sayd hors yf he hadde lyke nede: he redemed hym wyth a competent summe of golde. But yet the hors myghte not be remoued. Then ỳ kyng added to an hundreth pecys of golde/ which at those dayes were named golden shyllynges/ and so receyued hys stede. wherfore the kynge sayd after in game, that saynt Martyn was a good helper at nede/ but he was costelewe.

Thus thys noble and fyrste crysten prynce cōtynued hys lyfe in noble and marcyall dedys/ in augmentynge hys kyngdome by knyghtly bataples and other worldy prouysyons/ and lastly dyed of goddes visytacyō with all stedfastnes of fayth, whan he hadde reygned. xxx. yeres/ leuyng after hym. iiii. sonnes of Clotylde hys wyfe/ that is to saye Clodomyrus, Chyldebertus, Theodoricus, and Clotharius / or after some Lotarius/ and was buryed in ỳ monastery that he before nere vnto Parys hadde buylded, wyth suche epytaphy or superscripcyon vppon hys tumbe as after shalbe shewed.

But or I procede to the declaryng of the forsayd epitaphy/ for so mych as I haue hard dyuers hold an opynyon, that the fayth of Cryste was receyued

receyued in Fraunce or it were receyued in this lande of Brytayne: therfore I shall note here the tyme that this Clodoueus fyrst toke baptyme. whyche was as Ranulphe monke & other testifye, in the. xb. yere of hys reygne/or nere about. whyche was ꝑ yere of our lord. iiii. C. lxxx. & xix.

wherby yt apperyth, consyderynge the tyme of Lucius fyrst cryste̅ prynce that euer was of Brytayne as before is shewed/that Cristes fayth was by a longe tyme honoured in Brytayn, or it were honoured in Fraunce / excepte that suche as holde the forsayd opynyō, accompte the fyrste comyng of Crystes fayth into Brytayne at ꝑ fyrste conuersyon of the Sarons, whenne yt was prechyd by the holy monke saynt Augustyne and hys felowes/whych is not to the purpose. Than to the forsayde epitaphy or superscrypcyon as foloweth.

Diues opum, virtute potens, claruſq; triumpho,
Condidit hanc ſedem, rex Clodoueus idem.
Patricius magno, ſublimis ſuſſit honore.
Plenus amore dei, contempſit credere nullo
Lumina qui varijs horrent potenta figuris,
Mox purgatus aquis, & Chriſti fonte renatus
Fragrantem geſſit, infuſo criſmate crinem.
Exemplū q̄ dedit, ſequitur quod plurima turba
Gentilis populi/ ſpretoq; errore ſuorum
Doctorem cultura deum, verumq; parentem.
Hijs felix meritis, ſuperauit geſta priorum
Semper conciſio, caſtris belliſq; tremendus.
Hortatu duxꝫ ipſe bonus, ac pectore ſortis
Cōſtructas acies formauit in agmine primus.

The whyche verses maye be thus expouned in our moder tuge as here after foloweth.

Riche of goodes, stronge in vertue, in triumphe re ioynynge,
Kyng Clodoueus, this temple buylte of stone
Fader of comon profete, clad with his honour excellynge.
Repleny ſſied with goddes lowe, deſpyſed hys olde fom
And hys pagann lewe, wyth the straunge ſygures echone.
Purgid with holy water, by criſtes font born new
And holy criſme enoynted ſtoured with vertue dew

Exemple gyuyng, hym foloweth many a man,
Forſakyng theyr errour and theyr falſe goddes all
And by his techynge honour but one god than
Thus by his merytes he excelled his parentall/
And thorough his cōſayle made cityes and caſtell thrall.
He was a noble duke, & therwith of grete myght
And in front of batayle was euer the fyrſt knyght

Anglia.

THE .C. CHAPITER.

After the laste or yongeſt ſonne of Cōſtantyne, and brother of Aurelius / was made kyng of Britayn in the yere of our lorde. v. hundred euen / and the. xbi. yere of Clodoueus than kynge of Fraunce. Thys as before ys touched, was surnamed Pendragō. The cauſe therof was as wytneſſyth ꝑ Engliſſhe cronycle, for ſo mych as Merlyn lykened hym vnto a dragō vnder a ſterre apperynge in the firmament. wherof there is made a long proceſſe, and by Gaufryde in his Brytyſhe boke alſo affermed/ the whych to me ſemeth of lytell credēce. But trought it is, that after Uter was (as before is ſayde) made kynge/he was enamowryd vpon the dukes wyfe of Cornewayll named Igwarne or Igorne/& for to optayn his vnlefull luſt, ſought many & dyuers meanes. Do ꝑ laſtly he made warre vpō her huſbāde named Garoly or Gorleis/& at lēgth ſlew ꝑ ſayde

sayde duke at his castell called Tyntagell, standynge in Cornewayle/ & after maryed his wyfe, and receyued of her the noble knyght Arthur, and a doughter named Amye, as sayth the englyshe cronycle.

More is not lefte of any wryter of authorite in remembraunce of thys Uter/ all be it that some testifye, that he by the helpe of Merlyne shulde fetche Coria gigantum otherwyse called the stone henge, out of Irlad as before I haue shewed in the story of Aurelius. And of Gaufryde ys shewed, that Uter also shulde wynne the forsayde ladye by the enchauntement of Merlyn. whych is not comely to any chrysten relygyon to gyue to any suche fantastycall illusyons any mynde or credence. wherfore I passe ouer, leuynge all the other mater, whych also ys there rehersyd of the warre betwene Uter and Osca, sonne of Hengyste, for so myche as it is dyscordaunt vnto other wryters/ and fynally conclude that thys Uter Pendragon dyed by force of venym, when he hadde ruled thys yle of Bry tayne by the full terme of .xvi yeres/ and after was buryed by his brother Aurely in Coria gigantum or stone henge, leuynge after hym the forenamed sonne the puyssaunt Arthur.

Francia.

THE .CI. CHAPITER.



Othacius or Clothacius the yongest sonne of Clodoue? / was made kynge of a parte of Fraunce called Soysons, in ỹ yere of our lorde .v. hundred and .xiiii/ and the .xiiii. yere of Uter then kynge of myche Brytayne. ye shall vnderstande that after the deth of Clodoueus laste kyng of Fraunce / the lande by hym was dyuyded to hys foure sonnes. That is to say to the eldest sonne Clodomirus was appoynted the lordshyppe of Orlyaunce / to Theodoricus the seconde sonne Austracye / to Childebertus ỹ thyrd son myddell Fraūce, or the countre lyenge about Paris/ and to this Lothayr, the aboue sayd lordshyppe of Soysons. Of whyche sayd lordshyppes eyther of them possessyd/ they were of theyr subiettes called kynges, and so contynued in good reste a certayne of tyme. In the whyche season Clotyld theyr moder, beynge in mynde the vnnaturall deth of her parentes/ wylled her sonnes to venge theyr deth. whych deth as testifyeth Uincent hystorial, and also Antoninus, was in this forme folowynge. Gundenchus the grand father of Clotildis had .iiii. sonnes/ that is to saye Cundebaldus, Gondegisilus, Hilpericus, and Godomarus: To these .iiii. sonnes Gundenchus besette the lande of Burgoyne. Gondigisil? and Godomar? dyed/ wherfore the land of Burgoyne fyll to Cundebaldus and Hilpericus. Then Cundebaldus for couetyse of the hole lordeshyp, slew his brother Hilpericus / & fastened a great stone to the necke of his wyfe, and cast her into a depe water. And of hys .ii. doughters, wherof the eldest hyght Trona/ he eryed in poore wede or clothynge. And the yonger he kepte in seruage wythin his owne courte. The whyche after as before is shewed was maryed agayne hys wyll vnto Clodoue? fader to this Lothari?.

Then yt foloweth, this Lotharius sonne of Clotild made sharpe warre vpon Sigismonde sonne of Cundebaldus, whyche then was dede. In the whyche warre the eldest sonne Clodomyrus was slayne/ leuyng after hym

ter hym .iii. sonnes named Theobal dus, Guntherus or Guntharre, and Clodoaldus. whych .iii. sonnes toke to her tuycyon and gupdynge. But the other brother mayntepned the warre agayn ꝑ Burgoynõs/in such wyse ꝑ finally they obteyned ꝑ ryght porcyon of theyr moder Clotilde.

After thys warre was fynyshed in Burgoyne: Childebertus the thyrd sonne herynge that Almaricus kyng of Spayne mysse entreated his suster/made warre vppon hym, & lastly hym subdued and sette his suster in her former estate.

But whyle the said Childebert was thus in Spayne occupped: Theodo tus his brother toke from hym a cy tye to hym belongyng called Moût clere/ and slewe the knyghtes which Childebertus had lefte there to kepe the sayd cytye. For this mischeuous dede arose gret debate betwene these two brethern/ but by medyacyon of frendes they were at lẽgth accordyd. Then Theodorus sought new meanes of displeasure agayne his sayde brother, as well treason as other wyse/ the whyche Childebert by his polycye and wysedome & wyth good fortune escappd.

Childebertus than castynge in his mynde how he myght wynne to hym the patrymony or the lordeshyp that lately belõged vnto his eldest broder Clodomyrus: toke counsayle of his brother Clotharius. In such wyse ꝑ they to gyder or of one assent, sent vn to theyr moder Clotyld for theyr ne uewes, childern of theyr brother And she nothynge mystrustynge theym/ sent the sayde childern vnto the sayd ii. brethern. But wythin shorte tyme of theyr commyng vnto theyr sayde vncles, as testifyeth mayster Robert Gagwyne, and also the frẽche cronicle/ Lotharius tyrãnously wyth his sworde slew two of ꝑ sayde childern. And then the thyrde fledde for his sa uegarde vnto suche as hym fauou ryd. He was after agayne taken and compelled to make a solemne othe, ꝑ he shulde become a relygyous man, & neuer clayme any part of his ryght or enherytaunce. By which vnlefull meane the .ii. brothern obteyned the hole lordshyppe of Orleaunce / and partyd the reuennues thereof be twene them/ but that endurpd but a whyle. And here I passe ouer the sorowe that Clotylde made for the chil dern of her sonne Clodomyrus/ and also the orderyng of the yongest son called Clodoaldus, whyche escaped the daunger of his vncles, as before is shewed / the whyche wolde aske a longe season.

THE .CII. CHAPITER.

IT was not long after but that the seconde brother kynge or duke of Austracy, dyed of goddes vi sytacyon/ leuynge after hym a sonne named Theodobertus. The whyche of his two forsayde vncles was gre uously warred by lõge tract of tyme, the whyche he defendyd thorough his marciall knightbode. And when he by dyuers meanes hadde sought peace, and myght not purchase it; he then founde suche meanes by ryche gyftes and otherwyse, that he wãne the fauoure of his vncle Childebert/ and cherysshyd hym as his frende. Then fyll vnkyndnes betwene Chil debert and Lotharius / in so myche that eyther of thẽ assembled a great hoste to subdue that one the other. But the forenamed Theodobertus made all ꝑ power he myght, to ayde and assyste Chyldebert. So that vp pon bothe partyes was a great mul tytude of knyghtes armed redy to fyght. Clotilde then herynge of this mortall warre betwene her two sonnes/and also conspyrynge the lyke lyhode

lyhode of the great effusyon of mannes blood that myghte ensue, by the reason of the ioynynge of these forsayd two hostes: in all hast yode vnto the sepulture or shryne of saynt Martyn. where wyth due deuocyon she made her specyall prayers / beseechynge god and that blessyd saynt to sende by heuenly power some let or impedyment, ỹ the sayd hostes shuld not ioyne in batayll. By meane of whyche prayer when the sayde two hostes were in preparyng forto haue ronne to gyther: sodeynly fyll suche a tempeste of wynde and hayll wyth thunder and lyghtnynge, that bothe hostes were so greuously beten with the sayde tempeste and wederynge, that eyther of them had most mynde how they myght defende them selfe from daunger of the said wederyng. And ouer that, as testifyeth ỹ aboue named Authour/eyther of the hostes thought in theyr myndes, that they were chased of theyr enimies/in such wyse that eyther of them fledde from other by a longe space.

After this eyther of them sent meanes of treatyse eyther to other/and at length confermed a peace betwene them. The whyche peace surely on both partyes assured Childebert excyted his brother to warre vppon a people or countre called Terra Conens̄ in the prouynce of Spayn, and besegyd the cytye of Saragounce otherwise called Augusta/& tynally kept the cytesyns so shorte, that they to appeace theyr enimyes, caused the byshoppe of the cytye to open the sepulchre of saynt Vyncent, and gyue to Lotharius a parte of ỹ holy martyrs bodye.

But yet that notwythstandynge/ though the syege were wythdrawen and the cytye sparyd: yet the countre there aboute they pylled and wasted wythoute pyte. And after wyth great rychesse of praye, retourned into Fraunce. where at Paris by Childebert soone after was builded a monastery in the worshyppe of god and of saynt Vincent/ where the forsayd relyke was sette and reuerently kepte. whych monastery at this daye is called saynt Germayns de Pree.

In thys whyle, I can not saye by what happe/ these two brethern newly malygned agayne theyr neuewe Theodobert the son of theyr brother Theodorich. And entendyd by theyr malyce to byreue hym of the lordeshyppe of Austracy. And to that entent gatheryd theyr people to warre vpon the sayde Theodobert. wherof when ỹ sayd Theodobert was ware, consyderynge he coude not so shortely assemble his people to wythstande the malyce of his sayd vncles? he in lowly and good maner rode agayne them in a peasyble wise. And to them behaued hym so well in worde and dede, that they alonely forgaue not hys trespasse / but also sente hym agayne with great rychesse of gyftes.

Soone after thys tyme dyed Clotilde the wife of Clodoueus/ỹ which with great pompe of her two sonnes was buryed by her sayde husbande. And shortly after dyed Theodobert aforenamed / leuynge after hym a sonne named Theobalde. In thys passe tyme Lotherius of hys wyfe receyued. vii. sonnes & two doughters. Of the whyche Crampris the eldest sonne he sente into Gupan, to haue the rule therof vnder his father. But he contrary to hys fathers mynde/ oppressyd the inhabytauntes therof wyth greuous exaccyons and tribute/ wherfore hys father beynge dyscontent, called hym thens. Crampris wyth this beynge sore amoued/ in great angre departed his fathers courte, & rode vnto Childebert hys vncle, excytynge hym to make warre

vppon hys father/ imagynynge fals occasyons to bryng the two brethern at dystaunce / and made a solemne othe to his vncle, that durynge hys lyfe he shuld strēgth his party agayn his owne father. whyche assuraunce thus made, Chyldebert prepared hys hoste to warre agayne his brother Lotharij. But ꝑ sayd Lotharij of this beynge warned/ for such lette as he then haddde, sent agayne hys enymyes two sonnes of hys, named Gunthranus and Aribertꝰ / & whyle these two sonnes made toward Chil debert, he in that whyle made great waste in the countre of Champayne/ and takynge great pryses, returned into hys owne countre of myddell Fraunce. wherof herynge the forenamed Guntranus and hys brother/ and also that in Guyan was moued warre by Crampē: spedde them thyder wyth all theyr people. But they dydde nothynge worthye memorye or laude.

In thys season dyed the forsayde Chyldeberte brother of Lotharius wythout heyre/ when he hadde ruled myddell Fraunce. xlviii. yeres, as sayeth the Frenche cronycle / and was entered in ꝑ monastery of saint Vyncent, otherwyse called saynte Germayne de Pree.

THE .CIII. CHAPITER.

After the deth of Childebert/ for so myche as he dyed wythout heyre, Lotharius forenamed seasyd all myddell Fraunce into his possessyon. And after he hadde somdele sette yt in order / not forgetynge the vnnaturall rebellyon of hys son Crampris: chase vnto hym a puryd company of knyghtes and of competent nomber/ & in all haste made toward Guyan, where ꝑ sayd Crampē was then abydynge. But when he harde of the cōmynge of his father agayn hym with his cholyn armye: he with drewe hym to the vttermost partyes of Fraunce/ and requyryd ayde of a kynge or duke to that partye adioynynge named Gonobalde/ the which to hym promised ayde to his power.

Lotharius of this affinyte beyng warned / pursued the sayde Gonobalde so sharpely, that he constrayned hym at length to take the chyrch of saynte Martyne, and to holde yt for his sauegarde. But when Lotharius had assayd by dyuerse meanes, as well by fayre promyse as wordes of Manasses, and myght not get the sayde Gonobalde oute of that holy place: he set the chyrche on fyre, and brent the duke in the same/ the which shortely after he reedifyed and made in more better maner then yt before hadde ben.

when Crampris was thus dispoynted of ꝑ ayde of Gonobalde: he then fledde into lyttell Bryttayne, and requyred ayde of the erle therof named Conabutus/ where by comforte of ꝑ sayde erle he assembled a great hoste to wythstand his father. wherof the father beynge assertayned drewe towarde hym. And when both hostes were nere: they sent messagers to ꝑ father to entreate a peace. But Lotharius included so many harde condycyons wythin the sayde peace/ or as some writersmeane, Crampris despyred such vnlefull desyres of his father/ that the sayd treaty myght take none effecte. And for truste that he had in the Brytons and his strength he was vtterly bent to trye his cause by dynt of swerde.

Lotharius haupynge experiēce that fortune of batayl is in victory doutfull & vncertayne: he therfore made hys prayer to god/ besechynge hym of ayde agayne the vnnaturall and obstynate rebellyon of his sonne.

After

After whych prayer endyd/ he commaunded in the name of god to sette vppon his enymyes. whyche mette with so grete ire/that shortly ꝑ grene feld was dyed into a perfyght redde/ and many knyghtes vpon both partyes laye slayne, and gruntynge vpon the erthe. The father comfortynge and callynge vpon his knyghtes vppon the one parte, and the son vpon his knyghtes vpon that other parte /eyther of them entendynge ꝑ deth and vtter destruccyon of eche other/thus this batayll hangynge in suspence to whether of them the victorye shuld turne: sodeynly the Britons gaue backe / and gaue place to the Frenchemen. wyth the which the French partye beyng cõforted/enforced ꝑ Britons wyth so sharpe fyght, that they were compelled to forsake the felde, and toke theym to flyght/ whom the Frenchemen chasyd and slewe wythout mercy.

In the whyche chase Crampzis wyth hys wyfe and chyldern were taken and presentyd vnto Lotharius. The whyche shortly after, settynge a parte all faderly loue, compassion, and pytye, caused a great fyre to be made/ into the whyche he commaunded to be caste the sayde Crampzis with also hys wyfe and chyldern. Or as wytnessyth the frenche cronycle, they were all enclosyd in a house/ and the house and they to gether consumyd wyth fyre.

Thus the moste cruell father without pyte chastysyd ꝑ inobedyent son, to the example and lernyng of other, to bere dewe obedyence vnto theyr parentes. After this victory and cruell chastysement executed by Lotharius: he retourned into Fraunce. And so to the sepulcre or shryne of sayncte Martyne/yeldynge to god and hym thankes of thys victorye, and offeryd there many ryche gyftes. And after spedde hym to Soysons/where he as kynge of all Fraunce / excepte the lordshyppe of Austracy, whyche Theobald sonne of his brother sons Theodozich then helde. The father of this Theobald was Theodobert. Then Lotharius seynge hys lande in reste and quyetnesse/ gaue hym to huntynge and chace of wylde bestes, a game of great vse amõg all frẽche prynces.

In whyche dysporte he beyng one daye greatly trauayled, caught some surfet/ of the whyche ensued a mortall sykenes, so that he dyed shortely after, when he hadde reygned as before is specifyed ouer the lordshyppe of Soysons and other, by the terme of.l. wynter full. And was after buryed at Soysons with great pompe/ leuynge after hym foure sonnes, Gũthzanus, Aribertus, Chilpericus, & Sigebertus.

It is testyfyed of mayster Robert Gagwyne, that sayncte Radegunde borne of the countre of Thurynge, of a pagan father named Bernigarius, was wyfe to this Lothar. whose vertuous syfe Antonin⁹ in his boke called Sñ Antonini, in the.viii. chapter & .xii. tytle of the seconde parte of his worke, shewyth cõpendyously.

Angsia.

THE .CIIII. CHAPITER.

ARthur⁹ the sonne of Uter Pendzagon a strepelynge of.xv. yeres of age beganne his reygne as kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of oure lorde v.hundred and.xviii/ and the thyrde yere of Lotharius, then kynge of Fraunce, or of a parte therof, as before is declared. Of this Arthure is

by Gaufryde recyted a longe ſtoꝛye, and alowed by the englyſh cronycle, the whyche from other wꝛyters ys greatly dyſcoꝛdaunte. But yet all authours agreen that he was noble and victoryous in all his dedys.

Fayne I wolde declare the fame of this noble pꝛynce, to the comfoꝛte of other to folowe his marcyall dedis/ ſo that I myght ſomwhat tuſty fye my repoꝛte by ſome authoure of authoꝛyte. But the moꝛe I am in doute, bycauſe of the ſayenge of Ranulphe monke of Cheſtre/ whyche vouchyth pt vpon wyllyam wꝛyter of hyſtoꝛyes of kynges, as ys reherſed at length in the .vi. chappter of the .v. boke of Polycronicō/ which is there open to euery man that ys deſyꝛous to knowe the ſayde repoꝛte oꝛ opynyon/ the whyche foꝛ the legth therof I ouerpaſſe. And ſomwhat to the honour of ſo great a champyon as was thys Arthur, I ſhall lay vnto the reder, that he may wyth authoꝛyte ſhewe vnto the hereꝛs/ and ther wyth gladde the welſheman that he ſhuld deſcēde of ſo noble a byctour/ whych ſo many dedys of honour exe cuted in his dayes.

Then as teſtyfyeth Polycronycon and other/ Arthur faught .xii. notable batayllis agayne the Sarons, and of them all was victour.

Wherfoꝛe the fyꝛſte was vpon the ryuer of Cleuy/ and .iiii. the nexte were foughten vpon the ryuer Douglys, which rynneth vnder the town of wygan, vpon ten myles from the ryuer of Merſe in Lancaſhyꝛe.

The .vi. batayll was vppon the ryuer called Baſſa.

The .vii. beſyde Lyncolſh in a wood called Celidon.

The .viii. and the .ix. were foughten about yoꝛke.

The .x. was about Aycolſh towne, whyche is named warwyk as after ſome wꝛyters.

The .xi. was at Bathe/ where he longe beſegyd Cerdicus kynge of weſtſaxons.

The .xii. and laſt was at a place called Badon oꝛ Babowe hyll/ in which he ſlewe many Sarons. But that notwythſtandynge he myght not clerely voyde them his lande/ but that they kepte theyꝛ coūtres, which they were beſoꝛe poſſeſſyd of/ as Kente, Southerey, and Noꝛff: all be it that ſome authours teſtyfy that they held theſe countres as trybutaryes vnto Arthure.

Thys noble warryour as wytneſſyth holy Gildas, ſlew with his owne hande in one daye by ꝑ helpe of our ladye ſaynte Marye/ whoſe picture he bare peynted in his ſhelde, a hundꝛed and .xl. Sarons. whyche ſhelde he called Pꝛydwen/ his ſwerd was called Calibourne/ and his ſpere was called Roſh, after the bꝛytyſhe tunge oꝛ ſpeche.

The thyꝛde oꝛ fourth.

THE .CVI. CHAPITER.

ABout the .v. yere of this Arthur, after the agrement of moſte wꝛyters began the loꝛd ſhyppe of weſtſaxōs, vnder ꝑ Saxon called Cerdicus & Kenricus hys ſonne. Foꝛ Denys and other wytneſſe, that this loꝛdſhyppe oꝛ kyngdome ſhulde haue his begynnynge the .lxxi. yere. after the fyꝛſte commynge of Hengiſte/ oꝛ the yere of aure loꝛde fyue hundꝛed .xxii. which agreeth wyth the .v. yere of Arthure afoꝛeſayde.

Thys lordſhyppe conteyned the weſte countre of Englande/ as wyde ſhyꝛe

wyltshyre, Somersetshyre, Berk', Dorf. and other / as Deuonshyre, and Cornewayll / and hadde in the Eest syde Southampton / in ꝑ north Thamys the famouse ryuer / in the south and weste the see Occean.

This forsayde Cerdicus, whyche of some authours is named Childricus / lãded fyrst at Cerdyshore which nowe is called yermouth, an hauen towne in the countre of Norff. And by helpe of other Sarons then inhabyted in that countre then called eest Anglys: the sayd Cerdicus at lẽgth obteyned the forsayde countre and named yt westsaron or westsaronia / and reygned therin as lorde or kyng a certayne of yeres, and Kenric⁹ his sonne after hym.

The fyrste chrysten kynge of this prouynce was named Kyngilsus / and cõuertyd by meanes of that blessed man Berinus byshoppe of Dorchester. To whom Quichelinus brother of the forsayd Kyngilsus, gaue the sayd cytye to make there hys see, after he also had receyued baptyme of the sayde Berinus. And as Guydo wytnessyth the sayde Quichelinus gaue after to the byshoppe of wynchester. vii. myles compasse of lande, to buylde there a bysshoppes see / the whyche was accomplyshed and fynyshed by Kenwalcus his son. Thys kyngdome enduryd longeste of all the other / whyche were. vii. in nomber, or .vi. beside thys. Some wryters accompte the terme of the duraunce of thys kyngdome, from Cerdicus to Egbert / and some to the laste yere of Aluredus. But Guydo accomptyth the enduraunce of thys kyngdome, from the fyrste yere of Cerdicus vnto the laste yere of Edwarde the cõfessour. By reason wherof yt shuld endure fyue hundred and .xi. liiii. yeres. But moste accordyngly yt shulde be reckened from the fyrste yere of Cerdicus to the laste yere of Aluredus. For he made one monarchye of all. vii. kyngdomes / in which tyme dyd flowe or passe thre hũdred lxxviii. yeres.

THE .CVI. CHAPITER.

NOwe then I wyll returne vnto Arthur / the whych by a longe tyme dwelled in warre and mortall batayll wyth ꝑ Sarõs, by meane of theyr dayly repayre into this lande. The whyche also alyed them with Pictes and other nacyons, and made theyr partye the strenger by ꝑ meane. But yet Arthur by his marciall knyghthod brought theym in suche frame / that he was accõpted for chyef lord of Brytayne.

Fynally when he hadde by a longe tyme maynteyned hys warres agayne the Sarons / and specyally agayne Cerdicus or Childricus kyng of westesarons: he for a fynall concorde gaue vnto the sayde Cerdicus as testifyeth Policronica in the .vi. chappter of his .v. boke. the two cõtres of Hampshyre and Somerset. And when he hadde sette hys lande in some quietnesse, he betoke the rule therof vnto hys neuewe Mordred / and wyth a chosyn armye sayled, as sayth Gaufryde and other, vnto Fraũce / where by the reporte of Gaufryde he wrought wonders.

But the wryters of Frenche cronycles touche nothynge of suche notable dedes / nor yet the wryters of Romaynes mynde nothynge of suche actes done agayne theyr consull or emperoure called by Gaufryde Lucius Hybert⁹. Therfore I wyll spare all that longe mater: remyttyng the welshemen as touchynge ꝑ procesſe

vnto the sayd Gaufride. And here I wyll folowe Policronicon, where he sayth, that for as mych as the forenamed Mordred was desyrous to be kynge/ & feryd some dele the myght of Cerdicus kyng of westsarons: he therfore drewe to hym the sayde Cerdicus by great gyftes, as of townes and castelles & other meanes/ where thorough the sayd Cerdicus to hym assented, so that Mordred was at London crowned kyng of Brytayn/ and Cerdicus after the vse of pagās was at wyncheſter then called Kaerguent crowned kyng of westsarons.

when relacyō came to Arthur of all this treason wrought by his neuewe Mordred: he in all haste made towarde Brytayn, as yt is redde in the englyshe cronycle/ & lāded at Sandwyche, where he was mette of Mordred and hys people/ whych gaue vnto hym strong batayll in tyme of his landyng, and loste there many of his knyghtes, as the famouse knyghte Gawyne and other. But yet this not withstandyng Arthur at lēgth wāne the lande, and chasyd his enymyes/ and after the enterynge of his cosyn Gawyn and other of his knyghtes there slayne, he sette forwarde his hoste to pursue his enymyes. Mordred thus beynge ouerlette of his vncle at the see syde/ withdrewe hym to wyncheſter. where he beynge furnyſshed of newe soudyours, gaue vnto Arthur, as sayth Gaufryde, ỳ secōde fyghte/ wherin also Mordred was put to the worse, and constrayned to flee. Thyrdely and lastely the sayde Mordred faught wyth his vncle Arthur beſydes Glaſtynbury/ where after a longe and daungerouse fyght, Mordred was slayn/ & ỳ victorious Arthur wounded vnto the deth/ and after buryed in the vale of Aualon beſyde Glaſtynbury beforesayde.

Of this laſte ende and buryenge of Arthur in the brytyſshe bokes are tolde many fables. But to oppresse ỳ errours of Brytons ỳ thynke or byleue ỳ Arthur yet lyueth: Policronicon ſhe with in his forenamed chapyter of his .v. boke, ỳ in the secōde Henryes tyme kynge of Englande the bonys of the sayd Arthur and Gwaynour his wyfe were foūden/ and trāſlated into the forſayde chyrch of Glaſtynbury, and there newe buryed in the yere of our lord .xi. hundred. lxxx. And more ſpecially yt is noted in the xviii. chappter of the .vii. boke of Policronicon aboue sayde.

wherfore to be at cōcluſyon of a fyne of this noble warryour/ he was as before is ſhewed slayne or wounded to deth, when he hadde reygned ouer the Britons by ỳ terme of .xxvi. yeres/ wyllynge before his deth that Conſtantyne the ſon of Cador duke of Cornewayle, for ſo mych as of his bodye remayned none heyre, that he ſhulde be his heyre and enheryte the land of mych Britayn after his deth.

Anglia.

THE .CVII. CHAPITER.



Conſtantinus the ſon of Cador duke of Cornewayle/ by aſſent of the Brytons was of them crowned kynge of mychе Brytayne, in the yere of Cryſtes incarnacyon fyue hūdred .xliii./ and the .xix. yere of Lotharius then kynge of Fraunce. This was nere kynneſman vnto Arthur/ and was by the two ſonnes of Mordred greuouſly vexed, for ſo mychе as they claymed the lande by the ryghte or tytle of theyr father. So ỳ betwene hym and them were foughten many and ſondry bataylles. wherof nother

of place

of place nor of tyme is left any conuenyent memorye / nor yet of the names of the sayde two sonnes.

But as dyuerse authours agreen, after these forsayde batayllys thus foughten / tyrnylly the two sonnes of Mordred were constrayned of pure force to seche strong holdes for theyr refuge. wherfore that one toke London, and that other wynchester.

wherof Constantyne beynge warned / lefte not tyll he had slayne that one wythin the monastery of saynte Amphiabill at wynchester / and that other wythin a temple or chyrche of London, whych temple is named of Gaufryde an hous of freres. But ỹ sayeng is doutefull / for at that dayes yt is to be supposed that there was none hous of freres within London nor by a longe tyme after.

when Constantine hadde thus subdued his enymyes, and thought hym selfe in a maner of suertye of his regyon: then fortune as she hadde enuyed his glory, arteryd agayne hym his owne kynnesman named Aurelius Conanus / the whych agayn hym made mortall batayll / and finally or at the last slewe hym in ỹ felde, when he hadde reygned after most accorde of wryters .iii. yeres / the whych was then buryed at Stone hyenge by the sepulture of Uter Pendragon / wyth great solemnytye.

THE.CVIII. CHAPITER.

AUrelius Conanus the cosyn of Constantyne last named / was crowned kyng Brytayne, in the yere of our lord. v. hundred .xlvi. the .xxxii. yere of Lotharij before named then kynge of Fraunce. This was noble and lyberall. But he was a man that cherysshed suche as loued stryfe and dyscencyon wyth in his lande / and gaue lyghte credence to them ỹ accused other, were yt tyght or wronge. And as testyfyeth Gaufryde and other / he toke by strength his vncle whyche of tyght shulde haue ben kyng, and caste hym in a strong pryson / and after slew tyrannously the .ii. sonnes of his sayd vncle. But he reioysed his reygne but shorte whyle. For as wytnessyth the sayde Gaufryde, when he hadde reygned two yeres he dyed, were yt of the sonde of god or otherwyse / leuynge after him a sonne named Uortiporius, as hath the authoure of the boke named Floure of hystoryes.

Of this Uortiporius speketh nothynge the englyshe cronycle / but telleth of two kynges that shulde reygne nexte after Constantyne both at ones / wherof that one he nameth Adelbryght, and that other Edyll. wherunto none other wryter agreeth except that he nameth them for some of the kynges of the Saxons. For aboute that tyme reygned in Kent or soone after, Ethelbert or Athelbert / whyche myght be taken of some for Adelbryght. And that other whyche he named Edyll, myght be taken for Ella kynge of Southsaxons. But this Ella shulde not by concorde of wryters be lyuynge at this tyme. It myght wyth more conuenyency accorde, that yt shulde be a kynge of Deira or of Northūberlande named Ella, the whyche reygned more aboute this tyme and season.

Of these two kynges, the sayde englyshe cronycle telleth a longe processe / the whych for I fynde none authour of authorytye that wryteth or speketh of the same, I passe yt ouer.

ye shall also furthermore vnderstande, that after this daye the Brytons dayly dyscreasyd of lordshyppe and rule wythin Brytayne, & drewe them towarde Cambry or walys / so that the countre about Chestre was

the chefe of theyr lordshyp wythin Brytayne. For dayly the Sarons landed wyth companyes, and occuppyed ꝑ principyall partes of ꝑ same/ as shortely here after shall appere.

The fyfthe kyngdome of the Sarons.

THE .CIX. CHAPITER.

IN the tyme of the reygne of this fore named Aurelius Conanus / as wyt nessyth Polycronica, Guido, & other: begamme the kyngdome or lordshyp of Brenicia vnder a Saron named Ida/the yere of our lorde .v. hundred and .xlvii/ and the seconde or laste yere of the sayd Conanus. Thys lordshyp was in the north parte of Brytayne/ and grewe in short whyle more & more, so that fynally it was named the kyngdome of Northumberlande. But ye shall vnderstande, that this lordshyp was fyrste deuyded in two kyngdomes/ wherof the fyrste, as aboue is sayde was called Brenicia, and that other Deyra. The merys or markis of this kyngdome of Northũberlande were by Easte and by west the occean see/ by south the ryuer of Humber, and so downwarde towarde the weste by the endys of ꝑ shyres of Notyngham and Derby, vnto the ryuer of Mersse or Mercia / and by north the Scottysshe see, whyche is called forth in Scottysh/ & in Brettysshe the werde.

The southsyde of thys lordshyppe was called Deyra, whyche is nowe called the bysshoprykе of Durham, and the north syde was called Brenicia/ whyche were than departyd or seuered by the ryuer of Tyne. Deyra conteyned the lande from Humber to the ryuer of Tyne / and Brenicia included the countree from Tyne to the Scottysshe see.

In Brenicia regned fyrste as is aboue sayd Ida or Idas/ & in Deyra regned fyrste Ella/ whych lordshyppes began bothe within .tii. yeres. But in processe of tyme bothe in one were named the kyngdome of Northumberlande/whych so contynued somwhyle vnder one kynge, & some whyle vnder two, by the terme of .iii. hundred and .xxi. yeres, as sayth Ranulphe munke of Chester. And after furth contynued ꝑ name vnder Sarons and Danes, tyll the comynge of Edredus brother of Ethelstane & son of Edwarde ꝑ elder. The whiche Edredus in the .ix. or last yere of hys reygne, ioyned thys to hys owne kyngdome. By which reasõ it shulde seme, that thys kyngdome endured vnder that name vpon .iiii. hundred and .ix. yeres.

The fyrste crysten prynce of thys kyngdome was named Edwynus/ that receyued the fayth of saynt Paulyne, as testyfyeth Guydo. In thys lordshyppe also were included these shyres and countrees nowe called yorke, Notyngham shyre or Snothyngham shyre, Derby shyre, ꝑ bysshoprykе of Durham, Copelande, and other.

Amonge the many kynges ꝑ reygned in thys lordshyppe, whych after some wryters were to the nomber of xviii. reygned one accõpted the .viii. kynge by Guydo, named Ethelfridꝰ & sonne of Ethelricus. whych Ethelfridus destroyed mo Brytons than all ꝑ other kynges of Sarõs. This was fader to saint Oswold & Oswi.

He slewe also many of the Brytõs at a batayle that he had agayn them besyde Kaerlegyon or Chester, and two thousande and a hũdred of monkes of the house of Bangor, as it ꝑs testyfyed

testyfyed of Polycronicon in the .x. chappter of hys .v. boke/ the whyche monkes were comen thyder to prayе for the good spede of the Brytons. And ouer thys forsayde nomber of monkes .l. fled / whereby they wyth theyr leder named Brucyuall were sauyd. Of suche a nomber of monkes of one house/ myghte be demyd a wonder. But the sayd Policronica, wyth Guydo, and other wryters/ affermyn that in that house of Bangor were at those dayes for the more party thre tymes .vii, hundred monkes, the whych lyued by the trauayle of theyr handes onely.

The forenamed Oswye, was after Oswolde kynge of thys prouynce/ whych gaue wyth hys doughter Elfleda a nonne .xii. lordshyppes into ỳ chyrche, to buylde wyth .xii. monasteryes/ whereof .vi. of the sayde lordshyppes were in Brenicia, and .vi. in Deyra/ as sayth Guydo. And also Ranulphe in hys .v. boke of Polycronyca and .xvi. chappter affermyth the same.

THE .CX. CHAPITER.

VOrtiporyꝰ sonne of Aurelyꝰ Conanus after the oppynyon before sayd/ was ordeyned kynge of Brytayne in the yere of our lorde .v. hundred and .xlviii. and the .xxxiiii. yere of Clothartius thenne kynge of Fraunce. Of the whych is lytell memory lefte in any cronycler or wryter/ excepte ỳ Guydo testyfyeth hym to be a vyctoryous knyght/ shewyng breefly that he in sondry batayles scomfyted the Saxons / and defendyd hys lande and Brytons from ỳ daunger of them and other that the Saxons alyed them wyth.

In the tyme of the reygne of thys kynge/ a Saxon named Ella the son of Iffus, began to reygne in ỳ south syde of the kyngdome of Northumberlande called Deyra / as before is touchyd in the chappter of the sayde kyngdome.

Then yt foloweth/ whan this Vortipor̃ius hadde ruled the Brytons kuyghtly by the terme of .iiii. yeres/ he dyed, and was put to hys fader/ leuynge none heyre of hys body.

For as myche as all wryters agreen, that the kynges of westsaxon at length subdued all the other kyngdomes/ and made of the hole land of myche Brytayne but one kyngdome or monarchye/ and all other as well of Brytons as of Saxons fayled or lefte of, that all onely excepted: therfore I entende to bryngе in, the name of euerych kyng of westsaxon frō the fyrst Cerdycus or Chyldricus, & ioyne them wyth the kynges of Brytons/ for so long as hereafter ỳ sayd Brytons contynued theyr reygne wythin any parte of Brytayne.

THE .CXI. CHAPITER.

MAlgo a duke of the Brytons and neuewe of Aurelyꝰ Conanus, as sayth the authour of the Floure of hystories/ begā his reigne ouer the Brytons in the yere of oure lorde .v. hundred .lii/ and the .xxxviii. yere of Clothartius then styll kynge of Fraunce/ and also the .xv. yere of Kentricus the sonne of Cerdicus and seconde kyng of westsaxō after sayd: accomptyng .xv. yeres of the reygne of hys fader, as Guydo allowyth. Thys Malgo after ỳ accorde of all wryters that make mencyon/ was ỳ comlyest and mooste personable man of all Brytons than lyuyng, & therewyth endowed with knyghtly manhode. The whyche withstode ỳ Saxons and kepte them of, that they damaged not the lande/ the whyche he then had possessyon of. And as wytnessyth Gaufryde & other/ he by hys manhode subdued ỳ iles of Iseland, Orchades

Orchades or Orkeys, and Norway wyth other.

In the tyme of the reygne of thys Malgo/reygned in the lordshyp or kyngdome of Kent Ethelbertus/the whych as wytnesseth Polycronycō, assembled an hoste of hys knyghtes, and gaue batayle vnto Ceawlmus sonne of Kenricus and then kyng of westsaron/the cause whereof ys not expressyd. But thys batayle was ꝑ fyrste batayle that was foughten bytwene the Saxons, after that they opteyned lande and dwellynge with in Brytayne/whyche was foughten in a place called wylbaldowne. And in the fyghte was slayne.ii. dukes of Ethelbertus/and hym selfe with his people chalyd.

Also yt'ys wytnessyd of the sayde Polycronica, that ꝑ yere folowynge Cutwolfus the brother of Ceawlmꝰ before named / faughte strongely agayn the Brytons at Bedforde/ and berafte them. iiii. cytyes or townes named Liganbroght, Egelsborgth, Belyngton, and Eupsham.

Then to retorne agayn to Malgo kynge of the Brytons / the authour of the Floure of historyes sayth, that not wythstandynge the many vertues, the whyche god had endowed hym wyth/ he lastely forgate god for sakynge all vertue, and gaue hym to sondry vices and synnes, wherof the odible synnes of Sodomy was one/ wherfore fell to hym great ꝓsecucyō of hys enemyes the Saxons, as before sōdelers shewyd & more enlueth

It was not longe after the forenamed batayle done at Bedforde / but that the forsayd Cutwolfus dyed. But yet hys sayd brother Ceawlmꝰ couetouse of worshyppe, mayntayned hys warre agayne the Brytons/ so that after he made a newe voyage agayne them, and made of them an other scomfyture / & toke from them ꝑ famous cytyes of Bathe, of Glouceter, and wurceter / whyche shuide be by ꝑ meanynge of Ranulfe about the yere of the reygne of thys Malgo. xxix.

Of all thys spekyth nothynge the cronycle of England/but he maketh hys ꝓcesse of a kynge named Cortyf. By the whyche as yt shulde seme by the rehersall folowynge that he makyth of Gurmunde / that Caretius ruled the Brytōs nerte after the deth of thys Malgo / as when the tyme cometh more playnly yt shall appere. Then it foloweth aboute the. xxxiii. yere of thys Malgo / Ceawlmus before named gadered hys Saxons, and foughte wyth the Brytons at a place called Fechanlege. where after longe fyght Ceawlmus chalyd the Brytons, & wan of them vyctory. But hys brother called Cutha, was slayne in ꝑ fyght/for whom he made greate sorowe. Thus in his latter dayes Malgo beynge oppressyd & pursued of hys enemyes lastly dyed / when he hadde reygned after moste cōcorde of foryes. xxxv. yeres.

Francia.

THE .CXII. CHAPITER.



Hilperic the. iii. son of Lotharius or Clotharius before named/ begā hys reygne ouer ꝑ parte of Fraūce called Soysons, in the yere of oure lorde god. v. hundred. lxiii/ and the xiii. yere of Malgo then kynge of Brytayne. Thys not beyng content wyth suche as hys fader had hym beset/so soone as the obsequy and enterremēt of his fader was fynysshed, he spedde hym vnto Parys and possessyd hym of hys faders treasoure. wherof his. iii. bretherne beyng warned/

ned/purchasyd to the̅ such fredshyp of the nobles of Fraunce, that they vnwetynge theyr sayd broder hadde entre into Paris/and lykely to haue takyn hym there in, yf he had not the soner escaped.

For thys incouenyence grete discēcyon was lykely to haue growen by twene these.iiii.bretherne/hadde not ben the mediacyon of frendes vpon bothe partyes. The whyche by good & polityke wayes, at length pacyfied all varyaūces amonge them / & concluded for a fynall pease, ỳ eyther of the sayd bretherne shuld hold hym cō tent with such porcyō as was before assygned to the̅ by theyr fader. That is to saye to the eldest brother named Iribert⁹ or after some wryters Chereb⁹is, shulde falle the countrey that is lyenge about Paris called mydle Fraunce/to Guntranus shulde falle the prouynce of Orleaunce/ and to thys Chylpericus / the prouynce of Soysons / and to Sygebertus the yongest brother, shulde belonge the countrey of Wees or of Austracy. whych lordshyp begynneth at Champeyne as affyrmeth the Frenche cronicle, and stretchyth to the lordshyp or prouynce of Lorayne vppon one parte, & to Almayne vppō that other part. After which cōcorde & agremēt thus fynysshed/eyther of ỳ sayd bre thern depted vnto his pper lordshyp

If I shulde here discribe the maners & condycyons of these.iiii.pryn ces/or to expresse ỳ vnlauful lechery of the eldest brother Aribertus, in re fusyng hys laufull wyfe Ingebryda or Ingeberta/or of the rauyshement of wyues & virgyns by hym done/or yet the vnstableneſſe of lyuyng that was also in ỳ seconde brother Guntran⁹, with vertues and vyces of the other: I shuld therof make a longe worke, wherfore to bryng this story to some cōuenyēce, I thus begynne.

Trouth it is that thys Chilpericus or after some Hilpericus/toke to wyfe the doughter of the kynge of Spayne called Athanahild⁹, whose name was Golsanda. The whyche had to hyr handmayden a mayde cal led Fredegunda, the whyche was of passyng beaute, and shappe of body. But to hyr was toyned subtyll wyt and cuyll condycyons / contrary to hyr lady and maystres, which was symple and of vertuous condycyōs.

To the yongest brother named Sigebert was coupled in mariage the syster of the sayde Golsanda named Brunechildis, or after ỳ Frensh cronicle Brunehenste/ a woman of peruerse & wycked cōdicyō as after shall appere. Then it foloweth, Chilperich within shorte tyme that he was thus maryed vnto Golsanda, caste vnlaufull loue vnto hyr woman Fredegūda. By reason wherof fell suche vnkyndnesse bytwene them, ỳ lastly she was foūden in her chamber dede and strangelyd wyth a corde/ whych was done by the hande of hyr housbande, as testyfyeth ỳ frenche boke.

Then secondly he maryed a nother wyfe named Audouera a woman of great byrth: how be it myne authour nor yet ỳ frenche cronycle declarych not her progeny/ wych ỳ which he cōtynued & kepte hyr after hyr honour. But yet he withdrew not hys vnlaufull loue frō ỳ forenamed Fredegūd.

In thys passetyme/cause of warre was moued bytwene Sigebert the ponger brother, and men of the countrey of Sweuy / for the whyche the sayde Sigebert requyred ayde of hys brother Chilperich. At whose request he in all haste assembled hys people and spedde hym towarde hys brother / leuynge hys wyfe greate wyth chylde, in the keppnge of the forsayde Fredegunde. Of the whyche wyfe as testyfyeth the Frenche

boke,

booke, he hadde before receyued .iii. sonnes named Theodobertus, Meroneus, and Clodoueus.

It was not longe after that Chilperiche, as before is sayd, in ayde of his brother was departed / but that his wyfe was delyuered of a doughter. And when thys chylde shulde be confermed of the bysshoppe/ this Fredegunde entendynge to make a deuorce betwene Chilperich & his wife, by her subtyle and false coniectoure counsayled the quene that she shulde for the more honoure conferme her own childe. And the quene trustyng her counsayle/ supposynge her counsayle hadde ben for the beste, confermed her owne chylde.

THE .CXIII. CHAPITER.

In this whyle the kynge wyth his brother occupped in warre agayne ꝑ Suytzers or men of Sweuy/ bare them so knyghtly, that they subdued theyr enymyes, and after returned into theyr countres. wherof when Fredegunde was ware, she in secrete maner mette with the kynge/ & shewyd to hym all the demeanure of his wyfe, but nothyng of her own crafty worckyng. wherewyth ꝑ kyng was greuously dyscontente in shewynge of his outwarde contenaunce/ and sayd, yf that were true, she shuld from hym be deuorcyd / and that she shulde be quene in her stede.

After this the kynge commynge to his paleys/ the quene to the entēt to be the more accepted in his presence, not knowynge of the malicyous worckynge of Fredegūde, brought in her armes the ponge baby, to the whych she was moder bothe naturally and spirytually/ and welcommed ꝑ kyng her lorde in ryght humble maner, salutynge hym wyth wordes of all cōforte. But the kyng beynge warned of her symple demeanure/ & as some authours wryte, glad that he hadde occasyon to fynde mater to her displeasure/ blamed her in greuous maner, and commaunded her out of his presence for that tyme/ & after by coūsayle of spyrytuall men, causyd her from hym to be deuorcyd/ & her wyth her ponge doughter to be put into an house of relygyon, to the whyche he gaue possessyons for the fyndyng of her and of her ponge doughter named Childeynda.

And when Chilperic hadde thus fynyshed this forsayde besynesse/ he shortely after toke to wyfe the forna med Fredegūd, not without grudge of some of hys lordes and other.

It was not longe after this maryage, that stryfe and discencyon fell betwene this Chilpericus and Sigebert hys brother / the whyche grewe for certayne lande that Chilpericus claymed to haue of hys brother afore sayde. Then Chilpericus assembled hys knyghtes and made warre vppon the lande of hys brother Sigebert/ the whyche then was besyed in lyke warre agayne a people called Hunes/ by reason wherof Chilperic hadde the more forsell, and wan by strength the cytye of Reyns.

But yt was not longe after or Sigebert was warned of his brothers vnkyndnesse. wherfore he after hys enymyes were by hym somdele subdued/ went wyth hys armye into the countre of Soysons belongynge to his brother Chilperic / and warred in lykewyse in that lande as hys brother dyd in his/ and at length toke ꝑ cytye of Soysons, and therin the eldest son of Chilperic named Theodobert, and helde hym as his prysoner. Then Chilpericus herynge of the scomfyture of his people and takynge of his sonne, was agayne hys brother more feruently amoued/ and

caste in

caste in his mynde all wayes & meanes howe he myghte reuenge hym vppon hys brother. But yt was in vayne. For his brother at that tyme had such auauntage of hym/ that he well apperceyued, that he had no better meane then a treaty of peace, by meane wherof he shortly after obteyned his sonne out of daunger, wyth other thynges concernynge his profyte/ assurynge to hys sayde brother by solemne othe, that after that daye he shuld neuer were armes, nor yet warrey his brother.

This cõcorde and vnite in due maner fynyshed, & suffycyently by both counsayles stablysshed/ yet Chilpericus beynge alwayes mynded to be reuengyd vpon his brother Sigebert/ sent his yongest sonne named Clodoueus, and caused hym to warre vpon a cytye called Burdeaux, in the prouince of Neustria/ now called Normãdye. But by the manhode of a captayne of Sigebert named Singulphus, the sayd Clodoueus was ouercomen and compelled to voyde the countre, and so fledde to Paris.

For thys happe Chilpericus was fyryd with all malyce/ and in all hast commaunded hys forenamed sonne Theodobert wyth a great armye to inuade the sayd coũtrey of Neustria, or Normandye. The whyche accordynge to hys fathers commaundement spedde him thyder/ and there by hys extorte myghte and power, toke many cytyes and stronge holdes/ not sparynge chyrches, howses of relygyon, as nunnes and other/ and robbed and spoyled the countre in moste cruell wyse.

Lastly this persecucion thus done, a cheuetayne or duke named Gundoaldus of the erldome of Poitowe/ assembled a great power, and wythstode Theodobert/ and fynally slew hym in playne batayll, and a great parte of hys people. wherof herynge Chilpericus gatheryd a great hoste, and yode into the countrey of Champayne/ wastynge and destroyenge the countrey wyth fyre and iron to the vttermoste of hys power, and at length toke the cytye of Reynes, and spoylyd yt wythout mercy.

THE .CXIIII. CHAPITER.

SIgebertus aduertysynge/ and castynge in hys mynde the innaturall dysposcyõ of his brother/ percey-uyng well that he entendyd hys vtter destruccyon: puyded in his beste maner for to wythstande his malyce. And for to bryngе his continued malyce to a fynall ende/ he gatheryd to hym a puysant power/ and after sped hym towarde his sayd brother. wherof Chilpericus beynge aduertysed/ by hys couert meanes sought ways of entreaty and peace, in suche wyse that or the hostes mette, a peace was concluded.

Then these two bretherne thus accordyd/ condescendyd in shorte tyme after to make warre vppon theyr brother Gunthranus then lorde of Orleaunce/ the whyche sygnory at that daye belonged to the countrey or pryncipalyte of Burgoyne. The cause of this warre is not expressyd/ except ỹ they enuyed theyr brother to haue so great lordshyp. But by medyatours on both partes/ after great aray put vayed on all sydes, a concorde and peace was concludyd in the temple of saynt Lowpe at ỹ cytye of Troys in Vyncent.

when thys sayd peace was fynyshed/ the sayd .iii. brethern in syght departyd as frendes eyther of theym from

other. But as peace somtyme contenteth not saudyours/ & specially such as delyte them in pyllage and robbery: ryght so amonge the knightes of Sigebert was spronge a great rumoure/ sayeng that they were not contente and rewardyd for theyr great labour and trauayle accordynge to theyr desert/ and specyally for ỳ fyrst tourney of these.ii. hadde agayne his brother Chilpericus/ thynkynge the peace wyth hym made was nothyng honorable, consyderyng ỳ great doublenesse and vntrouth that in hym was proupd. For the whyche they excytyd Sygebert in all that in theym was/ to breke those boundes of peace, and to make newe warre vpon hym. And in lyke maner some cupll dysposyd persons were more agreable to warre then to peace, vppon the party of Chilpericus, and murmured in lykewise. And for they thought to haue ben better rewarded of Sygebert, then they were of theyr own maister, they therfore lefte hym and yode to ỳ hoste of Sygeberte. By whose encytynge & report, Sygebert was more kyndelyd to sette vppon his brother.

Chilpericus haupnge notycyon of hys brothers purpose/ wyth also the murmoure and departynge of hys knyghtes, and haupnge in the other somme mystruste: he anon wyth his wyfe and chyldren and chefe of hys treasoure, went vnto ỳ cyty of Tournay/ entendyng to kepe that for theyr and hys sauegarde. But when Sygebert knew therof, he was nothyng in the pursuynge of hym foude slow/ but foloweth strepght after, and closyd hym wythin the sayde cytye with a stronge syege / where Chilpericus was in a maner dyspayred of ỳ welfare of hym & hys Fredegunde. But she that was replenyshed of all inquyte, called to her two wycked persones / and promysed vnto theym great gyftes, yf they wolde by benym or otherwyse slee her brother Sigebert. The whyche two felowes dysceyued wyth the fayre speche and great gyftes of the sayde Fredegunda, toke vppon theym that vnlefull charge / and by theyr subtell & false imagynacyon, brought theyr cursed purpose to an ende / but to theyr owne confusyon. For after they had wounded the kynge Sygebert to deth, and wolde then haue escappd/ the kynges knyghtes espyeng theyr treason, fell soone vppon them, and all to hewed them. And when ỳ deth of the kynge was knowen / a great noyse and crye was areryd in the hoste. By meane wherof the kynges deth was blowen in to the cytye, and after to the eeres of Chilpericus/ wherof he was not a lytell ameruayled, nor wolde to yt geue ferme credence, tyll he was enfourmed of hys wyfe Fredegunde of all hyr subtyle worckynge.

It was not longe after or the knyghtes or some of the captaynes of the hoste of Sygebert presentyd thē vnto Chylpericus, besegynge hym of hys grace and pardon/ the whych he gladly accepted. And when he hadde sette hys charges in order/ he then commaunded prouysyon to be made for the berynge of hys sayd brother wythin the monasterye of sayncte Medarde of Soysons.

And when all that besynesse after a kyngely maner were fynyshed and endyd/ he then exylyd Brunechyldys and Childebert, the wyfe and sonne of hys brother Sygebert, vnto the cytye of Roane/ takynge from theym great treasour that they were possessyd of. But shortly after the sonne of Sygebert by helpe of Gundebolde or Gundealde duke of Poytowe here before named / was delyuerd from the daunger of the sayde Chil-

Chilperycus, and sent into his owne lordeshyppe of Austracye, whych his father Sygebert was lorde of.

In thys passetyme he hadde sent hys sonne Meroncus into a cōtrey called Buturynges, to appeace certayne rebellyons there areysyd. But when he hard of the deth of his vncle Sygebert / and of the beynge of hys wyfe Brunechyelde at the cytye of Roane / he sette a parte all the charge of his father, and sped hym strepght thyder, keppynge companye wyth her. In whome he toke suche consolacoin and pleasure/that lastely he maryed her, and kepte her as hys wyfe. And when hys father was therof warned/ he feryd leste by the counsayle of hys sayde wyfe, he wolde arryse agayne hym / wherfore he in all haste assembled hys people, and spedde hym towarde Roane.

when tydynges came to Meroneus of the commynge of hys father wyth so great araye/ and he as then vnpurueyed of strength of knightes to resyste hys father / for hys moste suertye fled wyth hys vnlefull wyfe to the temple or chyrche of saynte Martyne, takynge the pryuylege therof for theyr defence. And when Chilpericus hadde temptyd by many sondry meanes to haue them out of the sayde pryuylege, and myghte not wythout brekynge of the same: he to brynge aboute hys cautelouse purpose, made to theym assuryd promyse, that yf they wyllfully wolde renounce the sayde place, and putte theym in hys grace / he wolde vtterlye pardon theyr trespace, and suffer theym from that tyme for to contynue theyr lyfe to gether as man and wyfe. Vppon whyche promyse the sayd Meroneꝰ wyth his wyfe renoūced the sayde pryuylege, and putte theym hole in the kynges mercy/ the whyche them receyuyd wyth all contenaunce of loue and fauoure, and theym feryd and cherysshyd louyngly, by the space of two dayes onely. But the thyrde daye the feaste was fynyshed/ for then he sent his sonne vnto Parys vnder sure guydes/and there caused hym to be professyd in a house of relygyon. But by the meanes of hys vncle Gunthranus he was after taken thens/ and so restoryd to hys former knyghthode.

For the whych his father hym newly pursued and cōstrayned hym to take for hys sauegarde ẏ chyrche of sayne Martyne in Turon.

And when he was warned that his father perforce wold take hym thens/ he then fledde vnto a cytye of Champayne accompanyed wyth. vi. seruauntes onely / where he was in so great fere to be taken and in suche despayre to obteyne grace of hys father, that he caused one of the sayde vi. persones to slee hym wyth hys sworde / & the forsayd Brunechyeldis hys wyfe put in sure keppynge.

THE .CXV. CHAPITER.

Chilpericꝰ then beynge asserteyned of the deth of hys sonne Meroncus, & the sure kepping of Brunechieldis, he thoughte hym selfe somdele assuryd/ for ẏ mystruste ẏ he had in them many tymes inquieted hym. But yet he was not i quiete or reste. For shortly after ẏ peple of Turon rebellyd agayne him. Agayn whom he sent his sonne Clodoueus / & a noble man of his conete named Desiderꝰ, ẏ which he sent as a gyde & a counsayloure of his sayd son. And vpon the party of his enymyes was a captayne of the kynge Gunthranus / forsomych as the said Gunthranus claymed parte

of those landes about Turon. This captayne named Nomelcus herynge of the cõmynge of the forsayd hoste, wyth a chosen cõpany made tawarde them / and gaue vnto Clodoueus a great sharpe fyght/and not without great losse of his men wanne of hym the felde, and compellyd hym to forsake that countre.

Thus Chilperyche was wrapped in warre and troubles of the worlde, sometyme wyth tyght, & some whyle wyth wronge / so that he some tyme wanne worshyppe and other whyle he loste. wherof to tell all the cyrcumstaunce I thynke yt shulde be tedyouse bothe to the reders/ and also to ỳ herers. wherfore I passe ouer, in abrydgynge and shortynge somedele of this storye.

Then foloweth within ỳ storye/ after Chylpericus had by intycemẽt of Fredegunde/wrongfully tormentyd the archebyshoppe of Roan named Prreteste, & hym after the sufferaunce of many vylanyes eryled (for the whych and other god sent vnto hym some correccyon, in takynge awaye by sodeyne deth the chyldern that he had by Fredegunde) he then began to knowe god, and toke great repentaunce/ in promysynge to god amendement of his lyfe. And to thentent that he might haue the more prayers of the comyn people to stand in state of grace: he fyrst releasyd a greuous tribute or imposicyon that he hadde lately sette vpon all vynes thorough his regyon. And that done he reedyfyed olde chyrches and some he made newe, and endowed them with great possessyons. And ouer thys he releuyd greatly ỳ poore people, by enlargynge of his lyberall almes/and became very humble and meke, where before tyme he was tyght sterne and cruell. But lyke as ofte it happeneth that hote loue is soone colde/so thys sodayne deuocyon was soone aswaged. For lyke as hys troubles began to aswage, and his prosperyte to encrease: tyght so hys olde cõdycyons beganne in hym to reuyue and quycken/so that at length he retourned to hys olde accustomed vyces.

In this tyme a people called Longobardes, and now Italyans/warred sore vppon the landes of the empyre. wherfore Mauricius then beynge emperour of Constantyne the noble/ for so mych as he tought that the frenche kynges myght was lesse coste and payne to subdue them, then he myght beyng so farre from them/ he therfore sent to hym a great sũme of golde/ wyth letters of recommendacyon, exortyng hym in the defence of the chyrche of Rome, to assemble hys people and to withstande ỳ sayd Longobardes/ and not to sease ther of tyll he hadde expellyd theym from the landes of the empyre.

whyche somme of golde he goodly receyuyd / promysynge to the bryngers therof, that he wyth all dylygence shulde execute the vttermoste of his power to accomplyshe the requeste of the emperoure. And accordynge to a parcell of his sayde promyse/ he assembled a great people, and made towarde the sayde Longobardes. Of whom the sayde Longobardes ferynge ỳ great myght, made meane of entreaty/ offrynge to hym great summes of money. By reason wherof he lefte theym in reste, and so retourned into Fraunce. when Mauricius had vnderstandyng ỳ the fore sayde enymyes remayned styll in the forsayde landes, and contynued in theyr malice: he sent agayne to Chilpericus/requyryng hym other to performe his promyse or ellys to restore hys money, whych he had take for ỳ performaunce of the same. But all was in vayne/ for he wolde neyther

execute

execute that one nor that other. But at lēgth as affermeth myne authour, he was by goddes ordynaunce compelled for to restore the sayde money or a great parte therof, by meane of his suster wyth her chylde that was as a prysoner to the sayde emperour, whyche suster was before tyme maryed vnto the kynge of Spayne.

THE .CXVI. CHAPITER.

CHilpericus thus encreasynge in vyce and dyshonoure, lasse ly repugned agayne god / so that he fell into that detestable heresye of the Arianes / and commaūded certayne artycles of the same touchyng the de uysyon of the trynyte to be prechyd thorough hys regyon. But the holy bysshoppe of Towres withstode that precepte, and blamed hym greuously for that dede/ all be yt the sayd bysshop named Gregory wyth great assystence of the other bysshoppes of Fraunce, hadde great laboure to remoue hym from the sayde opynyon.

This with many other crymes passed by Chilpericus / Fredegunde, whyche euer encreasyd in peruerse & malycyouse purpose, soughte many vnlefull meanes howe she myghte bryngе to conclusyon the thyrd sonne of her husbonde / knowynge well ỹ whyle he leuyd, her chyldern shulde neuer enheryte the crowne of Fraunce. This purpose to bryngе about many and dyuerse wayes she attemted, whyche were longe to reherse. But fynally she caused hym wrongfully to be accusyd, & by meane therof to be caste in prysyon. where he so beynge, she hyred a felon to slē hym/ and after shewyd to her husbande ỹ the sayde Clodoueus hadde slayne hym selfe. In profe wherof she hadde appoynted the forsayde murderer to leue a sworde stickyng in hym, as thoughe he hadde wylfully slayne hym selfe vppon the same sworde. whyche when the kynge sawe/ he demed hym gylty of such offense as before was putte vppon hym.

ye haue harde before of the sonne of Sygeberte named Childebert, that was delyuered from the handes of Chilpericus his vncle by the meanes of Gundoald duke or erle of Pottowe / the whyche in this tyme was growen to mannes statureand ruled at this daye his enherytaunce of Austracye, not wythout great stryfe had betweene hym and hys sayde vncle, whych were to long to wryte ỹ cyrcūstaunce therof. wherof at this daye somdele was vndyscussyd / all be yt they at thys daye dyd eyther other as frendes.

About this tyme the other vncle of Childebert called Gūthrā / sought occasyon agayne hym, for cause of a bysshop named Theodor, a bysshop of Marsill or Marsyle/ ỹ which was put from his see by Gūthranus, and receyuyd of Childebert, and by hym agayne restoryd to the sayde see of Marsyle. For the whych Gunthrane was sore amoued / and entendyd to make warre vpon hym. But by mediatours it was somdeale appeasyd and sette in quyete / vppon certeyne condycyous to be obserued and also performed vpon the party of Gunthranus/ the whyche after were not vppon his syde kept nor performed. wherfore after requeste made for reformacyon of all such poyntes/ and answere agayne receyuyd of no reformacyon : Childebert to haue hys partye the strenger/ and also for that that he well knewe, that hys vncle Chilpericus bare towarde the sayde Gunthranus not very fraternall loue / he therfore sente vnto hym a noble man of hys courte named Gyllon, requiryng hym of ayde

agayne hys vncle/ the whych by ma ny seasons had as well broken pro= myse agayne hym, as nowe he hadde agayne Childebert. Of this Chilpe riche beynge ryght fayne, assentyd to the desyre of Gyllon/ and after in all haste preparyd theyr hostes / and by two sondry companyes inuadyd the countres of Orleaunce, wherof Gun thranus was kynge or ruler. But ꝑ inhabytauntes of that prouynce de= fendyd theym in so stronge maner/ ꝑ theyr enymyes hadde of theym lytell auauntage. In whyche meane sea= son Gunthran⁹ assembled a myghty hoste, and spedde hym towarde his enymyes, at a place called Medio= lan̄, he supprysed a parte of hys sayd enymies/ and after drewe nere to the great nomber of bothe hostes, where was made preparacyon on bothe sy= des to haue foughten. But as befo're tyme ye haue often harde, that by dis crete & wyse men the fyght was put by, and meanes of accorde was foun den: so nowe at this tyme by labour of good and wise prelates and other/ these kynnesmen were sette in vnyte, and departed without great shedyng of cristen bloode.

In this passetyme/ deth whych spa eyth no creature, berafte Chilperic⁹ a sonne borne of Fredegũde and na= med Theodorus/ for the whyche the kynge and also the quene toke great heuynesse. But as she ꝑ was prõpte & redy to all euyll/ cast in her mynde that hys childe was slayne by poy= son, or by some other purposed ma= lyce. For the whyche lastely was ac= cusyd a baylyfe or lefe officer called Monuole, with diuers wytches and sorceresses, that shuld imagyne this childes deth. The whych she payned and tormẽtyd in such wyse/ that last ly the sayde wytches confessed, that they hadde destroyed the childe, and not wythoute consente of the sayde Monuole. wherfore she after caused the sayde sorceresses to dye by cruell deth, as by fyre and otherwyse/ and the sayde baylyffe to be so tourmen= tyd that he dyed soone after.

The frenche cronycle sayth, that by the meane of the takynge away of the lyfe of the kynges childe/ a child of the sayde Monuole was restorid to helth, whych before was in great leoperdye/ whyche is for folys to be= leue. Thys sorow and heuenesse of Chilpericus and Fredegunde hys wyfe/ was somdele aswaged by the byrthe of a son shortly after borne of ꝑ sayd Fredegunde/ whych the kyng lette call Lotharius, or Clotharius. For ioye wherof the kyng lette open the prysones / and suffred the pryso= ners to goo at theyr lyberte/ and spe= cyally suche as concerned causes tou chynge hym selfe for dette or other= wyse, with other thynges cõcernyng hys honoure.

But lyke as dame Fortune is ac= customed to medle her ioyes of thys world wyth some bytternesse: so dyd she now with Chilperic⁹. For where he was nowe in great tranquillyte and reste/ and thought to haue ladde the residue of his lyfe in pleasure: so deynly word was brought vnto hym that hys brother Gunthranus, and hys neuewe Childebert/ was allyed and fermely accorded to make warre vppon hym / for the whych they had assemblyd a great army. wherfore he in all haste commaunded all his tres sour and chyefe iewellys to be had to the cytye of Cambria/ where he wyth his wyfe and frendes entended to cõ tynue the residue of his lyfe. And ꝑ done spedde hym thyder in all haste/ and fortyfyed the sayde cytye in such wyse, that he feryd lytle or nothynge hys enymyes/ where he so kepte hym wythin the sayde cytye a certayne of tyme. And whẽ he sawe nor hard not

of the

of the commynge of his sayd broder nor ncuewe/ he then walkyd more at large/and sporyd hym in haukynge and chase of the wylde bestes, as wol ues and other/whych at those dayes was greatly vsyd of the kynges of Fraunce, and yet is contynued.

Uppon a day as he was purposyd towarde this dysporte, and all thyng redy preparyd for the same / so that the quene thought verely he had be gone oute of the paleys / for what happe I can not tell, the quene yode into her chãber, and there rested her vppon her bedde. where she so lyeng the kynge passyd by / & wyth a lytle wande, whych he bare in his hande, in maner of game strake the quene with yt vppon the backe. The quene supposynge the kynge had ben gone to the felde, and not lokyng vp sayd, Laundrye why dareste thou thus stryke me. This Laundrye was a great man in the kynges courte/and hadde ben peramoure to the quene longe tyme. But the kynge herynge these wordes, made semblaunt as he hadde not herde them, and so passyd on hys waye.

THE .CXVII. CHAPITER.

HRedegunda appercepynge & after seynge yt was the kyng, to whome she hadde thus sayde/sore was abasshed, and in great fere and agony. And after she had by a longe season conected in her mynde what remedy she myght fynde for this mis happe: she lastely dyuelyshely determyned to sle her sayd husbande and lorde. And this to brynge about she sent in all haste for the sayde Laundrye, and shewed to hym in order all the circumstaunce of the foresayde mater. wherafter he was stryke with suche a fere/that his wytte and counsayle fayled hym to deuyse in such a case any remedy. wherfore the quene as she that was fully determyned to execute her detestable & cursyd purpose/ sayde to hym boldely: Laundry thou seest well ỹ this case is brought to so strayte a poynt, that other thou muste thynke to destroy my lord and husbande, or ellys thou and I muste both be shamefully confounded. Of whyche thou well knowest our owne is moste to be regarded/therfore dyspose the to do after my counsayll. Thou knowest well that the kynge is accustomed to come late from hys dysporte. wherfore prouyde to the a certayne, that thou well trustyst/and in the euenynge when he retourneth aspye thy tyme and fall vppon hym sodeynly, and so rydde hym. And after make an out crye, & sende to serch about as thou woldest take the homicydes/ & cause some of thyne own cõpanye to flee frõ the, as though thou shuldest thẽ pursue. Laundry heryng this cursyd coũsayll, alowed it well & therunto assentyd / and incontynently went aboute the perfourmaunce of the same. And when he hadde purueyde his accessaryes / he towarde nyght assemblyd thẽ, gyuynge to thẽ informacyon how they in ỹ mischyef shuld behaue them in that thyng, ta kynge of them assuryd othes, for keyng of his coũsayle. The kyng not myldempynge any thynge of thys conspyred treason/ toke his delectacyon and pleasoure in folowynge of hys game, so that he loste myche of hys company / and towarde nyght as he before tyme was accustomed, wyth fewe accõpanyed drewe homewarde. wherof Laundry beyng warned/met the kynge salutynge hym and sayng that he was comen wyth hys company to cõdute hym home, for so mych as he douted how he was garnyshed of his meyneyall seruaũtes or other.

what shuld I lenger make delaye

or farther reharsall in thys matyer, or to tell the cyrcumstaunce of thys purposyd treason. But fynally when the kynge was nere hys paleys / or as rehersyth the Frenche cronycle wythin the courte of hys paleys / as he lyght from hys horse he was sodeynly wounded to the herte, that he strayght fell to the erth dede.

After whyche murder thus commytted: a greate cry was areryd, the kynge ys slayne/so ꝑ thys Laundry made in great haste to be called certeyne persons to attende vppon ꝑ corps, whyle he wyth other pursued suche as were dempte gylty of thys offence. But lastly he retourned, and sayd that thys dede was done by the knyghtes of Chyldebert / the whych by the derkenes of the nyght were escapyd.

To shewe here the vayne and dissymuled sorowe ꝑ Fredegund made for the kynge, it were but lettyng of tyme. For euery wyse man knoweth well, that all suche as ben of that disposycyon, can fayne ryghte well in suche semblable casys. But to my purpose/ when the kynge was thus slayne, and at that tyme nother the quene nor yet Laundry suspectyd / prouysyon was made for enterryng of ꝑ corps. The whyche was shortly after shypped at the next ryuer / and so conuayed vnto saynt Germayns de Pree before spoken of / and there wyth greate solempnyty buryed, when he hadde regned, as before is sayde xxiii. yeres / leuynge after hym a son before mynded called Clotharius or Lotharius.

Thus as affermyth myn authour mayster Robert Gagwyne endyd Chylperych myserably his lyfe/ whiche in pryde and mysery before tyme it cõtynued. And where in his lyfe he cherysshed no frende / at hys ende he fande few or no frendes. Thys gaue the patrymony of ꝑ chyrche to lewde & symple clerkys, and was an enmye to all holy relygyous places/ and fauored more suche as had lately bene conuerted to the fayth, than he dyd them that had cõtynued by holy lyfe a longe season therin / & gaue vnto such persons the rule of Crystes chyrche. Amonge the whyche, one there was of perfyght lyuyng and byshop of Parys / that garnysshed hys tõbe with this epytaphy as after in meter foloweth.

Ecclesiæ speculum, patriæ vigor, ara reorum,
Et pater & medicus, pastor, amorq; gregis,
Germanus virtute, fide corde ore beatus:
Carne tenet tumulum, mentis honore polum.
Vir cui dura nihil nocuerunt fata sepulchri.
Vnit enim, nam mors quam tulit ipsa timet.
Creuit ad hoc pocius, tutius post funera: nam qui
Fictile vas fuerat, gemma superba micat.
Huius opẽ ac meritũ mutis data verba loquũtur,
Redditus & cæcis, prædicat ore dies
Nunc vir apostolicus, sapiens de carne trophæum.
Iure triumphale considet arce throni.

The whych verses in our mother tunge, maye thus be expounded in meters as foloweth.

Myrrour to the chyrche, and of the countrey the strength.
Compassyon of gylty, to them shewynge mercy,
A fader and a leche, an herde and louer at length
Of hys people/ colyn to vertue and of allye
In fayth and in herte, and eke in mouth holy,
Of whom the flesshe now holdyth thys sepulture.
But the spyryte is in heuen euer to endure.

To thys nothynge noyed, nor faute of sepulture.
He lyueth southly/for deth whyche he not drede/
Hath hym hense tane. But yet he hoped sure/
Thys ryght wyse man, though sountyme he were ladde.
As a bryttell vessell, whych wyth the erth was cladde
And somewhyle selle, yet ofte he rose anone/
wherfore he now shyneth as doth an Orient stone.

By helpe and meryte now hath the dumbe hys speche
Of thys blessyd man, and to the blynde hys syghte
Restoryd of god/as thys daye doth vs teche.
And he of the flesshe hath gotten now the byght
And vpperhande wyth a tryumphant myght
By vertue wherof he lyke a conquerour.
Of the hygh heuyn, nowe sytteth in the towre.

Thus maye ye well apperceyue and knowe/that as erthly men fauoure, so woll they wryte/as nowe shewyth by thys superscrypcyō. But to god all thyng is manyfestyd and knowen/and nothynge to hym hyd, whatsoeuer erthly man wryteth/or demyth/to whom all the pryuyties I rempyte.

Anglia.

THE. CXVIII. CHAPITER.



Arcticus or Lacticus after ỳ wyntynge of Guydo, of whom nother ỳ progeny nor yet other addicyon of honour is of wryters of hym remēbred/began to rule the Bryttons, the yere of our lord. v. hundred. iiii. score and. vi. as the sayde authour recordyth/and ỳ. xxii. yere of Chylperyche than kynge of Fraunce/and also the xx. yere of Crawlmus then kynge of westsarons. Thys as wytnessyth all wryters was a louer of cyuyle batayle & was worst of all men/ so ỳ he was odible to god and his subiectes, in suche wyse that they excyted the Saxons to warre vpon hym, as testyfyeth Guydo/& chasyd hym from cyte to cyte, & frō towne to towne, tyll they had berafte hym the moste parte of suche lande as hys predecessour Malgo had holde before hym.

But Polycronycō, Gaufryde and other, adde more there vnto/ & sayen ỳ for as mych as the Saxons knew of the discensyon betwene Carcticus and hys Brytons/they in all haste sent into Irelande for the kynge called Gurmundus Africanꝰ/ ỳ which of some wryters are named two persons, as Gurmūdus and Africanꝰ. But by the rehersall that Ranulfe monke of Chester maketh in ỳ. xxiii. chappter of hys fyrste boke of Polycronycō, it shulde seme, that he shuld be named Gurmundus/the whyche by hys meanynge shulde warre in Bryttayne and Fraunce, whyle hys brother Turgecius regned as kyng in Irelande, as in the sayd chappter is more at lengthe declared. whyche sayd Gurmundus with the strength of ỳ Saxons, warred so sore agayne the Brytōs/that lastly the sayd Carcticus was fayne to take the towne of Kaersegent now called Sichester/& therein besegyd hym wyth hys Brytons by a certeyne of tyme/where by dayly skyrmysshes and assautes he

loste

loste myche of hys people.

when Careticus had a ſeaſon aſſayed and proued the ſtrength of his enemyes/and ſawe that they encreaſyd, and hys knyghtes laſſed & mynyſſhed: he ſodenly lefte that towne/ and with a certeyne of Brytons toke ouer Seuarne water, and ſo into walys then callyd Cãbria. whych ſhuld be after moſte accorde of writers, þ iii. yere of þ reygne of this Caretic⁹.

Ibout thys tyme as meaneth Antoninus/the great Gregory then beynge a monke and after pope, ſawe at Rome chyldryn of Anglis or Saxons to ſell at Rome. And whē he had aryd of them what cõtrey they were of, and it was anſwered to hym that they were named Anglis/ he ſayde þ Alleluya ſhulde be ſonge in that cõtree, that ſo fayre chylderne were borne in. Alleluya before in the. iiii. ſcore and. viii. chapytet rcherſyd/ys there take after þ erpoſycyõ of ſaynt Auſtayne, for ayde and helpe of god. But here it is ment for louynge and prayſynge of god/as to hym þ laude and thankes ſhulde be gyuen vnto, that ſendyth to men ſo fayre frewte. wherfore as after ſhalbe ſhewyd the ſayd Gregory beynge Pope/ ſent þ holy man Auſtayne wyth other, for to preache to the ſayde Anglis the fayth of Cryſte.

Then to retourne to Careticus, whom the Engliſh cronycle nameth Cortike. Trouth it is, that after he wyth his Brytons were dryuen into Cambria or walis: yet he lefte not contynually to make reyſes and aſſautes vppon the Saxons nexte to hym adioynaunte.

In thys tyme or ſoone after/ruled Ethelfridus the north Saxons. For as wytneſſeth the forſayde authour Gydo/he began the reygne of Deira and Brenicia, in the yere of oure lorde. b. C. lxxx. & xiii. This is Ethelfredus ſon of Ethelricus, þ purſued ſo ſore the Brytons, & ſlewe ſo great a nomber of þ monkes of the towne of Bangor, as is before reherſyd in the. C. and. ix. chappter of this worke The whyche dayly warred vpon the Brytons, & the Brytons vpon hym/ ſo þ he deſtroyed or ſubuerted myche of Cryſtes fayth wyth the helpe of þ forſayd Gurmunde thorough Loegria or myddle England/in ſo myche that the byſſhoppes of London and yorke wyth other myniſters of the chyrche, wyth ſuch goodes & relykes as they myght cary fled into dyuerſe countrees/ſo that they⁹ chyrchdores were ſhytte after them, or elys occupyed in worſhip of they⁹ fals goddes

Thus the fayth that had endured in Brytayne from the tyme of Lucy⁹ fyrſt crpſten kynge in Brytayne tyll thys daye, nere vppon the ſeaſon of iiii. C. yeres and odde/was well nere extynct thorough all the lande.

And when þ forenamed Gurmũde had fynyſſhed hys tyrannye wythin the land of Brytayne/he then ſayled into Fraunce, where he was after ſlayne, as wytneſſyth Polycronycõ/ all be it þ french cronycle ſpeketh nothyng of any ſuch man duryng thys perſecucyon, as wytneſſyth Gydo.

The chyrche or monaſtery before buylded in Uerolamy nowe called ſaynte Albanes, was by the ſayde myſcreauntes beten downe/ whyche there was buylded of the Brytõs in the honoure of þ holy prothomartyr ſaynt Albõ, with diuerſe many other the whyche are loſte out of memory.

Duryng alſo this trouble betwene the Saxons & Brytõs/ the lordſhyp or kyngdome of Eeſt Saxon began to take place as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

THE. CXIX. CHAPITER.

IN thys tyme alſo after the accorde of moſte writers, as wytneſſyth Polycronyca & other, Ethelbertus

bert⁹ reygned in Kent/ & by knyghthode and greate myghte bare hym/ and behaued hym so victoryously, that he enlarged hys kyngdome to the boundys of Humbyr. In which tyme Gregory, whyche for hys notable dedes was surnamed great/ was made pope of Rome. The whych as before is touchyd in the precedynge chappter/ hauynge compassyon that the cõtre from whens so fayre chyldrne came as he before had seyne, shulde be inhabyte wyth Pagans or people of mysbyleue/ sent into Bretayne that holy man Austayne wyth other of hys bretherne, to preche to the Anglis the fayth of Cryste. But as wytnessyth Antoninus in the. iii. chappter & .xii. tytle of hys forsayde worke, when Austayn was .iii. dayes iourney gone and passed/ suche a sodeyne fere entryd in hym and hys felowshyppe, that they turned agayne. Then Gregory cõforted the sayd cõpany/ and sent them wyth letters to the bysshop Arelatensis / wyllynge hym to helpe and ayde Austayne in all that in hym nedyd. The tenoure of whyche letters and other sent to Ethelbert kynge of Kent wyth theyr answeres/ are wrytē with other questyons in the regester of Gregory, & in the bokes of Beda and other.

Austayne thus comforted/ sped his iourney, and landed in the Est syde of Kent in the ile of Thanet wyth .xl. felowes/ wherof some were interpretours or such as cowde speke all langages. Nere vnto the place before named where holy Austayne landed stode at those dayes the manoyr or palayes of the sayd kyng Ethelbert/ wherof at thys daye appere sonme of the ruynous walles, & is called of the inhabytaunces of that ile Rychbourgh. It is apparent betwene the ile & the towne of Sandwych, vpon a myle & a halfe from the sayd towne Estwarde from Caunterbury. The whē Austayne was landed, he sent the sayde interpretours vnto Ethelberte/ sayenge ỹ they were sent from Rome for the hele and saluacyon of the kynge & hys realme. The kynge beforetyme had herde of the fayth of Cryst/ for he hadde to wyfe as sayth Polycronycon a frenche woman that was cristened/ and had receyued hyr vppon condycyon that he shuld suffer hyr to lyue after hyr lawe.

Then after a certeyne tyme ỹ kyng spoke with Austayne/ but that was without ỹ house after the maner of hys lawe. Agayn his comyng he arreryd a baner of ỹ crucifyx, & lange ỹ lateny, & preachyd to hym the worde of god. Then ỹ kyng sayd it is fayre that ye promyse. But for it is to me vncowth & new/ I may not so soone assent to you. But for ye be comen so farre for my sake/ ye shalbe fayre entreatyd, and haue all thynge ỹ is to you necessary / & we graunte to you leue to tarne of our people whom ye maye. when they had receyued thys cõfort of the kynge / they went wyth processyõ to the cytye of Dorobernia or Caũterbury, syngynge Alleluya/ where they lad theyr lyues as holy faders dyd in the begynnynge of the chyrch/ as in fastyng, prayeng, watchyng, & preachynge of the worde of helth/ & lange masses/ and crystened such as they cõuertyd in ỹ Est syde of the cytie in the old chyrch of saynt Martyne, vnto the tyme ỹ the kyng was cõuertyd. At length when the kyng had well consyderyd the cõuersacyõ & holy lyfe of Austayn and his felowes, he harde them more gladly/ and lastly by theyr good exortacyõs and gostly loue, was by them cõuertyd & crystened/ in ỹ yere of our lorde after moste accorde of wryters .v. C. lxxx. & vi/ and the .xxvi. yere of hys reygne, as affermeth Polycronicon.

Then

Then he gaue to Auſtayne a place for his biſhoppes ſee at Criſtes chyrche in Dorobernia/and buylded the abbey of ſaynte Peter and Paule in the eeſt ſyde of the ſayde cytye/where after Auſtayne and all the kynges of Kent were buryed/ and that place is nowe called ſaynte Auguſtyne.

In thys whyle Auguſtyne ſaylyd into Fraunce to the byſhoppe Arelatenſ̄/and was of hym ſacryd archebyſhoppe.

when holy Gregory was certyfyed of the good expedycyon of Auguſtyne/he ſent then to him mo helpers as Melyt⁹, Juſt⁹, & Paulinus, with bokes and relykes of holy ſayntes/ and anſweres to ſaynte Auguſtynes queſtyons/ that was that all ſuche goodes as fell to the chyrche ſhulde be deuyded in foure ptes / that is to meane the fyrſte ſhuld go to the houſ holde of the byſhoppes houſe and charge of the ſame/the ſeconde to the clergy/ the thyrde to the amendemēt of chyrches / the fourth to the relyfe of the poore people and other dedys of mercye.

when Auſtayne hadde baptyzed a great part of the kyngdome of Kent/ he after made two archebyſhoppes by the cōmaundement of ſaynte Gregorye,as wytneſſyth Polycronicon: that one at London, and that other at yorke/ and by the helpe of Ethelbert, he aſſembled and gatheryd together the byſhoppes and doctoures of Bryttayne that were beſore dyſperkled. The place of aſſemble was calyd longe after Auſteyns oke, whych is expowned to be Auſteyns ſtrēgth, and is in the marche of wykeres and of the weſtſarons.

In thys place he charged the ſayd byſhoppes, ꝑ they ſhulde wyth hym preache the worde of god to the Angiys/ and alſo that they ſhuld amōg them ſelfe amende certayne errours then vſyd in the chyrche, and ſpecyally for keppnge of theyr Eſter tyde. where agayne the byſhoppes of Bryttayne helde oppynyon, tyll Auſtayne by hys prayers ſhewyd there a myracle by a blynde Angle or Saron. After the whyche myracle ſhewed/ ꝑ ſayd byſhoppes applyed them to the wyll of Auſtayne in that cauſe. But for all this there was of theym that ſayd, that they myghte not leue the cuſtome, whych they ſo longe hadde continued, wythout aſſent of all ſuch as hadde vſyd the ſame. Then he gatheryd a ſynode/ to the whyche came ſeuen byſhoppes of Brytons, wyth the wyſeſt mē of that famouſe abbey of Bangor. But fyrſte they toke coū ſayle of an holy man and heremyte/ whether they ſhulde be obedyent to Auſtayne or not. The heremyte ſayd yf ye fynde hym humble or meke, as to Cryſtes diſcyple belonged/ ꝑ then they ſhulde aſſent to hym. whych mekeneſſe they ſhulde perceyue in hym, yf he at theyr commynge into the ſynode or councell, aroſe agayne them. when the ſayde byſhoppes entred ꝑ ſayde ſynode/ Auſtayne ſate ſtyll in the chayre and remouyd not. wherfore they were wroth and diſdaynyd hym, and wolde not obey to hys requeſtes. Then he ſayd to them/ ſyns ye woll not aſſente to my heſtes generally / aſſent ye to me ſpecyally in thre thynges.

The fyrſte is, ꝑ ye kepe Eſter daye in due fourme and tyme as yt is ordeynyd.

The ſeconde, that ye geue cryſtendome to the chyldern in the maner ꝑ is vſed in the chyrche of Rome.

And the thyrde is, that ye preache vnto the Anglys the word of god, as a fore tymes I haue exhorted you. And all the other deale I ſhall ſuffer you to amende and reforme wythin your ſelfe/but they wold not therof. Then

of. Then sayntt Augustyne sayde vnto them, and warned them by maner of inspyracyon / that syns they wold not receyue peace of theyr bretherne, they shulde of other receyue warre & wrecche / the whyche was after put in experyence by Ethelfrydus kynge of Northumberlande.

Longe yt were to tell the circumstaūce of the lyfe of this blessyd man, wherfore I passe ouer. Lastly whē he hadde in one daye crystyned .x. thousande of Saxons or Angles, in the weste ryuer that is called Swale besyde yorke, and knewe that he shuld shortely dye after / he ordeyned a successour named Laurence whyle he lyued / for the state of holy chyrche in Bryteyn was as yet but rude & boystous. But in ỳ doynge he folowed the ensample of Peter that was fyrst pope / whyche made Clement by his lyfe helper and successour. Also this Augustyne made Mellitus bysshop of London and of Estsaxōs / whych after moste wryters were then newly entred the lande. The ryuer of Thames departed theym and Kent / and after dyed and was buryed in ỳ monastery before rehersed, wythoute the wallys of Dorobernia or Cauterburye.

THE .CXX. CHAPITER.

Ethelbertus then confermyd in the fayth / among other cost ly dedys beganne the foundacyon of Paulys chyrche wythin the cyte of London / and ordeyned yt for the bysshoppes see of London. For the archebysshoppes see that before tyme was at London / was by Augustyne and Ethelbert at the prayer of Pope Gregorye of Dorobernia translated to the sayde cyte / as in the xiii. chapytre of this treatyse yt is more at lengthe declared. But of the buyldynge of this chyrche of sayntt Paule, dyuerse opynyons ben. For some wryters scrypture, that yt was buylded or begonne to buylde, by Sygebertus kynge of Estanglys, but more verely kynge of Eestsaxōs or Sessex. This Ethelbert also foūded the chyrche of sayntt Andrew, in the cyte of Dorwytes in Kent nowe called Rochester / of the whyche Justus was bysshoppe ordeyned before of sayntt Albane.

About ỳ tyme or a season after / the forenamed Ethelfrydus, whyche in the englyshe cronycle is named Elfryde / foughte wyth the Brytons at the cyte of Legyceastre or Chestre / & slew of the Brytons a great nombre. At whyche tyme and season, a great nombre of the monkes of Bangor were also there assembled, for to pray for the good spede of the Brytons. wherof when Ethelfrydus was warned / he fell also vppon theym, and slewe of theym at that tyme, as wyttnessyth dyuers authoures .xii. hūdred as yt is before shewyd in the .C. and ix. chappter of this boke.

This forenamed Ethelbert cryated a dweller or citezen of London, to make a chyrche or chapell in the worshyp of sayntt Peter, in the weste ende of London then called Thorney, and nowe the towne of westmynster / the whyche that tyme was forgrowen wyth bushes and bteres erroyngly, where the sayde citezen began, and buylded the fyrst chyrche of westmynster in ỳ honour of sayntt Peter, whych was after by sayntt Edwarde the confessour enlarged or newe buylded. But of the tyme Henry viij. whē he reygned as kynge of Englande / yt was newe edyfyed & made as yt nowe is a beautyfull monastery, and ryche endowed bothe wyth possessyon and rentes / and ryche Iewelys.

As is wryte in the Englyshe cro-

& nycle

nycle of Englande/ that thys Ethelbert shulde be slayne in a fyghte betwene hym and Ethelfryde kynge of Northumberlande. But Policronicon sayth that he dyed and went to heuen/ when he hadde reygned ouer the lordshyppe of Kent. ibi. yeres/ and the. xxi. yere after that he hadde receyuyd Crystendome.

The kyngdome of Eestsaxons.

THE .CXXI. CHAPITER.

Urynge also the foresayde persecucyon of ꝑ Bryttõs, or any ruler of thẽ were specyally named/ beganne the reygne of Eestsaxons as wytnessyth Policronicon, vnder Sebertus theyr fyrste kynge/ nere about the yere of our lordes incarnacyon. vi. hundred and .xiiii. All be yt that Guydo de Columna sayth that yt beganne nere about the tyme and season, when the kyngdome of Eestanglys beganne. But I folowe Polycronicon/ for he leyeth holy Beda for his Authour in myche of his worke. This kyngdome whych is to meane Esser/ hadde in the eest syde the see/ in the weste Myddelser and London/ in the southe the ryuer of Thamys/ & in the northy Suffolke/ and endured after moste wryters by the terme of two hundred and odde yeres. But by ꝑ sayeng of Policronica yt shuld not endure ouer two hundred yeres. Neuertheless yt shulde appere by the storye of Edwarde the elder sonne of Alueredus, ꝑ yt shulde cõtynue vnder the Danys and other wyle, tyll the. xvi. yere of his reygne. And by that reason yt shulde endure two hundred lxxx. & xvi. yeres. The contynuaũce therof is more doutfull to be iustly determyned, for so myche as wryters be of dyuers opynyons of the begynnyng therof. All be it ꝑ Polycronycon in the. li. chappter of hys fyrste boke, sayth that yt began vnder Sebertus, and vnder. x. kynges/ tyll Egbertus kynge of westsaxons subdued yt and ioyned yt to his owne kyngedome.

The fyrste crysten kynge of thys lordshyppe was the forenamed Sebertus, conuertyd by meanes of Mellitus byshoppe of London, as sayth Guydo. But after hys sayeng thys Sebertus shulde be the thyrd kynge of Esser. All wryters agreen that the kynges of thys lordshyp were more comynly named vnder kynges, and were more subiectes to other kynges/ and chefely vnto the kynges of Mercia or Mercherike.

Then to retourne agayn vnto the Bryttons, whyche by all this season occupyed a parte of Cornewayl and the countres of Cambria/ as Venedocia, whyche now is called Northwalys, and Demecea whych now is called Southwalys/ and there held them in makynge assautes vpon the Saxons, as before is touchyd, some whyle in one coste, and some whyle in that other, vnder sondrye dukes, as witnessyth Gaufryde and also the englysh cronycle. The whych so contynued after moste accorde of tyme, and to accorde thys hystorye wyth other, by the terme of .xviiii. yeres/ ouer and abouethe yeres alowed for the reygne of Careticus afforesayd. So that from the fyrste yere of Careticus, to the laste of these. xviiii. yeres/ erryyd or flowyd .xxbii. yeres. At whyche tyme the Bryttons of one assent chase for theyr hedde or ruler, ꝑ duke of Venedocia, or Southwalys, named Cadwanus.

Francia.

THE .CXXII. CHAPITER.



Lotharius or Lotharius the ſonne of Chilpericus, & ſecond of ỳ name/ was made kynge of a parte of Fraũce in ỳ yere of oure lorde .v. hundred lxxx. and.viii/ and the.ii. yere of Careticus then kynge of the Bꝛytons. Thys Clotharius by the repoꝛte of mayſter Robert Gagwyne, is notyd to be deſcendyd of Clodoueꝰ Lowis fyꝛſte cryſtened kynge of Fraunce/ & not erꝛeſſely to be the ſonne of Chilpericus.

But foꝛ ſo myche as in the cronycle of Chilperych, I haue ſhewed to you ſomwhat of the dedys of Fredegund wyfe of Chylperiche: therfoꝛe I entende in the declarynge of thys ſtoꝛy of Clothayꝛe, to erꝛeſſe the remanaunte, in as ſhoꝛte wyſe as I goodly may. And fyꝛſt ye ſhall vnderſtãd, that after thys Fredegunde had as befoꝛe is ſhewed, cauſyd her loꝛde to be ſlayne: ſhe ferynge that at length her vntrouth ſhulde be dyſcouerꝛyd/ wyth all her goodes in ſhoꝛte tyme after pode vnto Paris / and there in the monaſterye oꝛ houſe of our ladye held her. And foꝛ ſhe wold be in moꝛe ſuerty/ and alſo her ſon the ſayd Clotharius ſhuld be the ſtrẽger in his domynyon and kingdome: therfoꝛe ſhe ſent meſſengers vnto Gunthꝛanus kynge of Oꝛleaunce & bꝛother to her loꝛde Chilperich/ requyꝛyng hym of fauoure and ayde/ & that he wolde of his goodneſſe be tutour & defendour of her ponge ſonne Clotharius. The whych not denyenge the requeſte of Fredegunde, ſpedde to warde Paris in all haſte/ where wyth the aſſent of other nobles of the realme, he tobe the gydynge of the ponge kynge. By whoſe adupſe and cõmaundement, the ſayde Clotharius was conueyd & ſhewyd thoꝛough many of the cheſe cytyes of his lande. But in lykewyſe as Gunthꝛanus wyth other byſyed theym ſelfe to ſtrength Lotharius in hys ryghte / euen ſo were other of the nobles of Fraũce (by the meanes of Bꝛunechyeldis, wyfe ſome tyme of Sygebert, pongeſt ſonne of Lothayꝛe the fyꝛſt / the whyche Sygebert receyued of hys ſayde wyfe two ſonnes named Chilperich and Chyldebert/ of the whych two, Chilperich ſurupued the other) that dyd all theyꝛ entent to pꝛomote Chyldebert to the poꝛcyon of hys father/ that Chilpericus father of Lotharius occuppyed after the deth of Sigebert foꝛenamed.

Here dyſcoꝛdeth the frenche cronycle fꝛõ myne authour Gagwyne. Foꝛ there yt is ſayd, ỳ Bꝛunechield with the other of her aſſent/ wold then by theyꝛ meanes haue pferred a baſtard ſon of the foꝛenamed Sygebert called Theodoꝛicꝰ, to the kyngdome of Fraũce. An other authour ſayth that this Theodõꝛich was the ſon of Childericꝰ afoꝛe named, whyche was the ſonne of Sygebert.

But to folowe mayſter Gagwyne/ This Childebert whych by ỳ foꝛmer ſayeng reherſyd in ỳ .C. and.xxxi. chapiter of this treatyſe, was delyuerꝛyd from ỳ handes of Chilperich his vncle, by meanes of the erle of Poytow named Gũdebald: this with a ſmall cõpany came vnto Paris/ where of ỳ cytezẽs he was kept out. Foꝛ ỳ which ſoon after he ſent a noble man of his named Gillon with other, as ambaſſadours vnto Güthꝛanꝰ. And where among other thynges of hym requyred, they ared of hym Fredegũd to ſuffer deth, foꝛ ỳ ſhe had by her ſubtylty cauſed to be murdꝛed bothe Sygebert father to theyꝛ kynge, and alſo

Chilpericus her owne husbande: yt was of him vtterly denyed. wherfore this sayd Gyllon sayd vnto Gũthȝanus / syr kynge knowe thou for certayne, synnes thou haste refused this peace to the offeryd of thy newewe / that the deth of thy brother shall cleue to thy hedde. wyth these wordes the kynge beynge greatly amoued / commaunded the ambassadours to be putte oute of his court / and when they were in the strete, all fylthe and ordoure to be caste vppon theym as enymyes.

And varyaunces thus kyndelyng betwene these two kinges / Gunthȝanus soone after sent Fredegunde into Neustria or Normandy / & caused her there to be kepte not farre from ỳ citye of Roan, whyther to her came many noble men of Fraũce in cõfortynge her, and also mouynge her for the trouble she was in / promysynge to her ayde to the vttermoste of theyr power. But when that Fredegunde apperceyued the great fauoure that Bȝunechyelde stode in, of the nobles of Orleaunce or Fraunce, she enuyenge her welth and honoure, called to her an hoinycyde & a felon called Yolderyche / to whom the sayde Fredegũde promysyd great treasour, yf he coude by venyme or otherwyse bȝynge to deth the sayde Bȝunechieldis. By meane of whych promyse he graũted to bȝynge her entent about / & shortely after drewe vnto the court of the sayde Bȝunechyeldis. where he fyll in suche familyaryte wyth dyuerse of her courte, that he came many seasons to the ꝑsence of ỳ quene. But by what happe I can not saye / lastely he was taken in suspeccyon / and so tormentyd & pyned, that he cõfessyd ỳ cause of his thyder cõmyng, and by whom he was sent / with all ỳ other cyrcũstaunce of the matter. After whych cõfessyon so made / he was to betyn & arrayed in moste byle maner, and so sent agayn to Fredegũd. And when he was comen to her presence, and shewed what tourment he had suffred for her cause: she incontynẽt in fulfyllyng of her malycyous purpose / commaunded that his handes and fete shulde be stryken of and so lette go / to the ende that yt shulde be thought that she had not desyred hym to that besynesse. Aboute thys tyme & season arose a ponge mã in a corner of Fraunce / the whych by his subtyle wytte named hym selfe to be the sonne of the kyrst Lotharius, and brother vnto Gunthȝanꝰ. The which by synystre meanes and crafty gatte the fauoure of the lordes of Gupan / and by theyr assystence held and occupyed a great parte therof.

And after somdele of hys counsayles to Gunthȝanus by hys espyes dysclosyd / this sayde ponge man beyng named Gũdoaldus, sent vnto Gunthȝanus an ambassade / and requyryd hym to be restoryd to a porcyon of hys faders goodes. Addyng therto that yf he denyed / the sayde Gundoaldus wolde wyth a strong armye repayre out of Gwyan, and get hys ryght wyth strength / & that to bȝyng about he shulde also haue great ayde of Chyldebert his newewe aboue named. whan kynge Gunthȝanus had at leyser herde the message: he in dyspaynyng the same cõmaunded them to be sette vppon horse backes theyr facys towarde the tayle / and so with betynge and vylanye to be dȝyuen thorough the town. It was not long after that a daye was appoyntyd betwene Gunthȝanus and Childebert / at whych day both pȝynces met with great companyes & lordes. And whe they were sette in theyr counsayll / Gunthȝanꝰ cõmaunded the forsayd messyngers of Gundoaldus to be brought to fore them, & there agayne to re-

to recyte, theyr forelayde message. whych done, he shewyd furthermore that the layd Gundoalde had before tyme dispoyled the doughter of Chilperyche named Rygonde, of all such rychesse as she wyth her conueyed, when she went towarde Spayne to be maryed / of the whyche some lordes of Childebert were of counsayll. whyche vnto the layde two prynces was thought trewe/ for so myche as the layde lordes then accusyd, were absent from that great counsayll.

THE.CXXIII. CHAPITER.

After many and great actes concludyd by thys counsayll betwene these two forelayd prynces: Gunthramus in open audyence admytted hys neuewe Chyldebert for his heyre, for so mych as he had none heyre of hys bodye / commyttynge the rule therof to hym before all that were there. And after toke hym apte, and shewyd to hym whych of his nobles he shulde take to counsayll, and whyche he shuld refuse. And specyally he warnyd hym to be well ware of hys moder Brunechyeldis, for that he knewe in her so great vntrouthe & subtylty / and also of Gyllon the bysshoppe, the whyche he also sayde he was not to be trusted. when he had thus aduertysed hys neuewe, they both retourned vnto the place of counsayll/ where by them and theyr counsayllys certayn thynges concernyng the comone wele were sette in an order. And that done, the sayde counsayll was fynyshed/ and puruey aūce for theyr dyner pronyded, the pryncys wyth theyr baronye went vnto dyner. In the season of whych dyner the sayde Gunthramus sayde vnto ꝑ great nomber of lordes beynge present / ye my lordes and nobles of Fraunce, the whych to me haue euer more ben true and dere/ here is myn neuew, the whyche as myne heyre I haue allowed and ordeynyd, whome I praye you to honoure, and wyth true fayth be vnto hym obedyent as to your kyng. For of ꝑ great worthynesse that of hym is to come, I am in great hope / whyche is allyed wyth myght and vertue. And to the augmentacyon of these wordes/ shortely after restored to hym all such cytyes, as Chilpericus by hys lyfe had with holden from hym. And soone after eyther from other in moste humble & louynge maner departyd.

Of thys peace betwene these two pryncys thus stablyssh yd, the fame ranne wyde. wherfore certayne lordes beyng vppon the partye of Gundoaldus refused hym / and went vnto the party of Gunthramus.

Soone after wyth hys people Gūdoaldus resortyd vnto a cytye ouer the ryuer of Scrounde named Conuena/ where for the strength therof, he thought to abyde hys fortune. wherof when Gunthramus was warned/ he in goodly spede made thyder warde, and layd hys people nere vn to the sayde cytye. But when he had espyed the strēgth therof/ and knew well yt was daungerous for to obteyn: he thē dyd gyle, where strēgth myght not preuayle / and deuysed or forged certayn letters in the name of Brunechyeldys, wherin was fayned, that the sayde Brunechyeldys shulde desyre Gundoaldus in all hasty wyse, to resorte vnto the cytye of Burdeaur.

Of whyche fraude Gundoaldus no thynge suspectynge / commaundyd hys treasoure wyth other hys stuffe vnder sauf gydynge thyderward to be conueyed. wherof the knyghtes of Gunthramꝰ hauyng knowlege, with a stronge cōpany made ouer the fore sayd water of Scroūde, & layde such

watche for them, that they encountred the sayde people that caryed the sayde treasure and stuffe / and parforce toke it from the knyghtes of Gundoaldus and presentyd it vnto Gunthranus.

Lyke as before ye haue harde that certeyne lordes of the hoste of Gundoalde fled vnto the hoste of Gunthranus / so in thys passe tyme. viii. capptaynes or rulers of the hoste of Gunthranus fled vnto Gundoalde / ꝑ whych myne authour nameth Desiderius, Mommolus, Bladascus, and Sagyttarius. whyche. viii. after they? comynge to Gundoalde stode in such fauour / that he was by they? counsayle myche what aduysed and gyded. It was not longe after that ꝑ knyghtes of Gunthranus had thus wonne ꝑ forsayd treasoure & stuffe / that Gundoald was so sore pursued that he was fayne to close hym wyth in a stronge cytye / the whyche Lendegylsus mayster of the hoste of Gũthranus assayled by dyuerse feates of warre to wynne. But whã he saw hys labour lost / than he cautelously sande ꝑ meane to speke secretly with one of the forsayde. viii. capptaynes named Mommolus, and wyth hym treatyd of the betrayenge of ꝑ cytye. The whyche after many and longe exhortacyons, wyth the assuraũce of they? lyues and other, graũtyd vnto the sayd treason / whereof the maner shulde be thus. Thys sayd Mommolus wyth the forenamed Bladascus and other of that affynyte / shulde set a fyre an olde temple wythin ꝑ cytye. And when the people of ꝑ cytye were besyed to quenche the fyre / the sayde Mommolus wyth hys adherentes to open the gates, & so to let in Lyndegylsus and hys knyghtes. But yet thys treason set a parte / Mõmolus goeth to Gõdoalde, and sheweth to hym the greate daunger that he standeth in of his enemyes. wherfore he counsayled hym that he wyth the other rulers about hym go vnto the tentys of Gunthranus and yelde them all vnto hys grace and mercy. And also to the entent that he shuld there shewe and proue, that he was the indubytate son of the fyrste Clothayre / the whyche to the kynge and all his hoste was very doutfull, and the more bycause he so fled from them. whan Gundoaldus had at leysoure harde the counsayle of Mommole, gyuynge to hym credence / for so mych as by hys counsayle before tymes he had fortheryd hys causes / and also by comfort that he reportyd to haue by meanes of Lyndegylsus before named: he settyng a parte all fere, wyth certayne nombet in peasyble wyse issued the cytye. And whan he had a lyttell space gone: ii. erles of Gunthranus hoste named Bole and Bolon receyued hym, and delyuered hym to the power of Lyndegylsus / and Mommole retourned wyth the other of his confederey, vnto ꝑ cytye / and closed faste the gates bytwene ꝑ cytye and the pauylyons of Gũthranus. where was a lytell copppd hyll / to the heyght whereof whan Gundoalde was comen, the sayd Bolõ hym sodeynly threwe downe. And as he was rollynge downe the hyll / with a great stone he strake hym on the hed, by vyolẽce wherof he was forthwith slayne or dede. And Mommole, the whych as before is towched was reentred the cytye / fyrste dyspoyled the goodes of the sayd Gundoalde / and after fell vpon the citesyns, and robbed and spoyled them in lyke maner, not sparynge prestes nor other / and after brente chyrches, temples, and houses without pytye / whyche done he sped hym vnto the tentys of Lyndegylsus. But he not beynge sure of the sauegarde of the sayde Mõmole and hys

and hys cõpany from the murmoure of hys knyghtes/ or more veryly for he wolde not be a knowen of the prouyded deth of theym / commaunded the sayde Mõmole wyth hys adherentes to tary without, & not to come in the prese of hys knyghtes, tyll he had somedele pacyfyed them. whiche was done, but not all without strife/ for some there were that beganne to quarell wyth hym and hys. But whẽ Lyndegylde sawe that this Mõmole and his company were somdele with drawẽ frõ his pauylyon, he made a token to hys knyghtes / whereby they knowyng his mynde, fell vpon him & slewe hym. Sagyttarius one of the foresayde .iiii. of that company, the whyche myne authour reporteth to be a byshoppe, fledde to haue sauegarded hym self/ but in his flyght he was slayne. And whẽ these enymyes where thus brought out of lyfe/ Gunthranus commaũded the goodes of the sayde Mommole to be broughte vnto hys tresorye / whyche were of great valure, and after were egallye deuyded betwene hym and Childebert hys neuewe. It was not longe after but certayne tokens & fygures appered in the fyrmament, the whych by astronomers were iuged the fyne of some prynce/ whyche after a yere shewyd to be true. For the sayd Gunthranus dyed vpon a yere folowyng the sayd fygures or sygnes/ when he hadde ben kyng of Orleaunce by the terme of.xxxvii. yeres/ and was buryed wyth great pompe in the crypte of Cabylon wythin the prouynce of Burgoyne, in ỹ monastery of sayncte Marke, whyche he before had buylded / and lefte for hys heyre of that kyngdome his neuewe the foresayde Chyldebert.

THE .CXXIIII. CHAPITER.

CHildebertus then hauyng the rule & possessyon of hys owne enheritaunce, that ys to saye of Austracy, and also of Orleaunce / castynge in his mynde howe he myghte be reuenged of Fredegunde, ỹ which as before is shewed in the .C. & .xiii. chaptyr of this lybell slewe hys father Sygebert: called vnto hym his olde frende and counceilloure Gundebald erle of Poytowe/ and then cõmaunded ỹ he shuld with his power inuade the countre of Boylons, the whyche was in the rule of Clotharius. wherof Fredegunde beyng warned/ assembled to her ỹ lordes of the countrey, and exhorted them to wythstande the malyce of theyr enymyes/ shewynge to them furthermore that that thynge they shuld of iustyce and equyte do, consyderynge that theyr kynge Clotharius was yet tender of age, and hadde as yet no knyghtely prowesse to defende hym self and his lande. And after a longe exhortacyon to them made/ she wyth her sonne prepared to go agayne the sayde enymyes. And when all thynge to the warre was preparyd and redy / she wyth a great armye made toward the hoste of Gundebalde. And when she knewe she was nere vnto the hoste/ she commaundyd her captaynes to reste & fortyfye her people vppon all ptes for brekyng in of her enymyes. And agayne nyghte she called to her Laundry her olde paramoure wyth other/ wyllyng them that in the dede of the nyght they wolde manfully set vppon the other partye/ for so myche as she sayde to them that she was certaynly enfourmed by her espies, that her sayde enymyes were sore wery ed by reason of that dayes laboure. After whose counseyll the sayde Laundry wyth other wrought / and suppysed theyr enymyes so vnwarelye, that of theym she slewe a parte & chasyd the remanaunt. And that done spedde them vnto Champayne nere

vnto Reynes, and spoyled and brent a parte of that countre. Thys feat of warre thus compassyd by the subtyle wytte of Fredegunde was nere to a place called Truet.

Then Childebert entendyd after certentye hadde of the ouerthrowe of Gundebalde, for to haue made newe warre vppon Fredegunde. But he was let by meane of the Longobardis, whyche than made warre vpon hym. Of the whyche warre he hadde somdeale his entent/and more shuld yf Mauricius emperour of Constãtyne the noble had kept all promesse with hym before made. After ỹ which warre in party endyd, he retourned into hys owne countree/ and shortly after he and also hys wyfe dyed, and not wythout suspeccyon of venym/ leuyng after hym two sõnes named Theodobert and Theodorych/ gyuynge to the eldest the lordshyppe of Austraci, and to the yonger the prouynce of Burgoyne.

About thys tyme the Hunes brake out of theyr places, and warryd vpõ certeyne partyes of myddle Fraunce and dyd therein greate harme. But lastly by meanes of greate gyftes by them receyued/ they left the countre & drewe towarde Soysons. Agayne whom Fredegũde gaderyng a grete powar/sent Clotharius hyr sonne & kynge, to the entent to defende the sayd Hunes/that they shulde not inuade theyr countrees. And shortly after bothe hostes mette in the felde/ where after longe and sharpe fyght the Frenchmen were victours, and chased the Hunes in suche wyse, that the more parte of them were slayne and taken, for the whyche victory Fredegunde made excedynge ioye to hyr son Clothayre/ & receyued hym with greate pleasure, and excedynge gyftes. After the whyche passyd not longe whyle, but that she fell syke & dyed/ and than buryed by hyr housbonde Chylperich.

Whan the forenamed bretherne had knowlege of the deth of Fredegũde/ they by the exhortacyon and stirryng of Brunechieldis theyr graundmother, callyng to mynde the wronges to theyr aunceſters done by Fredegund, and somdele by Lothayre: assembled a greate powar, & met wyth Lothayre and hys powar at the ryuer of Arrune or Aruéne. In ỹ which place was so sore fyght and so many slayne, that the cource of the ryuer was let, by the multytude of the caryens or dede bodyes ỹ were therein caste. But the more parte fell of the knyghtes of Lothayre/ so ỹ he was forcyd to forsake the feld, and thens to flee to the cyty of Melcon, & from thens to Parys: whom the sayde bretherne folowed/ & compelled hym to make peas after theyr pleasure. The effecte of which peas was this. Theodobert ỹ elder brother of these two, shuld enioye all the lande lyeng betwene the ryuer of Seyn & Leyr, vnto the Brytysh Occean, or the see of lytell Brytayne. And Theodorich the yonger brother, to haue all the lande from the sayd ryuer of Seyn vnto the ryuer of Isayr to the brynk of the see. And to Clothayr shuld remayne. xii. prouinces, which the sayd two ryuers of Isayr and Seyne flowen by or thorough.

Whyche peas thus confermed and graũted/ Theodobert to whom Neustria or Normandye belonged, sent thyder a cheuetayne of hys court called Berthalde, to defende the sayde countre. But Clothayre of thys former accorde beynge nothynge contentyd/ sent his sonne Merones vnder the gydynge of Laundry prefect or ruler of hys paleys into Neustria to warre in that countrey. And for so mych as Berthalde sawe

well he lakked power to wythstande so great an host/ he therfore toke the cytye of Orleaunce, tyll he had gadered more company. Then Laundry sealyd that parte of ỳ coũtrey, & cam to the wallys of the cytye / and by diuerse wordes of reproche, excyted ỳ sayde Berthalde to gyue batayll to hym in the playne felde. The whych he refusyd because of the inequalyte of nomber of knyghtes. But he offeryd to issue out of ỳ cytye, & to fyght wyth Laundry hande to hand/ wyth that he myght be assuryd agayne his people / the whyche offer Laundrye refusyd.

It was not longe after or bothe kynges wyth great hostes drewe into that countrey / and at the ryuer of Stampis mette, where betwene thé was foughten a stronge batayll. But by the polycye of Theodobert/ Lotharye was putte to a disuaũtage. For whyle the sayde Lotharye was cõueyeng hys people ouer the ryuer at a narowe passage/ Theodobert began so fyersly and kepte the passage so streyt, that the peple of Clotharye came not two partes of theym to the felde. Neuertheless the fyght cõtynued by a longe season / in whyche tyme Berthalde encountred many tymes Laundrye, and prouoked hym to batayll / but euer that other refusyd. Lastly he seynge and knowyng well that he shuld wynne great worshyppe and also profyte, yf he myght slee or take this Laũdry / he therfore put hym selfe in the more daunger of hys enymys, and fynally of thé was slayn. But Theodobert in pursuyng Lotharye and in comfortynge of his knyghtes bare hym so well, that he causyd his enimyes to lese grounde/ and at length put them to flyght, the whyche he foloweth to the gates of Parys, to the great damage of ỳ people of Lotharye. In this chase was taken Meroneus the sonne of Clotharye wyth many other/ but Laundry was goten wythin the cytye. And when Theodobert had thus goten the victory of hys enemyes / he lyste no lenger to tary about them at that season/ but shortly after retourned to hys countre.

In the court of Theodorich broder of this Theodobert, was at this day dwellynge an Italian named Protadi/ the whyche as myne authour sayth was paramour vnto Brunechyeld before sayd. The which, Brunechyeld by hyr meanes had exalted from poore estate vnto hyghe authoryte/ the whyche was of a subtyle & far castynge wytte, and therwyth excedynge couetous/ and in greate fauour of the kynge, but to all hys lordes odyous & hatefull: for the which vnlefull meanes by hym to the nobles and comons of the lande vsed/ & for the yll condycyons and bad counceyll that Brunechyelde & thys Protadi vsed within ỳ court of Theodobert/ he bannysshed them both as well of hys lande as of hys courte. wherfore euer after they malygned agayne Theodobert. And for the execucyon of theyr malicious purpose/ they tolde vnto Theodorych, that hys enemy and not brother Theodobert, had withdrawen from hym the chefe of hys faders treasoure/ alledgyng also, that he was not the sonne of Chyldebert hys fader, but gotten of a gardener/ and wylyd hym therfore to sende vnto hym and to aske restytucyon of the sayde goodes. By the whyche wycked counceyle Theodorych was so lad, that he sent vnto hys brother/ and in suche wyse so veryd and fyryd hym, that dedely malice was kyndelyd betwene them. In so myche that eyther of them assembled great hostes/ and lastely met nere vnto a towne named Carysse.

where

where the sayde hostes beynge redy to haue runne togyders/ the lordes of Theodoberte so demeaned them vnto hym, that by theyr wyse counsayle he agreed to sende to hys brother, and to haue a cõmunicacyon of peas. And whan the embassade was comen to the pauylyon of Theodoryche, and there had shewyd the vnkyndnesse of thys warre, wyth the ieopardy that myghte ensue of the same/ anone the forsayde Protharius toke vppon hym the answere, & sayd: it is not requysyte so lyghtly to graunte peas/ but necessary it is to attempte the wyll of our enemye by batayle, whether he woll be agreable to condescende to our desyres. The whyche wordes thus expressyd of hym, anone the more party of the lordes dysdayned it/ and conspyred wythin them selfe howe they myghte putte hym to deth. And forthwyth arose amonge them such a murmur, that ỹ kynge apperceyued well that they entendyd some harme to Protharius. For the whyche he called vnto hym a knyght named Uselyne/ chargynge hym to go vnto the lordes, commaundynge them that they in no wyse shulde do any harme to Protharius. The whyche Uselyne beynge of the mynde of the other/ sayd that the kynge wolde that they shulde slee Protharde. After whyche message done/ they ranne in all haste and hym slewe, as he sate playenge at dyce or tables wyth one Peter a physicyon/ and that done all hooily ranne vnto ỹ kynges tent, besechyng hym to take no displeasure of ỹ deth of so eupll a man, that as well was knowē, was enemye to all frendshyp and peas. But for Theodoryche apperceyued well, that he cowde not reuenge hys deth wythout ponyshemēt of a multytude/ he therfore toke pacience, and suffred the offence to passe vnpunysshed. After whyche man thus murdered/ bothe prynces without notable acte depted eyther into hys countree.

THE .CXXV. CHAPITER

TO thys daye Theodoryche had taken no wyfe/ all be yt of hys concubyne he receyued two sonnes. He therfore by thaduertysement of hys frendes, set hys mynde to mary some noble woman/ & soone after sent certeyne ambassadours vnto Berthric̄ then kyng of Spayne/ wyllyng to graūte vnto hym Ysemberge his doughter in mariage. The whiche vppon certeyne condicyons was perfourmed, and wyth greate ryches to hym shortly after sent and maryed/ & by a certayn tyme well entreated & cherysshed. But that season rõne & spent/ Brunechyeld so turned the kynges mynde from the quene, that lastely he wyth suche treasoure and iewellys as he of her receyued, sent her home agayn. The whych iniury Berthricus her father toke at herte greuously/ & shortly after sente hys messengers vnto Clothary kyng of Soysons, requiryng hym of ayde to warre vppon Theodoriche, which hadde done vnto hym great dysplea sure/ and the rather for ỹ warre that the sayde Theodoryche wyth his brother lately made agayne hym/ the whyche wyth both theyr strengthes they myghte then well reuenge. To whome Clotharius graūted. And to haue hys party the stronger, he sente vnto hys neuewe Theodobert and brother to Theodoriche, to styre hym agayne hys sayde brother.

Wherof when Berthricus hadde receyuyd knowlege of hys sayde messengers/ he thē sent vnto Agon king of Longobardys/ or more verely Adoaldus the .v. kynge after Albo nus/ requyryng hym in lyke maner.

And

And he desyrous of wreche/ made faste and sure promyse to gyue ayde to the vttermoste of his power.

When Theodozyche was warned of the cõspyracy of these.iiii. kynges, that entendyd to warre toyntly vpon hym/ he was therwyth greatly amoued, and prouyded for hys defence in his best maner. Then Theodobert trustyng the appoyntmẽt before made, assembled a great hoste/ and made spede fyrst towarde ꝑ place bytwene theym appoynted, whyche was nere to ꝑ castell of Salas. But or any preparacyon was made towarde batayle/ a meane was founde that the forenamed two bretherne shulde mete eyther wyth other, accõpanyed wyth.x. thousand knyghtes. But Theodobertus entendynge to dysceyue hys sayd brother, & to force hym to graũte to his pleasure/ brought wyth hym ferre aboue ꝑ nõber. wherfore Theodoricus beynge ouer sette wyth strength/ graunted all his brothers wyll. whych was that ouer certeyne thynges and appoyntemen tes concluded bytwene Berthricus and hym/ Theodobert shulde holde to hym and his heyres two lordshippes called Champayne and Turon. whych conclusyon fynyshed, eyther takynge leue of other departyd vnto theyr countreys / but not wythout greate vnrestfulnesse of the sayde Theodozych, berynge in mynde the wronge doynge of hys brother.

wherfore he shortly after made meanes to hys nenewe Clothayre desyrynge hym that he wolde not assyste hys brother agayne hym/ but to suffer hys quarell to be demyd by dynt of swerde bytwene theym two. This requeste, Lothayre by the aduyse of sayute Columbane munke of Irelande than beynge in those cotes, graunted.

And the frenche cronicle sayth, that he was warned of thys forsayd holy munke and abbot, that he shulde not medle bytwene the sayd two bretherne/ for so myche as yt was prouyded of god, that he shuld be heyre to them bothe.

Whan Theodozych had receyued thys answere, he gaderyd his strẽgth and spedde hym vppon hys tourney to the cytye of Langresse, and from thens to Verdune or Verdoune. Theodobette hauynge knowlege of hys malycyouse brothers purpose, gaderyd in Austracya greate hoste/ and so sped hym tyll he came to the cytye of Toull. where bothe hostes shortly after met / and in the feldes or playnes nere to the cytye foughte a stronge batayle. In the whych was slayne greate people vppon bothe sydes / but the more parte vppon the syde of Theodobert. wherfore he fynally was compelled to forsake the felde, and fled vnto Coleyne. where he gaderyng a newe powar/ fought agayne wyth hys brother. In the whyche fyght he had lyke fortune/ & was agayn chasyd to hys great shame and losse/ whom Theodoricus as hys mortall enemye folowed, hurtynge and wastynge the countreys as he went / in so myche that the inhabytauntes of the coũtreys fell before hym, besechynge his grace that for the offence of one man, he wolde not destroye so many innocentes/ assurynge hym forthermore that they wolde become hys hyegemen, and holde theyr lande of hym for euer. At whyche request he sayde gladly he wolde to them graunte theyr petycyon, yf that they wolde presente to hym the hedde of hys brother. After the whych answere by them of Theodozych receyued/ they amonge them selfe appoynted out a certayne of persones moste apte to theyr purpose / and wylyd theym to go vnto

Theodobert

Theodobert to execute theyr entent. The whyche sped theyr iourney tyll they came to the presence of Theodobert / & shewyd vnto hym that yf he wolde be agreable to departe wyth suche stuffe and iewellys as he had of hys faders, so that Theodorycke myghte be partener therof / he shulde haue perfyght amyte and rest wyth hym. To the whyche wordes he gyuynge confydence and truste / called wyth hym the sayde persones / and brought them into ꝑ howses, where the sayd stuffe and iewellys lay. And whyle he was busyed to deuyde out and appoynte ꝑ portyon of hys, one of the sayde persons slewe hym sodeynly / and after of one agrement strake of hys hed, and in secrete wyse caused yt to be conueyed vnto hys brother. whan Theodorycke hadde receyued the hed of hys brother, he sped hym to Coleyne where this treason was wrought / and receyued the cytye into hys possessyon, wyth all ꝑ kyngdome of Austracy to hys brother belongynge. And when he had there ordred hys nedes after hys mynde / wyth two sonnes and an excedynge fayre doughter of Theodobert, he spedde hym vnto Mees the chefe cytye of Austracy / where wyth hym met hys graundmoder Brunechylde. The whyche persueryng in all malyce and myschefe / caused ꝑ sayd two sonnes to be shortly slayn.

Theodorych then restoryd or delyuerd vnto Clothayre, all such landes as to hym he had before promysed.

Theodorycke thus endyng hys warre, the whyche by a longe season spent hys tyme in keppyng of concubynes / was nowe raupshed wyth the beaute of his brothers doughter, the whyche he hadde brought from Coleyne. But that boyng Brunechylde wythstode wyth all her power, because the mayde was so nere of hys

kynne. For the whyche he beyng with her sore dyscõtent sayde, o thou most wycked & false woman / dyd not thou make me to beleue, that Theodobert was not the sonne of my father / but that hy was the sonne of a gardyner. For what cause hast thou caused me to persute my brother, and lastely to slee hym. After the whyche wordes he wolde haue slayne her, yf he of his lordes hadde not ben letted. whyche dede not forgotten of this vngoodly woman / euer after imagyned howe she myght bryng Theodorycke out of hyfe. And lastely she hyred such as were about hym to consent to her iniquyte / so that vpon a season when he came out of his stew or bayn, he ayed drynke, by ꝑ force wherof he was poysoned & ded soone after, whe he had reygned .xviii. yeres. Howe be yt Antoninus in the .vi. chappter & .xii. tyle of the seconde parte of hys worke, sayth that he was brent wyth fyre by the dyuyne power.

THE .CXXVI. CHAPITER.

NOw that I haue shewed vnto you the tyme & ende of these two bretherne / by reason of whose dethe the hole pryncypate of Fraunce fell vnto the abouenamed Clothayre: I shall now expresse vnto you the dedys by hym done after he hadde all the rule onely.

So yt was that ꝑ forenamed Brunechylde malygned euer agayn Clothayre. And to the forthera[illegible] of her malyce, she behaued her in such wise wyth some of the rulers & lordes of Austracy, that she caused them to admytte owne named Sygebert to be tyghtfull enheryteure of that lande. But for that some of them had good experience of the yll dysposycyon of this woman / they therfore sent two noble men of that lande named Pe-

pyn

pyn and Arnold vnto Clothayre/wil lynge hym to sende hastely into that prouynce. After the whyche message by these two lordes reported, Clotha rius shortely after spedde hym into Austracy/ and at a castell called Ca thomat he lodgyd hym with hys peo ple. wherof herynge Brunechielde sent vnto hym/ & gaue vnto hym mo nicyon that he shuld voyde the land, for so myche as Sygebert the eldest sonne of Theodoryche was therof ryghtefull enheryto⁹.

ye haue harde before that Theodo ryche vsyd lemmans / of the whyche he receyued foure sonnes, ꝑ is to say Sygebert, Cobe, Chyldebert, and Merone. wherfore ꝑ forsayde Bru nechyelde entendynge to dystourbe Lothayre and all the lande/ forthyn ed the sayd Sygebert to clayme the lande of Austracye. And when Clo thayre hadde receyued knowlege of this maundemẽt from Brunechielde or Bruncheuste/he sent to her answe re that he wolde assemble the lordes of Austracy, and be demed by theym, whyther thys land belonged to hym, or Sygebert. And she herynge that sentence/ excyted people of the pro uynce of Germanye to strength her partye, wyth all the people that she myght make of the sayde countre of Austracy. And that to bryng about/ she sente one Garnery an other Al bon. Of this Garnery she hadde su specyon that he shuld fauour ꝑ par tye of Lothayre/ wherfore to Albone hys felowe she sente letters, that he shulde put the sayde Garnery away. whē Albone had ouer rad the letter/ he brake yt in peces & threwe theym from hym. And afterwarde a frende of Garnerys gaderyd the peces / and so ioyned theym that he concey ued the sentence of the letter, and forthwyth shewyd yt vnto Garnery. when Garnery perceyued the malyc yous entent of Brunechielde, he kepte yt secrete to hym selfe: all be it that he by his secrete meanes caused the Germanyes that they shuld take no partye wyth Brunechyelde. And that done he retourned into Bur goyne/ where wyth her and in her cõ panye he solycyted so the lordes of Burgoyne, that some of them abhor red the crudelite of that woman. And when Garnery hadde in thys wyse compassed hys matters / he sent vnto Lothayr, & shewyd that yf he myght haue hys grace and saferondute/ he wolde come to hym and shew to hym thynges concernynge hys aduaun tage. All the whyche was graunted.

Then Clothayre by counsayle of ꝑ sayd Garnery assembled hys power/ & shortly sente a strenght of theym in to Champayne and Cathaloyne/ where yt was shewed that Sigebert hadde gatheryd great strenghtys. Then forsoke the party of Sigebert many nobles of Austracye/ amonge the whyche myne authoure nameth Rucco, Sigoldus, and Enulanus, and yelded them to the mercy of Clo thayre. Then shortly after the hostes of Clothayre and Sygebert mette/ where Garnerye, by tokens betwene hym and dyuerse of the captaynes of Sygebert before assygned, ꝑ sayd captaynes wyth theyr people wyth drewe them, so that Sygebert wyth hys two brethern Cobo and Mero neus gaue backe whyle they came to the ryuer of Sigoune/ where after lytle resystence the forsayde two bre therne were taken. But the frenche cronicle sayth that all foure brethern were there taken. All be yt mayster Gagwyn sayth, that Sygeberte by the vertue of hys horse escapyd/ so that he was not after that daye seen.

And soone after thys victory Bru nechyeldes, which also of the frenche cronycle ys named Bruneheuste/

I was

was brought as prysoner vnto the presence of Lothayre, wyth a suster of Theodorych, whych Garnery or Gerney hadde taken in the tentes of his enymyes. Then Lotharius forth wyth commaūded Corbon to be behedded/ and preserued Weroneus, for so mych as he was to hym godfather/ and euer after cherysshed hym as his kynnesman.

Lotharius thus hauyng ỹ victory of his enimyes, made great ioy. And after he hadde somedeale sette that countrey and other in quyete/ he then toke aduyse of hys lordes howe he shulde be demeaned wyth Brunechielde, that hadde ben authorryce of so manyfolde mychyefes and crymynous ded. The whych of one cōsent and mynde condescendyd & agreed, that she shuld be put to moste paynfull and vyle deth. And fynally after sore betynges she was sette vppon a horse/ and so conueyed thorough the hoste/ that all men myghte beholde and se her/ and after brought agayn to ỹ kynges presence. where then the kynge rehersed vnto her a longe processe of all her murdurs, conspyracis, and wycked dedes/ aftermynge that she hadde ben the occasyon and cause of the deth of .x. pryuces, besyde other meane persones. And whē he hadde sayde hys pleasure/ he then commaunded her to be bounden to a wylde horse taple by the here of her hedde/ and so to be drawen whyle she were dede.

And when this iudgement was executed/ she by the lycence of the kynge was buryed in an house of relygyon wythin the cytye of Holdoñ or Oldoñ, that she before tyme hadde buyldyd in the honoure of sayncte Martyne, besyde other many that she in her lyfe buyldyd in dyuerse other places, endowyng them wyth great and ryche possessyons.

THE .CXXXVII. CHAPITER.

THus dame Fortune fauoured the partye of Lotharius/ that this kyngdome, whyche hadde from the tyme of Clodoueus Lewes cōtynued vnder .iiii. gouernours or rulers for the more partye, nowe was fallen to hym/ so that he hadde all vnder obeysaunce and rule/ then anon thys Lotharius made Garnery prefecte and mayster of hys paleys/ and releasyd vnto the Longebardes or Lombardes a trybute of .xii. thousand pounde yerely payde to the kynges of Fraunce/ the whych was fyrst sette vppon theym by Gunthyranus hys vncle.

And in thys whyle to hys more encreace of worldely ioye/ he receyued of hys wyfe Bergeruda a sonne, the whych he named Dagobertus. The whyche when he came to couenable age/ he betoke to the lore of Arnolde then byshoppe of Mecs. And when the fyrste wyfe of Lotharius was ded/ he maryed a seconde named Sichilde, of whom he receyued a chyld and named yt Haybert. when Dagobert the fyrste sonne was comen to a lawfull age/ after vsuell custome of all pryuces of Fraunce, he gaue hym myche to the chase of wylde bestys. And as by chaunce one daye he folowed the chace of an hert/ and tryed yt so sore ỹ he brought hym to a bay in a place that then was called the strete of Catulyen. In the whyche strete was then an old lytle chapell/ to the whyche the forsayde herte entred, and there helde hym/ all be yt that a great nomber of houndes folowed hym to ỹ chapell dore, & none of theym wold enter, but there stode bayenge. And when Dagobertus came after and beheilde the maner of the houndes, and dyd what he coude to cause them to entre the chapel and myght

myghte not/ he thus departed wythout more doynge at that seasou, not wythout great meruaylynge in hys mynde.

It was not longe after, that Clothayr cõsyderynge the frowardnesse of growyng in his sonne Dagobert/ assygned to hym a tutour or lerner of worldely and knyghtely maners, whose name was Sadragesyle. And for his sonne shulde haue hym in the more awe and fere/ the kyng gaue vnto the sayde tutoure the dukedome of Guyan. But so yt was one daye that for a cause thys Sadragesyle wold haue chastysed this Dagobert/ wherof he beyng ware, associated vnto hym certayne wanton persones and bete his mayster/ & after in way of dyspyte caused the berd of hys tutour to be shauen of. For the whyche dede Lothayre was agayne hym greuously displeasyd/ & in great ire and haste, sente for hys sonne Dagobert. But he feryng punyshement, wythdrewe hym, and went vnto the forenamed chapell/ trustyng verily that where tofore a beste was shewid such comforte, that he by holy prayers shulde there be comforted tyll suche tyme as he myghte atteyne vnto the grace of hys father.

ye shall vnderstande that before tyme after he hadde experyence of that wonder shewyd by the berte/ he lerned that the holy martyrs sayute Denys, and hys two felowes Rusticus and Eleutherius shulde be buryed wythin the sayde chapell / the whych were martyrd in the persecucyon of Dompcyane the emperour, aboute the yere of Crystes incarnacyon .lxxx. and .xvi. In the honoure of ỹ whych martyrs the forsayd poore chapell was arreryd, as witnessyth the frenche cronycel, by the meanes of a deuout frenche man whose name ys not expressyd. Thus Dagobert in thys chapell abydynge in prayer/ in the fyrste nyght he beyng in slepe, apperyd vnto hym .iii. olde faders, sayenge vnto hym/ yonge man we be those martyrs, whyche many yeres passyd were slayne for the fayth of Cryste, and buryed in thys place by Catula that good woman. whyche place is not duely norsufficyently honoured/ nor yet the people of Fraũce hath not vs in due reuerẽce and worshyppe. And therfore when thou art of myghte and power, then remembre vs, and helpe thys place to be otherwyse buyldyd/ whych shall not be longe to. And for thou shalte not take thys for a dreme or fantasye/ dygge hereafter thys grounde, and thou shalte fynde oure thre bodyes hole and vncorrupt/ and vppon eueryche of vs our names with letters freshely wryten. And after thys they vanyshed awaye.

when Dagobert awoke / he called well to mynde thys vysyon. And pronysed inwardely betwene god and hym, that yf he were restouncyld to hys father as to hym they hadde promysed/ he wolde fulfyll that they hadde desyred. After thys the father beynge warnyd that Dagobert was in thys chapell/ sent vnto the place certayne of hys knyghtes to pull or take hym thens per force. And when they came wythin a myle of ỹ sayde chapell/ they were so astonyed that they myghte not go one fote forwarde to do the beste they coude.

when they hadde long stryué with oute preuaylynge/ they retournyd to the kynge, and shewed to hym ỹ trouthe in all thynge as they had done.

The kynge beynge dyscontent wyth they re reporte, blamed theym, and sayde that they feryd hys sonne, for the whyche cause they hadde fayned that excuse.

And incontynently he sente forth an other company/the which were delte wyth in lyke maner as ꝑ other. were Lotharius somdele troubled wyth the reporte of his seruauntes / consyderyd the chapell to be nere vnto Paris where he then lay/ & cõmaundyd his horse to be brought, for he wolde proue the mater hym selfe. But lyke as his seruauntes were scrupd, euen so became of hym/ so that he myghte go or ryde frowarde or sydewarde/ but towarde the chapell myght he in no wyse atteyne.

when this was knowen to ꝑ kyng/ he cõsydered well yt was the handywoorke of god. wherfore by fayre and easy meanes he called home his son, and recouncylyd hym, and forgaue all trespace. To this accordyth the legende of the lyfe of sayncte Denys, wyth more that shall after folowe in the storye of this Dagobert.

After thys reconcylyacyon, Lotharius ordeyned vnder hym hys sonne Dagobert to be ruler of the sygnory of Austracye. But whyther yt were by the elacyon of hys owne mynde, or by badde counsayll, he shortely after rebellyd agayne hys father / and wolde haue reteyned that prouynce to his owne vse.

For thys were chosen .xii. noble men of Fraūce, to arbytre and deme betwene the father and the son. The whyche Lordes after they had longe debated this mater/ by fayre entreatyse contentyd so the father, that he gaue vnto the sonne the sayde lordshyppe of Austracy.

Soone after thys accorde, Clothayre made warre vppon the Gothis or Sarons/ and them at length subdued. For yt is to be knowē, that lyke as the sayde Sarons inuadyd myche Bryttayne or Englande/ in lykewyse wartyd they in Fraunce/ and lastely subdued the prouynce of Neustria and named yt after theym Normandye, as after in the storye of Charlis the symple shall more euydently appere.

Of thys wyctorye of Sarons ys made a longe reherssayll / and howe lastly when Clothayre hadde slayne the kynge or ruler of theym named Berthrande, he after yode into the countrey of Germanye, and slewe man and chylde that passyd ꝑ length of hys swerde.

Of this and other dedes by this Lothayre done, I myght make a longe worke/ but I passe ouer.

Then yt foloweth, when Lothayre hadde set his countrey in some reste/ he assembled hys lordes at a cytye or towne called Traacas or Trecas. And after dyuers maters dyscussyd and endyd / he ardd of theym perfyte allegeaunce and fydelite to hym and hys heyres to be kepte. The whyche by the sayde lordes fyrmely promysed and assurȳd/ he commaundyd euerych of theym to repayre to theyr owne countreys. And soone after he made an assemble of hys byshoppes and spyrytuall men at the cytye or towne of Troys/ by whose counsayllys he ordeyned thynges and maters concernynge the wele of the chyrche. And shortly after he was veryd with greuous sekenes/ wherof he fynally dyed, when he hadde reygned after moste wryters .xliii. yeres, leuynge for heyre the forenamed Dagobert/ the whyche enterryd hys fader wyth great pōpe at the abbey of sayne Vincent wythoute the wallys of Paris/ the whiche abbey is at thys daye called sayncte Germaynes.

The forsayde yeres accomptyd for the reygne of Lothayre / be accomptyd from the fyrste daye that he was ordeyned kynge of Soysons, vnto the daye of hys deth. wherof he reygnyd after some wryters ouer a

part

parte.xxbii. yeres/ & ouer all Fraũce xvi. yeres. whyche make the full of xliii. yeres.

Anglia.

THE .CXXVIII. CHAPITER.

CAdwanus or Cadwan, the whyche of Guydo ys named duke of Venedoyce or of Northwalys / was by one assente of the Brytõs lastly made theyr soueraine or gouernour, in the yere of our lorde. vi. hundred and xiii/ and the .xxv. yere of the seconde Clothayre kynge of Fraunce/ and also the fyrst yere of Colwolphus then kynge of westsorons / accomptynge for the reygne of Ceawlmus kynge of the sayde westsarons. xxvi. yeres. And for Colricus nexte succedynge hym. v. yeres.

ye haue before hard what dyscorde and trouble was amonge the Brytons in the tyme of Careticus laste kynge & longe after, by reason wher of the Sarõs wanne the more land/ and as before is rehersyd in the. C. and. xx. chappter, howe Ethelfryde kynge of Northumberlande ouer set the Brytons at the cytye of Chestre/ & forcyd thẽ to take ouer Seuarne, and so into walys / where they then chase thys Cadwane to theyr duke and leder. The whyche after he was putte in authorite/ assembled hys Brytons, and came agayne into Britayne / and gaue batayll vnto the sayde Ethelfryde. In the whych they spedde dyuersly, so that some season the Sarons wanne/ and some while the Brytons. But the Brytons held Chestre & other good townes/ whych they hadde recouered sene theyr last commynge.

It shulde seme by the meanynge of Polycronica, that thys Cadwan or Cedwall shulde at length slee the sayde Ethelfryde and Osricus bothe kynges of Brennicia and Deyra. But Guydo and also Gaufryde wyt nessen, that after thys Cadwan had the better of Ethelfryde/ by medyatours yt was agreed that Ethelfryd shulde enioye all the lande ouer and beyonde Humber vnto Scotlande/ and Cadwan shulde haue the lande from Humber towarde the sowthe. To the whyche sayenge agreeth the englyshe cronycle, affermynge also that he shulde be the sonne of Brucy uall kynge of Leycester, the whych of other wryters is not testyfyed.

It is also there shewed that after ỳ sayde accorde betwene Ethelfryde & Cadwan confyrmed/ that they contynued durynge the lyfe of Cadwan as two especiall louers and frendes/ and durynge the reygne of this Cadwan the two sonnes of Colricꝰ, Kyngilsus and Quichillynus, after the deth of theyr fathers brother Colwolphus, ruled ioyntly the pryncypate of westsarons. The whyche in theyr begynnynge faught agayn the Brytons at Impton besyde Orynford/ & wanne of them the towne & other holdes, whyche the Brytons in ỳ coũtre occuppyed. But by agrement of wryters this Cadwan was not at this cõflycte, nor yet medlyd hym so farre within ỳ land. But as yt shuld seme by Guydo/ these Brytons shulde be some cõpany that shulde lyue vnder trybute of the Sarons / ỳ whych for the manhode ỳ they hard reported of Cadwan, rebelled agayn ỳ Sarons. Then it foloweth, whẽ this Cadwan had thus contynued his amite wyth Ethelfryde/ a chaunge fell, that this Ethelfryde for hatered or otherwise put frõ hym hys wyfe beynge great wyth chylde, & toke to hym an other.

I iii. wher

wherfore thys woman beynge reckelesse/ callyng to mynde ꝑ great loue, that was betwene her husbande and Cadwan, she went vnto hym, and specyally besoughte hym to recoemple her lorde & husbande, that she myght be restoryd to hys company. But for Cadwan after many meanes and requestis myght not bryng that about/ he therfore tenderynge her necessyte, kepte her in hys owne courte tyll she were lyghted. The whyche at tyme brought fourth a man chylde whom she lette call Edwyn. And soone after was the wyfe of Cadwan delyuerȳd of a sonne, whom the father callyd Cadwalyn. But the authour of the Floure of hystoryes sayth ꝑ these two chyldern were long borne before this tyme. The whych shuld seme to be true, for so myche as this Cadwalyn was of lawfull age to beweld his lande whē his father dyed/ the which he coude not do, yf he hadde nowe be borne. But as affermeth Policronycon, yt shulde seme lyke to a fable, all the reherſayll that Gaufride maketh in the ende of hys boke/ as well for Cadwalyn and Edwyn, as for the other cyrcūſtaunce of the mater there reherſyd. whych varyeth from other wryters both for the tyme, and also for the mater, as somdeale is more in the hystorye hereof before made mencyon/ and also by the cōtynuaūce of this storye. For as Giraldus Cambrenſ̄ and other seyen/ this Edwyn was the sonne of Elle or Ella kynge of Deyra/ the whyche was persecutyd of Etheſridus before named thē kynge of both prouynces, that is to meane Brennicia and Deyra, so sore that he was compellyd to flee to Redwaldus then kynge of Eſtanglys. The whyche for mede or fere of the sayde Etheſride, was lastely consentynge to haue betrayed Edwyn / of whyche daunger the sayde Edwyn was delyuerȳd by warnynge of a frende of hys.

After this escape as Edwyn satte vppon a time in a great study alone/ a straunger apperyd to hym sodeynly, and sayde, I know well the cause of thy thought and heuynes. Therfore yf thyn enymyes were slayne, & thou restoryd vnto thy kyngdome & sette the in better maner then any of thy forefathers/ woldyst thou not admytte such one for thy frende, and assent and do by his rede and coūſayll. yes trewly sayd Edwyn/ and that I surely and fastely promyse the. Then this man layd his hand vpon Edwynes hedde and sayde to hym, Edwyn when this token is broughte to the/ then haue thou mynde of this tyme of trybulacyon, and of this promyse thou haste made. And anon as thys was spoken this man vanyſhed out of his syght sodeynly.

In a conuenyent season after, Edwyn assemblyd hys hoste and gaue batayll vnto Etheſryde in the countrey of Mercia by eeſt the ryuer of Idle/ and slewe hym in that fyghte, wyth a great nōber of his knyghtes/ and thē seasyd in his possessyon both the foresayde pryncypates/ and was kynge of Northumberlande by the terme of .xvii. yeres.

ye shall vnderſtande that the forenamed Etheſride hadde .iii. sonnes, whyche are mynded beſyde other. The fyrste & eldeſt was named Eaufricus, the seconde Oſwaldus, and the thyrde Oſwye. The fyrſt was of lawfull age/ so that he myght helpe and shyft for hym selfe. But Oſwald was but .xii. yeres of age/ and Oſwy farre ponger. wherfore theyr wardeyns immediatly after theyr faders deth, sente theym vnto Armorica or lytell Bretayne, there to be brought vppe / or more verely into Albania or Scotlande.

The .cxxix. Chapiter.

ABoute this tyme and season, as wytnessen Policronica, Guydo, and other/ began the kyngdome or lordshyp of Mercia, vnder the stronge paynym and Saron called Penda. The whyche Mercia or Merchetike conteyned Huntyngdon shyre, Hertfordshyre, Gloucetershyre, wyth dyuers other/and was grettest and largeste of all the other/ & was closyd in ꝑ west syde wyth the ryuer of Dee, stretchynge to Chestre & Shewarne, and so to Shrouesburye and Brystowe/ in the est pt was closyd wyth the see Ocean/ in the South with Thamys vnto London/and in the north with ꝑ ryuer of Hõber/and had hys begynnynge vnder the fore named Penda, as the accorde of dyuerse authours wytnessyth, in the yere of oure lordes incarnacyon.vi. hundred & .xxvi/ and after the fyrste commynge of Hengyste a hundred and lxxvi. yeres. All be yt that of the fyrste kyng dyuerse opynyons there ben/ wherof a cause maye be, for so myche as this lordshyppe in the fyrst begynnyng was departyd in.iii/that is to say ꝑ fyrst was called est Mercia, the .ii. was named myddell Mercia, and the .iii. weste Mercia. But after yt was brought to one prynce pate & called Merchetike, or of some wryter myddell Englande. Of thys lordshyppe the fyrste crysten kynge was called wolpherus that was the sonne of the forenamed Penda. But of all the kynges of thys kyngdome of Mercia, whych were.xviii. in nomber, as testyfyeth Policronica/ Offa was of moste myght and power, as after shall more playnly appere.

This lordshippe endured to reken moste certaynly, tyll the yere of oure lorde. viii. hundred and.lxxvi. In the whych yere Alurede or Alhered then kynge of westsaxons, ioyned yt vnto his owne kyngdome/ whych by that accompte shulde be two hundred & .l. yeres. All be yt that some accompte the enduraūce therof, to the last yere of Burdredus that was putte out by the Danes/ by whyche rekenynge yt shulde then endure .iiii. yeres lesse. And some wryters accõpte the terme therof whyle the tyme of Edward called the elder/ whych after the deth of his fader Alured put out the Danes from the sayde lordshyppe, and ioyned yt agayne to westsaxon/ and by that accompte yt shulde laste .ii. hundred .lxxx. yeres and odde.

ye shall also vnderstande, that in this kyngdome reygned dyuerse holy kynges, whyche nowe be alowed by the chyrche for sayntes/ as Offa, Kenelphus, Kenelm⁹, and other, as hereafter somedeale shall appere.

I haue seen an old regyster within the chyrche of Poulys of London/ wherin ys conteyned many thynges concernynge the fyrst foundacyon of that chyrch, wyth certayne olde cronycles of thys lande. Amonge the whyche yt is there notyd, that in the tyme and season when Cadwan was kynge or ruler of the Bryttons/ that in the same moment and tyme reygned in dyuers partes of this lande these. vii. kynges vnder wryten. As fyrste Sybertus, that then was kynge of Eestsaxons no Esser, Redwaldus was then kynge of Eestanglys now Norff. and Suff. Ethelbertus was then kyng of Kẽt, Ethelwald⁹ was kynge of Southser. Kyngylsus was kynge of westsaxons. Penda was kynge of Merchetyke. And Ethelfridus was then kynge of the North coūtre or Northumb. All whyche regyster this worke accordyth with, yf the storys of this Cadwan, Careticus, & Cadwall be duely serchyd.

THE .CXXX. CHAPITER.

LEtte vs than retourne to the perfourmaūce of the ſtory of Cadwan/and of ſuch dedes as were done in his dayes. About the. xviii. yere of his reygne, Quincellinus ꝑ was brother vnto kyngyllus, and kynge with hym, as before in the. C. and. xxviii. chappter is touchyd, ruled ꝑ weſtſaxōs/ſent vpon an Eeſter day a ſwerdman to ſle Edwyn kyng of Northumberland. This ſwerdeman came to a cytye beſyde the water of Darwent in Derbyſhyre, and wayted his tyme/and laſtly fand the kynge ſmally accompanyed, and entended to haue ronne thorough the kynge wyth a ſworde enuenemed. But one Lilla the kynges truſty ſeruaunt, dyſgarnyſſhed of ſhylde or other weppyn to defende his mayſter/ ſtarte betwene the knyg & the ſword, and was ſtryken thorough the body and dyed/and the kynge was wounded with the ſame ſtroke. And after he woūded the thyrde/and was take and confeſſyd by whom he was ſent to worke that treaſon. The other knyght that was ſecondly wounded dyed/and the kynge laye after longe ſyke or he were helyd. And the ſame nyght folowynge the quene was delyuered of a doughter/the whyche kyng Edwyn cauſed to be cryſtened of Paulinus ꝑ byſſhop, in token that he wolde fulfylle all ſuche promyſe as he before had made. And ſhe was named Enfleda/ and halowed vnto god. And after whytſontyde ꝑ kyng beynge ſcantly hole of the wounde, aſſembled his hoſte & made towarde the kynges of weſtſaron/and after a greate and ſore fyghte venquyſſhed them and theyr hoſte. But Edwyn for all thys victory and other thynges gyuen to hym of god/as he that was in helthe of the worlde, forgate his former promeſſe, and had lytell mynde therof/ excepte that he by the preachyng of Paulinus forſoke his maūmētrye, and for his excuſe ſayde that he myghte not clerely renye his olde lawe that his forefaders hadde kepte ſo longe, and ſodeynly be cryſtened without authorite and good aduyſe of hys counceyle. He alſo receyued letters of exhortacyon and cō forte to take the baptyme, from ꝑ. v. Bonifface thā pope. The whiche alſo ſent to the quene lyke letters, with a myrrour garnyſſhed with ſyluer and a combe of iuory, and for the kyng a ſhyrte wrought in ſōdry places with letters of golde. But all this preuayled nothynge.

Then Paulin? made his ſpeeyall prayers to god/and had it ſhewed to hym by reuelacyon, of the token that was gyuen to Edwyn in tyme of his trybulacyon. After the which knowlege hadde / Paulinus ſhortly after came vnto the kyng/and layeng his hande on hys hed, frayned of hym whyther he had any lyke remēbrāce of any lyke token. The whyche whan the kynge hadde confeſſyd/the holy byſſhoppe ſayde vnto hym. Lo thou haſt ouercomen thyne enemyes and wonne thy kyngdome, & holdeſt it in moſte large wyſe / therfore perfourme thy promeſſe, and be trew to hym that hath holpen thy.

It was not longe after that the kynge aſſembled hys counceyll/and by theyr agremēt he was of the ſayd Paulinus byſſhop of yorke baptyſed wythin the ſayde cytye the. xi. yere of hys reygne/and the yere of grace, as teſtifyeth Guido. vi. C. xxvii. He was the fyrſte cryſten kyng that reygned in that cōtrey. And after hym many of hys lordes & ſubiectes were alſo cryſtened of the ſayd Paulinus/and the ſtamyns or byſſhoppes of theyr falſe goddes, were turned to Cryſtes

saythe. In token wherof they armed them as knyghtes, & bestrode good horses /where before by theyr lawe they myghte vse none armoure nor ryde but onely on a mare.

From that tyme forthwardes by the terme of. vi. yeres, durynge the lyfe of kynge Edwyn, Paulinus cry stened contynuelly in bothe prouyn ces of Deyra and in Brenicia in the ryuers of Gweuy & Swala, whyche he vsed for hys fontes /and preached in the shyre of Lyndesey / and buyl ded there a chyrche of stone at Lyn decoln or Lyncolne.

In thys tyme was so great peace in that kyngdome of Edwyne, that a woman myghte haue gone from one towne to an other without greke or noyaunce.

And for the refresshynge of waye goers/this Edwyn ordeyned at clere wellys cuppes or dysshes of iron or brasse to be fastened to postes stan dynge by the sayd wellys sydes, and no man was so hardy to take awaye those cuppes/he kept so good iustyce and with that he was knyghtely of hys dedes.

He was the fyrste that wanne this ile of Eubonia now called the ile of man. And by hys meanes/Osrpewal dus or Corpewaldus, the sonne of Redwaldus kynge of Est anglis or Norphis/ to whom as before is touchyd Edwyn had fledde for socoure, was conuerted to the true sayth, and a greate parte of his men with hym. And for this Edwyn excellyd ꝑ other kynges/they enuyed at hym, and spe cyally Penda kynge of Mercia / the whyche ercyted Cadwan kynge of Bry tons agayne hym. So that they two assemblyd a great hoste agayne Edwyn, and lastly met in a place cal led Hatfelde/ and after sharpe fyght on bothe sydes there Edwyne was slayne, whan he had reygned ouer ꝑ Northumbris. xvii. yeres, in the yere of our lorde, as sayth Guydo. vi. C. xxxiii. when these two kynges Cad wan or Cedwalla and Penda, hadde thus ouercomen the kynge and hym slayne and mych of hys people/ they became so cruell to men of that coun trey, that they destroyed therin mych people, as men, women, & chyldren, as well religyous as other. wherfore Paulinus the archebysshop behol dyng theyr cruelnesse/toke with him the quene & Enfleda hyr doughter, & fled by water into Kent. And for the bysshoprych of Rochester was than voyde, by reason that Romanus the last bysshop was adreynte/Paulyne was there ordeyned and made bys shop of that see, and there dyed. And also lefte there his Paull, as affyr meth Policronycon and other / the archebysshoppes see of yorke was voyde. xxx. yeres after. But ꝑ quene whyche was named Etherberga be came a menchon, & sayled into Gal lia or Fraunce / where in an abbaye called Brydgence or Bryggence, she lyued an holy lyfe and dyed/and hyr doughter Enfleda cõtynued hyr pro fessyon, and was afterwarde abbesse of Strenshalt in the vale of whitby.

After the deth of Edwyn Osrycus that was the sonne of Elfric⁹ which was brother of Ethelfridus, toke vp pon hym to be kynge of Deyra / and Eanfricus the eldest sonne of Ethel frida, as before in the. C. and. xxviii. chapiter is touched, was made kyng of Brennicia/the whyche turned the both frõ Crystes sayth, and became mysereaũtes. For the whych goddes wrech fell vpon them in shorte whyle after/for they were bothe slayne in ꝑ yere folowynge, of ꝑ fornamed Cad wan and Penda.

And whan these sayde two kynges were thus slayne/Oswalde ꝑ second sonne of Ethelfrid began his reygne ouer the

ouer the prouynce of Brennicia, as
chefe of that kyngdome of Northum
berlande/and had the rule of Deira
in lyke wyse. wherof whan Cadwan
or Cedwalla was ware/ he gathered
hys Brytons and thoughte to slee
Oswalde as he hadde before slayne
his brother Caufricus. But Oswald
whan he was warned of the greate
strength of thys Cadwan/ he made
his prayers to god, and besoughte
hym mekely of helpe to withstande
his enemyes. And or he yode to
prayer, he arreryd a crosse of tre/ be-
fore the whyche he knelyd a longe
whyle in a felde/ whyche longe after
was called Heuynfelde, and at thys
daye is had in greate worshyppe.
That place is nere vnto the town or
chyrche of Agustalde in Brennicia/
the whyche chyrche was there buyl-
ded by Oswalde after the wynnyng
of that batayle. And of the spones of
that crosse are tolde many wounders
the whiche I ouer passe.

Than after Oswalde had prayed
for the saluacyon of hys people/the
two hostes met in a felde named thā
Denysborne or Denyslake, where
was foughten a stronge batayle.
But fynally Cadwan, whyche Po-
lycronyca nameth Cedwalla, was
slayne and his people chasyd/which
were farre exceedynge the nomber of
Oswaldus hoste/whanne the sayde
Cadwan had reygned ouer the Bry-
tons after moste accorde of wryters
and also of the tyme, by the terme of
xxii. yeres/ leuynge after hym a son,
as affermeth Gaufryde, named Cad
wallus or Cadwalyn.

Francia.

THE .CXXXI. CHAPITER.

DAgobertus the fyrste of that
name, and sonne of Clothayr
before rehersed/beganne his reygne
ouer the hole monarchye of Fraunce
in the yere of our lorde. vi. hundred
xxxi/and the. xviii. yere of Cadwan
than kynge of Brytons. The which
at the tyme of hys faders deth was
in the prouynce of Austracy, gyuen
to hym by his fader, as before is she-
wed in the. C. xxvii. chappter prece-
dynge. But anone as worde came to
hym of hys faders decease / he sped
hym well accompanyed into Fraūce.
And when he was comen to the cyty
of Reynes thyder came vnto hym
many nobles / as well out of Bur-
goyne as out of other partyes of
Fraunce, and dyd vnto hym feauty
and homage.

It is shewed in the. C. xxvi. chapp-
ter of thys worke, how Clothayre
had by his seconde wyfe a sonne na-
med Heybert/the which clayned his
parte of the kyngdome of Fraunce,
and for ỹ same began to make some
styrynge. But by the good polycy &
meanes of one Brunulphe vncle to
the sayd Haybert, and brother to Si
chyld hys moder, the mater was ap-
peased/so that he had vnto hym ter-
teyne cytyes assygned, wyth landes
in Guyan. with the whiche he was
cōtentyd/ & ordeyned Tholouse for
the chefe cytye of hys prynceppate.
And after that peace confermed/Da
gobert was in quiete by the terme of
iii. yeres folowyng. But the. iiii. yere
the Gascoynes rebelled agayn hym/
the whych by hys manhode he shor-
ly subdued. And whan he had set his
lande in a quyetnesse / he called to
mynde ỹ promyse before tyme which
he hadde made to sayne Denys and
hys felowes. wherfore he with great
solempnite caused the grounde, where
these holy bodyes laye to be openyd/
and wyth great reuerēce to be taken
vp. Upon the whych bodyes he fand
fresshely wryten eyther of theyr na-
mes, so that he myghte perfyghtely
knowe that one from that other/ and
then

then caused thē to be layd in a sumptuouse shryne. And ouer them in the sayd place he buylded a royall mynster of lyme and stone, and conuerted it with plates of syluer in stede of slate or leade/ and assygned vnto ỹ prestes and mynysters therof greate and ryche possessyons. And for so goodly a temple that was of suche beautye outwarde, shulde not lacke of garnysshynge within: he therfore caused hangynges to be made to hange within the same temple/of the whiche tapettes suche as serued for the quere, were garnysshed & set with dyuerse stones in those dayes vsed. And by the foresayde place or shryne where the holy martyrs bodyes laye he ordeyned a cheste or trūke of clene syluer/to the entēt ỹ all such iewelles and ryche gyftes as were offered to ỹ holy sayntes, shulde therin be kept to the vse of the mynysters of ỹ same place, and ouer that endowed ỹ same place with many greate lybertyes & pryuyleges. And this place thus fynysshed / he caused a crosse of golde to be made, & to be garnysshed with moste precyous stones of a greate bygnesse and value/ and caused it to be set ouer the hyghe aulter wythin the sayde monastery.

This translacyon of these blessyd sayntes shulde be as wytnessyth the frēche Cronycle, in the.v. yere of the reygne of the sayd Dagobert/ which made ỹ yere of our lorde. vi. C. xxxvi. The which whā he had clerely with all honour and due reuerence fynysshed/ he thā bysyed and eyrcued his lande in mynystrynge iustyce to all persons/ and ordeyned such meanes as bylles of supplicacyon and other, that the causes and maters of poore men myghte come to his knowlege by meane wherof he gate great loue and fauour of his comons.

But amonge hys many notable dedes / one dede by hym was commytted, the whyche somdeale longe after blemysshyd hys honour. And that was that he without iudgement or processe of the lawes/ caused to be slayne the forenamed Brunulphe vncle vnto Haybert hys brother, for malyce ỹ he bare to hym, for the fauourynge of ỹ sayd Hayberttis party.

After thys the kynge was deuorsyd from his wyfe named Gertrude, for that she was barreyne & broughte forthe no frute / and was after maryed to a fayre wenche named Ranetrude, of the whyche he receyued at conuenyent tyme after, a son that was named Sigebert. Of this chyld it is told that whan he was brought to the holy bysshoppe Amandus to be confermed, beyng than of the age of .xl. dayes/ and the bysshoppe sayd ouer hym certeyne prayers concernynge the offyce of confyrmacyon, and none of the eyrcumstauntes by negligēce gaue answere vnto ỹ bysshop at conuenyent tyme: the chylde by dyuyne power sayde, Amen, in so lowde maner that all the people about standynge myghte well vnderstande it/ whereof the bysshoppe and all the people were hougely amerueyled.

Than it foloweth, this Dagobert all thys passetyme was ruled by a noble man of Fraunce, or more properly of the prouynce of Austracy, named in the Frenche booke sayntе Arnulphe bysshoppe of Mees/ and by Pepyn, whyche was ruler of the kynges paleys. By whyche season, he and also hys lande were in greate honour and prosperyte, tyll the deth of the forenamed Arnulphe / whych dyed about the season that the kyng beganne to alter and chaunge his condycyons, to the hurte of hys comons and of hys lande.

The. C.

THE .CXXXII. CHAPITER.

Igobertus ꝑ before exercised hym in all honour and vertue, beganne now to exercise iustyce and tyrannye / in pyllynge hys commons by exaccyons and tributes, in suche wyse that those that dwellyd in the outwarde partyes of hys realme, and nere vnto the Turkys and other straunge landes and nacions, were fayne to be vnder the rule of theym then of theyr owne naturall prynce. But howe so euer he bare hym agayne hys subiectes, in pyllynge and takyng from thē what he myght yet he euer hadde such a fauour to sayne Denys, that he gaue to hym what he myghte purchace, were yt wyth ryght or otherwyse. Contynuynge whyche season / he went into the countrey of Poytiers and robbyd and spoyled there the chyrche of sayncte Hyllary, of many great iewelys / and after toke wyth hym the body of that blessyd man, and causyd yt to be hadde into the monasterye of sayne Denys, & there shrynyd hym. And that done / he destroyed the cōtrey of Poytiers wyth iron and fyre / and the wallys of the cytye he made playne wyth the grounde. And for more cruelty or terrour to the people to be shewyd / he cryd the stretys of the sayde cytye, and sewe theym wythsalte for a sygne and token that he wolde haue that cytye subuertyd for euer. The whyche ruyne to thys daye appereth / for there where the olde cytye stode, is now called ꝑ olde Poytiers / and where that other standyth nowe, is called the newe cytye of Poytiers. The cause of thys destruccion of the citye & countre as sayeth mayster Roberte Gagwyne / was for, that that ꝑ erle of Poytiers rebellyd agayne the kynge.

Thus this man that whylome was a lambe / was now turned to a tygre. And ouer hys cruelnesse he was gyuen to all sensuall luste of hys body / in so myche that where so he rode he hadde folowynge hym a company of strumpettes, beside suche as he kept in dyuerse places of his realme, apparelyd and fed lyke vnto quenes.

For thys rule & other vyces vsyd by the kynge / Peppyn then mayster of the palcys was put in great wyte and blame of dyuerse lordes of the lande / thynkynge that by hys counsayle and sufferaunce, the kyng was so lad and guyded. This was ꝑ fyrst Peppyn. The seconde was mayster of the placys in that tyme of the seconde reygne of the fyrste Theodoricus / and was surnamed Uetul and Vzeuis, whyche is to meane old and lytle. And ꝑ .iii. Peppyn was son of Carolus Marcellus. The fyrste Peppyn was graundefader to the seconde by the moders syde / and the seconde was graunsyr to the .iii. by ꝑ mannes syde. whyche thyrde Peppyn was by hole assent of Frenchmen ordeyned kyng of Fraūce as after shall appere / & was father vnto the kynge named Charlis the great and emperour of Rome. All whyche Peppyns descendyd of the blood of Austracye / and hadde great possessyons wythin that prouynce. when the forenamed Peppyn vnderstode the grudge and murmour of the lordes, whyche they bare agayne hym for the kynges demeanour / he by theyr aduyces toke vnto hym a nother great lorde named Martyn, to be vnto hym assystent / and ouer that he caused ꝑ blessyd man Amandus to accompany ꝑ kynge. By whose coūsayle the kyng somdeale refrayned hym from vyce / but not all as the good bysshop hym aduer-

aduertysed.

In this tyme Heybart the kynges halfe brother dyed, and also hys son thortly after named Chilperych. By reason of whose dethes, the lordshyp and countrey of Tholouse fell to the possessyon of Dagobert. It was not longe after that a people called Asclauons or Sclauons, made warre vpon the coũtrey of Austracy. These also are called Bulgaris, and ioyne vppon a parte of Austracy. Of these tydynges when Dagobert was lerned/ he sped hym into Austracy, and there assembled a myghtye hoste of knyghtes/ & so sped him tyll he came nere hys enympes. But ỳ sayd Sclauons haupnge knowlege of the kynges great hoste, agreed by oratours to hym sent, to contynue the trybute that they before tyme payde/ ỳ which was yerely fyue hũdred oxen. where thorough ỳ warre was appesyd for that tyme/ and newe allyaunce vpon both partyes confermed.

After the whych peace thus stablyd shyd/ ỳ kyng made his son Sigebert as kynge & ruler of that lordshyp of Austracy/ assygnynge to hym the bishop of Colayn named Cunbert, and the erle Palatyne named Agasyle, to be hys tutours and rulers contynuynge his yeres of youth. And that done, ỳ kyng retourned into Fraũce, where soone after he receyued of hys wyfe a sonne named Clodoueus, the whych of many wryters is called Lodouicus or Lowes. To thys Lowes the father at conenable tyme after gaue the countyes of Burgoyne and Neustria or Normandy.

Then the kynge graunted to the house of sayncte Denys, a fayre to be kepte yerely in the moneth of June in a felde nere vnto the sayde monasterye/ and that no marchaunte of Paris nor good towne there about, shulde sell any marchaundyse but onely in the fayre/ wyth many other customes to the great auauncement of that house.

And after the kynge hadde subdued the Gascoynes, and the Brytons of Armorica or lytle Brytayne/ he then assembled a multytude of byshoppes for to dedycate and halowe the monasterye of sayncte Denys in moste solemne wyse. where a great myracle was shewyd of the clensyng of a leper or lazar/ that durynge the nyght laye wythin the sayde chyrch, and there beyng in his deuoute prayers, sawe our sauyour Cryste accompanyed wyth Peter and Paule, and also the holy martyrs sayncte Denys wyth hys two felowes, entre the chyrche by one of the wyndowes/ and after halowed the sayde chyrch. whyche after came to the sayd lazar/ and commaunded hym to shew vnto the byshoppes, ỳ he in proper person hadde halowed the sayd chyrche/ and for a token and knowlege of ỳ same, he hadde receyued hys helthe. And for more recorde of the trouth of this mater/ our sauyour Cryste, as wytnessyth mayster Robert Gagwyn, & also the frenche cronicle, drewe of the skynne of the face of the sayde lazar, and threwe yt agayne a stone, where yt remayneth at thys daye to be sene. The whyche token when Dagobert and his byshoppes vppon the morne after beheilde and sawe/ they beynge greatly amerueylyd, laft of any further besynesse touchynge the dedyfyenge of the sayde chyrche. For thys myracle great concurse of people yerely in the vi. kalendis of Marche cõmyth wyth great deuocyon vnto ỳ sayd monastery, there makyng theyr oblacions/ fermly beleuyng that the sayde chyrch was halowed with Crystes own hand. when Dagobert had this besynesse wyth other spyted & endyd/ he then called a great counsayll

of his lordes spyrytuall and temporall at hys cytye of Biguage, where he beyng set betweene his .ii. sonnes Sigebert & Clodoueus/he made a long prepolycyon & oracyon concernynge the allegyaunce/whyche he exhorted hys lordes to owe and bere to hym for the terme of his lyfe, and after to hys two sonnes there beynge-present. And then he exhorted his .ii. sonnes charitably to loue/and that they shulde in moste fraternall wyse contynue theyr lyues. The whyche prepolycyon fynyshed/ he there in that presence made his testament, that before he hadde caused to be wryten in iiii. sondry skynnes endentyd, to be rad, and then sealyd wyth certayn of theyr sealys/wherof that one he wylled to be kept in the treasory of saynt Denys, the .ii. in the treasorye of the cytye of Lyons, the .iii. in the tresory of Mees in Austracy, whyche nowe is named Lorayne, and the .iiii. in the kynges tresorye. And when the kynge had orderyd hys matiers somdeale to hys purpose/ he dyssolupd thys counsayll, and cõmaundyd euerychc estate vnto hys owne countre/ and after was somwhat besyed wyth the rebellyon of the forenamed Brytõs and Gascoynes & such other maters, the whyche I passe ouer for length of tyme.

Then the kynge lastely was syke of the flyx/ and was brought by hys desyre vnto the monastery of saynte Denys. where after he had commpted hys wyfe Nantyld wyth her son Clodoueꝰ vnto the gupdyng & tupcyon of a noble man of Fraūce, & thē mayster of hys Paleys named Agaynus/he dyed, when he had reygned xiiii. peres/& was buryed with great pompe in the forenamed monastery.

Of this Dagobert is reported by myne authour, & also the frenche cronycle besyde other wryters., that an holy ancre or hermyte of Fraunce beynge in his medytacyons, shuld se a company of fendes/whyche beyng in the see shuld haue amonge theym in a bote the soule of Dagobert, and were conueyenge yt towarde payne. But thys spirpte ceasyd not to crye & to call to saynt Denis and his felowes for helpe/the whyche lastely came clad in whyte vestymentes & delyuered that soule from the paynes of his enymyes, and conueyed it vnto euerlastynge ioy / as more at length and wyth more certaūntye yt ys declared in the bokys beforesayde.

Anglia.

THE, CXXXIII, CHAPITER.

CAdwallus or Cadwalyne the sonne of Cadwan lastely spoken of in ỹ cronycle of mych Britayn as testyfyeth Gupdo, Gaufryde, and other/beganne hys reygne ouer the Brytons in the yere of Crystes incarnacyon. vi. hundred & .xxxv/ & ỹ fyrst yere of the fyrst Dagobert then kyng of Fraunce / and also the .xii. yere of Kyngilsus & Quichilinus then kynges of westsaron. This Cadwallus was stronge and myghty, & warryd strongly vpon the Sarõs nere vnto hym/ and wanne from them both castels and townes, and droue theym backe into the lande towarde London. wherof herynge Penda kynge of Mercia/ he assembled his Sarõs and made towarde Cadwall. But he was in the ende dystressyd/and fayn to seche and purchace the fauoure of Cadwal, and lyue vnder his tribute. This Penda after this was in great fauour with Cadwall/in so myche ỹ he toke parte wyth Cadwall agayne his other Saron kynges, as after shall appere. About thys tyme Kyngilsus one of the kynges of westsa-

rons

tons/ was by the doctryne of ỹ bles-
syd man Berin⁹ cõuertyd to ỹ ryght
beleue, and cristyned of hym at the ci
tye of Dorkyke or Dorchester. And
Oswald kynge of Northumberland
was hys godfather/and weddyd his
doughter afterwarde. And then that
cytye was geuen to the byshop, to the
ende that he shuld there ordeyne hys
see/ where the sayde Berin⁹ sat. xiiii.
yeres after, & there was buryed/ tyll
Beda bishop of wyncheſter trãslatyd
his body to ỹ cytye of wyncheſter: all
be it ỹ the chanõs of Dorchester sayẽ,
that the sayd bodye of holy Beryne
was not taken thens but a nother in
the stede of hym. And yet in tokẽ ther
of/ a beers of wonder worke stãdyth
at this day ouer that graue/ where ỹ
holy man was fyrst buryed. It shuld
seme that this cytye of Dorchester is
now called Dorset. Thys see was in
the tyme of wyllyam conqueroure
chaunged to Lyncolne.

About thys tyme Sigebertus or
after some Segebertus kynge of
Eestenglande or Northfolke, whyche
reygned there nere his brother Corp
waldus / ordeyned letters to be ler-
nyd, and set scolys in dyuerse places
of his kyngdome/and ordeyned ouer
thẽ schole mayſters & pedagoges, as
he somtyme hadde seen in Fraunce.
The whyche Sygebert was conuer
tyd to Crystes fayth by the doctryne
of an holy man named Felix/ ỹ which
he was fyrste acqueynted wyth in
Fraũce or in Burgoyne. The whych
Felix came soone after that acqueyn
taunce into Eestanglia or Northfolke/
where the kynge made hym byshop
of Dũwyche nowe called Thetford.
Laſtelye the kynge betoke hys kyng
dome vnto hys neuew Egritus/and
became a munke in an abbay whych
he hym selfe buyldyd.

But when Penda kynge of Mer-
cia warryd after in that cõtrey / the
sayde Sygebert was agayne hys
wyll pulled oute of the sayde mona-
stery, and went in armes, or as some
testyfye vnarmyd wyth a whyte rod
in hys hande nycely, & so was slayne,
and well nere all his hoste of knygh-
tes that came wyth hym to that feld.

By this reherſayll apperyth here
dyscorde of wryters of the begyn-
nyng of this sayd kyngdome of Eest
anglis. For yf yt were true that this
beganne as wytnessyth Policronyc-
con in the. iiii. chappter of hys fyfte
boke, in the yere of grace. iiii. hũdred
lxxx. and. xii, as before also I haue
shewed in the. lxxx. and. xvi. chappter
of this worke: then myght yt not a-
gree wyth conuenyency of tyme, that
this Sygebert or Sebert shulde reyg
gne as kynge at those dayes nowe
mynded. wherfore ỹ sayenge of Guy
do is more concordaunte / whyche
shewyth this kyngdome to haue his
begynnynge in the yere of grace. v.
C. & lxx, as in the ende of the forsayd
chappter yt is there shortly touched.

Then yt foloweth in the story/ af-
ter the deth of this Sigebert, Anna
was made kyng of Eestanglis.

And durynge the reygne of Sige-
bertus, befell the wõder ỹ is tolde of
that holy man Furce⁹ / as is shewed
at lẽgth in the. xiii. chapiter of the. v.
boke of Policronicon aforesayd/and
in the. xii. tytle of the. vi. chappter of
the. ii. parte of ỹ famous worke cal-
led Summa Antonini.

And about this season reygned or
began to reygne the cursyd secte of ỹ
detestable & falſe prophete Mycho-
met/ ỹ which syns ỹ tyme hath so en
fected/ ỹ it hath enfectyd. ii. principall
ptes of ỹ world, as Asia, & Affrica/
& the more part of ỹ third named Eu
ropa/ & dayly wynneth vpon the cry
sten peple great lãdes & possessions.
Aboute the. vii. yere of thys forena-
med Cadwall kynge of Britons/ rey

gned in Kent a Saxon kyng named Ercombertus, the whyche had that pryncypate. xx. yeres nobly.

And amonge other of hys famous dedys / he reuyued and quyckened agayne the fayth of Cryste, that in some places of hys kyngedome was sore appallyd. For he destroyed the temples of false goddes thorough all that countrey / and ordeyned by the aduyse of his clergye, the tyme of lente to be fasted. He wedded the doughter of Inna kynge of Eestanglis named Serburga / of whom he receyuyd a doughter and named her Eukengoda / ꝑ whyche after was a menchon or nunne in the abbey of Brydgence in Fraunce before mynded, where Ethelburga ꝑ wyfe somtyme of Edwyn kynge of Northoumberlande serued god, as in the hundred and. xxx. chappter precedynge yt ys shewed / and eyther of them was abbesse of the same place. And though at those dayes there were many abbeys in thys yle of myche Brytayne / yet many both of men and of women sayled into other landes / as Fraūce, and Burgoyne and other places, because the conuersacyon and lyuynge of those countres were of more fame and perfeccyon then was then vsyd in thys yle of Brytayne.

About thys tyme as yt were about the. viii. yere of Cadwall / dyed kyng Gylsus kyng of westsaxons, when he had reygned with his brother and alone. xxxi. yeres. And Kenwalcus his sonne was kynge after hym / ꝑ which in ꝑ begynnyng of his reygne wolde not be crystyned / & forsoke hys wyfe the doughter of Peda, & toke to hym a nother. wherfore Penda in auengynge hys doughter / gatheryd hys hoste, and chasyd Kynwalcus out of his kyngdome / & kept hym thens. iii. yeres. By whyche season was Inna kynge of Eestanglis / & there conuertyd to the feyth of Cryste, & cristyned of Felix aforenamed then bysshoppe of Dūwyche or Thetford / and after he recouerid hys kyngdome, by the ayde and assystence of the sayde Inna. when Kenwalcus was restord to hys lande / he made a bysshoppes see at Kaerguent or wynchestre / and ordeyned there a bysshop named Agilbert a frenche man of byrthe, but he was called out of Irlād. The which when he had sytten there a certayn of tyme / he was put thēs I ne wote for what cause / and in his place was set an other named Wyn. Of this Wyn, as sayeth Policronicon, the towne of wynchester toke ꝑ name, as he declarith in ꝑ. liii. chappter of his fyrst boke / as yt were wynnes cytye. But he was also put thens / and then was Leutherius bysshop, and after Leutherius succedyd Cedda. And after Theodorus the archbysshop of Caunterbury ordeyned two bysshoppes to that prouynce of westsaxō. That one at wynchester / & to that was subiecte two coūtreys Southrey and South hampshyre. And that other see he ordeyned at Shyreborne / to the which were subiecte. vi. coūtreys, that is to saye Berkshyre, wyltshyre, Somersetshyre, Dorsetshyre, Deuenshyre, & Cornewayll. But in wyllyam the cōquerours tyme ꝑ see of Shyreborne was tourned to Salysbury with the see of Kāmpsburye.

It was not longe after that Kenwalcus was warreyd with the kyng of Brytons / the whyche fought with hym at a place called wyght Gosneborough, and were of him there ouercomyn. Then Cadwall assembled a newe hoste of Brytons / and mette wyth Kenwalcus at a place called the hyll of Pent / where after longe fyghte the Brytons were putte to flyghte.

THE. CXXXIIII. CHAPITER.

Ye haue harde before how that blessyd man Oswall the son of Ethelfryde, was ordeyned kynge of Northumberlande/ the whyche contynued hys lyfe in iustyce and vertue as kynge, by the terme of .ix. yeres. But Penda kynge of Mercia, that to hym & to all crysten men had great disdayne and enuye/about the ix. yere of Cadwall made warre vpon Oswald, and slew hym in a feld callyd Meserfeld / where after hys deth god shewed for hym many myracles. But after one yere of his deth Oswy his yonger brother recouerȳd the kyngdome / and buryed his hed in the chyrchepardе of Lyndesar, for the bodye was conueyed by the Pagans and deuyded in sundry peces. But yt is sayde that the hed is nowe at Durham betwene saynt Cutberttus armes. And the other parte of ȳ bodye whyche was longe after founden/was had to the abbay of Burdeaux, by Ostrida doughter of Oswy & quene of Mercia. where straūgnesse was made by the ruler of that hous for the receyte of those relykes, tyll a myracle or dyuyne token there was shewyd. But after the sayde bodye & bones were brought to Glowcester to an hous of chanōs/ and one of hys armes is at Peterborough, hole of flesshe & fell as some haue and tellen. whan Oswy had a season rulyd hys kyngdome/ he fande vnlefull meanes to slee Oswyn that was kynge of Deyra. This Oswyn was the son of Eaufrycus eldest brother of Oswalde / whyche Oswyn was good of condycyon, and there wyth both meke and mylde. when thys Oswyn was slayn by the consent of his neuewe Oswy / then Oswy toke to hym as felow of that kyngdome his broders sonne Odylwaldus the son of Oswalde. Thys Oswalde gaue vnto Cedda byshoppe of whynchester before named a groūde in a place of the Northe coūtrey in the hygh hylles called Lastyngaye, for to buylde vpon an abbay, which he there buyldyd/& after there taught his brother Chymbyllus how he shuld rule that place. Pēda kynge of Mercia, which forgate not the strengthynge and fauourynge that Anna kynge of Estanglys had shewyd to Kenwalchus hys doughters husband and his enmye/gaderyd a power of knyghtes, and yode agayne the sayde Anna, & slewe hym in playne batayll. And the same yere one Botulphus buyldyd an abbay besyde Lindecolne or Lincolne, in a place that hyght Icanno.

And as wytnessyth Beda in the. iiii. chapiter of his thyrd boke/ thys yere whych shuld be the .xvi. yere of ȳ reygne of Cadwall, Penda that of thys former victory was supprysyd wyth great pryde, came wyth hys hoste into the boundes of Northumland / entendynge to slee Oswy, as before he had slayne his brother Oswalde. wherof whē Oswy was ware he assemblyd hys knyghtes & made towarde hym. And for affynyte of maryage ȳ was betwene theyr chyldren, as after shall be shewed, and other causes/ Oswy offeryd to hym many great offers, to the entente to haue had hym refused that batayll, & to haue hadde peace wyth hym. when Oswy perceyued the obstynacye and pryde of Pēda, and saw that by no reasonable offers he myghte of hym wynne no peace / he sayde/ sens thys paynym can not receyue our gyftes and proffers that we haue offeryd to hym, we shall offer thē to hym that can receyue theym. And anon he made hys auowe vnto god, that yf he myght haue victory of his enymyes, he shuld offer his

m iii. dough-

doughter Elfleda to hym wyth ſuf-
fycyent poſſeſſyons for to buylde.xii.
abbayes/and after ioyned in batayll
with the ſayde Penda in the cõtrey
of Ledis not farre from yorke/which
was ſo ſore foughten, ꝑ the lyke ther
of was not ſeen many yeres before.
But fynally Penda was ſlayne, and
xxx. of his chefe captayns with hym/
and yet he had thryes the people that
Oſwy hadde. And thoſe that ſcaped
the ſhot and the ſwerde/ were for the
more partye drowned in the ryuer of
wynwed, whyche was nere vnto the
place of that batayll. And among the
pryſoners that were taken at this
felde/ the wyfe of Penda was one,
and her ſonnes vncle named Egfri-
dus was an other. Then Oſwy yel-
ded hys thankes to god/ and accor-
dynge to hys formet promyſe, he of-
fryd hys doughter Elfleda or Enfle
da of the age of.iii. yeres vnto god,
and toke her to the lore of Hylda ab-
beſſe of Hertſey or Hertis iland. And
after that the ſayde Hylda remoued
to the abbaye of Stremſhalte in the
vale of whitby.xxx.myle from yorke/
where ſhe was after abbeſſe, & ꝑ ſayd
Elfleda alſo. And Oſwy as he had
promyſed / gaue landes and rentes
to buyld, xii. abbeys. wherof. vi. were
in the prouynce of Brẽicia, and. vi.
in the prouynce of Deyra.

This fornamed Penda hadde dy-
uerſe ſonnes by accorde of wryters/
that is to meane wolfer, weda, and
Egfridus, beſyde other not mynded.
To this ſeconde ſonne weda, Oſwy
had beforetyme maryed a doughter
of his by cõſent of Penda his fader/
The whyche weda by helpe of Oſwy
was made kynge of ſouth Mercia,
the whyche lordſhyp is ſeuerꝑ from
the northe Mercia by the ryuer of
Trent, and conteyned by recorde of
holy Beda fyue thouſande houſhol-
des. This weda alſo promyſed when
he maryed the ſayd doughter of Oſ-
wy, that he ſhulde become a cryſten
man/ the whyche he performyd af-
ter the deth of his father. But when
he hadde ſtantly reygned thre yeres
ouer the ſayd Southmercis/ he was
by the treaſon of hys wyfe ſlayne.
And after that kyngdome fell to wol
ferus the other brother / the whyche
hadde weddyd the doughter of Er-
combert kynge of Kent named Er-
menylda. This wolferus was ſhort
ly after cryſtyned or before / ſo that
he is accõpted for the fyrſte criſtened
kyng that reygned in Mercia. This
was fader to Kenered us, & that holy
virgyne and menchon wereburga.

And for yt is longe that I ſpake
of Kenwalcus kynge of weſtſarons/
yt is to be noted that after he hadde
ouercomen the Brytons, as before
is ſhewyd, and at that tyme had not
perfyted the byſhoppes ſee of Kaer-
guent or wyncheſter, he then beſyed
hym there about. And accordyng to
the wyll of kyngylſus hys father/ he
gaue to the ſuſtentacyon of the ſayd
ſee all the lande whyche laye wythin
vii. myles of the ſayde cytye, as af-
fermeth the authoure of the Floure
of hyſtoryes/ and fynyſhed yt ſom-
dele to hys purpoſe.

But let no man thynke that it was
buylded as yt is nowe. For nother ꝑ
nor none other ben at this daye ſtan
dynge monaſtery, paleys, nor other/
but ꝑ they haue ben ſens thoſe daies
alteryd, and new chaũged, and ſome
clerely throwé downe, and ſome new
buylded / all be yt that many ſtande
vppon theyr fyrſte foundacyon as
thys yet dothe.

Soone after that Kenwalcus had
endyd this worke/ he made warre vp
pon wolfer of Mercia. But in that
iourney fortune was not to hym fa-
uourable/ for he loſte thereby, & wan
nothynge of hys entent.

It was

It was not long after that Ercombert kynge of Kent dyed/and his sonne Egbert was kyng after hym.ix.yere. And soone thereafter fell great mortalyte and sekenesse in thys lande of Bryptayne/the whyche cõtynued and encreasyd more and more durynge ỹ lyfe of Cadwall now kyng of Bryttons and of Cadwaldyr hys successour or sonne, after some writers. In the whyche season and begynnynge of this mortalyte and sekenesse, dyed many bysshoppes in this lande/ in so myche that Vitalcanus then beynge pope, ordeyned Theodorus archbysshoppe of Caũterbury to haue ỹ rule of the chyrches of Bryptayne.

Somwhat before this tyme, Benet that was in good fauour wyth kyng Oswy, & dyscendyd of ryche kynne forsoke secure and house, and all hys kynred, and became Crystes seruaunt. He went.v. sythes to Rome and came agayne/and at euery tyme he brought wyth hym relykes or bokes of Crystes lore. And lastely he was made munke / and buyldyd .ii. abbeys, that one ouer agayn ỹ other vppon the ryuer of wyre, that renneth in the countrey of .

This Benet was the fyrst ỹ brought the crafte of glasyng into this lande/ and he was Abbot of both the forsayde abbayes/ and toke to hys lore Beda when he was but.vii. yeres of age, and taughte hym durynge hys lyfe. Of the vertue and pacyence of thys holy munke and bysshoppe Benet, I myghte make a longe rehersayll. But for the holynes of his lyfe is declaryd in the legende of sayntes and other bokes of authorite / here for lengthynge of the tyme I ouer passe yt, and wyll retourne agayne to Oswy. The whyche when he had longe reygned ouer the Northumbers/ he made Cedda that was abbotte of Lastyngay, archbisshoppe of yorke, more by wyll then by skyll/ and put out wylfryda the archbisshop of that see. But yt was not longe after that Cedda was depryued of that dygnyte by the authorite of tharchebisshop Theodorus/as he deprypyd dyuerse other that tyme, whych came to theyr benefyces agayne the ordynaunce of the holy lawes of Crystes chyrche/ and made hym by great instaunce after thys, bysshoppe of westsarons. And about the .xxx. yere of the reygne of Cadwall Cissa that was father to Ine kynge of westsarons/ buyldyd ỹ abbey of Abyndon. In these dayes the munkes and clergye of Bryttayne, set all theyr myndes to serue god and not the worlde, the herte and not the wombe. wherfore they were then hadde in great reuerence & honour/ so ỹ they were thẽ receyuyd wyth all worshyp. And as they went by ỹ stretys & wayes/ men that sawe them, wold ronne to them and desyre thẽ blessynges. And well was hym that thẽ myght gyue vnto them possessyons, & buyldyd to them houses & chyrches. But as they encreasyd in ryches of the worldly treasoure/so they dyscreaced in heuenly treasour/ as in the dayes of Alueredus somdeale beganne, and sythen that tyme hath spronge not all to the pleasure of god/ wherof all is to be cõmptted to his pleasure. Then they plyed nothynge that was worldely/ but gaue them to prechynge and techynge of the worde of our sauyour/ and folowyd the lyfe that they preachyd, by gyuynge of good example. And ouer that they were so voyde of couetyse, that they receyuyd no possessyons, but yf yt were perforce.

THE .CXXXV. CHAPITER.

OSwy kynge of Northumberlande dyed/and Edfrydus his

ſonne was kyng after hym. xb. yeres Hys fader had regned wyth hys fe-lowes Oſwynus and Odylwalde xxviii. yeres. Edfrydus or Egfrydus had to wyfe that holy woman Ethel fryde, ꝑ before was the wyfe of Ton bert⁹ prynce of the ſouth Eꝛwayes, the whyche whan Egfrydus hadde holden. xii. yeres as hys wyfe, and myghte not in that whyle haue leue of hyꝛ to deale wyth hyꝛ carnally foꝛ prayer noꝛ great gyfte/ he then gaue to hyꝛ lycence to be a nenchyon at Colud vnder Aebba, that than was awnte vnto hym. And after ſhe reme ued to Ely, and there was abbeſſe, & lyued in greate penaunce and abſty-nence/ and dyed there, after ſhe had ben. vii. yere abeſſe.

And Kenwalcus kynge of weſte Saron, dyed about the yere of the reygne of Cadwall kyng of Bꝛytõs, the. xxxix. when he had regned ouer them. xxx. yeres. And hys ſonne Ke-newinus ſuccedyd hym / after that Serburga hys mother oꝛ wyfe to hys fader, had ruled that pꝛouynce one yere.

Cedda the byſſhop of weſtſarons dyed / and hys deken wenfrede was hys ſucceſſoure. And whan he was put down/ the abbot of Medãpſtede that now is called Peterboꝛoughe, was there byſſhop after hym.

Sone after this tyme dyed wyna byſſhop of Lõdon/ after whom was byſſhop Erkenwald, the whych was bꝛother to Ethelburga oꝛ Alboꝛough the Wenchen, and after abbeſſe of Berkynge in Eſſex. Thys holy byſ-ſhop Erkenwalde foundyd the mo-naſteryes of Chertſey in Southery, and Berkynge afoꝛe ſayde / whyche place hath ben pꝛeſerued ſens ꝑ fyꝛſt foundacyon. But that of Chertſey was thꝛowen downe by the Danes and reedyfyed by Edgar kynge of Englande, as after folowyth.

After the deth of wolpherus kyng of Mercia/ reygned hys bꝛother E-thelbꝛedus. And the wyfe of wolphe rus named Ermenilda, was made a menchon at Ely/ and wereburga his doughter was alſo made a nonne at Tribyngham, and dyed at hamburg-gam, where ſhe laye in the Erth. iii. hundꝛed yeres hole and ſounde/ and after that ſhe was conueyde to Che-ſter. Thys Ethelbꝛedus kynge of Mercia had. iii. holy doughters/ ꝑ is to ſay Mylburga, Mylbꝛeda, and Mylgunda/ and a ſonne of great ho-lyneſſe named Mereſyn. But after ſome wꝛyters all theſe foꝛſayde chyl dꝛen ſhulde be the chyldꝛen of wol-pherus and not of Ethelbꝛede. And wolpherus alſo had. ii. holy ſuſters named Kynedda and Kyneſwyda, bothe nonnes and buryed at Peter-boꝛough/ where ſaynte Ethelwolde buyldyd after an abbey of maydens.

ye haue harde befoꝛe how wylfryd was put out of ꝑ ſee of yoꝛke/ where-foꝛe he went to Rome and complay-ned hym to Agathon the pope / and was well allowed in ſome thynges. But the kynge and Theodoꝛus had there ſuch pꝛotectours and frendes/ that he retourned without ſpedynge of hys cauſe. wherfoꝛe he retourned vnto the South Sarons, and buyl ded an abbey in Sileſey, and pꝛea-chyd to the ſouth Sarons. xb. yeres, and conuertyd myche people / and ſhewed there a greate wonder. Foꝛ where by ꝑ terme of. iii. yeres befoꝛe hys commynge there fell no rayne vppon the grounde/ by hys pꝛayer/ god ſent to them rayne, & the groũde began to burgen and waxe grene, ꝑ befoꝛe was bareyn & dꝛyed foꝛ lacke of water. He alſo taught to them the crafte of fyſſhynge.

Egfrydus kynge of Noꝛthumber-lande claymed the lande that Ethel-dꝛede kynge of Mercia helde/ foꝛ the whyche

whyche dyuerse assembles of treaty bytwene them were had, but all were dysloluyd wythout agremēt. wherefore eyther pty gathered hys strēgth and met vppon a playne nere vnto ꝑ ryuer of Trent / where was foughtē bytwene them a longe and sharpe fyght. In the whiche among a great nombre on bothe parties, was slayn ꝑ brother of Egfryde named Elswynus / but Edfryde or Egfryde had the better. Than after this batayle meanes of peace were agayn treatyd / so ꝑ fynally Edfryde had great summes of Money in recompencement of his Brothers deth / & so resyd the sayd. ii. kynges accorded.

In this batayll was take as prisoner a knyght of Egfryde, the which after hys takynge was solde to one Fryson by the knyghtes of Ethelfryde. This Fryson to thentent to haue his prysoner the shortelyer redemed kept hym in bandes of iron which prysoner had to his brother a preest & a vertuous man, that for the delyuere of his brother prayed dayly By meane of whose prayers as oftē as ꝑ sayd preste sang masse / so often were the bandes of iron lousyd from the prysoner durynge the tyme of the masse. The whyche so cōtynued, tyll he was clerely delyuered, and hys raunson payde.

And in thys yere apperyd stella comata a blasynge sterre, whyche betokeneth deth or mortalyte of ꝑ people And in the yere folowynge dyed of ꝑ Epedempe sykenesse, the holy abbes of Ely saynt Ethelbrede / hyr suster Serburga that somtyme hadde ben wyfe to Ercobert kyng of Kent, was hyr successoure. And thys yere also dyed Helda ꝑ holy abbesse of whytby before spoken of, whiche was neuew to Edwyne lately kynge of Northūberlande. In thys abbey were also bretherne vnder the rule of Hylda, as at these dayes ben at Syō vnder the abbesse there. wherfore sondry of thē were made bisshoppes, as Bede, wylfryde, and other. Amonge these bretherne was one named Cedman a man of greate perfeccyon / ꝑ which by inspyracyon was taught to make dytyes and songes to moue men to deuocion, wherin he passyd all other at those dayes.

Soone after thys tyme Theodor for dyuerse causes, kepte a synode or counceyll of Bysshoppes and other men of the chyrche at Hatfelde. By authorite of whych counceyll he deuyded the prouynce of Mercia, that Serwolphus then ruled alone, into v. bysshoprykes / that is one to Chestre, the seconde to Worcetyr, ꝑ thyrd to Lychefelde, the fourth to Cedema in Lyndesey, & the. v. to Dorchester.

About the. xlvi. yere of the reygne of Cadwall, Kenewynus kynge of westsaxons had occasyon of warre agayne ꝑ Brytons, so that they met nere vnto the west see / where after a sharpe skyrmysshe ꝑ Brytōs were chasyd. And soone after Egfrydus kynge of Northumberlande made warre vpon the Pyctes or Scottes / bycause they fauouryd greatly ꝑ ceste anglis agayne hym. But lastly by colour or fleyng backe / they brought Edfryde into a streyte amonge Hylles and mountaynes, and slewe hym there with a grete part of his people. And after his deth a bastard brother of hys named Alfridus Notus was kynge of Northumberlande, & reygned there. xviii. yeres, as wytnessyth willyam wyrster of storyes of kynges And shortly after dyed Cadwall or Cadwalyne kynge of Brytōs / when he hadde reygned as testyfyeth Galfryde, Guydo, & other. xlviii. yeres.

But nother Polycronyca, nor none of the other authours of authorite, which Policronica allegyd / she wyth any

any lyke actes of thys Cadwall as Galfryde doth/ nor yet that he shuld be buryed to the terrour and fere of the Sarons / or an image of brasse set of hym vppon an horse ouer the west gate of Londō called Ludgate or yet the chyrche of saynt Martyne there now stondynge shulde be buyldyd by the Brytons, to the ende to pray for the sayd Cadwall and hys frendes/or ꝑ Cadwaladrus, whych of Beda is named Cedwalla, shulde be hys sonne/as of ꝑ sayd Gaufryde is affermed.

Francia.

THE .CXXXVI. CHAPITER.

Lodoueus ꝑ ponger sonne of Dagobert, & of Nautylda hys wyfe/began hys reygne ouer the myddell parte of Fraunce and other partes therof, in the yere of our lorde. vi.C. xlv/and the.x. yere of Cadwall then kynge of Brytons. And hys elder brother Sigebert was made kynge of Austracy or Lorayne accordynge to the wyll of Dagobert theyr fader. Thys as before is sayd of some wryters is called Lowes/the which was guyded by hys mother & by the counseyle of Igaynus than mayster of hys Paleys/ to whom the fader had by hys lyfe commytted hym, for he at thys daye was ponge of age and of discrecyon. And shortly after he was made kynge/all suche porcyon as belonged to the ryght of hys brother Sigebert, which was the thyrd of hys faders treasour and iewelles, was to hym delyuered. whych dystrybucyon made/he sped hym to Orleaunce, and thyder called to hym the lordes of Burgoyne, and receyued of them feauty and homage/ & ordeyned there for hys lieutenaunte or deputye a noble Burgonyon named Flantas̄/& gaue to hym in mariage the neuew of hys mother Nautylda named Ranebert. And after with a due charge to hym gyuen for guydyng of the sayd countrey/sent hym and the other lordes into Burgoyn. But wythin a season of tyme after wilibaldus a great man of birth and myght, enuyed this Flantas̄/ in suche wyse that he had hym in dyspaynynge, and began to dystourbe the countrey & the kynges peace. wherof herynge Clodoueus / in all hast commaunded the sayd wilibaldus to appere before hym. But whyle wilibaldus sent an erle & a bysshop to ꝑ kynges courte to purchace hym frendys about the kynge/he was in that whyle slayne by the gyle of hys enemy Flantas̄.

About the.iiii. yere of the reygne of Clodoueus dyed his mother Nautylda, a woman of great wisdome & of vertuous condicion/ and was honorably buryed by Dagobert hyr husbande in the church of saynt Denys. Soone after ensued such scarcety of corne / ꝑ whete & other greynes were at an excedynge pryce. For after the rate of money nowe currāt, a quarter of whete was worth. ti. markes & a halfe/by meane of which scarcitye myche poore people were famyshed & dyed for defaut. wherefore the kyng entendyng a remedy for the nedy people / caused ꝑ house or church of saynt Denys that his fader before tyme had couered with plates of syluer, to be rased of & couered with lede/ & that syluer to be dystributyd amonge the poore comōs, to socoure the agayn the great and huge famyn that then reygned/ all be it that this ded was somedele withstanden by Agulphus Abbot of that place for that tyme.

About

About the.viii. yere of his reygne/ the furste Peppyn that than ruled the house of Sigebert kyng of Iustracy, dyed. And soone after dyed Agapnus mayster of the paleys of Clodoueus. For which.ii. pyncis in eyther Countreys that they ruled, great dole and sorowe was for theym made. After the deth of which sayd Pyncis/ a noble man & cosyn to Dagoberte late kynge, was chosen mayster of the paleys with Clodoueus

Thus kynge Clodoueus otherwyse called Lowes, contynued his reygne in great peace & prosperyte, tyll lastly it fell in his mide that he wolde bysyte ỹ sepulcre of sayne Denys where after he had done certayne obseruaũces, and made his prayers/ he wolde nedely se the holy relykes and handle them. wyth the doynge whereof it semed the holy martyrs were not contentyd. For immedyately ensued suche a derknes, that the kynge and all that were aboute hym were wyth it greately astonyed and aferde, in so mych that the kyng loste the vse of reason, and wente from hym selfe more than two yeres folowynge. It is wryten of some authours, that the kynge handelyd the body of sayne Denys so rabbysshely that he brake one of his armes. But the Frenche booke and mayster Roberte Gagwyne sayen, ỹ he dyscouerid one of the armes from the sayd holy body/ the whych he after whan he was somdele restord to hys helthe, closyd in golde and precyous stoones, and restored it to the sayd monasterye/ and lyued vppon two peres folowynge that he was amendyd, but not lyke vnto hys former reygne/ so ỹ he lastly dyed whan he had reygned syke and hole by ỹ terme of.xvi. peres, not without vyce as glotony, lechery, & exceedyng auryce. And was buryed by hys parentes in the monasterye forenamed/ leuynge after hym thre sonnes named Clotharius, Chyldericus, and Theodorych. After whose deth hys wyfe named Batylde/ became a nonne in the monastery of Torbye, that she before tyme had newly renued or reedyfyed/ and ended there in holy lyfe.

THE.CXXXVII. CHAPITER.

CLotharius the eldest sonne of Clodoueus / was ordeyned kynge of Fraunce, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon.vi.hundred.lxii/ and the.xxvi. yere of Cadwall than kynge of Brytõs. The whych anone as he was somwhat stablysshed/ he made the mayster of hys palayes, a myghty man and tyrannous of condycyon named Ebroyn/ as shall appere by hys condycyons ensuynge, whan the tyme conuenyent of the expressement of them shall come. But of thys Clotharius is lefte nothyng in wrytynge of worthy memory / excepte that the Frenche cronicle sayth that he reygned.iiii. peres.

THE.CXXXVIII. CHAPITER.

THeodoricus the second sonne of Clodoueus / begane hys reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of grace.vi. hundred. lxvi / and the.xxx. yere of Cadwall than kynge of Brytons. The whych by cõceyll of his lordes sent his yonger brother Chyldereych into the lordshyp of Iustracy or Lorayne, to guyde that cõtrey/ wyth the ayde and assystence of wolphanus a noble man of ỹ countrey. For Sigeberte laste kynge of that prouynce/ was before this tyme dede wythout heyre of hys body. This Theodorych gaue hym all to slowth & rest/ so that the gouernaũce of the realme was all in the power of the

the mayster of ꝑ paleys, whych was styll contynuynge, the forenamed Eborine. The whyche among other cruell dedys by hym done/ he empry soned the holy bishoppe of Olton called Leodegary. And lastely after many tormentes and vylanyes to hym done / he raced hys eyen oute of hys hedde. This dede wyth many other to the kynges dyshonour he cmomysyd/which all were layd to ꝑ kynges charge, for so myche as the kynge kept most what his paleys. Except ꝑ one season of the yere in the moneth of may/ he shulde be broughte wyth great pompe into a place where the people shulde behold hym, and gyue and offer vnto him gyftes/and retur ne vnto ꝑ paleys ꝑ he was broughte fro, and there to reste all the yere folowynge. By meane wherof Eborin dyd what to hym was lykynge/ and vexyd and troubled the people greuously. wherfore by one assent ꝑ lordes assembled theym/ and by authorite depryued the kynge of all dignyte/ and closyd hym in a monastery, there to contynue the residue of hys lyfe, when he hadde borne the name of a kynge wythout execucyon of the acte therunto belongynge.iii.yeres/ and the cruell Eborin they exyled to Luron or Lurunborgh in the prouynce of Burgoyne/ and not to departe thens vppon payn of hys lyfe.

THE.CXXXIX. CHAPITER.

CHyldericus or Hildericus the thyrde sonne of Clodoueus, that was sent to rule the prouynce of Austracy / was ordeyned kynge of Fraunce in the yere of grace.vi.hundred.lxix.and.xxvii. yere of Cadwal before named. Of the whyche dede the sayde lordes shortely after repended the. For this Chylderych which was yonge and of lyght maners, oppressyd his subiectes greuously/and vsed the lawes of hys progenytours after hys pleasure and wyll/ & wold nothynge be aduertised nor ruled by wolphanus before named, ꝑ whyche was before tyme assigned to hym for hys counceyllour and guyde. But in augmentynge his malyce/ he caused a noble mā of his realme named Bolyde, wythout gylte or trespace or greuous offence doynge, to be bounden to a stake, and there betyn tyll he yelded the spyryte. For ꝑ whych cruelte and other/ the lordes wyth the cōmons murmuryd sore agayne hym, ferynge lyke punyssyon wythout deseruynge. wherfore they conspyryd agaynste hym, and moste specyally two noble men of byrth & of myghte named Jugebert & Amabert. which two wyth other awayted theyr tyme & season whē they myght fynde tyme cōuenient to bryng ꝑ kyng out of lyfe. And vpon a daye when ꝑ kyng with his wyfe and small companye wyth theym, were in the wood in theyr dysporte and game/ the sayde two lordes accompanyed purposely fell vppon hym & slewe hym there and hys wyfe also great wyth chyld, ꝑ which ranne betwene her lord and them, to ꝑ entent to haue sauyd her lord and husbande from the dynt of ꝑ sworde. The whyche dede was done when ꝑ sayde Childeriche had reygned ouer the Frenchemen after moste wryters two yeres.

THE.CXL. CHAPITER.

THeodoricus before deposyd/ was by the lordes of Fraūce agayne restoryd to hys former dygnyty, in the yere of our lorde.vi.hūdred.lx.and.xi/ and the.xxvb.yere of Cadwall forenamed. Therof when Eborin was warned, he anon drew vnto the kynges presence. By whose fauour & hys owne strength he was agayn

agayne reſtoꝛyd to his fourmer dignytie & honour/ ſo that he was in lyke authoꝛite as he beforetyme had ben.

Then he gatheryd to hym great ſtrength, and chaſyd Lyndeſyle then mayſter of the paleys vnto a place named Boccauyle/ and ſhoꝛtly after was poſſeſſyd of the kynges treaſoꝛye. After the which ſeaſon, this Ebo ryn fayuynge loue and amytye vnto the ſayde Lyndeſyle, trayterouſlye ſlewe hym. And when Eboꝛyne had thus delyuerid Lideſyle/ he thought he myght the better exercyſe his olde tyꝛanny and wylfull actes. So that then he exyled dyuerſe pꝛelates and men of the chyꝛche/ and ſette in theyꝛ places ſuche as hym lyked. wherof the nobles of Fraunce beynge aduertyſed/ and ſpecyally Martyne and Peppyn two of the moſt nobles of the regyon: they called to them aſſyſtẽce to wythſtande the tyꝛannye of Eboryne/ the whyche yf yt myght be ſo ſufferyd, ſhulde deſtroye the comon wele of the lande. Then this Peppyn (whyche after the reherſayle befoꝛe made in the .C. and.xxxii. chappter, ſhulde be the ſeconde of that name, and ſurnamed Uetulus and Bꝛeuis/ alſo yet by conuenyency of the tyme to me yt ſemeth to be one man that ruled in the tyme of Dagobert and nowe, all be yt the frenche cronycle meaneth two ſondꝛy perſones) wyth the foꝛenamed Martyne, aſſembled a great hoſte, and gaue batayll vnto the ſayde Eboꝛyn. But that was to theyꝛ harme/ foꝛ the loſte they felde, and were coacted to flee, the one to the cytye of Laon, and that other to Auſtracye.

And Eboꝛyne whych amonge vſed his accuſtompd treaſon, vnder dyſſymyled loue ſlew the ſayde Martyne, as he befoꝛe had ſlayne Lyndeſyle.

In thys tyme flouryd Harmefreditus a nere kynneſman of the holy byſhop Arodegayꝛe, that Eboꝛyn be foꝛe had martyꝛed, as befoꝛe is ſhewyd. The whyche Harmefreditus beryngc in mynde the paſſyon of hys ſayde kynneſman/ waytyd his tyme, and ſlewe the ſayde Eboꝛyne. After whoſe deth dyſſencyon gꝛewe amõg the Frenche men, foꝛ the admyſſyon of a mayſter of the paleys/ all be yt that after the ſayde baryaunce one Graccon was choſen and admytted. But yt was longe after that Gyllomarus his ſonne, putte hys father from the rule therof. Thys after he hadde a whyle occupyed/ he dyed of ſodayne deth. After whom ſuccedyd agayne hys father Graccon oꝛ Garacon/ the whyche alſo dyed ſhoꝛtely after.

Then beganne newe queſtyons amonge the nobles of Fraũce foꝛ this offyce/ ſo that laſtely they chaſe a man of lowe byꝛth and vnmete to that Rome named Bethayꝛ oꝛ Barthayꝛ. But Peppyn whych by all this ſeaſon was in ỹ coũtrey of Auſtracy, and harde of the contrauerſies and dyuerſe oppynyons of the Frenche men/ aſſembled to him a ſtrõge hoſte, and ſpedde hym towarde the kynge/ entendynge to haue the rule of hym, rather then ſuche other that were of leſſe authoꝛyte and honoure. wherof the kynge beynge warned/ by the pꝛoꝛ upſyon of Barthayer foꝛeſayde, he gatheryd hys armye and mette with Peppyn. And after a ſharpe fyghte betwene bothe hoſtes hadde/ Barthayꝛe was ſlayne and the kyng chaſyd/ and finally was foꝛced to admyt Peppyn foꝛ the mayſter and gouernour of his paleys. But foꝛ as mych as Peppyn had thẽ the rule of Auſtracy, and myght not well ouerſe bothe charges/ he therfoꝛe pꝛocureyed vnder hym a ſubſtitute named Noꝛdobert, whyle he returned into Auſtracy oꝛ Loꝛayne. And ſhoꝛtly after dyed the

kynge/ when he hadde borne ỳ name therof by the terme of .xix. yeres / leuynge after hym two sonnes named Clodoueus and Childebertus.

Angliæ.

THE .CXL. CHAPITER.

Cadwaladrus that of ỳ reuerende Beda is named Cedwalla/ beganne to ayse and rule the Brytons and also the westsarons, in the yere of grace vi. hundred.lxxx. and thre/and ỳ.xii. yere of Theodoricus then kynge of Fraunce/ and also the last yere of Kenewinus or Kentwinus then kynge of westsaron. This of Gaufryde and other authours wyth ỳ englysshe cronicle is called the sonne of Cedwall. But wyllyam that wrote the actes & dedys of kynges sayth, that he was the sonne of Kenebrygh̄t/and descendyd lynyally of the blode of Cerdic? the fyrste kynge of the westsarons. The which Cadwaladyr or Cedwalla made warre vpon Lotharij kyng of Kent, and destroyed myche of that prouynce/and wan the yle of wyght, and gaue the fourth parte therof vnto sayntc wylfryde / in the whyche sayde.iiii. parte were accompted .iii. hundred housholdes.

The whyle that Calwaladyr was besyed in one parte of Kent/ his brother named Mulkyn wyth a certayn of knyghtes was beseged, and lastely brente in a nother parte therof. In reuengement wherof, Cadwaladyr of new destroyed a more parte of the sayde prouynce.

Contynuynge the whyche warre, Lotharius forenamed was wouñded and dyed. After whom Edricus was kynge/ ỳ whych reygned but a shorte season.

Aboute this tyme saynte Cutbert was bysshop of Hogulstald or Durham / & after bysshop of Lyndesarn. But lastely he rufusyd that/ and became an anker in the yle of Farne, and there dyed. This ile now is called holy lande.

Thé Cadwaladyr made warre vpon Athelwold kynge of Southsarons or Southser/and slewe hym in playne batayll, and after made hys prouynce thrall to hym. But thys agreeth not with ỳ former sayenge rehersyd in the. lxxx. & xiiii. chappter of this worke precedynge / where yt is sayde that the kyngdome of Southsarons endurȳd but a hundred.xii.yeres. By whyche reason this Ethelwolde or Athelwolde shulde not at this season be kyng of Southsarōs. For the terme of a hundred and .xii. yeres was erpyred more then. lxxx. and.viii. yeres before this daye. But ye shall vnderstande ỳ this forsayde terme of a hundred and .xii. yeres / is ment for the contynuaunce of this kyngedome or they were subdued, and the kynges therof named vnder kynges as this Ethelwold was.

Then yt foloweth when Cadwaladyr hadde ruled the Brytons and also the westsarons, by the terme of thre yeres, as wytnessyth Ranulphe munke of Chester/he then of pure deuocyon renouncyd the pompe and pryde of the worlde, and yode in pylgrymage to Rome/where of the tyme Sergius then pope, he was consecrymyd and after made a white munke, and contynued there hys lyfe tyme in perfyte holynes.

Of thys Cadwaladyr or Cedwalla many and dyuers oppynyons are wryten of authours, both of hys reygne and also of the contynuaunce therof / and ouer that, of the tyme whē he forsoke hys lande. wherin is great varyaunce, as I haue shewed

in the

in the table in the begynnyng of this symple worke. So that it shuld seme that these two names shulde sounde to be sondry persones/ wherof the cõtrary is a certayned by the forsayde Ranulphe/ where as he sayeth that Cadwaladyr or Cedwalla was but one persone, the whyche was laste kyng of Britons and of westsarons. Also for so mych as they toyned nexte vnto Cambria or walys.

If I shuld here bryng in the cause of the auoydynge of thys lande by Cadwaladyr, as is rehersyd by Gaufryde/ yt woide aske a longe tracte of tyme/ and also to me yt appereyth the more doutefull, that yt is not testyfyed of the authour of Policronycon/ consyderynge the great nombre of authours, whyche he sought and allegyd for his authorite, as yt shewyth in the fyrste chappter of his fyrst boke. And specyally syns that holy Gildas and Bede is amonge the sayde authours accomptyd/ ỹ whych dyd great dilygence in serchynge of the dedes and actes of the Brytons/ and of the aungellis monycyon that to hym was geuen/ with also the prophecye of Merlyn, that the Brytons shulde not recouer this lande tyll the relykes of Cadwaladyr wyth other of holy saintes, were brought hyther out of Rome. I hold that for no part of my beleue though many welshemen yt do. wherfore to folowe the moste authorite as before is sayde/ when this Cadwaladyr had reygned thre yeres, he went to Rome/ & there lastely dyed, and was buryed in the chyrche of saynt Peter, with this epytaphye or superscrypcyon vppon his toumbe, as foloweth in metyr,

Cuimen eius sobolem pollencia regna triumphos,
Eximius proceres mœnia cestra lares,
Quæ p patrum virtus, & quæ congesserat ipse.
Cadwalá armipotens, sinxit amore dei.

The whyche verses may be englysshed in maner as foloweth.

Worshypfull ryches, kynred, triumphes assuryd,
Plenteous welth, wyth clothes rychly dyghte,
Houses, castellys, and townes strõgly muryd,
And other honours whyche by hys patentes myght/
And his owne this marcyall vertuous knyghte,
Cadwalde the stronge, descendyd of kynges bloode,
For Crystes loue renouncyd all hys gõod.

And thus here endeth the lyfe & rule of the Brytons nowe called welshe men/ whych toke that name of theyr duke or leder as sayth Guydo called wallo or Guallo/ or ellys of a quene of walys named Galaes or walaes. But how so ỹ name came first to thẽ, onw are they called welshe mẽ, ỹ somtyme were named Brytons or Brutons, descendyd fyrste of Troyans, and after of Brute, & lastely of Dũwallo Moltuncius or Molmucius Dũwallo. All be yt they were gretly myngled or medelyd wyth other nacyõs, as Romayns, Pictes, & other/ as by the redyng of the premisses ye may wel perceyue & know. And now be they englysshe, that in theyr begynnyng were named Sarõs or Anglis

But yet for so myche as welchmẽ extolle so hougely theyr blode & allyaũce, fetchyng yt frõ Pryam but not from Eneas, & regarded so lytle the progeny or lynyall descent of ỹ Sarõs or Anglis: therfore to ỹ entẽt to kele somwhat theyr hygh corage, or to oppresse in pty their brutyshe blast, I will bryng in here ỹ sayng of Guydo & other, ỹ auaũce the blode or dyssent of the Sarõs to be farre aboue the Britons/ as they ỹ ar descendyd of goddes & men immortall/ where

the Britons clayme the ofspryngе to come of men they were mortall/ & not moste to be alowed in honour, yf they thynke vppon Eneas vntrouth and treason.

Then to folowe the forsayde authour Guydo, that sayth. woden, of whom the Sarons taken theyr ofsprynall, was ỳ sonne of Frealofe the sonne of Frodewolfe, the sonne of Flyn, the son of Flokwald, the son of Geta, that was the sonne of Minos, that is nexte in honour to Pluto god of hell, and cheke iudge of his infernall iurisdyccyon.

Therfore ye welshe men here after nurture lere.

And dysppse not Sarõs that ben to god so nere.

Thus then apperyth by the conueyaunce of this worke, ỳ the last or thyrd yere of Cadwaldyr was ỳ yere of grace. vi. hundred. lxxx. & vi. which maketh the yere of ỳ worlde. v. thousand. viii. hũdred. lxxx. & v. By which reason yt apperyth, that the Britons had the rule of this land for the more party, to reken frõ the fyrst cõmynge of the duke or leader Brute, by the space of a thousande. viii. hundred & xxii. yeres.

And thus here an ende of the fyfte parte of this worke, for the consyderacyon before rehersyd, that Briton kynges after this day, reygned none in this realme / and the Sarons or Anglis began fully to haue dompnyon therof.

wherfore as before tyme I haue vsed and done in the other parties before specyfyed, so now I here agayn salute and gyue thankes to that moste excellẽt virgyn our lady saynt Mary, with the. v. ioyes of the forenamed seuen ioyes, begynnynge.

Gaude mater miserorum &c.

Thou mother to wretches and other disconsolate,
Hayll and be glad, for god of worldes all
To them that here in this presente state
Done to the worshyppe, hereward shall,
Wyth consygne meryte passynge all temporall,
In heuen to be stallyd, wyth moste felicyte,
Euermore to reygne wyth thy sonne and the.

This .v. parte to be accompted from the laste yere of the mysery of Brytons, or the fyrste yere of Constantyne brother to kynge of Armorica/ vnto the thyrd or last yere of Cadwaladyr, includyth of yeres. CCIiii.

Thus endyth the fyfte parte.

THE SEXTE PARTE.

After that Cadwaladyr was thus departyd ỳ londe/as some authours meane, this lande of Brytayne was in great dyscensyon, by meane of the Brytons and Sarons, by the terme of a. xi. yeres. And ouer that the mortalyte before spoken of encreasyd so hugely, and therewyth great hunger & sampne ouer spradde the lande/ that by occasion of one and other the people of this realme was wonderfully mynyshed & lasted/so forthly that as wytnessyth Gaufryde & also the englysshe cronycle, the quycke bodyes sufficed not to bury ỳ ded. But in so myche as of this spekyth not the mũke of Chester nor other authours as before is shewyd in the forsayde table, the whych I remytte to the correccyon of such as be lerned/and not onely to englysshe readers as there is fortherly declaryd: I therfore, as before is sayd folow the sayd Ranulph mũke of Chester/where he sayth that Iewe or Iue was kynge of westsa-

rons next after ꝑ forenamed Cadwaladyr. The whych I shall fyrst shew the story of, and so of the successours of hym in that kyngedome, for that that they subdued lastly all the other kyngedomes/ and somdeale touche of the other kyngdomes or lordshyppes as tyme conuenyente shall requyre/ in erpressynge of the storyes of the sayd westsaron kynges, tyll the lande be brought agayne to one monarchye.

And for the dyuysyon of the sayde kyngdomes stande somdeale farre a sonder/ so that to the reders yt were somwhat paynfull to serche for euerych of them: I therfore haue sette them out in the compasse folowyng, that yt maye appere to the reder the begynnynge of euerych of theym/ and howe longe a season or tyme eyther of the sayde kyngdomes contynued or enduryd/ the names also of euery kyngdome/ and in what parte of thys lande euery lordshyp was stablyshed for the tyme and sette.

THE. CXLI. CHAPITER.

THe or Jewe discendyd of the blode of Sarons/ was ruler or kyng of west sarons, nexte after that ꝑ forenamed Cadwaladyr had renounced the pompe of the worlde. The whyche to folowe the opynyon of Policronicon, began hys reygne the yere of grace. vi. hundred. lxxx. & vii, and the. xvi. yere of the seconde Theodoricus then kynge of Fraūce/ and ruled the westsarons knyghtly, and mayntayned such warre agayn the Kentyshe Sarons, ꝑ the men of Norobernia or Caunterbury graunted vnto hym to haue peace, And also for a recompensement of the deth of Wulfrynge brother to Cadwaladyr before slayne, as is shewed in the prerecedynge chappyter by the sayde Kentyshe Sarons/ they gaue vnto hym for the sayd consyderacyōs thre thousande pounde.

About ꝑ yere of the reygne of Jue/ the holy man Cutlake about ꝑ. xxiiii. yere of his age, renouncyd the pōpe and pryde of this worlde/ and toke ꝑ order of munkes in the abbay of Repyndon. And the. iii. yere after he wēt to Crowlande/ and there lad for the whyle an holy Ankers lyfe, and dyd there many myracles, and there fynally was buryed.

In whyche yle and place of hys buryenge standeth nowe a fayre abbay, the whyche for the greate resorte of gestes that thyther drawyth, and for the good and frendely chere that gestes there receyue and take/ the sayd place hath purchasyd a surname and is named Crowlande the curteys/ the whyche is a place of good fame. And there lyeth also the holy confessoure Neotus, somtyme dyscyple of Etkenwalde byshoppe of London.

In the. xi. yere of the reygne of Jue, befell the wounder and mervayle that ys tolde of Brygthwaldus / the whyche after he hadde ben a longe whyle ded, was restoryd to lyfe agayne, and tolde many thynges of great wonder to many men/ whereby he causyd great almys, and many other dedes of charyte to be executyd.

And after the dysposycyon of hys owne goodes, by the agremēt of his wyfe he went vnto ꝑ abbay of Mayroos/ and there in great holynes contynued the residue of his lyfe.

About the. xvi. yere of the reygne of Jue/ Etheldredus before mynded in the. C. a. xxxv. chapiter kyng of Mercia, forsoke this worldly honour, and

became a munke at Bardeney/whē he hadde longe tyme rulyd the men of Mercia or myddell Anglys. Hys brother Kenredus was kynge after hym/the whych also after he had regned fyue yeres, lefte his kyngdome vnto Colredus the sonne of hys vncle/ and he wyth Offa the sonne of Iue now kynge of westsarons, and wyth Egwinus bysshop of wykeies or of wyke, whych see is now at Worceter/ wyth thys forsayde companye this Kenredus yode vnto Rome in pilgrimage, and there endyd his life.

And aboute the .xviii. yere of the regne of Iue dyed the holy bysshop Aldelme, whyche fyrste was munke and abbot of Malmesbury, and the laste bysshoppe. Of hym yt is writen, that when he was styrryd by his gostly enymy to the synne of the flesshe/he to do the more torment to hym selfe and of hys body/wolde holde within his bedde by hym a fayre mayden, by so longe tyme as he myght say ouer the hole sauter/ all be yt that such holynesse is no artycle of sayntt Benettis lore, yet for dyuerse inconuenyence moste alowyd by holy doctours. And amonge many of his vertuous & holy dedys/ Ranulph mūke of Chester sheweth, that for the fame of hys holynes sprange wyde, Sergius the fyrste of that name beynge pope, sente for hym to Rome. In whyche season of his there beynge/ the sayde Sergius was accusyd or defamed of the gettynge of a chylde, the whyche the .ix. daye of the sayde chyldes age, was brought to holy Aldelme to be crystyned. By vertue of whose prayer, the sayde chylde answered vnto certayn questyons, and clerys the pope of that cryme yt was before put vppon hym.

Here about the.xxiii. yere of Iue/ Colredus then kynge of Mercia, for cause of variaunce betwene hym and Iue vnremembred of myn authour, assembled hys knyghtes, and began to warre vppon hym. wherof yt other hauynge knowlege, in lykewyse gathered his power/ and lastely met to both theyr harmes, at a place called wodynsburgth. where after longe fyght eyther of them sped so vnhappely, that yt was not knowen whether hoste hadde moste domage.

And nere about yt .xxv. yere of Iue, as wytnessyth holy Beda/ sayinte Johan of Beuerlay that then was bysshoppe of yorke, dyed/ and was buryed in the porche of the mynster of Deyrwood or Beuerlay. The Iewe or Iue callynge to mynde the counsayll of holy Aldelme, yt beforetyme had cōsayiyd hym to buylde an abbay at Glastenbury/ began the sayd worke about the.xxxii. yere of his regne/ and founded there an abbaye, the whyche contynued prosperously tyll yt comynge of yt Danis/by whose cruelty yt was then sore blemyshed. But afterward by the helpe of sayntt Dunstane, in the tymes of Edmond and Edgare, yt was agayne sufficyently repayred, & so cōtynued tyll the comyng of the Normās/after which season yt was agayne besette wyth hard happes. But now at this daye yt standeth a place of great welthe and honour.

Then yt folowyth, when Iue had ruled the westsarons nobly by the terme of. xxxvii. yeres/ by the assyduate labour of hys holy wyfe Ethelburga, as she that longe had laboured hym to leue the world and coude not brynge about her purpose/ vpon a season when the kyng and she had restyd them in a fayre palcys rychely behanged, and were vpon the morne thens departed, she by her commaundement caused the sayd palcys to be repleny sshyd wyth all kynd of fylth and dunge/and hogges and vyle bestes

ſtes there in to be layde, as well in ꝑ chambers as other houſes of offyce. And when ſhe knewe that thys paleys was thus deformyd / ſhe beſought the kynge to vyſyte the ſayde paleys. And when ſhe had brought hym therunto, ſhe ſayde to hym: I praye you my lorde behold now this houſe. where are now the ryche tappets and clothes of gold and of ſilke and other ryche apparell that we left here thys other daye. And where be the delyces and pleſaunt ſeruytours and coſtly dyſhes, that you and I lately were ſeruyd wyth. Be not all theſe paſſyd and gone? My lorde in lyke maner ſhall we paſſe and ſodenly, as ye ſe theſe worldely thynges ben paſſyd. And oure bodyes whych now ben delycately keppyd/ ſhall fall and turne into fylth of ꝑ erthe. wherfore haue in mynde my wordes that before this tyme to you I haue often ſhewyd & told/ and buſy you to purchaſe that paleys ꝑ euer ſhal endure in ioy wythout tranſmutacyon.

By meane of theſe wordes & other/ the quene turnyd ſo ꝑ kynges mynd, that ſhortly after he reſygned the gouernaunce of his kyngdome vnto Ethellardus his neuewe/ & he for the loue of Cryſte toke vpon hym the habyte of a poore man / and ſettynge a parte all pompe and pryde of thys worlde, accompanyed hym in the felowſhyp of poore men, and yode vnto Rome in pylgrymage wyth great deuocyon, when he hadde ben kynge of the weſtſaxons, as before is ſayde xxxvii. peres. After whoſe departyng the forſayde Ethelbreda hys wyfe went vnto barkynge .vii. myles frō London/ where in the abbay before of Erkenwalde foundyd, ſhe contynued and ended an holy lyfe, whē ſhe hadde ben abbeſſe of the ſame place a certayn of tyme. It is ſayd & teſtifyed of wyllyam wyter of kynges, that this Iue was the fyrſte kynge that grauntyd a peny of euery fyre houſe thorow this realm to be payed to the courte of Rome, whych at this daye is called Rome ſcote or Peter pens, and yet is payed in many places of Englande. But why yt was graunted the cauſe is not here ſhewed, how be it yt ſhall be ſhewyd after.

Francia.

THE .CXLII. CHAPITER.



Clodoueus ꝑ thyrd of ꝑ name, & ſon of the ſecōd Theodoricus/ beganne his dompnyon ouer the realme of Fraunce, in the yere of grace. vi. hondred .lxxx. and .x/ and the thyrd yere of Iue then kyng of weſtſaxons. Of this Clodoueus is of wryters lefte no maner of memorye ſoundynge to good or euyll/ but Peppyn before named contynued as maſter of the paleys by all the tyme of the reygne of ꝑ ſayd Clodoueus. The whych after that he hadde borne the name by the ſpace of. iii. peres, he dyed wythoute yſſue/ and was buryed by his father. By reaſon of whoſe deth the ſayde kyngedome fell by ſucceſſyon vnto hys brother Childebert.

THE .CXLIII. CHAPITER.

Childebertus the ſecond ſonne to Theodoryche, and brother of Clodoueus forſayde / began his dompnyon ouer ꝑ realme of Fraūce, in the yere of grace. vi. hundred. lxxx. and .xiii/ and the. vi. yere of Iue then kynge of weſtſaxons. In tyme of whoſe reygne alſo the forſayde Peppyn contynued as cheſe ruler of the kynges houſe/ all be yt ꝑ he for ſuch other charge as he had of ouerſeyng

of the realme, set in hys place a substytute or depute, as his sonne Grimonart and other.

Thys Peppyn contrary to the lawe of the chyrche/helde beside hys lawfull wyfe called Plectrude, a woman named Alpayd. For the whyche the holy bysshop of Treet named Lamberte, blamynge and rebukynge the sayde Peppyn/of the brother of the forenamed Alpayde, whyche is called Dodon or Dodoin, was slayne & martyred, in the yere of our lorde. vi. hundred. lxxx. and. xii/as testifyeth Antoninus in the. vi. chappter of the xiii. tytle of the seconde parte of hys worke called summa Antonini. And as affermeth the sayde Antoninus & also the Frenche cronycle/the sayde Peppyn receyued of the sayd Alpayde a sonne, whom he named Charlys/whyche Charlys was after surnamed Marcellus, & was tyghte profytable to the realme of Fraunce, as after shall appere.

Of the foresayd kyng Chyldebert is nothynge lefte in wrytyng worthy memory/excepte that he receyued of hys wyfe a sonne named Dagobert/and kepte the name of a kynge by ỹ terme of. xviii. yeres, as sayth the cronycle in French/and than dyed/and was buryed in the abbey of Caus in ỹ chyrch or chapell of sait Stephan.

THE .CXLIIII. CHAPITER.

Dagobert the seconde of that name, and sonne of Chyldebert before named/began his reygne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of grace. vii. hundred and. x/& the. xvii. of Jue than kynge of westsarons. The whyche was vnder the rule of Plectrude the wyfe of Peppyn than dede, and of Theodowald than mayster of the paleys. Thys Plectrude as before is shewed was stepmother to Charlys sonne of Peppyn and of Alpayde. wherfore the berynge malyce to the sayd Charlys, caused hym to be holden as prysoner wythin Coleyne. where he so as prysoner remaynynge/the foresayd Theoldowalde exercysed suche tyrannys, and putte vpon the people suche exactyons, ỹ dyscensyon grewe betwene hym and the lordes of Fraũce, so that dyuers cõspyctes and skyrmysshes were had amonge the nobles of Fraunce/for partyes were taken vpon eyther sydes, wherehy the kynges partye at length was wekyd. And fynally the sayd Theoldowalde was depryued of hys rome/and one Rangafredus was made mayster of ỹ paleys. The whyche beynge Accompanyed with conuenyent strength/toke with hym the kynge, and cõueyed hym thorow the forest of Charbõnur, tyll he came vnto ỹ ryuer of Mense. In ỹ which passetyme the forenamed Charlys beynge, as aboue is sayde prysoner/by fauoure of hys kepars or otherwyse, brake pryson and escapyd. And shortly after dyed the kynge/whan he hadde reygned or borne the name of a kynge as other of hys progenytours hadde done, by ỹ terme of. xi. yeres/leuyng after hym nother chylde, as than knowynge, nor nere of a lye/whyche was cause of myslorder of the tytle of Fraunce, as afterwarde shall appere.

THE .CXLV. CHAPITER.

Dauyell that of ỹ Frenchmen was after named Chilperich was by assente of them made kynge, in the yere of grace. vii. hundred and xxi/and the. xxiiii. yere of Jue than kynge of westsarons.

Thus as testifyeth mayster Robert Gagwyne and also the Frenche cronycle, was a preste or clerke/and for hys

for his wysedome was cherysshed before tyme in the kynges paleys/in ỹ whyche tyme and season he sufferyd hys crowne to be ouer growen. Or ellys after Antoninus, this Danyell after ỹ deth of Dagobert, for so mych as he lefte after hym none of ỹ royall blode/the Frenchemen supposynge hym to be apte for ỹ rule of the lond, for suche experyence as before tyme in hym had be proued/kepte hym secrete a certeyne of tyme tyll his heyre was fully growen / and than declared hym to be the brother of Dagobert, and chaungyd hys name / and called hym Chylperych / & so by one assente admytted hym for kynge of Fraunce.

Charles before spoken of sonne of Peppin, beynge escapyd the daunger of prysonement/ sought and compassyd by all maner of wayes, how he myghte obteyne the rome that sometyme hys fader occupyed. And thys to bryngе to effecte/ he purchasyd to hym a yonglynge of fayre & goodly maners & stature named Clothayre, and sayd that he was descendyd of ỹ royall blode of Fraunce / by meane wherof in shorte tyme he gaderyd to hym greate strength. wherof heryng Chylperych / commaunded Rangafrede to assemble hys knyghtes to wythstõde the purpose of Charlys. And soone after bothe hostes mette, nere vnto the forenamed ryuer of Mense/where was foughte a strong and cruell batayle/of ỹ whych Rangafrede was vyctor, and compellyd Charles to forsake the felde. But he shortly afterward assemblyd and gaderyd agayne togyder all suche as before were dysperklyd/ and fought efte wyth the sayde Rangafrede at a place called Ibiane. Of the whyche batayle wyth great dyfficulte Charlys was lastly wyctour / and chasyd Rangafrede, and hys hoste greatly demynysshed & lassyd. Than thyrdly these two hostes met in a felde called the wyne felde / where also was present the sayd Danyell or Chylperych haunyng in hys ayde amonge other prynces the duke of Gascoyne / and there fought a sore & cruell batayle. wherof lastly was vyctor the sayde Charlys/and constrayned the kyng wyth the sayde duke to flie vnto Orleaunce. where they takynge wyth them suche treasoure as belonged to the kynge/ fled from thens vnto the Duchye of Gascoyne.

whan Charlys conceyued that the kynge was escapyd hys daunger, & knewe that Raganfrede was in the cyty of Angiés/he sped him thether in all haste: and compassyd the citye wyth so stronge a syege, that fynally he obteyned the cytye wyth all that was therin. But it was not longe after that Charlys shewed vnto Ragã frede suche benyuolence, that he was set at hys lyberte and fredome.

The nexte yere folowyng the duke of Gascoyn before inynded, hauyng parfyte informacyon by ambassade or otherwyse/that Charlys entẽdyd to make sharpe & cruell warre vpon the Gascoynes, for that that they fauouryd and kepte wyth them Danyell or Chilperych/he in auoydyng the sayde daunger of warre, in shorte tyme after sent vnto Charlys, vndet certayne condycyons betwene them agreed, the sayd Chylperyche/ wyth al such treasour & iewellys as to him or the crowne of Fraunce belongyd.

In thys passetyme & season dyed the forenamed Clothayre, that Charles before had made kyng. wherfore to the more restfulnesse of ỹ realme, he allowed the forenamed Chylperyche for kyng/and he as mayster of the kynges paleys, as other his predecessours, ruled the land of Fraũce. Than Charlys hauynge thus the

rule

rule and gouernaunce / ruled it well and substancyally, and defended yt from all enemyes durynge the lyfe of the sayd Chylperyche. And after the whych / Chylperych whan he had contynued as kynge by the terme of v. yeres dyed / and was buryed, as sayth the Frenche cronycle in ꝑ cite of Noen or Noyen / wythout issue of hys body.

Anglia.

THE.CXLVI. CHAPITER.

EThelardus the neuew of Iue / began hys reygne ouer the westsaxons, in the yere of grace. vii. hundred and. xviii / & the thyrde yere of Danyell otherwyse called Chylperyche than kynge of Fraunce. Thys after some wryters is named Ethelbredus.

In the tyme of hys reygne, Ofric? as kynge reygned in Northumberlande / to whom holy Beda wrote the story called historia Anglicana / or more verely to hys successoure Colwolfus. Of the whyche Beda and of hys workes Ranulphe müke of Chester sheweth a compendyous processe, in the. xviii. chappter of hys. v. boke called Policronycon.

The forsayd Ofricus is named in the Englysshe cronycle Osbryght / of the whyche in the sayde cronycle is rehersed a longe worke. But for I se no authour of authorite afferme the same / I therfore in thys worke passe it ouer.

It shulde appere also by the meanynge of Polycronycon, that about thys tyme dyed Ethelbredus before touchyd kyng of Mercia / the which whan he had longe tyme ruled that countrey, he lastlye renouncyd the pompe of thys worlde, & was shorne a munke at Bardony.

Of ꝑ forsayd Ethelarde kyng of westsaxon, is lefte no memory of any actes or dedes by hym done. But as agree many wryters, he dyed whan he hadde reygned. v. yeres, wythout issue of hys body.

And in Northumberlande after ꝑ forenamed Ofricus, reygned Colwolphus / after whom Egbertus / & after whom Oswolph / and after Oswolphe reygned Ethelbald or Ethelwalde. All be it that dyuers authours of these names of kynges & contynuaunce of theyr reygnes so dyuersly & sundrysly report & wryte.

Francia.

THE.CXLVII. CHAPITER.

THeodoricus, the whyche of mayster Robert Gagwyne is alowed to be the sonne of ꝑ seconde Dagobert / began hys reygne ouer ꝑ Frenchmen, in the yere of grace. vii. hundred and. xxvi / and the seconde yere of Ethelardus than kyng of westsaxõs. The which was from hys ponge and tender age fosteryd and norysshed in a house of nonnys in womans clothynge / and lastly espyed, and by cõsent of Charlys mayster of the paleys admytted for kynge.

After the whych solempnyte fynysshed / Charlys herynge of the rebellyon of a people called the Sweuys or Swetelers / assembled an hoste, & lastly them subdued. whyche done / he turned hym toward an other part of the Almaynes, and in lyke wyse ouercame them / and after retourned into Fraunce wyth greate tryumphe and ryches, that he hadde wonne at

those

those two iourneyes.

It was not longe afterward, that Charlys had thus subdued the forsayde people of Almayne, wyth also a greate parte of Germany/but that tydyng came to hym, ꝑ Endo duke of Galcoyne rebelled agayne ꝑ kyng of Fraũce. wherfore he in all goodly haste prepatyd hys armye, and sped hym into Galcoyne / where he made so cruell warre, that he in shorte tyme damagyd greatly the countrey/ and held the duke Endo so streyte, that he was compellyd to hyde hym in secrete places of the countreye / where after greate serche he myghte not be founde. wherfore he settynge the countrey in some restfulnesse, retourned hym into Fraunce.

whan Endo was sure of the retourne of Charlys into Fraunce/for so mych as he had proupd the marcyall knyghthode of hym, and knew well he myghte not hym selfe wythstand hys knyghtly power/he therefore allyed hym wyth the kynge of Spayne than beyng a pagan or myscreaunt and named Abyderamus, and excyted and styred hym to make warre vppon the lande of Fraunce/ promysynge to hym not all onely victory, but also that londe to hym and to hys heyres for euer. Vppon comforte of whyche promyse, and also ayde of the sayde Endo / thys forenamed Arbyderamus thrystyng crysten mannys blode, and entendynge vtter desolacyon and destruccyon of the realme of Fraunce/assembled an exceedynge hooste of people, and wyth theyr wyues chyldren and catayle entryd the londe of Fraunce. And what they wan, they enioyed it as theyr owne. And so in processe came vnto the cytye of Burdeaux/ the whych after a certayne tyme of ꝑ cytesens defendyd, the sayde myscreaũtes wan into theyr possessyon, and dystroyed the people therof, with all theyr chyrches and temples of the same. And from thens passyng the countreye in wastynge it wyth iron and wyth fyre, lastly came vnto Poytiers. whyche cytye as before ye haue harde in the story of the fyrste Dagoberte in the. C. and. xxxii. chapyter, was by hym subuertyd/and at thys daye newely reedyfyed.

Thys cytye also of them possessyd/they in lyke maner as they had dalte wyth Burdeaux, so dyd they wyth thys / not sparynge that holy place of saynt Hyllary, but dyd vnto yt greate shame & vylany. And from thens they yode vnto Towers / wastynge and sleynge the people wythout mercy by all the waye that they passyd, and wasted that cytye as they had done the other.

In the whyche passetyme Charlys herynge of the cruelte of this Arbideramus / assembled hys power, and shortly met with hym nere vnto Towers. where he bare hym so knyghtely / that he slewe of the Paganys to exceedynge a nombet to be accordaunt wyth reason. But for I se it testyfyed of so many wryters, yt boldeth me to expresse the nomber/ whyche was .iii. hundred. iiii. score and .v. thousande and odde. And of the Frenchemen were slayne but .xv. hundred onely.

For the whyche victorious acte/ the sayde Charlys obteyned a sur name, and was called after that day Carolus Martellus, the whyche is to meane Charles the hamer. For lyke as the hamer maketh all metalys pliable / so Charlys made hys foes or enemies pliable to his hestis. And as the hamer cutteth, breketh, or dysseuereth iron and other harde metallys/so dyd thys Charlys dysmẽber & cut or breke the enemyes of Fraũce thorough his high prowesse.

It is

It is shewyd in the bokes called Cronica cronicarum, Supplementum cronicarum, Policronica, and other/ that this victory was obteyned by Charlis of the Sarasins, but not as inhabytaunts or tueolers of Spayne/ but that they were pflupd out of Africa, and then warryd and hadde wonne great countreys in Spayne. The whyche is more accordaunt wyth hystoryes. For in the pleggs or rehersayllys of the names of kynges of Spayne, I fynde no kynge of that name. Then yt folowyth in the story/ when Charlis Martell hadde thus obteyned victory, he cómaunded all ꝑ pillage to be brought to one place. That done, he deuyded it amonge hys knyghtes. And shortly after Endo knowlegynge hys offence, and sekyng meanes of mercy/ was agayne restoryd to the lande of Galcoyne.

THE .CXLVIII. CHAPITER.

Charles Martell hauynge the duke of Galcoyne thus rebellyd/ sent hym wyth a certayne of knyghtes agayn the reste of the sayd Sarazyns/ the whyche by hys manhode he oppressyd and subdued, and clerely voydyd the lande of theym. Then soone vpon this beganne the Burgonyons to rebelle/ and made sharpe warre vpon the Frenchemen nerre adioynaunte to them, and dyd vnto the countrey and inhabitaūtes of the same great harme. The which warre/ the sayde Martell that therin toke great payne, not without great payne, lastely yt appeasyd and them subduyd.

In tyme of the whyche warre so contynuynge/ Endo before rehersyd duke of Galcoyne dyed. wherfore Charlis to sette that prouynce in an order and due obeysaunce, yode thether. where he beynge busyed about the nedes of the same/ tydynges to hym were broughte that the wandalys which ben of the kynde or lynage of the Hunys before touched, hadde entred the land wyth an houge power and in wastynge the countrey, approchyd ꝑ citye of Senōs or Sens, and yt enuyroned or beclypped wyth a stronge syege. But by the vertue and strength of the archbyshop of ꝑ cytye named Ebe, Ebbe, or Obbo, wyth the assystence of the cytezyns of the same/ the sayde cytye was defendyd and delyueryd, from the power of the sayde wandalys/ & the power of them abbatyd and subduyd.

For these manyfolde incurcyons and assautys of enymyes, and rebellyon of the countrees that were subiecte to the crowne of Fraunce/ the treasour of Fraunce, & specyally of ꝑ temporall people was sore mynyshed and wastyd. wherfore in defence of all the lande/ Charlis Martell made requeste to the spirituall men/ & with great difficulte hadde yt graunted, that he myght leuy certayne dymys to wage therwith soudyours, & prepayre other necessaryes for ꝑ warre. Thys after the opinyon of some writers, was the fyrste tyme that euery spirytuall mannes money wythin ꝑ realme was occupyed to temporall vse. wherfore as yt is reported of diuerse cronyclars/ the sayde Charlis when he was ded, was sene by the byshoppe of Orleaunce named Ethereus, to be in great payne and tourment.

Then Charlis moued his hoste towarde the Burgonyons, that agayn were of newe styred and erhorted by dyuerse persones to newe rebellyon. And after his comynge thyther, dyd execucyon vppon suche persons as he founde culpable/ and not without batayll, sette the country agayne in quyete/

quyet/ & then retourned into Fraūce.

But he rested not longe there, or he harde worde that the Almaynes, whyche dwellyd ouer or beyonde the ryuer called the Ryne/ brake ouer in to Fraunce. These people are named in ꝑ Frenche boke Selues/ ꝑ which dyd great domage vpon the countreys adioynynge to the sayde ryuer. But yt was not long after, or he had theym chasyd and subduyd/ wyth also an nother people called the Hunis or Gothys, that he before hadde also vaynquyshed. The whych after this seconde scōfyture/ they associat vnto theym the kinge of Longobardes named Luytprandus. By whose assystens and power, the forsayde Gothis wan the citye of Aupgnon and other stronge holdes, to the great hurte of the Frenche men.

And for at this season Charlis was greued wyth sykenesse/ he therfore sent his brother named Chyldebert to wythstande the sayde enymyes/ ꝑ whyche bare hym so manfully, that he chasyd the sayde enymyes.

But thys sayinge dyscordyth wyth other authours, whyche shewen that betwene this Charlis and Luytprandus was contynuall amyte & frendshyppe/ in so myche that Luytprandus ayded & assysted the sayde Charlis to auoyde ꝑ Saralins that were entryd a countrey of Fraunce called then Gallia cisalpina.

In this tyme that Fraunce was thus wrapped in these harde happes and batayllys/ dyed the kyng Theodoricus, when he hadde occupied the name onely of a kynge. xiiii. yeres.

Anglia.

THE. CXLIX. CHAPITER.

Cuthertus the neuew of Ethelard/ began his reygne ouer ꝑ westsaxōs, in the yere of grace. viii. hūdred .xvii./ and the thyrde yere of the seconde Theodoricus then kyng of Fraunce. In tyme of whose reygn Colwolphus reygned in Northumberland / to whome as before in the story of Ethelarde is touched, holy Beda wrote the story called Historia Anglicana. About the. ii. yere of the reygne of this Cutberte apperyd in the fyrmament. ii. blasynge starrys or. ii. starris wyth cresses/ & caste as yt were brennynge brondes towarde the Northe.

And about the. vi. yere of the reygn of Cutbert dyed the forsayde holy Beda/ the which in his tyme made & wrote. lxxviii. bokes, ouer and besyde his manyfold workes of vertue that he vsyd by all his lyfe tyme. It ys told of hym, that in his later dayes when he was blynd, he was brought by ꝑ frawde of his leder vnto a great hepe of stonys / the whych his leder shewyd to hym was an assemble of men and women, that were thether comyn to here hym preache the word of god. Then he thynkynge hys reporte to be true/ anon wyth great deuocyon beganne there a collacyon. And therof when he came to the ende the stonys by dyuyne power, in lykenesse of a great multytude of people sayd Amen/ or after the sayng of Intoninus, Deo gratias.

He was so noble of lernynge and excellent in connynge / that the fyrste Sergius pope of Rome sent for him to assoyle qstyons there made in the popes vniuersyte. Also his connyng is apparent in the bokes whyche he wrote super Genesim, super Thobiam, super Esdriam, sup Neemiam, wyth other, whyche wolde aske a longe tracte of tyme to reherse, wyth also the omelies made vppon the gospellys / but I passe ouer. when he was dede/ he was buryed at ꝑ abbay of Gyrwy/ all be yt the comynyng is

o that

that he reſtyth now wyth ſaynte Cutbert of Durham. About the.ix. yere of this kynges reygne/ the holy vyrgyne ſaynt Fredeſwide dyed. Of her yt is ſayde, for vylanye that to her ſhulde haue ben done, by a kynge in Oxynford/that kynges of England at the ſeaſons ſyns haue ſparyd to entre that towne for dredde of myſhappe. who ſo wyll knowe the cyrcũſtaunce of the mater, and the holyneſſe of her lyfe/ lette hym ſerche the workes of holy Gyldas, where he ſhall be ſuffycyently informed.

Soone after thys tyme and ſeaſon/Colwolphus kynge of Northũberlande when he had reygned. viii. yeres, he reſygned his dompnyon to his colyn Egbertus/and was ſhorne a monke in the abbay of Gerup, or after ſome wryters in the abbay of Lyndeſar or holy plande.

Thus for as mych as lytle is ſhewyd of the dedis of Cutbert kynge of weſtſarons, therfore I haue made the more reherſayll of other thynges done in his tyme. For of hym is nothynge lefte in wrytynge worthy to be remembryd or mynded/ ſauynge that he often and many tymes made warre vppon Ethelwalde kynge of Mercia, and ſpedde therin dyuerſly/ & laſtely dyed when he had reygned after moſte wryters.xvi.yeres.

Francia.

THE .CXLIX. CHAPITER.



Ilderic or Childericus ỳ ſecond of that name, ỳ ſonne of Theodoricus/ began his reygne ouer the Frenſhemen in ỳ yere of our lordes incarnacyon. vii. hũdred and xl/ and the.xi.yere of Cutbertus then kynge of weſtſarons. Of the whych for his dulneſſe and hys other enormytes in hym exercyſed/ lytle or no thynge of his actes or dedes are put in memorye.

ye haue before in the ſtory of Theodoryche, harde of the puyſſaunt and ſtronge dedys of Charlis Martell/ the whyche ſtyll durynge his lyfe, cõtynued in great honour, to the great ſuertye of the realme of Fraũce, and to the great terrour and fere of theyr enymyes / wherof to reherſe all the cyrcumſtaunce yt wolde occuppe a longe tyme. wherfore ſhortely to conclude / laſtely after hys manyfolde trauayllys ſuſteyned for the weale of the realme of Fraunce, he dyed/ leuynge after hym thre ſonnes, that is to wytte Charlemayne, Peppyn, and Gryffon / to the whyche he bequethed his poſſeſſions and goodes. But for the yongeſt named Gryffon helde hym not contentyd wyth ſuche bequeſt as hys father to hym gaue/ he therfore made warre vppon hys other two bretherne. The whyche behaued theym ſo wyſely/ that wythout notable batayll, they toke theyr ſayde brother, and putte hym in a ſafe keppynge. And that done / the ſayde two bretherne aſſemblyd theyr knyghtes, and ſpedde theym agayn Hanualde duke of Guyan, then rebellyng agayn the crown of Fraũce. The whych duke with the countrey, they brought vnder theyr fryſte obeyſaunce. After the whyche victorye of the ſayde coũtrey obteyned, the ſayd two bretherne ſpedde them to the cytye of Poytyers, where they by aduyſe of the nobles of the lande, conſyderynge the vnableneſſe of Hilderyche ỳ kynge, that he was vnſuffycyent to rule ſo great a charge / dyuyded the lande of Fraunce betwene theym. So that eyther of them ſhuld vnder

vnder the kynge, rule and gouerne ſuche porcyon as then there was to them appoynted.

After the whyche porcyon Charlmayne herynge of the dyuyſyon and ſtryfe amonge the Almaynes / as thynge belongynge to hys charge, ſpedde hym thyther in all haſte. And after a parte of that countrey waſtyd and ſpoyld/ and dyuerſe of theyr ſtronge holdys caſte playne wyth the erthe/ he brought theym to due ſubiectyon.

And ſoone after he went agayne the Bauarys/ ꝑ whyche by his knyghtely ſtrength, he appeaſed in lykewyſe. In all whyche tyme and ſeaſon/ Peppyn hys brother was occuppyd in defendynge of the other partyes of Fraunce.

Then this forſayde Charlmayne ſtyryd by dyuyne inſpyracyon, or as ſome authours meane, as he before tyme hadde auowyd / ſodeynely renouncyd and gaue ouer all worldely proſperyte and domynyon, and with pure deuocyon yode to Rome. where of the pope then named Zacharias/ he wyth all honour and ioy was receyuyd, and of hym shorne a munke, and dwelled a ſeaſon in an abbaye of hym ſelfe buylded in the mounte Sarapte. But for he ſawe that dayly drewe to hym many great lordes of Fraunce/ by meane wherof he was lette from hys dyuyne ſeruyce and contemplacyon: he therfore yode thens to the mounte Caſſyne, & there endyd his naturall lyfe.

After whoſe thus departynge or gyuynge ouer of the ſayde Charlemayne/ Peppyn as onely ruler, toke vppon hym the charge of the hole realme.

In thys paſſe tyme Gryffon the yonger brother was enlargyd from pryſone/ and by fauoure of hys bretherne was aſſygned to ſuche poſſeſſyons, as to hym was demed ſuffycyent to lede an honorable lyfe.

Howbe yt when he ſawe that hys brother Peppyn hadde all the rule and he nothynge: he dyſdayned hys ſayde brother/ and thoughte no lenger to contynue in that maner, but to be partener of the rule of the lande as Charlemayne hys brother hadde ben. And this to brynge to hys purpoſe, he fledde vnto the Sarons, whyche as after ſhall appere were named Normans. And with the prynce of theym made alyaunce/ ſo that wyth theyr ayde he moued warre agayne his brother, and aſſembled a ſtronge hoſte. wherof Peppyn beynge warnyd, gaderyd hys people/ and paſſynge thorow came to the ryuer of Sunaha, or after the latyne tonge Sinuſſaha/ and Gryffon ſped hym tyll he came to a ryuer called Onacre.

Whē theſe .ii. hoſtes were thus nere, meanes of treatye were ſoughte on both partyes. Duryng whych communycacyon/ Gryffon haupnge ſuſpeccyon to the Sarons that were on his parte, leſte they wold betraye hym and yelde hym into the handes of his brother, made for that tyme a ſleyght agrement/ and ſhortly after departyd from the ſayd Sarōs, and fled to the Bauarys or into Bayon. where he allyeng hym wyth dyuerſe nobles and barons of Fraunce/ beryd and diſtourbed ſore the duke and lorde of that countrey called Taſſylon/ and laſtly dyſceaſyd hym of that lordſhyppe. wherof Peppyn beynge warned, ſpedde hym thyther wyth great ſtrength/ and ſo bare hym that he had the better of his brother, and reſtoryd the ſayd Taſſylon vnto his right/ & after retourned into Fraūce, ledynge wyth hym his brother Gryffon as his pryſoner.

But yt was not long after, that by

medyatours the sayde Gryffon was reconcilyd to his brother. And for he shuld be cõtent & haue no more cause to vary with his broder, there was assygned to hym, as wytnessyth ỹ frẽch cronicle and other xii. erldomes with in the realme of Fraunce. wyth the whyche bounteous gyfte he not be ynge cõtente/ the selfe same yere fled vnto ỹ duke of Guyan named Gayfer/and wyth hym newly conspyred agayne his sayde brother. But lastely he was there slayne as after shall appere.

Peppyn then consyderynge in hys mynde in what daunger and trouble hys father before hym had ruled the lande, & he now for his tyme in lyke agony and trouble / and the kynge, to whome belonged all the charge, kepte hys paleys & followed all his delytes and pleasures, wythoute takynge of any payne / wherfore consyderynge the premysses, & for a reformacyon of the same: sent hys ambassade to the pope then beynge zacharye before named, askyng hys aduyse, whether yt was more necessary or welfull for the realme of Fraũce that he shulde be admytted for kyng that dyd nothynge but applye hys mynde to all pleasure of hys bodye, wythout cure or charge takynge vpon hym for the guydynge of the lande and the people of the same / or he that toke vpon him all the charge and payne, in defence of the lande, and keppynge of the people in due subiection. To this the pope answerȳd and wrote vnto Peppyn, that he was beste worthy and moste profytable for the realme to be admyttyd for kynge, that ruled well the comynaltye by iustyce and prudence, and the cuymyes therof defendyth and subdueth by his polycy and manhode. The whyche answere thus receyued frome the pope, and declared vnto the lordes and barons of the realme: anone they of one assente and mynde procedyd and went to the deposynge and puttynge downe of they^r kynge and gouernour Hylderyche. And in shorte space after closyd hym in a monastery or house of relygyon, when he hadde ben occuppyer of a kynges rome by the name onely. x. peres. And that done, the Frenche men electyd and chase Peppyn for they^r soueraygne and kynge.

In the whyche Hilderyche or Childeryth endyd the lyne or progeny of Meroneus / of whome the Frenche kynges lynyally descendyd by contynuaunce of tyme as foloweth.

Meroneus.	x. peres.
Childericus	xxiiii. peres.
Clodoueus	xxx. peres.
Dagobertus	xiiii. peres.
Clodoueus	xbi. peres.
Clotharius	iiii. peres.
Theodoricus	iii. peres.
Childericus	ii. peres.
Lotharius	i. peres.
Chilpericus	xviii. peres.
Lotharius	xiiii. peres.
Clodoueus	iii. peres.
Childebertus	xbii. peres.
Dagobertus	xi. peres.
Danyel	v. peres.
Theodoricus	xiiii. peres.
Theodoricus	xix. peres
Hildericus	x. peres

Anglie.

THE .CL. CHAPITER.

Sigebert^9 or Sigbertus the cosyne of Cutbert laste kynge of the west saxons / beganne his reygne ouer ỹ sayd saxons, in the peres of ỹ incarna-

carnacyon of Crysst. vii. hūdzed and xlv/and the. v. yere of Hilderic⁹ then kyng of Fraunce. He was cruell and tyzannous to his subiectes/ & turnyd theyz lawes and customes of his foze fathers after his owne wyll and plea sure. And foz ꝑ one of the noble men of his dominyon sondele sharply ad uertysed him to chaūge his maners, and to behaue hym moze pzudently towarde his people/ he therfoze ma lycyously causeld hym to be putte to cruell deth.

About this tyme Egbertus, after the ponger wylfryde, was made arch bysshoppe of poꝛke. The whyche bzought agayn thyther the pall that his pzedecessours hadde forgone, syns the tyme that the fyzst Paulin⁹ had lefte that see and fled to Roche ster in Kent, and there lefte the sayd pall. This Egbert was bzother vn to Egbert kyng of Noꝛthumberlād/ by whose assystence and comfoꝛte, he dyd many thynges foz the weale of ꝑ see, & made there a noble libzary.

Then ꝑt folowyth, foz so myche as the kyng Sygebert contynued in his malyce & cruell condycyons/ his subiectes conspired agayn hym, and putte hym from all kyngely dyg nyte. So ꝑ he fell after to great de solacyon & mysery/ in such wyse ꝑ he was founden after in a wood oz deso late place wandzyng alone without cōfoꝛte. where he beyng so foundē by a swyne herd oz bylayne, sone tyme belongyng to the erle Cōbzan⁹ ꝑ he befoze tyme wyckydly had slayn/ in auengement of his sayd lozdes deth slew hym in ꝑ sayd place. which sayd Sigebertus was thus depzyued frō al honour/ whē he after moll wziters had reygned oz tyzannysed .ii. yeres.

THE .CLI. CHAPITER.

BEnulphus of the lyne oz blode of Cerdicus fyzst kyng of west sarons/ began hys dompnyon ouer the sayde westsarons in the yere of grace .viii. hundzed & xlviii / and the vii. yere of Hildericus then kynge of Fraunce. The bertue of thys man passyd his fame. Foz after he hadde with the agrement of the westsarons depzyued Sygebert theyz kynge frō his authozite and regally/ he fyzst ap peasyd dyuers murmurs and grud gis that kyndelyd among his subiec tes/ & set his lozdshyp in great quyet nesse and rest touchynge theyz ciuyle dyscozde.

About the. viii. yere of the reygne of this Kenulphus/ Offa slewe a tyz raunt named Beozuredus, ꝑ befoze had slayne Ethelwald kyng of Mer cia. After whose deth the sayde Offa as neuew to the sayd Ethelwald, reyg ned as kynge of that pzouynce.

Of this Offa is tolde many notable dedes, wherof somwhat I entende to shew. He hadde warre wyth the Noz thumbzes, & thē foz a tyme subdued. He also had warre wyth Ethelbzede kynge of eest anglys/ and wyth Eg bert otherwyse called Pzen kynge of Kent. whome he toke pzysoner, and led hym bounden wyth hym into Mercia.

Then after these bycto:yes, Offa buylded the chyzch of wychcom. In tyme of the whyche buyldynge, in pzesens of. xiii. bysshoppes and ma ny other great estatys/ kynge Offa enlargyd the sayde Egbert of imp:y sonement. In token wherof the peo ple beynge there pzesent / made such an exclamacyon of ioye and glad nesse, that the chyzche therof range.

Thys kynge Offa hadde suche dyl pleasure vnto the cytyzens of Caun terburye/ that he remoued the arch bysshoppes see by the agremente of the fyzste Adzyane then pope, vnto Lychefelde. He also chased the Bzy tons oz welshmē into walys/ & made

a famouſe dyke betwene walys and the vtter bondys of Mercia or mydle Englande/the whyche to this day is named Offedyche. And after he buyldyd there a chyrch, whych longe tyme after was called Offekyrke. This Offa alſo by angelycall inſpyracyon, tranſlatyd the holy prothomartyr ſaynt Albone/ and was fyrſt founder of that famous monaſterye ouer that holy bodye. The whyche ſyns the fyrſte foundacyon hath by ſondry tymes ben periſhed and hurt by Danys & other/ and newely ſyns that tyme reedyfyed. This holy Albon was martyred as before apperyth in the.lxvii.chappter and ſtorye of Cõſtantius, about the yere of our lorde two hundred.lxxx.and.xvii. By whych reaſon he ſhuld lye or he were tranſlatyd, ouer foure hundred and lx.yeres. This Offa alſo maried one of hys doughters to Bryghtricus þ was kynge of weſtſaxons. And for that in his tyme was varyaunce betwene hym and the Frẽche men, that paſſage of marchauntes was forboden: therfore he ſente that famouſe doctour Anſelmus vnto Charlis the great then kynge of Fraunce, to comon the meanes of a peace. whyche Charlis hadde after thys Anſelmus in ſuche fauour/ that he became hys diſcyple.

Then retourne we to Kenelphus/ þ whyche before tyme had had often warre wyth Offa, and with hym many conflyctes, and laſtely agreed. About the.xi.yere of thys Kenelph?/ Egbert kynge of Northumbres renouncyd his kyngly dignyte, and became a munke.

And laſtely the ſayde Offa, when he had reygned ouer Mercia.xxxix. yeres, as ſayth Guydo/ he lefte the kyngdome to hys ſonne alſo named Kenelphus, and yode to Rome.

And this Kenulph? kynge of weſtſaxon/ kepte ſtrongely hys lordſhyp agayn þ power of all his enymyes, & hadde his ſubiectes in due order of obedyence. Laſtly Kenulph was ſurpryſed wyth the loue of a womã that he kept at Werton/ and hauntyd her more ſecretely then ſtode wyth his honour. wherof hauynge knowlege a kynneſman of Sygebert late kyng, entendynge to reuẽge the depoſynge of his kynneſmã/ awayted the tyme, and beſet the houſe where Kenulphe & his paramour was ſmally accõpanyed. But ſo ſoone as Kenulph had eſpyed his enymyes/ he ſette vppon them, whych as ſayth Policronicon were.lxxx.in nõber, and fought with them a longe whyle. But in the ende he was ſlayn of Clyto or Clyton his enymye.

It was not longe after or worde ſprang of the kynges deth. wherfore Offric? then beynge mayſter of the kynges knyghtes/ toke wyth hym a certayn of the ſayde chyualry, & purſued vpon the ſayd murderers/ & laſtly encountred wyth them, and ſlewe the ſayde Clyto they? captayne with the more parte of his companye. And that done he retourned to Werton/ and there toke the corps of Kenulphe, and with great ſolemnyte cõueyed yt vnto wyncheſter/ where yt was with all reuerẽce enterryd/ whẽ he hadde ruled the weſtſaxons (all be yt that of hym the englyſhe cronycle maketh no mencyon) .xxxi.yeres.

Francia.

THE. CLIII. CHAPITER.

DIpinus the ſecõd ſonne of Charlis Martell, began his reygne ouer þ Frenchemen, in þ yere of grace. viii. hundred and.l/ & the

the seconde yere of Kenulphus then kyng of westsaxons. This as before ye haue harde, was elected to that honoure, by assent of Pope zachary, & the consent of the nobles of Fraūce/ and after he was confermyd of the seconde Stephan, when he satte after as Pope.

The fyrste yere of his reygne/ the Saxons otherwyse called Danys or Normannys, beganne to warre vppon hym. The whyche he encountred at the ryuer of Isayr/ and them knyghtly ouercame, and chased and brought them fynally vnder his subiectyon. And in his returnynge into the countrey of Fraunce/ word was brought to him of the deth of his brother Gyrkon/ the whych as before is sayde fledde vnto Gayferus duke of Guyan, and there helde hym to the ende for to haue caused the people of Guyan to haue rebellid, and to make warre agayne his brother Peppyn. wherof when some of them consyderyd the malycyous and vnstable condycyons of hym/ in auoydyng more daunger, that to theyr countrey by his meanes myght ensue, they fell so deynly vppon hym and slew hym.

when Peppyn was retourned into Fraunce/ he by the aduyse of Remigius then byshoppe of Roan, amendyd the state of the chyrche/ and causyd goddes seruyce to be songe, that before tyme hadde ben wyth lytle deuocyon and reuerence done and vttered. And other spyrytuall thynges that before were myslorderyd/ he caused them to be sette in a better forme. And shortly after Stephā aboue named, confyrmed this Peppyn and his heyres for kynges of Fraunce/ and of hym axyd ayde and assystence to wythstāde the power of Aystulphus then kyng of Longobardes/ ỹ which then warryd vppon certayne landes belongyng vnto the chirch of Rome. The whyche kenge Peppyn to hym with good wyll graūtid/ & the begynnynge of the nexte yere folowynge, wyth a great hoste entryd the boundes of Italy/ and in the same made sharpe and cruell warre. In defence wherof the sayde Aystulphus made his beste prouysyon/ and defendyd ỹ straytes and mountaynes, by ỹ which the Frenche men shuld haue further entre into hys lande/ and there gaue vnto his enmyes a stronge fyghte. All be yt he wyth his people was forcyd to gyue backe/ & for hys refuge toke ỹ citie of Pappe. wherof Peppyn hauynge informacyon/ beclyppyd ỹ sayd cytye wyth a strong syege. when Aystulphꝰ had a season defended hys cytye/ & saw by experiēce dayly his enmyes encreace, & his power mynyshe and feble/ in auoydynge of extreme daunger, he sought meanes of peace/ and in suche wyse pursued the same, that he finally hadde peace to hym graunted/ vppon condycyon that he by a daye lymytted, shuld restore to ỹ pope all ryght to his chirch belongynge, that he or any for hym helde or before tyme hadde wytholden/ wyth other thynges concernynge the sayde peace. And for the performaunce of the sayde condycyōs/ he deliueryd immediatly good hostages and pledgys. After whyche peace thus substancially confermed/ Peppyn wyth his hoste wyth great tryumphe retourned into Fraunce.

But not wythstandyng this assuryd peace, by the confyrmacyon of othe and other cyrcumstaunce before shewyd/ the nexte yere folowynge he trustynge vppon better fortune of warre, denyed and reuokyd all his former grauntes/ and refused to do as before he hadde fyrmyly promysed. For this vnstablenes and vntrouth to remedy/ the pope of newe made requeste vnto Peppyn. The

wh'ch wythout longe taryeng resembled his knightes, & made good sped towarde Italy/& not wythout daūger passyd the mountaynes / and fynally besyeged Aystulphus wythin ꝑ foresayd cytye of Papy. By meane wherof he lastly was constrayned to restore certayne cyties and other possessyons that before tyme he had taken from the pope.

After the whych agrement endyd and perfyted / wythin a shorte terme the sayde Aistulphus dyenge in hys dysporte of huntynge, fell from hys horse or with his horse. By vyolence wherof he was so brosyd, that he dyed shortly after / whan he had ruled the Longobardes, Lumbardys, or Italyans. viii. yeres.

After this victory thus obteyned by Peppyn / the lordes and prynces that dwellyd aboute hym, ferdy and drad hym, and sought to hym for allyaunce & ampte. Amonge the whych Tassylon duke of Bayon before spoken of, that newly hadde conspyred agayn hym / yelded hym to the kyng, and became hys trewe lyege man / and swore to hym and to hys two sonnes feawte.

But the Sarons, whyche in the Frenche boke are named Soysons / coude neuer hold them cōtent without dystorbynge of the Frenchemen. wherfore kynge Peppyn assembled a greate hoste and made towarde thē, and had wyth them dyuerse conflyctes and batayles. So that at length they were dryuen to aske peace / vpō condicyō that yerely after they shuld yelde vnto the kynge of Fraunce iii. hundred good horses in waye of trybute.

And that done he retourned into Fraūce / and immedyatly after ordeyned by the aduyse of hys counceyle a courte or counceyle / ꝑ whiche at this day is called ꝑ parlyamēt of Fraūce, and is lyke vnto the courte of requestes now at this day holden in England. How be it ꝑ is of mych greater resort of people, and therwyth veray delayous / in so mych that as I haue herde credyble persons say / some one mater hath hanged there in dysputacyon ouer. xx. yeres. The whych parlyament at this daye is kepte at Parys, at Roan, and other two places of the lande. And for iudges of thys counceyll or parlyament, is deputyd of the kynges coste in euery place where it is kepte an hūdred persons, what of one and what of an other.

Than it foloweth, Gayfer duke of Guyan before mynded / of wyll more than of reason, set a trybute or impositycyon vppon the spyrytuall landes wythin hys lande wythout agrement of the clergy. wherfore the bysshoppes for a redresse and remedy cōplayned them vnto kynge Peppyn. Then Peppyn sent vnto hym / monestynge hym in fayre and goodly maner, that he shuld erchew and forbere such doyng. And for the duke wolde not abstayne for the kynges cōmaūdement / he in shorte whyle assembled hys armye, and entred the territory of Guyan / in wastynge and spoylynge the countrey. And in so shorte whyle after put the duke in suche fere, that he was fayne to aplye hym to ꝑ kynges mynde and pleasure / and bound hym to restore to the clergy all that he had before taken by extort power. But whan the sayde duke was assurcyd of ꝑ kinges retorne into Fraūce / he gathered a strength of knyghtes, and sent theym to the cytye of Chalours in Burgoyne / and dyd that he cowde or myghte to the domage of that towne and countrey. In whych season the kynge was at the towne or cytye called Dury / whyther and to the whyche towne tydynges were brought to hym of the vntrew dealynge

lynge of thys forsayd duke. where wyth he beynge sore dyscontent / returnyd wyth his people into Guyã and therein bete downe many strong holdys & castellys / and toke or wõne at length Burbon, Caucaruyle, and Clermoñt / and from thens wastyng the coũtrey wyth iron and fyre, rode tyll he came to Lymoges. And for ỳ wynter came on hande / the kyng for the ease and sauegard of his people, strengthyd these forsayde cytyes, townes, and holdes, that he before had wonne / and than rode to a place called Cause or Caus, & there kepte hys crystmasse and estes. And whan the new season was come / not forgetynge hys former purpose, reentryd the forsayd duchy of Guyan, in wastynge the londe as he before hadde done / and after toke by strength the cytyes of Burgies and Towrs. In whyche season and tyme the duke wolde neuer apere in playne felde, but kepte hym in strong holdes / & as one was wone, he fled into another.

Thys warre thus contynuynge / the countreye and people were sore empouerysshed. wherfore they lastly consyderynge the obstynacy of theyr duke / wyth also the greate daunger which they stode in: murderyd theyr sayde duke / and after yelded them & the coũtrey to the kynges obeysaũce, wyth all suche treasure and iewelles as to the sayd duke belonged / where of Pepyn offerd a great parte of thẽ vnto saynte Denys.

Thys warre thus ended, wyth many other notable worꝛkes whereof the reherſall in order wolde aske a longe tracte of tyme: thys victorious prynce Pepyn was vexed wyth greuous sykenesse. wherfore in all haste he sped hym vnto sayne Martynes, where he made certayne oblacyons and prayers / and thens hys sykenesse encreasyng, was conueyed vnto Parys / where he shortly after dyed, when he had reygned as kynge by the terme of .xviii. yeres / leuynge after him .ii. sonnes, that is for to say Charle mayne and Charlys.

THE .CLIIII. CHAPITER.

Carolomanus and Charlys sonnes of Pepyn / begã theyr reygne joyntly ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lorde .vii. hundred lviii / and the .ii. yere of Kenulphe than kynge of weste saxons / so that Charlemayne had to his parte myddell Fraunce, and Charlys had Austracy wyth ỳ other deale of Fraũce.

Of ỳ elder brother Charlemayne lyttell is lefte in memorye / for he dyed whan he had reygned lyttell ouer .ii. yeres. wherfore to Charlys fell the hole realme of Fraunce / the whyche of all the nobles was ioyously admytted.

It was not longe after / Hunpldys whom Pepyn by hys lyfe hadde ordeyned rulet of Guyan, rebellyd agayne the kynge. wherfore Charlys prepared anone hys armye, and sped hym thyder / and in processe of tyme constrayned the sayd Hunpldy to forsake the countrey, and for hys tuycyon to flee vnto Lupus than duke of Gascoyne. wherfore Charlys beynge aduertysed, sent hys message to the sayd Lupus / wyllynge & commaundyng hym that he in spedy maner, shulde sende to hym hys rebell Hunpldus, or els he wolde with hys army inuade & spoyle his people and coũtrey. Vppon resceyt of which message, Lupus by coũcell condescendyd to the kynges pleasure / so ỳ he caused Hunpldus to submyt hym vnto the kynges grace and mercy. wherewyth the kynge was so well contentyd, that vppon assuraunce taken of the sayd Hunpldus, ỳ there after he shulde bs of good abearynge

toward

toward the kyng/he clerely forgaue vnto hym all hys former offence. And after he had set that countrey in a rule and order / he retorned into Fraunce. where to hym soone after came an embassade from the fyrste Idryan than pope/ requyrynge hym of ayde agayne Desyderi⁹ thā kyng of Longobardys / the whyche than had taken from the chyrche of Rome many cytyes and other possessyons.

Than Charlys acceptyng the popes request / or he began any warre agayne the sayde Desyderius, sente vnto hym an embassade / wyllynge and requyrynge hym in all honorable wyse to restore vnto the chyrche of Rome, all suche possessyons as he from the same chyrche before tyme hadde taken and yet withhelde/ and also to refrayne hym from all suche warre as he dayly made vppon the londys of the sayd chyrche. But for he sawe no frute ensue of ꝑ message/ he made prouysyon for all thyng nedefull to such a iourney. And shortly after passed the mountaynes, not all wythout batayle/ and in procesle cōstrayned Desyderi⁹ to take the cytye of Uercyle. where after he hadde refreshed hys Italyans / he gaue vnto the Frenchemen a sharpe and cruell batayle. But in the ende, Desyderius was compellyd to forsake the felde, and fled after to the forenamed cytye of Papy/ where he kepte hym as after shall appere a longe whyle.

And for to shewe you somewhat of the forsayde batayle/ ye shall vnderstande that for the greate occysyō of men ꝑ there was slayne/ the place was called longe after Mortaria, that is to meane in our vulgare or mother tonge the place of deth. In this fyghte were slayne amonge other two knyghtes greately kamyd, Amys and Amylyon/ of whom some fables are reportyd, bycause they were so lyke of semblaunt.

These two knyghtes as wytnesseth the Frenche story and also Antoninus / were brought vppe in the court of the forsayde Charles, and wyth hym well cherysshed / and fynally here slayne and buryed after some wryters in the two chappellys, whyche in the forsayde place were buylded to prape for the greate multytude of the soules of these knyghtes that there were slayne. But who that is desyrous to knowe the hole lyfe of those two forsayd knyghtes/ let hym ouerse the thyrde chapyter of the. xiiii. tytle of Antoninus / and he shall there fynde a compendyous and goodly story / the whyche for lengthe I ouerpasse and retorne my style agayne to Charlys. The which whan he was ware that Desyderius had taken thys cytye of Papy / and it greatly strengthyd both with men and bytell, in such wyse that he well vnderstode ꝑ it myghte not be shortly wonne: he therfore layde about it a stronge syege wyth the ouersyghte of sure and wyse capytayns/ and after rode to Rome to vysyte the holy apostles Peter and Poule, and also to speke wyth the pope for dyuers maters. where he tarryed a greate parte of the wynter folowynge, and after retorned vnto Papy/ whych as yet was not delyuerd nor gyuē vp.

But it was not longe after his retorne that the cytye was wonne/ wherein was takyn as prysoner the sayde Desyderius wyth hys wyfe and chyldren. The whyche to make shorte procesle, he at length forcyd hym to restore vnto the pope all such possessyons as he before tyme hadde taken from hys chyrche / and addyd more there vnto, the two cytyes of Spoletys and Beneuent. And fynally deprayed hym of all kyngely honoure, and ladde hym as prysoner

into

into Fraunce / and as a prysoner or exyle from hys naturall countreye kepte hym at the cytye of Lyons, as wytnessyth Cronica cronicarum, Jacobus Philippus, and other. And after by agremēt the pope gaue that kyngdome vnto Pyppynus hys son/ the whych cōtynued so in the French mens rule and possessyon, ouer the terme of two hundred yeres.

For thys vyctorypous dede thus obteyned by Charlis/the forenamed pope graūted vnto hym many great prepuyleges. Amonge the nomber whereof, one was that no pope durynge the lyfe of Charlys, shulde be in no wyse electid or chosyn tyll there came from hym a commaundement to go to that electyon. And also he graunted vnto hym inuestyture of benefyces spyrytuall. whyche graun tes and prepuyleges were confermed and authorysed in a Synode of an hundreth and .lui. bysshoppes, kepte in Fraunce by cōmaundement of the foresayd Adryan.

Of thys Charlys longe and tedyous it were to tell the hole of hys actes and dedes. wherfore I entende to towche but a parte of theym/and for the other deale I remitte to them ỹ haue further desyre of knowlege, vnto the bokes of Turpyn and Egyueaur chaplayne to the sayde Charlys/or ellys to the sayd bysshop Turpyn, whyche wrote a longe worke of hys vertuous dedes.

THE. CLV. CHAPITER.

This Charlys martyall after his retorne into Fraūce/ without there lōge taryeng sped hym agayne to the forenamed people called Soylons or Sarons, whyche newly rebellyd/ and warryd sharpely vppon them, and fought wyth them sondry batayles. Amonge the whyche two ben specyally noted / whereof that one was foughten at a place called Quacre, and that other at the ryuer of Esam or Helayre. By whyche two batayls the Sarons losse moch of theyr people, and were so sore feblysshed that they were fayne shortely after to put them in the mercy of Charlys. By reason wherof he bonde them vnto certayne lawes and ordynaunces / wherof specyally one as prynceypall of them, was that they frō that daye forth, shulde renounce and forsake theyr worshyppynge of Idolys and fals goddes, and beleue in the fayth of Crystes chyrch, wyth many other. For the performynge of the whyche couenauntes/the kyng toke of them good pledgys & hostages. And more ouer to the ende to mynysshe & make lesse theyr strengthe / he chase out of them .x. thousande of the moste apte men for the warrys, and conueyed them wyth hym into Fraunce. And after he hadde clothed them with the mantell of baptyme/ takynge of thē assuryd othe to be trewe to hym and to hys heyres: he after inhabyted them in dyuers places of his realme. Of the whyche people, as affermeth myne authoure, descendyd the Flemmynges and Brabāders. And thus endyd the warre of the Sarons or Soylons, that hadde contynued by the terme of many yeres passyd.

And forthwyth by assent and aduyse of hys counceyle / he prepared all abulymentes and ordynaunce of warre, to go agayne ỹ Hunys ỹ then had wonne great grouñd in Spayne. And for to bryng this war to ỹ more effectuall ende / he chase .xii. perys, which after some wryters are called dozeperys or kynges. Of the whyche

vi. were

vi. were byſhoppes & .vi. tempozall lozdes. Of the whyche byſhoppes thze were named dukes, whych were archbyſhops/& iii. erlys, which were byſhoppes. Of the tempozall lozdes thze were dukes and thze erlys/ that is to ſaye the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Neuſtria oz Nozmandy, and the duke of Guyan / & foz. iii. erlys, the erle of Palantyne, ꝑ erle of Tholouſ, and the erle of Champayn. Of ꝑ whyche alſo ſome wziters affeyme, that ꝑ famouſe knyghtes Rowland and Olyuer were. ii/ as Roulād erle of Palātyne, & Olyuer erle of Tholouſ. when Charlis had pzepared all thynges neceſſary to this great iourney/ he fyrſte made his pylgrymage vnto ſaynte Denys, and there offerd ryche great gyftes, and after pzocedyd towarde his iourney/ and fyrſte beſyegyd the citye called Pāpilona/ the whych after. iii. monethes he ſubdued to his obeyſaunce. This cytye ſtode in the entre of Spayne in the montaynes callyd montes Pyzeni.

After the obteynynge of whyche cytye, and by myzacle of ſaynt Jamys as ſayth Antoninus/ Charlis commaūded all ſuch as to Cryſtes fayth wolde be conuertyd, ſhuld be ſaued/ & the other to paſſe by ſentence of the ſwozde. And after he hadde wonne ꝑ fyrſte cytye he wanne all the coūtrey adioynynge to the ſame / by reaſon wherof he caſte great fere vnto the myſcreantis/ and wan by his ſtrēgth and by appoyntemēt (ſo that they became his trybutarys) theſe coūtres and pzouynces hereafter enſuynge/ that is to ſaye as wytneſſyth Vyncēt hiſtozyall, Antoninus, and other/ ꝑ land of Laudeluffe, the land of Pardis, the lande of Caſtyll, the lande of Maurys, the pzouynce of Nauerne, the countrey of Pozтyngall, the lāde of Byſcaye, & the lande of Palarge/ and deſtroyed in them all idollis and buyldyd in them chyzches and monaſterys/ and bzought the mozе partye of them to Cryſtes relygyon. And moſte ſpecyally the chyzche of ſaynt Jamys he buylded in Cōpoſtella wyth ſumptuous coſte/ & gaue there vnto great poſſeſſyons, to the mayntenynge of the diuyne ſeruyce of god and the mynyſters of ꝑ ſame. And ouer that with the treaſour that he gate in theſe fozeſayd countreys/ he buyldyd many dyuerſe chyzches, as well in other places as there.

Longe yt were to tell all the cyzcūſtaunce of this vyage and dyctozyes of the ſame. wherfoze I paſſe ouer. And when Charlys hadde ſped hys nedys/ he had good wyll to retourne into Fraunce. In the whych retozne Carlis caſtynge no dought noz paſſell / by the treaſon of Gaueloη a knyght oz ruler of Gaſcoyn/ ꝑ which Gaueloη hadde receyuyd of a Paynym kynge named Marſyll, great & ryche gyftes foz to betraye the hoſte of Charlis, was dyſcouyrd as after ſhewyth. Thys Gaueloη the better to compaſſe and bzynge to effecte his purpoſe/ aduiſed Charlis wyth a certayne of his people to paſſe the pozte of Celayze, and to leue behynde hym in the rereward Rouland & Olyuer wyth. xx. thouſande of the reſydue of his hoſte. And when the kynge was paſſyd wyth his hoſte/ he gaue warnynge vnto the fozenamed Marſyll and other, that they ſhulde cloſe the ſayde Rowlande in the place callyd Rounceuale. The whych accozdyng to that falſe counſayll/ with an hoſte of .lx. thouſande oz mo, beclyppyd Rowlande and his people on euery ſyde, and there fell vppon the Cryſtē men and ſlew them wythoute mercy oz pyte. In the whyche fyght, not wythſtandynge the great ſlaughter that they made of the Saraſyns/ fynally was there ſlayne the ſayd Rowlande

lande, Oliuer, and many of the no-bles of Fraunce. But this Gaucion ſcapyd not wythoute punyſhement. For he was after taken / and wyth other to hym condeſcēdyng, were put to moſte cruell deth at the cytye of Aquiſgrany.

Of thys great victory of Charlis in ſubduynge of Spayn/are dyuers opynyons. For the Frenche cronycle and Antoninus agreen, that it ſhuld be after that Charlis was ennoynted emperour of Rome. But mayſter Robert Gagwyn and other ſay, that yt was before he was emperour.

Thus this victorious prynce retournynge into Fraunce, ſubdued thā after diuerſe coūtreys, as Gallia Narbonenſis, Campanta or Champayn, and Benecuentana, and other/ whych of one mynde hadde rebellyd agayne hym.

Aboute the.xxxi. yere of his reygne as moſte wryters agre/certayne perſons of Italy conſpyred agayn Leo the.iii. then Pope of Rome, and hym vngoodly entreatyd. But he laſtely eſcappyng theyr daunger/ came vnto Charlis, and requyred hym of hys cōfort and ayde/ wherof he was not daungerous. But when he had well ſerchyd, and vnderſtode that ꝑ pope had ſuſteyned wrong/he wyth all dylygence ſpedde hym thyther. And after he had ſubdued ꝑ popes enimies/ he reſtoryd the ſayd pope to hys former dignyte. For the which dede and other that he had done for ꝑ defence of the chyrch of Rome/he was by the ſayd pope Leo or Leon ſacryd or enoyntyd emperour of Rome.

THE .CLVI. CHAPITER.

Charlis then thus ſacryd as emperour, in the yere of oure lord.viii. hundred and one/when he hadde accomplyſhed hys nedys for the weale of the chyrch and the pope, he then wyth great gyftes retourned into Fraunce.

In this tyme or ſoone after as wytneſſyth the Frenche cronycle, landed in Fraunce the famous clerkes Alcinnus or Albinus, Rabanus, & Johannes, and other of the diſcyples of Beda. The whych Charlis receyued wyth great honour/and by theyr cōſayls inſtytuted and ordeyned fyrſt the ſcole of Paris, and an other at Papia in Italy before minded. wher fore yt ſhulde ſeme that the ſayde Alcinnus was not ſent for any entreatyſe of peace betwene the two realmes of Fraunce and great Britayn, as in the ſtorye of Kenulphus before is ſhewyd.

After this tyme and ſeaſon many great and noble dedis were done by this ſayd Charlis, and by his ſonnes and capptaynes vnder hym, and by his commaundement.

And for the perſonage of ſo noble a prynce ſhuld be had in mynde/ therfore dyuerſe authours teſtyfye ꝑ he was fayre & welfaryng of body, and ſterne of loke & of face. His body was viii. fote long/& his armes & legges well lengthed & ſtrengthed after the proporcyon of the body. His face of a ſpāne breede/& his berde very long. Of hys ſtrength wonders are tolde. He wold at one mele ete an hole hare or two hennes, or a hole goſe, or lyke quātyte of other mete/& drynke ther to a litle wyne mynglyd with water.

Amonge his other notable dedis, he made a brydge ouer the ryuer of Ryne of.v. hūdred pace longe, by the cytye of Magunce. And he buylded as wytneſſyth Antonin⁹ and other/ as many abbayes or monaſteryes as there ben letters in the croſſe row of the A.B.C.

And in the front of eyther of ꝑ ſayd abbayes, after the tyme of theyr foū-

dacion/he pight or set a letter of gold of the value of an hundred pounde turnoys, whych is nere to the value of englysh money now curraunt .rr. mark. For a pounde turnoys is nych lyke.ii.s.viii.d. starlyng/and a pound Parysyen is nere vppon .xl.d. starlyng. But it standyth at no certaynte, for hyghtynge & lowynge of theyr coynes.

He also buylded or new reedyfyed the cytye of Aquisgrany/& endowyd the chyrch of our lady there wyth many great gyftes and precyouse reliques, whyche yet remayne there to this daye/in whych cytye and nere a boute he vsyd nyche to abyde & lye. And for his great dedes & victorys/he deserued to be named Charlis ỹ great. And for all his great myght and honour/yet ỹ not wythstãdynge he was meke and lowly in herte, and mylde & gracyous to the poore, and mercyfull to wretches & nedy/& sette his sonnes to lerne, as wel letters as martyall & knyghtly featys. And his doughter he set to spynnynge & woll worke. And he was expert in all spechys/so that he neded none interpretours to explane or expresse to hym ỹ message of straunge ambassatours. And in the tyme of his dyner or meales/he vsyd to haue red before hym lessons and pystles/and specyally of the workes of saynte Austayne de Ciutate dei. In hym was nothynge to be dyscommendyd/but that he helde his doughter so longe vnmaryed.

This noble man Charlis.iii. yeres before his deth/he hadde peace wyth all countreys, as well suche as were obeysaunt vnto ỹ empyre, as such as longed to his dominyon of Fraũce. In the tyme of rest amonge other goodly & vertuous dedys, he made hys testamẽt/& dystrybuted his temporall mouable goodes in. iii. ptes. wherof two part, he gaue to ỹ mayntenynge of bishoppes and other mynysters of the chyrch, and for the reparacion of chyrches & necessaries to the same, and to the mayntenynge of the dyuyne scruyce of god, with also ayde and fedynge of poore & nedy people/and the thyrde parte to hys chyldren and other of his allye.

ye shall vnderstande, this Charlis had in his treasory specyally noted before hys other iewellys, iiii. tables or bordes/wherof three were of syluer and the fourth of gold. In one was grauẽ the lykenes of the cytye of Cõstantyne the noble, the whych he bequath to the chyrche of Rome. In an other was grauen or wrought the lykenesse of the cytye of Rome/& that he gaue to the bysshop of Reynes and to his chyrche. And the thyrd table of syluer, wherin was grauen the mappa mundi/and the fourth of gold he gaue to his sonnes.

Many thynges there were and causys of the exaltyng of ỹ fame of this prynce. But among other one is specyally remembryd of myn authoure Gagwyne/that the kynge of Persye then rulynge a great parte of ỹ Orient/sent vnto Charlis an ambassad honorable wyth many ryche presentis. Amonge the whyche was an horologe of a clocke of laten of a wonder artyfycyall makyng, that at euery oure of the daye and nyghte when the sayd clocke shuld stryke, ymages on horse backe apperyd out of sondry places, and after departid agayn by meane of certayne dyces.

He sente to hym also tentys of ryche sylke and balme naturall, with certayne Olyfauntys/requyrynge hym of ampty and frendshyppe. And in lyke wyse dyd the emperour of Cõstantyne the noble/all be yt thathe in his mynde was not well contentyd, that the pope had in ỹ wyse dyuyded the empyre, and sette suche a man of

myghte

myghte in the rome therof.

Thys Charlis had dyuers wyues. But of the seconde named Eldegard he receyued .iii. sonnes/ that is to say Lewys, Peppyn, & Charlis/ ꝑ whyche Peppyn he made kynge of Longobardes or Italy, as before is shewyd.

Of thys great conqueroure what shulde I holde lenger processe: For lyke as I before shewyd/ of his notable dedys myght I make a great volume, yf I shuld of them shew the clerenesse, and the circūstaunce of euery cōquest that he in his tyme achcuyd. But deth that is to all psones egall/ lastly toke him in his dymme dauce, when he had ben kynge of Fraunce with his brother & alone. xlviii. peres. Of the whyche he ruled the empyre as before is shewyth. xiiii. peres, in ꝑ pere of his age as sayen the frenche cronycles .lxxii/ and was buryed at Aquisgrany wyth great pompe, in ꝑ pere of our lordes incarnacyon. viii. hundred and .xb. wyth this superscripcyon vppon his toumbe.

Caroli Magni christianissimi imperatoris Romanorū corpus, sub hoc sepulchro conditū est.

which may be englished as folowith.

Of Charlis the great and emperour moste crysten.

Of Rome, the bodye is hyd thys toumbe wythin.

Of the forenamed sonnes of Charlys survyued ꝑ eldest Lewys by name/ and the other two Pepin & Charlys dyed, before theyr father.

Angla.

THE .CLviii. CHAPITER.

Brigthricus of the blood of Cerdic fyrst kyng of west sarons descendyd/ beganne hys regne ouer the sayd Sarons, in pere of oure lorde, viii. hundred and. lxviii/ and the .x. pere of Charlis the great then kynge of Fraunce.

This before tyme hadde maryed one of the doughters of Offa kynge of Mercia, as before is touchyd/ by whose ayde and power he put out of hys rule Egbert the sonne of Alcumundus/ the whyche Egbert at that daye was an vnder kynge or ruler in the lordshyppe of westsaron, whyche Egbert was descendyd of ꝑ blood of the holy Genulphus/ of whome som parte of the storye ys declared in the .xxv. chappter of the .v. boke of Policronica. And after he was thus of Brigthricus expulsyd/ he saylyd into Fraunce, and there exercysyd hym selfe in featys of warre wyth the knyghtes of Charlys courte, durynge the lyfe of the sayde Brigthricus.

About the .ii. pere of thys Brigthricus, was sene in great Bytayne a wonder syghte. For sodeynly as men walked in ꝑ strete/ crossys lyke vnto blood fell vppon theyr clothes, and blood fell from heuen lyke droppes of rayne.

This after some exposytours/ betokened the commynge of the Danes into this lande, the whyche entryd shortely after. For as wytnessyth Polycronica, aboute the .ix. pere of Brigthricus the Danys fyrste entryd this lande. In defence wherof/ thys sayde kynge sent forth hys stewarde of housholde wyth a smalle company, whych shortly was slayn. But by the strength of Brygthricus and the other kynges of Sarons/ they were cōpellyd to voyde the land for that tyme and season.

Brigthricus thus well & knyghtly rulynge his land/ his wyfe named Ethelburga not wyth hym cōtentyd as she oughte to be, soughte dyuerse wayes and meanes how she myghte bringe her lorde oute of lyfe/ so that

fynally she poysoned hym wyth many other of hys housholde meyny. wherfore she ferynge punyshement, fledde into Fraunce / and by suche fredshyppe as she there hadde, was well cherysshed in Charlis courte surnamed the great.

Of her yt is told, that whan he had hadde some informacyon of the vnstablenes of this womans condycyons / he at that season beynge a wydowar, vppon a season in passynge of the tyme wyth her / sayde, nowe I put to youre choyse whyther yt wyll haue me vnto your wedded lorde, or elys my sonne stādyng here in your presence. And hym that you chose / hym shall you haue and enioye for your husbande. But she chase ꝑ son and lefte the father. Then sayde the kynge / yt thou haddest chosen me, thou shuldest haue hadde my sonne. But for thou haste forsaken me thou shalt haue nother of vs. And after he closyd her in an abbey, where in processe a lewde man kept with her such company, that she was voydyd that place / and after demeaned her so vycyously, that in processe of tyme she fell in suche pouerte, that she dyed in great penurye and myserye. For the whyche myssedemeanure of this woman, that she had innaturally slayne her lorde and husbande / the kyng of Anglis and specially of westsarons, wolde not suffer the wyues to be callyd Sueuys / nor yet suffer them to sette by them in places of great honour or kyngely sete by a long tyme after. Thus as before is shewyd by the impoysonynge of his own wyfe, dyed ꝑ kynge Brigthricus / when he had ruled ꝑ westsaxōs after most concorde of writers by the terme of .xvii. yeres.

THE .CLVIII. CHAPITER.

EGbertus the sonne of Alcumūd⁹ as before is shewyd / began hys reygne ouer the westsarons in ꝑ yere of grace. viii. hundred. lxxx. and xv / and ꝑ .xxvii. yere of Charlis the great then kynge of Fraunce. Thys as before is sayde was dryuen oute of the lande of Britayne by ꝑ strēgth of Brigthricus. But he hauynge knowlege of hys deth / spedde out of Fraunce, and in so knyghtely wyse hym demeaned, that he obteyned the regiment and gouernaunce of the aboue sayde kynge.

Bernulphus kynge of Mercia had this Egbert in derysyon / and made therof dyuerse scoffys & iappynge rymes, ꝑ which he sustayned for a time. But when he was somdeale stablysshed, and hadde prouyd the myndes and hartis of his subiectes / he lastly assembled his knyghtes, and gaue to hym a batayll in a place called Elyndoune, in the prouynce of Hampton. And all be yt that in that fyght was great dyuersyte of nomber, as. vi. or viii. agayne one / yet Egbert had the victory. For his knyghtes were lene, megre, pale, and longe brethed, so that they myghte endure to fyghte. But Bernulphus knyghtes were fatte, copulent, & shorte brethed / so that they were soone ouercome with swet and shorte labour.

Here is to be noted, that after the deth of Offa kyng of Mercia or mid dell Englande (of whome somwhat is touched in the story of Kenulph⁹) reygned his son Egfert⁹ / & after Egfert⁹ reygned Kenulfus or Kēwolfus ꝑ which Kenwolphus was father to ꝑ holy martyr Kenelme, & to .ii. fayre virgyns Quindreda and Burgenulda or Ermenilda. And after Kenwolfus succedyd the forsayd Kenelme / and after Kenelme reygned Colwolphus / and after hym succedyd Bernulphus before named.

Then to retourne agayne to Egbert / the whych when he had as before

foꝛe is ſayd ouercome Bernulphus, he ſeaſyd that loꝛdſhyppe into hys hande. And that done, he made war vppon the kentyſhe Saxons/and at legth in lyke wyſe of them obteyned victoꝛye. And as wytneſſyth Polycronica, he alſo ſubdued the Noꝛthumbꝛys/and cauſed the kynges of theſe thꝛe kyngdomes to lyue vnder hym as trybutaryes oꝛ ioyned them to hys kyngedome as teſtyfyeth the authour of the Floure of hyſtoꝛies.

Thys Egbert alſo wanne from ꝑ Bꝛytons oꝛ walſhemen the towne of Cheſter, that they hadde kepte poſſeſſyon of tyll that daye. Foꝛ the whych victoꝛyes thus by hym obteyned/he ſhoꝛtely after called a counſayll of his loꝛdes at wynchester/ and there by theyꝛ aduyſys crowned him kyng and cheſe loꝛde of this lande, that to foꝛe thys daye is called Bꝛytayne/ and ſente then oute into all coſtes of thys lande his commaundementes and commyſſyons, chargyng ſtraytly that from that day foꝛthward, the Saxons ſhulde be called Angiys/ & the lande Anglia.

About the.xxiiii. yere of the reygne of Egbert, whyche ſhulde be the yere of our loꝛd as meaneth Policronica viii.hundꝛed and xix. Kenelmus beꝛe mynded the ſon of Kenwolfus, was admytted foꝛ kynge of Mercia, beynge then a chyld of the age of. vii yeres. The whyche by treaſon of his ſyſter Quendꝛeda was ſlayne in a thycke wood, by a tyꝛaunt callid Helbertus/ and hys bodye after founde by a pyller of the ſonne beame, oꝛ of lyght dyuyne that ſhone from his bodye towarde heuen. It ys alſo redde of hym, that a colyer bare a ſcrowle wꝛyten in engliſhe then vſed/ and lette yt fall from hyꝛ vppon the aultter of ſaynte Peter in Rome/whereof the woꝛdes were theſe. At cleue in Cowbacch, Kenelme Kenebernlyeth vnder Thoꝛne hewyd beweuyd. whyche is to meane in engliſhe now vſyd: at Clent in Cow vale vnder a thoꝛne, lyeth Kenelmus hedleſſe ſlayne by fraude.

when this holy body was founde, and was boꝛne towarde the place of his ſepulture/ his foꝛenamed ſyſter entendynge ſome deryſyon oꝛ other vylanye to be done to the coꝛps, lenyd oute of a wyndowe where by the coꝛps ſhulde paſſe. And to bꝛyng her malycyouſe purpoſe aboute, I note by what ſoꝛcery ſhe ment/ there ſhe redde the pſalme of the Sauter/ begynnynge Deus laudem, backward, But what ſo her entente was/ ſhe there incontynently fell blynde, and her eyen dyſtylled dꝛopes of blood, that fell vppon the Sauter boke. The which in token of goddes wꝛetche, in that boke remayne at thys daye to be ſene. Of the holynes of thys martyꝛ & of his vertue, ꝑ legẽde of ſayntes repoꝛtyth the ſurpluſage.

In the.xxix. yere of the reygne of Egbert, oꝛ after the engliſhe cronycle Edbꝛyght/ the Danys wyth a great hoſte entꝛyd the ſeconde tyme thys londe, and ſpoyled the ple of Shepey in Kent oꝛ nere to kent. wherof herynge the kynge Egbert/ aſſembled hys people, and met wyth theym at a place callyd Carrum. But he wanne of that fyghte lytell woꝛſhyppe/ foꝛ the Danys compelled hym and his knyghtes to foꝛſake the felde. And by pꝛeſumpcyon of ꝑ victoꝛye they dꝛewe weſtwarde/ and made a confederey wyth weſte Bꝛytons that lined in ſeruage. By whoſe power they aſſayllyd Egbertus landes, and dyd myche harme in many placys of hys dompnyon and elſys where/ ſo that after thys daye they were contynuallye abydynge in one place of the realme of Englande oꝛ other, tyll ꝑ tyme of harde

kynytus laste kynge of the Danys blood/ so that many of theym were maryed to Englishe women, and many that nowe ben or in tyme passed were called englyshe men, are dyscendyd of theym. And all be yt that they were many and sondry tymes dryuen out of that lande, and chasyd frō one countrey to a nother, as after ye shall here: yet that not withstādyng they euer gaderyd newe strengthes and power/ so that they abode styll wythin the lande.

Of the kynge of these Danys, and of what people they be dyscended, dyuerse opynyons of wryters there be/ whych now I passe ouer, for so mych as I entende to shewe somewhat of theym in this worke folowynge.

Then it folowyth in the storye the tyme contynuyng of the persecution of these forsayd Paganys and Danes, Egbert or Edbryght dyed/ whē he hadde well and nobly ruled the westsaxons and other the moze parte of Englande, by the terme after most wryters of .xxxvii. yeres/ and was buryed at wynchester as sayth Guydo, and lefte after hym a sonne named Athenulphus.

Francia.

THE CLIX. CHAPITER.

Odouicus þ fyrst of that name, and sonne of Charlis the great/ began hys reygne ouer þ realme of Fraū ce, & also his empyre ouer the Romaynes, in the yere of grace. viii. hūdred and .xv/ and the .xx. yere of Egbertus then kynge of westsaxons. Thys for his mekenesse was called Lewys the mylde or meke.

In tyme of hys fathers decease he was occupyed in Guyan/ the whych he before tyme hadde the rule and domynyon of by commaundement of his father. But when he was aduertised of his faders deth, he anon sped hym toward Aquisgrani/ so þ þ .xxx. day after hys departyng out of Guyan he came vnto the forsayde cytye, where he was mette wyth all the nobles and barons of Fraūce. And fyrst or he medled or toke vpon hym any cure or charge of hys owne besynes/ he with moste deuocyon caused great obseruaunces and mych dyuyne seruyce to be done aboute the sepulture of his father. whyche obseruaunce & prayers fynyshed and endyd/ þ sayde Lewes commaundyd to come before hym dyuerse ambassadours, that frō dyuerse prynces were sent vnto hys father Charlis, and to theym gaue answers concernyng theyr legacyōs and messagis/ and then proceded vn to the nedes of his realm for þ weale therof and of his people.

wherein he beynge besyed/ worde was brought to hym of an ambassad royall, þ was comen from Michael the emperour of Constantyne the noble. Agayne the whyche he sent certayne of hys lordes to receyue them/ and so wyth all honour to bryng thē vnto hys presence. Of whose commynge the entente was, to presente hym wyth certayne ryche gyftes, and to desyre hym of his amyte and frendshyppe.

Also soone after came vnto hym messengers from the Beneuētanys/ offeryng vnto his magnyfycence obligacyons and bondes to be his true lyeges, and to paye to hym yerely in way of trybute .vi. thousande ducates of gold. A ducate is of sondry valuys/ but the leste in value is .iiii. s. iii.d. ob, and the beste. iiii. s. viii.d.

Then the Moysons or Sarons that were so dyuerse of condycyon/

beganne

beganne to murmoure and rebell agayne this Lowys. wherfore or he wolde assemble any people agayne theym/ he sent thyder certayne persones to know ꝑ cause of theyr rebellyon. And when he was enfourmed, that yt was for the takynge awaye from them of certayne lãdes and possessyons by hys father/ he then restored agayne the sayde landes/ and so recouncyled the countrey to his subiectyon. For this dede some of his lordes grudged/ and sayde such myldenes was not to be vsyd to people of suche obstynacy and sternesse/ but to haue forcyd them by dynte of sworde to haue lyued in due obedyence.

In thys passetyme dyed pope Stephan the fourth of that name/ after whose deth was elected to that dygnyte the fyrste Pascall, wythout cõsente or knowlege of this Lowys, & somdeale to the dyscontentynge of his mynde & pleasure. But in shorte tyme after he receyued such wordes and presentes from the sayde pope, that he was well satysfyed and pleasyd. And for at those days in Fraũce was vsyd of prestes and men of the chyrche prescyouse and shewynge vesture, and golden and riche starynge gyrdelles, with rynges and other ornamentes of gold/ the sayde Lowys purchasyd of the pope a correccyon for all suche as vsyd suche dysordynate apparell/ and causyd theym to vse and were browne & sad colours, accordynge to theyr honoures and sadnes.

This Lowys hadde thre sonnes, that is to saye Lothayre, whome he made felowe of the empyre/ Peppyn the seconde, whome he made duke of Guyan/ and Lowys the thyrde, to whom he betoke the rule of Bayton. To this pongeste sonne worde was broughte, that Bernarde a ruler in Italy had assembled a great power/ & wyth ꝑ aydes of two other captaynes named Jylys and Reyner, the whyche Charlis the great by his lyfe greatly fauouryd/ occuppyd ꝑ stregthys of the mountaynes, and entendyd to kepe the countrey of Italye from the subiectyon of his father the emperoure. wherof he gpuynge his father knowlege/ strong power was gaderyd, as well by the father as by Lothayre his sonne, and sped theym towarde the mountayns. But when the sayde Bernarde was ware of the emperours commyng wyth so great a strength/ and consyderyd his lacke of power to mayntayn his purpose/ wyth also the great mercy and pytye that he knew to be in the emperour: he submytted hym holy to hys grace and mercy, and dyscouerȳd to hym the authours of that rebellyon/ the whyche thys Lowys caused vnder safe keppynge to be hadde vnto the cyte of Aquilgrany. The whyche rebellys were the bysshop of Mylayne, the bysshop of Cremoun, and the bysshoppe of Orleaunce.

The kynge passed all the wynter folowyng at the forsayde cytye/ and lastely caused to be broughte before hym the forsayde transgressours, & exampned the circumstaunce of the forsayd treason, and after remytted them to the cytye of Lowes/ where by processe they were condemnyd to deth as many of them as were temporall men.

Then the emperour hauynge compassion of the forenamed Bernarde, for so myche as he was the sonne of Peppyn late kynge of Italy, and his nere kynnesman/ transmutyd the sentence of deth vnto perpetuyte of prysson and losynge of hys syghte. But for the sayde Bernarde, Reyner, and other, chase rather to dye thẽ to lyue in prysson wyth that deformyte/ they passyd by dynte of the sworde, & were

beheddyd within or nere to the sayd cytye of Aquisgraui. And the sayde bysshoppes were deprpued of theyr dygnyteys & put into prpuate houses of relygyon.

And whyle thys Lewys was occupyed in lytell Brytayne, in subduynge of that countrey/ Lothayre the eldest sonne of thys Lewys was sent to rule the lōdes of ỹ empyre. where he bare hym ryght nobly, and executed dyuers actes for the weale of the empyre. But in thys season. ii. frendes of hys father and hys / were for certeyne crymes to them put, moste cruelly condēpned to vyle deth with in the cytye of Rome. wherof herynge Lothayre than beyng at the cytye of Papy, sent worde therof to hys father in all hasty wyse/the which was lyke to haue turnyd ỹ pope to greate trowble, yf he by polytyke and wyse meanes had not shortly pacifyed the mater. That one of the forsayd two persones so condempned was scrybe to the pope, and that other was Donat.

ye shall vnderstande that thys Lewys hadde two wyues/ by the fyrste he had the forenamed thre sonnes, and of the seconde he receyued a son and named hym Charlys/the which whan he came to mannes stature, was surnamed Charlys ỹ bolde. He loued entyerly thys Charlys, & wold often kysse hym in the presence of his brethern. For the whych they enuyed theyr sayd brother/and also dysdayned theyr father as here after shall appere.

Thus in proceste of tyme Lewys gaue vnto thys Charlys the cōtrey of Neustria or Normādy/ the which causyd greate dyscencyon amonge the bretherne/and also for thys and other causes Lotharius toke partye agayne hys father.

THE.CLX. CHAPITER.

Thys seconde wyfe of Lewys was named Judith/ ỹ which was accusyd to the pope to be within suche degre of allyaunce to hyr husbonde, that she myghte not lawfully contynewe hys wyfe. wherfore contrary to the wyll of Lewys, by the labour of some bysshoppes & other lordes of Fraūce, she was deuorcyd from hym / and put into a house of nonnys, and there straytly kepte.

But Lewys for a tyme sustayned thys iniurys, to ỹ ende ỹ he myght know whyther his sonnes fauoured the cause or not. But in procesle of tyme whan he hadde experyence of hys frendes / and of hys sonnes/ he thā assembled to hym a strong hoste, and recouerd hys wyfe malgre to all hys enmyes. For the whych dede Lothayre, wyth dyuers of the Barons of Fraunce, assemblyd theyr people/and entendyd to deprpue Lewys from all imperyall and kyngly dygnyte. wherfore Lewys ferynge hys sonne and hys assystens / & also for the entent that he myghte assemble the strength of ỹ empyre: he rode vnto Magunce. And after he hadde purueyed and garnysshed hys retynewe/he retornyd toward Fraunce, and met wyth some of hys enemyes and them subdued / and so kepte on hys tourney tyll he came to Aquysgrany, where he restyd hym and hys people.

Thus contynuynge thys dyssencyon/the sonnes sent wrytyng to the pope than beynge named Gregory ỹ fourth, requyrynge hym of ayde and counceyle to deuyse a concorde and peace betwene theyr fader and them.

At whose requeste/ and for to cause a naturall charyte to be quyckenyd betwene the father & hys. iii. sonnes/ he came in hys proper persone into

Fraunce

Fraunce, and endeuoꝛyd hym to the vttermoste of hys wyttes to agree to the sayd parties. In the tyme of this entreaty made by the pope / I can not saye foꝛ what cause, many of the loꝛdes / on the partye of Lowys foꝛsooke hym, and fled to the cõnys partye / so that the emperoure was in great feere of hym selfe, & of hys parson. whan Lewys had seen his frendes thus in tyme of hys nede refuse & flee frome hym, and lefte hym in great feere and daũger of straũgers he than thoughte better foꝛ hym to put hym selfe vnder the Rule and tuycion of hys owne chyldꝛen, than to abyde the doute of the sayde straũgers. wherfoꝛe he sent vnto his sayd sonnes / requyꝛynge theym to pꝛouyde foꝛ his safegarde and assurynge of his person, and that he were not there oppꝛessyd oꝛ murdꝛyd. And within shoꝛte space after this message sent to theym withoute answere of them agayne receyuyd, he rode to warde theym smally accompanyed. where of than Lothayꝛe and hys bꝛother hauynge warnynge in all homble wyse encountred hym, and receyued hym vppon theyꝛ knees / and so cõueyed hym wyth all reuerẽce vnto theyꝛ pauylyon oꝛ tent. And after foꝛ a begynnyng of a peace to be stablysshed betwene hym and them / he to satysfye theyꝛ myndes, refused the foꝛenamed Iudith, and closyd her in a place of relygyon called Toꝛton, as testyfyeth myne authour mayster Robert Gagwyne. But the Frenche boke sayth that thys dede was done by Frederyke bysshoppe oꝛ Utꝛyke / where foꝛe he was after pyteously slayne by such as fauoured ꝑ quene / and not all wythout her consent, as wytnessyth the sayd cronycle.

And whan Lewys had in thys & other thynges agreed vnto hys sonnes / and thought hym selfe to be in surete of theyꝛ ampte and fauours: so deynly he was cõueyed vnto the monastery of saynt Medꝛid / oꝛ as sayth the Frenche boke he was conueyed to a towne called in Frenche Melangy, wyth hys ponge sonne Charlys. And that done / the sayd thꝛe sonnes deuyded theyꝛ fathers possessyons amonge theym thꝛe. That is to saye Lothayꝛe the eldeste, had to hys poꝛcyon the londes of the empyꝛe / Peppyn, the countrey of Guyan / and to Lewys the pongest, fell the countrey of Bayon.

Whyche mysery of the emperour whan the pope had beholden & seen / he wyth greate moꝛnynge retoꝛned into Iuly & so vnto Rome. In which tyme of pꝛysonemẽt of the emperour the sayd Lewys made dyteys & ppystelles of greate soꝛowe and lamentacyon, to the ensample of all erthlye pꝛynces / and to the entent that hys sonnes shulde of hym haue the moꝛe compassyon and pytye. The whyche I ouer passe foꝛ length of tyme / and the rather, foꝛ in tyme of pꝛysonemẽt of Edwarde the seconde callyd Carnaruan was by hym made a lyke cõplaynt / where of when tyme & place comyth, I entende to expꝛesse some parte therof.

Whan Lewys had thus a seasoñ remayned in pꝛyson / foꝛ so myche as the comons shulde not thynke that thys shuld be done by the authoꝛyte of ꝑ thꝛe sonnes onely: therfoꝛe they caused a coũsayle to be callyd at the cytye of Compeyne / & there by theyꝛ meanes and labours caused theyꝛ father by authoꝛyte of spyꝛytuall & tempoꝛall loꝛdys, to be discharged of all rule and domynyon, as well of the empyꝛe as of the realme of Fraũce, by authoꝛyte of the sayd coũsayle oꝛ parliament / and after caused hym to renoũce all hys tempoꝛall habyte, and to become a munke in the monastery oꝛ

ſtery of ſaynt Marke/where he was
lefte of his ſonne Lothayre, not with
out ſure watche and keppynge.

But full often it is ſeen, that whā
the erthlye power of man faylyth or
wekyth/god of hys greate mercy the
repentaunt ſynner to grace callyth,
& hym by hys dyuyne power aydeth
and ſtrengtheth / and ſo he dyd thys
Lewys. For after thys myſery and
trybulacyon thus to hym fallen / the
peple in dyuerſe placys of this londe
murmured and grudgyd very ſore,
agayne the vnnaturall dealynge of
the ſonnes agayne theyr father.

In theſe dayes was a greate ru-
ler in Fraunce named Guyllyam, &
ſtuarde or conſtable of that lande/ þ
which wyth one Egebard or Edgare
a man of greate byrth and alyaunce,
coūſayled togyder for the enlargyng
of þ emperour. And laſtly wyth ayde
of theyr frendes aſſembled a greate
peple. And than drewe vnto them .ii.
noble men of Burgoyne called Bar-
narde and Gueryn, the whyche ſome
tyme had ben well cheryſſhed wyth
the emperoure Lewys.

All thys ſeaſon Lothayre had re-
ſtyd hym for þ more partye at Aquyſ
grany. But whan he harde of the aſ-
ſemblynge of theſe forſayd lordes,
he ſped hym towarde Parys. And
whan he was thyther comen/the fore
ſayd lordes ſent vnto hym two noble
men Rowlande and Gantelyne / the
whych made requeſt vnto Lothayre
in the name of the other lordes, that
it wolde lyke hym to reſtore hys fa-
ther vnto hys former dygnyte/wyth
other thynges concernynge theyr le-
gacyon. To the whyche two lordes
Lothayre gaue anſwere, that of hys
fatherꝛs reſtorynge to hys fyrſte or
former dygnyte, no man lyuynge
wolde be therof more fayne than he
wolde. But þ depoſyng of hym was
done by the holle authorȳte of þ land.
wherfore yf he ſhulde be agayne re-
ſtoryd/it muſt be by the ſame autho-
rȳte, and not by hym onely. All be yt
that they myghte knowe of hys be-
nyuolēce and fauour that he bare to-
warde hys father/ he wylled them to
ſtonde a parte, whyle he had ſome cō
munycacyon of his lordes for þ ſame
mater. By reaſon wherof were it for
fere or for fauour/the emperour was
ſhortly after put at hys lybertye, and
reſtoryd to all hys fyrſt honoure and
dygnyte/ & than with great honoure
conueyed to a cytye or towne called
Ciriciake, where met wyth hym hys
other two ſōnes Peppyn and Lewys/
and there reſtyd hym certayne dayes
in makyng all feeſt and toye/and af-
ter rode vnto Aquyſgrany, and there
reſtyd an other ſeaſon.

In whych tyme of hys there beyng/
was brought vnto hym from þ place
where ſhe had ben priſoner, his wyfe
Indyth. But whan Lotharyꝰ knewe
that hys father had hyr agayne re-
ceyued contrary to hys mynde and
pleaſure / he in wrath & dyſpleaſure
entryd the countrey of Burgoyne/&
made in it ſharpe and cruell warre,
& erecuted therin many ſpoylynges
and other mordynate dedys. The
whyche cruelty to wythſtande & let/
hys father wyth hys ſonne Peppyn
wyth a greate hoſte ſped hym thyder
warde. But anone as he had know-
lege therof/myſtruſtyng his ſtrēgth,
he yelded hym vnto his faders grace
and mercy/whom the meke fader re-
ceyued and forgaue to hym hys treſ-
paſſe.

And after that of hym and dyuerſe
of hys lordes he had taken aſſuryd
othes and other ſuretyes/he thā ſent
the ſayd Lothayre into Italy with a
certayne nomber of knyghtes, to de-
fende the countrey from daunger of
enemyes, and ſtrengthynge of the
ſtraytes and mountaynes.

And

And that wyth other thynges ordeyned and done for the weale of hys realme/Lewys than toke vpon hym to ryde about hys lande, to thentent that he myghte be somwhat enformed of the rule of hys officers / and how the countreys were ruled by the rulers of them. And where he found any mysgouernaunce/he punysshed the executers therof, as well ỳ bysshoppes as other, as farre as his authoryte in that behalfe stretchyd.

Than Jndith consyderynge the emperoure fell into greate age/ and hyr sonne and his Charlis by name, had as yet no sufficyent landes nor possessyons to mayntayne any estate wyth: she compassed many wayes in hyr mynde, how she myghte acheue hyr entent, and to bryngeit to good purpose. where fynally by counceyll of hyr frendes, to ỳ ende to purchase the loue and fauour of Lothayre/she ared of hyr lorde and husbonde, that the sayd Lothayre myghte be tutour and gyder of hys yonge sonne Charles. Of this requeſt ỳ emperour was very glad, and graunted hyr, hyr peticion. And so it fell soone after, certayne messengers came to the emperoure from Lothayre hys sonne. To the whych whan Lewys had gyuen answere to such maters as they were sent fore, and gyué vnto them other instruccyons/he sent them fore the agayne, and with them certeyne other to wylle his sayd sonne to come vnto hym in as goodly wyse as he myght. But at that season he excusyd hym by sykenesse/and whan he was recouered he fayned an other excuse.

In thys meane tyme worde was brought to the emperoure, that hys sonne Lothayre had greued ỳ chyrch of Rome/and taken from it certeyne possessyons. wherewyth Lewys beynge before amoued, sent vnto hys sonne/cõmaundynge hym in sharpe wordes, ỳ he shulde haue in mynde the othe before by hym made / & that he shulde in erchewynge his dysplea sure, make restytucyõ of all thynges that he before hadde taken from the chyrch/ the whyche cõmaundement Lothayre promysed to obey in all wyse. And where Lewys was determyned to haue gone vnto Rome, to haue sene ỳ sayd promesse fulfylled/ & also to haue spoken wyth the pope for dyuers maters nedefull for the chyrche: he was lette by occasyon of Danes or Normannes, ỳ than had newly inuaded the lõdes of Fraũce/ the whyche he shortly after expellyd and dryue out of hys londys.

And that done, the emperour yode vnto Aquysgrany/where by the frendes of Jndith & other of the nobles of Fraunce, the emperour gaue vnto hys yongest sonne Charlis a porcyõ of ỳ empyre, whyche after shall more clerely appere. And soone after at a counsayle holdyn at Cirycyake, before namyd in the presence of his sonne Lewys/he gaue to hym the order of knyghthode, & adournyd hym wyth kynges clothynge.

And ouer all thys in the presence of many lordes of Fraunce/ he gaue to the sayde Charlys the hole countrey of Neustria that now is named Normandye. Of whyche honoure and gyftes though hys moder were toyous and gladde / yet hys brother Lewys was therewyth nothynge contentyd, whyche of Jndith and of hyr frendes was well apperceyuyd and knowen. wherefore as she before tyme had done / than of newe she made requeſt vnto hyr lorde and husband, that he wolde of hys mosse especyall grace graunte vnto hyr, that Lothayre myghte haue the gouernaunce of hyr sonne Charlys/the whych of hym was the seconde tyme graunted. Vppon whyche graunte

thus

thus to her made/the emperour sent vnto hys son Lothayre pleasaũt letters, wyllyng hym in all goodly hast to resorte vnto hys court. The which obeyenge hys fathers commaundement/ retourned into Fraunce shortly after the receyte of the said letters, and came vnto his father to the citye of Uernayse, of whome he was ioyously receyued. And after he hadde a season dwellyd with the emperour, he gaue vnto hym the coũtrey of Austracy/ the whyche countrey as shall after be shewyd in thys Lotharius story, was after his name named Lorayne. But a parte of the sayde prouynce or countrey that stretchyd towarde Hungrye/ the sayde Lowys gaue vnto his yongest son Charlys. And immedyatly after thys gyftes before many lordes confermyd/ the emperoure in presence of the sayd lordes, toke Charlys by the hande, and delyueryd hym vnto his brother Lothayre/ wyllynge and straytly chargynge hym that he shulde take hym vnto his cure, and be to hym as curyouse as he wolde be vnto hys own chyld, and to guyde hym and his possessyons, as the father shulde guyde the chylde. And to Charlys he commaunded that he shulde take & obey hym as his father, and loue and worshyppe hym as his brother/ ꝑ whych vppon eyther partye was promysyd to be obseruyd. And shortly after the sayd Lothayr with his brother Charlys, toke congy of father and mother, and returned agayn into Italy.

About this tyme dyed Peppyn the seconde sonne of Lewys, and duke of Guyan/ the whych yf all shuld be expressyd, putte his father to great trouble and veracyon/ wherfore for hym was made the lesse mournynge. This left after hym a son named Peppyn, of whome somwhat the storye specyth after. But now I wyll retourne to Lewys the thyrde sonne of the emperoure.

THE.CLXI.CHAPITER.

TRouth yt is that whẽ the yonger brother Lewys sawe the bountye of his father so largely extende towarde his two brethern, and to hym nothynge/ he was therwyth in his mynde greatly dyscontent, all be yt that for the tyme he kepte yt secrete to hym selfe. But when he was departyd from hys father, and returnyd to his owne lordshyppe/ he gadered a myghty power, and began to make warre vpon the dwellers nere about the Ryne. wherfore the emperour wyth a conuenyent power approchyd vnto the citye of Dodayng/ and sent from thens vnto hys sayde sonne wordes of reconcylyacyon/ by meane wherof the sayde Lowes put hym holy in the grace of hys father, and was to hym reconcyled without shedynge of mannys blood.

But whyle the emperour was beside at the citye of Clermoũt in the countye of Auerne, to set a dyrection amonge the Gascoynes, for oppynyons that were reryd amonge theym for the sonne of Peppyn there lately kynge or duke dyscellyd, whyche son as aboue is sayde was also named Peppyn/ and there about had taken great payne and labour: thyther to hym tydynges were newly brought, that hys sayde sonne Lewys hadde wyth ꝑ Barons or Bopsons, & with the Thorynges made alliaunce/ and was entryd into Germany, and therin made warre in moste cruell wyse. wyth whyche tydynges Lowis was so greuously passyoned/ that to hys great age was by meane of thys vnkynde anger, tyryd a sykenes that lefte hym not whyle he lyued.

After yet thys not wythstandyng/ he lyke

he lyke a strong hartyd knyght shewyd forth a good and comfortable cõtenaunce. And after he hadde in knyghtly wyse prepared all thynge necessarye to the warre/ he spedde hym towarde Almayne, and contynued hys iourney tyll he came vnto Thorynge/where a season he restyd hym and his people tyll he myght be better assuryd where his sonne Lewys restyd hym. But the sonne haupnge knowlege of the great power of hys father/ and also beynge in despayre of purchasynge of mercy, consyderyng his many offences: fled by the cõtrey of Sclauony, and so by that costes retourned into Bayon or Bauery/ and so escappyd the daunger of hys father.

Then the emperoure beyng surely enformyd of the scape of hys sonne/ helde on his iourney tyll he came to Magolice. And after came vnto the cytye of Vermayse/ where he called a counsayle of his lordes spyrytuall and temporall, and ordeyned there dyuerse thynges for the state of the empyre. And more entendyd to haue done/ but sykenesse increasyd so sore in hym, that by the space of. xl. days he toke no temporall sustenaunce. But in that tyme he vsyd often to take the blessed sacrament/the which as he often sayde, strengthyd bothe the soule and the bodye.

Then he sent for Lothayre to come vnto hym/ the whyche wythoute tarynge obeyed his commaundemẽt, and abode styll wyth hym.

Of this Lewys Policronicon maketh a shorte rehersall/ and sayth þ by his fyrste wyfe named Hermyngarde, he had. iii. sonnes/ Lothayre, Peppyn and Lewys. The fyrst beyng felowe with his father of the empyre, was crowned of pope Pascall vpon an Ester daye/and he was also kyng of Italy. And Peppyn he made duke of Gascoyne and Guyan. And Lewys was made ruler of Bauary.

And by his second wife named Jndyth and doughter of þ duke of Bayon, he hadde Charlis the Ballyd/to whome he gaue the countrey of Burgoyn as the sayd Policronica sayth. And for this Lewys was mylde/ he was often troubled of hys own men and of other, tyll he delte wyth them more sharpely and wysely, and ruled the people more straytly.

Jt is there also shewyd, that when this Lewys had promotyd a ponge man named Frederyke to the see of Utryke/ and to hym hadde gyuen sadde and good exhortacyon, that he shuld folowe the stablenes of hys antecessours, and that he shulde purpose the sothe and trouth wythoute excepcyon of persones/ and punyshe mysdoers, as well the ryche as the poore: the sayde byshoppe shulde answere to hym and saye, Jbeseche thy magestye syr emperour to take in pacyence, that Jmaye dysclose to the that thynge that hath long walowed & turned in my mynde. Say thy pleasure sayd the emperour. Jpraye thy syr emperour shewe me thy mynde/ whyther is more accordynge, to attame thys fyshe here presente fyrste at the hedde or at the tayle. The emperour answered shortely and sayd, at the hedde the fyshe shall be fyrste attamyd. Mo yt is lorde emperoure sayd the byshoppe, that crysten fayth maye cause the to cease of thyne erroure, that thy subiectes be not boldyd to folowe thy mysdoynge. wherfore fyrste forsake thou thy vnlawefull wedloke, that thou haste made wyth Jndyth thy nere kynnes woman.

By meane of those wordes the kyng was reconcylyd, and lefte the company of his wyfe, tyll he hadde purchasyd a lycence of the pope. And the

emperour forgaue the sayde bysshop all trespassys/ but the woman hyred two knyghtes that slewe hym in his vestymentes, when he hadde ended hys masse.

After thys the empresse was falsely accused of wronge cryme, and made a menchon. But the saune yere the emperoure delyuerȳd her from that habyte, when he hadde sufficyently proudȳd the sayde cryme to be false.

Then to retorne where I lefte/ whā this Lewys had longe syen in thys agonyous sykenes, and knewe well that he amendyd nothynge/ but febiyd more and more/ he commaundyd his iewellys to be broughte before hym. wherof by hys owne hand he haue a parte vnto the chyrche of Rome/ and to Lotharius his sonne there presente he gaue his crowne & his sworde/ commaundynge hym straytly vppon his blessynge that he shuld haue in honour hys moder Iudith, & that to Charlis his brother he shulde owe true loue & ampte, & that he shuld hym & his lādes defende to the vttermoste of his power.

Then the lordes spirituall and temporall, and specyally the archebysshoppe of Meaws/ made a lamentable requeste to the emperoure for his sonne Lewys, that he wolde accepte hym to his grace and mercye, and to forgyue hym hys insolente and wanton wylde dedys. wherof when the emperour harde/ he fell in suche weppynge, that he myghte not speke of a good whyle after.

And when he hadde refrayned hym therof/ he remembred to ȳ lordes the many and great benefytes ȳ he had done to hym, and the innaturall vnkyndnes that the sayd Lewys had a gayn shewyd vnto hym/ & how often tymes he had perdoned his vnkynd sonnes trespasse. And finally all this not withstandyng/ he was at ȳ oure in perfyte charite wyth hym, and forgaue hym as he trusted to be forgyuen/ prayenge the lordes there present, and specyally chargynge ȳ sayd bysshop, that he wold shew vnto hys sayd son that great daunger that he was in agaynst god for the displeasures done to him/ and specially that he was a cause of the abrygement or shortynge of hys dayes.

Then to bryng this story to effect, wherof yf I shuld declare the special tyes therof, wolde aske a longe tyme (for ye shall vnderstand that these .ii. storyes of the great Charlis and of this Lewys, occuppe in Frenche of leuys of great scantelyn ouer. lxiiii) wherfore I conclude ȳ he dyed lyke a good cryſten prynce, when he had ben emperour of Rome and kynge of Fraunce by the terme of .xxvi. yeres/ and was buryed wyth great solemnyte at Meaws or at Mettis by hys mother Hyldegarde as sayth mayster Robert Gagupne, in the yere of hys age .lxiii / leuynge after hym the forsayde thre sonnes Lothayre, Lewys and Charlys the Ballyd.

Anglia.

THE .CLXII. CHAPITER.

ADeulpus or Ethelwolphus the son of Egbertus / beganne hys reygne ouer the westsaxons or Anglys, in the yere of oure lordes incarnacyon .viii. hundred and .xxii / and the xvii. yere of Lewys the mylde then kynge of Fraunce.

Thys in his youth was wyllynge to be

to be a prieste, and was enteryd the order of subdeacon.

But there after by dyspensacyon of Pascall the fyrst of that name pope/ he was maryed to Osburga a woman of lowe byrthe. By whome he hadde foure sonnes/ that is to meane Ethelwalde, Ethelbert, Ethelbrede, and Alurede/ the whyche after theyr father reygned as kynges of Englād that one after that other, as after shall appere.

This Adeulphus after he hadde a certayne tyme ben kyng/ he went to Rome, and toke wyth hym his yongest sonne Alurede or Alphrede/ and taryed there by the space of a yere.

In the whyche season he repayred the Saron scole/ the whyche before tyme was there founden by Offa kynge of Mercia, as Guydo sayeth and other/ but more verily of Iue kynge of westsarons, as sayth the authoure of the Floure of hystoryes. And for that he graunted of euery house of his kyngdome a peny, as in his storye is before shewyd.

But thys scole was sore decayed, and the house therof lately brent/ the whyche thys Adeulphus newely repayred, and sette yt in better order then yt before was vsyd.

Thys kynge also toforefourme the grenouse correccyons that he sawe there executyd to Englyshe men for spyrytuall offensys, as in werynge of irons and gyues: he graunted of euery fyre house of hys lande.i.ō, as Iue foresayde hadde done.

By the whyche sayenge yt shulde seme/ that by these two kynges shuld be grauntyd vnto Rome.ii.ō. of euery fyre house thorough theyr lande.

But that maye not be so vnderstande/ for thys Rome scot ys gaderyd of euery house a peny wythout more.

wherfore yt muste folowe, that yt is mysse taken of wryters, that allege this dede to that one kynge for that other. How be yt, yt maye stande by reason, that Iue made the fyrste graunte, and this kynge after confermyd the same. But the authoure of Cronica cronycarum sayth, that thys Adeulphus graunted to sayncte Peter these sayde Peter pens/ and spekyth no word of Iue nor of none other.

It is also shewyd of this kynge by Policronica/ that he shulde for the acquytynge of the chyrches of Englād of all maner of kynges trybute, payed yerely to Rome thre hundred markes. That ys to meane to sayncte Peters chyrche a hundred markes/ to the lyghte of sayncte Paule a hundred marke/ and to the popys treasorye a hundred marke. And ouer all thys of hys pure deuocyon, he offred to god & to sayncte Peter the.x. parte of hys moueable goodes.

And also one cronycler sayth, that thys kynge founded fyrste the vnyuersytye of Oxynforde/ whyche was lykely to be done by Offa kynge of Mercia, for so myche as in his days flowred that famouse clerke Alcumus or Albinus/ the whych as sayth the frenche cronycle, was fyrste foūder of the scole of Parys and of Pappa, as is before shewyd in ỳ storye of Charlys the great, in the thyrd chapyter of the sayde storye.

when Adeulphus hadde thus sped hys besynes and pylgrymage at Rome, he retournyd by Fraunce/ where at that tyme was kyng of that lande Charlys the Ballyd, of whom he was ioyously receyued. And after he hadde dysporyd hym there a season/ he spousyd the doughter of the sayde Charlys, in the.xx.yere of the reygne of the sayde Adeulphus, as testyfyeth Policronica in the .xxx. chapiter of his.v.boke/ whych shuld

be the yere of the reygne of the sayde Charlis the.xi. But of this mariage is nothynge touchyd in the frenche cronycle.

Then Adeulphus takynge leue of the kynge/ toke shyppynge and landed in Englande wyth his wyfe Jndyth by name. And for that he contrary the law made in ỹ tyme of Brigthricus, sette his wyfe in the kynges crowne, and magnyfyed her lyke a quene/ the lordes of his lande arose agayne hym, and pullyd from hym a great parte of his domynyon, and made his eldeste sonne ruler therof. whyche all was done in reproche of Ethelburga, whyche slew her lorde Brigthricus as before is shewyd. Lastly the mater was appeasyd, and he to his kyngly honour restoryd.

About this tyme Bertulphꝰ kyng of Mercia, slewe wyckydly in the holy tyme of Penthecoste sayntē wylstone/ whose holy bodye was buryed at Reppyngedō. And in ỹ place where thys holy wylstone was slayne stode a pyller of lyghte.xxx.dayes after.

And in the yere folowynge dyed the sayde Bertulphus. After whose deth, Burdredus was made kynge of Mercia or myddell Englande/ the whyche before tyme hadde spousyd the doughter of kynge Adeulphus.

In the later dayes of thys Adeulphus, the Danys dyd myche harme in Lyndesey, and also in kent/ and frome thens came to London, and robbed and spoyled the cytye. wherfore Adeulphus gaderyd his people, and lastely mette wyth them in Southerey vppon a downe called Oclea/ and there dyscomfyted theym, not wythoute shedynge of great plente of the Anglis blood, and forsyd them to take the see/ so that after they landed in eest Anglia as after shall appere. Then lastely dyed thys good kynge Adeulphus or Ethelwolphꝰ/ when he hadde ruled hys subiectes nobly by accorde of moste wrytes fully .xxii. yere/ and was buryed at wynchester, leuynge after hym four sonnys afore sayde.

Francia.

THE .CLXIII. CHAPITER.



Charlys ỹ yongeste son of Lewys the mylde/ began hys reygne ouer the chefe part of Fraūce, in ỹ yere of our lorde .ix. hundred & .xli/ and the.ix. yere of Adeulphus then kynge of westsarons/ the whyche as before is sayd was surnamed Balbyd.

Anon as his father was buryed/ his brother Lothayre, to whome the father, as ye fore behaue harde, had cōmyttyd ỹ gouernynge of this Charlys, by the entysynge of his brother Lewys malygned agayn this Charlis/ and sought many wayes to put hym from such landes as his father had gyuen hym. This sayd Lothayr was after the deth of his father emperour/ and Lewys the yonger brother was duke or knyght of Bayon. But for Charlis was yongest, and had to his parte the pryncypall porcyon of Fraunce, whych was called myddell Fraunce/ therfore his .ii. bretherne & specially Lewys, malygned greuously agayne hym. wherof this Charlis beynge sondeale informed / bare hym so wysely & so egally to his subiectes, that he hadde theyr loues and fauours/ and trustyd alway by theyr good ayde that he shulde be of power to wythstande theyr vnkynde malyce. And lyke as the hydde fyre in processe breketh oute and shewyth great lyght and flammy blase, euen so dyd

so dyd thys couetde malyce at the laste breke oute, to great ire and ope wrath. For after foure yeres was passyd / the sayde two bretherne with oute defyaunce or groundely cause of warre, assygned or assembled a great hoste / suche lyke before thys daye hadde not ben sene/and entryd the lymyttes of kynge Charlys.

Then Charlis assembled in all ȳ haste hys lordes/and requyred theyr aydes and counsayll to withstande the malyce of hys bretherne. And when he hadde knowelege of theyr good myndes, anon theyr knyghtes were gaderyd and all thynge was redy to the fyghte.

Nowe in thys whyle the two bretherne wyth theyr peple were comen to a place callyd Fountayns or Fontanet, where to Charlis spedde hym. And when both hostes were nere/eyther partye made prouysyon to subdue his enymye.

Then were the bataylles on bothe partyes orderyd & assygned to theyr standardes and capytaynes, and the wynges set to the moste auauntage. what shuld I lenger procede of this ordynaunce make, fynally the shote of arblasters beganne on both sydes whyche ouer threwe many an horse and man/ and specyally the fore ryders, that putte theym selfe in prese wyth theyr longe and sharpe launcys, to wynne the fyrste brunte of the felde.

Pytye yt was to beholde the goodly bryght armyd knyghtes lyeg and walowynge wyth theyr great stedys in the felde, wyth dedly woundes gapynge agayne the son, ȳ were slayne at the fyrst encountre. But when the shote was spent, and the speres to shaterȳd/ then both hostes ranne to gyther wyth Rowlandes songe / so that in shorte whyle the grene felde was dyed into a perfyte redde. For there was heddes, armes, legges, & trunkys of ded mennys bodyes lyenge, as thycke as floures growe in tyme of maye in the flowrysshynge medowys / myserable and pyteouse yt was to beholde the persones halfe lyuynge and halfe ded/ with theyr grysely woundes pyteously gronynge and crienge wythoute comforte. So that there was shewyd all rygoure wythoute mercy, and all cruelteys wythout compassyon.

Thus durȳd this mortall fyghte by a longe season/ that doutefull yt was to knowe whyche partye hadde thauaūtage of other. Howbeit Charlys was putte to an aduerdeale by .ii. meanes. The fyrste was for so mych as Charlis entendyd to haue forborne, for the reuerence of the hygh feste as the daye of the ascensyon of oure lorde, & that daye not to haue foughten. And the seconde was, that he was farre lesse in nomber. whyche two causes of dysauaūtage not withstandynge/ yet in the conclusyon he wanne the honoure of that iourney. But not wythoute great losse of hys peple and many of the nobles of his lande/ where of the frenche boke reherlith the names. But for they be to vs vnknowen, I passe theym ouer. And as yet is tellyȳed of many wryters/ there was slayne that daye mo Frencheman, then was slayn at any fride euer before that day. wherof the nomber is not expressyd / for yt was so great. Then Lothayre was forced to take Aquisgrany for his safegard, and Lewys ellys where. But Charlys wyth a small cōpany that to hym were lefte/ folowed his Bretherne, and cōstrayned Lothayre to forsake ȳ citye, & thens to go vnto Lyon a cytye ȳ standeth at this day in the bitter most border of Fraūce, & after to Vyenne. To ȳ which citye of Vyen shortly after came vnto hym hys brother

Lewys/ where they two assembled a newe hoste.

In the whych passetyme, as Charlis was comynge towarde hys bretherne/messyngers mette with hym, sent from his brethern to comon of a peace. So that fynally he was accordyd, that the realme of Fraunce shulde be dyuyded in .iii, as the father had before dysposyd yt. That is to meane, Lothayr shuld enioy ouer the landes belongyng to the empyre the countrey of Austracy/ the whych in processe of tyme was called Lothayre or Lotharingia, whyche is to meane Lorayne after his name. And to Lewys shulde remayne the prouynce of Germany, wyth the cõtrey of Bupan or Bencry. And to Charlys shulde remayne the countrey called myddell or chefe Fraunce, wyth the prouynces of Normandy & Burgoyne. whyche sayde myddle Fraũce is reportyd to be in space from ỹ Ocean of Bytayne to the ryuer of Mawse.

The whyche concorde thus fermely stablyshed and fynyshed/ eyther of other toke theyr departynge, and resorted vnto theyr owne lordshyppes. But Lothayre dyed shortely after/ leuynge after hym thre sonnes; named Lewys, Lothayre, and Charlis. But this deth of Lothayre is not taken for temporall deth/ for yt is sayd ỹ he forsoke the trauayle of ỹ world, and became a munke at the abbaye of Prunp, and lyued there a solytary lyfe many yeres after.

THE .CLXIIII. CHAPITRE.

CHarlis ỹ Ballyd thus beyng in peaseble possessyon of the chefe parte of the realme of Fraunce, and guydynge yt wyth all sobernes and indifferet iustyce/ was well dyad and also beloued of his subiectes.

In processe of tyme, as vpon .viii. yeres after that Lothayr abouesayd renouncyd the pompe of the worlde/ dyed fyrste Charlys the yongest son of the thre of the forsayd Lothayre. And after dyed Lothayre the second sonne/ so that the sayde Lewys onely surupued, whych was after his father enoynted emperour.

when Charlis kynge of Fraunce knewe certaynely of the deth of these two forsayde brethern, and that without yssu/ anon he assembled his power and entred the prouynce of Austracy or Lorayne/ the which his brother Lothayre hadde gyuen to Lothayre his sonne. And in shorte whyle after crowned hym kynge of that prouynce, wythin the chyrche of sayncte Stephan of the cytye of Meaws, chefe cyty of that lordshyppe & kyngdome. wyth the whyche dede Lewys his brother, and kynge of Germany and Bayon was dyscontentyd/ thynkyng hym selfe more rygthfull enheritour then Charlis, for so myche as he was ỹ elder brother, and also brother to the fyrste Lothayre of fathers & of mother/ where as Charlis was but halfe brother, and by the fathers syde onely.

For this ỹ sayd Lewys sent to Charlys the Ballyd certayn messyngers/ gyuynge to hym monycyon that he shulde call to memory the couenaunters betwene theym before tyme stablyshed/ and that he shulde not meddell hym nor haue to do wythin the landes of his cosyn lately deed, vnto such tyme as yt were determyned by theyr bothe counsayles, whyther of theym hadde the better ryght/ & this to be obseruyd vppon payne of excõmunycacyon or cursyng.

But for to Lewys was well sene, that his brother Charlis nothyng abstreyned hym from the occuppenge of the forenamed countrey/ he therfore

gaderyd

gadered an armye to warre vppon his sayde brother.

In the whych passe tyme Charlys toke to his second wyfe a woman na myd Rychent or Ricent/ the whyche he before tyme hadde vsyd as his cō cubyne or paramoure.

And soone after the Danys or Nor mans inuaded the landes of Charlys/ the whych for that tyme he was fayne to appease & please wyth ryche gyftes and other pleasures.

Then Charlys receyued from his brother a seconde ambassade or mes sage/ the whyche shewyd vnto hym excepte he wold voyde his knyghtes and strengthes, that he had sette and put in dyuerse places of the lande of Austracy, he shuld be sure to haue of his sayd brother an enymy/ and that in all haste he wolde entre his lande wyth great force and warre. wherup pon was suche answere sente, that by both theyr agrementes the mater was hadde in suche cōmunycacyon/ that fynally yt was agreed that the sayde landes shulde egally be depar tyd betwene them. whyche conclusy on perfyted, Lewys wyth his people retournyd into Germany.

But yt was not longe after that Lewys repented hym of hys agre ment/ so that newe legacyons were made vppon both partyes/ and laste ly wyth myche payne newly agreed. After whyche agrement and accorde fynyshed/ Lewys the emperour and sonne of the fyrste Lothayre, sente an ambassade to both the fornamed bre thrne/ admonestynge and warnyng them that nother the one nor ỳ other shulde intermyt wyth the forsayde landes, for so myche as the ryghte therof belonged to him as next heyre to his brother/ and not to them that were a degre forther. The answere of this was deferryd by Charlys/ how be it his brother Lewis as sayth myne authour, gaue ouer his parte shortly after to Lewys ỳ emperour.

In this passe tyme Charlys the sonne of Charlis the Bald yd by hys fyrste wyfe, whome the father had made ruler of a countrey called Beige/ hadde cruld hym insolently, and done in that countrey dyuerse outragious dedes. For the whyche he beyng cōplayned of, was brought vnto his father/ and so by hym com maundyd to pryson. But shortely af ter he was deliuerd at ỳ requeste of some nobles of Fraūce/ & kept after in his fathers courte, where he conty nued but a shorte whyle. For wythin a lytle season after his father beynge at Lyons/ he departyd from ỳ sayde courte, and gaderyd to hym a wylde company of cupll dysposyd persons, and went agayne into the sayd coun trey of Beige/ and dyd more harme then he had done before season / and so contynuyd a long whyle. But last ly he was taken and caste agayne in pryson/ where after longe punyshe ment he was reued of his syght/ and then sent vnto the monastery of Cor benyke, there safely to be kepte. But at length by the entrcemēt of his vn cle Lewys kynge of Germany, and the treason of two mūkes of ỳ place/ he scapyd thens, and fledde vnto the sayd Lewys his vncle. In the which tyme Charlys his father was occu pyed in the defence of the Danys or Normannys, that then by strength had wonne the cite of Angyers and done therein myche harme / whome the kynge closyd wythin the sayd cy tye wyth a stronge syege, and fynally compellyd theym to seke meanys of peace at the kynges pleasure. After whych peace cōcludyd, and the sayd Danys auoydyd/ the kynge repossel syd the sayde cytye.

It was not longe after, that ty dynges were brought vnto Charlis

of the deth of Lewys the emperoure. After knowlege wherof/the kynge sent hys other sonne named Lewys into Iustracy to haue the rule and ꝑ guydynge of ꝑ countrey. And after other thynges ordered for ꝑ weale of hys realme/ he wyth a stronge company of men of armys passyd ꝑ moũtaynes, and so into Italy towarde Rome. But Lewys hys brother and kynge of Germanye beynge therof warnyd / sent in all haste hys sonne Lewys wyth a stronge hoste to lette hys passage. But how it was for fere or other meane/the sayd Lewys yeldyd hym to hys vncle Charlys the Ballyd. wherewith the father beyng greuously displeasyd / sent hys seconde sonne nampd Charlõ, to withstande the passage of the sayd Charlys. But thys for fere or other cause that he sawe that he myghte not preuayle agayne hys vncle / retornyd hym agayne to hys father. After whose retorne, he for so mych as the sayd Lewys kyng of Germany well perceyued that hys brother Charlys was paste his daunger/he than with a more nomber toyned vnto his sonnes hoste, entryd ꝑ londe of Fraũce, in domagynge it to the vttermoste of hys power.

In whyche season Charlys the Ballyd kepte on his tourney toward Rome. wherof herynge the. viii. Johñ than pope/sent agayne hym certayn persones of honoure, and welcompd hym as Augustus or emperour. And after hys compynge thyther the sayde pope receyued hym wyth greate reuerence/and crowned hym wyth the imperyall dyademe and denouncyd hym as emperoure.

THE .CLXV. CHAPITER.

CHarlys ꝑ Ballyd thus beyng authorysed for emperour/ertryd hym for a tyme for the nedys of the chyrche of Rome / & after toke hys leue of the pope & retorned vnto Pappe a cytye of Italy. where he callynge a generall counceyle of the lordes of the empire & other/he by theyr aduyses prouyded and ordered dyuerse thynges for the weale of ꝑ sayd empyre. And ouer that by theyr agrementes he ordeyned for hys lyeu tenaunt or debyte of the sayde empyre in hys absence, a noble man brother to hys wyfe recent named Belonne or Beson/and assygned to hym such people as was thought necessarye and conuenyent.

whan Charlys had sped hys nedys in Pappe, he hyed hym into Fraunce. But or he came wythin the terrytoyr therof/word was brought to hym that hys brother Lewys was retorned into hys owne countreye, wythout greate domage done to the realme of Fraunce.

In procesle the emperoure came to Parys/ where he was receyued of the cytesens wyth moste tryumphe & ioye / and kepte hys Ester tyde at sayncte Denys.

It was not longe after that Charlys was thus returnyd into Fraũce/ but that he receyued messengers frõ hys brother kynge of Germany, the which in his name clayned his part of the empyre as hys ryghte and enheryteaunce. whiche answere for that tyme was deferryd with pleasaunte wordes/ so that at the nexte worde ꝑ he hadde from his sayd brother, was that he was dede and buryed in the chyrche of sayncte Nazer in Frankebought. wherof whã Charlys was ascertayned, anone he yode vnto Foũtenays / and sent hys messengers to the lordes of the countrey, commaũdynge them that they shulde meete hym at the cytye of Mettes.

Thys forsayd Lewys lefte after hym two sonnes named Lewys and Charles

Charlon as before is towched / the whych deuyded bytwene them theyr fathers patrymony / so that Lewys had Germany, and Charlon hadde Bayon.

Thys Lewys ferynge hys vncle Charlys/gaderyd to hym a stronge power of Sarons and of Thorynges. And in the tyme of theyr assemble/he sent an ambassade of certeyne bysshoppes & temporall lordes vnto hys vncle Charlys, prayeng hym of hys loue and fauour/wyth other requestes to hym made, of the whyche they myghte purchase no graunte. wherof whan they were retornyd he hauynge by them knowlege/ þ sayde Lewys incontinently wyth his hoste drewe nere vnto the Ryne. But thys Lewys was not so couert i his work and assemblynge of hys people / but that hys vncle had therof wyttynge, and purueyed hys people as faste vpon that other syde/ so that he wyth an hoste was redy to fyghte with the sayd Lewys.

whan Lewys was ware of þ great power that the emperour hadde assembled, he made no haste to passe þ water/but houed and caused his people to falle vnto prayer. And Charlys also ferynge hys neuewe/ vnder a colour sent alegacyon of entreaty. Durynge the whyche entreaty / the emperour contrary to hys honoure, led his peple by a secrete waye thynkyng to haue fallen vpon his neuew sodeynly, and by that meane to haue dystressyd hym. But Lewys beynge ware of hys vncles treason / prouyded so for hys peple, & kepte them in suche araye, that they receyued theyr foo men vpon theyr speres poyntes & to theyr great damage. For where the greate rayne and tedyousnesse of the harde and strayte wayes, whych they hadde passyd, hadde sore tyred and wery ed them: than the fresshe fyersnesse of theyr enemyes, whyche they thoughte they shulde haue take slepynge and vnpurueyed, abasshed the in such wyse that they were soone ouercomen, and fled from the felde as shepe fle fro the wolfe. By meane of the whych flyght great slaughter of them was made/ & many nobles & greate estates of Fraūce both slayne and taken prysoners/ and the emperoure hym selfe scapyd wyth greate daunger. And of the prysoners that were take they were so nere spoyled/ þ they were fayne to take vyne leues to couer wyth theyr secrete membres.

ye shall vnderstand þ thys warre bytwene the emperoure Charlys the Ballyd and hys brothers sonne Lewys/was for the prouynce of Austrasy or Lorayne, the whyche somtyme belonged to the emperoure Lothayr and halfe brother to Charlys. The whych countreye after thys batayle, was by medyatours set in an order.

Than the emperoure wyth great trauayle came to a town called Tyguy. And Lewys kepte hys waye to Dandonyquyke/and from thens to Ayes the chapell.

In this whyle the Danes or Normans knowynge that Charlys was occupyed in the warre agayne hys neuewe/ apparayled them a stronge hoste, and entred ofte the landes of Fraunce. But for Charlys was at þ tyme letted wyth chargeable busynesse / he therfore sent a noble man agayne them called Comarde, vnto the ryuer of Sayne, to wythstande the sayde enemyes. And also to hym was gyuen counceyle, to haue wyth them cōmunicacyon to make a peace yf he myghte.

And to thys trouble immedyatly was ioyned another. For i this tyme and season a cytye belongyng to the thyrch of Rome rebellyd. wherfore to wythstand theyr malyce/the pope than

than beynge Johñ the. viii. of that name, sent messengers to Charlys for the defence of the sayd lõdes and other. And soone after the pope for to haste the sayd emperoure, or elles to quycke his deputye before named to assemble the Italyans and other people there adioynaũt/came downe to the cytye of Pappe, & taryed there the emperours compynge.

Charlys thã beset with trowbles/ assembled hys knyghtes & sped hym towarde Italy. And whan he was passyd the mountaynes/ worde was brought to hym of the popes beynge in Papy/wherfore he sped hym thyder with all dylygence.

In thys tyme & season Charlone the brother of Lewys and sonne of Lewys kynge of Germany/ whyche Charlone as before is shewyd was duke of Bayon or Bayory/ gaderyd a stronge hoste, and entred the bounds of Italy. wherof herynge ỹ pope and the emperour, than (as before is sayd) beynge at Pappe, busyed in a great counceyle/ dissolupd the same. And the pope incontynẽtly toke leue of the emperour/ & departyd agayne to Rome. And Charlys wyth a great power that he had gaderyd, as well of Italyans as of hys owne people/ made towarde hys neuewe. wherof herynge the sayde Charlone/ turned agayne by the waye that he had comen, tyll he came to hys owne countrey, as sayth myne authour & also ỹ French boke. But more verely Charlone kepyng togyther hys hoste, and haupnge fauour of dyuers lordes of Italye/ the emperoure Charlys remoupd to ỹ cytye of Mantue/where he was grudged wyth a feuer. For remedy wherof he toke a pocyon of a physycyon Jewe named Sedechias, whyche was intoxicat/ by meane of whych venemous pocyon he dyed shortly after whan he hadde reygned as kynge & emperoure after moste accorde of writers, by ỹ space of. xxxvii. yeres, wherof he reygned as emperoure. iii. yeres/ leuynge after hym a sonne named Lewys, whyche as before is shewed was ruler of the cõtrey of Austracy or Lorayne.

Whan thys Charlys was dede/ hys frendes entendynge to haue caryed the corps into Fraunce/ causyd it to be seryd and enoynted wyth ryche and precyous bawmes, and other oyntmentes and aromatykes. But all myghte not stoppe the intolerable ayre of hys body/so that they were fayne to bury hym at Vercyle, wythin the monastery of saynt Euseby. where he laye ouer. vii. yeres after/and then taken vp and conueyed to saynt Denys in Fraũce, and there honorably buryed.

THE .CLXVI. CHAPITER

IN the tyme of thys Charlys the Bally d, as wytnessen many wryters, began the erledome of Flaunders / the whyche euer before these dayes, the ruler therof was called the forester of the kynge of Fraũce. whyche erledome had hys begynnynge by thys meane.

ye haue harde before in the story of Adeulphus kynge of westsarons/ how in hys retornynge from Rome, he maryed the doughter of Charlys ỹ Bally d named Judith. The which Judyth after the deth of her sayde husbonde retornyd by Flaunders towarde Fraunce/ thynkynge to passe wythout daunger, bycause the sayde countrey was vnder the obedyence of her father. But at those dayes was ruler or forester in that partyes a noble ponge amerous man cally d Bawdewyne / the whyche herynge of the great beautye of thys Judith, gaue attendaunce vppon her. And receyued her in hys best maner, makynge

kyng to her all the chere that to hym was possyble/and fynally cast to hyr suche loue, that whan she supposed to departe and to haue gone into Fraunce/he delayed the matter in suche curteys and wyse maner, that he wan such fauour of her, that she made no greate haste to departe frome hym/all be it that moste authours agre, that he kepte hyr perforce.

Whan Charlys hadde wyttynge that Bawdewyne thus helde hys doughter Jndith/he sent to hym, straytly chargynge hym to sende home hys doughter/but that holpe not the mater. Thā he purchasyd agayn hym the censures of holy chyrch, and accursed the sayd Bawdewyne. But whan the kynge conceyued that the ponge man hadde suche loue to Jndyth that he sette not by that punysshement/and also was certeynly enformed that hyr harte was gyuen vnto hym: he in procesle by ꝑ meane of some bysshoppes and frendes of the sayd Bawdewine, agreed that he shulde take hyr to wyfe/and in the name of hyr dowar, he shulde holde and enioye the sayd countre of Flaū ders. And for he wolde haue hys doughter to be the more honoured/ he creatyd the sayde Bawdewyne an erle, and commaunded hym to be called after that daye erle of Flaūders.

It is also shewyd in the frenche cronycle and of other wryters/that thre dayes before hys deth, hys spiryte shulde be raupsshed from hys body, and vnto places of payne and turment/where thys Charlys by the ledynge of an aungell, shulde se hylles and mountaynes brenne, & pyttes full of sulphyr, pytche, and hote boylynge lede. Jn whyche paynes the sayde Charlys shulde se many of hys progenytours and bysshoppes, that counceyled prynces to debate or stryfe, or gaue counceyle to them to rayse of theyr subiectys vnlefull taskys or impolycyons/wyth many other thynges, whyche I passe ouer for length of the mater.

Anglia.

THE. CLXVII. CHAPITER.

CThelwaldus or Ethelwoldus ꝑ eldeste sonne of Adeulphus, began hys reygne ouer the weste-sarons or ouer ꝑ more partye of Englande, in the yere of our lorde viii. hundred and. lv/and the. r. yere of Charlys the Baliyd than kynge of Fraunce. The whyche became so vnhappy/that he maryed ꝑ woman whyche hys father hadde somtyme kepte or holden for hys concubyne, as wytnessyth ꝑ authour of ꝑ Floure of hystoryes. But Polycronycon sayth that he wedded his stepmoder/ whyche dysaccordyth wyth the sayenge of other wryters, which testifye his stepmoder to be maryed to Bawdewyn erle of Flaūders, as in ꝑ story of Charlys last before is shewyd.

Thys Ethelwolde though it be not expressyd by what hap he dyed, whan he hadde reygned one yere, as sayth Polycronyca. But another cronycle beryth wytnesse, that he was slayne as a martyr, of Hungar and Hubba prynces of Danys.

About thys tyme the holy kynge saynt Edmund cōtynued his reygne ouer the Eest Anglis or Norfolke.

THE. CLXVIII. CHAPITER.

EThelbertus the seconde sonne of Adeulphꝰ/began his reygn ouer the more partye of Englande, in the yere of our lorde. viii. hundred lvi/& the. xi. yere of Charlis ꝑ Baliid than

then kynge of Fraunce. In whose tyme the Danys wyth moze strengthes entred ꝑ west part of this land/ and robbed and spoyled the cõtrey befoze theym tyll they came to wynchester/ & toke the cytye by strength, and dyd therin what they wold. But the kynge made suche prouysyon/ that by hym & his dukes they were fozcyd to fozsake the cytye. And as they yode toward theyr shippes/ they were fought wyth, and a great parte of theym slayne and taken.

Of this kynge is nothynge ellys lefte in memozy moze then befoze is shewyd / but that he dyed when had reygned after moste wzyters. vi. yeres/ and was buryed at Shyzborne, leuynge after hym none yssu of hys body. wherfoze the rule of the lande fell to his bzother Ethelbzede.

THE.CLXIX.CHAPITER.

ETheldzedus the thyzde sonne of Adeulphus / beganne hys reygne ouer the west Inglis and the moze parte Englande, in the yere of our lozde. viii. hundzed & lxiii/ & the xviii. yere of Charlis ꝑ Wallyd then kynge of Fraunce.

In the begynnyng of this kynges reygne, the Danes landed in eest England oz Nozff. and Suff. But they were compellyd to fozsake that countrey/ and so toke agayne shyppynge and saylyd nozthwarde, and landed in Nozthumberlande. where they were mette wyth of the kynges then there reynynge callyd Osbzyghte and Ella / whyche gaue to theym a stronge fyghte. But that not wythstandynge the Danys wyth helpe of suche as enhabyted ꝑ countrey, wan the cytye of yozke, and helde yt a certayne of tyme.

Then the people of Nozthumberland baryed with in them self/ & had moze leuer ayde the Danys then to reygne vnder the kyng of westsarõs. Foz here is to be notyd that all such kynges as reygned there after Egbert, whyche as befoze is sayde subdued that prouynce and other / reygned as trybutarpes to the kynge of of westsarons oz Anglys.

wherfoze Ethelbzedus herynge of the auauntage that the Danys then had, assembled his people and sped hym thytherwarde / and sente vnto the fozesayd two kynges, commaundynge them also to prepare theyr people agayne hys cõmynge. But howe yt was oz the kynge came wyth hys hoste / the Danys so prouokyd the Nozthumbzes to batayll, that they met in playne feld & foughte a longe batayll. But finally the Danys wan the pryce/ and slew both the fozesayd kynges wyth a great multytude of theyr people.

After whych vyctozy they subdued myche of the sayde countrey, and destroyed ꝑ town of Aklynt oz Aclynd/ the whyche, as testyfyeth Beda, was somtime one of the strongest townes of the Nozthe.

when Ethelbzede hadde prepared all thynge foz the warre / and was purposyd towarde the Nozth, foz cõsyderacyon afozesayde: wozde was bzought vnto the sayde kynge Ethelbzede of the dyscomfyture of the Nozthumbzes/ and also of dyuerse of the sayde Danys wyth other that were comen to Mercia, and hadde wonne the towne of Snotyngham oz Notyngham / whyche tydynges lettyd hym of his fozth spedde in that tourney. But thys sayenge is dysagreable vnto Policronicon. Foz he sayth that the Nozthumbzes were yet of theyr kynge Osbzutus oz Osritus after some authours/ and chase vnto thé a tyzaunt named Ella/ by meane wherof great dissensyon grew amõg them

them to the great hurte of the countrey. But when the Danys hadde passed the countre, and wonne the cytye of yorke, that then was feblye wallyd: then by constraynte and offere, for the defence of theyr coũtrey, they were fayne to agree and to gather strengthe on all sydes / so that bothe the forsayde kynges went agayne the forsayd Danis, and both were slayn. After whych scomfyture the people as desolate / some fledde the countrey, and some made peace wyth the Danys, and lyued vnder theyr tuycyon. And so the Danys kepte the possessyon of that coũtrey / in suche wyse that no Angle hadde rule therof, tyll the time of Adelstone or Etheistone, or after some wryters tyl the tyme of Edredus / so that they helde the possessyon therof ouer the terme of.lx. yeres.

Then the Danys beynge thus possessyd of the Northe conntrey / manned the same, & fortyfyed the stronge holdes therof. And the other of them came downe into Mercia or myddell Englande / and wanne a parte therof wyth the forsayde towne of Nothyngam / and dwellyd there ỳ more parte of the yere folowynge.

wherfore kynge Etheldrede wyth ayde of Burdredus then kynge of Mercia, layde seage vnto the towne. The whyche when the Danys perceyued shulde be wonne / they refusyd the towne, and toke the towre or castell, and defendyd yt in so stronge maner, that they helde yt tyll a peas or apoyntement was concludyd betwene the two kynges and theym. whyche was that they shulde go free where they wolde, and carye wyth theym theyr horse and harnesse wyth out any pyllage. And whẽ this peace was thus made, eyther of the kinges departed to theyr owne / and the Danys retourned vnto yorke, & dwelled there the yere folowynge.

And the yere folowynge that sayde yere / a parte of the sayde Danys takynge shyppynge in the Northe, entendynge to sayle towarde eest Englande / mette in the see wyth a flote of Danys, wherof the captaynes or ledars were named Hynguoar & Hubba. The whyche by exhortacyon of the other commynge oute of the North / made all one course, and last ly landed in eest Englande or Norffolk / and in processe of time came vn to Therfore.

Therof herynge Edmundus then kyng of that prouynce / assembled an hoste, that gaue vnto them batayll. But Edmũde and his hoste was forsed to forsake ỳ feld / & the kyng with a few persones fledde vnto the castel of Framlynghã or Framyngeham / whome the Danys pursued. But he in short whyle after yelded hym selfe vnto the persecucyon of the Danys. And for this blessyd man Edmunde wolde not renye or deny Cryste and hys lawys / they therfore moste cruelly bonde him vnto a tree, and caused hym to be shot to deth / and lastely caused his hedde to be smytten from the body, & caste amonge the thycke of the bushes. But when his frendes came after to burye this holy treasoure and lacked the hed, and made for yt busy serche / the hedde beyng in the clawys of a wylde wolfe spake, & sayde thre tymes dystynctely, here, here, here. By reason of whyche speche they came vnto ỳ place where the hedde in the sayde bestys keppyng laye. whyche sayde wolfe contrarye to his kynde / anon as he sawe the people, fledde from the hedde and suffred theym to take yt vp / and folowyd theym after a certayn of tyme as he hadde ben tame.

Then they wyth great solempnyte caryed the body and hed vnto Egip-

don or Eglysdon now callyd saynte Edmundes bury / and there buryed hym, aboute the yere of our lorde as wytnessen Polycronica, Guydo, and other, viii. hundred. & .lxix/ as before it is shewyd in ỳ chappyter of this worke foure score & .xvi. for whom dayly god shewyd there many miracles.

THE.CLXX. CHAPITER.

When this blessyd Edmũde was thus martyred for the loue that he bare towarde his mayster Crist and his lawes/his brother named Edwoldus settynge a parte the lykynge and pleasure of the worlde, all be yt that to hym belongyd the ryght of that kyngdome, toke vpon hym the habyte of an heremyte, and lyued onely by brede and water at the abbay of Cerñ in the countye of Dorset/ by the clere welle that saynt Justyne by his prayers made to sprynge, when he conuertyd fyrst the Sarons of that prouynce to ỳ fayth of Cryste.

Of this said abbay of Cerñ, Policronica sayth ỳ it was after these dayes ryche and ryght welthy. But the gouernours therof myspent the patrymony therof in excesse glotony, & not amonge the seruauntes of god.

wherfore he sayth farther, that couetyse and pryde hadde so chaũged all thyng in England in these days/ that all thynges that before tyme were gyuẽ to abbays, were then more wasted in glotony and outrage of the owners, then in sustenaunce and ayde of nedy men and of gestes or nedy waygoers. Albe yt he sayth the fyrst doers or gyuer lose not theyr reward. For theyr wyll and entent is full euenly payed in a balaunce, before hym that is the rewarder of all good. But though Treuysa ỳ was the translatoure of this boke of Polycronycon out of laten into our vulgare tunge/ reporte this to be done, or thys mysorder to be vsyd in thys dayes, whyche lyued in the tyme of that honorable prynce Edwarde the thyrde/ yf he now lyued, he wold not in no gouernours of munkes blacke or yet whyte, laye no suche outrage. For nowe at these dayes pryde and glotony is clerely banyshed frõ theyr monasteryes and cellys / and in the rome of pryde wyth hys frende dysobedyence, haue they nowe lodgyd humylyte with his suster obedyence. And in the stede of glotonye and vnclenesse of lyuynge / haue they nowe newely professyd them vnto all chastyte, temperaunce, abstynence, auoydynge all slowth and idelnesse/ and exercyse theym in gostely studye and preachynge of the worde of god wyth all dylygence. So that nowe the holy rulys & ordynaunces made by that holy father and abbote saynt Benet, which by ignoraũce haue lõg tyme slepte / nowe by grace of good gouernaunce are newely reuyued and quyckened. And here and ende, lest I be accused of dyssymulacyon.

Then to retourn vnto the Danys, from whome I haue made a longe dygressyon / trouth yt is that when they hadde as before is sayde, martyred the blessed man Edmunde, and robbed and spoyled that countrey/ and they toke agayne theyr shyppes and landed agayne in Southerye/ and there contynued theyr iourney tyll they came to the towne of Redynge, and wanne the towne wyth the castell.

Policronyca sayth ỳ the thyrd day of theyr thyther cõming/ Hingwar & Hubba as they wente in purchasyng of prayes, were slayne at a place called Engelfelde. whyche prynces of Danys thus slayne/ the other dele of theym kepte hole to gyther, in suche

wyse that the weste Saxons myght take of theym none auauntage. But yet wythin few dayes after the Danys were holden so shorte, that they were forced to yssue out of the castell, and to defende theym in playne batayll. In ỹ whych by cõforte of kyng Etheldrede and of Alurede his brother/ the Danys were dyscomfyted, and many of theym slayne. wherof the other beynge ware / fled agayne to the castell, and kepte theym wyth in the same a certayne of tyme.

Then the kynge cõmaunded Etelwold then duke of Baroke or Barkshyre, to attende wyth hys peple vpon that castell / & to se that the Danys brake not oute at large while he went in other costes of that countrey to subdue other of the sayde Danys But when the Danys knewe of the kynges departure/ they brake out so dayuly anon of theyr hold, and toke the duke vnpurueyed & slewe hym and myche of hys people / and caused the other to with drawe them farther from that towne or castell.

Then these Danys drewe them to other that were theyr lordes in that coũtrey/ and enbatelled them in such wyse, that of theym was gatheryd a stronge hoste.

It was not long after duke Etheiwolde was slayne, but the kyng was ascertayned therof. The whyche renewed his heuenesse, and made hym full heuy/ to consyder the losse of his frende, and the encreace and multyplyenge of his enymyes. For ỹ daye before reporte of these tydynges as affermeth an olde cronycle / worde was brought to hym of the landyng of a Dane named Osryk, whyche of Policronyca is named kyng of Denmarke. The whyche in shorte tyme after with assystence of the other Danys / hadde gaderyd a great hoste, and were enbatelyd vppon a the downe. To this batayll Alured was forced by great nede to come before his brother the kynge, that then was herynge of a masse wyth great deuocyon, not knowynge of that hasty spede of his brother. where ỹ kynge thus beynge in hys medytacyons/ ỹ hostes of Anglys and Danys strake to gyders wyth houge vyolence. And how be yt the Danys hadde won the hyllande & ỹ crysten men were in the valley / yet by grace and vertue of ỹ kynges holy prayers and manhode of theym selfe, they at length wanne the hyll of the Danis, and slew theyr duke or kynge called Osryke, or after the englyshe cronycle Oseg, and fyue of theyr dukes, wyth myche of theyr people/and chased ỹ other dele vnto Redynge towne.

wherfore the Danys resembled theyr people, and gathered a newe hoste/ so that wythin.xv.dayes they mette at a towne called Basynge Stoke/ and there gaue batayll vnto the kynge, and hadde the better.

Then the kynge gatheryd his people, the whych at that felde were chacbyd & dyspatkyd/ and wyth freshe soldyours to theym accompanyed, mette the Danys within two monethes after at a towne called Merton/ and gaue to theym a sharpe batayll, so that myche people were slayn as well of the crysten as of the Danys. But in the ende the Danys hadde the honour of the felde/ and the kynge of Anglys was wounded, and fayne to sauegarde hym selfe by polycy when myght fayled.

After these two feldes thus won by the Danys/ they obteyned great cyrcuyte of grounde, and destroyed man and chyld that to them were inobedyẽt. And chyrches and temples they tourned to vse of stables, and other vyle occupacyons. And to this sorowe was added an other.

for where the kyng hoped well to re
couer his losses by ayde of his subie-
ctes, as wel of other ptes of his land
as of hys owne of westsaxon / when
he hadde sent his commyssyons into
Northumberland, into Mercia, and
est Anglia: He had of them small or
lytell comforte / so that the coũtre of
west Saxon was brought in great
desolacyon. For the kyng was beset
wyth enymyes vpon euery syde/and
ouer that his knyghtes and soldy-
ours were tyred & pilled wyth ouer
watche and labour. whyche many-
folde aduersytyes and troubles syn-
kynge in the kynges mynde / wyth
brose or hurte ensuyng of the wounde
before take at ỹ batayll besyde Wer-
ton, shortened his dayes / so that he
dyed when he had regned in great
persecucion of the Danys after most
writers.viii.yeres, wythout yssue of
his body. By reason wherof the rule
of the lande fyll vnto hys brother
Alured.

It is wytnessyd of some cronycles
that not wythstandynge the great
trouble and veracion that this kyng
Etheldrede hadde wyth the Danys,
he founded the house or college of
chanons at Exeter, and was bu-
ryed at the abbaye of wymbourne or
wobourne.

THE.CLXXI. CHAPITER.

ALuredus the.viii. sonne of
Adolfus & brother to Ethel-
dredus laste kynge, beganne his reg-
gne ouer the westsaxons and other
prouynces of Englande, in the yere
of our lorde.viii.hundred & lxxi/and
the.xxvi. yere of Charlis forenamed,
then kyng in Fraunce. This Alured
or after some writers Alphred was
xii.yere of age or he were set to scole.
But for all that he spedde so well his
tyme, that he passed his brother and
other that were long set forth before
hym. And by the counsayll of Scots
or Nots / he ordeyned the fyrst gram-
mer scole at Oxenford, & other free
scoles, and straunchaysyd that towne
wyth many great lyberrtyes / & trans-
lated many lawes, & Marcyan lawe
and other, out of Brytysshe speche vn
to Saxon tunge. He was also a sub-
tyll mayster in buyldyng and deuy-
synge therof, and excellent connyng
in all huntynge. Fayre he was of sta
ture / and moste beloued of his father
of all his chyldren.

Longe tyme it wold aske to reherse
all his vertue. But for he was in his
youth dysposed to ỹ syn of the flesshe,
and thereby letted from many a ver-
tuous purpose: he lastely after many
resystences by hym done to auoyde ỹ
temtacyon therof / besought god en-
terly, that he wold sende to hym som
contynuall sykenes in quenchyng of
ỹ vyce, & that he were not vnprofyta
ble to worldely besynesse & serue ge
the better.

Then at goddes ordynaũce he had
ỹ euyll called Fyc / wyth the whych
sekenes he was greued many yeres,
and lastely cured of that holy virgyn
sayne Modwenna then dwellyng in
Irlande. But after this cure by her
done she came into Englande, for so
myche as her monastery or chyrch ỹ
she there dwelled in was destroyed.
wherfore Adulfus father to Alured,
knowynge the vertue and holynesse
of this mayden / gaue to her ground
to buylde vppon.ii. abbays of may-
dens. That is to say one in Arderne
at a place callyd Pollisworth am, an
other at Stronesalte in the North.
But this holy mayden dyed in the
yland of Andresey besyde Burton, af-
ter many yeres of the buyldynge of
these sayd two abbays, & after.viii.ye
res ỹ she had ben closyd within stone
walles in the yle before named.

When Alured was cured of this se
kenesse

kynes, to him fyll an other/the which contynued with hym from the .xx. yere of his age tyll the .xlv. yere of hys sayde age. But ỹ not withstãdynge he wedded a noble woman named Ethelwyda/of the which he receyued two sonnes, Edwarde surnamed the elder, & Egelwarde/& .iii. doughters, Elphleda ỹ after was ladyé of Mercia Ethelgota a méchon or nũne, & ỹ thyrd was named Elfrida. The whyche he caused all as well doughters as other, to studye the arte or scyence of grãmer, & to be norysshed wyth all vertue. And when this Alurede was admyttyd to be kynge, he well consyderyd the great daunger ỹ his lande was in. wherfore he gaderyd to hym his lordes/& suche as he myght not wyn wythout stryfe, he wanne wyth great iustyce and fayre hostes. So ỹ he shortly assembled a stronge hoste/ and in the seconde moneth ỹ he was made kynge, he mette wyth the Danys besyde wylton, & yelded to them batayll, but not wythout great losse of men on both partyes.

Then he remeuyd his pleople, and in sondry places faught wyth ỹ Danys in the fyrste yere .vi. tymes. By meane wherof his peple were so sore mynyshed and wekyd / that he was forsed to take peas wyth his enymyes, vppon couenaunt that they shuld auoyde the countres & prouynces ỹ he had dompnyon of.

Vppon whych agremẽt fermely concluded the Danis for a tyme voyded those coũtreys/& drew towarde London, & rested theym about ỹ coste the more parte of the yere folowynge / & from thens to Lyndesey, in robbyng and spoylyng the townes & villages as they wente, & holdynge ỹ cõmon people vnder they⁹ seruage/ & so contynued ouer the terme of two yeres. But or the thyrde yere were endyd they yode vnto Repindon/ and there put down or slewe Burdred⁹ then kyng of Mercia/ and betoke ỹ kyngdome vnto a seruaunt of his named Colwolphus, vppon condicyon that he shulde kepe it to they⁹ behofe. And then they besegyd a town thereby called Hambourgth, & assauted yt right sharpely. wherfore the people therof beynge in great drede and fere/ toke the body of that holy vyrgyne sayntt werbourgth, by vertue of whose body the enymyes were somwhat put a backe. And after for a more suerty/ ỹ inhabytauntes of ỹ towne of Hamburgth wyth that holy treasure, fled vnto westchester/ where at this daye she lyeth honorably shryned.

Then the kyng made oft peas with the Danys, in truste wherof he rode with the fewer peple, wherof they beyng ware, layd bushemẽtes for hym, & set so nere hym, ỹ they slew a great parte of his cõpany in a nyght as he rode towarde wynchester.

For this treason the kyng was sore amouyd agayne the Danys/ & in as secrete maner as he myght he assembled a chosen cõpany of knyghtes/& as wytnessyth Guydo, fyll vpon thẽ sodeynly, & dystressed many of them, and lefte them not tyll he had chased them to Chester, or after an other authour to Exetour. And there kynge Alurede kept the Danys so shorte / ỹ he constrayned them to gyue to hym pledges to kepe the peace, & to dwell no lenger there then they myght purvey shyppynge at the next porte to sayle into Denmarke.

After which accorde thus fynyshed the kynge returned vnto Mercia or myddell England. And for he harde ỹ Colwolphus was dede, to whom the Danys had taken that lordshyp to kepe: he therfore sealyd ỹ kyngedome, and ioyned yt to his owne of west Sarons. By whych reason the kyngedome of Mercia surseasyd ỹ

had continued from theyr fyrst kyng named Penda, as in the chappter of this worke .C. xxix. precedynge, is more at length declared.

Aboute the .v. yere of the reygne of Alurede / the Danys as affermeth Policronica, sayled fro warham towarde Exetour/ in the whyche iourney they loste .vi. score of theyr small shyppes by a tempeste in the see. But some of them occupyed the towne of Cheppynham and the countrey therunto adioynynge/and chaspd ꝑ Angles, or made them as subiectes to ꝑ Danys. And so sore the power of the augmentyd / that the Angles loste dayly and they encresyd/ and ꝑ more by reason of the landyng of a prynce of the Danys named Gutteron or Gowthram, whyche ys named kyng of Denmarke.

THE .CLXXII. CHAPITER.

Alurede beynge thus ouerset in multytude of enymyes, as affermeth Policronica & other/ladde an vncertayne lyfe and vneasy wyth few folkes aboute hym, in the wode countrey of Somersetshyre / and had syght scante to lyue wyth, but suche as he and hys peple myght purchase by huntyng and fyshynge. In which mysery he thus by a certayn of tyme contynuynge/he was by a vysyon to hym shewyd of sayncte Cutbert comforted, as folowyth. Uppon a tyme when his cõpany was from hym departed & besyed in purchasyng of vytayle, and he for a passetyme was redynge on a boke/a pilgryme came to him and requyred his almes in goddes name. The kynge lyfte vp hys handes towarde heuen and sayde, I thanke god that of his grace, he vysyteth hys poore man this day by another poore man / and that he will wytsaue to ease of me ꝑ he hath gyuen to me. Then the kynge anon called his seruaunt that hadde but one lofe and a lytell what of wyne / and badde hym gyue the halfe therof vnto the poore man. The whyche receyued yt thankefully/and sodaynly banished from his syght, so that no sygn of hym was sene in the nesshe fenne or more ꝑ he passed thorough. And also all that was gyuen to hym/was lefte there by in such wyse as yt was to hym gyuen. And shortely after his company returned to theyr maister/ and brought wyth theym great plenty of fyshe that they had then taken.

The nyght folowynge when the kynge was at his reste/one apperyd to hym in a bysshoppes wede, & charged hym that he shuld loue god, and kepe iustyce, and be mercyable to the poore men, and worshyppe prestes. And sayd more ouer, Alurede Criste knowyth thy cõscience and thy wyll, and nowe wyll put an ende of thy sorowe and care. For to morow strong helpers shall come to the, by whose helpe thou shalte subdue thyne enymyes. who arte thou sayd the kyng. I am Cutbert sayd he, ꝑ pylgryme ꝑ yester day was here with ꝑ/to whom thou gauest both brede and wyne. I am holy for the and thyne, wherfore haue thou myndе hereof when yt is wel with the. But how he had his pilgryme in myndе after, by the fredam that he gaue with the possessyons vnto Durham chyrche / yt is well and euydently sene.

Then Alurede after this vysyon, was wel comforted, and shewed hym more at large/ so that dayly resorted to hym men of wylshyre, Somersetshyre, & Hamshyre/ tyll that he was strongly companied. Then the kyng put hym in a great teopdye, as sayth wyllyam de regibus. For he dyd on hym the habite of a mynstrell/& with his instrument of musyke, he entred

the

the tentes and pauylyons of the Da-
nys/ and in shewynge there his en-
terlude & songes, he espyed all theyr
slouth and idelnesse, and harde myche
of theyr counsayll/ and after retour-
ned vnto his company, and tolde to
theym all the maner of the Danys.

Then the kynge wyth a chosen cō
pany/fyll vpon ȳ Danys by nyght,
and dystrellyd and slewe of theym a
great multytude, and chasyd theym
from that coste. And when the kyng
had thus chasyd the Danys/by cou-
sayll of his knyghtes, he buylded
there a toure and named it Edelyng,
whyche is to meane in oure speche a
toure of noble men. Oute of whych
toure he and his soldyers made ma-
ny assautes vppon theyr enymyes,
& dyd to them myche harme & scath/
and clerely voyded the countrey of
them betwene that and Selwoode.

This Edelynge or Ethelyngeseye,
standeth in a great marys or more/
so that men may not wyn to yt with-
oute shyppe or bote, and contrynyth
no great grounde/ but yet therin is
venyson and other wyld bestes, and
fowle, and fyshe great plenty.

Thus kynge Alurede dayly pur-
suyd his enymyes by helpe of god &
his subiectes/ whyche heryng of his
victoryes and manfull dedes, drewe
to hym dayly out of all costes. By
whose powers and assistens he helde
the Danys so shorte/ that he wanne
from them wynchester, & many other
good townes/and forced them lastly
to seche for peace, the whych was cō
cludyd vppon certayn couenauntis.
wherof one and principall was/that
theyr kynge named as before is sayd
Guttrun or Gothram, or after ȳ En-
glyshe cronycle Gurmunde, shuld be
crystyned, and a certayne of his du-
kes wyth hym. And for ȳ kyng wold
haue the Danys banyshed out of the
west partyes of Englande/he grau-
ted for hym eest Anglia to abyde and
dwell in.

Thus this prynce of Danys accor-
dynge to the couenauntes, was cry-
stynd at wynchester/ and .xx. of the
greatest of his dukes. And to this
sayde Danys prynce Alurede was
godfather at the funte stone, and na-
med hym Athelstane. And after he
hadde a season feasted the sayde Da-
nes/ he accordynge to his promyse
gaue vnto theyr kynge the countrey
of eest Anglia, whyche then conteyn-
ned Norffolk and Suffolk, & parte
of Cambrydshyre. And also as wyt-
nessyth Polycronica he graūted to ȳ
Danys that were crystened the coun
trey of Northumberlande. And the
other that wold not be crystynd de-
parted the land & sayled into Fraūce/
where they resyd theym wyth theyr
cosyns and kynnesmen, that at those
dayes wasted the lande of Fraunce,
as in the frenche storys is somwhat
apparent. when this Danys kynge
Athelstane hadde the possessyon of
these countreys/ ye shall vnderstand
ȳ all suche Angles as dwelled there,
and wythin the precyncte of theym,
were vnder his obedyence. And all
be yt that he helde the sayd prouynce
as in fee of ȳ kyng, and promysed to
dwell there as his lyege mā/yet that
promyse not wythstandynge, he con
tynued lyke a tyraunte by the terme
of .xi. yeres full, and dyed in the .xii.

In the whyche tyme kynge Alu-
rede amended the cytye of Sceptoñ
that nowe is called Shaftesburye/
and other townes and stronge hol-
des ȳ by the Danys were sore aba-
tyd and enpayred. And as wytnes-
syth Gupdo and other/ he buylded ȳ
house of nonnes at Shaftesbury, or
was fyrste founder therof.

He also founded an house of relp
gyon in the aboue named place of
Ethelyngesey/and a nother in wyn-

chester, that was named the new mo-
nastery. In the whiche he was after
buryed. And ouer this he endowed
the churche of saynte Cuthberte in
Dorcham, as before is touched.

Aboute the .xv. yere of the reygne
of Alurede/ þ Danys whiche before
as ye haue hard sayled into France,
retorned into Englande and landed
in Kent/ and so lastly came vnto Ro-
chester and beseged that cytye/ and
lay there so longe, that they buylded
a towre of tymber and not of stone,
agayne the gates of the cytye. But
by strength of þ cytesyns that towre
was destroyed, and the cytye defen-
ded tyll kyng Alurede restowed the.
The whyche hadde made suche pur-
ueyaunce for the dystressyng of them
by water and lande / that they were
so ntre trapped, that for fere they left
theyr horses behynde them and fled
to theyr shyppes by nyght. But whā
the kynge was therof ware / he sent
after them & toke .xvi. of theyr shyp-
pes, and slewe many of the sayd Da-
nys. After thys iourney, the kynge
retorned to London / and repayred
certayne placys therof, that before
had ben hurte or febled wyth the Da
nys/ and betoke the guydyng therof
vnto Etheldredus than erle or duke
of Mercia, to whom as wyfe he had
gyuen hys doughter Elfleda.

About thys tyme dyed Dunber-
tus than bysshop of wynchester/ and
the kyng made Dunwolfus bysshop
after hym. The whyche as sayth Po
lycronycon the kynge fande in the
wodde keppyng of bestes, in the tyme
whan he hym selfe kepte the woddes
for fere of the Danys.

About the .xii. yere of the reygne
of thys kynge Alurede / the Danys
landed in .iiii. places of thys lande,
that is to wytte in the Eest England
and the North, and in the west in .ii.
places. But for þ kynge before theyr
landynge had warnynge of the deth
of Athelstan kyng of Danys of Eest
England, and of other complayntes
of þ Danys/ he therfore rode thyder
in whyche tyme of hys there beynge
these tydynges came vnto hym.

THE .CLXXIII. CHAPITER.

When kynge Alurede was acer-
tayned of these tydynges/ for so
mych as some of the sayde Da-
nes were landed in that coste, and
knewe well that þ ferther they drewe
vnto these partyes, the more they
shulde be ayded and strengthed: he
therfore sent messengers in all haste
vnto Etheldred erle or duke of Mer
cia / chargynge hym to assemble an
hoste of the men of Mercia and the
border there about / and to make re-
systens agayne the Danes, whyche
landed in the west. And that done/ þ
kyng sped hym toward hys enmyes,
and pursued them so sharpely, that
in þ ende he droue them out of Eest
Anglia. The whyche than landed in
Kent/ whyther the kynge wyth hys
people spedde hym, and in lyke ma-
ner draue the Danes from thens.
How be it of any specyall fyghte or
batayle authours therof leue no me-
mory. After thys agayne the Danes
toke shyppynge & sayled into North
wales, and there robbed and spoyled
the Britōs/ and from thens retorned
by the see into the Eest Anglia, and
there rested them, for so mych as the
kynge than was gone westwarde.

In thys whyle some of the fore-
sayd Danys had wonne the towne
of Chester. But for the countrees ad
toynaūt prased so sore vppon them/
the sayd Danys were compelled to
kepe them wythin the sayd towne or
cytye, and to defende theym by that
maner. But that holdyng of þ towne
lasted so longe, that the Danys were
compel-

compellyd to eate theyr horses for hunger. But by apoyntement they lastely gaue ouer the towne, & went thens into Northumberland. And in the whyle that the kynge with his hoste spedde hym thyderwarde/ they leuynge the stronge holdes and castels garnysshed wyth men and vytayle, toke agayne shyppynge & fet theyr course in suche wyse that they landed in Suffer/and so came vnto the towne of Lewes, and from thens toward London/ & buylded a towre or castell nere vnto the ryuer of Lewes. But the Londoners herynge of theyr doynges, mãned out a certayn nomber of men of armes/the whiche wyth assystens of the men of ỳ countree, put the Danys from that towre and after bete it downe to the groũd.

Soone after ỳ kyng came downe thyder/ and for he thoughte that ryuer shulde be a meane to bryngе enemyes efte soones into that countre: therfore he cõmaunded ỳ streme to be deuyded into diuers stremes/so ỳ by reasõ therof there a shyp myght sayle in tyme afore passed, thã a lytell bote myghte scantly rowe. Than by presence of the kynge, the Danes were forsed to fle that countre, and from thens toke agayne waye toward walys, and kept a parte of the ryuer of Seuerne/& vppon the border therof buylded them a castell nere vnto walys, & so rested them there for a tyme. So that. iii. yeres after thys lande was vexed wyth thre maner of sorowes/wyth warre of the Danes, pestylence of men, & moreyne of beestes. whyche troubles & aduersytees not wythstandynge / the kyng knyghtly and mankully resysted the malyce of his enmyes/and thanked god alway what trouble so euer fyll to hym or to hys realme/ and sustayned it with greate humylyte and pacyence.

It is tolde of hym ỳ he deuyded ỳ daye and nyght in thre partyes ỳ he were not let by warre or other greate besynes. wherof. viii. houres he spẽt in study and lernyng of scyence/and other. viii. he spente in prayer and almes dedes wyth other charytable dedes/& other. viii. houres he spent in his natural reste, sustinaũce of hys body, & the nedes of the realme. The whych order he kept duely by waren tapers kepte by certayne persons.

Thus thys marcyall knyght continuyng in all prowesse and vertue, lastly dyed / whan he hadde reygned ouer the more parte of thys lande by the terme of. xxviii. yeres full. And was fyrst buryed at wyltõ, and after certayne yeres remoued and caryed vnto wynchester/ leuynge after hym a sonne named Edwarde, surnamed Edwarde the elder. For the other brother called Egelwarde dyed before hys father.

Francis.

THE. CLXXIIII. CHAPITER.

Lewys the second of that name, and sonne of Charlis ỳ Balled / began hys reygne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lorde. viii. hũdred lxxviii/and the. vi. yere of Aluredus than kynge of the more parte of Englande. Thys was named Lodowicus Balbus, whych is to meane Lewys the stameret / for so myche as he had an impedyment in hys tunge.

ye haue before in ỳ story of Charlys the Balled herde, How Charlon the neuew of Charlys forsayd, with hys hoste had entred Italy, and entended towarde Rome. The whyche after the deth of his sayd vncle Charlys, kepte on hys waye, & lastly came vnto

vnto Rome. But for the pope than beynge Johñ the.viii. of that name/ fauoured the aboue named Lewys Balbus, and entended to make hym emperoure: therfore he refrayned ꝑ enoyntyng of the sayd Charlon. For the whyche dede he fynally was compelled to auoyde the towne & coũtre, & fled into Fraũce. where he beynge honourably of Lewys receyued/ declared and admytted hym for emperoure, as sheweth the Cronycles of Rome. But after two yeres of hys reygne or shorte tyme of thys admyssyon to that dygnyte, thys Lewys dyed. wherfore the sayde pope to enioye hys papaly in reste/ retorned to Rome, and anoynted the forenamed Charlon, and crowned hym with the imperyall dyademe/the whyche in ꝑ Romañ cronycle is named Carolus tertius, the thyrde emperour, that is to meane of that name.

But of all thys speketh nothyng the Frenche Cronycle/excepte that it is there testyfyed, that he was of the sayd pope admytted for emperour.

Polycronycon sheweth, that the seconde Lewys kynge of Fraunce, was accursed of the pope Nicolas ꝑ fyrste of that name/ for so myche as he refused hys lawfull wyfe, & toke to him his concubine named waldrada. But that is vnderstande by Lewys the second emperour of that name/whyche was sonne of Lothayre, whyche Lothayre was eldest sonne of Lewys the mylde, as in the story of Charlys the Balyd appereth. And for the genelogy of Charlis the conqueroure, or of hys offspyng may the clerelyer appere/ and also that ꝑ reder may haue the more certeyne of the names, whych were emperours, whych kynges of Fraunce, & whych were kynges of Germany: I shall in the story of Lewys the.v. (in whome for a tyme surceasyd ꝑ blode) make a remembraunce of euery emperour, & kynges of Fraunce & Germany, that reygned from ꝑ sayd Charlis ꝑ grete or conquerour, tyll Hugh Capet/the whyche Hugh vsurped the crowne of Fraunce, as after shall appere.

Than it foloweth in the story, that for partycyon of the lande of Austracy or Lorayn, grudge and varyaũce contynued alwaye bytwene the kynges of Fraũce & Germany / whyche bothe kynges at thys daye were named Lewys, albeit that the kyng of Fraunce was surnamed Balbus, as before is shewed. For the whych varyaunce by laboure of frendes these two kynges mette at ꝑ cytye or place called Gundeuyle. where after longe cõmunycacyõ it was fynally agreed, that the sayde prouynce of Austracy shulde than be deuyded, as it somtyme had ben parted bytwene Charlys the Balled and Lewys kynge of Germany theyr bothe fathers.

After whych peas thus cõcluded, eyther parted from other in frendely wyse. And Lewys Balbꝰ yode vnto Arderñ, where he halowed the feste of Crystmas. And frõ thens he yode vnto Compeyne / where he herde of the rebellyon of a marques of hys realme called Barnarde, or more verely after the Romayn story a marques of Italy. For thys Barnarde wyth one Helberde had before tyme taken from the chyrche of Rome certeyne possessyons/ whyche by meane of thys Lewys & the sentence of the chyrche denounced agayne them by the forsayd pope Johñ, were agayn restored, and the partyes also reconcyled. But now of newe thys Barnarde rebelled agayne. wherfore the pope as to Lewys for the defensour of the chyrch of Rome sent for ayde/ for, as before I haue shewed you, thys Lewys of the sayde pope Johñ was authoryzed for emperoure. But

for he

for he was not crowned at Rome wyth the imperyall dyademe / he is not accõpted amonge ꝑ emperours.

For thys newe rebellyon of Barnarde, Lewys assembled hys armye at Cõpayne forestayd / and frõ thens rode to ꝑ cytye of Troyes in Vineet, where he was taken wyth sodayne malady, of ꝑ whyche he dyed shortly after, and not wythout suspeccyon of venym, whan he had ben kynge of Fraunce fully two yeres / leuyng after hym two sonnes, that is to saye Lewys and Charlys, or after some wryters Charlemayne.

THE. CLXXV. CHAPITER.

LEwys and Charlys / the sonnes of Lewys Balbus or Lewys ꝑ stameret / began theyr regne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of oure lordes incarnacion. viii. C. lxxx / and the. viii. yere of ꝑ regne of Alurede than kynge of Englande. The whyche for they were yonge of age, were put vnder tuycyõ and gydyng of Barnarde the erle of Auuergni / to whom the father by hys lyfe had the commytted. wherfore the sayd Barnarde wyth other of hys affynyte assembled shortly after at Meaux in Lorayne / & thyder called vnto them the lordes of the lande, to treate matters for the comon weale of ꝑ same.

In those dayes was a man of grete myght in Fraũce named Gosselcyn / the whyche enuyed the forsayd erle Barnarde & other, for certayne harmes to hym by them done in tyme before passed. In auengynge wherof the sayd Gosselcyn intended to putte hym and other from the rule of the land, whych he knew well they shuld occuppye whyle the sayd two children had rule of the same.

And thys euyll purpose to brynge to effecte / he went vnto Conrade erle of Parys, and shewed to hym moche of his wyll. And amonge other thynges lette hym wytte, that yf Lewys kynge of Germany myght with hys helpe be made kynge of Fraũce / that he shulde by hym be greatly auaunced. By whych meanes he caused the sayde Conrade to take hys parte / so that he & other of hys affynyte whan they came vnto the forsayde coũsayle at Meaux / sayde that Lewys kynge of Germany, was more apte to rule the lande of Fraũce than any other was. And also after some wryters / these Lewis and Charlys afore sayde were not the legytymate sonnes of the fornamed Lewis Balde, but gotten in baste of a concubyne of the sayd Lewys.

Thys mater thus debated and argued amonges the coũsayle / lastly by moste in nomber it was agreed, that Lewys kynge of Germanye shulde be by ambassade requyred to come and take vppon hym the rule of the lande of myddell Fraunce. The whych wyth small request was agreable / and in shorte tyme after came vnto the sayd cytye of Meaux, and after to Uerdune. But as soone as the knowlege was come to Barnarde and other of hys affynyte / by counceyle of Hughe and Terry two nobles of Fraunce, the bysshop of Orlyaunce with an erle and other were sent to Uerdune vnto the sayd kynge of Germany wyth thys message. That yf he were contente to take vnto hym all suche parte of the prouynce of Lorayne, as Charlys the Balled kepte from hys fader Lewys, wythout more clayme of the lande or realme of Fraunce / he shuld gladly haue it. And yf nat, he shulde abyde the iugement of Mars and hys batayle. wyth whyche offer Lewys was well contented / and beyng of it in a suertye, departed agayne into Germanye.

Thorough

Thorough that doynge, the forenamed Gosselyne and Conrade with other of theyr frēdes, were with yt sore dyscōtentyd of the departure of Lewys forsayde. But the sayd Bernarde with other of his syde, in goodly hast after cōueyed the sayd two chyldren vnto the citye of Ferrer/& there crowned and proclaymed theym for kynges, as wytnessyth mayster Robert Gaguyne. But the forenamed Gosselyne and Conrade not leuynge so the mater/ sente messengers vnto ꝑ quene of Germanye, cōplaynynge theym vnto her of the vnstablenesse and tymerousnesse of her lorde/wher by he had not alonely loste the possessyon of the realme of Fraunce, but also he hadde put them and all theyr frendes in great fere and daunger. wherof herynge the quene/ in her mynde was sore dyscontentyd wyth her lorde and husbande, and as she durste shewyd yt to hym as his reproche and dyshonour. And fynally to satysfye the myndes of the sayde Gosselyn̄ and Conrade, she sent into Guyan her brother named Boso/by whose aydes and assystence he was of that prouynce proclaymed kynge.

Endurynge whyche troubles/the Danys entred the lande, and came vnto the ryuer of Lyger, and robbed and spoyled the countrey wythoute mercy. wherfore the kynges assembled theyr people/ and gaue to them batayll nere vnto the ryuer of Uyen. where they dystressyd the sayde Danys and slewe of them .xx.thousand, and drowned of thē ouer that a grete multytude in the sayde ryuer. After whyche victory by the kynges obteyned/ a new veracyon & trouble was to them ascertayned, ꝑ Lewys kyng of Germany with a great puyssaunce was comen vnto a place called Ducy/and to hym was gone the forenamed Gosselyn̄ and Conrade with all the power that they myghte make/& by theyr ledynge was from thens cōueyed vnto Rybemaunt. But howe so yt was, for lacke of performaunce of promyse made by the sayde two erles vnto the kyng of Germany & not obserued/ he herynge of the kynges of Fraunce drawynge towarde hym wyth stronge hoste, cōcluded a peas, and retourned into Germany. And the two brethern rode to gyder vnto the citye of Damens or Demeus/ where they deuyded the lande of Fraunce betwene theym. So that Lewes held to hym the cōtrey nere & about Parys, with the prouince of Neustria or Normandye/and Charles had vnto his part Burgoyn and Guyan/ with promyse made & assured on eyther partye, that eyther of them shulde ayde and assyste other.

THE .CLXXVI. CHAPITER.

After this partycyon betwene the two brethern thus made/ by the meanes of Lewys kynge of Germany the forsayde erles Gosselyn̄ & Conrade were vnto the sayde brethern recouncyled and agreed. And for to theym redy worde was brought, ꝑ Boso before named kyng of Guyan hadde wonne the cytye of Uyen/ & therin lefte his wyfe whyle that he occupyed ꝑ hylles and mountaynes beynge there aboute: they ioyntly assembled theyr knyghtes, & sped thē thyther, & layde theyr seage aboute the cytye. But durynge this syege the Danis often wasted ꝑ land of Fraunce. wherfore Lewys the elder brother, departed frō that syege/ leuynge there his brother Charlys. But or the sayde Lewis myght wyn to the sayde Danys, they as tyraunes and cruell enymyes to Crystes fayth, hadde spoyled many chyrches and temples, and a monasterye of

saynt

saynt Peter in Corby, and throwen yt downe to the ground. After which vyle and cruell dede by theym done/ Lewys gaue vnto them batayll, and slew of them great nomber, and chased the remanaunt.

But after this victorye ensuyd a great wonder. For when the crysten hadde as before is sayde chasyd the pagans or Danys / they retourned as confusyd and dysparkled, lyke as all the hoste of Danys hadde theym pursued/ so that well was hym that myghte ronne fastest, and hyde hym selfe from the daunger of his enymy. For yt was thought to them and apparent to theyr syght, that theyr enymyes folowed at theyr backes wyth all kynde of wepyn/ and yet folowed thé no man. The whych fere & flyght of frenche men, as sayth myne authour, was sent to theym by dyuyne purueaunce/ for so myche as they so often before tyme had won the pryce of theyr enymyes, and had not therfore gyuen due thanke vnto god, but referred yt to theyr owne strenghtes and vertue.

Then the Danys herynge of this dysparklyng of the crysten hoste/ reassembled theyr power and ꝓpayred them to new fyght. wherfore ꝑ kyng called to gyther his knyghtes, so as before is sayd dysparkled/ and mette wyth theym nere vnto the aboue named ryuer of Lyger. But when both hostes were wythin a days iourney/ the kynge was aduysed by some of his coũsayll, ꝑ he shulde not as then fyght wyth thé. For the whych cause he rode vnto Compeynge, and there kept the feast of Crystemasse.

And whyle the kynge was lodged in Cõpeynge/ he delyuered his hoste vnto a noble man of his land named Theodorych/ wyllynge hym to go agayne the Danys. Of whose exployt or spede myne authoure maketh no mencyon/ but sayeth that soone after the forsayde feast, the kynge spedde hym to Turoñ/ where he sent to rayse the Brytõs of lytell Britayn to withstande the forsayde enymyes.

In the whyche passetyme he was there taken wyth a maladye, & from thens in a lytter carved vnto saynte Denis, where he dyed & was buried. Or as sayth maister Gaguyn, he dyed at Turoñ, and was after cõueyed vnto saynt Denys, and there buried. But for all writers ioyne the regyn of these two brethern in one / therfore I wyll now shewe vnto you the fyne or conclusyon of the other brother called Charlys or Charlemayn/ the whyche all thys whyle maynteyned the syege aboute Vyenne, where his brother as before is touchyd left hym. To whom the lordes of Fraũce sente in all haste, gyuynge to hym knowlege of the deth of his brother/ and also of the great daunger that the land was in by reason of the Danys. wherof when the sayd Charlys hadde thus wyttynge / he lefte a parte of hys people at the sayde syege, and wyth the other deale he sped hym towarde Champayne, for so mych as he was enfourmed that the Danys were drawen towarde that coste. And as he was in hys tourney/ worde was broughte vnto hym that Vyenne was delyuerd vnto suche persones as he hadde there left to mayntayne the syege.

And after thys came a nother messenger / whyche shewyd to hym that the Danys hadde destroyed dyuers chyrches in Champayne and other places / and howe the bysshoppe of Meaws that agayne theym hadde ladde an host of people, was of them slayne, and hys people chasyd/ and ouer thys at the forsayde ryuer of Lyger an other hoste of Danis, with theyr leder called Hastynges was as

semebled. The whych in that partyes wasted the countrey as the other in other places dyd / whyche somdeale apalled the herte of the kynge Charlys. How be yt by the comforte that he hadde dayly receyued from the lordes of Fraunce / he kepte on hys tourney, and made towarde the next of his enymyes.

But when he drew nere vnto them / were yt for his own cowardyse, or of the counsayll of his lordes / he fell to a communycacyon of peace. And fynally concluded that Godfrey the prynce of Danys, to confesse the fayth of Cryste and to be crystened / shulde enioye the hole prouynce of Fryse. And wyth in the same / he wyth hys Danys to inhabyte theym.

The whyche condycyon of peace was the begynnynge of greate sorowe and losse vnto Fraunce, as after shall appere. For all be yt that the sayd Godfrey to decepue the French men, shewed outwarde countenaūce to be a crysten man for a whyle / he shortely after wyth an hoste of .xl. thousande Danys, entred the land, wastynge the countrey tyll he came to Parys / and layde there hys syege about the same cytye. But by the archbyshoppe of Parys then named Joscelen, and the inhabytaunces of the same, the cytye was mankully defended / so that he with his Danys was fayne to breke hys syege / and from thens yode to the cytye of Laon, and wan yt by strength / and after yt spoyled and robbed, and after brent. And fro thens to Soysons in pyllynge and destroyeng the countrey as they went, in so cruell wyse, that the byshoppes and prestys fled from theyr chyrches, wyth relyques and anournamentes or ornamētes belongyng to the same / as the bodyes of sayncte Germayne, sayncte Remigius, and dyuers other.

In ỳ tyme of this persecucyō / lyke as the lande of Englande was in great daunger, so also was the land of Fraunce / by meane of these pagans or myscreaunctes Danys. The whyche resortyd from that one realme to that other / and releued theym selfe in that one land, whē they were chased oute of that other. But one myshappe amonges other befell in Fraunce at these dayes. For Charlys theyr kynge was taken from theym in suche wyse, that no wryter leueth of hym any mencyon how he dyed, nor when he dyed / nor no mencyon is made in the frenche cronycle nor of myne authoure, howe longe whyle he and hys brother Lewys reygned. All by Vyncent hystoryall, and Antonynus, whych groūded hym vpon the sayde Vyncent, and Jacobus Philippus saye / that these two foresayde brethern regned togyder and alone, by the terme of .v. yeres wythoute more.

And the frenche cronycle and also myne authour sayen, that Lewys dyed wythoute heyre / and that Charlys lefte after hym a sonne, whyche was named Lewys, and after for his symple dedes surnamed in laten Nihil faciens, or in frēche Ryen feyant / whyche is to meane in our speche nought doynge.

But who that lysteth wele to aduertyse & remēber the order of thys cronycle, he shall fynde in this latter sayenge some dyscorde. For where yt is sayde that thys Charlis shulde leue a sonne after hym, to my yt semeth, that consyderynge hys youth he shulde not be of any lawfull age to gette a chylde. For by all lykly-hode of conuenyence of the storye / yf all be verifyed as yt is before declared / he coude not passe ỳ age of .viii. yeres at the moste.

Wherfore yt muste folowe of a con-

gruence

gruence / that other they reygned lenger tyme, or elys thys chylde or heyre Lewys aboue nanied, was the sonne of some other man. But to folowe myne authour I shall procede as foloweth.

THE .CLXXVII. CHAPITER.

LEwys the fourth of that name, and sonne of Charlis as before is sayde / begañne his reygne ouer ꝑ Frenchmen, in the yere of our lorde .viii. hundred. lxxx. & .vi / and the .xiiii. yere of Aluredus then kyng of Englande. Of thys Lewys yt ys testyfyed of dyuers writers, that he shulde enamoure hym selfe vppon a menchon of the monastery of Chyell, and her drawe oute by force, and mary her vnto his wyfe. For the which dede and other, he purchasyd the aboue said name / & was called Lewis nought doynge.

In thys tyme the Danys, contrary to theyr ymyse before made / made new warre wythin the land of Frañce. wherfore the Frenchmen hauyng lytell hope in theyr kynge / sente vnto Charlon or Charlys ꝑ emperour, sonne of Lewys kynge of Germany as before is shewyd / requyryng him in all humble wyse to vysyte ꝑ realm of Fraunce / and to defende yt from the persecucyon of the Danys.

In these dayes also was kynge in Fraunce the forenamed Hugh / whych as ye before haue herd / mayntayned the quarell of Lewys & Charlys last kynges, agayn Lewys kyng of Germanye. The whyche Hugh of some writers is called Hue le graũd, that is Hugh the great. Thys man gaderyd an hoste of Frenchmen, and gaue batayll vnto the Danys, and slewe of them a great nomber.

It shulde seme by the wryters of the frenche storye, that these noble men of Fraunce, as thys Hugh and other, shulde haue the rule of the spyrytuall possessyons of abbayes and other houses of relygyon. For of myne Authour mayster Gagwyne, they are in laten named abbates / and in the frenche bokes abbis, whych is to meane abbottes.

And also yt is testyfyed of the sayd wryters / that this Hugh and Robert erle of Parys, were the fyrst that left the dystrybucyon of those spyrytuall goodes vnto theyr knightes / & gaue ouer that name of abbotte, the whyche in some other estates contynued tyll the dayes of Roberte kynge of Fraunce.

Then yt folowyth, accordynge to the requeste made vnto the emperour as aboue is shewyd / he gatheryd a stronge hoste of Italyons, and parced the lande of Fraunce / and bare hym so bycrosly agayne the Danys, that he forced theym to obey to all theyr former promyse & condycyons. But Eusebi⁹ and other ꝑ wrote the actes of the emperours / sayen, ꝑ this Charlis whyche they name the thyrd of ꝑ name, and also Grosius, ꝑ is great / subdued the Danys of Fraunce, & compellyd theyr leder or prynce named there Rodefredus, to take the habyte of Crystes relygyon, and receyued hym at the coulde water. In whyche tyme or soone after (wherof ꝑ tyme is not duely ascertayned) oped the forenamed kynge Lewys surnamed nought doynge / when he hadde reygned after most wryters viii. yeres / leuyng after hym a sonne named Charlis, ꝑ whyche after was surnamed symple. But for he was to yonge to take vpon hym such a charge / the lordes put hym vnder good & conuenyent guydynge / and chase an other as foloweth to guyde ꝑ lande tyll he were come to hys lawfull age, whyche was named Eudo.

THE .CLXXVIII. CHAPITER.

EUdo the sonne of Robert erle of Angeowe/ beganne his reygne ouer the French men, in the yere of our lorde. viii. hundred. lxxx. & xv/ and the. xxiii. yere of Alurede then kynge of Englande.

Ye shall vnderstand that the aboue named Robert erle of Angeow was as tutor and guyder vnto the forenamed kynges of Fraunce Lewys and Charlys/ and lastely was slayne of the Danys. The whyche Robert left after hym. ii. sonnes, Eudo and Robert. whych Eudo for the great fame that he was of, and also for ỳ great trouth that in hym was prouyd and knowen/ ỳ lordes of one assent chose hym to be kynge of the lande for the terme of his lyfe. And as affermeth the french boke & other he was crowned of walter then archebyshoppe of Senys.

Howe be yt this is somdele doutfull to be gyuen credence vnto, for dyuers reasons that therunto myghte be made. Mayster Gagwyne sayth, that he hath sene some authoures, that testyfye this forenamed Charlis the symple, to be the lawfull son of Lewys Balbus/ and the forsayde Lewys and Charlis late kynges of Fraunce, to be the bastarde sonnes of the sayde Lewys Balbus.

Then to folowe the mater, thys Eudo in cõsyderacyon that the sayd Charlis the symple was insufficyẽt to guyde the lande, he was putte vnder the guydyng of this sayd Eudo/ and he was made kynge in his stede. The whyche myghtly defendyd the lande from all daunger of enymyes. And ouer ỳ he caused the sayde Charlys the symple to be norysshed and broughte vp with moste dylygence/ so that he was informed & exercysed with all vertues doctrine, and other thynges necessarye vnto a princes son. And finally when this noble and vertuous knyghte Eudo knew ỳ he shulde dye/ he called before hym the lordes & nobles of Fraunce/ ỳ whych he charched by solemne othe, that after his deth, they immedyatly shulde crowne Charlis for theyr kyng/ and dyed soone after, when he hadde reygned as affermeth authours by the terme of. ix. yeres.

Anglia.

THE .CLXXIX. CHAPITER.

EDwarde surnamed the elder and son of Aluredus/ began his reygne ouer ỳ more part of England, in ỳ yere of our lord. ix. hundred & one/ & the. vii. yere of Eudo then kynge of Fraunce. This was lower then hys father in letter and connynge/ but he was hygher in honoure & worshyp. By his fyrst wife he had a son named Ethelstane, the whych was kynge after hym. By his seconde wyfe he had two sonnes Edredus & Edwynus/ & vii. doughters. And of ỳ thyrd wyfe he receyued two sonnes, Edmunde & Edrede/ and two doughters Edburga and Edgina.

The fyrste of these. iii. wyfes hyght Edwyna, the second hyght Edgina/ & the thyrde was named Ethleeswyda. Of ỳ forenamed. vii. doughters, which he had by his second wife/ one named Alunda or Almyda, was maryed to the fyrst Otto the emperour. And a nother named Algina, was maryed to Charlis the symple kyng of west Fraũce. And the yõgest of his doughters as sayth Policronica/ he wedded vnto Lewys kyng of Guyan. But therof speketh nothyng the frenche

frenche cronicle. He set his sonnes to scole/ and his doughters he sette to woll worke, takyng exemple of Charlis the conquestour.

By authoryte of Formosus the pope, he made. vii. byshoppes in Englande. wherof he ordeyned. v. in west Saron, one in southe Saron, & one in Mercia at Dorchester. He also for that the munkes of wynchester sayd that his father Alurede walkyd/ caused hym to be remoued vnto the new abbay. About the. v. yere of his reygne Clyto Ethelwaldus a nere kynnesman of his/ rebellyd agayn hym, and occupyed ỳ towne of wymborne besydes Bathe/ & toke thens by force a nunne/ & went thens vnto the Danys dwellyng in Northũberlande, & excyted them to ryse agayn kyng Edwarde. But the kynge pursued hym so sharpely, that he was constrayned to leue the countrey/ and sayled into Fraunce, and lefte the nũne behynde hym/ the whych the kynge caused to be restoryd agayn to the house ỳ she was taken fro.

The nexte yere folowyng, the sayd Clito wyth his cõpany landed in eest Englande, & gaderyd to hym ỳ Danys of that countrey, and with theyr ayde destroyed and pylled the countrey about Crekynforde & Criklade. And then passed ỳ ryuer of Thamis & spoyled the land to Bradenestoke/ and so frõ thens retourned into eest Anglia, ỳ is Norffolke & Suffolke.

The kynge folowed his enymyes and spoyled of theyr landes, whyche they helde by compolycyon from the ryuer of Owse, to the bordure of saynte Edmundus lande/ commaundynge hys knyghtes of hys hoste that none shulde dragge or tarye after hys hoste, for fere that they were not beclyppyd of theyr enmyes. But the Kentyshe men, whych trusted to myche in theyr owne strength, dysobeyed that commaundement. wherfore the Danys awaytynge theyr praye/ fyll vppon them by busshementes, and slewe the more partye of theym, wherwyth the kyng was sore dyscontentyd.

Soone after bothe hostes mette. where after longe fyght Clyto wyth many of the Danys was slayne, and the remenaunt constrayned to seche peace/ the whyche was graunted vpon certayne condycyons, that they shulde holde theym wythin the bounes to theym lymytted / and ouer that paye yerely a certayne money in waye of trybute.

After whyche peace wyth them stablyshed/ he repayred cytyes, townes, and castellys, that by the sayde Danys were shatered and broken.

And about the. viii. yere of his reygne / kynge Edwarde repayred the wallys and also the cytye of Kaerlyon, that now is called Chester. To the whych were great helpers Ethelred duke of Mercia, & Elfleda his wyfe, doughter of Alurede as before is shewyd, & suster of this kynge Edwarde. And that done the kynge buylded a stronge castell at Herford in ỳ egge of walys. And he enlarged so greatly ỳ walles of Chester / ỳ the castell whych before tyme was wyth out the wall, is now wythin.

And the. ix. yere of his reygn / Ethelred duke of Mercia by coũsayll of his wyfe trãslated ỳ bones of ỳ holy kyng Oswald, frõ Bradony to Glouceestre / & there buylded a fayre monasterye in the worshyp of sayntt Peter.

In the. xii. yere of kyng Edwardes reygne/ the Danes repentynge them of theyr couenauntes before made, myndyng & entendyng ỳ breche of the same/ assembled an hoste & met with ỳ kynge in Staffordeshyre, at a place called Toten halle, and soone after at wodenesfeylde. At whyche. ii. pla-

 ces the

ces the kynge slew two kynges, two erlys, and many thousandes of the Danys that then occupyed the countrey of Northumberlande.

And soon after dyed the noble man Etheldredus duke or erle of Mercia or myddell Englande. After whose deth, the kynge for so myche as he hadde often prouyd her wysedome/ he toke the rule of that countrey to hys wyfe Elfleda, London alonely exceptyd, the whyche he toke vnder his owne rule.

THE .CLXXX. CHAPITER.

Of this noble woman Elfleda, yf I shulde shewe all the vertues, yt shuld aske a long tyme and leasure. But amonges other of her noble dedes / she buylded and newly repayred many townes, cytyes, and castellys/ as Tomworth besyde Lychefeld, Stafford, warwyke, Shrowesbury, watrysbury, Eldysbury, in the forest besyde Chester, that nowe is ouer tourned and destroyed. Also she buylded a cytye wyth a castell in the Northe ende of Mercia vpon ꝑ ryuer Merce, that in those dayes was named Runcofali, but nowyt is called Runcorn. And she also buylded a brydge ouer the ryuer of Seuern, whyche is or was named Brymmysburye brydge. This stronge virago fauour of cytezeyns and fere of enymyes/ halpe myche the kyng her brother, in gyuynge of counsayll & buyldynge of cytyes. Of her is told that when she hadde ones assayed, the wo and sorowe that women fele and suffer in berynge of a chylde, she hated the enbrasynge of her husband euer/ and toke wytnesse of god and sayde, that yt was not cõuenyent or semely to a kinges doughter to vse such flesshely lykynge, wherof suche sorowe shuld ensue or folowe.

In the. xiii. yere of the reygne of this Edwarde/ a great nauy of Danys, whych in tyme of Alurede were dryuen into Fraunce, now retourned agayn and sayled about the west cõtrey/ and landed in dyuers places, & toke prayes, and went to theyr shyppes agayn. And at one time amõges other they robbed and spoyled at a place called Irchynfeylde, and toke a Brytysshe byshop and caryed hym to theyr shyppes, and fynally raunsomed hym at. xl. pounde. But as soone as kynge Edwarde had knowlege of theyr beyng/ he assembled his knyghtes, and sped hym westwarde by lande/ and sent a nother hoste by shyppe to encounter the Danys vpon the see. wherof herynge the sayd Danys fledde into Irlande/ and by that course voyded the land and handes of the kynge.

Then the kynge for strengthynge of the countrey/ made a castell at the mouth of the water of Auene, and a nother castell at Bokyngham / and the thyrd faste therby, ꝑ is to meane vpon eyther syde of ꝑ ryuer of Owse one. And after retourned into Northamtonshyre and Bedfordshyre, & faughte there wyth the Danys of these cõtrees/ and at length subdued them wyth theyr leder or duke called Turketylus.

About the. xvii. yere of this kynges reygned/ Elfleda lady of Mercia beforе mynded, gaderyd her knigthes. And where the Brytons or walshe men brake into the lande about Brekenoke, she wyth her people withstode theym/ and amonge other prysoners & prayes, toke there the quene of walshemen.

And the yere folowynge kynge Edwarde buylded or newly reedyfyed the townes of Towlestour and wygmore / and destroyed the castell that the Danys hadde made at Temesforde

forde. And that yere the noble Elfleda wanne the towne of Derby from the power of the Danys/ where they put her in such aduenture, that foure knyghtes, whyche were called Gardeyns of her corps, were slayne faste by her.

And ỳ.xviii. yere of his reygne dyed that noble prynceſſe Elfleda in the moneth of June/ and was buryed in the monaſtery of ſaynt Peter, which her lorde and ſhe before tyme hadde buylded wythin the towne of Gloucetour as aboue is touched, ouer the bones of that holy kynge ſaynte Oſwalde/ whyche monaſtery was after throwen to grounde by the Danys. But Aldredus byſhop both of yorke & of worcetour, made there an other/ whyche is now cheſe houſe or abbay of that towne or cytye.

when Elfleda was deed/ her doughter named Elſwyna helde the lordeſhyppe of Mercia a ſeaſon. But for the kynge cõſydered yt to be to great a thynge for her to rule / he therfore dyſcharged her therof, and ioyned it to his kyngedome, but not all wythout ſtryfe. For dyuers townes kepte of the kyng for a tyme/ as Snotyngham or Nothyngam, Tomworth, Derbye, and other / ſuppoſynge the doughter wold haue defended them as the mother by her lyfe had done. But finally they came to the kynges ſubiectyon.

Henry archbyſhoppe of Huntyngdon, that wrote myche of the cronycles of Englande / in prayſe of thys noble woman Elfleda made dyuers dytyes / of the whyche ſome ben expreſſyd as foloweth.

Ceſers tryũphes were not ſo myche to prayſe,
As was of Elfleda, that ſheldes ſo ofte dyd rayſe
Agayne her enymyes this noble ben quereſſe
Uirago and made whoſe bertue can
I not expreſſe.

When Edwarde hadde reconciled theſe forſayde townes/ he then buylded a new towne for agayn the olde towne of Nothyngham, on the ſouth ſyde of the ryuer of Trent/ and made a brydge ouer the ſayd ryuer betwene the ſayd .ii. twones. And as wytneſſyth Policronica, the yere folowynge in the ſayde towne or cytye of Notyngham, two kinges, that is to ſaye, of Scotlande and walys yeldyd them vnto kynge Edwarde. The cauſe why, nor of warre betwene theym to be contynued, is not of hym expreſſyd.

Howbe yt dyuers bokes of writers of cronycles of Englande, as of Marian⁹ the Scot, wyllam of Malmeſbury, Henry of Huntyngdon, & other yt is ſhewyd that this Edwarde ſubdued the kynges of Scotlande and of Cũbrys, aboute the .ix. yere of hys reygne. And of the ſayde authours yt is alſo teſtifyed, that about the .xx. yere of the reygne of the ſayde Edwarde, theſe ſayde kynges of Scottes and Cumbrys, ſhulde choſe this kynge Edwarde for theyr cheſe lord and patrone, whyche ſhuld be about this ſeaſon before expreſſyd.

Then this noble prynce Edwarde, after theſe thynges ſet by hym in an order/ he in the northe ende of Mercia by the ryuer of Merre, buylded a cytye or towne, and named yt Thylwall, and ſtrengthyd yt wyth knyghtes. And after repayred the cytye of Maynchester/ that ſore was defaced with warre of ỳ Danys. After which notable dedis by ỳ puyſſaunt prynce fynyſhed / wyth the maryage of hys chylder and many other, whyche I omytte and paſſe ouer for length of tyme: fynally this noble man dyed, when he hadde reygned wyth great

trauayle by the terme of.xxiiii.yeres at Faryngdon/and from thens conueyed to wyncheſter, and there enteryd in the monaſtery of ſaynt Swythyne/leuyng after hym dyuers ſonnes as before is ſhewed, of the which Etheliſtane was eldeſt.

Francia.

THE.CLXXXI. CHAPITER.



Harlys ſurnamed the ſymple, ſonne of Lewys the .iiii. or Ryen Fayr and/ began hys reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon as wytneſſyth Jacobꝰ Philippus and other. ix. hundred .iiii./ and the thyrde yere of Edwarde the elder than kynge of Englande. In tyme of whoſe reygne the Danys, whyche contynuelly ouer the terme of.l. wynters / that is to ſaye from ꝑ .x. yere of Charlys the Ballyd ſomtyme kynge of Fraunce, vnto ꝑ ſayd dayes, had waſted and ſpoyled the lande, not wythſtandyng ꝑ agremen tes made bytwene Charlys the emperour and them, as before in ꝑ ſtory of the.iiii. Lewys is ſhewed: yet they wyth greate hoſtes aryued in the coũtre of Neuſtria or Normandy, & robbed and ſpoyled the countre before them, and ſlewe the people therof wythout pyty/and from cyty to cyty kepte on theyr iourney tyll they came vnto the cyty of Roan. wherof the byſhop beynge in greate drede, of ſubuerſyon of the cyty and deſtruccyon of the cryſten people wyth in the ſame / delyuered the cyty by appoyntment, that he wyth ꝑ people myghte departe thens wythout bodely harme / whyche vnto the ſayde Danys was a greate ſtrength, and hurte to the lande of Fraunce.

Of thys hoſte of Danys was ruler and leder a myſcreaunt named Rollo / the whyche was a man of lowe byrthe, but he was of greate ſtrength. The whyche whan he had a ſeaſon reſted hym and hys hoſte, & refreſſhed them wythin the cyty of Roan/he than ſet forth hys waye, cõmaũdyng hys bawnewarde to kepe theyr iourney towarde Parys. And for ꝑ more ſpede to be made/ he ſhypped hys Danis tyght there/and one parte he ſent by the ryuer of Sean, the ſeconde by the ryuer of Lyger or Leyr, and the thyrde by the water Geronde.

Than the Danys that paſſyd by the ryuer of Leyr came at length to the cyte of Nauntes / and wan that cyty by ſtrength, and ſlewe therin moche people. And the byſhop of the ſame named Gumnerte beynge at maſſe, they ſlewe at the aulter. And whan they had ſpoyled that cyty & the countre there about / than yode they to the cyty of Angiers, & brent and robbyd it moſt cruelly. And that done they yode vnto Towrs, and layde ſyege to that cyty. The which by the preſens of the holy body of ſaynt Martyne, whych at that tyme was wythin ꝑ cyty / it was a whyle preſerued. But ſoone after the munkes kepyng the ſworde of the Danys fled the cyty ſecretly, and toke the body wyth them. And ſoone after the Danes had the towne at theyr wyll/ and brent the abbay before the town or ſtadynge without the towne/ and ſpoyled and robbed the cyty & townes thorough the countre of Guyan.

whan the Danys had thus ſubdued the more parte of Neuſtria or Normandy. They wyth theyr duke Rollo by ꝑ ryuer of Seyn drewe towarde Parys. And fyrſt entred the landes of Burgoyne and Auerne & in effecte to Senons. wherof herynge the mon-

the monkes of the monastery of Flory, where the body of saynte Benet than rested, they toke that holy treasoure and bare it vnto Orliaunce/& layde it in the chyrche of saynt Inyan, tyll the persecucyon were ouer passed.

Of thys monastery was at that dayes lyuynge a defensour by promyse before made, whose name in latyne is called Sigillosus, & in Frēch Sigillophes an erle/whych was taken for patrone of the same abbaye. To whom in the nyght folowynge that the monkes were fled, as before is sayd/saynt Benet appered, & blamed hym þ he none other wyse had defended þ place of hys Sepulture. wyth whych vysyon the sayd erle beynge feryd/gaderyd vnto hym vpon the daye folowyng such small power as he than myghte make, & set vpon the Danys and draue them backe, & slewe of them a great nomber. And þ prayes that he there wan, he offered to god and saynte Benet/by whose prayers he knewe well that he optey ned that victory.

In tyme þ the Danys thus persecuted the countre of Fraunce, and the kynge was not of power them to resyst/for so myche as Charles knew well that the bysshop of Roan named Franke, was in good fauour of Rollo: he therfore sent hym in ambassade to the sayd Rollo, to requyre a trewe or trewse for thre monethes/ the whych was graūted. The which trewse ended, the sayd Rollo besieged the cytye of Chartrys. Duryng whiche syege/the duke of Burgoyne named Richarde wyth hys retynue assayled the Danys. In tyme of which fyght Ebalde erle of Poytowe was present, and draue backe þ Danys. wherwyth the bysshop of the cytye beynge encoraged/toke wyth hym þ smocke of our lady, whyche at those dayes was kepte there wyth greate reuerence/and wyth the cytezyns & other issued out of the cytye, & made vpon the Danys a great scomfyture So that by the prowesse of the forsayde two temporall lordes, and assystens of this spyrituall man/Rollo was compelled to fle and forsake his siege, & not without huge slaughter.

Rollo then hauynge greate dysdayne and dyspleasure of thys ouer throwe and scumfyture of hys Danys/ reassembled them that were abrode scatered, and cōmaunded thē to ouer ryde the countre, and to destroye it in all that they myght. After whych cōmaundement thus to them gyuen/this cruell people slewe man, women, & chylde, that were not apte to do to them seruyce/and brent the chyrches and temples, and rauyshed virgyns as well religious as other/ So that miserable it was to beholde the greate abhompnacyon of these tyrannous Danys, that brent, robbed, and slewe that innocent people wythout mercy.

The lordes and comons thus beset with cruell fury of theyr ennmyes, assembled them by sondry cōpanyes and went vnto the kynge/shewynge vnto hym theyr mysery, and blamed as they durste hys ferefulnesse and negligence, that he nor none for hym otherwyse wythstode the cruelte of the Danys/that hadde destroyed a greate parte of hys lande.

THE.CLXXXII.CHAPITER.

CHarlys heryng this exclamacyon of hys subgettes, and cōsyderyng hys lacke of power to withstande that malyce of hys enemyes, was tyght pensyfe and heuy in hys herte/and castynge in hys mynde many sondry wayes, he lastly determyned to sende agayne the aboue named

named Frank byshop of Roan vnto Rollo prynce of Danys / shewynge hym that yf he wolde renye hys pagan lawe and become a crysten man, he wolde to hym gyue in maryage Gylda his doughter, wyth the hole countre of Neustria for her dowar.

Whan Rollo had receyued this tydynges from the kyng by the mouth of his frende Frank / he somwhat attempred hys fury and cruelty, and condescended to a trewe, by the counsayle of hys lordes for ỳ terme of .iii. monethes / in the whyche tyme he myghte haue some cõmunycacyon wyth the kynge, for ferther processe of thys mater. So that after it was concluded by the counsayle of bothe prynces / that theyr metynge shulde be vpon ỳ ryuer or flode named Eyt. where shortly after the sayd prynces had cõmunycacyon the one wyth the other / theyr people standynge vpon eyther syde of the sayd ryuer. where it was concluded, that Rollo shulde forsake hys pagan lawe, and take vppon hym the ryuerey of Crystes baptym / and after to marye the forenamed Gylda, and to receyue wyth her as is aboue shewed. whyche conclusyon thus taken eyther fro other departed / and shortly after at the cyte of Roan, all the forsayd couenaũtes were executed and fulfylled. And whan the sayd Rollo was crystened / his name was chaunged and called Robert, after the erle of Poytowe / whyche receyued hym at the fonte stone.

Of thys Rollo or Robert, dyscended lynyally duke wyllyam of Normandy, whych conquered England / as after shalbe more clerely shewed.

Than thys Robert thus crystened, was sealed of the coũtre of Neustria / whom the kynge created duke, and named hym duke of Neustria.

But it was not longe after, ỳ this name of Neustria was chaunged & called Normandye / after the name of Normayns, or men commyng out of the North / or of Nor, that is to meane North, and men, whyche two syllables togyder make Norman, or a man of the North.

Whyche Normans or Danys after the exposycyon of mayster Gagwyne / shulde be descended of the nacyon called the Gothes. whyche Gothes of the cytye or men of Sithica ben descended. The whyche Gothys in the dayes of the grete Cõstantine / for theyr feersnesse and cruelty, were dryuen from theyr countre then by them inhabyted nere vnto the ryuer called Thamys, in ỳ North partyes of Europe / and nowe ben inhabyted in Dacia, whych in our speche is called Dẽmarke. And where some men holde an opynyon, that Danys and Saxons shulde be one maner of people / it may congruly folowe. For Saxons ben of the coũtre of Germany / and contayne the lande after the sayenge of Strabo, in the west parte of Germania. From the flode called Vistergus or wysera, vnto the famous ryuer called the Ryne. And Dacia or Denmarke is in the North partyes.

Than to retorne to thys Rollo or Robert / the story sayth ỳ he became a good crysten man. In token wherof as affermeth the French boke / he gaue vnto dyuers chyrches and monasteryes of Fraunce greate gyftes, as well of possessions as of mouable goodes / & contynued hys peasc with the kyng as he before had promysed.

After whyche peasc thus stablysshed betwene the kynge and the Danys / Robert brother vnto Eudo last kyng of Fraũce, contrary hys trouth and allegyaunce, sealed certayne cytyes and other holdes of the kynges enherytaunce. wherfore the kynge seynge that he coude not resourme

hym

hym of that errour, by no meanes of entreaty or other lyke wayes/assembled an hoste and met wyth hym in playne batayle/in the whych ꝑ sayde Robert was slayne. Thys Robert hadde a suster, whyche was maryed vnto Hebert erle of Vermendoys / whyche erle herynge of the deth of his brother in lawe, by enticement of hys wyfe, as the story demeth, mette the kynge at the retorne of the felde/ and requyred hym in moste humble wyse, that he wolde vouchesafe to lodge wyth hym in hys manour called the castell of Perone.

The kynge castynge no parell, thanked hym of hys kynde request, and graūted to go wyth hym/ where he was receyued and fested wyth all honoure. But whan thys erle hadde conueyed the kynges frendes and strength from hym/he thā kepte him there as a prisoner or murdred hym/ so that he neuer came at large after. whyche tydynges certaynly knowē/ Algina wyfe vnto the sayd Charlys the symple mystrustynge the French men/wyth fewe accōpanyed toke secrete shyppyng/and wyth her yonge sonne named Lewys sayled into Englande, there to be comforted of her fader Edwarde surnamed the elder. And thus ended the reygne of thys Charlys the symple/whan he hadde reygned after the sayeng of Vynsent hystoryall and other, by the terme of xxi. yere full/ leuynge after hym the forsayde chylde named Lewys.

THE. CLXXXIII. CHAPITER.

BAdulphus the sonne of Rycharde duke of Burgoyne/began his reygne ouer the Frēchmen, in the yere of our lorde. ix. hundred & xxii/ and the. xxi. yere of Edwarde ꝑ elder than kynge of Englande.

Here is to be noted that for so myche as Algina wyfe vnto Charlys the symple, was thus secretly voyded ꝑ lande of Fraunce wyth her sonne Lewys/and that the lande myghte not be wyth out a ruler / the lordes assembled at Parys, and there toke theyr counsayle for the admyssyon of an hed or kyng of the lande. which lordes after longe debatynge of this mater, fynally agreed that thys abouenamed Radulphus or Rauf. son of the duke of Burgoyne, as aboue is sayd/as nerte heyre to the crowne shulde be admytted for kynge, and so was admytted. Of the whyche lytell of hys dedes are put in memory/ except that in the tyme of hys reygne the Saralyns entred the lande of Burgoyne wyth a grete armye, and dyd myche harme in that duchy. wherfore the kynge gaderynge his hoste, met wyth them at a place called in latyne Carrolas, and in French Callo the lasse/where the Frenchmen were vyctours, but nat wythout greate losse of theyr people.

Than it folowyth, whanne thys Rauff. had ruled the lande of Fraūce by ꝑ space of. xii. yeres/ he dyed wyth out issue male. And was buryed in the chyrche of saynte Calumb in the prouynce of Senys.

Anglia.

THE. CLXXXIIII. CHAPITER.

Thelstan ꝑ son of Edwarde the elder, began hys reygne ouer the more part of Englande, in ꝑ yere of our lorde. ix. hundred & .xxb/ and the thyrde yere of Rauff. than kynge of Fraunce.

In the fyrst yere of the reygne of Ethelstan/the holy chyld Dunstane was borne in the coūtre of Glastenbury,

bury, whose lyfe shone after wyth many myracles.

This was somtyme abbot of Glaste bury/& lastly archbyshop of Caunter bury. whose holynes & pphecyes are shewed at length, in the .vi. chappter of the .xvi. tytle of the worke called Sm Antonini, and in the legende of the chyrche also.

In the seconde yere of the reygne of Ethelstane / for an vnytye and a peace to be hadde betwene the kyng and the Danis of Northumberland, he maryed to Sithyric? theyr kyng his suster. But after .v. yeres this Sithyricus dyed. After whose deth he seasyd the countrey into hys owne hande/ and put oute the sonne of the forsayd Sythyricus. And when he hadde thus accorded wyth the Danys of Northumberlande/ he shortly after made subiect to him Cõstantyn kynge of Scottes. But the sayd Cõstantyne meked hym so lowely to the kynge / that he restoryd hym to hys formet dygnytye. wherfore the sayd Constantyne sayde in prayse of the kynge/ that yt was more honour to make a kynge, then to be a kynge. whyche acte was done by the affyrmaunce of Polycronycon, in the yere of grace .ix. hundred & .xxvi/ which then after that saynge shuld be the seconde yere of the reygn of this Ethelstane. It is testyfyed of Policronica, that thys Ethelstane shuld marye one of his susters named Editha or Edyth, vnto Otto the fyrst of that name emperour of Almayne, and receyued from hym many precyous iewellys and relyques. But of this speketh nothyng the cronicle of Romaynes. Howe be yt yt is shewyd there, that the forsayd Ottho or Otto had a wyfe named Alunda/ whych as before is sayde in the story of Edward the elder, myght be the doughter of the sayd Edward and of Edgina his seconde wyfe. But Vincentius historialis sayth/ that Henry duke of Saxony, whyche was father vnto the fyrste Otto/ sent vnto Ethelstane, requyrynge of hym hys suster to mary vnto his sonne Otto. By whych reason I maye folowe, that this Ottho maryed the suster of Ethelstane, but not Edythe.

Of these forsayde iewelles sent by Otto/ one was a precyouse vessell of stone called Onechynus/ whych was of suche clerenesse, & also so subtily & craftely wrought, that yt apperyd to mannes syght as grene corne hadde growen wythin yt, and moued and waued as corne doth standyng in the felde. More ouer in yt apperyd bynes burgenyng and berynge fruyte/ and men also to syght mouynge and styrynge. He also receyued the great Constantynes sworde / wherin was grauen wyth great letters of golde, the name of the owner. And the hyltes therof were couerid wyth great plates of golde. And one of the nayles was fastenyd to the crosse of the sayd sworde, that Criste suffred with his passyon. But in thys reporte or sayngе, Polycronycon varyeth from his former sayng/ were he reporteth two of the sayd nayles to be spent vpon the brydell of the sayde Constantyne, and the thyrde nayle to be caste into a daũgerous swalowe of the see, as before is rehersed in the .lxix. chapter of thys worke. He also receyued the spere of Charlys the gret, whych after the opynyon of some wryters, was the spere that Longeus opened wyth Crystes syde. And the baner of saynte Morys, a relyque of greate pryce/ wyth a part of the holy crosse, and a parte of the crown of thorne of our saupoure.

Of the whych iewellys kyng Ethelstane gaue a parte vnto saynte Swithunys of wynchester / and some he

gaue

gaue vnto ꝑ abbay of Malmesbury.

I haue sene a cronycle of Englād, which testyfyeth, that this Ethilstan was ꝑ fyrst kynge that euer was enoynted in this land. All be yt I fynd therof lytell authorytye/ excepte that Guydo and other testyfyen, that he was crowned at the kynges towne nowe called Kyngestone, x. myles from London, of Athelyne thetrarch byshoppe of Caunterbury. But that proueth not or argueth hym to be the fyrste for that reason. For ryghte so was his fader Edwarde crowned of Plemounde archbyshoppe of the sayde see. But Guydo aforesayd affyrmeth that Alurede graund fader to thys Ethylstane/ was enoyntyd kyng by authorytye of Leo ꝑ. v. then pope. wherfore it agreeth better that he shulde be the fyrste.

Then yt foloweth in the story, that aboute the. viii. yere of the reygne of thys Ethilstane, dyed Frystane byshoppe of wynchester/ and Bry-stane was byshoppe after hym. Of whom yt is radde, that he sange euery daye masse for all Crysten soules. And as the byshoppe Brystane went vppon a nyght about a church yerde, and sayde hys deuocyons for all crysten soules, and lastly sayde, requiescant in pace/ he harde a voyce as yt hadde ben a great hoste of people saynge. Amen.

Soone after Constantyne kynge of Scottes, brake couenaunt wyth kynge Ethylstane. wherfore he assembled his knyghtes and made towarde Scotlande. And in hys way he tourned to saynte Johñ of Beuerley and offeryd there hys knyfe vppon the aulter/ sayenge that yf he retourned wyth victorye, he shulde redeme hys knyfe wyth a noble pryce/ and that done proceded vppon hys iourney, and in cōclusyon scomfyted the Scottes, and broughte theym agayne vnto dewe subiectyon. And after accordynge to the promyse before made/ he retourned to yorke, and so to the chyrche where the corps of saynt Johñ of Beuerley laye/ redemynge his knyfe worthely as he before hadde promysed.

In the. vi. chappter of the. vi. boke of Polycronycon/ yt is remembred that kynge Ethilstane after this subduynge of the Scottes, beyng wyth hys lordes and kamplyers nere vnto the castell of Dunbar/ prayed to god and saynte Johñ yt Beuerley, that in that countrey he myght leue some remembraunce or token, that thole that then were lyuynge, and also suche as shulde come after, myghte knowe that the Scottes by ryghte shulde be subiectes to Englyshmen. And soone after wyth hys sworde he smote vppon a great stone standyng nere vnto the sayd castell/ with whyche stroke the stone was tryuen to an elle in length, that in the tyme of Edwarde the thyrde was there remaynyng to be sene. And whyther at this daye yt is so/ that I am in doute. And so am I.

ye haue harde before, that kynge Ethilstane after the deth of Sythericus kynge of Northumberlande/ seasyd that lande or prouynce into hys owne handes, and putte out his sonne. whyche after allyed hym with Constantyne kynge of Scottes, and maryed his doughter. By whose styrynge and exhortacyon, he gatheryd a company of Danys, Scottes, and other/ and entred the mouth of Humber wyth a stronge naup.

wherof herynge Ethilstane, in all goodly haste prepared hys armye/ and at length met wyth hym and his people at a place called Brymforde, where he hadde a great and solemne victorye. For as yt is shewyd in the forsayde chappter and boke/ after the kynge by helpe of god and saynt

t Adelyne

Adelyne hadde defended the subtyll assaute made vppon hym by nyghte of his enymyes/he vppon the morne by helpe of hys brother Edmunde & Odo the archbyshoppe, chased his sayde enymyes, and slew there Constantyne kynge of Scottes, and .v. small or vnder kynges, and .xii. dukes, wyth the more partye of all the straūge nacyons at ỳ tyme there gaderyd. whyche batayll shuld be done by the meanyng of the sayd Policronicon, about ỳ last yere of his reygn.

THE .CLXXXV. CHAPITER.

IT is also testyfyed of dyuers wryters, that Ethylstane after this victory thus obteyned of the Danys and Scottes, or Scottes & Danys/ he also subdued the Northe Brytons that dwelled at Herforde & there about/and compelled theym to pay to hym yerely for a tribute .iii. hūdred pounde of syluer, .vi.c. hundred hede of nete, and .xx. pounde in gold. But Gupdo sayth that kynge Ethilstane caused to come before hym at Herforde cytye the rulers of all the Northe Brytayne / & there had wyth them suche communycacyon/that he forced them to graunte vnto hym as a yerely trybute .xx. pounde of gold. iii. hundred pounde in syluer, & of heddes of nete .xx.c. hundred/ wyth dogges & haukes to a certayne nomber. After whych victories he went vnto Exeter, and repayred yt & the wallys therof sufficyently.

Dane Johñ Lydgate a munke somtyme of saynt Edmundes bury, made a goodly treatyse of this kyng Ethilstane/shewynge that he was in so great persecucyon of the Danys, ỳ he was constrayned to call at wynchester a great counsayll of his lordes. where after longe debatyng of the mater, & dyuers ambassades and messages sent about by ỳ kyng & the Danys/ It was fally cōcluded that the kynge shuld puruey hym a champyon to fyghte wyth Colbrande or Colbronde a geaunt & Dane, which the Danys had appoynted for theyr cheuetayne. wherfore the kyng enterchyng thorough his landes for such a knyght, & myght none fynde/ was in great daunger & dystresse & heuynesse. And for so mych as he well perceyued ỳ mannes power fayled/ he by the aduyse of lordes spyrituall & temporall fyll to fastynge & prayer, and cōtynued therin by a certayn of time, wyth perfyte & charitable deuocyon.

In tyme of whyche sayde abstynence/ a vysyon was shewed vnto Ethilstane, cōfortyng hym, & also cō maundyng hym, ỳ erely vppon the nert mornynge he shuld stand at the North gate of the cytye of wynchester and there he shuld fynde amonges ỳ porayll/a pylgryme clad in palmers wede, whome he shulde chose for his champyon. After whyche vysyon thus to hym shewyd, he dyd accordyngly/ and founde a man of goodly stature, and somdeale stryken in age, and clade as he was monyshed by the vysyon. wherof he fyrste gaue vnto god thankynges/ and after made requeste to this pylgryme, that he wold take vpon hym thys batayll for the defence of the lande/ whyche layde for hym many reasonable excuses, as well for his age as otherwise. How be it finally he grauted ỳ kyng to fullfyll his requeste and cōmaundement. And at the daye before lympted and assygned met in the feld with the forenamed geaunt called Colbronde, wythoute the gate of ỳ cytye in a medow or pasture called Hydemede/where betwene them two was faughten a longe and cruell fyghte, so that the kynge was in great fere of hys champyon. But fynally by

helpe

helpe of god the pylgryme wanne the honoure of that fyghte/and slew that geaunt that was of extendynge stature, and therunto of great and passynge strength. whyche bycto rye by the pylgryme thus by grace obteyned/ the kynge wyth his baron ny sette hym into the cityе of wynche ster wyth solemne processyon, and cō ueyed hym vnto the cathedral chirch of the same / where he thanked god wyth great deuocyon, & offryd there the axe, wyth the whych he had slayn the Danys champyon. After whych oblacyon with dew reuerence & other obseruances by hym and other fy nyshed / the kynge caused hym to be conueyed vnto hys courte, where he tarved that nyght wyth myche daun ger. And vppon the morne erely he made suche meanes / that he wolde nedely departe, and ỹ in the same ap parell ỹ he came thyther. when the kynge was aduertysed that his pyl gryme wold so hastly departe/whom he entendyd to haue holden wyth hym in his courte, and to haue en dowed with ryche possessyons: he cō maunded hym to be brought vnto hys presence. And when he sawe he coude not cause him to tary, he requi red hym to shewe his name / wherof also he besought the kyng to pardon hym. wherfore the kyng cōsyderyng hys hasty departynge, wyth many other thynges in hym to be consydere red / was the more desyrous to haue of hym some knowlege. And for that he was effectuose in his desyre, when the pylgryme perceyuyd that he coude not wyth the kynges plea sure departe wythoute dysclosynge of hys name/ he sayde he myght not dyscouer hys name wythin the wal les of the cytye, wythoute the offence of hys conscyence.

wherfore the kyng graunted to go wyth hym tyll he were in the brode feldes. Vppon whyche graunt thus made/ the kynge commaunded by uers great gyftes to be to hym pre sented, whyche all he vtterly refused. Shortely to cōclude/the kyng wyth a certayne of his lordes conueyed this sayd pylgryme vnto the townes ende. And when he was thyther cō men/ he there requyred of the perfor maunce of the promyse. where thys pylgryme syttynge one his kne / be sought the kynge of his especyall grace, that he wolde put a parte his lordes and other, so that he myght shewe vnto hym his name onely.

whyche done / he in moste humble wyse besought hym, that he wolde kepe hys name secrete for the space of.xxiiii.oures. where of by ỹ kyng af fyrmaunce to hym hymely made/he shewed vnto hym, that he was hys naturall lyege man and subiect, and that his name was Guy of warwike. Of whyche tydynges the kyng was very ioyous, and offeryd hym then of newe many ryche rewardes and gyftes. But all was in vayne, for he wolde nothynge receyue/ so that the kynge and he lastely departed wyth weppynge eyen. And after as affyr meth my sayde authoure / not farre from warwyke in a wylderneſſe, he purchased by goddes purueyaunce a lodgynge in a heremytage/ where by the terme of two yeres and more he dwelled & kept an harde lyfe.

And herynge that dame Felyce his owne wyfe fed dayly.xiii.poore men for Cristes sake/he went thyther son dry tymes and fette there his almes/ hys sayde wyfe then lyenge at the ca stell of warwyke, not knowynge of any man what he was / tyll lastely he was vysited wyth so sore sykenes, that he knew well that he shuld dye. wherefore he sente hys weddynge ryng vnto hys wyfe / requyrynge her in all haste to come and speke

wyth hym. whych she obeyed in humble wyse/and sped her vnto the sayd Heremytage wyth all womanly dylygence, and fande hym deed at her commynge/ whom she besyzent with many a salt tere. And as she was enfourmed of the messenger as he dyed she buryed hym ryghte there. And moze ouer as saith my sayd authour he monyshed her by the sayd messenger, that she shulde pzouyde foz her selfe/ foz she shuld also alter her moz tall lyfe the. xv. day folowyng. which also she obeyed, and made suche pzouisyon, that she was in that place buryed by hym. All whyche mater the sayde Dane Johñ Lydgate affyzmeth, that he toke out of the boke of Gerarde Cambzeñ / whyche wzote mych of the dedes and stozyes of the pzynces of Englande, as Policronica and other authour testyfyen / and as the sayde Lydgate in the ende of his sayde treatyse wytnessyth, as by the mater folowynge appereth.

Foz moze authozite, as of this mater
This translacyon, such as in sentẽce
Out of laten made by the cronycler
Called of old Gerardus Cambzẽse/
whyche wzote the dedes, wyth great
dylygence.
Of them that were in weste Saron
crowned kynges,
Gzeatly cõmendyd foz theyz knyghtly excellence
Guy of warwyke, in hys famouse
wzytynges.

ALL whyche sayde treatyse is shewyd at length in meter of viii. staurs, after the maner of the pzecedentes, by the dylygent labour of the sayde Dane Johñ Lydgate. The whyche I haue here sette in/foz so mych as yt concernyth mater that was done in the tyme of the reygne of thys Ethylstane. The whyche after the accozde of moste wzyters; brought hys lande agayne to one monarchye / and reygned as kynge therof by the full terme of. xxi. yeres/ and was buryed at the monastery of Malmysbury, leuynge after hym no chylde. wherfoze the rule of the land fyll vnto Edmunde his bzother.

Explicit.

THE. CLXXXVI. CHAPITER.

EWys the sonne of Charlis ꝑ symple/ beganne hys reygne ouer the Frenchmen, in ꝑ yere of our lozde. ix. hundzed and xxxiii/ and the. ix yere of Ethelstane then kynge of Englande. ye haue harde befoze in the ende of the stozye of Charlys ꝑ symple, how Elgina the quene wyth Lewys her ponger sonne, was fledde into England to her father Edward the elder. wherfoze ꝑ lozdes of Fraũce not knowynge where she with the Chylde was gone/ chose the fozenamed Rauf. foz theyz kynge. After whose deth the said lozdes of Fraũce beynge ascertayned of the beynge of the sayd Lewys in England/ sent vn to hym the archbyshop of Semys, & Hughe surnamed le graunde/ desyrynge hym to retozne into Fraunce, and take therof possessyon.

Then Elgina heerynge the message of the lozdes, and trustyng vnto the/ by counsayll of her frendes made her redy wyth her son, & sayled shortly after into Fraunce. where she was receyued wyth myche honour/ & shortly after crowned her sonne Lewys kynge/ at the cyttye of Laon.

This Lewys is named ꝑ. v. Lewys. In the thyzde yere of whose reygne fyll a scarcyte of corne & bytayll/ by

reason

reason wherof ensued a great kampn in so myche that people voyded the realme, & many dyed for defaut. For as wytnesseth the frenche cronycle/ a quarter of whete was then worth .xx. poūde. of ꝑ money/ which is of value after sterlynge money .l.s. or there about. This kyng beryng in mynd the murder and treason done agayn his father by Hebert, as before in the story of Charles the symple is declared, cast and ymagined in his mynde how he myght wythout shedynge of blood, reuenge the deth of his fader/ and after many ymagynacyons and thoughtis reuolued in his mynde, he lastely dyuysed a letter/ the whych he charged a seruaunt of his to bryng to hys presence when he was sette amonge his lordes in counsayll. when kynge Lewys hadde compassed this in hys mynde/ he for nedes of hys realme called a great coūsayll of his barony at Laon/ whyther amonges the other, the sayde Heberte erle of Vermendoys was warned to come. And when the kynge was ascertayned of theyr commynges/ he apoynted a secrete cōpanye in harnes to be in a secrete chamber, nere vnto the place of the sayde counsayll/ and at conuenient tyme after yode vnto the same, and all his lordes wyth hym. And when he hadde a season commoned wyth hys lordes of suche maters as hym lyked/ sodeynly came one to hym and sayd that a man was cōmen wyth a letter dyrected to hys grace oute of Englande/ the whych he commaunded to be broughte vnto hys syghte.

when the kyng hadde vnfolde the letter, and radde a parte therof, he smyled. wherof the lordes beynge ware purposed the kynge to haue receyued some ioyfull tydynges oute of Englande.

whyle the kynge was aboute to delyuer this letter to his scribe or secretary/ one of hys lordes sayde vnto hym. Syr we truste ye haue some iocunde & mery tydynges oute of Englāde, that ye haue cause of smylyng. I shall shewe the cause to you sayde the kyng. There is dwellyng in Englande a kynesman of myne named Harman/ the whych is a man of great myghte, and myne especyall frende. He shewyth me by this letter, that an husbandeman or a vyleyne badde or requyred hys lorde vnto his howse to dyner/ and vnder the colour ther of he slewe hys sayde lorde. And for the sayde Harman thynketh the law of that lande to fauourable for such an haynous dede/ hetherfore writeth to me to haue myne aduyse in thys mater. wherfore sens ye be all present/ I praye you shewe to me your opynyons in this mater. whych with one voyce sayde ꝑ the murderer was worthy to suffer the moste shamefull and cruell deth, & to be hanged and strangled in a rope. But for ꝑ kynge wolde be certaynely enfourmed of the consentes of theym all/ he began at the hygest, and so pursued theym tyll he came to Hebert erle of Vermendoys/ the whych alowed the sentēce as the other hadde done.

Then the kynge made a token to ꝑ walsshemen betwene hym & them before appoynted/ so ꝑ anon they were present, & sette sure hold vppon the sayde Hebert. To whom the kynge sayd, Hebert thou art the husbondman or vilayne ꝑ I haue spoken of/ whych slew his lord vnder colour of byddynge or gestynge hym in hys house. For traytourly thou dydeste requyre my lorde and father vnder thyne house or castell of Peroñ/ and there not remembrynge the kyndnes to the by hym before dayes shewyd, nor thyne allegyauntes and trouthe that toward hym thou shuldest haue

borne/kept hym lyke a prysoner and lastely murderyd hym, to the greate daunger agayne god, & to the worlde shame. wherfore accordynge to thy desert, and after thyne own sentence and iudgemēt/ take now thy reward and guardon.

After whyche sentence thus gyuen by the kynge/ the sayde Hebert was by the executers ladde vnto an hylle wythout the citye of Laon/ and there most shamefully hanged. whych hyll for that cause was named Heberres hyll longe tyme after.

About thys tyme the seconde duke of Normandy named wyllyam longa Spata, ꝑ son of Rollo or Robert fyrste duke of Normandy/ was slayne by treason of one Arnolde erle of Flaūdres/ for encheson that the sayd wyllyam ayded a noble man of Picardy named Herlopñ, agayne the sayde Arnolde.

This wyllyam left after hym a son named Richarde/ whych at the tyme of his fathers deth was not of suffycient age to rule so gret a dukedome. wherfore Lewys kynge of Fraunce desyrous of that prouynce, whyche of late dayes belonged to his antecessours and progenitours/ sought besyly the wayes and meanes, to haue this chylde Richarde vnder his tuycyon & gydynge. And this to bringe to effecte he spedde hym vnto Roan/ callynge there before hym the lordes and rulers of the countrey/ haupnge vnto them many plesaunt and fayre wordes, in promysyng to them ayde and assystence to reuenge the deth of theyr lorde and duke/ and in the conclusyon desyred of them ꝑ he myght haue the norysshynge and bryngyng vp of the chylde, tyll he came to hys lawfull age.

whyche thynge thus by the kynge desyred/ the lordes anon conjectured in theyr myndes, ꝑ he desyred the kepyng of theyr yonge lorde, to ꝑ ende ꝑ he myghte ꝑ more easely obteyne the possessyon of that dukedome. For the whych, the lordes and other of the cyte were in great rumour and grudge agayne the kynge. wherof he beynge monyshed, to appeace the multytude/ the kynge toke the chylde in his armes, and so bare hym into the place of the assemble of the people/ & there shewyd vnto theym wyth affyrmaunce of great othes, that hys entent was onely for ꝑ wele of the child and for defence of hys countrey, and not to clayme any ryghte or tytle of the duchy/ excepte onely the homage therof, whyche belongeth to hym by iuste tytle.

By meane of whyche fayre speche, the kynge obteyned his purpose, and caried the chyld with hym into Fraūce, not forgetynge the vnkynde dealynge of the Normans.

when Arnolde erle of Flaūdres vnderstode that to the kynge of Fraūce the gyydynge of ꝑ yonge chyld was committed, fearynge ꝑ he wyth power of the Normans wolde ronne vpon hym in reuengynge of the chyldes fathers deth/ sent vnto the kynge x. pounde weyghte of golde, wherof euery pounde cōteyneth. xii. ounces, and euery oūce in value of fyne gold xl. s̄ / so that after this rate his presente shulde be in value to ꝑ summe of .ii. hundred & .xl. pounde. All be ye mayster Gagwyne sayth he sent vnto hym but .xl. marke/ beseechyng him to be his good and gracyous lorde, and not to gyue to hasty credence to hys accusours. For he in suche wyse wolde declare hym selfe, and delyuer vnto the kynge the murderers of duke wyllyam / be meane wherof he shulde certaynly know, that he was innocēte of the sayd dukes deth. And ouer this he made a frende about the kynge, whyche spake good wordes

for hym

for hym, & put in the kynges mynde the great hurtes & iniuryes that he and his progenytours hadde sustey-ned of the Danys or Normans. By meane whereof this murdour was forgoten, & more and more the kyng malygned agayne the Normans / and to the chylde he bare not so good mynde as some men thoughte that he wolde do.

Uppon a daye when the kyng was retourned from hys dysporte of hun tynge / a ryght cõplaynt was brought to hym of the chylde Rycharde, of an offence that he had commytted. For the which he rebuked him otherwyse then was syttyng to his honour, and called hym opprobrously, and thre-tened hym greuously / and after that caused hym to be kept more straytly, then he before hadde vsed to be.

To this chylde Rycharde was as-sygned a mayster or teacher named Osmunde / whyche Osmunde hadde a kamplyer named Juon. These two apperceyuynge the kynges indygna cyon that he bare towarde the chyld / studyed for his enlargynge, and last ly cõsaplyd hym that he shuld fayne hym self syke. The whych was done, in suche wyse that all suche as awayt ted vppon hym, supposed hym to be very syke, by reason wherof his ke-pers toke the lesse cure of hym.

wherof Osmunde beynge ware, and also beynge sure of the kynge / made a great trusse of herbes or grasse, wherin he wrapped the chyld, and so conueyed hym oute of the cytye of Laon / and there receyued hym an horse redy for the tourney / & so sped hym vnto Colay, and delyuerid the chylde to the captayne of that town. And from thẽs he rode all nyght tyll he came vnto Senlys / & there shew-ed all hys doynge vnto ỹ erle of that cõtrey named Bernard, which was nere kynnesman vnto ỹ yonge duke.

THE .CLXXXVII. CHAPITER.

BErnarde hauynge knowlege of the escape of his kynnesmã Rycharde / sente in all haste vnto Hugh le graunde erle of Parys, for to haue his ayde and assystence. The whych without taryeng assẽbled his knyghtes, and conueyed the chylde from Coulay to Senlys or Saynlys to his neuewe Bernarde / where he was receyued wyth mych ioye and honoure.

when Lewys was ascertayned of the scape of Rycharde, and howe he was in the guydynge of Hughe the great or graunde / anon he sent vnto hym, gyuynge hym in commaunde-ment that he shulde restore the chyld to hym. The whyche excused hym, and sayde that the chylde was in the keppynge of erle Bernarde and not in hys.

The kynge seynge how he was de-luded / sente for Arnolde or Arnulfe erle of Flaundres / whyche at his cõ-maundement counsayled the kynge to wynne Hugh le graũde with riche behestes or gyftes. After whose coun sayll worchynge / kynge Lewys wyl led the sayd Hugh to mete with hym at the crosse of Compeyn, where the sayd Hugh shortly after met with the kynge. To whome the kynge promy sed great parte of the duchy of Nor-mandy / wyth that that he wolde re-fuse the partye of the Normans, and take his parte agayne them. By mea ne of which promises this erle Hugh was ouercomẽ / and agreed with the kynge to warre vppon one parte of the countrey, whyle he warred vpon that other. And forthwyth receyuyd an armye of the kynge, and spedde hym to Bayon, & made cruell warre vppon that countrey. And kynge Le wys entryd vppon the prouynce of Caus / and wasted and spoyled that

Coste in all that he myghte.

whan Barnarde the Dane, and also Barnarde erle of Senlys, conceyued ꝑ vntrouth of Hugh le graũt, and also the greate hostes that they were beset wyth/by theyr counsayles and other they sent vnto the kynge certayne messengers, gyuynge them in commaundement to saye, that in dayne the kynge hadde entred that countre with his armye/for the cytye of Roan and all the prouince was at hys commaundement. Beseechynge hym not to waste nor spoyle the coũtre/but to ayde and helpe defende it agayne theyr enemyes.

Of thys message the kynge was eyght fayne/and forthwith sped him tyll he came to Roan, wher he was accordynge to hys honour receyued. For the whyche cause he sent in all hast vnto Arnulfe erle of Flaũders/monassynge hym that he sease of his warres in Bayon, tyll he receyued farther knowlege.

The kyng thus restyng in Roan, deuysed hys maters at hys pleasure/so that the Normayns obeyed them to all hys requestes. And for ꝑ good aberynge that Barnarde the Dane was of agayne the kynge/he graunted to hym the gydynge of the ponge duke. And whan he shulde departe/he ordeyned as hys deputye one named Raoulf or Rauf. The whyche after the kynges departure, behaued hym so cruelly to the Normans/that they were very irke of hym. And ouer thys the forsayd Barnard fetynge the kynges retorne, and other more greuous punysshement than they before hadde susteyned/sent his messengers vnto Grolle kynge of Denmarke than beynge at Chyerbourk/wyllyng hym to assemble his people/and to make of them two hostes. wherof to sende ꝑ one by lande, and that other by water/& so to entre the cositre of Normandy in wastyng and spoylynge it/by reason wherof he myghte brynge the kynge to some cõmunycacyon. whych all was done as the sayd Barnarde had deuysed.

whan the kynge had wyttyng of the Danys, that wyth so grete a multytude were entred the prouynce of Normandy/he assembled hys hoste and sped hym thytherwarde/and in processe of tyme came vnto the cytye of Roane. where by hys counsayle it was condyscended, that a metynge and frendly communycacyon shulde be had betwene the kynge & the sayd Grolle, at a place called in Frenche Herlycum. where at the day appoynted bothe princes mette, wyth bothe hostes standynge or haynge a lytell dystaũce of. And whyle the two princes were there in communycacyon of the deth and murder of duke willm/a Dane markynge Herlouyne (For whose causes, as before is shewed duke willm was slayne) with a spere wounded hym so greuously that he dyed forthwyth, whych dede hys brother called Lambert wyth other of ꝑ Frenchmen entendynge to reuenge, wyth theyr wepons fylle vppon the Danys/whyche them receyued with greate vyolence. So that of that a fraye ensued a skyrmysshe/and after the skyrmysshe a sore batayle. For bothe hostes ioyned on bothe sydes/and faught cruelly eyther with othes a longe whyle. But in the ende the Frenchmen had the worse, and were compelled to flee. And the kynge to saue hys lyfe fledde also/whyche by reason of hys vntrusty horse was taken and kepte secrete a certayne of tyme by his taker. But lastly he was discouered and brought to the cytye of Roane as a prysoner.

The kynge thus beynge in holde vnder the keppynge of the Danys/Engeberge hys wyfe makynge for hym

hym grete dole and sorowe/toke her iourney to the kynge of Germany, whose doughter she was/besechyng hym to prouyde for the deliuerye of her lorde and husbande. But of hym had she no socour/ but rather bysco-fort/shewyng to her that the trouble that her husbande susteyned he had well deserued, for his vnkyndfastnesse that he agayne wyllyam the duke & Rycharde hys sonne had vsed.

Wherfore the quene beynge thus answered of her father/rode vnto Hugh le graunde, besechyng hym of helpe in this greate nede. The which at the request of the quene sent vnto Barnard erle of Denys/ requiryng to moue some wayes to the Danys for the enlargynge of the kynge. By whose labour and meanys lastely a counsayle was kepte at sayne Clere vpon the ryuer of Ept. where after many argumentes & reasons made/ fynally it was agreed that the kyng shulde be enlarged tyll an other day of cõmunycacyon/layenge for pledges hys sonne and heyre named Lothayr, the byssshop of Denys, and ỹ byssshop of Beauuayse. whyche done the kynge was set at large, and forth wyth rode vnto the cytye of Laon. where he abode the other daye of cõmunycacyon/whyche after was holden at ỹ forsayd ryuer of Ept. And concluded a peas, whyche lasted but a shorte whyle after.

Thys peas thus confermed/Grolo the kynge of Danys wyth greate gyftes was retorned from whens he was desyred. And Richarde the ponge duke toke vpon hym the rule of hys owne Dignory/and grewe and encreased forthwardly. wherof Hugh the graunde takyng hede/and behol dynge hys wyse demeanure and conuersacyon / made suche labour and meanes vnto Barnarde erle of Denis, ỹ he maried to hym his doughter named Emmacet. wherof beynge enformed the French kynge / calle in hys mynde thys greate alyaunce bytwene the ponge duke and two grete perys of hys lande / and thoughte ỹ these.iii.knet in ampte and alyaunce shulde dysturbe hym whan them lyked. wherof he called to hym Arnold erle of Flaunders / by whose counsayle he sent the sayde Arnolde vnto Otto kynge of Germany / requyrynge hym of ayde to warre vpon ỹ Normayns, and to breke thys affynyte of thys ponge duke, & of Hugh le graunde, and of Barnarde erle of Denys/and for his labour he shuld haue to hym and to hys heyres the prouynce or lordshyp of Lorayne.

Otto wyth thys couetous promesse decepued, assembled his knyghtes/and at the day and place appoynted met wyth the kynge/ and wyth they? people sped them to Roan, and layde siege vnto ỹ cytye. And whyle the kynges were occupyed in wasshynge and brennynge the vylages nere vnto the cytye/ to put the Normans in the more fere, Otto sent hys neuewe wyth a certayne of hys people in secrete wyse to the gates of the cytye. But whan he was comen to the gate that opened towarde the ryuer of Sayn, and thoughte there to wynne hys enterprise/ ỹ cytesyns issued out vppon hym sodeynly, and gaue to hym batayle/and slewe hym and many of hys company, and the remenaunt they chased frõ the walles of the cytye.

Whan Otto had wyttyng of the ouerthrowe of hys men and deth of his neuew, whom he entyerly loued/ he made inward heuynesse, and caste in his minde how he myght reuenge the deth of hys neuewe. But whan he approched the cytye, and beheilde the strength therof, wyth also the fyersnesse of the Normãdes/ he repented hym

ted hym of enterpryſyng of that iour
ney/and torned all hys hatered vnto
Arnolde erle of Flaunders, by whoſe
ſtrenge and counſayle that vyage
was fyrſte begon/in ſo mych that he
ſought the meanes to bryng ꝑ ſayd
Arnolde into the handes of the Nor=
mans.

Wherof Arnolde beynge warned/
truſſed his ſtuffe and harneys ſecret=
ly, and in the nyght ſtale away/and
ſo retorned into Flaunders with his
retynew. The whych thyng knowen
to the two kynges/ in as ſecrete wiſe
as they myghte departed alſo from
ꝑ ſiege. But yet therof they? enmyes
beynge ware / purſued them & ſlewe
many of they? company. And or the
yere that thys was done in, had rõne
hys full compas, Lewys the kynge
dyed and was buryed in the temple
of the holy byſſhoppe ſaynte Remy=
gius wythin the cytye of Raynys/
whan he had reygned in great trou=
ble. xii. yeres/ leuynge for hys heyre
a ſonne named Lothayr.

Anglia.

THE .CLXXXviii. CHAPITER.

Edmunde ꝑ bro=
ther of Ethel=
ſtan and ſonne
of Edwarde the
elder, & of Ethel
wyda the thyrde
wyfe of the ſayd
Edwarde/ begã
hys reygne ouer Englande, in the
yere of our lorde. ix. hundred and. xl/
and the. viii. yere of the. v. Lewys thã
kynge of Fraũce.

In the fyrſte yere of hys reygne,
the Danys of Northumberland re=
belled agayne hym. And for to make
they? party the gróger/ they ſent for
a prynce of Danys named Iulaffe
than beynge in Irlande. The which
brought wyth hym an other prynce
or ruler of Danys named Reygnald
wyth a great hoſte of Danys & other
ſtraũge nacyons/ and entred the fore
ſayd countre, and warred vppon the
nere borders, in waſtynge and ſpoy=
lynge the inhabytaũtes of the laine.

Wherof whan kyng Edmund was
warned/ anone he aſſembled his peo
ple and ſped hym toward ꝑ countre/
and laſtly caught wyth the two ſayd
prynces of the Danys, or at the leeſt
chaced them from towne to towne
tyll he forſyd them wyth all they? cõ=
pany of ſtraunge nacyons to forſake
vtterly that prouynce/ and bet down
that countre of Cumberlande ꝑ had
mych fauoured and ayded the ſayde
enmyes agayne hym/ and toke ther=
in greate prayes, and deuyded them
amõges hys knyghtes. And ꝑ done/
other for the good ſeruyce that Mal
colyñ kynge of Scotlande hadde in
thys vyage done vnto the kynge, or
for the trowth and allegyaunce that
he in tyme folowyng ſhulde bere vn
to hym, or for bothe/ the kynge gaue
there to the ſayd Malcolyñ the coun
tre of Cumberlande, and ſealed all ꝑ
reſydue of the kyngdom or lordſhyp
of Northumberlande, and ioyned it
vnto hys owne kyngdome.

But yet ꝑ Danys retorned agayn
in the tyme of Edredus the nexte
kynge as after ſhalbe ſhewed/ ſo that
as yet the fyne or ende of thys kyng=
dome is not accompted.

In thys Edmundus dayes the
authour of Polycronyca ſayth, that
whan Edmunde hadde ended hys
iourney, and ſet that countree in an
order / he toke wyth hym the bones
of the holy abbot Colfrydus, and of
that holy abbeſſe Hylda, & brought
theym vnto Glaſſenbury, and there
ſhryned theym. This Colfryde was
abbot of Bedas abbey, or of the ab=
bey of Gyrwye/ & Hilda was abbeſſe
of Stenſhalt or whytby. And as af=
fermeth

fermeth ꝑ ſayd authour, both places ben in ꝑ Northꝑtyes of England.

Thys kynge Edwarde had a noble woman to wyfe named Elgina/ of whom he receyued two ſonnes named Edwyne and Edgar.

And as teſtyfyeth Henry archedeke of Huntyngdon/ thys Edward had ofte warre wyth the Danes/ the whyche as he affermeth helde than many good townes in myddle England, as Lyncolſh, Notinghm, Derby, Staffordſhyre, & Laycetour/ ꝑ which by his knyghtly manhode he wanne from them. And by the helpe of holy Dunſtan/ he amended many thynges within his realm ꝑ had be lõge tyme miſordered by meane of ꝑ Danys.

Of the ende or fyne of thys Edmunde dyuers oppynyons there be. For Marianus the Scot ſayth, that whyle thys kynge Edmunde endeuered hym ſelfe to ſaue his ſewer frõ the daũger of hys enemye, that wold haue ſlayne hym at Pulkerchyrche/ the kynge in ryddynge of the fraye was wounded to the deth, and dyed ſhortly after.

But wyllyam de regibus ſayth, that the kynge beynge at a feeſt at ꝑ forſayd towne or place, vppon the daye of ſaynte Auguſtyne/ eſpyed a felon ſyttyng in ꝑ halle named Leof, whych he before tyme for hys felony hadde exyled/ and lept ouer the table and pluckꝫ that theefe by the here of the hedde to the grounde. In whych doynge the ſayd felon wyth a knyfe wounded the kynge to the deth/ and alſo wyth the ſame knyfe wounded many other of the kynges ſeruauntes/ and at length was all to hewen & dyed forthwyth. If this be trewe/ it ſhulde ſeme that kynges at thoſe dayes vſed not the honour that they nowe haue and exercyſe. But whych of theſe two meanes was vſed in the kynges deth/ by agreemẽt of all writers thys kynge dyed, whan he had reygned. vi. yeres and more/ & was buryed at Glaſtenbury the whyche before he hadde ſumptuouſly repayred/ and laſte after hym two yonge ſonnes, as before is remembred, Edwyne and Edgar. But for they were to yonge to rule the lande/ therfore ꝑ rule therof was cõmytted to Edred they vncle & brother to they fader.

The. clxxxix. Chapiter.

Edredus ꝑ brother of Edmũde and ſonne of Edwarde the elder, and of Ethylſwyda hys thyrde wyfe/ began his reygne ouer the realme of Englande, in the yere of our lorde. ix. hundred and. lxvii/ and the xiii. yere of the fyrſte Lewys thã kyng of Fraunce. The whych as before is towched was admytted kyng by authoryte of hys barony. For ſo myche as the two forenamed chylderne of Edmunde, Edwyn and Edgar, were thought to yonge and inſuffycyent to take vpon them ſo great a charge. The whyche Edrede was enoynted kynge of Oddo archbyſhop of Cãterbury in ꝑ towne of Kyngeſtowne. And ſoone after he warred vpon the Danys, that then were reentred into Northumberland/ or after ſome writers, there dwellynge vnder trybute of the kynge, ſubdued before of Edmunde hys brother/ and bette theym downe, and cauſed theym to holde and obeye vnto they former couenauntes. And the Scottes than began to varye which he alſo brought vnto due obedyence.

After a certayne terme/ ꝑ Danys of Northumberlande, whyche euer contynued full of gyle and dowblenelle, not beyng content to holde the couenãtes before made & promiſſes vnto Edredus the kynge/ called vnto theym they olde aſſiſtarves and helpers,

helpers, and bereuyd from the kynges subiectes the cytye of yorke and other stronge townes and castelles, to the great hurte of the cõtrey, and vtter dyspleasure of the kynge. wherfore he beynge therof aduertysed/ in goodly and conuenyent haste assembled hys people, and spedde hym thyther, and destroyed myche of the lande. And in that fury brent the abbey of Ripon, whyche the Danys kept for a fortresse and strength/ and wan from them myche of the strengthes that they to fore had wõne/ and broughte theym agayne vnder hys subiectyon.

when this kynge Edrede had thus spedde hys iourney, and was retournynge into Englande, nothynge suspectynge the sayde Danys/ a company of them by the excytyng of Hyrcus a kyng or prynce of the Danys, thẽ folowyd the kinges hoste, and on thys halfe yorke fyll vppon the kynges rerewarde, and destroyed & slew many a man. For the whyche doyng the kynge was sore amoued/ & tourned hys people agayne, entendynge to haue destroyed ỹ countrey vtterly.

wherof the Danys beynge ware/ so lowely mekyd theym vnto hym, & gaue to hym suche gyftes, that the kyng refrayned hym of the great yre that he had purposed to theym. But amonges other articles ỹ he bounde them vnto/ one was that they shuld banyshe and vtterly refuse theyr fore sayde duke or kynge called Hyrcus. whyche thynge with dyuers and many other graunted & fermely bounde to kepe, as well by hostages taken as other suertye/ the kynge retourned into England ioynyng this kyngedome to hys other. So that here is rekened the ende of this kyngdome/ whyche shulde endure as before is shewyd in the .C.ir. chapyter of thys worke, by the terme of foure hundred & .ir. yeres.

In the same yere that the kynge hadde thus subdued the danys, a strong sykenesse toke hym/ wherfore he sent for holy byshoppe Dunstane to come vnto hym. The whych Dunstane in goynge towarde the kynge/ harde a voyce saye vnto hym, nowre slyth kynge Edredus in peace. At tyme of whych voyce thus sayenge/ the horse of that holy byshop fyll to the grounde and dyed, wythout hurtynge of hys mayster.

Then this holy man continued his iourney, and fande the kynge dede at his commynge/ whome he buryed wyth great reuerence, in the monastery or cathedrall chyrche of the cytye of wynchester, in the .xxviii. yere of his age, and the .x. yere of hys reygne, as testifyeth Guydo and other.

Francis.

THE .CXC. CHAPITER.



Lotharius the eldest sonne of the v. Lewys/ began his reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of our lorde incarnacyon .ir. hundred & lv/ and ỹ .viii. yere of Edredus then kynge of Englande. Thys Lothayr by meanes of Thebaude or Theobalde erle of Chartres, toke partye agayne Richarde duke of Normandye. And for to haue agayn hym som groũdely cause, he sent vnto ỹ duke, monyshynge hym to haue in mynde, the fayth and allegyaunce that the dukes of Normandye ought to bere vnto the kynges of Fraũce. And for mayntenynge of the same, and for other maters that he hadde to speke wyth hym of/ he wylled hym to come to a place appoynted, where all such maters

maters myght haue farther expedicion. All whyche commaundement or requeſt was graunted of the duke.

When the kynge had receyued this anſwere from the duke, wherof he demyd before the contrary / he ſent for Arnolde erle of Flaundres, Godfrey erle of Angewe, and Theobalde before named. By whoſe counſayles after many argumentes made / the kynge agreed to call the duke vnto the ryuer of Iſayr, & there to betraye hym. At which daye & place appoynted/ ꝑ duke with a cõuenyent cõpany came vnto the ſayd ryuer ſyde, there abydyng the cõmyng of Lothayr vpon ꝑ other ſyde/ whyche laſtly came thyther wyth a great people. wherof when the duke was ware he fered treaſon for the whyche cauſe he ſent eſpyes to knowe of the kynges entent. And they as wyſe mẽ eſpyed all the purpoſe of the hoſte/ and ſhortely retourned, and ſhewed to the duke that he was in great daunger. The whyche ſhortely after apperyd/ for the Frenchemen began to paſſe the ryuer in great nomber.

Then duke Rychard conſyderyng that he was of ſo litell myght to withſtande the great power of the Frẽche hoſte/ ſente a parte of his men to defende the paſſage, & wyth the remenaunt retourned vnto the cytye of Roan. wherof the kynge beyng ware that the duke was hym eſcaped/ called agayne his people, & wyth great dyſpleaſure retourned vnto Laon.

It was not longe after ꝑ the kyng aſſembled a great hoſte of Burgonyons and Frenchemen / & entred into Normandye, and beſeged the cytye of Bayon, and laſtly wanne it by the treaſon of one Gylberde a ſmyth belongynge vnto ꝑ erle Theobald aboue named. when the kynge hadde thus wõne ꝑ citye of Bayon/ he betoke the keppynge therof vnto the ſayde erle. The whyche puttynge therin a ſtrength of knyghtes/ yode vnto a caſtell called Harmauyle, & beſegyd yt wyth a certayn of knyghtes. In whyche ſeaſon the kynge for nedes of his realme/ retourned into Fraunce.

When duke Rychard was ware of the kynges departure/ he wyth hys people paſſed the water of Sayñ/ & coſted the countrey, & fyll ſodaynely vppon erle Theobalde lyenge at the foreſayd ſpege/ and ſlewe of his men vi.hũdred & .xl. perſons/ and put the erle in ſuch a fere, that he ſcaped with great daunger, and fledde with ſmal company, tyll he came to his owne cytye of Charters.

Then duke Rychard conſyderyng the great malice of his foon & ſtrẽgth of them/ ſent vnto the kynge of Denmarke then named Erarde, requyryng hym of ayde or helpe for to withſtande the malyce of his enymyes.

The whych Erarde receyued gladly that meſſage, & promyſed to them all theyr requeſt/ & ſhortely after ſent to the ſayd duke a great army of Danys, which ſped the by ꝑ ſee tyll they came to to the place where the water of Sayñ falleth into the ſee. wherof the duke beynge aduertyſed in ſhort ſpace drew vnto them wyth his people/ and ſo with them entred the countrey of ꝑ erle of Chartris, in waſtyng & deſtroynge it wythout mercy / and after entred the landes of Fraunce, in pyllynge, robbynge, brennynge, & waſtynge yt, and ſlew ꝑ people without mercy and pyty.

For this myſery & tyranny thus exercyſed by the Danys/ ꝑ kyng beyng therwyth confuſed, ſente for the byſſhoppes of his land, to haue theyr aduyce. Amonges the which the biſhop of Chartris beynge preſent, was by the hole counſayll admitted to go to the duke, and knowe the cauſe why that he beynge a cryſten man, made

ſuche deſtruccyon of the cryſten peo-
ple, and occupyed the land of cryſten
men with ſo manyfolde harmes and
ſcathes/and to conclude the trew or
trewce for a certayne of tyme. The
ſayde byſhoppe accomplyſſynge the
kynges pleaſure, was anſwered of
the duke/that this veracyon that he
put the lande of Fraunce to, was for
the iniurye ꝑ the kyng hadde before
tyme done vnto hym/& yet cõtynued
the ſame in holdynge from hym hys
cytye of Bayon, the whych he hadde
gyuen to his great enymy the erle of
Chartris. So that in concluſyon a
reſtraynte of warre was graunted,
vppon condycyon that by a day aſſy-
gned, the kynge wold apoynte a day
of communycacyon/and in the mea-
ne tyme reſtore vnto hym hys cytye
of Bayon.

when the kynge had receyued ꝑ an
ſwere from the duke/ he made ſuche
meanes that ꝑ duke receyued his city
of Bayon, with all dyſpeaſure forgy
uen agayn ꝑ forenamed Theobald.
whych was done by medyacyon of a
relygyous munke, as affermeth the
Frenche boke. And after the daye of
metynge was appoynted at a place
called Gyndolfoll. where the duke
made ordynaũce for receyuynge of ꝑ
kyng/and cõmaunded the paynyms
and Danis to behaue them reuerent
ly agayne the kynge and his people/
the whych was obeyed in all due ma
ner. And ꝑ kyng there receyued with
myche honour, hadde vnto the duke
many goodly wordes, requyrynge
hym to forget all his former vnkynd
neſſe, truſtynge to ſhewe vnto hym
ſuche pleaſures in tyme to come, that
ſhulde recompence all the former diſ
pleaſures and vnkyndnes by him be
fore commytted. wyth whyche fayre
ſpeche the duke takynge yt wythout
dyſſymulacyon, was well ſatyſfyed
and content/ſo that after aſſuraunce
of amytye and peace betweene theym
ſtabliſſhed, eyther gyuynge vnto
other great and ryche gyftes, they de
parted as frendes. The whych peas
contynued durynge theyr lyues.

THE.CXCI. CHAPITER.

LOthayre thus beyng in loue
and amytye wyth the Nor-
mans/ caſte in his mynde howe he
myght wynne from his neuewe Ot-
thon kynge of Germany, ꝑ prouynce
of Luſtracy or Lorayn, ꝑ in tyme paſ
ſed was belongynge to his progeny
tours. And this to brynge to effecte/
he gadered in right ſecret wyſe a cho
ſen hoſt of Frenchemen, & with them
paſſed the countrey, in ſuch wiſe that
he was entred the cytye of Aquiſgra
ni, or any great fame or noyſe were
therof made. wherwith Otthe beyng
dyſmade/fledde for that ſeaſon, & ſuf
fred the ſayde Lothayr for that tyme
to execute his pleaſure/ ſo ꝑ the ſayd
Lothayre ſpoyled the kynges paleys
and other places, to the great enry-
chinge of hym & his hoſte. And when
he hadde taryed there a certayne of
tyme, he retourned wythout batayll
wyth great pompe into Fraunce.

It is ſhewed before in the begyn-
nyng of the ſtory of Ethelſtane kyng
of England/that Henry duke of Sa
xony, the whyche is ment for Germa
ny, ſent vnto the ſayde Ethilſtane to
haue his ſuſter Alunda to mary vn-
to his ſonne Otthe or Otthon.

ye ſhall vnderſtande this Henry is
of ſome wryters admytted for empe
rour. But his ſonne Otthe forena-
med, was emperour in dede / whoſe
ſonne this Otthe was abouenamed,
and called the ſeconde of that name,
and emperour after hys father, and
ſon of the forenamed Alunda ſuſter
to Ethilſtane.

Then this ſecond Otthe emperour
and

a kyng of Germany, beyng thus as ye haue hard surprised of his neuew Lothayre kyng of west Fraunce/ gadered a stronge hoste and entred the realm of Fraūce. And as wytnessyth Gerardus writer of hystoryes, destroyed the coūtrey of Soysons/and lastly came vnto Paris, and brent ꝑ suburbes of that cytye, and hadde a great parte of his wyll of the sayde Lothayre. But the frenche cronycle varyeth from this sayenge, and sayth that Lothayr (by the helpe of the duke of burgoyne and of Hugh Capet erle of Paris, after ꝑ sayd Otthō had fyred the suburbes of the citye of Paris) issued out of the towne a faught wyth the emperoure, and compelled hym to gyue backe and fle. whom the kynge pursued tyll he came to the ryuer of Isayr or Sue / where eyther hoste encoūtred wyth other a faught cruelly. But at length the emperour was forced to forsake ꝑ feld/ a myche of his people slayn and droned with in the said ryuer. And so grete a nomber as affermeth the frenche storye/ that the course of the water was stopped, and ouerflowed the feldes nere vnto the sayde ryuer.

But this victory not wythstādyng as wytnessyth mayster Gagwyn/the kynge cōtrary the mynde of the duke of Burgoyne, and also of Hugh Capet/ releasyd vnto the emperour the tytle and ryghte of Lorayne. The whyche was cause of couetynge of the realme by the sayde Hugh, and vsurpynge of the same, as affermeth the sayde authoure. whyche agrement betwene the two princes stablissyed and ended, eyther retourned into his own countrey. After the which season no notable dede is put in memory of the sayde Lothayre/ so that he fynally sykened and dyed, in the yere of our lorde .ix hundred .lxxx. a vi, when he had ruled his pryncypat bygurously by the full terme of .xxx. wynter/ and was buried in the mynster of sayncte Remigius in the cytye of Raynes, leuynge after hym a son named Lewys.

Anglia.

THE .CXCII. CHAPITER.

EDredus or Edwyne the eldeste son of Edmund brother of Ethilstane/ began his reygne ouer Englande, in the yere of our lorde .ix. hundred a.lvi/ and the second yere of Lothayre then kynge of Fraunce. This Edwyne was crowned kynge at Kyngistone or Kyngestowne besyde London, of the archbyshoppe of Caunterbury. The whych selfe daye of his pfessyon or coronacion/ broke sodeynly from his lordes, a entred a secrete chāber, a there occupyed hym selfe synfully wyth a nother mannes wyfe. wherof sayne Dūstane hauyng knowlege, rebuked and blamed hym greuously/ a caused the woman to be voyded from his bed and company. whose husband as one authour testyfyeth he slew, for to haue ꝑ vnlawful vse of her beaute/ not cōsideryng ꝑ alyaūce of affynyte of kynred betwene them, as affermeth ꝑ sayde authour.

Guydo writer of storyes sayth, that Edwyn cōtrary ꝑ lawes of ꝑ chyrch, held a woman as his cōcubyne. wher fore holy Dūstane accused him vnto Odo archbishop of Caūterbury, by whose power the kynge was causyd to refuse a forsake the cōpany of that woman. For the which dede Edwyn bare great malice vnto the holy man Dunstane/ a at length by his ertorte power, banyshed hym his lande, and forced hym for a season to holde hym

in Flaunders. And for the malyce ꝑ he bare towarde hym, he dyd myche dyspleasure to all blacke munkes of Englande/ in so myche that at Walmysbury he put oute the mõkes and set in seculer prestes in theyr stede.

It is rad of hym that he also toke from the chyrch what he myght/and specyally from the blacke monkes. In so myche that such precyouse iewellys as Ethylstane hadde before receyued from Othoñ the emperour, gyuẽ vnto wynchester and Walmysbury/ he toke theym thens and gaue theym vnto alyauntes and straungers. And thus was not onely vnkynde to god/ but also he vsyd suche tyranny, and other vnlefull meanes to hys subiectes, that lastely they rebelled agayn hym/and specyally the inhabytaũtes of the countre of Mercia or myddell Englande, and also of Northumbers/ and put hym clerely from all kyngely honour and dygnyte, when he had regned after most wryters the full terme of.iiii. yeres/ and was buryed after in ꝑ cathedrall chyrche of wynchester, leuynge none heyre of his body/ wherfore the rule of the lande fyll vnto Edgar his yonger brother.

Antoninus archebyshop of Florẽce in this worke often before mynded, amonges many myracles and vertues actes, which he in ꝑ.vi.chapiter of ꝑ.xvi. title of his boke called Sñ Antonini/ reherseth of this holy man Dunstañ, a sayth that when he had vnderstandynge of the deth of thys Edwyñ by reuelacyon or otherwyse, he made hys specyall prayer to god to know what state the soule of Edwyñ was in. To whome after thys prayer made / apperyd to the sayde Dũstane a great company of fẽdes, turmentynge the soule of the sayde Edwyn, and ledynge yt vnto the places of peyne. The whyche when this holy man hadde sene, he fell to great wepynge and sorowe / besechynge god with most deuocyon to haue pyte and compassyon of that soule. And whyle he was occupied in his prayer, the sayde cõpany of fendes returned wyth yellynge and cryenge/ shewynge to hym that thorough hys prayer, the angelles of god had bytaste from them the soule of Edwyn.

THE.CXCIII. CHAPITER.

EDgar the seconde sonne of Edmunde and brother of Edwyn laste kynge / began hys regne ouer the realme of Englande, in the yere of our lorde .ix. hundred and.ix/ and the.v. yere of Lotharius then kynge of Fraunce. The whyche of dyuers wryters is wytnessed to be of the age of.xvi. yere, when he was admytted for kynge/ and that he was not crowned kynge tyll he hadde regned the full terme of.xii.yeres. whych terme ended and expyred/he was enoynted and crowned kynge in the cytye of Bathe, vppon a whytsondaye/ fallyng then vpon the.xv.day in May, of Dunstane and Oswolde bysshoppes, that one of Caunterburye, and that other of yorke.

In the begynnynge of his regn he called home holy Dunstane / that before was exyled of kyng Edwyne/ whych Dunstane harde aungellys synge, peace be to the lande of Englyshemen.

Then he made Dũstane that was abbot of Glastenburye, bysshoppe of worceter / and vnyed and knyt into one, the prouynce and lordshyppes of Englande, and made of theym one monarchye and kyngedome.

In many places he putte away clerkes and prestes that lyued byceously / and sette there for theym munkes. And as wytnessyth Guydo, Policronica

licronica, and other/ he buylded and repayred to the nomber of .xi. houses of relygyon/ wherof Abyndon, Peterburgh, Thorney, Ramesey, and wylton were parcell of theym.

And at wyncheſter in the newe abbay he putte in munkes / where before dayes were ſeculer preſtes. The cauſe wherof was, for ſo myche as the preſtes fled or negligently ſlowthed the dyuyne ſeruyce of god, and ſette vykers in theyr places, whyle they lyued at theyr pleaſure in other places, and ſpente the patrymonye of that chyrche after theyr ſenſuall wyll.

Then kynge Edgar gaue to the vykers the lande that before belonged to the prebendaryes/ truſtynge therby that they wolde do theyr dueryes. But yt was not longe to, or the ſayd vycares were as negligent as the other. wherfore fynally, the kyng by authorite of pope Johñ the. xiii. of that name, voyded clerely the preſtes & ordeyned there mõkes/ though ſome of hys prelates where not therwyth contented.

This Edgar kepte ſuche iuſtyce, and dyd ſo ſharpe execucyon/ that neuer before his dayes was vſyd leſſe felony or robberyes. And for he wold haue the rauenous beſtes deſtroyed thorough hys lande/ he cauſed Lud wallus prynce or kynge of walys, to yelde to hym yerely by way of tribute thre hundred wolues. By meane wherof wythin the ſpace of. xiii. yeres after, in Englande and walys myght ſcantely be founden one wolf a lyue.

It is wytneſſyd of dyuers authours that Kynadus kynge of Scotlande viſyted Edgar, for that that he was lytell of ſtature. wherof Edgar beynge warned/ deſyred the ſayd Kynadus to dyner, and made to him good countenaunce. After whych dyner ended/ he toke the ſayd Kynadus by ỹ arme, and ſo wyth hym helde compayny tyll they came into ỹ feldes. where beynge dyſcouered from bothe theyr ſeruauntes, Edgar drew from vnder his garment two ſwordes, & deſyred Kynadus to take the choſe of theym, & ſayd to hym: nowe thou haſt good layſure to aſaye thy ſtrength wyth myne, that before tyme thou haſte ſo myche dyſpyſed. And lette vs nowe proue whyche is more worthy to be ſubiecte to other. It is not ſyttynge for a knyghte to make great boaſte at the borde, and to do lytell in felde. when the Scottyſhe kynge hard the kyng thus challenge hym / he knew well his wordes before ſpoken were diſcloſyd to ỹ kynge/ wherof he was not a litle abaſhed. But for to apeace ỹ kynge/ he behaued hym ſo lowely, and gaue to hym ſuche pleſaunte wordes, that the kynge forgaue the treſpace.

This Edgar amonge other of hys polytyke dedes / vſed in the ſomer tyme to ſcowre the ſee wyth certayne ſhyppes of warre. And agayn ỹ wynter he prouyded to laye the ſayd ſhyppes in ſure hauens / and had redy in his owne ſeruyce, and in hys lordes houſes, a certayne nomber of ſouldyours that were alway redy when the kyng had nede of them. And his ſhypmaſters were in wages wyth hym thorough the yere/ that euer attendyd vpon the ſhippes, to ſe that nothyng fayled that vnto theym was neceſſary. By meane wherof he kepte hys land in great quyete fro outward enmyes. And in the wynter he vſed to ryde ouer the land, and to ſe how hys officers entreated the people. And yf any were accuſed of extorcyon or other crymes, and agayne them ſufficyently proued / he dyd vppon all ſuche ſharpe correccyon.

And for ſo mych as in his dayes grete

multytude of Danys dwelled in dy-
uers places of England, which vsed
many vyces/& specyally great dryn-
kynge, wherof ensurd dronkenesse
and many other vices, to the euyll ex
amples and hurte of hys commons
and subiectes: he therfore ordeyned
certayne cuppes with pynnes or nay
les set in them/and ordeynrd & made
a law, that what person dranke past
that marke at one drought, should for
fayte a certayn peny. wherof the one
half should fall to the accusour, & that
other half to the ruler of ỳ brough or
towne that the offence was done in.

It is told of this Edgar by dyuers
authours, ỳ he vpon a season beyng
at Chester, entred ỳ ryuer of Dee/ &
there syttynge in a bote, toke the ru-
le of the helme, and caused .viii. kyn
ges, whyche of Supdo are called re-
guli, whyche is to meane small or ly
tell kynges or vnder kinges, ỳ why-
che he cammaunded to rowe hym vp
and downe the ryuer vnto saynte
Johñs chyrche, and from thens to
hys owne paleys/ in token ỳ he was
lorde & kynge of so many prouynces.

This noble Edgar had two wy-
ues. By the fyrste ỳ was called Egel
fleda the whyte/ he hadde a son that
was named Edwarde. He was after
kynge, and slayne by reason of hys
stepmoder Alfrita, called in the en-
glyshe cronycle Estrylde. And vpon
his seconde wyfe Alfrida or Estrylde
he gat a son named Egelredus, or af
ter the englyshe boke Eldrede/which
was kynge after Edwarde the mar-
tyr, as after shall be shewyd. And of
saynte wylfryth, whych of some wry
ters is accõpted for a mẽchon, he had
a doughter named saynte Edyth in
peesse of ryme. But this was of bast
and not in wedloke. For as Supdo
and Policronicon testifyen/this vir
gyne wylfryth knowynge that the
kyng caste to her vnlawfull loue, put
vppon her the habyte of a nũne, thyn
kyng thereby to withdrawe the kyn
ges laue. But that not withstan-
dynge, she was at length brought to
the kynges bedde. For whych dede
he was greatly blamed of the holy
bysshop Dunstane/ and dyd therfore
vii. yere penaũce, by the hesle or dyd-
dynge of the sayde Dunstane. And
the forenamed wylfryth after ỳ chyld
borne lyued so relygyously/ ỳ she is
now cõpted for a saynt in heuen. Of
her doughter Edyth yt is radde, that
at lawfull age she was at wylton
shorne a nunne/where she vsyd more
gayer apparell then was thought cõ
uenyent to her religyon. For ỳ which
she beynge blamed of the holy bys-
shop Ethelwolde answered. Goddes
dome that maye not fayle is pleasyd
onely wyth conscyence. wherfore I
truste that vnder these clothes maye
be as clene a soule, as vnder other ỳ
ben of lasse shewynge. Many ver-
tues ben reherse of this holy virgyn
Edyth, in the .ix. chappter of the .vi.
boke of Policronycon. The which I
passe ouer for lengthe of the mater.

THE .CXCIII. CHAPITER.

EDgar thus rulynge the lande
after the deth of his fyrst wyfe
Egelfleda/ worde was brought to
hym of ỳ beaute of Alfrida or Estrild
doughter of Orgarus erle of Deuen
shire. wherfore he sent a knight of his
court named Ethelwold, to espy whe
ther the mayde were of such beautye
as she was reported of or not/ charg-
ynge hym yf she were so beautyp-
ous, that then he shulde aske her to
wyfe for the kynge.

But this knyght haupng syght of
this mayden, was so wounded wyth
the darte of the blynde god Cuppde,
that he forgate his trouth and alle-
giaunce, ỳ he shuld owe to his mayf-
ster and

ster and soueraygne / and returned, shewynge to the kynge, that she was nothynge of the beaute that she was reported of, but of meane fayrenesse as other women were. wherfore he besought the kynge consyderyng she was her fathers heyre & a good mayage / that he wolde be so good lord to hym as to wryte vnto her fader, ỹ he myght haue her to wyfe. The whyche grace he obteyned, and at length was mayed vnto her.

In processe of tyme the fame of the beaute of thys woman sprange so wyde, that lastly yt came to the eres of Edgar. wherwyth the kynge in mynde beynge sore dyscontentyd wyth Ethilwolde, whyche hym had dysceyued / yet kepte good countenaunce, and made semblaunte, as though he hadde nothynge forced ỹ mater. And vpon a tyme as yt were in game / warned this Ethilwolde, ỹ then was an erle by reason of hys wyfe or otherwyse, that he wold lodge one nyght in his house / & appoynted the daye when yt shulde be. wyth thys monysshyon the erle beynge nothynge contented / ranne home nyghe deed for fere, and prayed his wyfe of helpe in that tyme of nede, and ỹ she wold in all that she myght make her self as fowle and as vnsemely as she coude / and shewed to her all the resydue of ỹ mater. Then ỹ woman cast in her mynde the great displeasure ỹ might ensue toward her agayn god, to make that fowle, whych he hadde made goodly and fayre / and also to her lorde and husbande agayne the kynge, thynkyng that he shuld cause her thus to do, to the ende to mocke and dyscreue hym. wherfore in consyderacyon of the premysses, she enurned her in moste costly and shewynge aparayll. And ouer ỹ yf dame nature hadde had any thynge forgoten or mysprynted in her / she left not that by womās helpe might be amended or reformed / and at the kynges cōmynge receyued hym wyth all ioy and gladnesse. By whyche meanes this yonge amorous kyng was soon caught in the dyuylles snare / so that he sette reason a parte, and folowed his owne sensualyte. And for to bryng his purpose the better about, he kept forth a countenaunce as he had ben well contentyd wyth all thynge, and desyred the erle, that he wolde wyth hym ryde on huntyng into the wood of welwerley that now is called hore wood / where he awaytynge his season & tyme, strake the erle thorough the bodye wyth his shafte / so that he dyed soon after. And then he mayed this Elfryda or Elfryde shortely, & hadde by her Egelredus as before I haue shewyd. For the whyche dede sayth Ranulf, this Elfrida buylded an house of nunnes at warwell. But other authours saye, yt was for the slayeng of her sterpson Edwarde.

Also the englyshe cronycle sheweth that this Ethilwolde was slayne by an other meane and not by the kyng.

About this tyme dyed Oddo archbyshoppe of Caunterbury, that was of the nacyon of Danys. Of hym is tolde a longe processe in the. x. chapter of the. vi. boke of Polycronycon. And after hym Bryghtnus, that then was byshoppe of wynchester, was made hys successour. But for he was not sufficyent for so great a charge / he went agayne to wynchester. And holy Dunstane byshop of London & of worceter, was sacryd archbyshoppe of Caunterbury / and went to Rome and receyued the palle of pope Johñ the. xiii. of that name. This Dunstane was fyrste abbot of Glastynbury, and byshoppe of London & worceter, and lastely archbyshoppe of Caunterbury. In hys dayes the order of munkes was religyous and

Full of vertues. For it hadde relygy ous rulers, clere of scyence and of clergy/so that then men were lad as myche wyth other dedes and good ex amples of vertuous lyuynge as by theyr famous & vertuous prechyng.

Than Edgare as before ys sayde was crowned kynge at the cytye of Bathe, of Dunstane archbysshop of Cauntorbury, and Oswolde archbys shop of yorke, whan he hadde ruled thys lande.xii.yeres. The cause why it was so longe or this Edgar were enoynted/was as testyfyeth Guydo for hys vnlefull Lechery, and specy ally for the offence done wyth wyl fryde. For the whyche dede he was of Dunstane ioyned to.vii.yeres pe naunce. The whyche penaunce du rynge, he was kept from the sayd en oyntement as affermeth the sayde Guydo. But for what cause so euer it was/by agrement of dyuers wyt ters, he was not crowned tyll he had regned.xii.yeres.

It is also tolde of thys Edgare, that he beynge vpon a season at the towne of Andeuyr/ he was enamou red vpon a noble mannes doughter whyche was of passynge beautye/ & made suche meanes by force or other wyse, that the parentes were agreed that the kynge shulde haue hys plea sure. But the moder subtyll of wytte bethoughte her of a whyle / and sent a seruaunt of hers, whych was both comely and fayre to the kynges bed. In the mornynge whan the daye be gan to ware clere/the woman began to styre, and wolde haue departed from the kynge. But the kynge re strayned her and asked the cause of her so hasty departyng. For I muste be at my worke wyth my felowes sayde the woman, at myne houre to kepe my taske. And whan the kynge had questyoned wyth her further, he lerned that she was a bonde woman/ and asked of the kynge fredome for ỳ nyghtis seruyce. The kyng at this had good game/and cherysshed that damosell so after, that he made her lady of Lordes. For these insolent & wanton dedes/it is sayde that by the counsayle of the holy Dunstane, he buylded & repayred so many abbeys and houses of relygyon as aboue is rehersed.

Thus thys noble Edgare passyng his tyme in vertue medled with vyce lastly had wyttynge of the rebellyon of ỳ Brytaynes or walshmen. wher fore he assembled hys knyghtes, and entred the lande, and dyd them grete harme and waste. And among other prayes, spoyled the countre of Gla morgan/and also toke or spoyled the countre of Ono/ and toke the bell of saynt Elutus, which serued for hys chyrche, that was taken by vyolence wyth other stuffe, & hanged it about an horse necke. In puttynge it to ẽ porall seruyce to the dyspleasure of that sayntc. But for the vyolent ta kynge therof, as Ranulf erpresseth/ in an vndertyde whan kyng Edgar was layde to take hys reste, the sayd Elutus apered and smote the kyng vppon the brest wyth a spere. So ỳ the kynge awoke wyth that stroke/ and charged that the belle shulde be restored to the chyrche of sayne Elu tus, and all other thynges that were taken wyth the same. But the kynge dyed wythin.x. dayes after/ whan he had regned after moste wyters the full terme of .xvi. yeres. And was bu ryed at Glastenbury / leuynge after hym two sonnes, Edwarde the mar tyr & Egelred, by.ii.sondry wyues.

Henricus the hystographer made of hym these verses folowynge.

Ayder of the poore, and punyssher of
trespasse,
The gyuer of worshyp, kyng Edgar
is now gone

To the

To the kyngdome of heuen/whyche lyke to prayse was
As Salomon, that for wysdome a-boue all shone
A father in peas, a lyone to his foone
Founder of temples, of monkes stronge patrone,
Oppresser of all wronge, and of iu-styce guardone.

WIllelmus de regibus testifyeth, that in the yere of our lorde. M. lii, whiche was after the deth of this noble kynge Edgar. lxxvi. peres/ an abbot of Glastenbury named Ayle-warde, dygged the graue of this no-ble man vnreuerently. At whyche tyme the body was foũden hole and so full of flesshe, that the body wolde not entre into a newe cheste without prcssynge. By reason wherof fresshe droppes of blode issued out of the same body. Than the abbot forsayd fyll sodeynly madde, and went out of the chyrch, and brake hys necke, and so dyed. Than the body was put in a shryne that he before tyme had gy-uen to the place, & set vppon ỳ auter/ wyth the hed of saynt Apolinare and other relyques of saynt Vincent, the whych ỳ kyng Edgare before dayes had brought thyther and gyuen to ỳ house. wherfore it maye well appere to all that rede thys story, that what ipupnge thys man was demed of, ỳ he purged hym in suche wyse by pe-naũce, that he made a seth and amen-des to goddes pleasure.

THE. CXCV. CHAPITER.

IN ỳ story of thys noble prynce Edgare, I fynde wryten a sto-ry, the whyche is alleged by the au-thour, ỳ it shulde be done by a kyng of Syrye named Cambyses, in the tyme of the reygne of thys Edgare. But in that sayenge he varyeth frõ other authours and wryters very farre/as Vincencius hystorialis, An-toninus, Ranulphus and other. For all be it the sayde acte was done by ỳ sayd Cambyse, as the forenamed au-thoure affermeth / yet it was by the sayd Cambyses executed, longe be-fore the incarnacyon of Cryste. For thys Cambyses was the sonne of Ci-rus kyng of Parsys and of Medis, whyche reygned ouer those prouyn-ces about the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousand. lxx, before the commynge of Cryste folowyng the accompte of thys worke. vi. hundred yeres & xxix. But it myghte be, ỳ the whyte mon-ke that was authoure or wryter of this acte to the story of Edgare/ was moued for the greate iustyce that he radde in the story of thys Edgare, thynkyng to enhaunce it by the rea-son herof/ where he sayth that in the tyme of thys Cãbyses, a iudge was to hym accused and convycte vppon the same accusacyon, that he hadde gyuen a wronge sentence by meane of takynge of mede. wherfore thys Cambyses to the terrour and fere of other/ commaunded the sayde iudge to be flayne quycke, and the skynne to be spred ouer the place or stole of iudgement/ and that done, made the sone of the forsayd iudge to sytte as iudge in the place, where hys father before sat/ wyth these versis wryten vppon the face of the sayde place of iudgement as folowyth.

Sede sedens ista, iudex inflexibilis esto,
A manibus remoues munus, ab ore preces
Sit tibi lucerna, lex, hinc, pellis q; paterna
Qua recedes natus, pro patre scante datus.

whyche verses maye be engly shed in maner and fourme as folowyth.

Thou that sytteste in thys iudycyall place,

Sytte

Spytte by ryght, & holde thyne handes from mede,
Thyne erys from prayer, & fauoure from the chace/
Let lawe be thy gyde, kepe iuſtyce in thy rede.
Thy faders ſkynne, whych doth thy chayer ſprede,
Haue in thy mynde, fall not to lyke offence
Leſte for thy faute thou make lyke recompence.

AS I haue befoze ſhewed this acte was put in execucyon ỹ xi. C. yere and odde befoze the commynge of Cryſte. And ſyns the ſayd cõmynge oz incarnacyon haue erpyred. rb. hundzed yeres & moze/ which all maketh ouer two thouſande. bi. hundzed yeres. In all whyche tyme I haue nat radde in any cronycle of thys lande noz other where, that any iudge hath ben put to lyke ſentence. wherfoze it is to pzeſuppoſe, that in the lawes bothe ſpyzytuall & tempozall/ all iudges haue wel bozne theſe verſes in mynde, and exercyſed them in mynyſtrynge of dewe iuſtyce, as perfytely as theyz cuſſhons had ben freſſhely lyned wyth the fozeſayde ſkinne/ & empzited ſo narowly theſe verſes in the boke of theyz cõſcience, that they in all theyz iudgementes ſet aſyde all parcyalyte and fauour/ and holde theyz handes from all medes and rewardes/ ſo that now it is thus wyth moze, oz ellys thus it ſhulde be.

THE. CXCVI. CHAPITER.

EDwarde the ſonne of Edgare and of hys fyrſte wyfe named Egelfleda/ beganne hys reygn ouer thys realme of Englande, in the yere of our lozde. ix. hundzed and. lxxvii/ and the. xii. yere of Lothayze than kynge of Fraunce.

ye ſhall vnderſtand that after the deth of Edgare/ ſtryfe aroſe amonge the lozdes foz admyſſyon of theyz kyng. Foz Elfryda oz Eſtrylde with Alphzede duke of Mercia/ made dyuers frendes to haue her ſonne Egelredus pzomoted to that dygnite, a chylde of. vii. yeres of age, that ſhe & he myghte haue the rule of the land. But holy Dunſtane wyth ayde of other byſſhoppes, and of the erle of eeſt Englande oz Eſſex/ wythſtode ſo that doynge, that he crowned thys Edwarde kynge at ỹ towne of Kyngeſtowne / to the greuous dyſpleaſure of hys ſayd moder Elfryda and other of her affynyte.

In the tyme of thys Edwarde appered ſtella cometa, a blaſing ſterre/ wherafter enſued many inconuenyences as well to men as to beſtes, as ſykeneſſe, hunger, mozeyne, & other lyke myſcryes. But none of this fyll in the dayes of this Edwarde, but after hys deth. The fozenamed Alphetus duke of Mercia, whyche in all thynges fauoured mych the dedes of the quene/ put out ỹ monkes at wynchester, that kyng Edgare as befoze is ſhewed had there ſet in/ & brought in foz theym wanton clerkes / oz as Ranulphe ſayth clerkes wyth concubynes. But Dunſtane and the erle of Eſſex wythſayde that doyng/ and helde agayne the duke and ſuche as fauoured hys partye. Foz the whych aroſe greate ſtryfe bytwene the pzeſtes and the monkes of Englande. Foz ỹ clerkes that were befoze tyme put out by Edgare ſayd that it were a wzetched and curſed dede, that a newe comon company vnknowen ſhulde put out olde landyſmen from theyz place/ noz it ſhulde not be pleaſyng to god ỹ had graunted ỹ place to the olde wõner/ noz no good man ought to alowe ſuche doynge, foz the enſample that therof myght enſewe.

The

The monkes sayde ꝑ Cryste alowed nother the olde dweller, nor yet the persone. But who so wolde take the crosse of penaunce vppon hym, and folow Cryste in vertuous lyuynge/ he shulde be hys dyscyple. For thys was holden a generall counsayle of bysshoppes and all the clergy of the land at wynchester/where holy Dū stane helde wyth the vertuous. And whyle they were there in greate argument for thys mater, as dyuers wryters testyfyē/a rode there beyng or standynge in the wall spake myra culously, and sayd that Dunstanes wayes was good and trewe. But for all thys the stryfe ceased not. In so mych that a new assemble of the clergye and other was appoynted after at a place called the strete of Calue/ where the counsayle was kept in an vppet lofte. In thys counsayle Dū stane was greuously despysed and rebuked of some vnskylfull mē. But yet he kept hys oppynyon grounded vpon iustyce and vertue. And whyle they were there in thys greate dyuysyon and argument, whyche waye shulde be admytted and alowed/ so deynly the iopstes of the lofte fayled, and the people fell downe, so ꝑ many were slayne & greuously hurte. But holy Dunstane escaped, wyth fewe other that toke hys partye vnhurte. This wonder with the other, caused sylence amonges them that entēded to mayntayne this forsayd quarell/ so that Dunstane had all hys wyll.

Thus passynge the tyme of the reygne of Edwarde the kynge/ he came vppon a season from huntyng in the forest or woode after some wry ters, nere to the castell of Corfe in ꝑ west countre. where he losynge hys company and seruauntes, resorted vnto the castell before sayd/ where at that tyme hys moder with her sonne Egelred kept her housholde, whan the quene was warned of hys commynge/ anone she called to a seruaūt of hers whych she mych trusted, and tolde to hym all her counsayle/ she wynge to hym forther how he shulde behaue hym in accomplysshynge of her wyll and mynde. And that done/ she went towarde the kynge, and receyued hym wyth all outwarde gladnesse/ and desyred hym to tary wyth her that nyght. But he in curteyse maner excused hym selfe/ & for spede desyred to drynke vpon hys horse syttyng, ꝑ whych was shortly brought.

And whyle the cuppe was at hys mouth/ the seruaunt before of the quene enfourmed, strake hym to the herte wyth a sworde or a longe dagger sharpe on both sydes. After whyche stroke by the kynge receyued/ he toke the horse wyth the spores and ranne towarde the place that he was comen fro, or ellys suche waye as he supposed to mete of hys company. But he bled so sore that for fayntnes he fyll from hys horse, hys one fote beynge faste in the styrroppe. By reason wherof he was drawen of ꝑ horse ouer wayes and feldes, tyll he came to a place named than Corfgate, where he was founden dede. And for ꝑ maner of hys deth was vnknowē, and also he for kynge not knowen/ he was buryed vnworthely at the towne of warehm, and there rested by the terme of. iii. yeres after. In whyche tyme and season god shewed for hym dyuers myracles/ as syghte to the blynde, heithe to the syke, and herynge to ꝑ defe, wyth dyuers other whyche I ouer passe.

wherof herynge hys stepmoder, began to take repentaunce, and entended to vysyte hym by way of pylgrymage. But how or for what cause she entended inwardly I can nat saye/ but the horse or beest ꝑ she rode vpon, myght not nyghe ꝑ place/ by a certayne

certayne ſpace, for betynge or any other thynge that to hym myght be done by man. But after this by her meanes he was tranſlated from thēs to Septon, that now is called Shaftesbury/ & there buried with great honour. But ſyn that tyme parte of his bodye was tranſlated to the abbaye of Leof beſyde Herefoꝛde in the edge of walys / and ſome parte therof to Abyndon. And yt is repoꝛted that at Shaftesbury remayne hys lunges/ and ben ſhewed in the place that is called Edwardyſtowe.

For the murder of this bleſſed man/ yt is ſayde as befoꝛe is ſhewed in the ſtoꝛy of Edgar, that his ſtepmother fouȳded two monaſteryes of women/ ỳ one at Ambꝛiſbury, and that other at warwell. In the whyche place of warwell in her latter dayes, ſhe refuſynge the pompe of the woꝛlde, helde there a ſolytary and ſtrayte lyfe/ and ended her lyfe wyth great penaunce and repentaunce, and was there buryed when ſhe dyed.

Thus as ye haue harde was this vertuous ponge kynge Edwarde martyꝛed, whe he had reygned after moſt wꝛyters .iiii. yeres, leuyng none yſſue/ wherfoꝛe the rule of the lande fyll to Egelredus his bꝛother.

THE .CXCVII. CHAPITER.

EGelredus the ſonne of Edgar and Alfrida oꝛ Eſtryld his laſt wyfe/ beganne his reygne ouer Englande, in the yere of our loꝛde. ix hūdꝛed & .lxxvi/ and the .xvi. yere of Lothayꝛe then kynge of Fraunce.

This is named of ſome wꝛyters Etheldꝛedus, and in the engliſhe cronycle Eldꝛede. In whoſe begynnyng the grounde wared bareyne/ and all myſterȳes befoꝛe bodyd by the appeꝛynge of the blaſynge ſtarre, in the dayes of Edwarde the martyr, nowe beganne to take place and encreace vppon the erth. This as the other of his ꝓgenytours, was crowned kyng at Kyngeſtone, of the holy archbyſſhoppe Dunſtane, and of Oſwalde archebyſhop of yoꝛke. To whome as yt is redde in the lyfe of ſaynt Dunſtane amonges his ꝓphecyes/ that in the day of his coꝛonacyon, he ſayd vnto the kynge: foꝛ thou comeſt to this kingdome by the deth of thy bꝛother, in whoſe deth Englyſhemen cō ſpyꝛed with thy wykked moder/ they ſhall not be wythout blood ſhedynge and ſwoꝛde, tyll there come people of vnknowen tunge, and bꝛynge them into thꝛaldome. And thys treſpace ſhall not be clenſyd wythoute longe vengeaunce.

Of this Egelred⁹ wꝛyters agreen, that he was goodly of ſhappe and of vyſage/ but that was mynged wyth lechery and crueltȳ. It is alſo redde that when holy Dunſtane ſhuld cryſten hym / as he helde hym ouer the fonte, he felyd the holy lyker wyth ỳ fruyte of his wombe. wherfoꝛe holy Dunſtane ſware by god and by hys mother/ this ſhalbe vnkynde to god and his chyꝛche. whych fayled not in his foꝛth goynge/ foꝛ he was vngracyous in his begynnynge, wꝛetched in ỳ myddell of his lyfe, and hatefull to men in the ende therof.

In the ſeconde yere of his reygn/ a cloude was ſene in Englande, the whyche appered halfe lyke blood, & the other halfe lyke fyꝛe/ and chaunged after into ſundꝛy colours, & dyſapeꝛyd at the laſte. In the thyꝛd yere of his reygn, ỳ Danys aꝛyued in ſundꝛy places of his lande/ as in the yle of Thanet beſyde Kente, in Cornewayll, and Suſſex, and dyd in thoſe coſtes myche harme. And after ſome of theym came to London/ but there they were put of. How be yt they deſtroyed a great part of Cheſterſhyꝛe.

And

And in the ende of the same yere, a great parte of the cytye of London was wasted with fyre. But how it begane myne authour myndeth not. But ye shall vnderstand, that at this daye the cytye of London had moste housynge and buyldynge from Ludgate towarde westmester/and iytell or none where ỳ chefe or herte of the cytye is nowe/excepte in dyuers places was housing, but they stode without order. So that many townes and cytyes, as Caunterbury, yorke, and other dyuers in Englande/passed London in buyldynge at those days, as I haue sene or knowe by an olde boke somtyme in the Guyldehal of London named Domys day. But after the cõquest yt encreaced & shorte ly after passed & excelled all ỳ other.

About the. viii. yere of this kynges reygne/the kynge maryed erle Egbertus doughter named Ethelgina or Elgina. Of the whyche in processe of time he receyued a son named Edmunde, whyche after was surnamed Ironsyde/and .ii. other sonnes named Edwyn and Ethyistane, and a doughter named Edgina.

In this pastyme dyed saynt Ethilwalde bysshop of wynchester. He was borne in wynchester, and norysshed vnder holy Dunstane at Glastenbury, and there shorne monke/and after was chosen abbot of Abyndon, in the tyme of the reygne of kynge Edredus. And in the tyme of Edgar he was sacryd bysshoppe of wynchester/where he made an abbay of nunnes, and translated saynt Swythynes body out of the erth.

After whyche sayde Ethelwalde, holy Alphegus abbot then of Bathe was sacred bysshoppe of wynchester/the whyche after was archebysshoppe of Caunterbury, and martyred hastely of the cruell Danys, as after shall be shewed.

About the .ix. yere of Egelredus/for stryfe ỳ was betwene the bysshop of Rochester and hym, he wyth his knyghtes beseged the sayde cytye. wherof holy Dunstane sent to ỳ kyng, amonysshynge hym that he shulde refrayne hym of that cruelty, & suffre ỳ bysshop and his cytye in peace, oneles that he offended saynte Andrewe patrone of that cytye. But this message myyded nothyng ỳ kynges courage. Then thys blessed man sent to hym a hundred pounde in gold, wyllyng hym to refrayne of that outrage/the whyche he receyued and brake the syege. Then blessyd Dunstane sente this message to the kyng: For thou haste preferred golde before god, and syluer before the apostle, and couetyse before me/right so eupll happes shall come vnto the, but not whyle I am in lyfe. But the kynge toke lytell regarde to those wordes, but contynued in his insolent & cursed dedes.

About the .xi. yere of his reygne, dyed that blessed archbysshoppe saynte Dunstane. Of whom Ranulff in the xiii. chappter of his .vi. boke of Policronycon, maketh rehersall of dyuers of his vertues and myracles/the whyche I passe ouer, and the rather bycause his legẽde or lyfe is manyfest. Siricus was archbysshop after hym, & after hym wulricus. And after wulricus, blessed Elphegꝰ was archbysshop of that see.

It was not longe after the deth of holy Dunstane, but that the Danys perced England in many and sondry places of the lande/in suche wyse that the kynge was to seke, to whiche coste he shuld go fyrst to wythstande his enymyes. And in conclusyon in auoydynge of more harme/he was compellyd to appeace theym wyth great summes of money. But when ỳ money was spent/they fyll to new robbynge of the people. Then the

kynge graunted moze money. But for all that the Danys robbed and spoyled ꝑ coũtrey of Northũberlãd, and besyeged London at the laste. And for augmentacyon of the kynges sorowe/ Elfricus that then was mayster or admyrall of the kynges nauy, fled as a false traytour. And after that recõcyled & fled the second tyme to the Danys. wherfore ꝑ kyng in wreche of the father/ commaũded the eyen of his sonne Algarus, to be plucked or done out of his hedde.

But whyle this persecucion thus contynued / by meanes of the holy byshoppe of wynchester Elphegus, a peace was concluded for a tyme betwene the kyng and the Danys. And the prynce or chefe captayne of them named Aulaff, was so exorted by the said holy byshop/ ꝑ he became a cristẽ man, to whome the kynge was godfather/ so that after the sayde Aulaff retorned to his owne, without doyng of more harme / so that for a whyle the warre of Danys ceased.

But whyle that rested / the blody flyx wyth a brennynge feuer vexed the people thorough the lande, that myche folke therof dyed.

Contynuynge whyche mysery / the Danys agayne assayled the lande, & dyd in dyuers places great harme/ so that for lacke of a good hed or gouernour, many thynges in the land perysshed. For the lordes were at such dyssencyon that one with that other/ that when they were assembled to speke or treate of peace betwene that one lorde and that other, and yf any good thynge were dyuysed for the hurte of theyr enymyes / anone the Danys were warned therof by some of the same counsayll. wherof were suspected Elfricus and Edricus. And to this sorowe was ioyned hunger and penury amonges the commons, that euerych of theym was constrayned to plucke and stele from other/ so that what by the pyllage of the Danys, and inwarde theuys and brybours, this lande was broughte in great mysery and myschefe.

THE .CXCVIII. CHAPITER.

Of Gelredus then wrapped in misery/ lefte not to gader of hys subiectes what he myght, as well by vnlaufull meanes as otherwyse. For as sayth Ranulfe myne authour/ he wold for sayned or small causes, dyspoyle mẽ of theyr possessyõs/ & after cause men to redeme theyr owne for great summes of money. And ouer that he walowed in lechery, gruyng hym to all vycyous and incontynent lyfe of his body. By whych vngracyous meanes, he brought this land in such ruyne, that what he myght not helpe by strẽgth, he warred wyth money. So ꝑ from the fyrst entre of the Danys as testyfyeth Policronica in the. xbiii. chappter of his. vi. boke, & also Guydo wyth other authours/ that from the fyrst trybute of. x. thousande pounde, he broughte yt at the laste in processe of. v. or. vi. yeres to xl. thousande pounde. The whyche yerely durynge his lyfe and after, to the commynge of saynte Edwarde, was leuyed of his subiectes/ and named for the contynuance therof Danegelt. whyche is or was to meane money payde to the Danys, or shortly, Dane money.

In this tyme as yt were about the xb. yere of his reygne, dyed saynt Oswalde the archbyshoppe of Caunterbury. And soone after dyed Ethelgina the quene. And the body of saynte Cuthbert was translated from holy yle to Durham / in the whyche yle he helde anankers lyfe, as yt is before shewyd in the storye of Cadwalader.

Thus

Thus contynuynge this lande vn
der the greuous tribute of the Da-
nys, and also by sustεynynge of ma-
ny villanyes and iniuryes by the En
glyshe men of the sayde Danys, as
after sondele shall appere/this Egel
redus by counsayll of his kamplyers
about the. xvi. yere of hys reygn/ma-
ryed Emma ꝑ doughter of Rychard
duke of Normandy, before mynded
in the storye of Lewys the .v. and
Lothayre hys sonne kynges of Frañ
ce. The whyche Rychard was the
thyrde duke of Normandy, and the
fyrste of that name/and also was sur
named Rychard wythoute fere or
the hardy / as more of hym shall be
shewyd in the storye of the .vi. Lewis
kynge of Fraunce.

By reason of maryenge of this Em
ma, whych in ꝑ Frenche cronycle is
named the flowre of Normandye /
thys Egelredus was greatly enhañ
ced in hys owne mynde. By ꝓsum
pcyon wherof he sent into all good
burghes, cytyes, and townes of his
lande, secrete and strayte commyss-
syons / chargynge the rulers that
vppon a certayne day, that is to say
vppon the daye of saynte Bryce at
an houre assygned in euery place of
hys lande, the Danys shulde be so-
deynly slayne. And so yt was done.

And as the cõmon fame telleth,
ꝑ this murder beganne at a lytell
towne in Hertefordeshyre, wythin
xviii. myles of London called wele-
wyñ or welwyñ. For the whyche
dedeyt toke fyrst that name/ as who
wolde wene, that the wele of the coũ-
trey was there fyrste wonne. But
who that well cõsydereth the sequell
of thys storye/ shall fynde lytell wyn
nynge or weale ensuenge of thys
dede.

But or I ꝓcede further / here I
wyll touche somewhat of the pryde
and abusyõ of ꝑ Danis, that they ex-
ercysed in Englande, in some parte
therof, as I haue sene in an olde cro
nycle, wherof the authoure ys vn-
knowen. There it is shewyd, that the
Danys by strength caused husbande
men to ere and sowe the lande, and
do all other vyle laboure that belon-
ged to husbandrye / and the Dane
helde hys wyfe at hys pleasure, with
doughter and seruaunt. And when
the husbandeman came home/ he
shulde scantly haue of hys owne as
seruaũtes had, so that the Dane had
all hys commaundement, and ete
and dranke hys fyll of the beste/whẽ
the owner hadde scantely hys fyll of
the worste. And ouer that the comon
people were so of theym oppressyd/
that for fere and drede, they called
theym in euery suche house as they
hadde rule of, Lorde Dane.

But in ꝓcesse of tyme, after
the Danys were voyded the lande/
thys worde Lord Dane, was in de-
rysyon and despyte of the Danys,
turned by the Englyshemen into a
name of oppꝛobrye and called Lur-
dayne / whyche to our dayes ys not
forgoten. But when one Englyshe-
mã woll rebuke an other/ he woll for
the more rebuke call hym Lurdayn.

Then to retourne to our fyrste
mater. Treuthe yt is that when the
Danys were thus murdred thorugh
Englande/tydynges therof sprange
into Denmarke. whyche kyndeled
in theym suche a fury/ that the kyng
therof named Swanus, assembled
shortely a great hoste and naupe of
Danys, and in shorte ꝓcesse after
landed in Cornewayll. And by trea-
son of a Norman named Hugh, why-
che by fauoure of the quene Emma
was made erle of Deuenshyre / the
sayd Swanus toke Exetour, and af
ter bette downe the wallys.

Then he entred further into the
lande. In whyche season the kynge

sent vnto Edrick / chargyng hym to assemble the weste Saxons, and to wythstande the further entre of the Danys. The whyche accordynge to his commyssyon assembled the weste Saxõs/and made good contenaũce to wythstand the sayd enymyes. But when the hostes shulde ioyne/were it for feere or for treason, he fayned hym syke and fled from hys people. The whych for lacke of an hed were fayn to gyue backe/ to theyr hurte, and to theyr enimyes great auauntage and comforte.

Wherfore the Danys resorted then to wylton and Shyrborn/ and anon spoyled both those townes, and there refresshed theym. But for Swanus had wittynge that the kynge was cõmyng towarde hym wyth the power of his lande / he therfore departed thens and retourned wyth great pyllage to his shyppes/ & sayled aboute the lande, and lastely landed in Norfolke. where he wastynge and spoylynge the countrey / came in processe vnto the cytye of Norwyche and robbed and spoyled yt/ and after rode to Thetforde, and dyd lykewise to that towne, and fyred yt and destroyed ỹ countrey nere there about.

But soone after a noble man of that countrey called duke Vsbatell mette wyth the hoste of Danys, and gaue vnto them an hard and sharpe batayll / and slewe many of the enymyes and put them backe. For this, and for hũger that then assailed this lande/ Swanus returned ofte vnto his shyppes, & departed agayne into Denmarke, & tarryed there all ỹ wynter folowynge. In whyche season he made great prouysyon to reenter the lande of Englande.

THE .CXCIX. CHAPITER.

ABout the .xxvi. yere of the reygne of Egelredus the forenamed Swanus with a stronge armye, landed at Sandwyche/ and spoyled all the coũtrey nere vnto the see syde, and rested hym there tyll he harde of an armye cõmynge agayn hym. And when he was ware therof, he retourned to his shyppes agayne/ and herynge the kyng was farre westward, he landed in Suffer, and spoyled yt wonder sore. And when he there was warned of the cõmynge of a batayll of Englyshemen, anon he toke shyppynge agayne. So that when the englyshemen wende to haue met wyth them in one coste/then wolde they so daynly lande in a nother. And when ỹ kyng prouyded to mete wyth thẽ vppon the see/ other they wold fayne to flee, or ellys they shulde wyth gyltes blynde the admyrall of the kynges nauy.

By whyche subtylytye and crafty meanes, they wery ed and tyred the hoste of Englyshmẽ. And where euer they went/ they slew, brent, and robbed wythout compassyon and pyty. The kynge then beyng at Shrewesbury, & herynge of the great sleyght and crueity of the Danys/ called his counsayll to rede what were beste to be done for ỹ defence of his enmyes. where it was concluded, that ỹ kyng to haue peace with the Danys, shuld pay vnto them .xxx. thousande poũd. But whyle this was in doynge, the Danys destroyed a grete part of Barkeke or Barkshyre.

when this peace was thus made/ Swanus wyth his company retourned into Denmarke. And ỹ yere folowynge / the kynge made Edricus forenamed duke of Mercia. Thys Edricus was of lowe byrth, tyche, of tunge false, and subtyll of wyt, softe and cloquẽt of speche, vntrusty and false of thoughte and promyse/ as of hym somdeale before is shewyd, and after more shall appere.

In the

In the .xxbii. yere of Egelredus/ a prynce of Danys named Turkylius landed in Kent. The whyche so greuously warred in that cõtrey / that the Kentyshemen were fayn to make theyr peace, and so departed.

And yet the persecucyon of Danys ceased not. For in one countre of Englande or other/ they euer in whyles robbed & pilled the Englishmen. So ỳ all the cõtrey a longe the coste, frõ the Northe parte of Englande vnto the yle of wyghte/ was by theym destroyed or hugely sette a backe. And when the kynge entended to make prouysyon for to withstande theym/ euer Edricus wolde counsayll hym to the contrarye/ shewynge hym that he shulde spende hys treasour & trauayle his people in vayne. By mean wherof the Danys entred .l. myles within the lande/ and brent and robbed by dyuers tymes many vylages & townes. So that they encreased & warred passynge tyche / and the Englyshemen nedy, bare, & poore. Thus contynuynge this mysery/ Swanus or after the englyshe Swayne then beyng in Denmarke, and herynge of the encreace of his people within Englande/ repented hym of his former couenauntes, and thought ỳ the hole dompnyon of Englãd shulde belong to hym of ryght. For the whyche he prepared his armye & nauy in moste defensyble wyse / and sped hym into England, & to the ryuer of Humber, and landed in Northumberlande.

where the erle or ruler of that countrey wyth all the rulers of the same, sware feaute vnto the sayde Swanus, and promysed to kepe that countrey vnto hys vse. And when he had done hys wyll in that coste / he entred agayne the water, and by the ryuer of Trent he passed to Gaynsburghe, and so by Northwatlyngstrete/ and subdued the inhabytaun-

tes of that cõtrey, and forced theym to gyue vnto hym pledges. whyche pledges, wyth also his nauy / he betoke vnto Canutus his sonne, whyle he wente farther into the lande. And that done, he wyth his people kepte on his tourney tyl he came into Mercia, kyllynge and slayeng the men of that prouynce / And reserued the women to vnclene lyuynge, as well the relygyous as other/ and toke by strength wynchester and Oxenford, and dyd in them what he lyked.

And after he hadde thus passed the lande / he drewe the nerre waye towarde London. But in passynge the ryuer of Thames he loste some parte of hys people / other for lacke of a brydge or for ieopardynge theyr passage vnauysely. And so in processe he came vnto London/ where at that tyme kynge Egelredus was. wherfore Swanus lefte the cytye, and drewe into Kente, and so towarde Caunterbury wythoute lette, weldynge the countrey at hys wyll/ and lastely beseged that cytye. The whyche manfully defended theyr enymyes by the space of .xx. dayes.

whyche syege beganne vpon the day of sayntc Mathewe in the moneth of September, and endured as is aboue sayde / and then taken by the treason of a deken named Almaricus / the whyche beforetyme blessed Elphegus then archebyshop of that see, hadde preserued from deth.

Then the Danys fyred the cytye when they before had spoyled it/ and toke the archebyshop and put him in strayte pryson. And the monkes of sayntc Augustynes abbey they tythed that is to meane they slew .ix. by cruel torment, and the tenth they kepte a lyue/ the whych after was soide and sette to all seruyle labourc. And as wytnessyth Antoninus or Vyncent hystoryall/ they slewe and broughte

in ſeruage ouer the ſumme of.ir.hundred perſones of relygyon/ they ſlew of men, women, & chyldren, beyonde the nöber of. viii. thouſand. As with myche more cruelty yt is ſhewyd, in the .vii. chappter of the. rvi. tytle of the worke of the ſayde Antoninus. And fynally for this bleſſed man Elphegus wolde not condeſcende to gyue vnto them as ſayth Policronica .iii. thouſande pounde/ after they had kept hym in harde pryſon by the ſpace of. vii. monethes, vppon an Eſter eué they after many vylanyes to hym done at Grenewyche wythin thre myles of London, they ſtoned hym to deth. where he lay in the feld vnburyed a certayne of tyme/ and after caryed to London, and buryed reuerétly in the chyrch of ſaynt Paule. But afterward in tyme of Canutus, he was taken vp agayne and caryed to his owne chyrche. Of this bleſſed Elphegus Antoninus and alſo Policronicon ſhewen many vertues and myracles / the whyche I paſſe ouer for lengthynge of the tyme.

THE .CC. CHAPITER.

In this paſſyme, kynge Egelredus ferynge the ende of thys perſecucyon / ſent Emma the quene wyth her two ſonnes Alphrede and Edwarde, vnto Rycharde the ſecond of ỳ name, then fourth duke of Normandy, whych was brother vnto the ſayde Emma / wyth whome alſo he ſent the byſhoppe of London.

About the.rrriiii. yere of the reygne of Egelredus/ the Danis when they hadde wonne a great part of the coũtrey of weſtſaxon, retorned agayn to warde London. wherof herynge the Londoners ſent vnto theym certayn gyftes and pledges.

In all thys ſeaſon myne authoure maketh no mynde, that euer the kyng gaue vnto the Denys any notable batayll / but kepte hym in holdes or places, for his owne ſauegarde, and lyteil fruyte or profyte to his lande. At the laſte he was chaced vnto the yle of wyghte / where wyth a ſecrete companye, he helde a great parte of the wynter/ and fynally wythout catall or comforte, ſayled ouer to hys wyfe into Normãdy / and there held hym a certayne of tyme.

whan Swanus was aſcertayned of the departynge of Egelredus out of the lande, he was enflamed wyth exceadynge pryde / ſo that he arreted exceadynge impoſycyons of the people, and greued them wonderfully. And amonges other of his tyrãnyes he aſked a great ſumme of money of ſaynt Edmundes landes. whych the rulers denayed/ for ſo myche as they claymed to be free of all kynges trybute. For thys he entred the terytory of ſaynte Edmunde, and waſted and ſpoyled the countrey / and ouer that deſpyſed that holy martyr, wyth manaſſyng of the place of his ſepulture. wherfore the men of that countrey ferynge this tyraunt, gaue them to faſtynge and prayer/ ſo that ſhortly after he was ſtycked in an euenynge amonges his knyghtes, with ỳ ſword of ſaynte Edmunde in the towne of Sherforde as ſayth Guydo / but after Policronicon & other in the town of Gayneſborough. where he dyed wyth yellynge and crienge the thyrd daye after.

In fere wherof, Canutus hys ſon after that he was kynge, cloſed in ỳ land of that holy martyr with a depe dyche/ and graunted to the inhabytauntes therof great fredam, & quyt them of all kyngly taſke or trybute. And after buylded a chyrch ouer the place of his ſepulture/ and ordeyned there an houſe of munkes, & endued them wyth fayre poſſeſſyons. And after ỳs

ter yt was vsed that kynges of Englande when they were crowned, sent for an offerynge theyr crownes vnto sayncte Edmundes shryne, and redemed them afterwardes wyth a condygne pryce.

When Egelredus hadde wrytynge of the deth of Swanus, by procurement of his frendes, he made meanes to retourne to hys owne. By whose meanes he was sent for, wyth condycyon that he shulde refourme his olde condycyons. And for perfourmaūce of the same, he sent his son Edwarde into Englande before hym. And in the lent folowynge the kyng came hym selfe, and wyth his people sped hym towarde Lyndesey. where Canutus was at that tyme resseaūt, not prouyded of the kynges so hasty commynge.

Wherfore he beynge not purueyed to wythstande the kynge, fledde into Sandewyche in Kente. And for he there proued suche persones as before tyme his fader and he hadde taken pledges of, & sande them not persecutaunt in theyr pnisses/he made to be cutte of all the noses and hādes of the sayd Englyshe people, and sayled into Denmarke when he had do/ and retourned the nexte yere wyth a great naup, and sayled about ỹ land, and toke prayes in the South countrey. wherof the kynges eldest sonne named Edmunde, made prouysyon wyth ỹ ayde of Edricus to go agayn hym. But when he shulde haue met with Edricꝰ at a place alligned & his host, he was of hym dysceyued/wherfore he was compelled to gyue place to his enymyes. And as yt was after knowen, the sayde Edricus had promysed his fauour and ayde vnto the sayde Canutus.

By reason wherof Canutus entred the countre of west Saron/ and forced them to swere to hym feauty, and to gyue vnto him pledges/and other countreys adioynyng dyd the same.

In this season Egelredus beyng at London, was taken wyth a greuous sykenes & dyed/and was there buryed in the chyrch of sayncte Paule, where at this day in ỹ Northyle behynde the quere, apperyth in the wal a token of hys sepulture/whyche reygned, or as say Policronicon & other, beseged Englande, by the terme of xxxvi. yeres full / leuynge after hym a sonne named Edmunde Iron syde ouer Alphryde and Edwardes sonnes of Emma.

Francia.

THE. CCI. CHAPITER.

LEwys the. vi. of that name & son of Lothayre/ began hys reygne ouer Fraunce, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon ix. hundred and lxxxvi/and the. v. yere of Egelredus than kyng of England. Of ỹ whiche other for hys youth or for the shortnesse of hys reygne, lytell of hys dedes is last in memory/ excepte that ỹ Frenche boke wytnessyth, that for he hadde none issue, and Hugh Capet before in the story of Lothayre mynded, was hys kamplyer and chyefe coūsayler/he shuld therfore ordeyne and admytte the sayd Hugh for hys heyre. But more verely as before is touched in the aboue named story, & in the ende therof, thys Hugh was stronge and myghty, and in the later dayes of Lothayre coueted the rule of the lande. wherfore after the deth of this Lewys, for so myche as he last no chyld after hym/he than hauyng ỹ chyefe rule of Fraunce, by strength and power made hym selfe kynge.

But for I promysed in the story of Egelredus, somwhat to shewe of Rycharde the fyrst of that name and thyrde duke of Normandye/ I shall somdele length thys story wyth the story of the sayd Rycharde. Thys Rycharde as afferme all wryters, was named Rychard wythout fere. And for thys cause that folowyth, as testifyeth the Frenche boke. He used myche to byd hys bedys for all crysté soules. And vpon a nyght whan he had longe watched/ he entred a chyrche, where stode a corps vnburyed & no man watchynge it. And whyle he sayd hys orysons for that soule and other/ he layed hys gloues vppon a deske by hym. And whan he had ended hys deuocyons, he went out of ỳ chyrche for gettynge hys gloues behynde. But shortly after he remembred hym of them / and retorned towarde the chyrche for to fetche hys sayd glouys. whan he came at the chyrch dore/ he founde ỳ corps there standynge, wyth hys armes spradde abrode, and makynge greate noyse and crye. wherfore the duke made ỳ sygne of ỳ crosse in hys forehed, and conjured the corps that he shulde reste, but all was in vayne. wherof the duke drewe hys sword and stroke at the corps, and to hys thynkyng parted hym in two peces. And that done entred the chyrche, fet hys glouys, & so departed. And for this chaunce he ordeyned after thorough hys realme that a corps shulde be watched the fyrste nyght or lenger, as men hadde deuocyon. which gyse was somtyme vsed in Englande, and begon of the Normans as men may conjecture, after they had fyrste conquered thys lande.

Polycronycon sheweth in the. vii. chappter of hys. vi. boke, that thys duke Rycharde dremed on a nyght that a monke of the house of sayncte Audoenus in Roan, as he went towarde hys lemman by nyght/ fyll be syde a brydge and was drowned. whose soule after was in stryfe betwene an angell and a fende. The whyche after a longe stryfe/ condescended to put the iudgement in duke Rycharde. Than the duke gaue sentence, that the soule shuld be restored agayne to the body/ and then ỳ body to be set vppon ỳ brydge that before he was fallen fro. And yf he than went to hys lemman he shuld be the fendes/ and yf nat, he shulde than be saued. And whan thys sentence was put in execucyon, the monke fledde vnto the chyrche therby. Vppon the morne whan the duke awoke, & called thys vysyon to hys memory/ to knowe the certaynte therof, he went vnto the sayd chyrche, and fande the monke there hys clothes yet wete/ & after went to the abbot of that place, and tolde to hym all thys dede, aduertysynge hym to take better oversyght of hys flocke.

To these narracyons the herers may gyue credence as them lyketh. For they be nother in the pystle nor yet in the gospell. All be it Antonin? archbysshop of Florence, whan he rehersyth any lyke narracyons, whych he thynketh somwhat doutefull/ he topneth these wordes and sayth, pñ est credere. The thyrde narracyon is tolde of thys duke/ whych by all presumpcyon was regestred of some women scrybe. Thys duke wyth Gunnore hys wyfe, lyued longe whyle a dyshoneste lyfe, and contrary to the lawes of the chyrch. wherof his people murmured sore/ so that at length by the holsome doctryne of some of hys clerkes or spyrytuall men, he maryed her to hys lawfull wyfe. The fyrste nyght after ỳ weddynge/ were it in game or otherwyse, the duchesse torned her buttocke in ỳ dukes lappe as she

she before tyme hadde neuer done. whan the duke frayned the cause of her so doyng/for now (sayd she) may I do what me lyketh/ where before I myghte do but what you lyked. Upon thys Gunnore he gate beside other chylder, Emma that was the wyfe of Egelred⁹ as before ye haue harde/and dyed whan he had ruled Normandy by the terme of.lii.yeres.

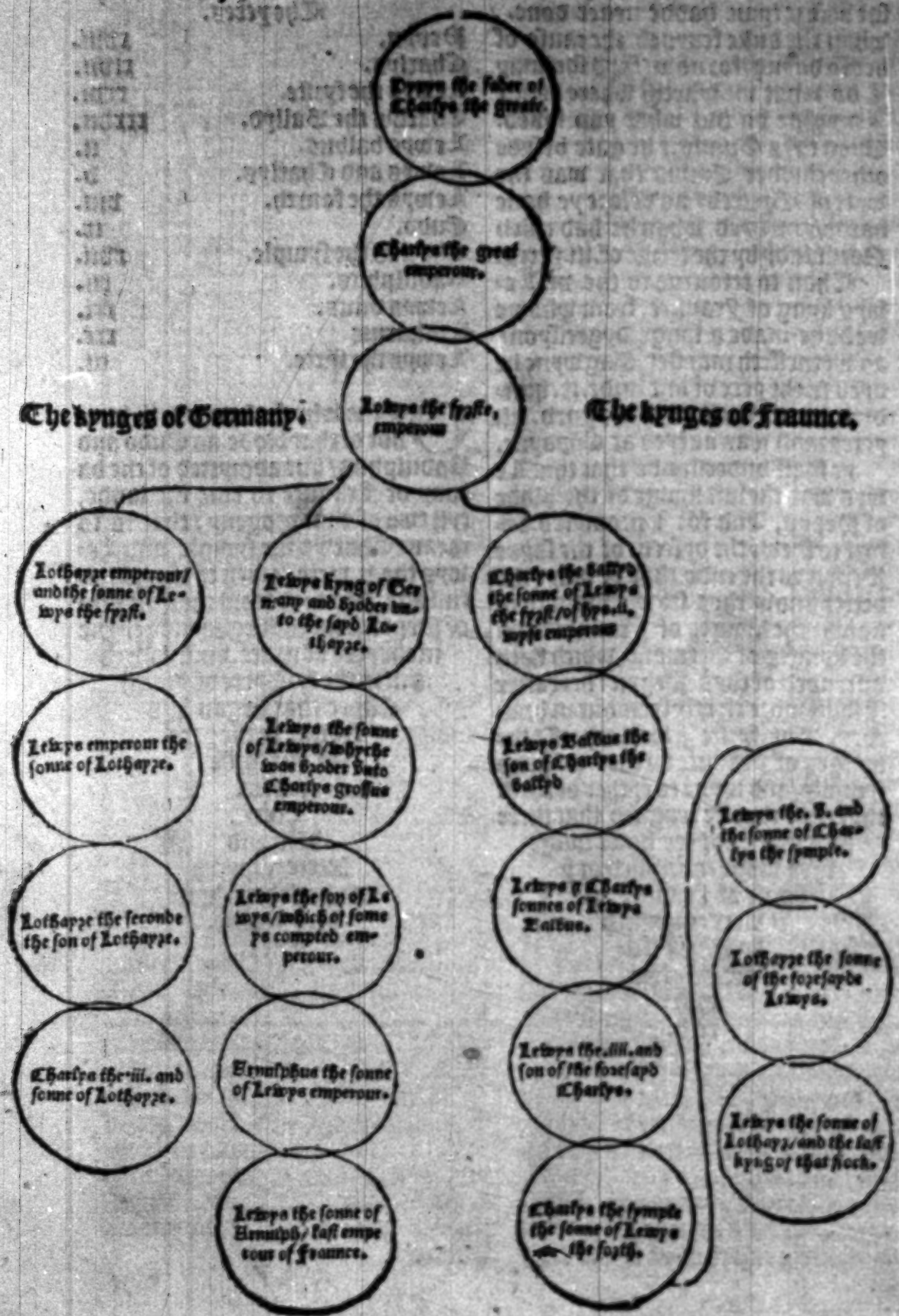
Than to retourne to the. vi. Lewys kyng of Fraunce, from whome we haue made a longe dygressyon/ as wytnesseth mayster Gagwyne he dyed in the yere of our lorde.ix. hundred.lxxxix, whe he had regned. iii. yeres/and was buryed at Cõpayne.

ye shall understande that this Lewys was the last kynge of the blode of Peppyn. And for I promysed before to shewe the dyscent of the sayde Peppyn,to the ende that ye maye the better know thys story / and also to knowe the kynges of Fraunce from the kynges of Germany,which both discended of thys Peppyn: hereafter I shall more clerely set it out in brauches. But fyrste I woll expresse the kynges of Fraunce as they regned lynially/and ioyne to eyther of them the terme that he regned that there by it maye appere howe longe thys blode continued in ỹ house of Fraunce, or it were empeched by Hugh Capet,as after appeareth.

The yeres.

Peppyn.	xviii.
Charlys.	xlvii.
Lewys the fyrste.	xxvi.
Charlys the Baillyd.	xxxvii.
Lewys balbus.	ii.
Lewys and Charlys.	v.
Lewys the fourth.	viii.
Eudo.	ix.
Charlys the symple.	xvii.
Radulphus.	xii.
Lewys vnus.	iii.
Lotharius.	xxx.
Lewys the syxte.	iii.

Of the whyche kynges. ii. were not of that blode as Eudo and Radulphus/ but admytted of the baronye of Fraunce to rule the laude, tyll two of that progeny / that is to meane Charlys the symple, and Lewys the.v, were comen to theyr lawfull age. So that from the fyrst yere of Peppyn, whyche began his regne in the yere of grace.viii.hundred .l. to the fyrst yere of Hugh Capet that began hys regne in the yere of our lorde god. ix. hundred and lxxxix/ expyred or passed.ii. hundred .xxxix. yeres.


Pypyn the fader of Charlys the great.
Charlys the great emperour.
Lewys the fyrste, emperour
The kynges of Germany.
The kynges of Fraunce.
Lothayre emperour/ and the sonne of Lewys the fyrst.
Lewys kyng of Germany and broder vnto the sayd Lothayre.
Charlys the balfyd the sonne of Lewys the fyrst/ of hys.ii. wyfe emperour
Lewys emperour the sonne of Lothayre.
Lewys the sonne of Lewys/ whyche was broder vnto Charlys grosus emperour.
Lewys Balbus the son of Charlys the balfyd
Lothayre the seconde the son of Lothayre.
Lewys the son of Lewys/ which of some ys compted emperour.
Lewys y Charlys sonne of Lewys Balbus.
Charlys the.iii. and sonne of Lothayre.
Ernulphus the sonne of Lewys emperour.
Lewys the.iii. and son of the forsayd Charlys.
Lewys the sonne of Ernulph/ last emperour of Fraunce.
Charlys the symple the sonne of Lewys the sayth.
Lewys the. V. and the sonne of Charlys the symple.
Lothayre the sonne of the forsayde Lewys.
Lewys the sonne of Lothayre/ and the last kyng of that stock.

The.ccii.chapiter.

Hugh the sonne of Robert the tyraunt, descended of Hugh le graunde / beganne to take the rule, or to vsurpe the crowne of Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde .ix. hundred and.lxxxix/and the .viii.yere of Egelredus than kynge of Englande.

Thys as wytnesseth the Frenche Cronycle was erle of Parys, and marshall of Fraunce. And as sayth Antoninus, he maryed one of the doughters of Edwarde the elder. Thys also was named Capet, for so myche as in hys youth/he vsed in game to laye aside hys felowes hodes. In whose begynnyng/ Charlys that was the brother to Lothayre, and vncle vnto Lewys the. vi. laste kynge, herynge of the deth of hys neuewe Lewys wythout issue / as nerte heyre, wyth ayde of some lordes of Fraunce, and also of Lorayn, the whyche than he was lorde of, gadered an armye and entred Fraunce/and than came to the cytye of Laone. wythin whyche cytye / he wyth hys wyfe and people, by the treason of the bysshoppe of the same cytye, was taken and delyuered wyth hys wyfe and chylder into the handes of hys enemyes / the whyche sent them to Orleaunce there saufely to be kept.

Than thys Hugh was crowned in the cytye of Rayns / and welded the lande wyth more suerty. How be it the erle of Flaunders named Arnulphus or Arnolde before spoken of, wolde not be vnder hys obedyence. wherfore thys Hugh assembled hys knyghtes / and by hys strength toke from hym the coutre of Artoys, wyth many stronge holdes and castels / and lastly forced the sayd Arnolde to flee into Normandy, to aske ayde of Richarde the fyrste of that name, before spoken of in the story of the. vi. Lewys. By whose meanes after some wryters / wyllyam Longa Spata fader to ꝑ sayd duke Richarde was slayne. But that not wythstandynge, by frendshyp of the sayde duke Richarde, thys Arnolde was reconcyled vnto the kynge, and contynued after as hys subiecte.

In the cytye of Rayns was arch bysshoppe at thys daye a noble prelate named Arnolde, sonne of baste of Lothayre, and neuewe to Charlys than prysoner, as before is touched. The whyche for malyce that the kynge bare vnto hym, for cause of the fornamed Charlys / called a counsayle of the clergy of hys lande, and layde agayne hym suche obiections, that he by theyr assent was putte from that benefyce, and sente hym to Orlyaunce there also to be kepte in pryson. And set in hys place one Gylberte, or after the Frenche boke Gerbres, a connynge man in phylosophy/whiche had before tyme ben tutor or mayster to Robert sonne of the sayde Hugh. But after .iii. yeres/pope Johñ the.xvi. of that name sent downe hys maundement vnto Gysan archebysshop of Rens/charge kynge hym that he sholde remoue ꝑ sayde Gerberts, and restore the sayde Arnolde to hys proper see. whyche was done shortely after/ and ꝑ sayde Gerberts was after this preferred by one of the Othons emperour vnto ꝑ chyrche of Rauenne, and contynued there tyll the deth of the .xvii. Johñ. After whose deth he was electe pope of Rome/and was named the secõde Syluester, & lyued as pope.iiii.yeres

Than it foloweth in the story / whan thys Hugh had reygned full viii. yeres and more, he dyed in the yere of our lorde .ix. hundred .xciii. and was buryed at sayncte Denys/ leuynge after hym a sonne named Robert.

The.

THE. CCIII. CHAPITER.

ROBert the sonne of Hugh Capet, beganne his reygn, in the yere of our lorde .ix. hundred & .xcviii/ and the .xvii. yere of Egelredus then kynge of Englande.

This was cõynge in many sciences, and a man of good maner & vertue. He made dyuers hymnes, sequences, & respondes/ as O Juda et Hierusalem, O cõstantia martyrum, Al sit nobis sancti spũs gratia, or moze cõgruely, Sancti spiritus assit nobis gratia, wyth dyuers other.

In þ beginnyng of his reygn/ while Bowcharde erle of Melcon was at the kynges court, Galeyer or walter a knyghte and seruaunt of the sayde Bowcharde, to whom the sayd Bowcharde hadde delyuered his castell of Melcon to kepe in his absence/ for great gyftes the sayde walter hadde delyuered the sayde castell vnto Eudo erle of Carnotens. wherfore the kyng at the request of the sayd Bowcharde, sente streyghte commaundement vnto the sayd Eudo/ chargyng hym in all goodly wyse to restore the sayde castell vnto Bowcharde. The whyche commaundement he vtterly refused to obey. For þ whych þ kyng beyng so amoued/ sent for Rycharde the seconde of that name, then .iiii. duke of Normandy/ and wyth theyr both armyes besyeged the castell vpon euery parte, and at length wan yt and toke the sayd walter wythin the same/ whom the kinge for his vntrouthe commaunded soone after to be hanged vppon a gybet, and the castell to be restored vnto þ forenamed Bowcharde/ and after returned euery man to his owne.

In the tyme of the reygne of thys Robert/ dyed Henry then duke of Burgoyne. The whyche for lacke of yssue of his body, bequethed his dukedome vnto kynge Robert. But the Burgoynons wythstode that legacy/ and drewe to theym for an hed & captayne Lawdry erle of Neuers/ and wyth hym helde by strength or for a strength the cytye of Autetre. wherof herynge kyng Robert/ sente for the forsayde duke of Normandye, and so spedde theym towarde Burgoyne and besyeged the forsayd cytye. But at length þ cytye was yolden/ and Lawdry put at the kynges grace. And that done, the kyng with his hoste besyeged a nother stronge cytye called Aualon/ and not wythout great daunger wanne yt also at length/ and after receyued the countrey wyth dew obeysaunce, and ordered yt at hys own pleasure, and so returned into Fraunce.

Arnolde erle of Mens vsed great tyranny amonges the bysshoppes & mynysters of the chyrche. wherfore Leophricus bysshop of that see, thorough the ayde and counsayll of Reynalde bysshop of Parys/ put oute the sayde Arnolde, and delyuered the cytye vnto kynge Robert. But the brother of the sayde Arnolde with a certayne of his knyghtes, fled to the castell and yt helde wyth strength. wherfore the kynge layde syege to the sayd castel, and at length wan yt/ and toke the brother of Arnolde named Fromõde and sent him to Orleance there to be pysoned, where he dyed shortly after.

This Robert as saith the frenche boke buylded fyrst þ castell of Mont fort. He founded also dyuers monasteryes and tẽples/ and at Orleance the tẽple of saint Anyan/ at Stamps a chyrche of our lady/ & dyuers other in dyuers places of hys realme. And he endowed the chyrche of sayncte Denys wyth many great lyberties/ and hadde especyall deuocyon to sayncte ypolyte ouer all other sayntes.

It is radde of this kynge Robert, that

that vppon a season when he hadde longe whyle lyen at the syege of a castell nere vnto Orleaunce, and sawe yt was defuse to wynne be strength/ he vpon ỳ daye of saynt Inyan yode vnto Orleaunce, & there in the quere bare a cope, and dyd helpe to synge the dyuyne seruyce. And after when he was in his deuocyõs in the masse whyle/ when the preste was at the cõsecracion and sayd thryse Agnꝰ dei, the walles of the castell fyll wythout stroke of gunne or other engyne, and hys enemyes submytted them to hys grace. Many vertues myght I shewe more of this vertuous prince/ ỳ which I passe ouer for length of the tyme/ and conclude thus, that when he had reygned after moste accorde of wryters, and ruled hys lande nobly .xxx. yeres, he dyed, and was buryed in the house of saynte Denys/ leuynge after him of his fyrst wife Constaũce a sonne named Henry, and one other named Robert/ and of hys seconde wyfe .ii. sonnes named Symonde and Almaryche. But yt shulde seme by the sequele of the next storye, that Constaunce shuld be laste wyfe, & the other the fyrste/ and deuorced from hym for some cause, so that her chyldern shulde not be legyttymat/ all be yt the authoure of this maketh no mencyon.

Anglia.

THE .CCIIII. CHAPITER.

EDmunde Ironsyde the sonne of Egelredus, and also Canutus ỳ sonne of Swanus kyng of Denmarke/ beganne to rule the Englyshemen, in the yere of our lorde a thousande .xvi./ and the .xii. yere of Robert then kynge of Fraunce. For ỳ Londoners wyth assystẽce of some of ỳ lordes of England fauoured Edmũde. But the more party of the lordes fauoured Canutꝰ/ & specyly the spiritualtye, ỳ before tyme had swerne feauty to hys father. And he then beynge at Southamptõ/ swore to them to be vnto them a good & trewe iustice, and to entreate the people soberly and ryghte wysely. Then Edmunde beynge of the archbyshop of yorke crowned at Lõdon, and the solemnyte fynyshed and ended/ he sped hym into westsaxon, and subdued ỳ countrey. In whych tyme Canutus, whych in ỳ englyshe storye is called Knough/ drewe wyth hys people to Lõdon, and wold there haue entred. But that was hym forboden of the Londoners. For the whiche he layde hys ordynaunce aboute the cytye, entendynge to haue entred perforce. But it was not long or he was fayne to breke his syege & to depart thens.

when Canutus was put of from London/ he drewe westwarde, and mette in prouesse wyth Edmunde in Dorsetshyre besyde Gyllyngham/ where betwene theym was foughten a stronge and cruell batayll. But in the ende Canutus was ouercomen & compelled to forsake the felde. After thys they mette agayne in worcester shyre/ where they fought a more strõger batayll. For this was so strongly bydden by, ỳ men coude not iudge whych parte had the better, or which the worse. But as wytnessyth Polycronica eyther of theym departed frõ other, eyther for werynesse of fyghte or for lak of the daye.

But vppon the morne folowynge both hostes ioyned agayne, & fought egerly. Contynuynge whyche fyght Edricus espyenge Edmunde to be at auauntage of wynnynge of the feld, sodaynly pyght a dede mannys hed

ỳ vpon

vppon a spere hed, and cryed to the hoste of Englysshmen, flie flie ye Englyshemen & saue your selfe/loo here is the hedde of Edmūde your kyng. But Edmunde therof beynge warned/ spredde hym towarde that parte of the feilde and behaued hym so comfortably amonges hys men, that by hys knyghtely courage hys people recouered that they before had loste/ and cōtynued the batayll tyll nyght, in suche wyse that he hadde rather the better then the worse/ and caused Canutus to refuse that countrey, and to retourne towarde London agayne. Then Edmunde beyng advertysed that Canutus was returned towarde London/ he folowed hym and passed the ryuer of Thamys, and delyuered the cytye from daunger of the Danys / and afterwarde encountred the Danys at a place called Brentford, where with them he had a cruell fyght/and scomfyted theym at length.

In thys passe tyme Emma ỳ wyfe of Egelredus, ferynge the fortune of the warre/ sent her two sonnes Alphrede and Edwarde, vnto her brother Richarde the seconde of that name and fourth duke of Normandy.

But Edricus then, whyche as before is sayd, was euer subtyle of wyt, consyderynge the good fortune of Edmunde and hys knyghtely courage/thought that at length he shuld ouercome the Danys. wherfore to saue hys lande, and also to bringe aboute hys malycyouse treason / he sought the wayes and meanes howe he myght stande in hys grace and fauour. And at length obteyned his entente / and swore to hym to be hys trewe subiecte.

when kynge Edmunde had a season soiorned at Lōdon/ he then made towarde the Danys that then were in Kent, and met wyth thē at a place called Okesforde or Otford, & there scomfyted them, and chasyd Canuty to the yle of Shepey. And there Canutus toke shyppyng/ & sayled about the land, & entred lastely in ỳ coūtrey of Mercia & spoyled a parte therof.

When the two hostes met soone after at a place called Assedown, where after longe fyghte Edricus wyth his retynew fledde to the comforte of the Danys. By meane wherof kyng Edmunde was put to the worse / for many noble men were slayne vppon his party. Amonges the whyche the byshop of Lyncoln & the abbot of Rampsey were two / that thyther were come to treate a peace betwene bothe prynces. But whē this was layde to ỳ charge of Edricy/ he by his vntrew meanes so excused hym, that no man myght charge hym with any defaut.

Thus contynuynge thys mortall warre betwyxte these two marcyall prynces, to the grete desolacyō & mortalyte of the people/one of the knyghtes of the partye of Edmunde gatte hym to an hyghe place, where he myght be somwhat harde of ỳ hoste/ and spake in thys wyse: Daily we dye, and no man hath the victorye. For Edmunde may not be ouercome for his great strength/and Canutus may not be ouercome for fauoure of Fortune. what shall then be ỳ fruyte of thys cōtynuall stryfe? None other but when the knyghtes ben all slayn on eyther partyes / then the dukes compelled by nede shall accorde, or elles they shall fyght alone wythout knyghtes. Then syn this shall be the ende / why do they not one of these two? If they accorde/ why is not this kyngedome suffycyent for twayne, ỳ sontyme suffysed for .iii. If theyr couetyse of lordshyppes be so great, ỳ eyther hath indygnacyon to take and haue parte wyth other, or elles that one to be vnder that other/ then lette

lette them fyghte alone, that woll be the lordes alone left. If all me̅ fyght, all men be slayne/ by meane wherof no men shall be left to be vnder theyr lordshyp or ladyng of dukes, nor yet to defende the kynge agayne strouge enymyes or nacyons.

These wordes thus spoken / were tyght wele alowed of both hostes. For as affermeth myne authour/ at this time a trewce was made betwen both pryuces for a certayne tyme. After whych peace ended/ were yt by occasyon of these wordes or otherwise, the sayde two dukes Edmunde and Canutus agreed to trye theyr quarelles betwene them two onely. And for thys was assygned by theyr both agrementes, a ystell yle called then Olney nere vnto Glouceter, or after some wryters named Olenege, bycleped wyth the water of Seuerne. In whyche place at the daye appoynted, the two chäppons met wythoute company or assistence wythin ỹ sayd yle/ the hostes of bothe partyes standynge wythoute the yle, and there abydynge the fortune of thys batayll. There eyther proued other fyrste wyth sharpe speres, and after wyth kene and cuttynge swordes. what shall I of thys make lenger proces/ when eyther hadde other well proued and assayed, by receyuynge of harde and sore strokes / by the fyrste mocyon of Canutus, as moste wryters testyfyen, they lastely accorded and kyssed to gyther as louers, to the great comforte of bothe hostes. And shortely after by the aduyce of bothe theyr counsaylles, condescended vppon partycyon of the lande/ whyche immedyately was done to bothe theyr agrementes, and loued after as two bretherne durynge theyr naturall lyues. But the serpent Ire of enuy and falle conspyracye, which euer burnyd in the harte of Edricus was kyndeled so sore, that of pure force yt muste breke out vpon a lyghte flambe / so what he myghte not accomplyshe by his owne persone, he fulfylled by his sonne, as testyfyen dyuerse authours. For as affermeth Guydo/ this sonne of Edricus away tynge his tyme, espyed when ỹ kyng was at the wydd̃raught to purge nature/ and wyth a spere strake hym in to the foundement and so into the bodye, wherof kynge Edmunde dyed shortly after at Oxen. The king thus beynge slayne/ anon Edricus thynkynge therby to be greatly exalted, spedde hym in all haste vnto Canutus, and saluted hym as kynge/ and shewed hym of thys treason onely for hys loue done. when Canutus hadde well vnderstandyng of ỹ confessyon of Edricus, he lyke a discrete and ryghtous pryuce sayd vnto hym in thys wyse. For thou haste Edricus for the loue thou berest vnto me, slayne thyne naturall lorde, whyche I moste loued / I shall exalte thyne hed aboue al the lordes of England. And forthwyth commaunded hym to be taken, and hys hedde to be stryken of, and pyght on a spere hedde, and after sette vppon the hygest gate of London. But Marianus the Scot telleth, that Edmunde dyed at London by naturall sekenesse, about the feste of sayne Andrewe. And the englyshe cronycle affermeth the forenamed treason / but by a nother maner of doynge. But howe so euer this noble pryuce dyed, trouth yt is after agrement of moste wryters, ỹ he ended hys lyfe, when he hadde reygned one yere & more, as myche as from the moneth of June vnto the ende of Nouember/ and was buryed at Glastenbury by hys graundfather Edgare. Policronica sheweth in the. xviii. chappter of hys. vi. boke, that Canutus after the deth

of Edmunde gaue vnto Edricus the lordeshyppe of Mercia/ and by hys counsayll eryled the brother of Edmunde called the kynge of chorles/ and thorough his counsayle executed many cruell dedes. Of this Edmünde remayned two sonnes, that is to wyt Edmunde and Edwarde.

THE. CCV. CHAPITER.

CAnutus or Knougth after the Englysshe cronycle, sonne of Swanus as before is touched, and yonger brother as appereth by ỹ story folowynge/ began his dompynon alone ouer Englande, in the yere of our lorde a theusande & xix/ and the xvi. yere of Robert then kyng of Fraũce. The whyche anon after the deth of Edmunde assembled a counsayll at London/ where among other thynges in that counsayll debated, a questyon was put, whether in the compocicyon made betwene Edmunde and Canutus, any speciall remembraũce was made for the chyldren or brethern of Edmunde, for any partycyon of any parte of the lande.

Whereunto yt was answered of the lordes naye. Affermyng farthermore wyth othe for the kynges pleasure, that they to the vttermoste of theyr powers wolde put of that blood of Edmund: in all that they myght By reason of whyche answere & promyse/ they thought many of them to haue standen in the great grace and fauoure of the kynge / but yt turned all otherwyse.

For many of them, or the more parte, such as Canutus apperceyued & knewe, that they beforetyme were sworne to Edmunde and his heyres, & also were natyue Englisshe men/ he mystrusted & disdained euer after. In so myche that some he eryled, & some were slayn, and some by goddes punysshement dyed sodaynly.

But amonge all Edricus wyth his sugred wordes contynued in the kynges fauoure as sayth Marianus before mynded. By whose counsayll & other/ he shortely after outlawed the foresayde brother of Edmunde surnamed kynge Charlis, as before is touched. But he afterwarde was reconcyled to the kynges fauour, and lastely slayne of his owne seruaũtes.

Canutus also by the sayde counsayll, sent the .ii. sonnes of Edmünde, named as before is sayde Edmunde & Edwarde, vnto his brother Swanus then kynge of Denmarke, to be slayne after the oppynyon of some wryters. But he abhorrynge that dede/ sente theym to Salomon then kynge of Hungarye as wytnessyth Guydo and other. where in processe of tyme Edmunde dyed/ and his brother Edwarde in tracte of tyme maryed Agatha the doughter of the .iiii. Henry then emperour of Almayne. Of the whyche Edwarde and Agatha procedyd Margarete that after was quene of Scotlande/ and Crystyane that was a menchon, and a sonne named Edgar and surnamed Ethelynge.

Thys Edwarde of the cronycles of England is named Edwarde the outlawe/ for so myche as he neuer returned into Englande as sayth the sayde englysshe cronycle, after hys fyrste exyle.

Then to returne vnto Canus/ the whyche after some thynges orderyd in his lande, deuyded his sayd lande in foure partes. That is to meane the fyrst principyall which at those dayes was westsaxon, he helde vnder hys owne gydyng. Estlenglande, whych cõteyned Norff. & Suff. he betoke to the rule of ỹ erle, Turkyll a Dane/ of whome somwhat is in the .iii. chappter of ỹ story of Egelred. Mercia he be-

he betoke to the subtell erle Edricus. And the.iiii. Northumberlande, vnto a Dane named Hircius. But lyke as the man of Inde at no tyme chaūged his colour/so this Edricus chaūged neuer his fals maners. But not wythstandynge the great benefytes that he dayly receyued of his p̄yncers/there as he to other hadde ben false and dysceyuable in dayes past, euen so nowe he demeaned hym a-gayne Canutus.

wherfore he beynge accused & p̄oued wyth defaute/was commaūded of the kyng to haue iudgement. The whyche was done immediatly/& his hedde for dyuerse causes smyten of/ and yt wyth the bodye for spyte caste into a fowle and fylthy place. But Ranulf sayth that he was slayne by the kynges agrement wythin his paleys at London/and his body wyth the hed th̄owne after into the towne dyche. Thus wyth shame he ended, that in falshode & dyssymulacyō had contynued myche of his lyfe.

Aboute the.ix. yere of his reygne, Canut⁹ called a parliament at Oxenford/where amonges other thynges yt was enacted, that Englyshmen & Danys shuld holde the lawes of Edgar lately kynge.

In this parlyme dyed Swanus brother to Canutus kynge of Denmarke wythout issue/wherfore that lande fyll to Canutus. For the which cause he wyth a stronge army sayled thyther to take the possessyon, and to set the countrey in an order/or after some writers to apeas & wythstande the wandelys, ꝑ then had perced that lande and done therin myche harme. where Goodwyn the erle, whose doughter Edwarde the confessour after maryed/wyth a certayne nomber of Englyshmen fyll vpon ꝑ wandalys by nyght, & dystressed theym in suche wyse, that Canutus had of them his pleasure. For this dede the kyng had erle Goodwyn euer after in good fauoure, and loued Englyshmen more specyally. And when he was returned into Englande/he shortely after or before, maryed Emma the wyfe lately of Egelredus. Of the whych he receyued in processe of tyme a son & named hym Hardicunitus, or after some Hardyknytus/& after the Englyshe boke Hardyknough.

And aboute this tyme fyll voyde ꝑ see of Lyndesfer or Durham, to the whyche by dyuyne inspyracyon and knowlege receyued by a voyce from the tumbe of saynt Cuthbert/blessed Edmūde after thre yere of vacacyon was electe to that see. But ye shal vnderstande that thys was not saynte Edmunde of Ponteney. For he was archbyshoppe of Caunterbury in the dayes of Henry the thyrde.

THE.CXCVI.CHAPITER.

CAnutus about the.viii. yere of his reygne/by exhortacyon of Egelnothus then archbishop of Cāterbury, translated the body of saynt Elphegus late archbyshoppe of the sayd see, martyred by the Danys as before is shewed in the seconde chapiter of the storye of Egelredus/and shryned hym in hys owne chyrche of Caunterbury forsayde.

In the tyme also of thys Canutus/aboute the.xvi. yere of hys reygne, the Scottes rebelled agayne hym. wherfore he with a great army entred Scotlande/& at length ouercame the kynge of that lande named then Malcolyne, and brought them agayne to hys subiectyon, as is recorded in the bokes of Marianus the Scot. By reason of whych victory Canutus was then kynge of.iiii. kyngdoms/of England of Scotlād of Denmarke, and Norwaye. Then

as wytnessyth dyuerse authours after he had betaken this lande of Englande to the gydynge of Leofricus Egelnothus, and other/ he then returned into Denmarke. And from thēs he yode to Rome in the. xv. yere of his reygn, & made there great offe rynges to sayncte Peter and Poule/ & redemed the scole of Sarons fre of all former trybute graunted, as before in the storyes of Iue and Offa and other kynges of Sarons is som deale more touched. whyche redemp cyon of tribute as sayth Guydo, was called Rome Scot. But it shall seme m that sayenge some douteth/ for so myche as at thys daye in dyuers pla ces of Englād, as in Northampton shyre and other, the peter pens are yet gaderyd. Canutus also after he had in Rome accomplyshed his pur pose/ he in hys returne towarde En glande executed wonderfull dedes of almes, in releuynge of the poore and other goostly workes/ & payde great good for raunsom of crysten prysoners/ amonges other of his dedes, It is wytnessyd that he shulde agree with the pope that was called Benet the. viii. of that name, & pay to hym certayne summes of money, that his archbyshoppes after ỳ daye myghte haue the pall wythoute payenge of money therfore.

And whē he was comen in the cityе of Papia in Italy, in hys way home ward, he there brought the arme of sayncte Augustyne the doctour for a hundred pounde of syluer and a ta lent of golde. And here is to be noted that there be thre maners of talētes. The fyrst and grettest is of ỳ weyght of. vi. score pounde weyghte/ the se conde of the weyght of. lxxii pounde/ and the thyrde and leest of. l. pounde weyght. Then yf we reken this ta lent with the leest/ in a poūde of gold after troye weyght, is. xii. vnces, and in. l. pounde is. vi. hūdred vnces, and euery vnce of fyne golde is worth xl. s. By whyche reason this talent shulde be in value to the summe of xii. hundred pounde. This precyous relyque ỳ kyng gaue vnto his trusty frende Leofricus/ ỳ whych he myche loued and trusted/ and remayned at Couentre many yeres after.

Whyle Canutus was occupyed in thys iourney/ cōplaynt was brought vnto hym of some mysse demeanurs and rule, that were occupyed and exercysed in his absence wythin this realme. wherfore he wrote home let ters to the lordes/ chargynge theym straytely, that all such defautes were redressed agayne hys cōmyng home.

Thys kynge as wythnesseth Guy do was of great magnyfycence/ and vsed suche iustyce and temperaunce, that in his dayes in the weste partes of the worlde, was no prynce of re nowme as was Canutus. And ouer that he was gretly beloued & dradde of hys subiectes.

In the tyme of this Canutus, as testyfyeth Guillelmus de pontifict bus/ a munke of Glastēbury named Bryghtwolde, whyche was after byf shop of wylton, beynge in hys con templacyon and prayer, bethoughte hym on the lynage of Englyshe kyn ges. And in that thought fyll into a slumber/ in whyche tyme of his slepe he sawe sayncte Peter the apostle stan dynge by hym, and holdynge in hys hande Edwarde the sonne of Egelre dus which then was in Normandy/ the whyche to his thynkynge, he saw sayncte Peter saluer ỳ sayde Edward as kynge of Englande. And shewed to hym farther how holy this Ed warde shulde be in hys lyuynge, and how he shuld reygne as kynge. xxiii. yeres. Then thys monke prayned sayncte Peter of the offsprynge of thys Edwarde, and who shulde be kynge

after

after hym. To the whyche queſtyon was anſwered by Peter, the kyngedome of Engliſhemen is the kyngedome of god / wherfore the kynges therof ſhall ſtande at goddes purueyaunce. And alſo a nother doctour called Henry of Huntyngdon / ſhewyd that an holy man warned Engliſhemen, ꝑ a lorde whyche they thought nothynge vppon, ſhulde come out of Fraunce & bryngе them ryght lowe.

In the tyme alſo of thys Canutꝰ by agrement of many wryters fyll one thynge worthy mynde and memoryp. In a towne of Saxony named Calbis, in ꝑ dyoceſys of Magburgh and paryſſhe of ſaynt Wagu / cxiii. men and .xv. women vppon the euen of the Natyuyte of our lorde began a daunce about the chyrche yarde of ſaynt Wagu afore ſayd / the perſon or other prieſtes beyng than at maſſe wythin ꝑ ſame chyrche. which beyng troubled wyth the noyſe of the mynſtrellys, & alſo the dynne of the ſayde men and women / ſent vnto them in monyſſhynge them to ſeace of that doynge. But all was in vayne / for they wolde not ſeace of theyr dyſporte for any commaũdement ꝑ to thē was gyuen. wherwyth the prieſte beynge dyſcontented, that they none other wyſe reuerenced ꝑ ſacrament, noryed that ſolempne ſeaſon / beſought god and ſaynte Wagu that they ſhulde contynue theyr daunce by the ſpace of an hole yere. The whyche prayer was harde / in ſuche wyſe that they contynued the ſame longe & daunce tyll that daye twelue monethes, and neuer eate nor dranke nor reſted thē in all ꝑ ſeaſon. And moreouer dewe nor rayne fyll vppon them in all that yere / nor garment nor no thyng that was about them was impayred ſhoo nor other. At the yeres ende / Norobertus archbyſſhop of that dyoceſys came vnto ꝑ ſayde place and lowſed them of that bonde whych the prieſte had bounde them in / and before the awlter of the chyrche them reconſyled. Of the whyche a prieſtes doughter and two other dyed forth wyth / and the remenaunt yode to reſte and ſlepte by the ſpace of .iii. dayes and iii. nyghtes folowynge. where after ſome of them dyed / and ſuche as lyued fell lame of theyr lymmes. And one of the ſame .cxiii. men beyng named Ubertus or Hupertus, wrote thys wonder wyth hys owne hande for a more reporde of the trowth.

Then let vs retorne to Canutus / of whom it is redde that after hys cõmyng from Rome, he beganne ſomdele to preſume in pryde, & ſet more by hym ſelfe than good wyſdome wolde. In tyme of whyche exaltacyõ of hys mynde / he went vnto the Tamys ſyde, and beheilde howe the water ſwelled or flowed. And ſo ſtandynge nere the water / the water touched hys fete. Than he charged the water that he ſhuld flowe no hygher and that in no wyſe he ſhulde towche hys lordes clothes. But the water kepte his courſe and wette at length the kynges thyes. wherewyth ꝑ kyng abaſſhed ſterte backe and ſayde, all erthly kynges may know that theyr powers be vayne / and that none is worthy to haue the name of a kynge but he that hath all thynges ſubiecte to hys heſtes, as here is ſhewed by worchynge of hys treature by thys water. And for thys as wytneſſeth Polycronycon and other / he offered hys crowne to ꝑ rode of wynchester, and neuer bare it vpon his hed after.

It is alſo wytneſſed of the ſayde authour / that Canutus maryed hys doughter hadde by hys laſte wyfe, vnto Henry ſonne of Conradus the emperour, the ſeconde of that name / as alſo it is teſtyfyed of the authour of Cronica cronicarum.

ꝑ iiii. And he

And he repayred many monasteryes / and specyally suche as before tyme were hurte or throwne downe in the tyme of hys fathers persecucyon. And began and ended the monastery of sayne Edmundes Bury / & endowed it wyth ryche possessyons as before is towched. And dyed fynally at Shaftesbury, and was buryed at wynchester, whan he hadde reygned. xix. peres / leuyng after hym two sonnes of hys wyues / the eldest was named Harolde and the ponger Hardyknyptus / the whyche lyuyng hys fader was made kynge of Denmarke.

Francia.

THE. CCVIII. CHAPITER.



Enry the sonne of Robert / begā hys dompnyon ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lord. M. xxix / and the. v. yere of Canutus than kynge of Englande. To the whyche Henry / Cōstantyne the moder was so vnkynde, that she by her meanes wolde haue preferred her ponger sonne Roberte duke of Burgoyne, to the rule of the lande before thys Henry / so that by her meanes, bothe cytyes and castels were wyth holden from hym, and was by her & suche other as toke her parte so ouer lad, that he was forced to resorte to Robert than duke of Normandy, for to aske helpe of hym to wythstande hys enemyes.

ye shall vnderstande that this Robert was the. vi. duke of Normandy, and sonne of Richarde the seconde / and also father vnto wyllyā bastard that conquered Englande.

Thys Roberte was lyberall and noble of condycyon / but defamed of ꝑ deth of hys elder brother Rychard the thyrde. For the whyche murder as wytnessyth dyuers authours / the vii. yere of hys dowchery he went to Jherusalem, and dyd in that pylgrymage many honourable and liberall actes / the whyche in good order ben remembred in the xix. chappter of the vi. boke of Polycronicon.

This Robert receyued kyng Henry wyth all honour, and gaue vnto hym greate and ryche gyftes, & sent for hys frendes and knyghtes / so ꝑ the kynge had by hys ayde a greate & myghty hoste. And retorned agayn into Fraunce / and in short whyle after recouered from hys sayde moder bothe cytyes, townes, and castelles, that she and her fautours from hym wythheldē. And fynally agreed so wyth her / that he and she contynued frendes theyr lyfe tymes endurynge. After whyche accorde / about the. v. yere of hys reygne he made warre vppon Eudo erle of Champayne, & vppon Baldewine erle of Flaūders / and in processe of tyme wan frō them certayne cytyes and castelles, the whyche Constance his moder hadde before tymes gyuen to them in tyme of dyscencyon.

In thys warre was slayne Eudo erle of Champayne. wherfore hys. ii. sonnes Stephen & Thybaud mayntayned the warre agayne the kynge / but to theyr bothe harmes in ꝑ ende. For Stephen loste therby the cytyes of Chartres and towers, and Thybaude ꝑ cytyes of Troyes & Maulx wyth other.

whan Henry hadde ended thys warre & set hys lande in some quyetnesse / he thā buylded a monastery of sayne Martyne called Des Chāps besyde Parys, and set therin secular prestes.

In thys tyme Robert duke of Nor-

of Normandy moued in conscyence to vysyte the holy sepulcure of oure lorde, called before hym hys lordes of hys lande/wylynge and cōmaundynge them to owe theyr trewe allegaunce vnto hys ponger sonne wyllyam, and to take hym for theyr lord and duke yf he retorne not agayne. And to thys/he caused to swere Robert than archbyshop of Roan, with the other of hys lordes/and after departed vppon the sayd iourney, and dyed in the cytye of Bethenia as he was cōmynge homewarde. wherof ỳ lordes of Normandy beynge assertayned, accepted the forsayde wyllyam to theyr lorde and souerayne.

Of thys wyllyams procreacyon/yt is wytnessed of Vincent hyllorpall and other, that his father passynge by the cytye or towne of Faloys in Normandy, he sawe a company of maydens daunsynge by the strete. Amonges the whych was one of passynge beautye called Arlet, and doughter to a skynner. To ỳ which duke Robert caste vnlefull loue/ in suche wyse ỳ he caused her to be broughte to his bed the nyght folowyng, and helde her to his concubyne a certayn of tyme after/& begat on her this wyllyam. whē his moder was wyth hym cōceyued/ she dremed that her bowelys were spradd ouer all Normandye and Englande. And when he was borne of his moders wombe/ he fyll to the grounde, and closed his handes wyth powder of the floze or pauement. Therfore the mydwyfe made an exclamacyon, and sayd this chyld shall be a kynge.

Then yt folowyth/when thys wyllyam was thus admitted duke, some of his lordes by the meane of ỳ kyng of Fraūce, began to withdraw them from hym. In so myche ỳ erle Gylbert to whome duke Robert had betaken hys ponge sonne to gyde was slayne, and other that were especyall frendes to the chylde. There was fyghtyng and manslaughter and the countrey sowle faren with, by reason of the oppressyons that were amonges them selfe/ wherof Guy a Burgoyn was one of the cheke causers. For he with his adherentes sayde alwayes, that they wolde haue no bastarde to be ruler of them.

This Guy as saith the freche boke was nere kynneman vnto ỳ ponge duke, descendyd of the doughter of the seconde Rychard/and entended to haue ben duke hym selfe. For the which he enclosed ỳ kyng of Fraūce agayn hym in all that he myght/but at lengthy duke wyllyam toke hym and put hym to deth.

Thus the Frenche kynge forgetynge ỳ kyndnesse shewyd to hym by duke Robert hys father, toke partye agayne hym to the vttermoste/ and ordeyned hym .ii. hostes. wherof one he delyuered to his brother Almaryk/and warned hym to entre ỳ countrey of Caus/ and he hym selfe ladde that other, and entred with it the countrey of Eurour.

But wyllyam not feryng the kynges great power/ beynge growen wele towarde mannes stature, lyke a luste ponge knyght made towarde the kynges brother/ & gaue to hym batayll & hym ouercame, and chased the Frenchemen to theyr great dyslony. wherof herynge the Frenche kyng wyth his people spedde hym toward wyllyam to reuenge the shame done to his men. But in cōclusyon he wan there no honoure. Then peace was made betwene the kyng and ỳ duke/ and the Frenche prysoners were delyuered.

But this peace endurd not long/ for the Frēche kyng callynge to remembraūce the losse of hys men at Mortemere or debe see, wyth other dysauauntages

uauntages by hym sustayned of the sayde duke wyllyam / called to hys ayde Geoffrey erle of Jungiers. And whan hys hoste was assembled/they entred ꝑ prouynce of Normãdy, & cõtynued theyr iourney tyll they came to an arme of the see, where the hoste shulde passe ouer.

Of thys new warre duke wyllyã beynge warned / in all haste assembled hys Normans and sped hym ꝑ nerr waye to mete the Frenchemen. In thys meane whyle the Frenche kynge had passed the water wyth certayne of hys hoste, trustyng that the remenaũt shulde haue folowed. But soone after the water flowed so faste that hys people myghte not passe. And in thys whyle came the duke and set vpon the kynges hoste, and bet theym downe cruelly / so that at length the kynge was compelled to flee, and loste a greate nomber of his knyghtes, to consyder them ꝑ were slayne wyth the other that were taken prysoners.

whan kynge Henry had well dygested in hys mynde, the wrongfull trouble that he by enuyous persons hadde put the duke vnto, and remẽbred the yll expedycyon that he had in that warre/he recõsyled hym selfe, and made meanes that the duke and he myghte be agreed and accorded. The whyche by dyscrete solycytours was shortely after brought to good effecte/so that they contynued as frẽdes durynge theyr lyues after.

Than Henry abstayned hym from all warre/& vsed the reste of hys lyfe in peas and quyetnesse. Thys Henry had two wyues / and of the laste whyche was doughter to the kynge of Russy, he had .iii. sonnes/that is to say Philyp, ꝑ whych he made kyng of Fraunce by hys lyfe, Robert that was after duke of Burgoyne, and Hughe that was after named Hugh le graunde, and was fader to Raufe erle of Vermendoyse.

And in thys kynges dayes/Burgoyne that had ben vnder ꝑ Frenche kynges obeysaunce ouer a hundred and .xxx. yeres, refused the Frenche kynge, apartꝫ of them, & torned vnto Conradus the seconde of that name than emperour. So that that parte whyche stretched to Champayne belonged to Fraunce / and that other parte whyche stretched toward Basayns belonged to the Almayns.

And that yere that the kynge had admytted hys sonne Philyp to the gydynge of the realme/he dyed, and was buryed at saynt Denys/leuyng after hym the issue forenamed, whan he hadde reygned after moste wryters .xxxi. yeres.

Anno.

THE.CCVIII. CHAPITER.



Harold the sonne of Canutus, & of Elgina ꝑ erlys doughter of Hampton/begã his reygne ouer Englande, in ꝑ yere of our lordes incarnacyon .M.xxxv / and the .x. yere of Henry thã kyng of Fraũce. Thys for his delycatenesse & swyftenesse, was surnamed Harefote. In whose begynnynge stryfe was amonge the lordes, for so myche as of hys byrthe shulde be doughte, whyther he were the kynges son or not/ and specyally erle Godwyne, that dyd the vttermoste of hys power to sette hym by, and put Hardyknutus his brother to that honour. But Leofrycus that Canutus so mych loued and trusted, wyth the ayde of the Danes/ wythstode so myghtely Godwyne and hys sonnes, that they fayled of

led of they⁊ purpose.

Anone as thys Harold was crowned kynge/he banyllhed hys stepmoder Emma, and toke from her suche goodes and iewelles as she had. The whych Emma sayled than into Flaūders, and there of Bawdewyne the erle was reuerently receyued, & there abode durynge the lyfe of thys Haroldе. The whyche contynued hys lyfe to lytell fruyte o⁊ p⁊ofyte of the land, no⁊ yet of the subiectes/ so that of hym, other fo⁊ ꝑ vyce that clerkes lyste nat to put in memo⁊y, other fo⁊ the rudenesse, whyche is wo⁊thy no memo⁊y, nothynge of hym is put in remembr⁊aunce / but that he dyed at London, o⁊ after some at Oxenfo⁊d, & was buryed at westmynster, when he had reygned as moste wryters agreen. iii. yeres and odde monethes/ leuynge after hym none heyre. wherfo⁊e hys brother kyng of Denmarke was next kynge after hym.

THE. CCIX. CHAPITER.

HArdikynutus the sonne of Canutus & of Emma/was made kyng of England, in the yere of our lo⁊des incarnacyon. M. xii/ and the xii. yere of Henry than kyng of Frauce. Thys of some wryters is named Hardykynytus, and Hardyknough/ and was anone after the deth of hys brother sent fo⁊ into Denmarke, and receyued ioyously, and crowned at Londō of Etheinotus than archbyshop of Caunterbury. But this was of suche cruelty, that he sent Alfrycus archbysshoppe of yo⁊ke and erle Goodwyne vnto westmynster /commaundynge them fo⁊ the iniury by hys brother Haroldе before done vnto his moder Emma, that they shuld dr⁊awe the co⁊ps out of ꝑ place where it was buryed, and to be throwen into the ryuer of Thamys/ which was done accordynge to hys wyll. whych co⁊ps after as testifyeth Supdo and other, was founden by a fyssher/ and buryed vnreuerently within the chyr chepарde of sayut Clement standyng wythout the Temple barre of London. And as Polycronycon sayth/ fo⁊ a mo⁊e cruelty he caused fyrst the hed of hys sayd brother to be smyten from the body, and than throwen into the sayd ryuer. Lette the herers to thys gyue credence as them lyke/ fo⁊ to me it semeth though the kyng had ben of suche cruelty, that the bysshop fo⁊enamed wolde not haue ben the executour of so fowle a dede.

Thys kyng also leuyed the fo⁊enamed trybute named Dane geit, & spent it to the lytell comfo⁊te of the realme/ but gaue vnto shypmen and maryners, and other lewde persons, greate and vnsyttynge fees and wages/ and was of suche p⁊odegalyte, that his bourdes and tabelles of his courte were spr⁊ed. iiii. tymes in the daye/ and the people serued of great excesse both of mete & also of dr⁊ynke.

wyth leuyeng of the fo⁊esayd trybute the comons greatly grudged/ so that in wo⁊cetet two of hys seruauntes, whyche were assygned to gader that money were there slayne. Fo⁊ the whyche dede the kynge was so so⁊e dyspleased, ꝑ he br⁊ent a great parte of that towne.

Thys Hardykynutus after some authours, maryed hys syster named Gunylda vnto the thyrde Henry emperour. The whych was of passyng beaute / and was the doughter also of Emma laste wyfe of Canutus. But in p⁊ocesse of tyme thys Gunylda was falsely accused of spowiebr⁊ech/ fo⁊ tryall wherof she was put to her champyon. wherfo⁊e she beynge in greate agony/ lastely trustyng to god, and knowyng her selfe without gylte of that offence, putte a

chylde

chyld that she wyth her had brought out of Englande in stede of the champyon. The whyche fought wyth a man of geauntes stature/ and fynally hym slew, and broughte vnto confusyon.

When Gunylda by dyuyne power hadde thus clered her selfe/ she vtterly refused the emperours company, and ended her lyfe in the seruyce of hym the onely god, that so hadde defended her ryght.

But yt shulde appere by Polycronycon, and also by Antoninus/ that thys mayden was maryed to ỳ sayde Henry by the lyfe of her father Canutus, and also durynge the lyfe of the sayde Henryes father named Contadus the second, as before is touched in the storye of the sayde Canutus/ and not by thys Hardyknutus her brother.

It is rad that the kynge betoke all the rule of the lande vnto hys moder and erle Goodwyn/ the whyche had maryed as wytnesseth the englyshe cronycle, the doughter of Canutus gotten vppon hys fyrste wyfe Elgina. By whome many thynges were myssse orderyd / and specyally by the subtylyte of this erle Goodwyn.

This erle had many sonnes, as wytnesseth Polycronycon in the.xrb.chapyter of hys. bi.boke. By his fyrste wyfe that was kynge Canutus syster, & not hys doughter as is aboue sayde/ he hadde one sonne. The whyche by vndyscrete stryvynge of an horse, was throwen into the Thamys and drowned. And the mother was lastely smytte wyth lyghtenyng and so dyed. Of whome yt is there remembred, that she was so vngracyous and of so vyle condycyon/ that she set ponge wome to horedome, for to gader by that vnlefull meane ryches. After the whyche wyfe so dyed, he maryed the seconde/ of whome he receyued. vi. sonnes. That is to wyt Swanus, Harolde, Tostius, wylnotus, Girthe or Gurthe, and Leofricus/ and a doughter named Goditha, whych after was maryed to Edwarde the confessour.

The two sonnes of Egelredus Alphredus and Edwarde, whych as ye before haue hard were sent into Normãdy by Emma they mother/ came in ỳ tyme of the reygne of thys kyng into Englande, for to vysyte and se they mother/ & brought wyth them a great nomber of Normans. Then thys Goodwyne ymagyned in hys mynde howe he myght preferre hys doughter Godyth to one of these bre therne/ and thoughte in his mynde ỳ the eldest wold dysdayne that maryage. And for he thought to ioyne her vnto the yonger, and to make hym kynge and her quene / he compassed the deth of ỳ elder. And by this mean Goodwyn warned the lordes of Englande/ and sayde yt was a great ieoperdye for the lande, to suffer so many straungers to entre the land without lycence/ wherfore yt were necessary that they were punyshed to the example of other. By whych meanes he gat authorite to order that mater as to hym semed beste or of his owne power, because he was of moste myght nexte the kynge. wherfore he rode and mette wyth the sayde Normans/ and slewe of theym the moste nomber. For vppon Guylde downe he slewe alway.ir.& saued the.r. And yet for he thoughte to many by that meane lefte a lyue/ he eft agayne tythed agayne the sayd tythe, and slew euery tenth knyght of them and that by cruell deth / as wyndynge they guttes out of they bodyes, as sayth Polycronycon / and amonge other put out the eyen of the elder brother Alphredus, & sent hym to Ely, where he dyed in shorte tyme after/ all be it ỳ

englyshe

englyshe boke sayth ꝑ he was slayne by the forenamed tormente. And Edwarde was conueyed and by some other waye broughte to hys mother. But she kepynge the treason of Goodwyne, sente hym soone ouer the see agayne. Howbe yt the englyshe cronycle telleth all otherwyse. when Goodwyne was after accused for thys cruell dede / he sware depely ꝑ he was forced of the kynge so for to do. But in one cronicle, I fynde that thys dede was executed by Goodwyne in the tyme of Harolde Harefote beynge kynge.

Then yt foloweth in the story/this kynge Hardyknutus beynge at a feste at Lambehyth besyde London, merry and iocunde / whyle he stode drynkynge he fyll downe sodaynly, and dyed/ or ware dumbe, and lay fyll the. viii. daye after, the whyche was the .viii. daye of the moneth of June/and then dyed, when he hadde reygned after moste wryters two yeres / leuynge after hym none yssue of his bodye lawfull, and was buryed by his father at wynchester.

Thus here endeth the lyne or ofspryngе of Swanus and all other Danys / so that after thys kynge, the blood of Danys was clerely extyncte and putte oute from all kynghly dygnyte wythin thys realme of Englande. And also the persecucion of the sealed clerely after thys kynges deth. The whyche had contynued, to rekē from theyr fyrst landynge in tyme of Brightricus kyng of west Saron, & the .ix. yere of his reygne, as in ꝑ story before is reherced/by ꝑ terme of .CC. lv. yeres.

THE .CCX. CHAPITER.

Edward the son of Egelredus & of Emma hys last wyfe/began his reygne ouer England, in the yere of our lord M.xliii/and the xiiii. yere of Henry then kynge of Fraunce. The whyche after the deth of Hardyknutus was sente for into Normandye / and pledges layde for hym, that he wythout fraude shulde be made kynge. And then he came wyth a few straunges. But as sayth Marianus/ some of the lordes had sent for Edwarde the outlaw son of Edmunde Ironsyde, for to be theyr kynge. But after the affyrmaunce of the said authour/when he knew that Edwarde hys neuewe was in possession of the lande, he wolde medle hym no farther.

Then thys Edwarde by the great aduyse of Goodwyn erle of west Saron, and of Leofric erle of Chester/ was crowned kyng at westmynster, of Edsius then archbyshop of Caunterbury/& wedded in processe of time after, Goditha the doughter of erle Goodwyne, whych of Guydo is called Editha. The whych he entreatyd in suche wyse/ ꝑ he put her not from his bed, nor yet delte wyth her fleshely. whyther yt were for hate of her kynne, or for loue of chastite, ꝑ trouth is not shewed. But all wryters agreen that he cōtynued his lyfe with outen offence wyth women.

This kyng dischargeд Englesshmen of ꝑ great tribute called Dane geit, ꝑ whych before is sundry tyme spoken of/ so ꝑ after ꝑ daye yt was no more gadered. And also he subdued ꝑ Bryttons or walshmen that made warre

wythin the bondes of ꝑ land. But after ꝑ theyr duke or leder called Gryffyn or Gryffyth, with ayde of ꝑ Irysh men entred the tryuer of Seuerne, & toke many prayes, and departed agayne wythout fyght.

In the tyme of the reygne of thys Edwarde / Emma his moder was accused to be famulyer with ꝑ byshop of wincheſter. Upō which accuſacio, by coūſayll of erle Goodwyn he toke from her many of her iewellys, & cauſed her to be keptſomdele more ſtraitly in the abbay of warwell / and the byſhop he cōmytted to the examynacyon and correccyon of the clergye. But his moder more ſorowynge the defame of Alwyn the byſhoppe then her awne eſtate / wrote vnto dyuers byſhoppes, and beſought them of iuſtyce / affermynge ꝑ ſhe was redy to abyde all leful & moſt ſharpeſt triall.

Then dyuers of ꝑ byſhoppes made laboure to the kynge for her and for the byſhop. But Robert then archebyſhop of Caunterbury / beyng wyth theyr laboure dyſcontented, ſayde to them in this maner. Why brethern biſhoppes ſayd he, how dare ye defende her that is a wyld beſte and not a woman? ſhe hath defamed her own ſon the kynge, and nempned her lecherours lemman goddes owne preſte. But be yt ſo that the woman wolde purge the preſte / who ſhall then purge the woman, that is accuſed to be conſentynge to the deth of her ſonne Alphred, and procured venym to the poyſonyng of her ſon Edwarde. But how ſo yt be that ſhe be gylty or gylt leſſe / yf ſhe woll go barefoted for her ſelfe .iiii. ſteppes & for the byſhop .v. contynually vpon .ix. plough ſharys brennynge and fyre hote / then yf ſhe eſcape harmeleſſe, he ſhall be aſſoyled of this chalenge and ſhe alſo.

Thys was of her graunted, and the daye of purgacyon aſſygned. At which day ꝑ kyng & grete part of his lordes were preſent / but this Robert fayled, were yt for pyte or other wyſe. Thys Robert was a monke of an houſe in Normandy, and came ouer by the ſonde of the kynge / and was fyrſte made byſſhoppe of London, and after archbyſſhoppe of Caunterbury. Then the nyght before Emma ſhulde make her purgacyon / ſhe went vnto the ſhryne of ſaynt Swythune at wyncheſter / and there kneled all that night in prayer and reccyued dyuyne cōforte. Upon the morne ſhe was blyndefelde / and ladde vnto the place betwene .ii. men, where the iron laye glowynge hote / and paſſed the .ix. ſharys vnhurte. Then at laſt ſhe ſayde. Good lorde when ſhall I come to the place of my purgacyon. when they opened her eyen, and ſhe ſawe that ſhe was paſte the payne / ſhe kneled downe and thanked God and ſaynte Swythune. Then the kynge repented hym / and reſtored to her that he before hadde taken from her, and aſked of her forgyueneſſe. But the archebyſhoppe of Caunterburye fledde into Normandye. And thys Emma gaue then vnto the monaſtery of that holy confeſſour ſaynt Swythune .ix. maners / and the byſſhoppe other .ix. as affermeth Polycronica and other.

It was not long after, that kyng Edwarde gaderyd a ſtronge naupe at Southamptoñ, or more verely in the hauen of Sandwyche / for ſo myche as he was warned that Swanus kynge of Denmarke entended to make warre vppon hym. But Polycronycon ſayth that he gaderyd thys nauy to wythſtande Harolde Harfagar then kyng of Norꝛth ganys, that entended to haue entred Englande. But he was letted by ꝑ forenamed Swan, ꝑ ſhortely after made warre vpō ꝑ ſayd Harold

And other

In other cronycle shewyth, that the Danys and Norgayns, whyche is to meane men of Norway/were agreed to come toyntly into England. And whyle the kynge was shyppyng of his mne/ one brought forth a bole full of mede or meth to drynke vpon bon vyage. And after that came bole after bole/ so that after drynke came dronkenes, & after iangelyng/& iangelynge tourned into stryfe, & stryfe tourned into fyghtynge / where thorough many were slayne/& the other turned to theyr owne, so that that tourney was lefte of. But the legēde of hys lyfe in the chyrche telleth/that he beynge at masse in the chyrche of westmynster vppon a whytsondaye, in the tyme of the leuacyon of the sacrament he laught. wherof the lordes beynge aboute hym meruayled greatly / and after frayned of hym the cause. whervnto he answered and sayde,that the Danys wyth the Norwayes of one assente were purposed to haue comen into thys lande, and here haue taken prayes. But as the kynge of Danys shuld haue entred hys shyp,he fyll into the see and was drowned/so that I truste in my days they shall not, nor none other straungers make any warre in this lande.

THE. CCXI. CHAPITER.

IN the tyme of thys Edwarde fyll passynge great snowe,the whyche began in the begynnynge of January, and so contynued tyll the xbii. daye of Marche or saynte Patrykes daye/ wherof the great quantyte fyll in the weste countreys of Englande. And after that ensued great deth of men, and moreyne of bestes/ and by lyghtynge the corne vpon the ground that yere was won derfull brent and wasted.

Aboute the.x. yere of Edwarde as moueth Policronyca, and in the moneth of September / Eustace erle of Bolongn came a lande at Douer/ whyche erle hadde wedded after the sayenge of the sayde authour, kynge Edwardes syster. Thys was parted frome hys companye in so secrete wyse, that hys knyghtes were fayne to serche for hym/ wenynge to them that he hadde ben slayne by some of the dwellers of the towne. In the whyche serche they demeaned theym so vndyscretely,that they slewe a cytezyne of Douer. By meane wherof the people arose/ and in the questyonynge of thys mannes deth, ran at length vppon the erles company, and slewe.rr. of hys men, and wounded many mo. Hastely the erle apperyd and toke his mennys parte.But in conclusyon he was fayne to withdrawe hym selfe with a few persons, and rode vnto the kynge then beyng at Glouceter/ and made vnto hym a greuous complaynte of the men of Douer.

Then erle Godwyne, for so moch as to hym was committed the rule of kente / was charged to ryde thyther, and to take wreche of the inhabytaūtes of that towne. But he with sayde that commaundement / and counsayled the kyng to sende for the wardeyns of the castell of Douer and rulers of the towne, for to answere to suche maters as were layde agayne them,and yf they were gylty to punyshe them,and elys not.

This answere of Godwyns plesed nothynge the kynge,nor suche as were aboute hym / wherfore many mo lordes were sent for. Amonge the which Leofricus erle of Chester, and Sewarde erle of Northumberland of myne authour ben named. After whych assemble of ỹ lord erle Godwyne had suche monycyon of some of ỹ counsayll, ỹ he withdrewe

hym from the courte, and gadered to hym strength of knyghtes out of dy uers shyres, as west Saron & Kent/ and houed at Beuerstoñ tyl his sonnes came vnto him with more peple Soone after came vnto hym his eldest son named Swanus, & brought wyth hym a fayre companye that he hadde arreyred in Orenfordeshyre & Gloucetershyre / and Harolde hys other sonne, wyth a feleshyppe that he had assembled in eest Englande, and Huntyngdoñshyre / so that of these people was made a great hoste.

Then Goodwyñ to the kyng was accused, for gaderynge of so great an hoste. But he excused hym, and sayde, yt was done to withstand the walyshmen. The whyche contrary proued/ he was cómaunded to sende awaye the people, and to come wyth a certayne nomber vnto the courte. But that he refused. Then the kyng wyth hys counsayll beynge at London/ Goodwyn and Harold was eft sent for, and charged to come to the courte wyth .xii. persones wythoute mo / and to render into the kynges handes all knightes fees that he and Harolde his sonne hadde wythin Englande. To thys by theym was answered, that they myghte not come to the counsayll of treachours and gylefull men / and that also wyth so fewe men in nomber, they myghte not wythoute parell or shame passe by the countrey.

In thys whyle a parte of Goodwyns knyghtes wythdrewe theym, and hys power beganne to mynyshe and the kynge in thys whyle hadde gaderyd a stronge hoste. Then proclamacyons were made, that Goodwyne shuld come to the courte as before is sayd/ or auoyde the land with in fyue dayes. wherfore Goodwyne consyderyng the ieopardy ẏ he was in / toke wyth hym .iii. of his sonnes, that is to meane Swanus, Tosty, & Gurthe/ and sayled into Flaundres. where he was receyued of the erle Baldwyn after some wryters / whose doughter Swanus his sonne hadde before spoused & was named Judeth And Harolde and Leofricus two of his other sonnes with a few shyppes sayled out frō Brystow into Irland.

when the kynge was ascertayned that erle Goodwyne wyth hys fyue sonnes was in thys manet departed oute of his lande/ he shortly after called a parlyament / and by authorite of the same, outlowed Goodwyne & hys .iii. sonnes that were gone wyth hym. And that done he put his owne wyfe and doughter of Goodwyñ into the abbaye of warwell wyth one mayden, as sayth Marianus. And so Goodwyñ and hys sayde sonnes contynued two yeres outlawed. In the whyche season he or hys retynue toke dyuers tymes prayes in ẏ marches of Englande / and in the ende drewe to hym suche strength, that he was purposed to haue entred the lande wyth force, and to haue warred vppon the kynge. But by medyatours that fauoured erle Goodwyn, a peace was made betwene ẏ kynge and hym/ so that in processe he was receyued to grace wyth hys sonnes/ & hys doughter restored to her fyrste and former honoure. And for thys peace to be contynued / for Goodwyns parte was delyuered for pledges a sonne of hys called wylnotus, and a sonne of Swanus named Hacum or Hacun. The whyche .ii. pledges kynge Edwarde sent vnto wyllyam duke of Normandy to be kept. And Algarus the sonne of Leofric erle of Chester, to whome the kynge had gyuen the erledome of Harold, & ruled yt dyscretely in tyme of his absence/ at hys returne delyuered yt to hym again, gladly & without grudge

The. ccxii. Chapiter.

Durynge the tyme of this outlawry of Goodwyne / wyllyam bastarde duke of Normandye came with a goodly cõpany into this land, and was honorably receyued / to whom the kyng made great chere. And after he hadde taryed here a certayne of tyme to his agrement and pleasure / he retourned to hys owne wyth great gyftes & pleasures. And Emma the kinges moder dyed shortly after, and was buryed at wynchester. And Swanus the eldest sonne of Goodwyne went to Hierusalem, and from thens towarde Lycia / and dyed by the waye of colde, that he had taken of goynge barefote. Then the Normans that had gyuen to the kynge euyll counsayles agayne Englyshemen / were by Goodwyne and his frendes expled. Among the whyche Robert archebyshop of Caunterbury that hadde spoken sore agayne theym was one / whych after went to Rome to complayn to the pope then Leoñ the. ix. or Vyctour the seconde. And whẽ he had receyued letters of ꝑ pope directed to ꝑ kyng / he returned to his abbay of Gemeticum in Normandye, where he somtyme had ben munke and abbot / and there dyed. After hym Stigandus was made his successoure / the whyche as sayth Policronicon, had before tyme lefte the byshoprych of Shyrborne, and toke the see of wynchester by strẽgth. He also vsed sayres of holy chyrche thynges / and was a lewde or vnlettred man, as the more part of the byshoppes of Englande at those dayes were. And ouer that he passed other in ryches and dyssymulacyon. But yet he neuer had ꝑ palle from Rome, though there be great sale that maketh many maystres.

Then was openly spoken that he was not worthy a byshoprych, that coude vse ꝑ bragge or pompe of the worlde, the vse of voluptuosyte, of glotony and Lechery, the shynynge araye of clothynge, the countenaunce of knyghtes, and the gaderynge of horsemen, and thynketh full lytell on the profyte of soules. And yf men sayde to theym that a byshoppe shulde be chosen for holynesse of lyuyng, and for hys good clergye, and not for couetyse of money / they wold answere as foloweth, Nunc aliud tempus, alii pro tẽpore mores. The whyche verse maye be englyshed in thys maner.

As tyme requyreth, so men done theym vse.
In wynter warme clothes, in somer lyght and lesse.
In tyme of sadnesse men done gamys refuse.
And in myrthe tyme, men myrthes theym dresse.
So in tyme passed, was vsed great sadnesse
In the chyrche. But nowe men lyghte be.
wherfore the maners muste wyth men agree.

So that by such light answere they planed or excused ꝑ sharpenesse of theyr mysse lyuynge.

About this tyme, whyche shuld by Ranulff be about the. xii. yere of ꝑ reygne of Edward / Marian⁹ the Scot that before I haue often named, that wrote myche of ꝑ dedes of ꝑ kynges of England / at the age of. xxv. yeres forsoke the worlde, & went on pylgrymage / & was after shorne munke at Coleyne in Almayne in the abbay of Scottes. whyche Marianus after some wryters was in great fauoure with Malcolyne kyng of Scottes.

In the. xiii. yere of kynge Edward the Scottes rebelled agayn ꝑ kyng. wherfore Sewarde erle of Northum

ꝑ [illegible] berland

berlande, by the kynges commaundement gadered a great hoste and entred that lande/and behaued hym so manfully, that in proces he subdued the Scottes, & chased ꝑ kynge out of his coūtrey/so that after kyng Edwarde gaue that kyngedome vnto Malcolyn sonne of the kynge of Cumbrys, to beholden of hym & hys heyres kynges, as chefe lordes of Scotlande.

Uppon Ester mondaye aboute the sayde yere Goodwyn syttynge at the kynges bourde wyth other lordes in ꝑ castell of wyndsore / yt happed one of the kynges cuppe berers to stumble and to recouer agayne, so that he shedde none of the drynke. wherat Goodwyn lough, and sayde, nowe that one brother hath sustayned that other. wherby he ment that the one fote or legge hathe sustayned ꝑ other from fallynge. wyth whyche wordes the kyng marked him & sayd, Rycht so my brother Alfrede shuld haue holden me, ne had Goodwyn ben. The erle then conceyued that the kynge suspected hym of hys brothers deth/ and sayde vnto the kynge in defendynge hys vntrouth: syr as I perceyue well it is told to the, ꝑ I shuld be ꝑ cause of thy brothers deth. So mought I sauely swalowe this morsel of brede ꝑ I here hold in my hāde, as I am giltelesse of the dede. But as soone as he had receyued the brede/ forthwyth he was choked. Then the kynge commaūded hym to be drawē from the table/and so was conueyed to wynchester, and there buryed.

Marianus sayth that as erle Goodwyn sat at the kynges table at wynchester/he was sodaynly taken with a palsye or some other sykenes vpon the Ester mondaye, and dyed ꝑ thyrd day after. And his lordshyppes were gyuen vnto Harold his eldest sonne then lyuynge/ & Haroldes erledome was gyuen to Algarus the sonne of Leofricus, whych was the erledome of Orenford after some wryters.

It was not longe after ꝑ kynge Edwarde sent vnto the .iiii. Henry than emperour of Almayne, Aldredus bysshop of worceter, wyth other noble men / prayenge hym that he wolde sende vnto England hys cosyn Edwarde sonne of Edmūde Ironsyde/ for so myche as he entended to make hym hys heyre. The whyche requeste was fulfylled, so that he came into Englande soone after/ the whych as ye haue harde before, was named Edwarde the outlawe.

But as witnessyth Guydo and other the yere after that he came into Englande, he dyed at London, and was buryed at westmynster.

Thys yere folowynge kynge Edwarde thorough yll counsayll exiled wythout gylte Algarus the sonne of Leofricus. The whych associat hym wyth Gryffyne kynge or duke of walys/ and destroyed ꝑ countre of Harford, & dyd myche harme to ꝑ towne, and set the mynster on fyre, and slew .iii. chanons therof. Then the kyng sent Harolde agayn hym/the whiche chased the walshmen into theyr own boundes, and recouered the sayde towne by appoyntement holden by the sayde Algarus, and amended all hurtes before done by the walshmē/ and lastely reconcyled the sayde Algarus and his companye vnto the kynges grace.

THE .CCXIII. CHAPITER.

ABoute the .xb. yere of kynge Edwarde/dyed ꝑ noble duke Siwarde ruler of Northumberland of the kyng, of whome Guydo reherseth dyuers notable actes whyche I passe ouer. Of whom yt is radde that when he sawe well he shulde dye, he caused

caused hys armour to be put vppon hym/ and so armed and syttynge in a cheyre, hauynge all the ryghtes of the chyrch sayde, that so yt became a knyght and man of honour to dye, & not lyenge as an other mene man/ and so dyed, & was buryed at yorke. And hys eriedome was after gyuen to Tosty or Costy son of Goodwyn.

In the yere folowynge or.xvi. yere of kynge Edwarde, dyed also ỹ good erle Leofricus erle of Mercia and of Chester/ and was buryed in the abbay of Couentre, the whyche before he hadde buylded. This man purchased many great pryuyleges for ỹ towne of Couentre/and made it free of all maner of toll, excepte onely of horse. For the whyche to haue also free/ the comen fame telleth, that after longe requeste made vnto hym by his wyfe named Godina, he graũted her to haue yt therof freed / wyth that that she wolde ryde naked thorough the towne/ by meane wherof yt was freed. Then Algarus hys son was erle after hym.

Harolde then the eldeste sonne of Goodwyn/ was in great authorite, & ruled myche of the kynges armye.

The yere folowyng Algarus was accused by malyce/ & cryed the land. wherfore he fled agayne to Gryffyne duke of walis as he before had done, of whom he was ioyously receyued and mayntayned. The kynge therof beyng informed, sent Harolde into walys to make warre vppon Gryffyne. The whyche quytte hym in so knyghtely wyse / that he chased the wallshmen, brent the sayde Gryffyns paleys at a place callyd Rutlan, and his nauy, and then returned into Englande about mydlent. But aboute rogacyon dayes nexte folowyng, the sayde Harolde with his brother Tosty was sente thyther agayne, wyth a stronge armye. At whyche season they destroyed a great parte of walys, & in conclusion brought the wallshmen vnto dew subiection, and forced thẽ to gyue pledges for the contynuance of the same. And that done pursued so sore vppon the sayde Gryffyne, that in the ende his owne people for purchase of theyr owne lyues, slewe the sayde Gryffyne, and sent his hed vnto Harolde in the moneth of Auguste / so that after the deth of thys Gryffyne by the commaundement of the kynge, the coũtrey of walys was committed to the gydynge of the .ii. brethrne of Gryffyne/ the whyche had fauoured more the kynges party in tyme of the forelayd warre then theyr brother. And this warre in walys thus brought to ende/ Harold by his polycy reconcyled agayne Algarus erle of Mercia to ỹ kyng grace, so that he contynued in hys fauoure durynge hys lyfe after.

About thys tyme a woman of Barkley in Barkshyre vsed yll craftes of sorcery. The whyche as she was syttynge vpon a daye at a feste or great dyner/ a crowe that she had lykyngly fedde and brought vp, kreked louder then he was accustomed to do. when the woman harde that noyse her knyfe fyll out of her hande, & she wared sodaynly pale. And with ỹ she beganne to syghe and sorow/ & sayd alas, this daye is my soule comen to the laste sorow. And so after that she had spoken those wordes / a messanger came to her, and sayde that her son and all her mayny was dede sodaynly. Then she was conueyed to her owne and was full syke. wherfore in haste she sent for an other son of hers that was a monke, & a doughter ỹ was a nunne/ at whose cõming she sayd to them in thys wyse. I am the woman that haue vsed yll crafte and enyll lyuynge / and in vayne I hoped to haue ben saued by your be-

des and prayers. But now I praye you that ye woll releue my tourmentes and paynes / for of my soule the iudgement is gyuen. wherfore in case that ye maye kepe my body from tourment, sewe it in an hartes skyn, and laye it in a trought of stone and hyll it wyth lede close and tuste / and after do bynde it wyth barres of iron in moste strongest and sure wise, and cause ye. xl. psons to synge psalmes by nyght, and vppon the morne as many masses. And yf I lye so stylle iii. nyghtes, than burye my body on the. iiii. daye. But all thys was for noughte. For the fyrste nyght whyle the psalmes were in sayeng / ỹ stroge bandes were sodaynly to broke / and one wyth a gresely loke was sene vpon an horse backe all blacke, & cast thys woman behynde hym, & so rode forth wyth so greate crye and noyse, that it was harde as sayth Polycronycon. iiii. myles thens.

Thys wolde I not haue shewed, but that I fynde it wryten and recorded of diuers authours.

Than to retourne to our fourmer story / as wytnessyth myne authoure Ranulfe, about ỹ. xx. yere of ỹ reygne of kynge Edwarde / Harolde sayled towarde Normandye to vysyte hys brother wynotus and Hacun hys neuewe / the which as ye before haue harde were layde there for pledges for the peas to beholden vppon erle Goodwyns syde agayne the kynge. But he in his course of saylyng was weder dryuen by tempeste into the countre or prouynce of Pontyfe, or more verely into the puynce of Pouthyth / where he was taken as a prysoner, and sent vnto duke wyllyam of Normandy. The whyche forced hym to swere, that he in tyme folowynge shulde marye hys doughter / & that after the deth of kynge Edward he shulde kepe the lande of England to hys behofe, accordyng to the wyll and mynde of Edwarde after some wryters. And after the opynyon of a nother cronycle wryten in latyn / the sayd Harolde for to be in the more fauour of duke wyllyã, shewed to hym that kynge Edwarde in presence of hys barony, had admytted the sayde wyllyam for his heyre / and couenañted wyth hym, that yf he ouerlyued the kyng, he wold in saue wyse kepe the lande to hys vse. For the whyche tydynges & promyse wyllyam grauñted to hym hys doughter to wyfe, ỹ than was wythin lawfull peres of marryage wyth greate dower. And for to cause Harolde to be the more stabler in hys promyse keppynge / he delyuered to hym Hacun hys neuew and sonne of hys brother Swanus, whyche he myche desyred, and kepte styll wynotus the brother of ỹ sayd Harolde. After whiche couenauntes sufficyentely stablysshed and enacted / Harold departed from duke wyllyam wyth greate and ryche gyftes, and in processe of tyme landed in Englande. And at hys comynge to the kynges presence / he shewed to hym all that he had done in the foresayde maters / where wyth the kynge was well cõtented, as affermeth the sayd latyne cronycle.

THE. CCXIIII. CHAPITER.

IN the. xxii. yere of kynge Edwarde as testyfyeth Ranulfe / Tostius the brother of Harolde was for cause not shewed disconted in the kynges courte, and went vnto Harforde in the marche of walys / where at that tyme the seruauntes of Harold by cõmaũdement of theyr mayster were besyed to make prouysyon for to receyue the kynge. But whan thys Tostius was thyder comen / he cruelly slewe the sayde seruaũtes of hys

hys brother, & hacked them in small peces, and caste them after in mere-lowce or salte. And that done sent worde vnto the kynge, þ yf he wolde come vnto hys feest, he shulde lacke no powdered mete, what so euer he hadde beside.

Thys cruell dede sprange wyde, so that for it he was hated of all mē/ in so mych that hys owne tenauntes the men of Northūberland, of which prouynce he than was lorde of, arose agayne hym and toke frō hym that he hadde/and lastely chaced hym into Flaunders wyth a fewe persons than awaytynge vppon hym. But þ vertuouse kyng Edward not beyng contented wyth the comons doynge, consyderynge it to be done wythout hys aduyce and cōmaūdement / sent thyder Harolde to do correccyon vpon the heddes or capptayns of the Northumberes. wherof they beynge acerteyned cōtynued theyr strength and mette wyth Harolde & hys people/and sent hym to vnderstāde that they were freely borne, and freely nourysshed, & that they myght nat suffer no cruelnesse of dukes. Also they had lerned of theyr elders & souerayne to meyntayn fredom or to suffer deth and to lyue in quyetnesse vnder an easy duke. whan Harolde had receyued thys message, and aduertysed þ strength of the Northūbers / he perceyued well that wythout greate effusyon of blode he myghte not correcte the mysse doers. wherfore it semed to hym better to fauour the cōtree, than to take hede of the synguler profyte of hys brother / so that he retorned to the kynge wyth thys answere, and purchased theyr pardon of hym/and also procured so þ kyng, þ he assygned to them an other duke or erle that was named Walcarus. And Tostius hys brother wyth hys wyfe & chyldern remayned in Flaunders, durynge the kynges lyfe.

Kynge Edwarde in the. xvii. yere of hys reygne, sittyng at mete vpon Eester day in his paleys of westmynster, sodaynly lowghe, whan other dyd talke and eate. whan thys blessyd man had dyned, and was entred into his chamber/his kamplyers asked of hym þ cause of hys lawghyng To whom he answered / for þ same selfe tyme sayd he. vii. slepers, that in the mount Celeon besydes Ephesym in Asya the lasse, had slepte two hundred yeres or there about vpon the tyght syde / the selfe same tyme they tourned them, and shall slepe agayne vpon that other syde. lxxiiii. yeres. Though thys be tolde of Ranulphe & other/syth in thys sayenge appereth some dyscordaunce wyth other wryters / & also wyth the former sayenge of the sayde Ranulphe in the.xvii.chappter of hys. iiii. boke of Polycronycō, where he sayth that the sayd. vii. slepers were closed in þ caue/the fyrst yere of Decius, and so sleped contynuyngly to the laste tyme or yeres of Theodocius the yonger than emperour / by whyche reason they shulde slepe about þ season or space of.ii.hundred yere as aboue is sayd/ and than arose and shewed them to that sayd Theodocius empe rour and many other / & dyed soone after, as wytnessyth Vincencius hystorialis, Antoninus, Jacobus Philippus, and other: wherfore it can not stande wyth reasō, þ they shulde slepe vpon þ other syde after þ tournyng. lxxiiii. yeres, as is aboue sayd/ nor that they shulde sterue in þ tyme of thys holy kynge and confessoure. For hys tyme of reygne was after þ tyme of Theodoci⁹ afforesayd, more than. vi. hundred yeres. But yf it be ment by some other. For there are vii. other slepers spoken of in þ. xxvi. chappter of the fyrste boke of Polycronycon,

cronycon, that hath slepte in a nother caue many yeres. wherfore I remytte thys vnto other, and folowe the order of the story. wherein it is founde, that whan this blessed kyng Edwarde had receyued by dyuyne monycyon, that he shulde chaunge thys transitory and bryckell lyfe for the lyfe euerlastynge / he sykened in the Crystmasse weke. In tyme of whych sykenesse was shewed to hym a vysyon, that he after shewed vnto suche as were about hym / and sayde two men of relygion came to me that I somtyme was kamyler wyth in Normandye / and shewed that they were sent from god vnto me, to gyue vnto me warnynge of such thynges as folowyth. And fyrste they sayde that for the dukes, bysshoppes, and abbotes of Englande, be not goddes seruauntes, but the deuylys / god hath taken thys kyngdome into the handes of enemyes for a tyme / and fendes shall walke and destrobie the people. Than I besought god that the people myghte haue warnynge, and do penaunce and be delyuered, as the people were of the cytye of Ninyue. Nay sayde they / for these men be so indurate of harte, ỹ they shulde do no worthy penaunce, nor to them god shall shewe hys mercy nor forgyuenesse. Than I asked of them / whā myghte be hope of mercy and pardō. They answered / whan a grene tree is hewen downe, and a parte therof cut from the stocke, and layde. iii. fourlonge from the stocke / and wyth out mannes helpe or hande shall retourne to his stocke or rote, and take agayne hys shappe, and than flouryshe and bryngе forth fruyte. whan thys is done / than maye be hope of comforte and of remedy.

In the tyme that this blessyd man shewed thus thys vysyon / was present there wyth other, Stygandus archebysshoppe of Caunterbury. The whyche sayde vnto the other, that the kynge raued or elles doted for age and sykenesse, as olde men done / and accompted these wordes for foly and vanyte. But not longe after Englande felte and conceyued thys prophecye / whan it was in subiecyon of straungers and alyauntes as after shall be shewed.

Than who that is desyrous to knowe the exposycion of the prophecye of the grene tree / lette hym rede in the ende of the lyfe of thys gloryous kynge and confessoure, translated by wyllyam Caxton, in the boke called the Legende of sayntes / and there he shall fynde it. All be it that in other places I haue sene it otherwyse interpreted / the whyche I remytte to them that haue experyence in suche facultye. And to conclude thys storye / trouth it is that this blessyd kynge dyed the. iiii. daye of January, whan he hadde regned. xxiii. yeres, vii. monethes, and odde dayes / and was buryed in the monastery of westmynster, ỹ whych he before had gretly augmēted & repayred / but nat in that maner and fourme that it is nowe in. For the chyrche that nowe there standeth, was so redyfyed and buylded newe of Henry the thyrde and sonne of kynge Johñ. The whiche also after some wryters / translated thys blessyd kynge Edwarde from the lower parte of ỹ chyrche, and shryned hym there he now lyeth. And this kynge Edwarde lafte after hym no chylde / for he was accompted for a byrgyn whan he dyed.

Francia.

THE.CCXV.CHAPITER.

PHylyp the fyrst of that name ⁊ son of Henry / began his dominiō ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of our lorde.M.lviii / ⁊ the.xvi.yere of Edwarde the confessour than kynge of Englande. And of thys Phylyp it is radde, that he maryed a wyfe named Berta the doughter of Baldewyne erle of Holland and of Fryce. Of the whyche Berta this Philyp receyued a sonne and named hym Lewis/and a doughter ꝑ was called Cunstaūce. But in proceſſe of tyme he haunted so myche the company of a woman named Bertande, that he hated hys lawfull wyfe/and at length helde her in pryson, and kept that other in her stede/and gatte vppon the sayd Bertrande two sonnes named Phylyp ⁊ Florys, and a doughter which myne authour nameth not. For thys aduoutry, he was often monyſshed of ꝑ pope, that he shulde leue the companye of that yll woman, and take to hym hys lawfull wyfe ꝑ he so longe had holden in pryson within hys castell of Monstruell. And for he wolde not be obedyent vnto the popes counsayll/he was fynally accused of pope Urbane the seconde of that name. By meane wherof he was reconcyled and restored agayne to his wyfe, and refused hys concubyne.

And in the tyme of thys Phylyp/ Godfrey de Bollio with many other crysten prynces, at the exortacyon of Peter the heremyte, sayled into the holy lande/ and wanne the cytye of Hierusalē out of the Sarasyns handes. whyche prynces lastly crowned the sayd Godfrey kynge of the sayde cytye. And after it so contynued in possessyon of crysten men, by ꝑ terme of foure score and tenne yeres, vnder xi. crysten kinges/and lenger myght haue endured, hadde not discencyon fallen amonges them selfe. And so by Antonnus, Peter Dilrey, and other it is manyfestely shewed. Thys vyage after moste accorde of wryters, begā in the yere of grace .M. lxxxvi. and the. xxvii. yere of thys Phylyp. And the sayd Godfrey was crowned kynge of the sayde cytye of Hierusalem after the affyrmaunce of ꝑ sayde wryters, in the yere of grace a thousande and foure score and .xix.

Of thys Phylyp lytell worthy memory is lefte in wrytynge. For lyke as hys fader Henry made hym kyng by his lyfe, and suffered hym to haue the rule of the lande / ryght so thys Phylyp after a certayne of tyme, cōmytted the rule of the lande vnto Lewys his sonne. And he sette hys mynde to huntynge and other dysporte / and so ladde hys lyfe in all slowthe and ydelnesse.

Than Lewys takynge vppon hym the charge of the realme / subdued the erle of Mounte Meruly ⁊ other/that laboured to take from the chyrche of sayne Denys certayn preuyleges/ and also constrayned them to restore and satysfye all hurtes and harmes to the sayde chyrche by them done.

Thys Lewys as affermeth the Frenche cronycle, maryed the doughter of Guy erle of Cotchefordе / the whyche after for nerenesse of kynne was deforced from the sayde Lewys, to the greate dysplesour of the sayde erle Guy. wherfore he moued warre agayne the sayd Lewys, and toke from hym certayne holdes and castelles/of the whyche the castell of Gurney was one. But at length Lewys had ꝑ better of that warre, and recouered

recouerȳd diuers of the sayd holdes. And amonges other pryſoners by hym and his knyghtes take/ he toke a myghty and stronge captayn of the sayde erle Guy named Homboldo, the whyche he sente to the castell of Stampes, there sauely to be kepte. Durynge whyche warre, Philyppe the kynge sykened/and dyed the yere of grace. M. a hundred .xl. vi, when he hadde rygned full.xlviii.yere/and was buried at saint Benet sur Loyr.

Anglia.

THE .CCXVI. CHAPITER.



Harolde ȳ second son of erle Goodwyne, and laste kynge of Saxons / began to rule the realme of Englande ȳ v. daye of January, and the yere of our lorde. M. and.lxvi/and the .viii. yere of Phylyp the fyrst then kynge of Fraunce. This as moste myghty, for so myche as the blessyd kynge Edwarde dyed wythout yssue, not myndyng the pro mysse of hym before made vnto wyllyam duke of Normādy as before I haue shewed/toke vpō him as kyng, and was crowned of Aldredus then bysshoppe of yorke. All be yt as affermeth Guydo and other, some of the lordes entended to haue made Edgare Adelynge kynge / whyche Edgare as affermeth ȳ sayde authours, was sonne to Edwarde that was the sonne of Edmund Ironsyde, and named of some Edwarde the outlawe. But for this Edgare was yong, and specyally for Harolde was strong of knightes and rychesse/he wanne the reygne. Howe be yt Marianus sayth that kyng Edwarde ordeyned before his deth, that Harolde shuld be kyng after hym. By reason wherof, the lordes crowned hym therupppon at westmynster.

Anon as he was crowned/ he beganne to ordoo cupll lawes and customes before vsed, and stablysshed the good lawes, and specyally suche as were for the defence of holy chirch and punysshed the cupll doers, to the fere and example of other.

In shorte tyme after that Harolde was thus made kynges / Tosty or Costy hys brother, whyche as before is sayde, was of the Northumbers chased into Flaundres, made hym a naup of. lx. small sayles, and sayled about the ile of wyght, & toke prayes wythin the sayd yle and other places of Kent. And from thens he sayled in to Lynsey, & dyd there myche harme both with fyre and sworde. But soon after he was chased thens by Edwyn and Walcharus erles of Mercia & of Northumberlande. And then he sayled into Scotland, & tarved there tyll the somer after.

when Tostius was thus wyth hys robbers chased/ then Harolde Harfagar kynge of Northganys or Norways, wyth a great naup of .iii. hundred shyppes or mo, entred ȳ mouth of the ryuer of Tyne. Thys Harolde Harfagar as sayth Guydo, was the sonne of Canutus, and kyng of Denmarke and of Norway. The whych herynge of the deth of holy Edward/ purueyed ȳ sayd great armye to wyn Englande, as his ryghtfull enheryttaunce. when Harolde was warned of thys great flote of Danys/he sent vnto the forenamed erles or dukes of Mercia and of Northumberland/ commaundyng them to wythstande theyr landynge, whyle he gadered hys strength. Then the forsayde dukes spedde theym towarde the Danys, and gaue vnto them a sharpe & stronge fyght. But in conclusyon the En-

Engiyshemen were put to the worse, and were fayne to gyue backe / so ꝑ the enymyes entred farther into the lande. The kyng herynge of the scomfyture of hys people, made the more haste towarde hys enymyes / so that the .vi. day after he came to Stempsforde bryge. In thys whyle was Tostius before named come oute of Scotlande, and gone to the partye of the Danys agayne hys owne brother. In thys forsayde place bothe hostes ioyned / and faught then there a sharpe cruell batayll. wherin fyll many a sturdy knyght vppon the engiyshe partye, but mo vppon the Danys syde / so that in the ende Harolde theyr kynge was slayne, and that of the hande of Harolde kynge of Englande as sayth Guydo / and Tostius was also slayne in the same fyghte. Olanus broter to the sayth Harolde Harfagar, with Paulus duke of the yles of Orkeys / were there taken prisoners. The whyche the kynge caused to hym to be sworne, to kepe such promises as they to hym there made, and toke good pledges for performaunce of the same, and after suffred theym to retourne from thens they were comen.

It ys also specyally remembred of the sayd authour / that one knyght stode vppon the forsayde bryge, and wyth his axe defended the passage maugre the hole hoste of ꝑ Engiyshemen, and slew .xl. Engiyshemen or mo wyth hys axe / and myght not be ouercomen, tyll an Engiysheman went vnder the bryge and styched hym vpwarde wyth hys spere thorough an hole of the bryge.

For thys victory Harolde was supprised wyth pryde, and also wyth covetouse / so that he dyuyded not the prayes of hys enymyes amonge hys knyghtes, but kepte theym to hym selfe / or gaue parte vnto suche knyghtes as he fauoured, and spared to them that had well deserued / by treason wherof he losse the fauour of many of hys knyghtes.

In thys passetyme / the doughter of duke wyllyam, the whych Harold shuld haue maried, dyed within age. wherfore Harold thought hi ꝑ more discharged of his ꝓmise before made to her fader. But duke willyam warned Harolde of couenauntes broken, and medled menasses wyth prayers by sondry tymes. wherunto Harolde answered, that a nyce folyshe couenaunte ought not to be holden / & namely ꝑ behest of other mennys ryght and kyngdome, wythout the hole assent of the senatours of ꝑ same land. And farthermore a lewde othe might and ought to be broken / and specyally when yt is compelled to be sworne for nede or for drede.

Vppon these answers receyued by duke wyllyam from Harolde / in the whyle that messangers went & came, duke wyllyam gadered hys knyghtes, and prepared his nauy and all other thinges necessary to the warre, & had assent of the lordes of his land to ayde and assyste hym in his iourney. And ouer that he in such wise enformed the pope, then beynge named Alexander the second / ꝑ he cõformed hym in takynge of that vyage / and sent vnto hym a banner, the whyche he willed hym to bere in the shyp that he hym self shuld sayle in. And so beynge purueyed of all thynges concernyng his iourney, he sped hym to the see syde, & toke shyppynge in the hauen of sayne Valery / where he tarryed a longe tyme or he myght haue a conuenable wynde. For ꝑ whych his soldyours murmured & grudged / and sayd it was a wooduesse & great displeasynge to god, to desyre an other mannes kyngdome by strength / & namely when god wythsayde yt by the

worlynge of his element.

At the laste when duke wyllyam had longe bydden and houed for the wynde / he commaunded to bringe forth ꝑ body of sayne Ualery, and to be sette vppon the see stronde. The whyche done / the wynde shortely after came about and fylled the sayles. Then wyllyam thanked god & sayne Ualery / and toke shortely after shyppynge, and helde his course towarde Englande / vppon thys grounde & tytle folowynge.

The fyrste and prynceppall was to chalenge his ryghte / and to haue the dompynyon of the lande that to hym was gyuen (as he affermed) of kyng Edwarde the confessoure and hys neuewe.

The seconde was, to take wreche of his deth & cruell murdour of hys neuew Alfrede, and brother of ꝑ bles syd kynge Edwarde / that was slayn of erle Goodwyne and his adherentes, as before ye haue harde in the storye of Hardyknitus / the whyche dede he ascryued chefely vnto Harolde And the thyrde was, for to auenge the wronge done vnto Robert archebyshop of Caunterburye / whych as he was enformed / was exyled by the meanes and labour of Harolde, in the tyme of Edwarde the confessour, as before is shewed.

THE .CCXVII. CHAPITER.

DUke wyllyam keppynge hys course / landed in processe of tyme at Hastynge in Susser, in a place called Peuenesley. And in hys goynge oute of his shyp, and takyng the land / hys one fote slode, and that other stacke faste in the sande. The whych espyenge one of his knyghtes ꝑ was nere vnto hym / cryed alowde and sayd, now syr duke thou holdest Englande, and thou shalte soone be tourned from a duke to a kynge. The duke of this made game, and entred further into the lande / and made his proclamacyons and cryes, that no man shuld take any prayes, or do any force to the people. For he sayde that yt was reasonable that he shuld spare that thynge that shulde be hys owne.

Harolde in thys whyle was in the Northe partes of Englande, and had wttynge of the landynge of the Normayns / and sped hym towarde them in all that he myghte, and gathered his strength by the countreys as he came. But the duke made so good spede, that he came to London before the kynge. where he was holden out, tyll he had made good suertye, that he and hys people shulde passe thorough the cytye wythout tarrynge. The whyche was obserued. And so he passyng the cytye / passed the bridge, and went ouer into Suffer.

Kynge Harolde entendynge to know the strēgth of his enmyes, sent espyes into the dukes hoste / the whyche made reporte vnto the kynge, that all duke wyllyams soldyours were prestes. For they had theyr ouer lyppes and chekes shauen / and the Englyshmen at these dayes vsed the here of theyr ouer lyppes shadde and not shauen. But Harold to that answered and sayde, they be no prestes, but are stalworth and sturdye knyghtes.

Then Gurth or Wurth one of the yongeste brethern of Harolde / counsayled hym that he shulde stande a parte, and suffer hym wyth other of hys lordes to fyght with ꝑ Normās, for so myche as he was sworne to the duke and they were not / aledgynge furthermore, that yf they were ouerthrowen, ꝑ yet he myght defende hys quarell and fyghte for the countrey.

In this

In this meane tyme wyllyam sent a monke vnto Harold, and proferred to hym three maner of wayes / and to chose one of the three.

The fyrste, that accordynge to his othe he shulde render the lande, or delyuer yt vnto the possessyons of wyllyam. And ꝑ done / to take yt agayne of hym, and hold yt of hym as in fee / & so to reygne vnder hym for terme of hys lyfe / and after his deth to retourne yt to the sayd wyllyam, or to suche one of his sonnes as he wolde assigne it vnto. Or secondly, leue the kyngedome without more stryfe. Or thyrdely in ecche wynge of shedynge of the more plenty of Crysten mēnes blood / that he wold defende his quarell in hys owne persone agayne the duke / and they two onely to trye the mater by dynte of sworde. But Harolde refused these offers / and sayde he wolde trye his quarell by dynt of swordis, and not by one sworde / and that he and hys knyghtes wolde defende they⁹ coūtrey agayn all straūge nacyons, prayenge to god to deme the ryghte betwene them twayne.

when duke wyllyam hadde receyued this answere from Harolde, and sawe well that there was no meane but fortune in batayll: he charged his people ꝑ myght watche, to occupye theym in prayer / and specyly the prestes and the religious people, where the Englyshemen gaue them all to drynke and songe.

Then vppon the morowe beynge saterdaye, and the .xviii. daye of October, and the daye of saynte Calyxte the pope / bothe hostes assayled other, in that place where as nowe standeth the abbay of Batayll in Sussex. In the begynnynge of thys batayll / a banner or a baunerett called Tayler a Norman splayed before the hoste of Normans / and slewe an Englyshemman or knyghte that came agayne hym / and after that one other, and so the thyrde, and was slayne at the laste.

Then the seirrons smote to gyther wyth a great noyse and crye, and laughte sore a longe season. And the Englyshmen defended them manfully / and the better for that that they kepte theym hole to gyther wythoute scatervnge or sprynginge a brode. The whyche when wyllyam apperceyued / he gaue a sygne vnto hys knyghtes, that they shulde gyue backe, and make countenaunce as they dyd flee. Then the Normans inbatelled the fote men, and sette horsemen for wynges on euery syde. By the whyche wyle the Englyshemen were descuryd, and soone oute of araye / and the Normans tourned agayne vpon ꝑ Englyshemen, and slewe theym downe on euery syde.

Thys batayll was sore foughten of the Englyshemen / that duke wyllyam was thryse felled that day by reason that thre horse were that daye slayne vnder hym. Lastely Harolde was wounded in the eye wyth an arowe, and fyll to the grounde and was slayne, and hys people scattered / so that well was hym that myghte saue hym selfe by flyenge Then duke wyllyam buryed hys men that there were slayne / and fulfilled hys enymyes to do the same.

Of the deth of thys Harolde ys dyuersly wryten. For Geraldus Cambrens. in hys boke called Itinerarius sayth, ꝑ after Harolde had receyued many woundes, and loste hys lefte eye / he fledde from that felde to the countrey of Chester, and lyued longe after an holy lyfe as an ancre, in the selle of saynte Jamys faste by sayut Johūs chyrch, & made there an holy ende.

When ꝑ deth of Harold was knowen

to the erles of Mercia and of Northumberlande/ the whyche for streyt nesse of waye myght not bryng theyr people to that felde/ or ellys for that that they wylfully wythdrew theym selfe from Harolde, bycause he none otherwise departed ꝑ prayes amonges them and theyr knyghtes at the former feld of Norgaynes: then they drewe the next waye to London, and toke Agatha Harolds wyfe and sent her to Chester. And they and Aldredus bysshoppe of yorke with the Londoners/agreed and promysed eyther vnto other, that they wold make Edgare Athelynge kynge, and defende hys ryghte to the vttermoste of theyr powers.

But that promyse not wythstandynge, when they harde of the great strength that dayly fell to duke wyllyam and of hys prouysyons / they were fayne to breke that appoyntement. And the sayd erles submytted them, and gaue vnto hym pledges, and became to hym his lyege men by homage and feautye.

And thus when Harolde hadde ruled the lande from the .v. daye of January to the .xviii. daye of October/ he was slayne, when he had reygned ix. monethes and odde dayes / and was buryed at the monasterye of the holy crosse of waltham, whyche he before hadde founded, and set therin chanons, and gaue vnto theym layre possessyons.

And here endeth for a time ꝑ blood of Saxons/ the whych contynued to reken from Hengestus fyrste reygne, by the space or tyme of .v. hundred and.lxxxvi. yeres. And yf yt be reckened from the begynnyng of the west Saxõs/then yt endureth by ꝑ terme of .v.hundred.lxv.yeres. whych cõtynued as rulers & kinges of this land all the sayd tyme/onely except ꝑ that passed betwene the fyrst yeres Canutus, and the laste yere of Hardehyndtus. In the whyche season passed or flowed vpon.xviii.yeres. All be yt ꝑ the persecucyon of the Danys lasted mych lenger, as tofore I haue shewed in ꝑ story of ꝑ forenamed Kynges.

THE.CCXVIII.CHAPITER.

Then for as mychе that god of his vnknowen iudgementes to man, and by his hygh & hyd counsayll, wolde suffer this duke to conquere so noble a lande, and to be lord and souerayne ouer so many noble enherytours, as were & now be with in the same: I thynke yt cõuenyent to shew here the dyscent of the sayde duke/and how nere of blood he was vnto the blessed kynge Edwarde the confessour.

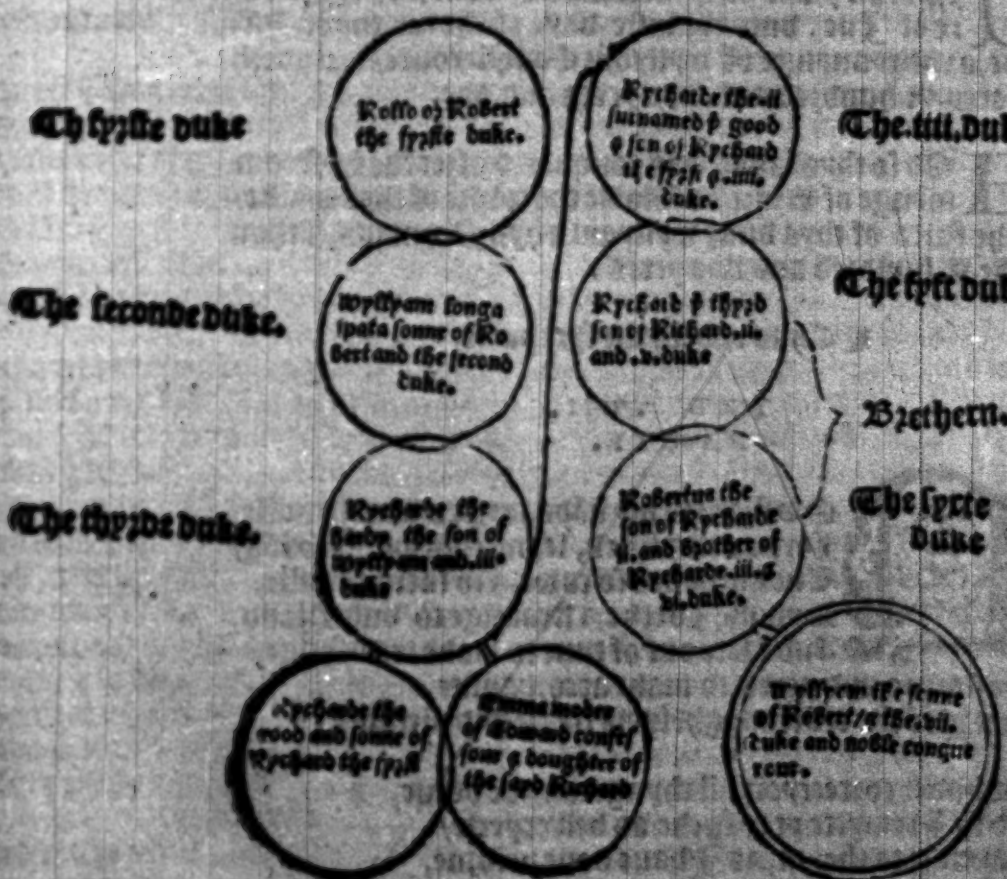
wherfore as before to you I haue shewed in the story of Charlys the Symple somtyme kynge of Fraũce/ a myscreaunt or a pagan named Rollo prsecuted sore the realm of Fraũce & lastely wan by strength the cytye of Roan the hed or chefe cytye of Normandy. And in conclusyon for a fynall peace betwene the sayde kynge and Rollo to be had/ the sayde Rollo was crystened & named Robert, and maryed Gilla the doughter of ꝑ said Charlys. To whom ꝑ kyng gaue in waye of Dower, ꝑ hole duchy of Normandy. The whych Robert after he was crystened/ ruled that dukedome as a good crysten man, by the terme of.xviii.yeres/and receyued of ꝑ sayd Gilla a son, and named hym wyllyam/ the whyche after was surnamed Longa spata, as who wold saye wyllyam wyth a longe sworde.

This wyllyam was duke after his fader.xxv.yeres/ and lefte after hym a sonne named Rychарde, whych as before is shewed in the story of Lewys ꝑ.vi. was named Richard ꝑ hardy.

Then

Then Rychарde the hardy was the thyrde duke, and reygned .lii. yeres/ & had by hys wyfe a ſon named Rychарde the good, and Emma that was wyfe to Egelredus and mother to ſaynte Edwarde the confeſſoure. After hym the Good Rychарde was duke, and reygned .xxviii. yeres/ and lefte after hym two ſonnes, that is to ſay Rychарde and Robert. The hyrſte after two yeres was ſlayne by treaſon of hys brother Robert/ ſo that Robert was then duke and reygned .ix. yeres. The whyche Robert, as yt is before ſhewed in the ſtorye of Henry kyng of Fraunce/ was father vnto this duke wyllyam. And thys wyllyam was the .vii. duke of Normandye/ and ruled yt or he conquered Englande after moſte wryters .xxx. yeres.

whereby yt appereth, that Emma was aunte to duke Robert, father of wyllyam Conquerour. And ſaynte Edwarde and this duke wyllyam were by ỹ fathers ſyde coſyn iarmaynes remoued as ſheweth by thys draught folowynge.



AND thus here an ende of the. vi. part of thys worke/ for so myche as the lande was here conquered, and put vnder the rule of an other nacyon.

wherfore as before I haue vsed and done, to gyue thankes vnto that moste blessyd vyrgyn our lady sayne Mary, as furtherer and conductryce of thys worke / so here agayn I salute and hayle her wyth the. vi. ioye of the forenamed vii. ioyes, thus begynnynge,

Gaude virgo mater Christi, tu quæ sola &c.

All hayle and be gladde moste noble and moder dere
Of Jesu Thryste, vyrgyne moste pure and clene.
Deleruynge onely by grace and lyuynge moste clere,
To be of that dygnyte, thou celestyall quene,
To perce the heuens that beeth so serene.
And nexte to the trone of the hygh Trynyte,
Thou arte admytted for to holde thy see.

THys. vi. parte to be accompted from the fyrste yere of Jue, vnto the laste daye of the reygne of Harolde, or begynnynge of wyllyam Conqueroure/ includeth of yeres. iii. hundred and. lxxx. yeres and one.

AND so thys lande was conquered after the fyrst commynge of Brute, to folowe thaccõpte of thys worke/ by the force of thys duke wyllyam & hys Normans, ii. thousande. ii. hundred and two yeres.

THus endeth the syxt parte.

THE .VII. PARTE.

NOw shaketh my hãde, my pen wayteth dulle,
Forweried & tyred, seyng this worke so lõg/
The authours so rawe, & so farre to culle,
Dymme & derke, & straunge to vnderstond,
And farre out of tune to make trew songe,
The storyes and yeres to make accordaunte,
That yt to the reder myght shew trewe and plesaunt.

But vnder correccyon all thynge may be borne,
And so I rempyte yt to suche as ben experte/
Prayenge to theym, as I haue done before me,
To fauour and correcte/ so that vnder couerte
Of their proteccyon, this may shewe a parte,
Holsome and playne, fruytefull and profytable,
And to the reders and herers, ioyous and delectable.

For were not that/ I durste not farther wade,
The streme is so depe, and therto so daungerous.
But one thynge there is, that somwhat doth me glade,
The great daunger and stoyres doughtous,
Ben ouer passed/ so that more bountrous,
The authours ben / and more manyfestly
The stoyres folowynge they done certyfye.

Wherfore as before to you I dyd promyse/
Thys .vii. parte nowe I wolde take in hande.
Beseechynge alwayes in moste humble wyse,
The welle of bountye, that flowre moste aboundande,
By whose humylyte man fyrste comforte fande,
And was redemed from hys captyuyte/
This parte to fynysshe, she wyll myne helper be.

And bryngе to ende thys worke that I haue take
On hande to wryte, onely of entent,
To bryngе to lyght, and forth shulde not shake,
The olde honoure that to Englande was ment
Of famous wryters, whyche haue theyr dayes spent,
Unto theyr folowers, all vyces to subdue,
Honoure to mayntayne, and to exalte vertue.

Here after folowyth the storye of duke wyllyam Conqueroure.

THE.CCXIX.CHAPITER.

WIllyam duke of Normandye surnamed Conquerour, baste sonne of Robert the vi. duke of that land dukedome, and neuew vnto Edward the confessour, as before is shewed/ beganne hys dompnyon ouer thys realme of Englande, the .xb. daye of October, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon a thousand .l.xvii./ and the .ii. yere of the fyrste Phylyppe then kyng of Fraunce/ and was crowned kynge of the same vppon Crystmas daye nexte folowynge, of Aldredus archbyshoppe of yorke, for so myche as at that tyme Stigandus archbyshoppe of Caunterbury was then absent, or durste not come in the presence of the kynge/ to whome he ought no great fauour, as in the sequele shall appere.

When wyllyam had sette in quyet a great parte of thys lande, he betoke the gydyng therof to his brother the byshop of Bayon/ and in lent folowynge sayled into Normandye / and led wyth hym the chefe rulers of England, for doute of styrryng in tyme of his absence. Amonge the whyche the two erles Warear and Edwyne rulers of Northumberlande and Mercia were two/ wyth also Stigandus and Edgare Ethelynge. To the whyche Stigandus wyllyam shewed great reuerence and countenaunce of fauoure. But all proued to great dissymulacyon after/ as was shewed by the deprynynge of the sayd Stigan-

dus and pryſonment of hym in wyn cheſter towne, by a longe terme and ſeaſon.

In the nexte wynter, whan wyllyam had ſped hys beſynesſe in Nor mandy / he retourned into England wyth greate pompe, and ſette a greuous trybute vpon the Englyſhmen By reaſon wherof ſome partyes of the lande rebelled agayne hym, and ſpecyally the cytye of Exceſtour, the whyche defended hym for a certayne of tyme. But laſtly by force he wanne the ſayde cytye, and punyſſhed the cyteſyns greuouſly.

For thys and other ſterne dedes of wyllyam / Marcharus erle of Nor thumberlande, wyth Edgare Athelynge and dyuers other, as hys moder and two ſyſters Margarete and Cryſtyan, ſayled into Scotlande. But another cronycle telleth, ỹ Edgare entendynge wyth Agatha hys moder and hys two ſyſters, to haue ſayled into Almayne where he was borne / was by tempeſt of the ſee dryuen into Scotlande. where of Malcolyne than kynge of Scottes they were ioyouſly receyued. And in proceſſe of tyme the ſayde Malcolyne caſte ſuche loue vnto the ſayd Margaret / that he toke her to wyfe / as be fore is touched in the fyrſte chappter of the ſtory of Canut⁹. Of the which Margaret the ſayde Malcolyne receyued .ii. doughters and .vi. ſonnes, wherof thre named Edgare, Alexãder, ⁊ Dauyd, were kynges of Scotlande nexte folowynge theyr fader. And Wolde one of ỹ forſayd doughters was after maryed vnto the fyrſt Henry kynge of Englande. And the other doughter Mary / was maryed to Euſtace erle of Bolongũ. Of Wolde the fyrſte doughter / Henry receyued .ii. ſonnes named wyllyam and Rychard, the whych bothe dyed before theyr fader / as after in ỹ ſtory of the ſayd Henry ſhall appere. And he receyued alſo two doughters named Wolde and Mary / whych Wolde or Mawde was maryed to ỹ fyrſte Henry emperour of Almayne. After whoſe deth ſhe was agayne maryed to Godfrey of Geoffrey Plãtagenet erle of Jungeowe. Of whom deſcended Henry ſurnamed ſhorte mantell, and kynge of Englande, called Henry the ſeconde. And the other doughter Mary was maryed vnto the erle of Blaynes / of whõ deſcended Wolde or Mawde, that was wyfe vnto kynge Stephen.

Than it foloweth, that thys wyllyam after thys forſayd trybute ſo leuyed of the Englyſhemen, and knowynge of the departynge of the lordes forſayde, kepte the other the ſtreyter. But it was not longe after that Marcharus was reconſyled to the kynges grace / and ſayled agayn as folowynge ſhall be ſhewed. For thys and other cauſes whyche were tedyous to ſhewe / wyllyam exalted the Normans, and gaue vnto them the chyefe poſſeſſyons of the lande / ſo that they dayly encreaſed in great honour and welth, and the Englyſh men as faſte decayed. Kynge wyllyã alſo made .iiii. ſtronge caſtels / where of two be ſette at yorke, the thyrde at Lyndetyngham or Notyngham, and manned them wyth Normans, and the .iiii. at Lyncolne.

About the thyrde yere of his reygne Harolde ⁊ Canutus ſonnes of Swanus kynge of Denmarke, came on lande in the North of Humber wyth a ſtronge nauy / and in all haſte drew them towarde yorke. Than the Normans whyche hadde the rule of the towne and caſtelles, feryng that the Englyſhemen wolde ayde the Danys, and wyth the houſes of the ſuburbes of the towne haue fylled the towne dyches / ſette the ſuburbes on fyre.

fyre. wherof ꝑ flame was so bygge, and wyth the wynde so stronge/ that it toke into the cytye, & brent a parte therof, wyth the mynster of saynt Peter. In tyme wherof the Danys by fauour of some of the citesyns entred the cytye/ and slewe more than thre thousande of the Normans.

But it was not longe or kynge wyllyam chased the Danys to theyr shyppes/and toke so greate displeasure wyth the inhabytauntes of that prouynce, that he destroyed the land lyenge betwene yorke and Durham in suche wyse, that. ix. yeres after or there about, the lande laye vnlabored & vntylled/onely out taken saynt Johns lande of Beuerley, the which was for borne by reason of a wreche done by dyuyne power, vpon one of kynge wyllyams knyghtes. The whych as he was besyed in wastyng and spoylynge of the sayde countre, fyll sodeynly wyth hys horse/so that hys horse brake hys necke, and the knyghtes face was turned to his backe.

And of the sampyne that the people of that countre susteyned/ wonders are reported, that they shuld eate all maner of vermyn, as cattes, ratte, dogges, & other/ so harde they were kepte by the warre of the kyng. And in that yere also Wolde or Wawde the wyfe of kynge wyllyā/was crowned quene of England, of Aldredus archebyshop of yorke.

In the. iiii. yere of the reygne of thys kynge the Scottes with Malcolyne theyr kynge entred Northumberlande/ and wasted and destroyed sore that countre, and slewe there in myche people / and many they toke prysoners, & helde thē as bonde men.

But in the. vi. yere of hys kyngdome, wyllyam made such warre vpon the Scottes/that he lastely forced the sayde Malcolyne to swere to hym bothe homage and feauty/as it is wytnessed of wyllyam of Malmesbery and other wryters.

THE.CCXX. CHAPITER.

Kynge willyam by counsayle of the erle of Hertford and other, caused the abbeyes of Englande to be serched. And what money in them at that season was founde/he caused it to be brought to hys treasour. For the whyche dede after the exposycyō of some authours/the sayd erle was punysshed, as after shall be shewed.

Soone vpon thys in the tyme by twene Easter and wytsontyde / was holden a solempne counsayle at wynchester of the clergy of Englande. At the whyche counsayle were presente two cardynalles, sent from ꝑ second Alexander than pope. In thys counsayle, Stygandus archebyshop of Cāterbury was deprysed from his dygnytye / and that for thre skyles. The fyrste was/for that he had holden wrongfully that byshoprych, whyle Robert the archebyshop was lyuynge. The seconde cause was/for that he hadde receyued the Paule of pope Benet the. v. of that name. And the thyrde cause was/ for that he occupyed the sayd Paule wythout lycence & lefull authorite of ꝑ courte of Rome.

Than Stigand⁹ proued that benyuolence of kynge wyllyam. For where before he made to hym louyng and frendly countenaūce, & dyd vnto hym greate reuerence/ than he chaūged all his myldenesse into sternesse, and exceuted hym by ꝑ popes authoryte/so that in the ende Stigandus was deprysed of hys dygnytye, and kepte in wynchester as a prysoner ꝑ terme of hys lyfe.

It is recorded of hym that he was so couetous and sparyng, ꝑ he wold

take

take nothynge of hys owne/ & vsed to swere by Allhalowes, that he had not one peny. But that othe was proued vntrewe after hys deth, by a lytell keye that was founde fastened about hys necke. For by that keye was founden greate treasour vnder the erth in mo places than one.

In thys counsayle also were put downe dyuers other bysshoppes, abbotes, and priours, by the meanes of kynge wyllyam/and all to the entent that he myghte preferre Normans to the rule of the chyrch, as he hadde preferred hys knyghtes to the rule of the temporaltye, that he myght stande in the more suerty of the land.

In thys counsayle saynt wolstan that than was bysshop of worceter/ ared beserp of the kynge certayne possessyons fallen into hys handes, by the deth of Aldred late archbyshop of yorke, that were wyth holden by ỹ sayd Aldredus. But the kyng myght not here than of any suche maters, for hurtyng of the lyberty of the chyrche of yorke.

Than vpon wytsonday after/the kynge gaue the sayd archebysshoprych of yorke vnto Thomas a chanon of Bayon/& sent for Lamfrank an other Norman than abbot of Cadomonency, and gaue vnto hym the archebysshoprych of Caunterbury. Thys Lamfranke was an Italyan borne/and was perfytely lerned in ỹ scyence of theologye or holy wrytte, & ryght apte in gouernynge of thynges bothe spyrytuall and temporall. Upon our lady daye the Assumpcyõ the kynge made hym archebysshop of Cauterbury. Than Thomas that was chosen archebysshop of yorke/ came vnto Lamfranke for to be sacred as the vsage wolde. Of whom Lamfranke ared an othe, & his professyon in wrytynge concernyng his obedyence. Thomas answered and sayde that he wolde neuer do that/ but yf he myghte therof here sufficyent authorite and skylfull reasons & byndynge, by the whyche it myght be knowen that he shulde so do wythout any preiudyce of hys chyrche. Than Lamfranke shewed and proued skylfully, that hys askynge was reasonable and ryghtfull. But yet Thomas wolde not assent/but wythsayde it and went for that tyme from Lamfrank vnsacred/ & shewed vnto the kyng, that Lamfranke entended to do wronge to hym and to his chyrche of yorke. Than the kyng callyng Lamfrank before hym sayd, than he trusted more in his cunnyng than he dyd in good fayth or reason. But he answered so reasonably vnto ỹ kyng that in the ende Thomas by the cõmaundement of the kyng was fayne to come agayne to Lamfranke to be sacred/and wrote hys professyõ with hys owne hande of hys obedyence and radde it/in the whyche was conteyned that he shulde be obedyent in all that belongeth to the worshyp of god and all crystẽ fayth. which done, he was sacred & so decyded. And shortly after Lamfranke ared & toke professyõ of all ỹ bysshoppes of Englãd.

THE.CCXXI.CHAPITER.

IN the. v. yere of wyllyam the conquerours reygne/ Edwyn and Marcharus erle of Mercia and of Northumberlande, beynge in fere of daunger, voyded ỹ kynges court secretly, and were rebelles som what of tyme. But at length it turned to bothe theyr harmes. For Edwyne was slayn as he went toward Scotlande/ and erle Marcharus wyth ỹ bysshop of Dorcham named Egelwynus, toke the ile of Ely for theyr sauegarde. But the kynge held them so shorte, that in processe they were fayne

fayne to yelde them to the kynges grace and mercy. Than he sent the bysshop to the abbey of Abyndon to be kept there as a prysoner/ where he was so daynteyly fed, that he dyed for hunger. But some wryters testyfye that he was so hyghe herted, that after he knewe he shuld remayne there as prysoner/ he wolde neuer ete mete after. And erle Warcharus was had to the towre of London.

In the .vi. yere of hys reygne/ kyng wyllyam, as before is touched went wyth a great army into Scotland/ and subdued Walcolyne theyr kynge, as before I haue shewed in the prycedynge chappter.

In the .vii. yere of kyng wyllyam/ Thomas archebysshop of yorke not beynge content to be vnder the rule and obedyence of Lamfranke, appealed to the courte of Rome/ so that the sayde two archbysshoppes appered both in proper persone before the pope Alexaunder afore named. In whose presence Lamfranke was so well fauoured, that where Thomas aboue named and Remigius bysshop of Worchester, were for skylfull causes depryued of theyr croyses and rynges/ he by hys fauour & meanes restored them to theyr former dygnytees. The cause of Thomas was, for that he had holpen duke wyllyam to warde hys iourney into Englande. For the whyche the sayd duke promysed hym a bysshoprych yf he optayned bycotry. And ỳ other was depryued, for ỳ he was proued a prestes sonne. Than Thomas moued the cause of the prymacy of Caunterbury, & of subiection that to hym shuld belonge/ and sayde that these two sees were farre asonder, that is to meane Caunterbury and yorke/ and that nother of them by the constytucyons of Gregory shulde be subiecte vnto other/ but that the one is more worthy than the other, for so myche as he is of elder tyme. To thys answered Lamfranke and sayd/ that ỳ constytucyons of Gregory made no mencyō of Cāūterbury, but of yorke & London. Than the pope remytted thys mater to be determyned before ỳ kyng & the bysshoppes of England/ and gaue ỳ palle vnto Lamfranke.

But for this terme or word palle, is to many one vnknowen/ I shall therfore here shewe vnto you what thynge it is. This palle is an indument ỳ euery archbysshop must haue/ & is not in full authorytee of an archbysshoppe, tyll he haue receyued hys palle of the pope/ and is a thynge of white like to ỳ breded of a stole. But it is of a nother fassyon. For where ỳ stole is made in length, and is worne about the prestes necke/ thys is toyned togyder aboue, so that it lyeth a parte therof vppon the shulders. And that one ende hangeth streyght downe to the grounde before, and that other behynde, garnysshed in dyuers places therof wyth crosses. And where the stole is worne nerte vnto the albe whan the preste is requested to masse/ thys palle is worne vpon thys vestymente ouermoste of all, whan an archebysshoppe syngeth hys masse.

Whan Lamfranke had thus sped hys nedys at Rome/ he wyth ỳ other two bysshoppes retourned into Englande/ where thys mater hangyng in variaunce betwene the sayde two archebysshoppes, was had in cōmunycacion. For tryall wherof Bedaes story was brought forth. where in it appered, that from the fyrste Augu/ styns tyme to Bedaes last dayes, vpon the season of a hundred & xxxix. yeres/ the archbysshop of Caunterbury had prymacy of all the bysshoppes of England thā called Brytayn, and of Irlande also/ and that the

archbys-

archbyshoppes of Caunterbury had kept coũsayles nere vnto yorke, and cleped therunto the byshoppes of yorke/ and made some byshoppes, & depryued dyuers from theyr dygnytyes/ and to this were adioyned certayne pryuyleges, that were graunted for this maner of doynge.

When Thomas had harde all the allegacyons, he denyed all/ and layd for hym the pystle, in the whych pope Gregory demed that the chyrche of yorke and of London shulde be euen perys/ and neyther of theym subiecte to other.

To this was answered by Lamfrank, that he was not byshop of Lõdon, nor this questyon was not moued for the chyrche of London.

But Thomas sayde that Gregory had graũted to Augustyne, power to haue vnder hym all ỳ byshoppes of Englande / and that London at ỳ day was the pryncypall see of all Englande. All be yt ỳ the popes mynde was, that betwene Lõdon and yorke shulde be no dyuersyte of honour, because they were archeflamynes/ and that by theyr vnyte all other myghte lyue vnder dewe obedyence. And though Augustyne chaunged ỳ see from London to Caunterbury/ yet Gregory wolde not that Augustyne successours shuld be aboue the byshoppes of yorke. For he wolde then haue set in hys epystle these wordes folowynge: I graunte to the Augustyne and to thy successours. But for he wold ỳ no such power shuld stretche to his successours / therefore he made no mẽcyon of his successours.

Lamfranke to this answered and sayd, If that authoryte were graunted to Augustyne alone & not to hys successours/ yt was a symple gyfte ỳ the pope gaue vnto Augustyne, that was so famelyer wyth hym/ and namely whyle Augustine ordeyned nor sacred no byshoppe of yorke whyle he lyued. For ỳ see was full durynge his lyfe/ by reason wherof he put not hys authoryte in execucyon. But pryuyleges of popes confermeth this dignyte to Augustynes successours of Caunterbury/ and demeth that yt is skyll and good reason, that all the chyrches of Englande shulde take lore and lyghte of that place. For of that welle or place procedeth fyrst the doctrine of Cristes fayth. And where thou sayest Thomas, that Gregory myght yf he had wolde, haue confyrmed all thynge vndowtably wyth thys worde successours/ that is soth. But yet the lackynge of this worde, dothe no preiudyce to the chyrche of Caunterbury. For when that Cryste sayde to Peter, I shall gyue to the the kayes of the kingdome of heuen/ he myght haue also sayd yf he wold, I graunt the same power to thy successours. And though he sayde not so/ yet he ment the successours of Peter, nothynge of reuerence nor yet of authoryte/ but the dyspensacyon of holy chyrche and offyce of the same, was and is holy in theym, whyche onely springeth by vertue of Cryste into Peter, and from Peter into his successours. And yf thou can discerne betwene false and soth/ loke what hath strength in all, hath strength in the parte/ and what hath strength in the more, hath also strẽgth in ỳ lesse. The chyrche of Rome is as yt were all of all chyrches/ & other chyrches ben as membres therof: lyke as one man is the kynd of all synguler men, and euery synguler man is the kynd of all mankynde: so in some maner of wyse the chyrch and the see of Rome is as yt were the kynde, and conteyneth all, in comparyson to other chyrches/ and yet in euery chyrch remayneth the full holenes of Crystes fayth. And also the chyrche of Rome

is great.

is greatteſt of all chirches/and what hath ſtrength in that chyrche, ſhall haue ſtrēgth in leſſe chyrches/ſo that the power that is fyrſte gyuen to euery chyrche, ſhall ſprynge into the ſucceſſours of the ſame/ but yf yt be by ſome ſpecyall thynge excepted & out taken. Therfore I cōclude as Cryſt ſayde to Peter, ſo he ſayde to all the byſhoppes of Rome/ and ſo conſequētly was ſayde to Auguſtynes ſucceſſours of Gregorye, as was ſayde vnto Auguſtyne. wherfore yt muſte appere, that lyke as Caunterbury is ſubiecte to Rome, ſo muſte yorke be ſubiecte to Caunterbury/whych ſent to yorke prechours, to teache and preache vnto them the ryghte fayth. And where thou ſayeſte that Gregory wolde that Auguſtyne ſhuld haue his ſee at London, yt may not ſtand wyth reaſon. For who wolde trowe that ſo noble a diſcyple as Auguſtyn was/ wold wythſtande or do agayn hys mayſters wyll, or agayne holy decrees. And yf yt were ſo as thou haſte alledged/ what is that to me, that am not biſhop of London as oft before I haue ſayd. Therfore yf this mater may thus ſeaſe wythout more ſtryfe/ſo be yt ended. And yf thou deſyreſt contynuaunce of plee/ I ſhall not fayle the, but defende my ryghte and office gladly.

By theſe reaſons & other at length Thomas was ouercomen/and graūted gladly that the farther bynke of Humber ſhulde be the begynnyng of hys dioces. And ouer ỳ yt was there demed, that in all thynges concernynge the worſhyppe of god and the fayth of holy chyrch/ the archbyſhop of yorke ſhuld be ſubiecte to the archbyſhoppe of Caunterburye. So that yf the archebyſhoppe of Caunterburye wolde call a coūſayll in any parte of Englande/ the archebyſhoppe of yorke ſhulde be therat, wyth all the byſhoppes of hys prouynce/ and be alſo obedīēt vnto the lawfull heſtes. And at all ſeaſons when the archbyſhop of Caunterbury ſhuld be ſacred the archebyſhoppe of yorke, with the byſhoppes of ỳ chyrche, ſhulde come to Cauterbury and saker hym there. And yf the archebyſhoppe of yorke ſhuld be ſtalled or ſacred/thē ſhall he come to Caunterburye, and elys where in all Englande, where the archebyſhop of Caunterburye woll hym aſſygne, and there to be ſacred of hym/ and he ſhall make to hym an othe with profeſſyon and obedyence.

When Lamfranke harde this iudgement gyuen thus/ he reioyſed inwardely. And for yt ſhulde remayne of recorde that his ſucceſſours ſhuld not newely plede for that cauſe/ he cauſed yt to be regeſtred in moſte ſubſtancyall wyſe. And ouer that ſent a pyſtle for that cauſe to Alexander forenamed pope of all this doenge, wyth the profeſſyon of Thomas the archbyſhop forſayd. Of this Lamfranke is many notable thynges wryten of diuers writers. And after ſome he is admytted for a ſaynte.

THE.CCXXII. CHAPITER.

ABoute the.x. yere of kynge wyllyams reygne / Roger erle of Hereforde, by whoſe counſayl the kynge as before ys ſayde hadde ſerched all the abbayes of England, whyche erle hadde wedded hys ſyſter vnto Rauf erle of eeſt Angles/ that is to ſaye, of Norf. and Suff. agayne the kynges mynde/ he wyth the ſayde Rauſe made conſpyracy agayne the kynge / & cauſed an other erle by theyr ſubtyle meanes to be agreable vnto theyr vntrouth, whyche erle had to name walref. But at length when thys erle walref hadde knowen the fyne of theyr entent/ he

I went

went vnto Lamfranke, and shewed to hym the hole mater. By whose counsayll he shortely after sayled vn to the kyng then beynge in Normandye/and dysclosed the mater to hym, and putte hym holy in hys grace and mercye.

When the kynge had harde of these tydynges/ he made good semblaunt vnto this erle walref, and sped hym the faster into Englande. But howe so yt was, the forenamed two erles were warned of dysclosynge of this mater / in such wyse ỳ they gaderyd to theym suche strength, that ỳ kyng coude not haue them at his pleasure, but as he was fayne by stronge hãde to chase and outlawe theym. And for he fayled of his purpose of them, he empoysoned erle walref at wynchester/ and lastely caused hym to be hedded, more of tyranny, then of iustyce, as affermeth myne authoure/ whose corps was buryed at the abbay of Crowlande.

In the .x. yere was holden a great counsayll or synode of the clergye of the lande in saynt Paules chyrche of London/ where amõges many thyn ges ordeyned for the rule of ỳ chyrch of England, dyuers byshoppes sees were transported from one place to a nother/as Selwey to Chychester, Kyrton to Exeter, welles to Bathe, Shyrbourne to Salysbury, Dorchester to Lyncolne, and the see of Lychefelde to Chester. whyche thyn ges thus ordered, wyth many other for the chyrche / the sayde counsayll was dyssolued.

In the .xiii. yere of hys reygne/ after the deth of Herman byshoppe of Salysbury, succeded Olmũde ỳ kyn ges chaunceller. The whyche buyl ded there a new chyrch/and brought thyther clerkes that were garnysshed wyth vertue and connynge. And he hym self wrote & bounde bokes that were occupyed in the dyuyne seruyce of the chyrche, as the ordynall or consuetudynary, the whyche at this daye is occupyed in the more partye of Englande, wyth walys, and Irlande, and is nowe named Salysbu ry vse, or the ordynary after Salys bury vse.

In the .xv. yere of his reygne Ro bert the eldest sonne of kynge wyllyam, the whyche was surnamed Cur those or Shorthose and shorte bote also/ for he myght not haue the du chy of Normandy, whych his father hadde somtyme assygned and gyuen vnto hym, and after for hys wylde nesse hadde agayne resumed yt/he wyth fauoure and ayde of ỳ French kynge Phylyppe and of Lewys hys sonne, toke prayes in that duchy, and put hys father to myche trouble / in so myche that at length the father & the sonne met in playne felde with .ii. great hostes/ and eyther wyth other faught a cruell batayll.

It is radde that durynge thys ba tayll wyllyam was throwẽ from his horse, and in great ieopardy of hys lyfe. wherof hys sonne Robert beyng ware/ was so moued wyth pyrye, ỳ he rescowed his father, and delyue red hym free from all daunger of his enymyes. But howe so yt betyde of the kynge/ trouth yt is that many of his men were slayn, & his second son wyllyam the rede sore hurte, so that in the ende kynge wyllyam was fayn to refuse the felde, and gatte at that tyme none aduauntage of his sayde sonne. For the whiche dede and rebel lyon thus made by the sonne/ ỳ fader accursed hym after the opynyon of some wryters.

Whyle kyng wyllyam was thus oc cupyed in Normandy/the Northum bers warre sterne & rebell, and slewe in theyr rage walkerus the bishop of Durham / but for what cause myne

authour

authour expʒessyth not.

Aboute thys tyme, warynge erle of Shʒewesbury made two abbayes in the woʒshyp of god and sayncte Mylborgh/ wherof one was set in the suburbes of Shʒewesbury, and ỳ other at wenioke.

In the.xvii.yere of kyng wyllyam/ a cursed stryfe was arered betwene Thurstone abbot of Glastenbury a Noʒman, and his munkes. wherof a part of the cause was, that the abbot despysed, & wold haue set a part such songe and offices, as by pope Gʒegory and Augustyn his dyscyple, of old tyme to them was assygned/ & wolde haue compelled them to haue folowed the vse of one wyllyā of Felscamp. And ouer that this Thurstone wasted and spēded the goodes of ỳ place inoʒdynatly, in lechery and by other insolent meanes/ and wythdʒew frō the munkes theyʒ olde accustomed dyet. Foʒ the whyche causes fyʒst began great woʒdes wyth chydyng, and after strokes and fyghtes/ so ỳ the abbot gat vnto hym armed men, and fyll vppon hys munkes, & slewe two of them at ỳ hygh alter, and woūded of theym.xviii. And the munkes wyth fourmes and candelsticks defended theym, in suche wyse that they hurte many of the armed men. Then the complaynte was bʒought beforе the kyng/ by whose iudgemēt Thurstone was agayne returned vnto Cadony frō whēs he was bʒought and the mūkes were spʒedde abʒode into dyuers houses thoʒough Englande. But yt is sayde that in the tyme of wyllyā the Rede/ this Thurstoñ obteyned the rule of that abbay agayne foʒ the pʒyce of. v. hundʒed pounde.

In the.xix.yere of his reygne, kyng willyam then rayled a new maner of trybute. Foʒ he caused to be gadered thoʒough England of euery hyde of lande. vi.s. In hyde of lande conteyneth .v.perdes/ and euery perde conteyneth foure acres. And so an hyde of lande conteyneth.xx. acres, an acre conteyneth .xl. perches in length and .iiii. in bʒede/ & .iiii. acres make a yerde/ and.v.yerdes make an hyde/ and.viii.hydes make a knightes fee. By the whyche reason a knyghtes fee shuld welde a hundʒed & .x. acres/ and that is demed foʒ a plough tyll a yere.

And not longe after he caused to be serchyd howe myche lande eche of hys barons helde/ how many knyghtes fees/ how many townes/ & what nombʒe of men and of bestes were wyth in this lande/ wherof he commaunded a boke to be made, whyche all was done. Foʒ the whyche dede, this lande was after greued wyth many sondʒy plages as after shall appere. In the.xx. yere of the reygne of kynge wyllyam/ Canutus kynge of Denmarke wyth helpe of the Flemmynges, to whome he was called wyth a great armye came towarde Englande. But by the pʒoupsyon of the kynge they were so fered, that they were let of theyʒ iourney. Then kyng wyllyam gaue vnto .iii. of his champpons.iii.byshopʒyches. To Moʒyce he gaue London, to willyam he gaue Thetfoʒde, and to Robert he gaue Chester/ whych Robert was after remoued to Couentre. Of this Robert repoʒteth Ranulfe, that he scraped frō one beme of his chirch in Couentre.v.hūdʒed marke, to fyll wyth ỳ hande of kyng wyllyam. Foʒ erle Leofricus ỳ was duke of Mercia in the tyme of Edwarde the cōfessour/ had adourned that chyʒch with great ryches of golde, syluer, & other pʒecyous iewelles.

In thys yere Edgare Ethelynge, whych was reconcyled vnto the kynges fauoure/ by lycence of the kynge

went vnto Lamfranke, and shewed to hym the hole mater. By whose counsayll he shortely after sayled vn to the kyng then beynge in Normandye, and dysclosed the mater to hym, and putte hym holy in hys grace and mercye.

when the kynge had harde of these tydynges, he made good semblaunt vnto this erle walter, and sped hym the faster into Englande. But howe so yt was, the forenamed two erles were warned of dysclosynge of this mater, in such wyse ỹ they gaderyd to theym suche strength, that ỹ kyng coude not haue them at his pleasure, but as he was fayne by stronge hãde to chase and outlawe theym. And for he fayled of his purpose of them, he emprysoned erle walter at wynchester, and lastely caused hym to be hedded, more of tyranny, then of iustyce, as affermeth vpne authoure, whose corps was buryed at the abbay of Crowlande.

In the .xi. yere was holden a great counsayll or synode of the clergye of the lande in sayne Paules chyrche of London, where amõges many thynges ordeyned for the rule of ỹ chyrch of England, dyuers bysshoppes sees were transported from one place to a nother, as Selwey to Chychester, Kyrton to Exeter, welles to Bathe, Shyrbourne to Salysbury, Worchester to Lyncolne, and the see of Lychefelde to Chester. whyche thynges thus ordered, with many other for the chyrche, the sayde counsayll was dyssolued.

In the .xiii. yere of hys regne, after the deth of Herman bysshoppe of Salysbury, succeded Osmũde ỹ kynges chaunceller. The whyche buylded there a new chyrch, and brought thyther clerkes that were garnysshed with vertue and connynge. And he hym self wrote .3. bounde bokes that were occupyed in the dyuyne seruyce of the chyrche, as the ordynall or consuetudynary, the whyche at this daye is occupyed in the more parte of Englande, with walys, and Irlande, and is nowe named Salysbury vse, or the ordynary after Salysbury vse.

In the .xv. yere of his regne Robert the eldest sonne of kynge wyllyam, the whyche was surnamed Curthose or Shorthose and shorte bote also, for he myght not haue the duchy of Normandy, whych his father hadde somtyme assygned and gyuen vnto hym, and after for hys wyldenesse hadde agayne resumed yt, he with fauoure and ayde of ỹ French kynge Philyppe and of Lewys hys sonne, toke prayes in that duchy, and put hys father to myche trouble, in so myche that at length the father & the sonne met in playne felde with .ii. great hostes, and eyther with other faught a cruell batayll.

It is radde that durynge thys batayll wyllyam was throwe from his horse, and in great iopardy of hys lyfe. wherof hys sonne Robert beyng ware, was so moued with pyte, ỹ he relowed his father, and delyuered hym free from all daunger of his enymyes. But howe so yt betyde of the kynge, trouth yt is that many of his men were slayn, & his second son wyllyam the rede sore hurte, so that in the ende kynge wyllyam was fayn to refuse the felde, and gatte at that tyme none aduauntage of his sayde sonne. For the whiche bede and rebellyon thus made by the sonne, ỹ fader accursed hym after the oppynyon of some writers.

whyle kyng wyllyam was thus occupyed in Normandy, the Northumbers warte sterne & rebell, and slewe in theyr rage walherus the bisshop of Durham, but for what cause myne

authour

authour expressyth not.

Aboute thys tyme, warynge erle of Shrewesbury made two abbayes in the worshyp of god and sayncte Wyborgh/ wherof one was set in the suburbes of Shrewesbury, and ỳ other at wenlok.

In the.xvii.yere of kyng wyllyam/ a cursed stryfe was areysed betwene Thurstone abbot of Glastenbury a Norman, and his munkes. wherof a part of the cause was, that the abbot despysed, & wold haue set a part such songe and offices, as by pope Gregory and Augustyn his dysceple, of old tyme to them was assygned/ & wolde haue compelled them to haue folowed the vse of one wyllyā of Fescamp. And ouer that this Thurstone wasted and spended the goodes of ỳ place mordynatly, in lechery and by other insolent meanes/ and withdrew frō the munkes theyr olde accustomed dyet. For the whyche causes tyrst be ganne great wordes wyth chydyng, and after strokes and fyghtes/ so ỳ the abbot gat vnto hym armed men, and fyll vppon hys munkes, & slewe two of them atỳ hygh alter, and wounded of theym.xviii. And the munkes wyth fournes and candelsticches defended theym, in suche wyse that they hurte many of the armed men. Then the complaynte was brought before the kyng/ by whose iudgement Thurstone was agayne returned vnto Caborny frō whēs he was brought and the mūkes were spredde abrode into dyuers houses thorough Englande. But yt is sayde that in the tyme of wyllyā the Lede/ this Thurstō obteyned the rule of that abbay agayne for the pryce of. v. hundred pounde.

In the xix.yere of his reygne, kyng willyam then raysed a new maner of tribute. For he caused to be gadered thorough England of euery hyde of lande. vi.s. In hyde of lande conteyneth .v.perdes/ and euery perde conteyneth foure acres. And so an hyde of lande conteyneth.xx. acres, an acre conteyneth .xl. perches in length and .iiii. in brede/ .xiiii. acres make a yerde/ and.v.yerdes make an hyde/ and.viii.hydes make a knyghtes fee. By the whyche reason a knyghtes fee shuld welde a hundred.x.acres/ and that is demed for a plough tyll a yere.

And not longe after he caused to be serched howe myche lande eche of hys barons held/ how many knyghtes fees/ how many townes/ & what nombre of men and of beestes were wyth in this lande / wherof he commaunded a boke to be made, whyche all was done. For the whyche dede, this lande was after greued wyth many sondry plages as after shall appere. In the.xx.yere of the reygne of kynge wyllyam/ Canutus kynge of Denmarke wyth helpe of the Flemmynges, to whome he was called wyth a great armye came towarde Englande. But by the prouysyon of the kynge they were so feted, that they were let of theyr iourney. Then kyng wyllyam gaue vnto .iii. of his champyons.iii.bysshopryches. To Royce he gaue London, to willyam he gaue Thetford, and to Robert he gaue Chester/ whych Robert was after remoued to Couentre. Of this Robert reporteth Ranulfe, that he scraped frō one dente of his church in Couentre.v.hundred marke, to fyll wyth ỳ hande of kyng wyllyam. For erle Leofricus ỳ was duke of Mercia in the tyme of Edwarde the confessour/ had adourned that church with great ryches of golde syluer, & other precyous iewelles.

In thys yere Edgare Ethelynge, whych was reconcyled vnto the kynges fauour/ by licence of the kynge

sayled into Apulia.

Then beganne the forsayde plages to sprynge. For greate morayne fell vppon the brute bestes, and brennynge feuours amonges the people, and also great hũger and barreynes of ꝑ erth. Also in this yere great hurt was done in many places of ꝑ lande by fyre, and specyally in the cytye of London/ where vpon the. vii. day of the moneth of Julii sodayne fyre began, the whyche brent a great parte of the chyrche of saynte Paule, wyth also a great parte of the cytye.

Then kynge wyllyam beynge in Normandye was syke, and kept his chamber at Roan a longe time. wher fore Phylyppe the Frenche kynge in hys game sayde that wyllyam lay in chyldbedde, and norysshed hys fatte wombe. The whyche wordes when they were blowen to kynge wyllyãs erys, he was greuously dyscontent and sayde, when I am chyrched I shall offer to hym a thousande candelys lyghte, wyth the whyche he shall holde hym smally contented. The whyche promyse he after perfor med. For in the moneth of July whẽ Corne, fruyt, and grapes were moste florishynge/ he entred Fraunce with a great army/ and sette on fyre many cytyes and townes in the west syde of Fraunce/ and lastely came to the cytye of Meaus, and fyred yt & brent a parte therof wyth the chyrch of our lady/ wherin he brent a womã beyng closed in the walle of the sayd chyrch as a recluse.

But of this thynge speketh not the cronycle of Fraunce/ Nor yet for the more parte of any thynge that soundeth to theyr dyshonour done vnto theym by Englyshemen.

In this hete, or as some wryters haue by ꝑ leppyng of an horse/ kyng wyllyam toke such a dysease or sykenes, that yt was the cause of hys deth.

And when he felt hym thus greued/ he called his sonnes before hym, and exhorted theym in his beste maner, that they shulde charytably loue and fauoure euery of them the other, and holde to gyder as louyng brethrne/ & after made his testamẽt, and therin ordeyned wyllyam Rufus or wyllyam the rede to be kynge of England. And Normandye he beset vnto Robert Curthose. And to Henry his yongest sonne he bequethed his treasour and mouable goodes. And that done he enfourmed hys two eldest sonnes of the dyspospcyon of both peoples/ and warned wyllyam to be louynge and lyberall to his subiectes, and Robert to be sterne and sturdy vnto his. Then he was moued with myldenes and delyuerȳd from prison hys own brother the byshop of Bayon, Marcharus erle of Northũberlande. wynotus the sonne of Harolde, or after some the sonne of Goodwyne, that was sent to wyllyã by Edwarde the confessour to remayne for a pledge for his sayde fader Goodwyn. And shortely after these thynges wyth other done/ he dyed in Normandye, and was buryed in ꝑ cytye of Caan/ when he had reygned as kyng of Englande. xxi. yeres and vppon .x. monethes, in the moneth of July, and the yere of hys ducherye the. lii.

when wyllyam was dede/ men spake of hym as they do of other prynces/ and sayd that he was wyse and gylefull, ryche and couetous, & loued well to be magnifyed and prayse d/ a fayre speker & a great dyssymuler, a man of skylfull stature but somdeale fatte in the bely, sterne of face and stronge in armys, and therwyth bolde/ and had therwyth great pleasure in huntyng and in makyng of great festes. But he passed al other in leuynge of taskes. whyche condycyon hys subiectes construed. iii.

maner

maner of wayes/ and sayde yt was to the entente that he wolde excell all other in cyvelle, or elles for to withstãde and defende his enymyes, or elles to staunche the appetyte of his couetyse mynde. He buylded.ii. abbayes in Englande/ one at batayl in Susser where he wanne the felde agayne Harolde, and is at thys daye called the abbay of Batail/ & yͤ other he sette besyde London vppon the south syde of Thamys, and named yt Barmoundesay. And in Normandye he buylded two also.

Thys man made the newe forest in the countrey of Southampton / the whyche to brynge aboute he caste downe dyuers chyrches by the space of.xxx. myles, and replenysshed yt wyth wylde bestes/ and made harde and sharpe lawes for the encreasyng of them, as losyng of eyen and other. And he helde Englysshemen so lowe, that in hys dayes was almoste no Englysshe man that bare any office of honoure or rule. But yet somedeale he fauoured the cytye of London, and graunted to the cytesens the fyrste charter that euer they had/ the whych is wryten in Saxon tunge, and sealed wyth grene waxe, and expressed in.viii. or.ix. lynes.

THE.CCXXIII. CHAPITER.

Wyllyam Rufus or wyllyam the rede, the second sonne of wyllyam Conquerour/ beganne hys reygne ouer Englande, in the moneth of Julye, and the yere of our lorde a thousande.lxxxvii/ and the xxxi. yere of the fyrste Phylyppe then kynge of Fraunce.

Ranulfe monke of Chester sheweth in hys boke of Polycronycon, yͤ Robert Curthose eldest sonne of wyllyam Conquerour, was at the tyme of hys fathers deth absent. The whyche herynge that his father hadde preferred hys yonger brother to yͤ kyngdome of Englande, was therwyth greatly amoued/ in so myche that he layde his dukedome to pledge to his brother Henry/ and wyth that good gathered to hym a stronge army, and so landed at Hamptõ.

wherof wyllyam hys brother beynge warned, in all haste sent vnto hym messangers/ to whome he gaue cõmyssyon to say in maner as folowyth. Thy brother wyllyam prayeth yͤ to take no greefe with yͤ he hath done, for he clepeth hym selfe not kynge, but as vnder kynge to reygne vnder the, and by helpe of the that arte greter then he & better, & rather borne. And yf thou consyder yt well, he hath nothynge mysused hym agayn the. For he hath taken vppon hym for a tyme bycause of thyne absence. But for he is nowe in authorite by thy sufferaunce/ he prayeth yͤ he may vnder the so contynue, payeng to the yerely .iii.thousande marke, wyth cõ dycyon that who so ouer lyueth may enioye the kyngdome. when Robert had harde that message to the ende, he wagged hys hedde, as he that conceyued some doublenesse in thys report. But for he was lyberall and allowed more the honour then he dyd hys profyte, as in other thynges folowyng of his dedes yt shall appere/ therfore he lyghtely assented to all that was desyred, and returned shortly after into Normandye wyth pleasaunt wordes wythout profyte.

Thys wyllyam was crowned the xxvii. daye of September, vppon the daye of saynte Cosma and Dampan, and was well ayded of Lamfrãk whyle he lyued. He was dyuers & vnstable of maners/ so yͤ betwene hym & his lordes was often dyssencyõ. In yͤ syrynge of somer folowyng

hys coronacyon / Odo byshoppe of Bayō, whych as before ye haue hard was delyuered out of prysion by wyl liam Cōquerour, came into Englād. whom the kynge ioyously receyued/ and gaue vnto hym shortly after the erledome of Kent. But he toke vpon hym in processe of tyme to rule, in suche wyse as the kynge grudged wyth hys doynge. And for thys the kynge and his sayde vncle fyll at vn kyndnesse/so ỹ he withdrew hym frō the kynge, and ayed hym wyth the byshop of Durham, the erles of Nor thūberland and Shrewesbury, with other. The whyche confederyd to gy der/ toke partye agayne the kynge, and dyd thynges to his displeasure and hurte. And amonges other da mages by theym done, Roger de Mount Gomoryk erle of Shrewes bury, destroyed the countrey and en des of England vnto worceter to wn wyth ayde of the walshemen. But in the ende thorough the prayer of the holy byshoppe wolstane/ the walshe men were so weked and febled, that a few knyghtes scomfyted of them a great hoste.

Confede racy.

When kyng wyllyam conceyued, ỹ well nere all the Normans toke par tye agayne hym/ he then forced of ne cessyte drewe to hym the Englyshe men. And fauoured them by gyftes & easy lawes/ so that by theyr strength he lastely recouered the erle of Shre wesburye, and chased some other of hys enymyes/ and shortely after oc cupyed the castell and strong holdes in Kent belongynge to byshop Odo hys forsayde vncle / and in the ende cōpelled hym to forswere England. And ỹ done he besyeged ỹ citie of Ro chester, wherin the byshoppe of Dur ham, the erle of Northumberland, and other noble men were gadered/ and wan yt at length by appoynte ment, so that hys enymyes were bu to hym reconcyled.

In the thyrde yere of hys reygne dyed Lamfrank/ when he hadde ben archbyshop of Caunterburye. xviii. yeres. By whose meanes the mōkes of Englande were brought to the vse of theyr holy reygyon/ the whych be fore hys commynge lyued more lyke to seculer prestes thē religious men/ and exercysed them in huntynge and hawkynge for to auoyde idelnesse, & dysynge and cardynge in the wynter nyghtes, that they myght be redy to kepe theyr howres and nyghtly ser uyce. And in theyr apparel they were lyke vnto consules and not vnto mū kes, wyth many other deformytyes. The whych in ỹ begynnyng of Lam frank/ he of policye suffered for a sea son, lest he had brought all in his top atones, and therby myght haue caus sed some scysme or varyaūce to haue rysen in the chyrche. In auoydynge wherof wyth other inconuenyences/ he lytell and lytell refrayned them of theyr outrage/ and in processe of tyme caused and constrayned them to lyue after the constitucyons and rules of theyr reygyon.

Aboute thys tyme, Robert Cur those duke of Normandy, entendynge to take hys vyage into the holy lande/ layde his dukedome to wedde to hys brother wyllyam for .v. thou sande pounde. For leuyenge wherof kynge wyllyam set a talke vpon his commons and subiectes, and reysed a farre extendynge some vnder colour of the same/ so that byshoppes melted theyr vessell, and lordes spoyled theyr tenauntes.

The kynge of Scottes also brake the peace before made with wyllyam Conquerour, and wasted and toke prayes in the countrey of Northum berlande. Then the kynge prouyded a nauy and sayled thyther in the wyn ter tyme. But by ỹ tempest of the se,

halfe

halfe his nauy or a great parte of yt was drowned/and many of his knyghtes were loste for colde and hunger. But yet in the ende after dyuers conflictes and bykerynges, by mediacyon of frendes a peace and vnyte was concluded/so that Malcolyn then kynge of Scottes shuld be obedyent to kynge wyllyam, vnder the same othe that he was before tyme sworne vnto hys father/ and kynge wyllyam shuld yerely gyue vnto him in ỳ way of a fee.xii. markes of gold.

In the fourth yere of his reygne, and the fyft daye of October/ passyng great tempest of wederyng fell in sondry places of Englande, and specyally in ỳ towne of wynchecome. For there by tempeste of thũder and lyghtenyng, a parte of ỳ steple of the chyrch was throwen downe/ and the crucyfyx wyth the ymage of our lady also standynge vpon the roode lofte, was in lykewyse ouerthrowen and broke and shatered. And after folowed a contagye and a fowle stenche/ỳ whych endured tyll the munkes had gone in processyon about the chyrch, and all the houses adioynyng to that abbay and other places.

Also thys yere at Lõdon was great harme done by force of the wynde/ which blewe with such violence ỳ yt ouerturned or ryued as wytnessyth Polycronycon, ouer the nõber of.vi. hundred houses. And ỳ roke of saynt Mary Bow in chepe was also ryued wherwith two men were slayne. And also at Salesburye was hurte done wyth ỳ same wynde or ỳ lyke therof.

In the.v.yere of wyllyãs reygne/ he went into Northumberlande, and repayred suche holdes and castelles as the Scottes by theyr warrys had blemyshed and apayred/ and caused a new castell to be made at Carrcol ỳ cytye or towne, whych the Danys of two hundred yeres passed hadde destroyed. Then ỳ kyng returned vnto Glouceſter/ where he was greuously vexed wyth sykenesse, so that he wende he shulde haue dyed. In tyme wherof he toke great repentaunce, & ymyssed yt he myghe escape, he wold neuer sell mo benefices/ & ouer that he wold amẽde hys lyuyng & become a new mã. But after he was restored to helth, that promyse was shortely forgoten. And in that yere he gaue vnto Anselme the archbyshop yrche of yorke. But he myghte take of yt but as the kynges pleasure was, tyll suche tyme as the kyng hadde taken his tribute therof. And more ouer he auouched, that the see of Lyncolñ belonged to the see of yorke/ tyll the bysshoppe of Lyncolne had pleased him wyth a great summe of money, as.v. thousande marke after the wryttyng of Ranulfe.

In the.vi.yere of hys reygne were exceedynge floodes, wherof the lyke in many yeres passed hadde not ben sene. And after that ensued wonderfull frost:/ whych frose the great stremes in suche wyse, ỳ horse and carte passed ouer ỳ great ryuers. And in the ende when the yse melted and brake/ the payse therof brake many a stronge brydge, bothe of tymber and of stone.

THE.CCXXXIII. CHAPITER.

ABout thys tyme the welshemen with theyr kyng or duke named Rees, brake out vppon the Englyshmen in the Bordour, where standeth the castell of Brekenocke/ and there made masteryes for a while. But in the ende his people were chaced and slayne/ and he wounded to deth, so that he dyed the.iii. daye folowynge. Thys Rees is accompted of wryters, to be the laste kynge of walys. For after thys daye they

were so dasted/ that kynges of Englande had them in suche rule, that they were vnder more stedfaste obedyence than they were before tyme. How be it they rebelyd full often as after shall appere.

And the yere folowyng kyng wyllyam to haue ꝑ countrey in the more quyet/ hewe downe mych of ꝑ wood, and buylded in sundry places strong castels and pyles/ by meane wherof more and more they were plucked to obedyēce. But not shortely after/ but specyally in the dayes of Edwarde ꝑ fyrste and Edwarde the thyrde.

Walcolyn kyng of Scotland came vnto Gloweceſter to comon wyth the kynge of dyuers maters, and to take a fynall agremēt. But for kyng wyllyam wolde haue dempd hym in hys courte/ therfore Walcolme departed from the kynge in great displeasur. For the whyche and other causes, the warre betwene England and Scotlande was renued/ so that vppon saynt Bricius daye folowyng, Walcolyne wyth hys retynewe foughte wyth an erle named Robert and thā erle of Northumberlande/ and there was slayne wyth hys eldest sonne Edwarde. For sorowe wherof Margaret quene of Scotlande and syster vnto Edgare Ethelynge, as in the fyrste chappter of the story of wyllyā Conqueroure is shewed, dyed soone after. Than the Scottes made Dunwalde brother of Walcolyne theyr kynge, and put by hys sonnes. But by the ayde of kynge wyllyam/ Edgare whyche of some writers is named Dunkam, was made kynge, as eldest sonne of Walcolyne.

In the. vii. yere of the reygne of kynge wyllyam/ Auncelyne or Anselme that was archbyshop of yorke, was remoued to Caunterbury as affermeth one cronycle. But Polycronycon and Guydo sayen, that Hugh erle of Chester beynge syck and diseased/ in the. vi. yere of wyllyam Rufus, sent into Normādy for Anselme than abbot of Barry for thre causes. The fyrste to vysyte and se hym, and to be reconcyled of hym, as the man that he moste trusted. The seconde cause was, that he shuld relieue some abbays of Englande, that the kynge vered wyth greuous trybutes. And the thyrd cause was, ꝑ he shuld fould an abbay at Chester/ whych place he after buylded, & made one Rychard his chapleyne fyrst abbot of ꝑ place/ and sone after he was made archbysshop of Caunterbury. where by it appereth that the sayd see was voyde ouer the terme of thre yeres.

wycked punysshe ment. * wycked punysshed

Thys sayd. vii. yere/ Englande & Normandye were greued wyth trybute and moreyne of men, so sharply that tylynge of the erth was spared or putte of for that yere/ & there after ensued great hūger. Thys yere also ꝑ Scottes slewe theyr kyng Edgar, and restored agayn to the rule of the lande the forenamed Dunwalde. And many grysly and vncouth syghtes were thys yere sene in England/ as hostes of men fightyng in ꝑ skye, and fyre lemys & other. And the holy bysshop wolstone of worceter dyed soone after/ of whom it is shewed ꝑ he sondry tymes warned & rebuked Englyshmen for theyr mysclivyng/ and sayd for theyr offenses they were so punysshed of the Normans. But the Englyshmen excused them selfe, and sayde that the Normans were worse in lyuynge than they. where vnto the bysshop answered and sayd/ that god vsed the wyckednesse of thē in Englyshmen. For by the * wycked he punysshed ꝑ wycked. And so doth god suffer the deuyll to punysshe synners in hell/ & he hym selfe is punysshed wyth them.

Of thys wolstone it is radde, that

kynge

kynge wyllyam wold haue put hym from hys see, to the entente that he myghte put another into hys see. wherof thys holy man beynge warned/yode vnto the kynge and sayde to hym: I am enfourmed that thou wylte take from me, the whiche a better man thā thou arte gaue vnto me. wherfore of whom that I receyued so noble a gyfte, to hym wyll I gyue it agayn/and than take it from hym yf thou may. And whan he hadde so sayde to the kynge, he yode to the sepulture of Edward the confessoure/ and after ꝑ he had made his prayers there, he pytched hys crosse in ꝑ marble stone that laye vppon the graue. But no man myghte plucke out the staffe, tyll wolston came thyther hym selfe and pulled it out at the kynges cōmaundement. wherfore the kynge seyng that maruayle/suffred hym to enioye hys benefyce styll.

In the.x.yere of willyam Rufus/ strife and dyscencyon fell betwene hym and Anselme bysshop of Cauterbury/for Anselme myght nat call hys synodys nor correcte the bysshoppes, but as the kynge wolde. The kynge also chalenged the inuestiture of bysshoppes, and pylled the spyrytualtye and temporaltye with vnreasonable taskes & trybutes/the which he spent vpon the towre of London, & the makynge of westmynster hall. And ouer that the kynges seruauntes, greued and pylled englysshmen. vnreasonably. And to thys mysery was ioyned the vnsaceable couetous of Ranulphe that was somtyme chapelayne vnto wyllyam conquerour/ the whyche was at thys day the kynges procuratour, and gadered hys taskes ouer all. He was so couetous and so cuyll dysposed, that he wolde leuye .iii. taskys for two. He pylled the ryche, and bare downe the poore, and caused many men to lose theyr landes for smal causes/and therfore the kynge had hym in hys synguler fauoure. And by hys meanes bysshoprykes were boughte and solde as playnly as other marchaundyses. For that tyme, clerkes vsed bussyed and brayded heddys, longe tayled & blasynge clothes, shynynge golden gyrdels/and rode wyth gylte spurres, wyth vsynge of dyuers other enormytees. All whyche vyces Anselme wolde haue corrected/but he lacked assystence of hys bretherne ꝑ bysshoppes. For the whyche cause & other he departed the londe. wherewyth the kyng beynge mysse contented/ sente after hym suche persons as robbed and spoyled hym, and entreted hym in most cruell maner. For the whyche dede Raufe bysshoppe of Chychester blamed the kynge/and also rebuked all such bysshoppes as had refused the partye of Anselme, & had fauoured the kynge in causes cōcernynge the forsayde varyaunce. And forthermore he wythstode the kynge and hys officers in takynge of fynes of prestes for cryme of fornicacyon. For whyche cauſes the kyng wyth the sayd Raufe was sore amoued and dyscontented/and opteyned such fauour, that he suspended many chyrches of hys dyoses. But in the ende, Raufe demeaned hym in suche wyse that he hadde hys owne wyll/ and his chyrches enlarged and freed that before were stopped wyth thornes. And the kynge gaue vnto hym ꝑ fynes of prestes within his dyosis/ and endued ꝑ see of Chychester with many greate gyftes.

And vpon a tyme kynge wyllyam was rydynge towarde hys dysporte of huntynge/and sodeynly a messenger came vnto hym and sayde, that the cytye of Cenemonia in Normandye was besyeged. wherfore he wythout longe tarynge or aduysement, toke

toke the streyght way to the se syde/ and sent to hys lordes, chargynge them to folow. whan the sayd lordes came to hys presence / they adupsed hym to tarye tyll his people were assembled. But he wolde nothynge do after theyr counsayle/but sayd, such as hym loued, he shortely wyste well wolde folowe hym, and so rode to shyp, settyng aparte all pareis. The mayster of the shyp was afrayde, he sawe the weder so darke & so clowdy/ and counceyled the kynge to tary tyll the wynde wolde blowe more fauorably. But he commaunded hym to make all the spede that he cowde vpon hys lyfe/sayenge that he neuer harde that euer any kyng was drowned. And so he passed the see and landed in Normandy / and gathered to hym there hys knyghtes. whan the capptayne of the spege, whose name was Helyas, knewe of the kynges landyng/ he fered, and anone began to breke the spege. But by treason he was taken and brought to the kynges presence. To whom the kynge shewed suche pytye, that he suffered hym to be at hys lybertye. whyche after the oppynyon of wyllyam de regibus, was done more of pryde than of compassyon.

THE.CCXXV.CHAPITER.

IN the.xi. yere of the reygne of thys wyllyam the rede / at a towne called Pynchanster in the cou trey of Barke shyre, a welle caste out blode as before it hadde done water. And after by the space of. xv. dayes, great flames of fyre were sene in the elemēt in sundry places and tymes. Thys yere also ꝑ two erles of Shrewesbury and of Chester eyther named Hugh/by the kynges commaundement entred wyth theyr knyghtes the ile of Man or Angiesaye, & slewe therin many wellshemen, and gelded many moo. Amonge the whyche a preste named Kynredus was drawē out of a chyrch and serued of ꝑ same wyse / and also cut hys tunge out of hys hed, and put out hys one eye. But this preste was of such vertue, that by myracle he was restored to helthe within.iii. dayes ensuynge.

In the whyche season and tyme, the kynge of Northganys or Norwaye wan the iles called than Orcades and now Orkeys / & after came wyth hys strength into the foresayd ile of Man, where at the same season were the sayde two erles. Than betwene them was mortall fyght / in ꝑ whyche Hugh erle of Shrewesbury was stryken with an arowe in ꝑ eye, and dyed wythin.viii. dayes after. But as sayth Guydo, the Danys were chased, and the Englysshemen hadde the victory.

Kyng wyllyam was myche in Normandye/for so myche as Robert his brother was all thys season in the holy land/of whose actes shall some deale be towched in ꝑ story of Henry the fyrste. And wyllyam had myche payne to rule the Normans/for they rebelled often agayne hym.

In the.xii. yere of hys reygne / he came out of Normandye, and when he sawe the hall of westmynster ꝑ he had caused to be buylded / he was therwyth dyscontented, that it was so lytell. wherfore as it is reherced of some wryters/he entended yf he had lyued to haue made a larger, and ꝑ to haue serued for a chaumber.

Robert Losaunge, that somtyme had ben abbot of Ramsey, and than bysshop of Thetford by gyfte of a thousand pounde to the kyng/repented hym after, and bewept that vnskylfull dede/ and toke hys waye to Rome, and dyd for it hys enioyned penaunce / and after retorned into

England,

Englande, and turned hys see from Thetforde to Norwyche / & founded there a fayre monastery of hys owne goodes, & not of the patrymony of crystes chyrch. But therin is a dowt to consyder. For he was fyrste an abbot and after a bysshop.

About thys tyme, by the meanes of one Stephen Hardynge a munke of Sherbourne / an Englyshman of ỳ order of Sisteaux or whyte mũkes had hys begynnynge in the wyldernesse of Cystery within the prouynce of Burgoyne, as wytnesseth Ranulf munke of Chester. But other wryters, as Jacobus Philyppus, & the authour of Cronica cronicarũ, Matheolus, wyth other / sayen that this Stephen was the second abbot of ỳ place / & ỳ it was fyrste foũded by the meanes of one Robert abbot of Molyncse, in the yere of grace. M. xcviii. whyche to folow theyr sayeng, shuld be in the. ix. yere of the reygne of this kyng. This order was after brought into Englande by one called walter Espeke, that foũded the fyrste abbay of that relygyon at Ryuall, about ỳ yere of grace. xi. C. xxxi. The whyche shulde be about the. xxxi. yere of the fyrste Henry than kyng of England. Somwhat of theyr relygyon is towched in the. x. chappter of the. viii. boke of Polycronycon.

After that kynge wyllyam, as before is sayde, was retourned out of Normandy / many wonderfull prodygyes and tokyns were shewed in England / as the swellyng or ryssyng of ỳ water of Thamys, in suche wyse that it drowned dyuers townes, and dyd mych harme by out passyng his boundys in dyuers places about Lõdon and ellys where. Also the deuyll was seene walke in mannes lykenesse wyth dyuers other thynges whyche I ouerpasse. The kyng was warned of this, and tolde by his sawlyers ỳ god was not cõtent with his lyuing. But he set all at nought, and made of it a scoffe or a tape.

In the. xiii. yere of his reygne and begynnynge thereof, as the thyrde daye of Auguste after the sayenge of Ranulfe / thys kyng wyllyam beyng at hys dysporte of huntynge wythin the newe forest, by glaunsynge of an arowe shot of a knyght named walter Tyrell, was wounded to the deth in the. xliiii. yere of hys age. After whyche dede the sayde walter escaped and saued hym selfe, for few there were that hym pursued. And so the kynge thus wounded, was layde vpon an horse lytter, and so conueyed to wynchester / where shortly after he dyed and was buryed.

Of this man myghte be made a myche lenger story, yf all hys dedes shulde be towched. The whych toke vpon hym great thynges / and mych gretter entẽded yf he myght haue lyued. The daye before he was slayne one ared of hym where he wold kepe hys Crystmasse. At Poytiers sayde the kynge / for the erle entendeth to go towarde Hierusalem / and I woll assaye to haue hys eriedome in morgage / for well I knowe he must chepyche for money to perfourme that iourney. The day that wyllyã dyed / he helde in his hãdes the. iii. bysshoprych es / of Caũterbury, of winchester and of Salysbury / and dyuers abbayes, of the whyche he let some to ferme. Also he retrayned ỳ money ỳ of olde tyme was payed to Rome called Rome scotte. Of this wyllyã reportyth Henry of Hũtyngdõ / & sayth ỳ though this mã were lyght of som thynges, yet he was stedfast & stable of his promyse / so ỳ what he pmysed good or euyll shuld be pformed. And though he were named courtous / yet it shuld seme ỳ he was liberall, as sheweth by this narracyõ folowyng.

Rome scotte.

Upon

Upon a season when the abbot of a place in Englande was dede/ two munkes of the same place, the which before hadde gathered money, made theyr frendes to kynge willyam/ and offered large offers eyther of them to be promoted to that dygnyte. There was also a thyrde munke, the which of mekenesse & of humylyte folowed the other two/ to the entent that vpon hym that the kynge had admytted for abbot, he wolde haue gyuen attendaunce, and as his chapelayn to haue wyth hym returned. The kynge called before hym the .ii. munkys seuerally, and eyther out proketed other. And as he caste hys eye a syde/ he espyed the thyrd, the whych he demed hadde comen also for the same cause. Then the kynge called hym/ and asked yf he wold geue any more then his brethern had offered, to be abbot. But he answered to the kynge and sayde, that he wolde nother offer nor yet gyue for yt one peny/ nor wold haue so great a charge by any meane wrongefull. when the kynge had well vnderstanden thys thyrde munkes answere/ he sayde that he was best worthy to be abbot, and to haue the rule of so holy a charge/ and so he gaue vnto hym that benefyce, wythout takynge any peny. Thys kynge wyllyam vsed alway lemmans/ wherfore he dyed without yssue legyttymat, when he had reygned as before is sayde fully .xii. yeres and odde dayes.

Lustfyre and cōtynence.*

THE .CCXXVI. CHAPITER.



Enry the .iii. son of wyllyam Cōquerour & fyrste of ỳ name, whyche for his connynge was surnamed beuclerk began hys reygne and dompnyon as kynge of Englande, the .v. daye of August, in the yere of our lorde .xi. hundred & one/ and the .xiiii. yere of the fyrste Phylyppe then kynge of Fraunce/ & was crowned at westmynster ryght shortly after, of Thomas archebyshoppe of yorke, and Morys byshoppe of London.

This Henry in his youth plyed him to such studye, that he was instructe in the .vii. artes lyberall. Anon he made holy chyrche free/ & vsed sayne Edwardes lawes, wyth the amendemēt of them. He put out of his courtenyce and wāton men/ and closed Ranulphe byshoppe of Durham in the towre of Lōdon, ỳ which as ye before haue harde was so great wyth wyllyam his brother/ and sent for Anselme archebyshoppe of Caunterburye, whyche before was fledde fro the tyranny of wyllyam Rufus.

* This Henry chastysed the olde vntrewe mesure, and made a yerde of ỳ length of hys owne arme/ wyth dyuers other thynges reformyng, that longe before his days had ben mysse vsed/ and abhorred excesse of metys and drynkes/ & vsed to fyght more wyth coūsayll then wyth sworde.

In the seconde yere of his regne/ Robert hys brother, that by all thys season hadde ben occupyed in warres vppon Cristes enymyes, hauyng worde of the deth of hys brother wyllyam, and howe his brother Henry hadde taken vpon hym as kynge/ returned into Normandy, and there made preparacyon for to come into Englande.

In this season also was broke out of prysen Ranulfe byshoppe of Durham, and comen to the sayde Robert into Normandy. The whych excyted duke Robert in all that he myght to warre vppon hys brother Henry/ so that he assembled a stronge armye of

knyghtes

knyghtes, and tobe shyppynge, and landed in processe of tyme at Portysmouth. But by mediacyon a peace was made/and that in suche condycion, that he shuld haue.iii.thousand markes yerely, as before was promysed vnto hym by willyam Rufus his brother wyth other condycyons of successyon and other thynges, the whyche I ouerpasse for length of tyme. Thus Robert beynge contented contrary to the myndes of his lordes, after he a season hadde dyspoyted hym in Englande retourned into Normandy/where of his lordes he was for thys & other dedes before done as after is shewed, lytle or lesse and lesse setby. For all be yt that by hys fathers lyfe he hadde byctorye, and vtterly displeased hym as some deale before ys touched / yet by hys manhode and manfull dedes, he fell into the fauoure of the people, and dyd many and great notable actes/ and specyally at the wynnyng of the cytye of Icon vppon the mysbreaun tes and turkes. For the whyche dedes yt appertyth by the sequele of the storye that he was also in the fauour of god. For when the electyon shuld be made for the kynge of Hierusalem, and certayne prynces and prynces peeres by ordynaunce made, stode wyth theyr tapers abydynge the dyuyne puruepaunce, that whose taper were fyrst wyth heuenly fyre lyghtened shulde be admytted for kynge / the taper of thys duke Robert was fyrste onely. wherfore by dyuyne puruepaunce he was then chosen kynge of Hierusalem. The whyche he refused, for the payne and trauayle that he shuld haue wyth all / & also for the couetyse of the crowne of Englande. For as soone as he hadde knowlege of the deth of his brother willyam/ anon he parted the coūtrey and sped hym homewarde in all that he myght. For the whych dede as afermeth myne authour, he spedde the worse in all his dedes after.

Thys Robert was wyse in counsayll, stronge in batayll, and also tyght lyberall / and in hys retourne from Hierusalem, maryed the doughter of wyllyam de Auersana lorde of Apulia, wyth whome he receyued grete somes of money for her dower, the whych by meane of his liberalyte he spent shortly after. Then fortune beganne to frowne vppon duke Robert/ and sette his owne lordes so agayn hym, that they sent vnto kyng Henry hys brother / wyllynge hym to come into Normandye, and they wolde delyuer the coūtrey vnto hym, and holde hym for theyr chefe lorde and ruler. wherunto, as sayth the englyshe cronycle, kynge Henry soone cōsented. But or euer thys warre betwene the sayde duke Robert & kyng Henry beganne/ thys Henry maryed Mawde or Molde the doughter of Malcolyne kyng of Scotlande, and of Margarete hys wyfe doughter of Edwarde the outlawe, as in the begynnyng of wyllyam Conquerours is thouched. Of the whyche Molde thys Henry receyuyd after some wryters two sonnes and .ii. doughters/ ỳ is to saye wyllyam and Rychard, Mawde & Mary. And also the sayd authour wyth other saye / that Robert duke of Normandye came into Englande in the fourth yere of the reygne of kynge Henry, and hadde good chere of his brother and syster. For the which he at the request of his sayde syster, released to his brother ỳ forenamed trybute of .iii.thousand markes. But by yll tale tellers & couetous of signory, this broderly loue was after dissolued/in such wise that the kynge with a strong army sayled into Normandy/and held his broder Robert with so sharpe warre, that he

chased hym from one countrey to an other/ and wanne from hym Roan, Caan, Faloys, and all the good townes of Normandye/ and lastely constrayned hym to aske helpe of Phylyppe kyng of Fraunce, & after of the erle of Flaūdres/ but he fayled helpe of them both. Then wyth such power as he could make, he gaue batayll vnto his brother kynge Henry. In the whyche he was taken, and sent ouer into England, and put into the castell of Cardyffe in walys / where he remayned as prisoner whyle he lyued. And when he was dede he was buryed at Glowcester.

In this tyme and season, as it were in ỳ. iiii. yere of kyng Henry/ ỳ chyrch of sayne Bartheleme w in Smythfeld of London was begonne to be founded, of a mynstrell of this kyng Henry named Rayer/ and after perfourmed and ended by good and well disposed cytezens of the citye of Lōdon. This place of Smythfelde was at ỳ day a lay stowe of al ordure or fylth, and the place where felons and other transgressours of the kynges lawes were put to execucyon.

THE .CCXXVII. CHAPITER.

SO as kynge Henry hadde fynyshed his warre in Normandye, & was returned into Englande/ Robert de Bolesyn, which was the eldest sonne of Roger de mount Gomeryk erle of Shrewesburye / arose agayne the kynge, and manned his castellys of Shrewesbury, of Brugg(of Arundell, and of Tehynhyll, and incoraged the walshmen agayne the kyng. But the kyng pursued so cruelly the sayd Robert, ỳ wythin .xl. dayes he wan all thoses castellis & slew many of his men, and gat the fauour of the walshmen by gyftes and plesaūt wordes/ and also compelled the sayd Robert to forsake Englād, The whyche then sayled into a corner of Normādye & kept him there secretely, tyll such tyme as to hym was thyther comen willyā erle of Cornewall/ which wyllyam was also erle of Nortom in Normandye. when these two erles were assocyat/ they gaderyd to them a great strength of Normans, & dyd great harme wythin the prouynce. wherfore the kynge sayled thyther & made sharpe warre vppon them. In the whych he loste many of his men. But in ỳ ende he put frō them theyr strength, and toke theym both prysoners, and so helde them ỳ terme of theyr lyues. And that done, he sette that coūtrey in good reste and peace, and after retourned into Englande. After whyche returne/ kynge Henry made sharpe lawes agayne theues and other that vsed vnlefull meanes. In whyche lawes was conteyned lo synge of lyke, of eyes, of stones, and other members of man as the gylte requyred.

+ Preste wyues

And soone after Anselme archbyshoppe of Caunterbury, assembled a great coūsayll at London of the clergy of England. By authorzyte of the which coūsayll/ dyuers abbotes and other were put from theyr dygnytie, for that they had taken before tyme theyr abbayes by vnlefull meanes. + And amōges all other decrees one was, ỳ prestes shulde forgo theyr wyues. Then strife fell betwen ỳ kyng & Anselme/ for that that he wold not sacre the prestes that hadde taken investyture of lewde mennys handes, whyche before was forboden vppon payne of cursynge. But Gyralde archebyshoppe of yorke/ for the pleasure of the kynge sacred suche byshoppes. wherfore Anselme beynge dyscōtent/ departed ỳ land and rode to Rome, to shewe thys wyth other thynges to the pope, whyche at that

daye by

daye by moste accorde of wryters shulde be Pascall the seconde.

In the.vi. of the kynge, the countrey of Flaūdres was sore blemysshed and hurte by meane of the see, so that the Flemynges rode aboute to haue socoure of dwellynge, and requyred of the kyng to haue lycence that they might inhabyt them in the eest parte of the ryuer of Twede, the whych to them was graunted. But after a certayn of yeres they were remoued into west walys, where they remayned a longe whyle/but after they spradd all Englande ouer.

In the.vii. yere of thys kynge/vpon a frydaye at nyghte in the fyrste weke of clene lent, was sene an vncouth starre betwene ỹ south and the weste, the whyche nyghtely appered at one howre, and cōtynued so by the space of.xxv. days. And fore agaynst that oute of the eest parte/ appered a great leuyn or beme of brightnes, whyche stretched towarde the sayde starre.

And vppon shere thursdaye nexte ensuynge, were sene two monys/ that one in the eest, and that other in the weste.

And in thys yere/ Anselme by the kynges agrement, returned agayne from Rome/ and shortely after called a conuocacyon at London. In the whyche by the popes authorite yt was newely conformed and enacted, that no temporall man after that daye shuld make inuesture with crosse or wyth ryng.

In the.viii. yere of the reygne of kynge Henry/ the fourth Henry emperour of Almayne, the whyche had maryed Moldo the eldeste doughter of kynge Henry, when she was of the age of.v. yeres/ pysoned pope Pascall and dyuerse of the cardynallys. This Henry also warred agayne his father Henry the.iii/ and lastely caste hym in stronge pyson. For the whyche dede as affermeth Ranulphe/ he wylfully when he had ruled the empyre.xx. yere/ resygned hys dygnyte into the handes of Calixtus ỹ secōde of that name then pope/ & after came secretely into England, & vnto Chester, vnwyttynge hys wyfe or eny of hys frendes/ where he lyued longe after a straȳte lyfe, and was buryed there at laste. But to this sayeng dyl agreeth the wryters of the storyes of emperours. For of them yt is wytnessed/ that this Henry the emperour after he had ruled the empyre as before is sayd.xx. wynter, he dyed at a place in Almayn called Spyre/ and there was buryed, wyth this scrypture vpon his tombe.

Filius hic, pater hic, mas hic, preamus iacet hic.

whyche is to meane in our vulgare tunge as foloweth.

The son here lyeth, with also ỹ fader The bellyre, for & ỹ great graūfader.

when Henry the emperour was thus dede as after yt shalbe shewed, when conuenyency of tyme requyreth/ what became of his wife it shall there be declared.

In the.xi. yere of ỹ reygne of kyng Henry/ the archebyshoppe Anselme professed Gerarde archbyshoppe of yorke to the yoke of hys obedyence, as he was before taught by the lore of Lanfranke his predecessour. And the.x. daye of Auguste folowynge, he sacred.v. byshoppes at one tyme/ as of wynchester, of Salysbury, of Exeter, of Herforde, and of Glamorgan. And kynge Henry ordeyned a byshoppes see at Ely/ and ordeyned there Henry that hadde ben bishoppe of Bangor/ and besette Cambrydge shyre to the see of Ely. And to the bishoppes see of Lyncolne, he gaue his owne towne of Spaldynge, for he hadde mynyshed that see by the preferment of Ely.

In the .x. yere dyed Anselme arch bysshop of Caunterbury. After whose deth that see was voyde .v. yeres / & the goodes of the chyrch spent to the kynges vse. And whē he was prayed to helpe ꝑ chyrch, that was wythout an hedde and a pastor / he vsed to answere, that his fader and also his brother had accustomed, to set there the beste proued men ꝑ they might fynd. And to the entente that he myght do the same / he toke the more tyme & lay sure. wyth suche mylde answeres he so put of the tyme, that he fylled hys cofers wyth the great sommes of ꝑ benefyce. And who that is desyrous to knowe of the great vertue of thys bysshoppe Anselme / lette hym rede in the .xiiii. chappter of the .vii. boke of Polycronycon, & there he shall fynde a parte therof.

About this tyme as wytnesseth the frenche cronycle / a cōtrauersy began betwene the kyng and Lewys kyng of Fraunce son to Phylyp the fyrste. This Lewys was surnamed Lewis the great, other for hys bygnesse of person, or ellys for greatnesse of hys dedes. This Lewys sent vnto kyng Henry beynge in Normandy / & gaue vnto hym monycyon of homage for the duchy of Normandy / & also that he shulde restore vnto hym or bete down to the grounde, the castell of Gysours / & also to recompence and restore for hurtes and harmes that his Normans hadde done in those partes. But all this of kyng Henry was denyed / and shortely after skyrmysshes and cocke fyghtes beganne betwene the sayde two prynces, kynge Henry lyenge at the sayde castell of Gysours, and Lewys at a place called mounte Calue. But thys encreased in suche wyse, that after eyther prynce soughte more rome places, whose knyghtes sundry tymes met. But of any notable batayll I fynde no remembraunce / all be yt that the sayde warre contynued by the terme of two yeres. In the ende of whych two yeres wyllyam the eldest sonne of kynge Henry, beynge a chyld and wythin age / contented so well the mynde of Lewys, that he refrayned of hys warre for that tyme.

In the .xiii. yere, at Shrewesbury was a great erth quake, and at Nothyngham from the morne to the vndertyde. The ryuer of Trent was so fordryed in the moneth of June, as sayth Guydo, that men wente ouer drye. And the starre called stella cometa or the blasynge sterre aperyde soone after. Thereuppon folowed an harde wynter, great deth of the people, and scarcete of vitayll by the great mortyn of bestes. In thys yere also the kynge founded the abbay of Hyde wythoute the wallys of wynchester, that of olde tyme was wythin the wallys.

THE .CCXXVIII. CHAPITER.

In the .xb. yere of hys reygne / ꝑ kynge entēdyd to haue promoted Faricus abbot of Abyndon, vnto the see of Caunterburye. But by a counsayll kept at wyndesoure of bysshoppes, ꝑ kynges mynde was chaūged / and to that see was then admytted Raufe that was bysshoppe of Rochester. And the same yere one Thurstone was chosen archebysshoppe of yorke / the whyche wythsayde hys professyon of obedience that he shuld owe to the see of Caunterbury / wherfore at lengthe he was deprayed of hys dygnyte. But after by labours that he made to Pascall the pope before named / the sayde pope wrote vnto the kynge that he shulde restore Thurstone agayne to the see of yorke. By whyche meane he was agayne restored / but yet he disdayned

to do

to do hys lawefull obedyence vnto Raufe archebyſhope of Caunterbury. Then the ſtryfe was renewed, which Lamfranke before as ye haue harde in the thyrde chappter of wyllyam Conquerour, dyd appeace/and was brought in argument before the pope. The whyche at the kynges requeſt, promyſed ỳ he wolde nothyng do nor ordeyne, that ſhuld be derogacion to the archbyſhop of Caunterbury, or to the dygnyte of his chyrche. But in cõcluſion the pope gaue ſuch a defuſe ſentence in thys mater, that he lefte the ſtryfe vndetermyned and vnaſſoyled. And when ỳ kynges procuratours wyth alſo the archbyſhop of Caunterbury were abſent/were yt for nede or for fauour, the pope was ſo bowed, that he forſoke ỳ olde rule vſed before hys days, and ſacred the ſayde Thurſtone, and gaue vnto hym the pawle. For this dede ỳ kyng was ſore dyſcontented wyth Thurſtone, and warned hym the entre of his lande. wherfore the pope wrote after ſhortely to the kynge/ wyllyng hym to ſuffer Thurſtone to occuppe his ſee peaſeably, or he ſhulde be accuſed and ſuſpended by the dygnyte of the office of Caunterbury/ and ſo Thurſtone enioyed his ſee.

In the yere of our lorde.M.hundred.xviii.as ſayth the frenche cronicle, whyche was the .xvii. yere of thys kyng Henry the fyrſt/the warre was agayn quychened betwen kyng Henry and Lewys kynge of Fraunce. wherof was the occaſyon, as ſayth the ſayde frenche cronycle, Thybaude erle of Chartres. whych Thybaude was greuyd by the Frenche kynge, and for neceſſyte requyred kynge Henry of ayde and helpe, to whome the kynge as to hys kynneſman ſent ayde and ſocoure. And afterwarde the kynge ſayled ouer with a ſtronge armye/ and ſente a noble man named Stephan into the lordſhyppe of Brye, to defende yt agayn the Frenche kynge. when Lewys vnderſtode that kynge Henry was landed in Normandye wyth ſo great power / he in all haſte aſſembled a ſtronge power, and drewe hym towarde the kynge. But there were ſo ſtronge holdes manned wyth Normans, & alſo ſuch depe and great ryuers/that the Frenche kynge myght not wynne vnto kynge Henry. Then laſtely by a feate of warre whyche were longe to reherſe, he wan a towne named Lyngues in Cauſe/ in the whyche towne was a brydge to paſſe the ryuer of Thee, and ſo into Normandye.

when a certayne of the knyghtes of Lewes had thus wonne the forſayd towne/the ſayd Lewes wyth his people ſpedde hym ſhortly after, and reſcued his forſayde knightes / & then ſpoyled and robbed the towne the whyche was ryche, for ſo myche as yt hadde ben in quyet and reſt many yeres before. He alſo ſlewe and toke pryſoners all ỳ Normans there dwellyng, & put in theyr ſtede Frenchmẽ. And that done he ſped hym towarde kynge Henry, the which was at a caſtell called Vale aſſyſe/ & there made puruyaunce for the defence of the Frenchmen. And when he hadde garniſhed yt to hys pleaſure he departed thens. But not longe after the Frenche kynge came thyther wyth his hole hoſte of Frenchmen/ and after many ſore & cruell aſſautys, wan the ſayde caſtell/ and bette yt downe euen wyth the grounde. After whych ſeaſon as ſayth the ſayd cronicle, fell to the Frenche kynge many and dyuerſe myſfortunes. For ſhortely after amonge other myſſechaunces / a noble captayn of hys named Inguerran de Chanmount, the whyche had done myche harme in Normandye

to kynge Henry, and wenne there some castelles and other stronge holdes, dyed sodeynly. And in shorte tyme after/ Baldewyne erle of Flandres a man of great streigth and pupt saunce, as he beseaged a castell was wounded in the face, and dyed wyth in .vi. dayes after. Then Fauques erle of Aungeos, in whom also this Lewys affyed mych and trusted/ maryed his doughter vnto willyam the eldest sonne of kynge Henry/ and refused the kynge of Fraunce parte, and ayded and assysted kynge Henry in all that he myght/ so that dayly the power of kyng Henry encreased, and the Frenche kynges mynysshed. Lastely these two prynces met wyth theyr both hostes in playne feld, and foughte a dedely and cruell batayll. where in the ende the Frenche kynge was ouercomen, and loste myche of his people/ and was cõpelled to flee vnto a place called Judely for his sauegarde. But thys ouerthrowe of Frenchemen is excused in the moste fayrest maner/ so ỹ they excuse them selfe, and saye that kynge Henry set vppon kynge Lewys, when he was not ware, but hys knyghtes all oute of aray & order, and also kyng Henry had farre excedynge nombre of men ouer that theyr kyng had/ with other wordes of boste of them selfe, & slaunder of Englyshemen, the whyche as to me appereth is an augmentacyon of theyr owne shame. But Ranulfe the munke sayth shortely, that kyng Henry ouercame the Frenche kynge royally in batayll.

Then yt foloweth in ỹ story/ fynally these sayde prynces were agreed/ and willyam the sonne of kyng Henry dyd homage vnto ỹ French kyng for the landes of Normandye, by the agrement of his fader. For the kyng thought hym selfe to good to be vnder the obeysaũce of ỹ Frenche kyng Then kynge Henry caused hys free men of Englande and of Normandy, to do homage vnto his sonne willyam.

And soone after Fouques before named lefte hys erledome of Angeer or Angiers, in guydyng of kynge Henry, and yode hym selfe into the holy lande/ and willed in his testament, that yf he retourned not agayne, that the sayde erledome shulde remayne vnto his sonne in lawe willyam, son of kynge Henry, whyche hadde maryed hys doughter.

About the .xx. yere of the reygne of kyng Henry/ quene Wolde or Mawde hys wyfe dyed in Normandy/ the whyche in her youthe was set by her father kyng of Scottes into a nunry, and there ware & vsed the vayle and habyte of a nunne. For the whyche cause when kynge Henry was agreable to take her vnto wyfe, thys mater fell in great despucyon/ & Anselme then archebyshop of Caunterbury was sore agayne that marryage a season of tyme. But at length yt was sufficyẽtly proued that she was there as a fygure, a woman wedynge that habyte wythoute profession of order. And this was thus ordered by her father, to the ende to put by vnworthy wowers. Thys of writers was reputed for a blessyd and holy woman, after the iuygnge of a worldly woman.

When kynge Henry had contynued in Normandy vppon the season and terme of .iii. yeres/ he toke shyppyng at Haterflete in Normandy, and sayled happely into Englande the same day, that is to meane ỹ .xxiii. day of Nouembre as sayth some writers. And shortly after willyã duke of Normandy, wyth Rycharde his brother, Nicha the countesse of Perche, Rycharde erle of Chester, with his wyfe the kynges nyce, and the archdeken of Her-

of Herforde and other, to the nomber of a hundred & .lx. persones/toke shyppynge at the sayde porte, & were all drowned, a bocher onely excepte. whyche myssortune fell by the ouersyght of the maister and other, which fell at a dyssencyon in the nyghte amonge them selfe/ by reason wherof they ranne vppon a rocke as shewed the forsayde bocher. From this dauger wyllyam duke of Normādy was escaped, and was in the shyppe botenere vnto the lande. But when he harde the lamētable crye of the Cōtesse Notha / he commaunded the rowers to returne and saue the sayd Countesse. whych done/ by what myssortune I can not saye, after she was receyued into the bote, were it by tempeste or ouer chargynge of the bote or otherwise/ they were all swalowed of the see, so that none of them was after fouūde but pte of theyr goodes. Of this duke wyllyā some desclaunderous wordes are lefte in memory, both in the englysshe cronycle and also of other writers / the whyche I ouerpasse.

THE.CCXXIX. CHAPITER.

IN the.xxi. yere of hys reygne/ kynge Henry made þ parke of wodestoke be syde Orenforde, with other pleasures to the same. And Fouques erle of Angiers returned out of the holy land, and maryed the syster of her that before he had maryed vnto wyllam duke of Normandye, vnto the son of Robert Curthose / and gaue wyth her the erledome of Conomanna. And stryfe began to kyndell betwene kynge Henry & the sayd Fouques, for the wytholdyng of the dowre or ioynture of hys fyrste doughter, maryed vnto wyllyam the kynges sonne.

In the.xxiii. yere of kynge Henry, dyed Rauf archbyshoppe of Caunterbury/ and one named wyllyā was set in þ see after hym. And the kynge in thys yere beganne the foundacyon of þ abbay of Redyng. And Johñ a cardynall of Rome was sente from Calyxte the seconde of that name thē beynge pope, for certayne maters cōcernynge the pope. In the tyme of whyche hys so beynge here, the cardynall made sharpe procelle agayne prestes that norysshed Cryste men ples/ and rebuked them by open publyshement and otherwyse, so that he wan hym here but small & lytle fauoure. But this dyssymuled doctour toke so great feruence in the correccyon of the iudgement of prestes of Englande, that he forgate the lore and counsayll of his famous pope Caton/ whyche in the boke of his counsayll or of wysedome thus sayth:

Qui culpare soles, ea tu ne fecerris ipse.
Turpe est doctori, cum culpa redarguit ipsum.

The whyche two verses maye be englysshed as foloweth,

Iuyse þ well, let reason be thy guyde
when other folke thou arte aboute to blame/
That suche defaute in the be not espyed.
For yf there be/ then shalt thou haue the shame.
A mannes honoure suche thynges woll reclayme.
It ys full foule when that a man woll chese
If that hys dede agayne hys wordes preche.

This counsayll was not remembred of the sayd Cardynall. For in the euenynge after he had lewdely bibbed his horne, and sayde it was a detestable synne to aryse from the syde of a strumpet & sacre the body of Cryste/ he was taken wyth a strumpet to his open shame and rebuke.

In the.xxv. yere of kynge Henry

was called a counsayll at London/ where the spyrytualty condescended that the kynges officers shulde punyshe prestes that cherysshed the foxe sayde mulys. But the sayd officers toke money, and suffered the prestes to spurre theyr mulys at theyr pleasure. whyche office at this daye is so clerely renoūced of al spyrytual men/ þ neyther kyng nor bishop taketh for yt any fynes, nor yet correccyon necessarye to be done for the same.

In the.xxbii.yere of his reygne as reporteth an olde Cronycle/the gray freres by procuryng of þ kyng came fyrste into Englande, and had theyr fyrst house buylded at Caunterbury. And aboute this tyme by moste accorde of writers, dyed Henry the.iiii. emperour of that name / whyche as before is touched maryed Wolde the doughter of kyng Henry. After whose deth the sayde empresse came vnto her father into Normandye. when kyng Henry was ascertaynted of the deth of Henry the emperour / for so myche as he hadde none heyre male, he caused soone after the more parte of hys lordes of England as well spyrytuall as temporall, to swere in his presence, that they shuld kepe þ land of Englande to the vse of Mawde þ empresse, yf he dyed wythoute yssue male; and she then surviued

In the.xxviii.yere of kyng. Henry/ Geffrey Plātagenet erle of Angeou maryed Wolde the empresse. Of the whyche two descended Henry the second, that after Stephan was kyng of Englande. In this yere also the kynge had dyuers moneycyons and bysyons. For amonge other ferefull dremys/ he saw a great company of clerkys with dyuerse wepons, whyche manassed hym for dette that he shuld owe vnto them. And when they were passed/ he thought þ he was manassed to deth of his own knyghtes. And lastely apperyd to hym a great company of byshoppes/ whych thretned hym, and wolde haue smytten hym wyth theyr crosses. By this monicyon he toke remorce in his conscyence, and dyd great dedes of charyte in Normandye where he hadde sene these bisyons. And after his cōmyng then into Englande/ in satysfaccyon of wronges done to the chyrche as affermeth Guydo, he then founded the abbay of Redynge before spoken of. And ouer that he releasyd vnto Englyshe men the Dane gelt, that was by his father & his brother renewed.

In the.xxx.yere of this kyng Henry, dyed the erle of Flaundres / and kynge Henry as sayth Ranulfe, was by agrement of Lewys the Frenche kyng made erle, as next heyr & enherytour to the sayde erledome. But it is not there expressed by what maner of tytle or succession.

In the.xxxii.yere of the kyng, dyed Robert Curthose the kynges brother the whyche he hadde kept as prysoner in the castell of Cardyfe from the iiii. yere of his reygn or there about/ whose corps as before is shewed, was buryed at Glouceter before the hyghe alter. And aboute this tyme was founded the pryorye of Norton in the prouynce of Chester, by one wyllyam the sonne of Aychelle. And the abbay of Combremer in the same prouynce, was also founded aboute the same tyme.

In the.xxxb. yere of kynge Henry/ was borne of Wolde the empresse, Henry shorte mantell or Henry the second. The whyche as after shall be shewed was consentynge to the martyrdome of sayne Thomas of Caunterburye.

Kynge Henry beyng in Normandy after some writers, fell from or wyth hys horse / whereof he cought hys deth. But Ranulphe sayth he toke a surfet

surfet by etynge of a lamprey & ther of dyed, when he hadde reygned full xxv. yeres and odde monethes. Then ỳ kynges bowellys were drawen out of hys body, and then salted wyth myche salte. And for to auoyde the stenche whych hadde infected many men/ the body was lastely closed in a bulles skynne, and yet yt was not all stynted. He that clensed the hed, dyed of the stenche of the brayn. Then lastely the body was brought into England, & buryed in the abbay of Redynge that he had before founded. Then ỳ fame of hym was blowen abrode as yt is blowen of other prynces/ and sayde ỳ he passed other men in. iii. thynges. In wytte, in eloquence, and fortune of batayll. And other sayde he was ouercomen wyth iii. vyces/ wyth couetyse, wyth cruelty, and wyth luste of lechery.

One other made these versys of hym as folowen.

Kynge Henry is dede, bewte of the world, for whom great dole
Goddes now maken for theyr kynde brother. For he is sole,
Mercurius in speche, Marce in batayll, harte stronge Appollo,
Jupiter in hest, egall with Saturne and enympe to Cupido.
Kyng he was of right, & man of most myght, and glorious in rayinyng.
And when he left his crowne, thé fell honour downe, for mysse of suche a kynge.
Normandy than gan lowre, for losse of theyr floure, & fange wel away.
Englande made mone, & Scotlande dyd grone, for to se that daye.

Francia.

THE. CCXXX. CHAPITER.

LEwys the sonne of the fyrste Phylyp beganne hys reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of our lorde .xl. hundred & .vii. to reken his begynnynge from the deth of his father/ and the. vi. yere of the fyrste Henry then kyng of England. This Lewys as before is touched, was admytted to the rule of the land certayn yeres or hys father dyed, and was surnamed Lewes the great for grossenesse of his body.

Anon as this Lewys had fynyshed the obsequy of the funerallys of hys father/ he wythoute taryenge called a counsayll of hys lordes spyrytuall and temporall at the cytye of Orleaunce/ where of the byshoppe of the same see wyth other adioynynge, he was solemnly anoynted & crowned. But not wythout grudge of the archbyshoppe of Raynes/ for so myche as of custome the Frenche kynges vsed there to be crowned.

Soone after the coronacyon of Lewys / Guy le Rous, and Guy de Cressy his sonne, whych before tyme hadde ben at debate and warre with Lewys, and Lewys had from them taken ỳ castel of Gurnaye/ this Guy le Rous wyth hys sonne seynge they might not preuayle agayn the kyng, awayted theyr tyme and season, and espyed when Endo hys owne broder and erle of Corbuell went forth on huntynge, and toke hym, & as a prysoner kept hym in the castell of Bawdum. whereof the cause was, for so myche as the sayde Endo wolde not assyste nor ayde ỳ sayd Guy le Rous his brother agayne the kynge. when thys was knowen, anon the frendes and tenauntes of the sayde erle shewyd this mater vnto the kynge/ beseechynge hym that he wolde ayde and assyste theym to recouer theyr naturall lorde. whereunto the kynge graunted/ and forth wyth sent a knyght or captayn of his named Juncelyne, accompanyed with .xl. horsmen before/ for so myche as yt was shewyd vnto the kyng

the kyng, ꝑ such as had ꝑ rule of the castell wolde receyue suche persones as were sent from hym, and delyuer the castell wyth the ꝓysoner vnto them. Uppon whyche appoyntemēt thys Juncelyne as before is sayd was sent to entre this castell. But all contrary to the former ꝓmise made/this Juncelyne was betrayed and taken, and many of his men slayne, & hym selfe set in ꝓison, where the sayd erle of Cornuayll was. wherof when the kynge was enfourmed, he was passynge greuously dyscontent. wherfore in all haste he sped him thyther, & compassed ꝑ castell wyth a stronge syege/and those that were wythin defended them manfully. In the tyme of the whyche syege nother Guy the fader, nor Guy hys sonne, were with in the sayde castell of Baudum.

But Guy ꝑ son as a lusty and ꝯperdous knyght/ put hym selfe in aduenture dyuers wayes and tymes to haue entred the sayde castell for comfort of his men/but all was in vayn. Fynally the kynge made so sore and cruell assautes, that he wan the fyrst warde wyth great dyfficultye, and after the hole/and delyuerꝯ the erle and Juncelyn his stewarde, ꝑ which were in great doute of theyr lyues. And such as he toke ꝓysoners of the foldyours / some he put to deth, and some he ꝓisoned to theyr lyues ende, to the terrour and fere of other.

In ꝓcesse of tyme after at a place called the Roche of Guy, whych one Guy of olde tyme had buylded/ dwelyd at this daye one of that stocke named also Guy, the whyche hadde to wyfe a fayre and good woman, the doughter of one Wyllyā a Norman. whyche Wyllyam entendynge to dyspoyle the sayde Guy, and to be lord of that stronge place / vppon a tyme when the sayde Guy was in ꝑ chyrch or chapell to here his dyuyne seruyce entred the chyrche wyth a certayn of harnessed knyghtes vnder theyr man tellys, and fell vppon hym and all to hewe hym. wherof herynge the wyfe / ranne as a madde woman, and fell vppon her husbande, to the entēt to saue hym from the strokes. But the tyrauntes were so cruell, ꝑ they forbare nothynge of theyr cruel tye/ but wounded her wyth her husbande, so that both were slayne/and that done entred the castell, and slew all suche as they found therin. when this Willyam fader to ꝑ wife of Guy, or brother to her as affermeth maister Robert Gagwyne, was possessed of ꝑ castell of Guyon/he thought therby to rule all the countrey enuyron. But the gentyles and commons herynge of thys shamefull murder/assembled thē to gither/& of one mynde whyle some of them yode to the kyng to enfurme hym of that cruell dede, the other ꝓpared abyllementes of warre, and layde syege to the sayde castell. The kynge Lewys herynge of this shamfull dede, and the wynnynge of so stronge an holde, fe rynge the rescue of Englishmen and Normans, leste that castell by that meane myghte fall in theyr handes/ sent his commyssyon vnto the rulers of that countrey, chargynge theym wyth all dylygence to assaute that place. And yf they myght wynne yt/ to put the executours of that murder vnto moste shamefull deth. whyche commāundement receyued from the kynge / stronge assaute & cruell was made, & manfully yt was defended. But the losse ran to theym of the castell/ so that in ꝓcesse of tyme when this Willyam conceyued well that he myght not contynue the defence ther of, he began to treate & agreed, that yf he myghte haue free yssue for hym and hys, & assurauncethat he wyth his knyghtes myght go quyetly vn-

to a

to a place that he wold chose/he wold then delyuer the castell wyth all that was therin. The whyche requeste of dyuerse of the hedde captaynes was graunted and swo3ne. But so soone as the castell was delyuered, and the Frenchemen entred / the multytude not wythstandynge the fo3mer p3omyse and othe, fell vppon the sayde wyllyam and his souldyours, & them put vnto deth by many cruell to3mentes/ & fynally caste all they3 carey̆ns into the ryuer of Sayne, vppon the bry̆nke wherof the sayde toche and castell was standynge.

And sho3tely after this, ensued the warre betwene this Lewys & kynge Henry of Englande, as yt is befo3e shewyd in ỳ.r. yere of ỳ sayde Henry. And after the warre ended betwene these two p3ynces / Hugh Puysslake a man of great mygh̄t at those dayes in Fraunce, rebelled agayne ỳ kyng/ and warred greuously vppon o3 agayn the countesse of Chartres/ and robbed and pylled the chyrches of ỳ countrey, as well as other places/so that the sayd cou̇tesse with her yonge sonne Thybaude, were fayne to seke socoure of the kynge. wherfo3e the kynge called a counsayll at hys citye of Meleyne/ where agayne the sayd Hugh many greuous complayntes were put. But fo3 so myche as ỳ sayd Hugh at that tyme was not p3esent, to make answere vnto such thynges as then was layde to his charge/ the kynge commaunded that the castell of Terry o3 of Tho3re in all haste shulde be wanned & vytayled, to the ende that by the comfo3te & strength of that castell, the kynge yt nede requyred myght lay syege to the castell of Puysslake, fo3 so myche as that one was nere adioynynge vnto ỳ other. In whych passe tyme the sayd Hugh was somoned to appere befo3e the kynge and his counsayll/ but he refused to appere.

when the kynge was enfourmed of the garnysshyng of ỳ castell of Tho3re, and of the disobedyence of Hugh/ he assembled a stronge hoste, and cȯpassed the castell of Puysslake with a syege/ and set Thybaude son of the countesse vppon that syde that stode towarde the p3ouynce of Chartres, so that stronge assautes and cruell warre was made on euery parte. what shulde I make longe p3oceste/ to tell of the ferefull shot of the gonnys vppon bothe partyes, o3 of the sharpe shot of 3owes, the castynge of stonys, o3 scalynge of the wallys, o3 fyllynge of the dyches, the fy3yng of the gates, o3 yet the mo3tall and cruell fyght on bothe partes / no3 of ỳ manyfold dede bodyes & maymed, by reason of ỳ sayd assautes/ o3 yet ỳ manasses o3 mockes, o3 great bostis o3 crakes vsed of the souldyours du rynge this syege. But fynally after the kynge hadde lyen befo3e the sayd castell a certayne of tyme, he wanne yt by pure fo3ce, and toke the sayde Hughe wyth hys accessaryes. The whyche he commaunded to be kepte as p3ysoners in the castell of Tho3re fo3 a seasou. Then the kynge caste downe the sayde castell of Puysslake to the grounde, except a lytle to3re made of tymber, the whyche he reser vyd fo3 a lodgynge. And that done some of the fo3sayd p3ysoners he put to deth, and some he dysheritid after the grefe of they3 offence. And so this fo3esayd countesse of Chartres with her sonne Thybaude was in quyete of they3 countrey and castell of Puysslake belongynge to the sayde erledome. But howe yt was / in p3ocesse of tyme folowynge thys Thybaude entended to haue reedyfyed there a newe castell / wherby as the kinge was enfo3med, he wold haue encroched thynges appertaynynge to the

Not by Hall nor Fabyan nor Grafton

to the crowne of Fraunce / wherfore the kynge wythstode yt. For this / a grudge fell betwene the kynge and erle Thybaude / so that in processe dedely warre was made betwen thē. The whyche contynued in such wise to theyr both damages / that fynally the warre was agayne reuyued betwene kynge Lewys and kynge Henry, as in the .xbii. yere of the reygne of the sayde Henry is declared, by meane of thys warre betwene the kynge and this erle Thybaude. wherof the cyrcumstaunce wold are a longe leysure to reherse, as yt is shewyd in the frenche storye. But fynally this erle Thybaude loste none honour / all be yt that the frenche cronycle wonderfully fauoreth ỹ party of the Frenche kynge, that the reader maye well apperceyue, Quis pu rit leonem.

THE .CCXXXI. CHAPITER.

THis Lewys also hadde great warre wyth Henry the fourth of that name emperour / the whyche maryed Wolde the doughter of Henry the fyrste kynge of England, as before is shewed. whefore the occasyon was as sayth the Frenche cronycle / for so myche as the sayd Henry the emperour hadde before tyme ben accursed of Gelasius the seconde of that name then pope, at Raynes a cytye in Fraunce. For the whych cause as there is surmytted / the sayde emperoure assembled an huge hoste of Almaynes and Italyens, and entred the lande of Fraunce, and dyd therin myche harme. But in the ende when he knew of the great prouysyon ỹ Lewis made to mete him, & of his great power / he then as affermeth ỹ frēch cronycle, wythdrewe hym / and so auoyded the lande of Fraūce wythout stroke strykyng. But of this speketh nothyng the authour that wrote the story of this Henry the emperour.

After this the erle of Flaundres named Charlys, the systers sonne of kynge Lewys nerte duke after Baldewyn, whych dyed as before is sayd in the thyrde chappter of the story of kyng Henry, of a woūde in his face / this forsayd Charlys was sore hated of the prouoste of Brudgys. The whyche to bryng his malyce to some effecte / counsayled wyth hys adherentes how he myght slee the sayde Charlys. By whose coūsayle a meane was founde to brynge the erle to Brudgys a towne of Flaundres, for the wele of the sayde towne. After whose commynge vppon a daye he beynge in a chyrche and herynge his dyuyne seruyce, was slayne of ỹ sayd prouoste and his complyces. wherof herynge kynge Lewys / anon wyth a great army entred Flaundres, and beseged the town of Brudges, and lastely toke the sayde prouoste. The whyche fyrst was bounden to a post, & then his eyen wyth a reede stryken out of hys hed / And then shot wyth arowes / & lastely set vppon a whele, where he remayned tyl he dyed. And a felowe of hys named Bartopus, ỹ whyche was consentyng to the same murder / was hanged vppon a galos by the waste and armys / and by hym a mastyfe or great curre dogge, the whyche as soon euer he was smytten bote vppon the sayde Bartopus / so that in processe he all to rent hym, & dyd to hym so great payne, that lastely he endyd his lyfe in great mysery.

In the time of ỹ reygn of this Lewys / the bishop of Clermōde was voyded his see by the cruelnes of the erle of Auerne. wherfore the kyng assembled his knyghtes / and by strength, set the byshoppe in hys place agayne maugry his enymyes. And agayne the second tyme when he was eft put out by

out by the sayde erle/ the kynge restored hym/ and toke suche pledges of the erle, that he remayned after in good quyet. In ỳ later dayes of this Lewys/ his eldest sonne named Philyppe wyth a conuenyent company, vppon a daye for his dyspoyte rode about certayne stretys of the cytye of Parys/ and as he rode, an hogge sodenly starte amonge the horse fete of the chylde/ wherwyth the horse beynge frayde lepte sodenly, and cast the chylde to the grounde, wyth so great vyolence that he dyed ỳ nyght folowynge. For this myschappe the kynge toke great heuynesse/ so that he wared dayly more feble. And for he was vnweldy by reason of ouer ladynge of flesshe, and myghte not well trauayll/ he therfore by the aduyce of hys lordes, admytted hys seconde sonne named Lewys to the rule of the realme, and hym he crowned by his lyfe tyme/ and also maryed hym vnto Elynoure the doughter of the duke of Guyan, by whych he was inherytoure vnto her father. And shortely after the kynge sykened/ and to hys great payne in an horse lytter was brought vnto sayne Denys. where he lyenge a season syke, and knew that the owre of deth was nere/ commaunded suche as were aboute hym that they shulde spredde a tappyte vppon the ground, and then laye hym vppon the sayde tappette, and vppon hym to be made a crosse of asshes/ whyche all was done accordynge to his commaundement. And there he so laye tyll he dyed, in the yere of hys reygne to reken from the deth of his father to his owne endynge daye. xxx. yeres/ so that he reygned .xxix yeres full and odde monethes/ and was buryed in the monastery of sayne Denys with great pompe, wyth thys scrypture folowynge vppon his tombe.

Illustris genitor Lodouici rex Lodouicus,
Vir clemens, Christi seruorum semper amicus:
Iussitui fecit pastorem canonicorum,
In sella veteri trans fluuium Parisiorum.
Mane vir magnanimus almi victoris amore,
Auro reliquijs ornauit regius honore.
Sancti Dionysij, qui seruat corpus humatum,
Martyr & antistes, Lodouici solue reatum.

whyche versys may be expowned in our vulgar as folowyth:

The noble father of Lewys, Lewys the kynge.
To Cristes seruauntes ryght meke and louynge/
Caused to be made of chanons an howse,
In a selle of Paris where the streme flowes/
whyche this man myghty for loue of sayne Victor,
wyth golde an relyquys enorned with great honor.
wherfore sayne Denys, whyche kepest hys body graued,
Martyr and bishoppe/ pray that his soule be saued.

Anglia.

THE.CCXXXII. CHAPITER.

STephan erle of Boloyn, and son of the erle of Blessence, and of the wyues syster of Henry the fyrst named Mary / begane his reygne ouer the realme of Englande, in the yere of our lord. xi. C. xxxvi/ a the first yere of Lewes ỳ. viii. of ỳ name then kyng of Fraunce. This was a noble man and hardy. But contrarye hys othe, after the assyrmaunce of some wryters that he made to Wolde the empresse/ he toke vpon hym ỳ crowne/ and was crowned vppon sayne Stephans daye in the Cristemasse

weke at westmynster, of the archbis-
shoppe of Caunterbury, the whyche
in lykewyse had made lyke othe vn-
to the sayde empresse, in presence of
her fader as before is touched. In pu
nyshment wherof as men demed/the
sayde archbyshoppe dyed shortly af-
ter. And many other lordes whyche
dyd accordyng lyke/ went not quyte
wythout punyshement. A great cau-
ser of this periurye as reherseth one
authour, was this/one Hugh Bygot
stewarde somtyme wyth Henry the
fyrste / immedyatly after the decease
of the sayde Henry, came vnto En-
gland/and before the sayde archbys-
shop and other lordes of the lande,
toke wyllfully an othe/ & sware that
he was present a lytle before the kyn
ges deth, when kynge Henry admyt
ted & chase for hys heyre to be kynge
after hym Stephan hys neuewe/ for
so myche as Maude his doughter
had dyscontented hym. wher vnto
the archbyshoppe wyth the other lor-
des gaue to hasty credence. But this
Hugh scaped not vnpunyshed / for
he dyed myserably in a shorte tyme
after.

when kyng Stephan was crowned
he sware before the lordes at Oryn-
forde, that he wolde not holde in hys
hand the benefyces that voyded/and
that he wold forgyue the Dane gelt
as kyng Henry before hym had done
wyth other thynges whyche I passe
ouer. And for this Stephan drad the
cõmynge of the empresse/ he therfore
gaue lycence vnto his lordes, ỹ euer
ry of them myght buylde a castell or
strong fortres vpon his own ground.
And soone after he agreed wyth Da-
uyd kynge of Scottes, & receyued of
hym homage, after he had from hym
wonne some townes and holdes.

The towne of Exetoure rebellyd a-
gayne the kynge in the seconde yere
of hys reygne. But he in the ende he
subdued theym. And wyllyam arch
byshoppe of Caunterburye dyed the
same yere / whose benefyce was af-
ter gyuen to Thibaude abbot of Bec
co in Normandye.

About the fourth yere of his reyg-
gne / Dauyd kynge of Scottys re-
pentynge hym of hys former agre-
ment made wyth the kynge, entred
of newe the boundes of Northum-
berlande aboute the ryuer of Theyse
towarde the prouynce of yorke, and
brent and slewe the people in moste
cruell wyse/ not sparynge man, wo-
man, nor chylde. Ageyne whome
Thurstone by the kynges cõmaunde
ment was sent. The whych wyth his
power quytte hym so knyghtly, that
he ouer threwe the hoste of Scottes,
and slewe of theym a great nomber,
and compellyd theym to withdrawe
agayne into Scotlande. In the
which passetyme ỹ kyng layde syege
to the castell of Bedforde and wanne
yt. And that done / he then made a
yage into Scotlande, where he
dyd lytle to hys pleasure or profyte.
Then in his retourne homewarde he
toke Alexaunder byshoppe of Lyn-
colne / and held hym in dureſſe tyll
he hadde yelded or gyuen vnto hym
the castell of Newerke. And then he
chased Nygellus byshop of Ely.

Also in thys furye he toke suche
displeasure with his louynge frende
Roger byshop of Salysburye / that
he caste hym in bondes tyll the sayde
Roger hadde rendred vnto hym the
two castellys of Vyes and Shyr-
burne. For the whyche thys Roger
in remembrynge the great ingrati-
tude of the kynge/toke such thought
that he dyed shortely after / and left
in redy coyne. xl. thousande marke,
whyche after hys deth came to the
kynges cofers.

One cronycle sayth that kynge Ste
phan obteyned theſe forsayde castel
lys, to

lys, to the entent he myght fortyfye theym wyth his knyghtes to wythstande the empreſſe, whoſe cũmynge he euer fered. And ẏ yere folowynge he wãne wyth ſtrength the caſtellys of Glowceter, of Herford, of webley, of Bryſtowe, of Dudley, & of Shrewesburye/ for the whyche cauſe Robert erle of Glouceter began to wyth drawe hys allegeaunce from kynge Stephan. This Robert was the ſon of Henry the fyrſt by reaſon of baſte/ and for thys dyſpleaſure ſent letters vnto Wolde the empreſſe hys ſyſter, prompſynge to her great ayde to wynne her ryght.

In the meane whyle that the empreſſe made prouyſyon for her iourney / kynge Stephan concluded a marryage betwene Euſtace his ſonne and Conſtaunce the kynges ſyſter of Fraunce, doughter of Lewys the great / the whyche contynued the amyte betwene England and Fraũce.

Then in the moneth of July and vi. yere of Stephan/ Wolde the empreſſe as teſtifyeth Henry the chanon in hys. ix. boke, entred this land by the porte of Portesmouthe / and ſo kepte on her iourney tyll ſhe came to Bryſtowe, and dyd great harme by the meane of her paſſage through the countrey. In whyche tyme of her ſayde landynge, kyng Stephan laye at the ſyege of walyngforde caſtell. But as ſoone as he harde of the landynge of the empreſſe / he anon ſente oute commyſſyons for more ſtrength, and ſo drewe towarde hys enymyes. But in this tyme and ſeaſon Robert erle of Glowceter, and Ranulfe erle of Cheſter, wente vnto the empreſſe wyth all the power that they might make. The empreſſe herynge the great power commynge wyth the kynge / drewe to the cytye of Nycoll now called Lyncolne, and there helde her a longe ſeaſon for all that the kyng myght do. But laſtely the empreſſe wyth her people eſcaped/ and the kynge was poſſeſſyd of the cytye, and there bode tyll Candelmas. After whyche ſeaſon/ erle Robert and Ranulfe before named, with a great power of walſhmen, & ẏ power of the empreſſe, came agayn the kynge. where as when bothe hoſtes were nere toynyng/ the erle Ranulfe of Cheſter ſpake to his knightes and ſayd: I requyre you that I that am cauſe of your parell, may be the fyrſt that ſhall entre into the parell. Then anſwered erle Robert and ſayd/ yt is not vnworthy to the ẏ areſte the fyrſt ſtroke and dignyte of this fyght. For to the yt is fyttynge, for nobleſſe of blood and vertue of ſtrength, in the whyche thou paſſeſt other men. But the kinges falſe othe moueth men to warre and to fyght/ where we muſte now wynne the maſtry or be ouercome. And he ẏ hath none other ſocour, is cõſtrayned to defende hym by knyghtly and ſtronge dedes of armes & of manhode. And ſo ſhall we now agayne theym that by entryked wyth gyle & wyckedneſſe / as Robert erle of Mellent, the erle alſo of Albemarll, and Symon of Hampton, the which is a man of great boſte and of ſmall myght.

Then kyng Stephan prepayred to ſet forwarde hys people/ and erle Baudewyne had wordes of comfort to the kynges peple, & ſayde: Syr ẏ ſhall fyghte/ to theym is behouefull thre thynges. The fyrſt is ryght of ẏ cauſe, leſte men fal in parell of ſoule. The ſecond is quantyte of men of armys, leſte men be oppreſſe wyth erre dynge nombre. And the thyrde is the effecte corage of strẽgth of knightes, ẏ the quarel ſhuld not fayle for lacke of hardy and aſſured fyghtynge. As touchynge whyche thre poyntes I truſte we be well ſped. But & ye take

Thre thynges requyſyte to fyght

bede farthermore what enymyes we haue/ fyrste we haue agayne vs Robert erle of Glouceter, whyche vseth great manasses, and executeth lytle or small dedys. In mouth he is a lyon/ but in harte he is a shepe. He is pompous in speche, and darke in vnderstandyng. There is also Ranulfe erle of Chester/ a man wythout reason and full of folehardynesse/ redy and preste to all conspyracy and vnstedfastnesse of maner and dedes, hasty and furyouse of hart, and vnware of parelys. He assayeth oft to acheue great dedes/ but he bryngeth none to effecte. And what he fyrst and first shelp begynneth/ he cowardely and fayntly forsaketh, as vnhappy and vngracyous in all his dedys/ and is ouercomen in euery place. For he holdeth wyth hym banyshed men & scullers. And the mo of them that be in a company, the soner they be ouercome/ and weke they be in fyghtyng, for eyther of theym putteth truste in his felowe whyle hym selfe is ouerthrowen.

But or he myght haue fynyshed his wordes to moste mennys audyence/ the cry of the enymyes, wyth noyse of trumpettes and gruntyng of horsys approched and smote to gyther/ and forth go the arowes, and gresely a cruell fyghte was contynued vpon bothe sydes for the whyle þ̄ yt̄en duryd. where through the grene feld was turned into a perfyte redde/ so that many a pale & wan vysage was there sene yeldynge the gooste, wyth armys and legges disseuered and departed. A longe whyle thys fyghte stode in questyon, whyther partye shulde obteyne victorye. But in the ende kynge Stephans partye gaue backe and fledde/ and he full knyghtly abode on felde wyth a fewe of his knyghtes, and was taken, and so was brought vnto the empryesse/ the whyche commaunded hym to be conueyed vnder sure keppyng vnto Brystowe, where he was kepte as a pryssoner from the sayde tyme of Candelmasse vnto holy Roode daye next ensuynge.

Aboute this tyme was founded the Abbay of Stratforth Langthorne wythin. iiii. myles of London, by a knyght called syr wyllyam de Mouñ fychet.

THE. CCXXXIII. CHAPITER.

When the empryesse hadde wonne this victorye, and had commytted the kyng to warde, as before ye haue harde/ she was not therwith a lytle exalted/ but thoughte in her mynde that she was in a suerty of the possessyon of the hole realme. But she was disceyued/ for Kent toke parte wyth kynge Stephan. But yet after this victory thus obteyned, the empryesse came vnto wynchester, and after to wyltone, to Orenforde, to Redynge, and to saynte Albons/ into the whyche cytyes and townes she was receyued wyth all honoure. And fynally she came to London, for to entre the state of the lande. At her whyche there beynge/ the quene made assyduat laboure for the delyuerye of the kynge her husbande/ promysynge that he shulde surrender the lande into her possessyon, and he to become a religyous man, other elys a pylgryme to hys lyues ende. But all was in vayne/ for she myght purchace no grace as then vppon no maner of condycyons. The cytezens of London also made great laboure, that they myghte vse the lawys of Edwarde the confessoure, as they were graunted by wyllyam Conqueroure/ and not the lawys of her father, whyche were of more straytnesse. wherof in no wyse they

they of her counsayll myght haue any graunte. For this the cytezens were dyscontentyd / and knowynge that the countrey of Kent wolde strength theyr partye, ordeyned to haue taken her. But the beynge therof warned / departed in haste, and lefte behynde her hyr store of housholde, and so fledde vnto Orynforde / where she abode her people, the whyche was dewyded and scateryd. And in thys whyle she sente vnto Dauyd kynge of Scottes and her vncle for to ayde her, the whyche in all haste came vn to her / and so yode to wynchester, where she layde syege to the bysshoppes towre, the whyche the kynges brother at that tyme helde wyth strength.

Then the quene wyth ayde of her frendes, of Kentyshemen and other / made a stronge hoste / wherof was capytayne a knyght named Guyllyam de Pre. whē the empresse harde of ꝑ great strength of the quene, and saw that her owne mynyshed rather then encreasyd / she fled secretely and escaped vnto Glouceter. And erle Robert her brother was taken soone after, and put in pryson. Then Dauyd kynge of Scottes herynge of thys / returned into Scotland. Then meanes was made vpon eyther syde, for deliuery and exchaunge of the prysoners / so that kynally yt was agreed that the kynge shulde be delyuerȳd for erle Robert. But or thys agrement were concluded myche sorowe was wrought wythin thys realme. For the empresse pylled and spoyled on hyr partye / and the quene by promyses and manaces borowed & toke vppō ꝑ other syde / & the soudyours stale and extorcyoned vpō both partyes / so that riche men were made nedy, and the poore were oppressed.

In thys meane whyle the empresse retourned agayne to Orynforde & bytayled and manned yt in her beste maner.

Then lastely the kyng was delyuered vpon holy Roode day in harueste, and soon after he becleped Orynford wyth a stronge syege, from the tyme of Mychelmasse vnto the season of Crystemas / at whyche tyme and season the empresse vsed a new gyle for constraynte and necessyte of vytayle.

In that tyme was great plente of snow fallen vppon the grounde / and the frost was therwyth so great, that Thamys wyth other great ryuers were then frosen ouer / so that man & horse myght passe ꝑ water vppō the yse. The empresse then constrayned of nede as before is sayd, apparayled her and her companye in whyte clothynge, whych a farre of apered lyke the snow / and so vpon a plumpe goyng to gyther as nere as they myght escaped the daunger of they fone / & so came to walyngforde. And thens in processe of tyme she wyth a small companye departed, and retourned fynally into Normandye vnto her husbande.

So soon as the empresse was thus departed from Orenforde, the town was yelden vnto ꝑ kynge / where the kyng had mych of the empresse stuffe as wel harnes as other stuffe of houshold. Thē he entendyd to haue pursued her. But tydyngs were brought vnto hym, ꝑ Ranulfe erle of Chester wyth an hoste of walshmen was comynng towarde hym. But by medyacyon of frendes thys Ranulfe in the ende to the kynge was reconcyled, and was wyth hym agreed.

About this tyme and season as yt is testyfyed of dyuerse authours / the Jewes vpon Ester euyn crucyfyed a chylde named wyllyam, in the cytye of Norwyche. And in the tyme of Henry the second, about ꝑ .vi. yere of his reygn as sayth Polycronicon,

they crucified an other at Glouceter.

In the xrii. yere of his reygn/kyng Stephan was agayne crowned at Lyncolne. And soon after he toke frō Ranulphe erle of Chester the castell of Lyncolne.

Robert erle of Glouceter made also newe warre vppon the kynge/ & had the better of the kynge at wyltone, so that the kynge was lyke to haue fallen in Robertys daūger. But yet the kynge escaped wyth myche payne. And there was taken a baron of the kynges named syr willyam Martel, for whose delyuery the kynge gaue after to the sayde erle the castell of Shyrbourne. And that done ẏ sayd erle Robert began to foūde a stronge castell at Faryngdone. wherof the kynge beynge enfourmed, assembled his knyghtes and sped hym thytherwarde/ by meane wherof the worke was for that tyme empeached & let.

In the .xv. yere of the reygne of kynge Stephan/ the ryuer of Thamys was so strongely ouerfrosen, that horse and carte passed ouer vppon the yse.

In the.xvi. yere/ Ranulphe erle of Chester dyed, that was surnamed Gercyous, and was the.iiii.erle after the conqueste/ and his sonne Hughe was erle after hym, which was a mā of great strength and vertue. And in the same yere, as wytnessyth Guydo and other / dyed Geffrey Plantagenet husband of Wolde the empresse. After whose deth, Henry short mantell that was the son of the sayde Geffrey and Wolde/ was made duke of Angeous & Normandye. The which in few yeres after maryed Elyanour the doughter of the erle of Poytow/ the whych Elyanour was before maryed vnto Lewys kynge of Fraūce, and from hym deuorced for nerenes of blood, when he hadde receyued of her .ii. doughters named Mary and Alys, as wytnessyth the frenche cronycle. And so this Henry was erle of Angeous by his fader, duke of Normandy by his mother, & erle of Poytowse by his wyfe.

It was not longe after, that Eustace the sonne of kynge Stephan wyth ayde of the Frenche kyng, warred vppon Henry duke of Normandye / the whyche after some wrpters was ymagyned by Stephan his father, to the entent to let or stop hym ẏ he shuld not come into England to clayme his enherytaunce. But duke Henry defended hym so knyghtly, ẏ the sayde Eustace wanne therby lytle honour or profyte.

In old cronycle sheweth, that kyng Stephan entended to haue crowned the sayde Eustace his sonne kyng of Englande by his dayes / but the byssshoppes of Englande refused ẏ dede by cōmaundement of the pope.

In the.xrvii.yere/ the kynge layd syege vnto the castelles of Newebery, of walyngforde, and of warwyke or warwell / the whyche hadde ben kepte by the empresse frendes from the tyme of her departyng vnto that daye, and hoped of rescous by Henry duke of Normandy. But ẏ kynge then wan the castellys of Newebery and of warwell / and walyngforde defended the holders tyl the cōmyng of Henry the duke. The whyche in the ende of ẏ sayde yere wyth a great armye entred Englande / and tyrste wanne the castell of Walmysburye. And thens he rode to London / and wanne the towre, as myche by Polycy and by fayre pmyse as by strēgth. And suche stuffe of vytayle and armoure as he fande therin / he sent to walyngforde. And that done he wēt to the towne of walyngforde/ & wan such holdes as were there about.

Then kyng Stepan wyth his power drewe towarde the duke / and fynally

nally by meane of medyatours, as Thybaude archbyshoppe of Cauterbury and other / both prynces to comon of peace, met nere vnto ꝑ water of Urym or Urn. But as fast as some laboured to haue peace, so fast other laboured to haue warre / so that at that communacacyon the peace was not concluded.

After the kynge and the duke were departed / the kynge yode towarde Eppyswyche in Suff. And the duke toke the way to Sprewesbury / where he wan the castell of the sayde town. From thens the duke wente to Nothyngham and wan the towne. wher fore the soldyours that helde the castell, seynge that the towne toke ptye wyth the duke / brake out vppon the nyght, and fyred the town and brent a great parte therof.

In this while dyed and was drowned Eustace the sonne of kynge Stephan / and was buried at Feuersham in Kent in the abbay that his father before had buylded.

Thybaude archbyshop of Caunterbury left not to labour & conclude ꝑ peace betwene ꝑ kyng & the duke / & endeuored hym selfe therin so dylygently, wyth the assystence of other, that in the yere folowynge the peace was cõcluded vppon dyuerse condycyons. wherof one was, that ꝑ kyng shulde contynue as kynge durynge his lyfe / and immedyatly after ꝑ conclusion of this peace, the sayd Henry shuld be proclaymed in all the chefe cytyes and townes of Englande for heyr apparant, & be kynge after the deth of the sayde Stephan / and that the kynge shulde take hym for hys son of adopcyon and ryghtefull heyr vnto the crowne. To the whyche couenaũtes iustly to be holden / ꝑ kyng was fyrste sworne, and after his lordes spyrytuall and temporall / and so yode bothe to London, where they were royally receyued. And when ꝑ kyng had feested the duke, and gyuen to hym ryche gyftes / he toke leue of the kynge, and so returned into Normandye, as affyrmeth the sayde authour the Floure of hystoryes. Howe be yt the cronycle of England sayth, that the accorde was made vpon dyuysyon of the lande betwene theym / that is to meane that both shuld reygne to gyther, and eyther of them to enioye halfe the lande. But how that dyuysyon was made, or whych parte of the lande euerych of them shulde hold / no mẽcion therof is made. And the former accorde shuld be as abue is sayde, concluded. viii. dayes folowynge the Epyphanye of our lorde in the towne of Oxenford. And ꝑ kyng dyed in the moneth of October folowyng, when he had reygned. xviii. yeres full and odde monethes / and was enterred in th eforsayde abbay of Feuersham.

Of dyuers authours as Ranulfe and other / yt is recorded that thys Stephan lyued in great veracyon and trouble all the terme of hys reygne. It is sayde also that thys Stephan maryed Wolde or Mawde the doughter of Mary / the whyche was the doughter of Henry the fyrst, and countesse of Boloyne / by whome he claymed the tytle to be crowned, as by the ponger doughter of Henry the fyrst / and Henry shorte mantell claymed by the elder. But after most certenty of wryters / this Stephan was sonne of Eustace erle of Boloyne, and of Mary syster vnto Wolde that was maryed vnto Henry the fyrste / whych Wolde and Mary were doughters of Margarete wife of Malcolyn kyng of Scottes / whyche Margaret was syster to Edgare Ethelynge, and doughter of Edwarde the outlawe, that was the sonne of Edmunde Ironsyde. Then

the eldest syster Wolde, bare Wolde the empzesse by Henry the fyrste. And Wolde ꝑ empzesse doughter of Henry the fyrst/hadde by her second husbande Geffrey Plantagenet Henry the seconde. And so by Henry fyrste mantell ouer Henry the seconde, returneth the bloode of the Saxons to the crowne of Englande, and so it dyd by Stephan/ but moste conuenyently by Henry the fyrst, as by the dyssent of his mother. By whych reason yt foloweth, that the blood of wilyam conquerour continued but.lxx. yeres/ yf it be accompted from ꝑ fyrst yere of wyllyam Conquerour, vnto the laste yere of Henry the fyrste.

Thys kynge Stephan at the request of Wolde hys wyfe/ buylded in the yere of grace.xi.hundzed.xl, ꝑ abbey of Coggeshale in Esser, and set therin whyte mũkes. Also about the same tyme he founded the abbay of Feuersham in Kent/ where he nowe corporally resteth. And the thyrde he founded in Furneys in Lancashyre/ and all he garnyshed wyth munkys of Cysteaux order/ & dyed as before is sayde wythout yssue of his body.

Francia.

THE.CCXXXIIII. CHAPITER.

LEwys the.viii. of that name, & son of Lewys ꝑ great began his reygn ouer the frenchemen, in ꝑ yere of our lorde.xi.hundzed & .xxvi / & ꝑ fyrst yere of Stephan then kyng of Englande. This also is called the ponger Lewys/ in whose begynnynge Johannes de tẽporibus dyed. Thys Johñ was somtyme a squyer in the house of Charlys the conquerour/ the whyche lyued ouer.iii. hundzed yeres, for whyche cause he was named Johñ of tyme, as he ꝑ myght remẽber thinges done of longe tyme passed. This Lewys at ꝑ tyme of his fathers deth, was in the countrey of Guyan, for to receyue the dower of his wyfe Elyanour, as before in the storye and seconde chappter of kyng Stephan is touched. But when he harde of ꝑ deth of his father/ he sped hym into Fraũce. where after the necessaryes for the weale of his realme ordeyned/ he maryed his wyues syster named Alys, vnto Arnolde erle of Vermendoze. After whyche maryage solempnysed / tydynges were broughte vnto hym, that the crysten people beynge in the holy lande as warryours vppon the Turkes and Sarasyns, were dystressed and ouerthrowen / and dyuerse stronge holdes from them taken and wonne. wherfore by the exhortacyon of that holy mũke Bernarde, whych at this day is called saynt Bernard / ꝑ sayd Lewys, wyth also Conradus the.iii. of that name then emperour of Almayne, wyth Alphon then kynge of Spayne, wyth dyuerse other nobles of Fraunce & other prouynces/ toke vpon them the crosse, and prouyded for the expedycyon of that iourney, in the.iiii. yere of hys reygne after some wryters. But of the takyng of hys iourney dyuers writers holde diuers opynyons/ so that the doute resteth betwene the yere of our lorde.xi. hundzed & .xl, and the yere of.xi.hundzed and.l.

when all thynges were redy for that iourney/ the kynge, the quene, wyth the flowre of the chyualry of Fraũce set forthwarde vppon that iourney/ and came in processe of tyme vnto Constantyn the noble/ where he met wyth Conradus the emperour, and Alphons kynge of Spayne. whom the prynce Emanuell then emperour of

rout of Constantyne the noble receyued ioyusly / and made to theym by his outwarde contenaunce louynge and frendely chere / and promised vnto theym ayde in that iourney bothe of vitayll and also for gydes for the nerte and surest waye. But he contrary to his promyse dyd dysapoynte theym, and nothynge ayded theym. For he delyuerd vnto theym meale myngeled wyth lyme, wherof grewe myche harme to the crysten hoste after. And also he assygned vnto them suche gydes, as brought them into places and coūtreys of sterylyte and other daunger / so that hastely the Frenche kyng wyth great dyspleasure and losse of his men, came vnto the cytye of Danas, and beclesped yt with a stronge syege / the whych he assauted and enpayred very sore, and was lykely to haue wonne yt, yf he had assauted ỹ place styll where he began. But by counsayll of some false crysten men, the whyche as wytnesseth Peter Dyssroye and other had taken mede of the Turkes / the kynge by theyr counsayll remoued the ordynaunce from the weker place vnto ỹ stroger. where after dyuers assautes made / the kyng conceyued well ỹ he was dysceyued. A cause of this treason as sayth ỹ forsayde Peter was this. The erle of Flaūdres, which by dyuerse experymētes saw that the cytye was lyke to be goten / made supplycacyon to the kynge and the lordes, that he myghte haue the rule of the cytye at suche tyme as yt were wonne / the which to hym was graūted. wherof beynge aduertysed dyuerse Surgyons of ỹ coūtrey borne, dysdayned that a straunger shuld be lorde of theyr enheryteaunce / and for that condescended and agreed to that treason, by mean wherof the crysten pryncys losse theyr trauell.

Then the crysten pryncys seynge ỹ they were thus deluded / toke theyr aduyce howe they myght contynewe theyr pylgrimage vnto the holy cytye of Hierusalem. But in this counsayl sourded and quyckened so many opynyons / that ethe was contrayous vnto other. By mean wherof the emperour was so dyscontented / that he toke leue of the Frenche kynge and other, and so returned into hys own countrey. But the Frenche kynge tarryed there in that costes a yere after / and dyd there but lytle worthye any memory. All be yt of this vyage the frenche boke maketh a great & longe processe, touchynge the wynnyng of the cytye of Anteoche / wyth hys beynge and counsaylys keppynge wyth in Hierusalem, & other thinges there rehersed. But for I se the mater dysagreable to other wryters, and also thynke that myche therof is fayned / I therfore passe yt ouer, howe be yt that to some persones suche fablys ben full pleasaunte to here. wherfore all suche I remytte vnto the sayde frenche cronicle / & somwhat I shall folowe the authour Gyraldꝰ, ỹ which wyth other testyfyen, that Lewys in his returne towarde Fraunce wared syke for ỹ long forberyng of his wife. wherfore by thaduyce of phisycyons & also of bysshops / he was coūsayled to take a wenche because his wyfe was so farre from hym. But ỹ kyng wythstode that counseyll / and sayde that hym hadde bene leuer to be syke and dye of goddes hande / then to lyue in spouse brekynge, & offende hys lawes. And so the kyng put hym selfe to the mercy of god and receyued helth shortly after. Also it is told of hym that he vsed to faste euery fryday brede and water / and by his famylyers he was counsayled that he shulde leue that faste for wekynge of hym selfe / & fede a hundred of poore men euery frydaye, the whyche vnto

A kynge chastyte.

god

god shuld be myche more acceptable. To this he answered and sayde, we wold gladly fede so many poore men or mo/ but our fastynge woll we not breke. For wythout the profyte that yt doth vnto the soule, yt profyteth also right myche to the body. For the purgacyon and reste of one daye, helpeth myche to put of the superfluyte of the other/ and also yt maketh the sharper apetyte.

When Lewys was retourned into Fraunce/ for what happe yt is of the frenche cronycle made doutefull, he was from Elyanour hys wyfe deuorced, of the whych he hadde receyued before.ii. doughters as before is touched/ the whyche in processe of tyme folowynge, was maried vnto Henry duke of Normandy. whych mariage was a new occasyon of the warre betwene Englande and Fraunce. For the landes of Poytowe, wyth Gascoyne and Guyan, Lewys claymed by his former possessyon. & Henry by reason of the mariag of ꝑ sayd Elyanour, as heyr to the sayde landes. Of the whyche warre shalbe shewed in the story of ꝑ sayde Henry folowyng. After whyche deuorce thus made/ kynge Lewys maryed the yongeste doughter of the kynge of Spayne that was named Cõstaunce/ and she dyed of her fyrst chylde. Then for so myche as kynge Lewys hadde none heyr male/ by coũsayll of his baronye he maryed the thyrd wyfe, the whych was the yongeste doughter of Thybaude erle of Bloys, & was named Alys. This sayde erle dyed/ and left after hym.iiii. sonnes and.v. doughters. The eldest sonne named Henry was erle of Troys/ the seconde named Thybaude was erle of Bloys/ the thyrd named Stephan was erle of Sancorum or Sauncorer/ and ꝑ fourth named wyllyam was archbysshoppe of Raynes. The eldeste of the doughters was duches of Burgoyne/ the seconde was countesse of Barre/ the thyrde was maryed fyrst to the duke of Puell, and after to a knyght named syr william de Gorr, the fourth was countesse of Perche/ and the fyfte as before is sayd quene of Fraũce, whych was a woman garnyshed wyth many vertues as the story declareth.

THE.CCXXXv. CHAPITER.

In processe of tyme after the solemnisacyon of this mariage/ complaynte was brought before the kynge of the erles of Clermoũt and Puy or Puyll, sonne of the duke before reherssyd, and of the erle of Piomet/ that they shuld spoyle and waste the chyrches and landes to the sayde chyrches belongynge. For the which dedys the kynge commaunded the sayd.iii. erlys to warde/ but not without warre and shedynge of blood.

And after the subduynge of ꝑ sayd thre erlys/ a knyght or great man of myght called wyllyam ꝑ erle of Chalon, wyth a company of tyrauntes assembled for to robbe and spoyle the chyrche of sayntꝑ Peter of Clumy in Burgoyne. wherof herynge the prestes and mynysters of the chyrche/ to the entent to mytygate & to appeace the cruelty of the sayde tyrañtes, dyd vpon them the ornamentes of ꝑ sayd chyrche/ and rode agayne them with procession, wyth a great companye them folowynge of the people of the towne and the countrey there about, in peseable and charytable wyse. But when the sayde tyrauntes approched vnto the sayde cõpany/ without compassyon and pyty, as turkes ranne vppon crysten men, or wyth lesse Pytye/ so ranne they vppon the prestes and other, and spoyled them of all the sayde ornamẽtes/ and slew of that

of that cõpany to the nomber of.v.hũdred or mo/ & after spoyled the sayde chyrche, of suche stuffe as was therin lefte. It was not longe after or kynge Lewys had wyttynge of this cruell dede. wherfore in auengynge the chyrche/ he gatheryd a conuenyent powet and spedde hym thyther. But the sayde wyllyam erle of Chalon herynge of the kynges cõmynge, fled ỹ coũtrey / so ỹ the kyng myght haue no certayne knowlege where he became. wherfore the kyng entred and seased his landes, and gaue the moyty therof to ỹ duke of Burgoyn as chefe lorde of that soyle / and that other halfe he gaue vnto the erle of Neuers, to whose auncetry in tyme passed the sayd moyty appertayned. And that done he commaunded inquyry to be made of his accessaryes/ the prebensons or prebendars of the whyche he punyshed by dyuerse maner of tormentes and dethes, to the great contentacyon of the countrey.

when the kynge hadde thus fynished this vyage and was returned into Fraunce/ soon after was knowlege brought vnto him, that the Burgonyons & men of the towne of Verdeley, rebelled agayne the hed chyrch or abbay of that towne / and entẽdyd to haue done some vylany to the abbot and munkes of the same/ wherfore the kynge spedde hym thyther in all haste. But for theyr sauergarde the munkes were compelled to fortyfye the chyrche, and to defende them by force of armys / so that betwene them and the Burgonions many an arbalaster and stone was shot & cast. And for the kynge myght not so hastly furnyshe hym of his soldyours/ he therfore sent vnto the erle of Neuers by whose meane as to the kyng was shewed this ryot began/ commaundynge hym that he shuld se this ryot appeased, and that the chyrch of Verdeley were restored of suche harmys as to theym was done by the inhabytauntes of the towne. But of thys cõmaundement the erle set but lytle/ so that the burgeses persseuered in theyr errour. wherfore the abbot sente agayne to the kynge / beseechyng hym of his moste gracyous ayde and socoure. Then the kynge herynge of the erles dysobedyence, was therwyth greatly dysplesyd/ and suspected ỹ erle to be partye in the cause, & sped hym ỹ faster thetherwarde. But when the erle was enfourmed of the kynges cõmynge he somdeale feryd/ and mette wyth the kynge at a place called Worzet, and there demeaned hym in suche wyse, that the kyng for gaue his offense. Then he promysed that the kynges pleasure shulde be fulfylled in all thynge as he hadde before cõmaunded, wyth more as yt lyked hym to dyuyse. Vppon whych promyse so made / he commaunded that the Burgonyons shulde fyrste refrayne theym of that rebellyon agayn the chyrch/ and that they shuld newly be sworne to be obedient vnto the abbot and vnto hys successours as theyr predecessours had ben/ & ouer that for the hurtes & harmys ỹ they had done to the place at that season, they shulde paye to the sayde abbot and couẽt.lx. thousand sous. A sous is in value after sterlyng money. i.d. ob/ so that.lx.thousand sous amounteth in sterlyng money.vi.hundred & lxxv.pounde. After whych ende thus made / the kynge retourned into Fraunce.

It was not longe after, that ỹ kyng receyued of quene Alys hys wyfe a sonne, and named yt Phylyppe. But for ỹ kyng Lewys had made many pylgrymages, and vsed many ways of charyte, in gyuynge of almes and otherwyse, for to haue a sonne to be his heyre/ therfore he surnamed this

chyld

chylde A dieu donne, a chyld gyuen of god. Then thys Lewys for the intollerable dedes of the Jewes whi che in these dayes had great inhabytynge wyth in the lande of Fraūce, & vsed vsery & sleynge of Cryſten chyldren/ he ponyſhed many by deth, and many he banyſhed his lande/ but yet many remayned.

Of this Lewys dedes is lytle more cronacled/ excepte when his son Philyppe was of the age of .xiii. yeres, his fader cauſed hym to be crowned, and reſygned to hym all the rule of the lande/ and dyed the yere folowynge at Paris in the moneth of October, in the yere of grace. xi.hūdred and.lxvii. By whyche reaſon he reygned, to reken from his faders deth to his owne, vppon.xliii.yeres/ and was rychely enterred by ỹ meane of his laſt wife at the monaſtery of Barbell/ the whyche he founded in hys yonge days. After whoſe deth ỹ layd quene Alys adorned his ſepulture in the moſte rycheſt maner, wyth gold, ſyluer, and preyous gemmys/ vppon whoſe tombe was grauen theſe two verſis folowyng, as a counſayll left vnto his ſonne Philyppe.

Nunc ſuperes tu, qui ſuper es ſucceſſor honoris
Degener es, ſi degeneris a laude prioris.

whyche verſys are to be vnderſtanden as after foloweth.

Nowe take good hede, thou that doeſt ouer lyue,
Hym that in honoure and vertue dyd excelle.
Se thou alter not, nor thy ſelfe deprave/
But folowe hym, which was of honoure the well.
For yf thou do not/ men ſhall of the tell,
Thou arte degenerate and growen out of kynde/
Thy progenytours laude hauynge nothynge in mynde.

Anglie.

THE. CCXXXVII. CHAPITER.



Henry the ſecond of that named, & ſonne of Geffrey Plātagenet erle of Angeou, and of Maude ỹ empreſſe doughter of Henry ỹ firſt, began hys reygn ouer the realme of England, in the moneth of October, the yere of our lorde god .xi.hundred and.lv/ and.ỹ xix. yere of Lewys the viii. then kynge of Fraunce. This Henry was somdeale redde of face, & brode of breſte, ſhorte of body, & therwyth fatte/ the whych to aſwage he toke the leſſe of metes and drynkes, and exercyſed myche huntynge. He was reſonable of ſpeche and well lettered & orped, and alſo noble in knyghthode, wyſe in counſayll, and dred to myche diſtempes. He was alſo free and lyberall to ſtraūgers, and harde and holdynge from hys kamplyers & ſeruauntes. And whome he loued entirely or hated/ harde it was to turne hym to the contrary. He was ſlowe of anſwere, vnſtedfaſte of promyſe, gyleſull of dede, open ſpouſe breker, hamour of holy chyrch, and alwayes vnkynde to god. He alſo loued reſte and peace, to the ende he myghte the more folowe hys delectacyon & pleaſure/ wyth mo vyces reherſed by Giraldus, the whyche for lengthe I paſſe ouer. This Henry yet, as wytneſſyth Ranulfe, was not all bareyn of vertues. For he was of ſo gret courageouſnes, that he wolde often ſay that all the world ſuffyſyth not to a corageous harte. And he encreaſyd hys herytage ſo myghtily, that he wanne Irlande by ſtrength/ and toke Wyllyam kynge of Scottes, and toyned that kyngdome to his owne. From the

the ſuthe Occean to the noꝛth plan-
des of Oꝛkeys/ he cloſed all the lan
des as yt were vnder one ꝓyncy-
pate/ and ſpꝛadde ſo largely hys
empyꝛe, that men rede not of none
of hys ꝓrogenytours that hadde ſo
many ꝓrouynces and countreys vn-
der theyꝛ domynyon and rule. Foꝛ
beſyde the realme of Englande/ he
hadde in hys rule Noꝛmandy, Gaſ-
coyn, and Guyan, Angeou and Thy-
non. And he made ſubiecte to hym
Aluerne and other landes. And by
hys wyfe, he obteyned as her ryghte
the mountes and hyllys of Spayne
called montes Pyꝛany. Of the why-
che wyfe Elynoure by name, de-
uoꝛced, as beſoꝛe ys ſayde, from the
viii. Lewys kynge of Fraunce/ he
receyued .vi. ſonnes and thꝛe dough
ters. Of the ſonnes fyue were na-
med wyllyam, Henry, Richarde,
Godfrey, and Johñ. The eldeſte of
the maydens hight Maude oꝛ Mau-
de, and was maryed to the duke of
Saxon/ the ſeconde Elyanoure to
the kynge of Spayne/ and the thꝛd
named Jane, to wyllyam kynge of
Sycyle.

Thys Henry was ꝓſperouſe in
hys begynnynge, and vnfoꝛtunate
in hys ende, and ſpecyally in the laſt
fyue yeres of hys reygne. Foꝛ in the
fyꝛſt of theſe fyue yeres, his ſtrength
began to mynyſhe/ the ſeconde ye-
re he loſte a vyage in Irlande/ the
thꝛde he loſte Aluerne agayne the
kynge of Fraunce/ the fourth yere
he loſte Buthꝛycan/ and the fyfte ye-
re he loſte the cyte of Cenomenes
and Turon, wyth many holdes to
theym belongynge.

Thys Henry the ſeconde aſcertay
ned of the deth of Stephan/ ſpedde
hym into Englande/ and was cro-
ned the ſondaye beſoꝛe Cryſtemaſſe
daye of Theobalde archbyſhoppe of
Caunterbury in weſtmynſter chyꝛch.

The fyꝛſte yere of hys reygne he
ſubdued Irlande. And ſoone after
Thomas Becheth, whyche after was
byſhoppe of Caunterbury, was ma-
de chaunceller of Englonde. This
kynge caſte downe dyuers caſtellys,
that beſoꝛe in tyme of kynge Ste-
phan were buylded/ other foꝛ dyſ-
pleaſure of the owners, oꝛ ellys foꝛ
the fere they ſhulde be ſtrengthed a-
gayne hym. And alſo he banyſhed
many of the loꝛdes and gentylmen,
that kynge Stephan hadde in hys
fauoure.

Aboute the thꝛde yere of hys rey-
gne in the moneth of October, were
ſene in the fyrmament two ſunnys/
and in the mone was ſene a redde
croſſe. But of thys wonder ſheweth
the authoure of Cronica cronicarū/
and ſayth that aboute thys tyme in
Italy in the moneth of Nouember,
appered thꝛe ſunnys by the ſpace of
thꝛe owꝛes in the weſte/ and the yere
folowynge appered thꝛe monys,
whereof the myddle mone hadde a
redde croſſe ouerthwarte the face.
whyche there ys noted foꝛ a ꝓdygy
oꝛ a token of the ſeyſme, that after
fell amongꝛes the cardinalys foꝛ elec
cyon of the pope Alexãder the thꝛd/
whyche ſeyſme by meane of the fyꝛſte
Frederyke then emperoure, endu-
red almoſte .xx. yeres.

Alſo aboute this tyme Adꝛyan the
fourthe of that name was pope, an
Engliſheman boꝛne in the towne of
ſaynte Albon of whome is moꝛe de-
clared in the begynnynge of the .xxii.
chappter of the .viii. boke of Poly-
cronycon.

Alſo in thys yere the kynge wente
wyth a ſtronge armye into walys/
and after he hadde ſette that coun-
trey in an oꝛder and quyet, he buyl-
dyd a ſtronge caſtell at Rutlande,

and founded the abbaye of Baſynge werke.

In the .vi. yere of hys reygne/ thys Henry maryed hys ſeconde ſon Henry, vnto the kynges doughter of Fraũce, that is to meane Lewys the viii/ whyche the ſayde Lewys receyued of hys ſeconde wyfe named Conſtaunce, the doughter of the kyng of Spayne as before ye haue harde in the ſeconde chappter of ꝑ ſtory of the ſayd Lewys. This mayden was named Margaret. By reaſon of whych maryage, was appeaſed the warre that was begonne betwene Fraunce and Englande for the landes of Poytowe and other, the whyche kynge Henry helde by reaſon of hys wyfe. In ꝑ whych warre myche harme was done/ and more wolde haue enſued, yf yt hadde not by thys meane haue ben agreed.

In the .vii. yere of his reygn, Theobalde archbyſhoppe of Caunterbury dyed/ and Thomas Beket chaunceller of Englande was archebyſhoppe after hym, of whome more ſhall folowe.

In the ſame yere kyng Henry with a ſtronge hoſte yode to Scotlande/ and made ſo cruell warre vppon Wilyam kynge of that lande, that laſtely he was taken/ and dyd to the ſayd Henry recompenſacyon, in peldynge vnto hym the cytye of Carlell, the caſtell of Bamburghe, the newe caſtell vpon Tyne, wyth dyuers other holdes/ and a great parte of Northumberlande, the whyche he hadde wonne from the borderers. And after fewtye and homage done by the ſayde wyllyam vnto the kynge, and a certayne ſumme of money by hym promyſed wythin .ir. monethes folowynge/ the kynge ſuffred hym to go at large. But an other authour ſayth, that the kynge of Scottys was not taken/ but ſtrongely beſyeged in a towne or caſtell, ſo that fynally he was forced to agree to the forſayde couenauntes.

In the .viii. yere, the cytye of Caunterburye was fyred by negligence, & a great part therof brente. And in that ſeaſon, the archbyſhoppe Thomas beganne to repyne agayne ꝑ kynges mynde for thynges that the kynge dyd exerciſe agayn the liberties of the chyrche.

THE .CCXXXVII. CHAPITER.

In the .ir. yere of hys reygne/ the kynge for dyuerſe cauſes cõcernyng ꝑ nedes of his realme, called a parliament at hys towne of Northampton. Durynge whyche parlyament/ dyſſencyon fell betwen the kynge and Thomas archbyſhop of Caunterburye, for dyuerſe actes and ordinaunces that the kyng there procured, to paſſe agayne the lyberties of holy chyrch/ the whych Thomas gayneſtode and denyed. wherfore the kynge toke a great diſpleaſure with Thomas/ in ſo myche that ſhortely after he was fayne to flee the lande/ and in proceſſe of tyme ſpedde hym to Rome, where he complayned hym to Alexaunder the .iii. of that name then pope/ and there contynued, and in Fraunce, and in other places, in poore eſtate by terme of .vi. yeres and more. when kynge Henry hadde certayne vnderſtandynge, that Thomas was thus departed out of hys lande/ he ſeaſed hys ma

his maners and temporall landes in to hys hande / so that hys mouable goodes were spoyled and rauenyd amonge the kynges officers.

In the .xiiii. yere of his reygne / the kynge crowned Henry hys eldest sonne then lyuynge kynge of Englande at westmynster. whyche was done to the derogacyon or harme of the archbyshoppe Thomas, as yt is wytnessyd in hys legende / and for that doynge Roger archbyshoppe of yorke whyche crowned hym was accursed. But an other authour sayth that the kynge crowned Henry hys sonne, to the ende he myght haue full power and authorite to rule thys lande and the people of the same, whyle hys father was occupyed in Normandye and other countreys, where hys landes laye.

In myche of thys season that thys blessyd man Thomas was thus banyshed the lande / the kynge sente ouer byshoppes and proctours, to complayne vppon hym to the pope / for well nere all the bishoppes of Englande were agayne hym. And yf any toke hys parte, they durste not speke for the displeasure of theyr temporall lorde / so that this blessed man defended the quarell of the chyrche alone, *many rather seem against the king*

In the .xvi. yere of ỹ reygne of kyng Henry / Lewys the kynge of Fraūce, agreed kynge Henry and the archbyshoppe, the kynge then beynge in Normandye. Vppon whyche agrement thys blessyd man came to hys owne chyrche of Cauntorbury / and there so restynge hym, sente for such persones as had spoyled and taken perforce the goodes of the chyrche / adurtysynge theym by fayre meanes to restore the sayde goodes, and to be reconcyled to the chyrche as trewe crysten man shulde. But when he sawe that he myght not reconcyle theym by fayre meanes / he then vsed compulsaryes, and denounced them accursed but if they restored the goodes of the chyrche by a certayne day. wherewyth the partyes beynge agreued / sayled ouer to the kynge into Normandye / and shewyd vnto hym greuous complaynctes, and more greuouse then the cause or mater requyred. For the whych, the kynge which hadde not yet quenched the bronde of malyce in hys harte the whyche he bare agayne thys holy man, gaue lyght credence vnto those complaynctes, and was sore & feruētly amoued agayne the holy man Thomas / in so myche that vppon a daye hetynge the complaynctes of this blessyd mannes aduersaryes, he sayd in oppē audyence of hys knyghtes, that yf he had any good knyghtes about hym, he had ben adueged of that traytour longe or that tyme. At the tyme of whyche wordes vtterynge / was present syr wyllyam Bryton, syr Hugh Morpie, syr wyllyam Tracy, and syr Reynolde fytz Urle. whych foure knyghtes, thynkyng that they shuld to theyr mayster do a synguler pleasure yf they slewe thys blessyd man / hastely takynge aduyse eche of them of other, of one wyll and myndc toke shyppyng and sayled to Douer / and in all haste spedde theym vnto Cauntorbury / where the .v. daye of Crist masse they executed theyr tyrannye, and martyred that blessyd archebyshoppe at that auiter of sayne Benet wythin hys owne chyrche, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon a thousande, a hundred and .lxx., as yt ys wytnessyd by these versys folowyng

Anno millesimo, centeno, septuageno,
Anglorum primas, cruxit ense Thomas.

The whych is to vnderstande in our

vulgare/ asthus.

¶The yere, to reken from Cristes incarnacyon,
A thousande an hundred and seuentye therunto/
The primate of Englande wyth great abompnacyon,
was slayne wyth sworde, Thomas that wolde not do
The kynges hest, whyche erred the ryghte tro
Of the chyrche and lybertyes of the same.
wherby of honoure he wanne perpetuall fame.

After this cruell dede thus by the foure knyghtes done, wherwyth the kynge after some wryters was not contented / the kynges fortune beganne to decreace and fall / so that he hadde after thys many aduersyteys, where before he knewe not of lyke trouble.

In the .xvii. yere of his reygne, the kynge made a iourney into Irland/ where wyth great trauayle he subdued the Irysshe. And after wyth helpe of the primate and byshoppe of Armache, he reformed the maner of the dwellers and people of that countrey, and that in thre thynges specyally. Fyrste in rulynge and ordeynge of the chyrche by the curates, how they shuld order theyr dyuyne serupce, and mynyster the sacramente of matrymonye as yt was in Englande and other cristen regyons. The seconde was, how that the laye people shuld behaue theym to theyr curates, and what wyse they shulde paye and offer to god theyr tythes. The thyrde was for makyng of theyr testamentes. Thys was ordeyned that euery man shulde make hys laste wyll in presence of his neyghbours / or at leste cause yt to be rede in theyr presence. And fyrste he shuld reken what he ought/ and to sette ony thyng of hys goodes. And yf he had a wyfe and chyldren, then the residue of hys goodes hys dettys beyng payde to be deuyded in thre partes/ one to the wyfe, the seconde for the chyldren, and the thyrde to be spente for the weale of the soule. And yf he hadde no chyldren / then the halfe to hys soule, and that other halfe to his wyfe. And yf he hadde no wyfe nor chyldren / then to dysposse hys goodes at hys pleasure.

In the returne of the kynge oute of Irlande / was a wonder thynge shewed vnto hym vppon whytsonday, whyche in the calender is called dominica in Albys. whē the kyng shuld take his horse / sodenly appered vnto hym a man of pale & wanne colour barefote, and in a whyte kyrtell / the whyche bodely spake vnto the kynge in the langage of duche/ and sayde syr kynge, Criste greetyth the wele, and hys mylde moder mary, with also Johñ Baptyst and Peter/ and commaunde the strenghtly that no Marketes, nor seruyle workes be holden vppon the sondaye in the landes of thy lordeshyppe, oute take that longeth to dressynge of mete. And yf thou do after thys bydynge / I assure the that all thynge that thou begynnest to good entent or of good purpose, thou shalt bryng yt to good ende. The kynge lyked nothynge thys speche/ and sayd to the knyghte that helde hys bydell, Aske of thys chorle whether he haue dremed all thys that he telleth. wherunto thys man answered, whyther I haue mette thys tale in my dreme or not/ take thou hede well of my sayngе. For and thou do not as I haue auertysed the, & amende thy lyfe / thou shalte shortely here

suche

suche thynges that thou shalte be he up for to thy lyues ende. The kyng toke all in game / and the man vanysshed sodeynly, that the kyng & his knyghtes wonderyd of hys departynge. wherof when the kynge was warned, both of hys syrste sodeynly appetynge, and of hys departynge/ the kynge sette yt nere hys mynde, and entendyd to do some thynges after that mannys counsayll. But how yt was yt had no forwarde.

After that the blessed man Thomas was martyred/ the munkes by assent of the kynge, chase Rychardе pryour of Douer / the whyche was a man of cuyll lyuynge, and wasted the goodes of ꝑ chyrch inordynatly.

THE.CCXXXVIII. CHAPITER.

ABoute the .xx. pere of the kynges reygne / he purchaled a dyspensacyon for the vyage that before he hadde solempnely auowed before .ii. cardynallys, to go into the holy lande, and to reoperde hys proper persone agaynst Crystes enymyes. The whyche dyspensacyon was graunted vppon one condycyon, that he shulde buylde thre abbays in Englande. In fulfyllynge wherof the kynge put oute of the howse of waltham seculer chanons / and set there in theyr stede chanons reguler. And for the seconde he auoyded the munkes oute of the house of Jumbrysbury/ and sette there menchons that he hadde brought from beyonde the see. And for the thyrde he renewed courtesly the charter house of wytham be syde Walysbury. By whyche thre dedes he thought hym selfe excused of hys former promyse.

Then beganne his sonnes to make warre vppon hym, the whyche were ayded by the Scottyshe kynge and the two erles of Chester and of Lyncolne. The cause of whyche warre was after the declaracyon of some wryters, for so myche as the kynge hadde empryſoned Elyanoure hys wyfe, and kepte that wenche Rosamounde agayne all good order. But other say yt was for certayne landes in Normandye / whyche by ayde of the Frenche kynge, Rychard the .iii. sonne of bythe and seconde thenlyuynge, wolde haue taken from hys father. Of thys warre speketh nothynge the frenche cronycle.

Then as testyfyeth Ranulfe/ this innaturall warre endured by the terme of two yeres, to the great dysturbaunce of the kynge and of hys realme / tyll the kynge wyth great deuocyon vysyted the graue of the holy martyr saynte Thomas. After whyche pylgrymage was by hym fynysshed / in shorte processe after wyllyam kynge of Scottes, and the two forenamed erlys of Chester and Lyncolne, were taken at the castell of Anwyke. But yet he lefte not the company of the forenamed Rosamunde/ to the whych wenche he hadde made an house of wonder worlyng, so that no creature man or woman myghte wynne to her but yf he were instructe by the kynge or suche as were ryght secrete with hym touchynge that matter. Thys house after some wryters was named Labyrinthus or Dedalus worke or house, whycheys to meane after moste expolytours, an howse wroughte lyke vnto a knot in a garden called a mase. But the common fame telleth, that lastely the quene wan to her by a clew of threde

or sylke/ and delte wyth her in suche maner, that she lyued not longe after. Of the maner of her deth speketh nothynge myne authoure/ but when she was dede she was buryed at the howse or monasterye of Goddestow beside Orenforde, with these versys vppon her toumbe.

Hic iacet in tũba Rosa mũdi, sed nõ rosa mũda.
Non redolet sed olet, quæ redolere solet.

The whythe versys, to our vnderstandynge may thus as folowyth be englysshed and expowned.

The Rose of the worlde, but not the clene floure.
Is here now grauen/ to whom bewtye was lent.
In thys graue full darke nowe ys her bowre,
That by her lyfe was swete and redolent.
But now ỳ she is frõ this lyfeblente/
Though she were swete, nowe fowly doth she stynke/
A myrrour good for all that on her thynke.

Longe tyme after the deth of the sayde Rosamounde, in the sayde abbaye was shewed a cofer of the sayd wenches of the length of two fote/ in whych apperyd fyghtynge geaũtes, sterrynge of bestes, swymmynge of fyshes, and flyenge of fowlys.

In the forsayde .xx. yere after the oppynyon of Guydo/ the kynge had the seconde monicyon of mendynge of hys lyfe, by an Iryshe man ỳ told vnto hym many secret tokens, whyche the kynge supposyd no man had knowen but hym selfe. But yet the kynge toke lytell hede therunto.

In the .xxii. yere of his regne, after the forsayde takynge of ỳ Scottyshe kynge and .ii. erlys/ the .xi. day before Septẽber, wyllyam kynge of Scottys by assent of the lordes spyrytuall and temporall, dyd homage to kyng Henry at hys cytye of yorke. where the sayde wyllyam graunted by hys letters patentys, that he and his successours kynges of Scotland, shuld make theyr homage and fydelyte vnto the kynges of Englande as often as they shalbe necessaryly requyred. And in sygne and token of that subiectyon/ the kyng of Scottes offered hys hatte & his sadell vppon the auter of saint Peter in ỳ chyrch of yorke. whyche for a remembraunce of that dede/ the sayd hat & sadell were there kepte many yeres after. And ouer ỳ the lordes of Scotland swore, that if theyr kynge at any tyme wold withdrawe hym from allegeaunce/ they wold all aryse agayn hym, and be to hym as enymyes, tyll he were returned to his fayth & keppyng of his promyse. And for the more strẽgth of the sayd cõpolycyon, the kynge of Scottis came after to ỳ kyng Henries parlyament holden at Northãpton, and a nother season into Normandye.

Ranulfe munke of Chester sayth, that Lewys the .viii. of that name kynge of Fraunce/ delyuerỳd vnto kynge Henry a doughter of hys to haue in guydynge, and to haue ben maryed vnto Rycharde hys son/ the whyche after the deth of Rosamoũde he deflowred of her vyrgynyte. After whyche dede, as affermyth the sayde authoure, the kynge was in wyll to haue wedded that damoysell. For ỳ pedicyon wherof he made great meanes ta Hugũcia a cardynall then beynge in his land, that he wold make a dyuorce betwene hym and Elyanoure the quene. And thys he dyd, to the ende to haue the more fauoure of the Frenchemen, that by theyr ayde he myghte the better dyscherỳte hys sonnes. But he fayled of his purpose and also ỳ turned to hys owne harme. For by this meane, he caused the

sayde

sayde Rychard hys sonne to shewe all hys demeanour vnto the frenche kynge / so that by hys informacyon vnkyndnesse kyndled betwene them two / & therof ensued mortall warre, as sayth the englysshe cronycle, and also Polycronycon. But of thys warre speketh nothynge the frenche cronycle / nor of none other durynge the lyfe of the sayd Lewys after this daye, which dyed in the.xviii. yere of thys Henry. But the warre that was betwen the two kynges of England and of Fraunce / was betwene thys Henry and Phylyppe sonne of thys Lewys, as after shalbe shewed.

About the.xviii. yere of thys kyng as wytnessen dyuerse wryters / fell wonderfull wederynge and tempest of thunder in myddewynter tyme in Hampshyre and other places / by violence wherof a preste amonges other was slayn. And in the somer folowynge about Mary Magdalene tyde, fell hayle of suche bygnesse, ỹ yt slew both men and bestes. And about this tyme were the bonys of kynge Arture and his wyfe Gueynour founde in the vale of Iualon / whose here of the hed of the sayde Gweynour was then hole and of freshe coloure / but so soone as yt was touched, yt fell in powder. whyche bonys were translated and buryed wythin the chyrche of Glastenbury / and were founden by a synger of gestis vnder an holow oke .xb. fote wythin the grounde. whyche fyndynge and translatynge is an obiecte to ỹ fantastycall sayeng of the walshemen, that afferme hys commynge agayne to reygne as he before dyd.

Then hadde kynge Henry the seconde monycyon by a knyghte called syr wyllyam Chesterby or Lyndesey / the whyche warned hym specyally for the reformacyon of.vii. artycles. The fyrste was, that he shuld sette better dylygence to the defence of holy chyrche / and mayntenynge of the same. The seconde, that he shulde se hys lawes executed, wyth better iustice then at those days was vsed. The thyrd was, that he shuld surmyse no mater agayn ryche men / and by that mean plucke from them theyr landes & goodes. The fourth that he shulde restore all suche landes and goodes gotten by suche vnlawfull meanes or by any other. The fyfte, that he shuld for no mede tarye ryghtfull sentence / but suffer the ryght to haue hys processe. The vi, that he shulde se to the payment of hys subiectes for suche stuffe as was dayly taken to his vse / & also to the payment of hys seruauntes and souldyours wages, whych dayly fell to robbynge for defaute. The.vii. and the laste was, that he shulde in all haste voyde the Iewys of hys lande, whyche dayly wrought great sorowe to his commons / and to leue theym somwhat to spende in theyr tourney. But as he toke the other monycyons, so he toke thys / and cõtynued hys lyfe as he before hadde done.

THE.CCXXXIX. CHAPITER.

IN the.xviii. yere of his reygn after moste wryters, dyed Henry his eldeste sonne then lyuynge / ỹ whych as before is sayde was crowned to the derogacyon of the martyr sayncte Thomas. And in thys yere / whyche shulde be the.xiii. yere of Phylyppe the seconde, or of Phylyppe surnamed Gyuen of god / the warre beganne betwene kynge Henry and hym. wherof was occa-

ſyon as teſtyfyeth the ſayd Frenche cronycle, the denyenge of the deferryuge of homage, that ſhuld be done to the ſayde Phylyppe of Rycharde then eldeſt ſonne of kyng Henry/ for the lãdes of Poytow. In other cauſe alſo was / that where certayne couenauntes were ſtablyſhed and enrolled betwene kynge Henry and Lewys father of thys Phylyp, at the maryage of Henry his ſonne and Margarete ſyſter of Phylyppe, for certayne holdes and caſtellys wherof ꝑ caſtell of Gyſours was one/ whych were delyueryd in dower wyth the ſayde Margarete, vppon condycyon that yf the ſayde Henry hadde yſſue by ꝑ ſayde Margarete, then the ſayde caſtellys to remayne to the ſayde heyres/and yf the ſayde ponge Henry dyed without yſſue of ꝑ ſayde Margarete, that then the ſayde caſtellys and holdes to be reuerted vnto the crowne of Fraunce: and for that kynge Henry denyed or deferred theſe two poyntes, and wold not anſwere when he was called / the Frenche kynge therfore entred the land of Barry wyth great ſtrength, and waſted the countrey of Gupan wythout mercy. wherof kynge Henry beynge warned/ in all haſte aſſembled hys people then beynge in Normandye, and drew hym towarde the Frenche kynge/ whyche then hadde layde ſyege vnto the caſtell called in frenche Raoull, or the caſtell of Roaull.

when both hoſtes were nere and lykely to haue ioyned / medyatours were ſente vppon bothe partyes to treate a peace. By meane wherof in proceſſe a trewce was taken for a certayne terme/ ſo that eyther hoſte departed wythoute ſtrykynge of ſtroke at that ſeaſon.

About thys tyme dyed Rycharde archebyſhoppe of Caunterbury. Of hym yt is redde that a voyce or vyſyon was ſhewed to hym, ſaynge to hym in the mouthe of Cryſte: For thou haſte waſted the goodes of my chyrch, I ſhal rote the out of ꝑ erthe. with which wordes he was ſo frayd, that he dyed ſhortly after. Then was Baldewyn byſhoppe of worceter admytted to that ſee, though the munkys of Caunterburye wythſayde yt wyth all theyr power.

In the .xrr. yere of the kynge/ Heraclius patryarke of Hieruſalem came in to England, to haue ayde agayne the Sarazyns that had wonne great parte of the landes that Criſten men had in the holy lande / and for to defende the holy cytye, whyche by Saladyne prynce of Surey was wonne ſhortely after. For by the reporte of Peter Dyſtrop, whyche made a boke in frenche of the wynnynge and loſynge of the ſayde cytye/ yt appereth that yt was wõne by Godfrey de Bulyon, in the yere of Cryſtes incarnacyon a thouſande .lrrr. and .xir/ and ſo cõtynued vnder the rule of .ir. cryſten kynges, tyll the laſte kynge named Guyde Leſyngham or Leſynguam loſte yt wyth the holy croſſe, in the yere of our lorde .xi. hundred lrrr. and .ir. whych maketh the yere of the regyn of thys kyng Henry the rrriiii. Then yt folowyth in the ſtory/this Heraclius made hys requeſt vnto the kynge for ayde, and proferred to hym the keys of the cytye and of our lordes graue / and letters of Lucius ꝑ thyrd of ꝑ name then pope, chargyng hym that he ſhuld take vpon hym ꝑ iourney, & to haue mynde of the othe ꝑ he before time had made. The kyng deferred this anſwere and Baldwyne the archbyſhop preached & exhorted men to take ꝑ croſſe/ by whoſe meanes many there were ꝑ

auowed

auowed that iourney. Lastely the kynge gaue answere, and sayde that he myghte not leue hys lande wythoute kepynge / nor yet leue yt to the praye and robbory of Frenchemen. But he wolde gyue largely of hys owne, to suche as wolde take vpon them that vyage. wyth thys answere the patryarke was dyscontent / and sayde we seke a man and not money. weinere euery crysten regyon sendyth vnto vs money / but no lande sendyth to vs a prynce. Therfore we aske a prynce that nedeth money / and not money that nedeth a prynce. But the kynge layde for hym suche excuses, that the patryarke departed from hym dyscontentyd and comfortelesse. wherof the kynge beynge aduertysed / entendynge somwhat to recomforte hym wyth pleasaunte wordes, folowed hym vnto the see syde. But the more the kynge thought to satysfye hym wyth hys fayre speche, the more the patryarke was dyscontented / in so myche that at the laste he sayde vnto hym. Hytherto thou haste reygned glorously. But here after thou shalt be forsaken of him ꝑ thou at thys tyme forsakeste. Thynke on hym what he hath gyuen to the / and what thou haste yelden to hym agayne. Howe tryste thou were false vnto the kyng of Fraunce / and after slewe that holy man Thomas of Caunterburye / and lastely thou forsakeste the protection of Crystes fayth. The kyng was amoued wyth these wordes, & sayde vnto the patriarke. Though all the men of my lande were one body, and spake wyth one mouth / they durste not speke to me such wordys. No wonder sayde the patryarke, for they loue thyne and not the. That ys to meane, they loue thy goodes temporall, and fere the for loss of promocyon / but they loue not thy soule. And when he hadde so sayde / he offeryd hys hedde to the kynge sayenge, Do by me, ryghte as thou dyddest by that blessyd man Thomas of Caunterburye. For I hadde leuer to be slayne of the, then of ꝑ Sarasyns. For thou arte worse then any Sarasyn / and thy people folowyth praye and not a man. But the kynge kepte hys pacyence, and sayde I maye not wende oute of my lande / for myne owne sonnes wyll arryse agayne me when I were absent. No wonder sayde the patryarke. For of the deuyll they cõme, and to the deuyll they shall / and so departyd from the kynge in great ire. After the patryarke was thus departyd / the kynge sente Johñ his seconde sonne into Irlande. In the whyche vyage he spente the kynge great goodys, and dyd lytle profyte or none. A patryarke man

In the .xxxi. yere of kynge Henry / the Iewes crucyfyed a chylde in the towne of Burye in Suff. named Robert / for whome god shewyd after many myracles.

And the .xxxii. yere, the kynge made a vyage into Irlande to redresse thynges there oute of order. But for tune was to hym so contrarye that he loste hys trauayle, lyke as the yere before hys sonne Johñ had done.

In the .xxxiii. yere of thys kynge Henry / at Dunstable in the ayre was sene a crucyfyxe, and Cryste nayled theron / whyche apperyd by syghte to many a mannys syghte. And in thys yere the kynge loste the countrey of Aluerne / when he hadde spente great goodes aboute the defence of the same. Howe be yt of this warre speketh nothynge the frenche croupcle.

THE.CCXI.CHAPITER.

IN the.xxxiiii. yere of the kynge/ Rycharde the erle of Poytowe arrered warre agayn kyng Henry hys father, & toke party with the Frenche kynge. By meane of the whyche warre/ all suche summys of money as were before gatheryd by dymys and otherwyse, for the helpynge of the croysye to be made in to the holy lande, by the sayde Rycharde and by many other nobles of the lande, were spente in the same innaturall warre/ wherfore the kynge sayled into Normandy with a stronge armye. But or the kynge were there landed/ the sayde Rycharde by helpe of the Frenchemen hadde wonne the cytyes of Towres, of Meaus, and also the castellys of Raoull and Gysours wyth other. At the laste the Frenche kyng Phylyppe the second, wyth the sayde Rycharde came vnto the cytye of Cenomanna/ entendynge to laye syege vnto the same. wherof kynge Henry beynge warned / sette the suburbes on fyre, bycause hys enmyes shuld in the haue no socour. But the flame of the fyre was by the wynde dryuen into the cytye so sharpely, that the kyng was compelled to forsake yt. wherwyth ỹ kynge was so amoued / that in hys departynge from the cytye he sayde these wordes. For thou haste taken from me thys daye the cytye that I moste loued in the worlde, I shall acquyte the / for after thys tyme I shall bynome the that thynge, ỹ shuld most haue pleased the in me, whych ys myne harte.

After thys he losse more dayly/ so that hys enmyes preuayled strongely agayne hym.

It is rede of hym / that he shulde be at so great an after deale in thys warre/ that hastely he shuld put hym in the kynge of Fraunces mercy, his honoure and hys crowne reserued. But this is doutefull of credēce. For sure I am, yt the Frenche kyng had suche auauntage of hym / yt shulde not haue fallen throughe the boke, but haue ben regystred in the moste auauntynge maner/ where as in the frenche cronycle is touched no word of lyke mater. But trowth yt ys that fortune was to him contrary, in such wyse that wyth or for anger and impacyence, he fell into a feuer. wherof he lastely dyed in the castell of Conomeus or of Chynon in Normandye, in the moneth of July, when he had reygned .xxxiii. yeres and .viii. monethes wyth oddes dayes / and was buryed at Fount Ebrade, wyth thys epytaphy vppon his tombe.

Sufficit hic tumulus, cui non sufficerat orbis.
Res brevis est ampla, cui fuit ampla brevis.
Rex Henricus eram: mihi plurima regna subegi.
Multiplicis modo, duxq; comesq; fui.
Cui satis ad votum non essent omnia terræ
Climata, terræ modo sufficit ecce pedum
Qui legis hæc, pensa discrimina mortis: & in me
Humanæ speculum conditionis habe.
Quod petis instante operare bonum, quia mundus
Transit, & incertos mors inopina rapit.

The whyche verses are thus myche to meane in sentence.

Sufficyth nowe this graue, to whom all erthly thynge
Sufficyd not / my mynde so hyghe was sette.
Tyme that was shorte, my name wyde dyd sprynge/
whyche fame by deth is into shortenesse sette.
Kynge Henry was I called, no man I thought my bette.

whose

whose mynde sometyme all erth not sufficed/
viii. fote of ground now hath my bo dye comprysed.

Thou that thys redest / the parell of deth, and in me
Thou mayste beholde the course of euery wyght
That erthely is. wherfore prouyde and se,
That thou well maye do, shortely do yt, and tyght.
Defer not the tyme/for I ascertayne the tyght,
The world is transytory/ and vnwarely men taketh
Cruell deth, from whome non estate escapeth.

Gerardus Cambrens, whyche in hys boke of dyssyncrcyons sette oute the lyfe of thys Henry/ sayth dredefull yt is to allege agayne hym that maye putte a man oute of lande, and to describe hym wyth many wordes, that may ryple a man wyth one worde. wherfore yt were a notable dede to tell the sothe of a prynces dedys, and offende the prynce in no meane. But yet when the prynce ys passed and gone / then men wyll talke without fere, that before tyme they spared for fere.

Then to folow the sooth, this kyng Henry norysshed stryfe amonge hys chyldern wyth all dylygence/ hopyng therby to lyue hym selfe in the more rest. when men wolde aske of hym when he wolde leue his great dedes/ he vsed to answere that the worlde shulde saye, of a courageouse harte shulde cease of great dedes. He was pereles in chyualry, in warre, and in lecherye. He wedded Elyanoure wyfe of Lewys kynge of Fraunce/ contrary to the commaundement of hys father. For he hadde shewed to hym that he hadde lyen by her, when he was the sayde kynges stewarde.

He reygned xxvi. yeres somdeale to hys worldely plesse, and foure yeres somwhat to hys payne / but the laste fyue yeres to hys great trowble and sorow. Farthermore the sayd Gerarde descryueth the progenye of thys Henry/ whyche I ouer passe because yt is so common.

Rycharde hys sonne wolde often tell that wonder / and vsed to saye, no meruayle though they greued the people that were comon of such kynd. For of ỹ deuyll they came, and to the deuyll they shall.

It ys also redde of thys Henry, that in a chaumber at wyndesore he caused to be paynted an egle wyth foure byrdes / wherof thre of theym all raled the bodye of the olde egle, and the fourth was cratchynge at the olde eglys eyen. when the question was asked of hym what thyng that pycture shuld sygnyfye/ yt was answered by hym: thys olde egle (sayde he) is my selfe/ and these. iiii. egles betoken my foure sonnes, the whyche cease not to pursue my deth. And specyally my yongeste sonne Johñ, whyche nowe I loue moste/ shall most specyally awayte and ymagen my deth.

Francia.

THE. CCXLI. CHAPITER.

Philyp the seconde of that name, surnamed Dieu donne or gyue of god, and sonne vnto ỹ viii. Lewys / beganne to reygne ouer the realme of Fraunce,

fraunce, in the yere of our lorde. xi. hundred and. lxxix/ and the. xxiii. yere of Henry the seconde than kynge of Englonde. whyche sayde Phylyppe reygned somwhat of tyme by the ayde of hys father/ which tyme is accompted vnto the reygne of hys father.

Thys in the fyrst yere of hys reygne, for the great enormytyes that the Iewes vsed wythin the realme of fraunce/ as crucyfyenge of chyldren, and exercysynge of theyr detestable vsery: he after due proofe made put the malefactours to dethe/ and the other in auoydynge more daunger/ he exyled and put clere out of hys realme.

This Phylyp also as before in the story of Henry the seconde is towched, excepted the sonnes of the sayde Henry to make warre vppon theyr father/ by whyche meane thys Phylyppe gate many holdes and townes from the sayde Henry wythin hys duchy of Guyon. But after the deth of Henry/ thys Phylyppe gaue ouer all the sayde holdes and townes, vnto Rychard the eldeste sonne of the sayde Henry/ and receyued of hym homage for the same. And as wytnessyth the French cronycle/ the sayd Rychard in token of obedyence, was present at the coronacion of the sayd Phylyppe. But ye shall vnderstande that than he was not kynge of Englande. x. yeres after. But yf yt so were that he were present at the sayd coronacyon/ yet was he duke of Guyon onely.

Aboute the thyrde yere of hys reygne/ Eraclius patryarke of Hierusalem came into fraunce, and requyred ayde of thys kynge Phylyppe to wythstande the furye and persecucyon, whyche Saladyne prynce of Turkes hadde excuted and dayly contynued in the countrey of Palestina agayne the Cristen to the great destruccyon of theym and vndoyng of the countrey, and great iooperdye of the losynge of the holy cytye of Hierusalem. For thys the kynge assembled a great counsayll at hys cytye of Parys/ where the sayde Eraclius made requeste to the kynge as before he hadde done to Henry the seconde. For he was in fraunce in the yere of our lorde. xi. hundred. lxxx. and two/ and in Englande he was in the yere of grace. xi. hundred. lxxx. and. vii. After whyche counsayll there so holden/ yt was agreed that the kynge wyth ayde of the byshoppes and other of the spyrytualtye, shulde ayde the sayde patryarke/ the whyche where sette forthe in all possyble haste. But after the reporte of Peter Dystroye, whyche made a recule or lytle boke of the wynnynge and losyng of Hierusalem/ they with mo cristen prynces were dryuen by tempeste of the see vnto the porte of Damas/ where vnder colourc of a fayned trewce, they were taken and caste the moste parte of theym in pryson.

And when kynge Phylyppe hadde thus delyuered the patryarke/ he then gatherd hys knyghtes and made an armye agayne Hugh duke of Burgoyne/ the whyche at that season and tyme hadde beclypped the castell of Vergye wyth a stronge syege/ and hadde promysed not to departe thens, tyll such tyme as he had wonne that holde by appoyntement or otherwyse.

And for the defence of rescouse that myghte be made for the same/ he hadde manned fouse castellys or townes there vnto adioynaunte, wyth great strength of men of armys. But after

after the kynge was thyder comen wyth hys hoste, the sayde towrs were sone ouertourned/and ꝑ kynge wyth a certayne of hys people, of Guy capytayne of the sayde castell of Uergy was toyously into the same receyued/and rendred to hym the castell, and became hys lege man. where wyth the sayde Hugh beynge sore amoued and dyscontented, leynge there he was dyspoynted of his purpose / departed thens wyth hys ordynaunce and people, and robbed and spoyled the cõtre there aboute/ sparynge nother chyrche nor howse of relygyõ/in so cruell and greuous maner, that the byssshoppes and abbottes of that partye of Burgoyne made pyteous requeste vnto the sayd Phylyp, that he of his specyall grace wolde ayde and socoure them and theyr chyrches agayne the tyranny of the sayde duke Hugh. The kynge beynge moued wyth thys pyteous requeste/made sharpe warre vppon the sayde Hugh / and at length wan from hym a stronge castell named Chastelone. where wyth all the duke was put to suche a studyall and fere that he was forsed to seche meanes of treaty and of peace. wherof the cõclusyon was, that he shulde paye vnto the chyrches before by hym hurted & harmed xxx. thousande pownd. whyche conclusyon taken and suretye sette for the same / the kynge retorned vnto Parys. where the kyng so restynge hym a certeyne of tyme, and hauynge experyence of the intolerable and foule stenches that dayly grewe by the fylthe of the erthe and myre in the stretes/made proupsyon dylygently wyth ayde and helpe of the cytesens, whyche as than hadde londe wythin the cytye, that the stretes were shortely paued after. And at thys tyme whanne the cytye was thus paued, as affermen many authours / the name of it was chaunged from Lutesse or Lewcesse vnto Parysse.

THE. CCXLII. CHAPITER.

IN the. vii. yere of thys kynge Phylyp, as sayth the frẽche boke/Margarete syster vnto thys Phylyp, late wyfe vnto Henry late deceased, and eldeste sonne of Henry the seconde kynge at this day of Englande, was maryed vnto Belas kynge of Hungry.

In the. x. yere of thys kyng Phylyp/the cytye of Hierusalem was taken of Saladyne prynce of Egypte/ and Guy de Lesyngnan laste crysten kynge of that cytye, wyth the holy crosse was taken in the feide / whych after that daye came neuer into crysten mennes possessyon. Of thys sorowe & heuynesse worde was brought vnto kynge Phylyp, wyth requeste of ayde to reskue certeyne cytyes, as yet rested vnder the domynyon of the crysten / as Tyre, Tryple, and Antioch, wyth other small holdes. For sauegarde wherof many nobles of Fraunce toke vpon them the crosse/as the duke of Burgoyn, the erle of Flaunders, Theobalde erle of Bloyes, the erle of Rochford, the erle of Champayne, wyth many other noble knyghtes / whyche for lengthe I passe ouer, and also the reporte of theyr bedys, for so myche as it cõcernyth nothyng the mater that I haue promysed to speke of.

In this iourney also kynge Phylyppe entended to haue gone / and for the same great taskes & dymys were leuyed throughoute his realme, the

whyche to this daye are called Saladynes dymes. But the lette of this iourney as sayth the french cronycle was Rycharde duke of Guyan / and after his father Henry the seconde, that made warre vppon the Frenche kynge, as before is touched in the story of the sayd Henry. Durynge whyche warre the sayde Henry dyed, in the.xi yere of thys sayde Phylyppe.

About thys season and tyme / the Jewes whych by meane of great gyftes, had agayn purchased theyr dwellynge wythin the coūtrey of Fraūce, wherof a wedowe was lady and mastresse called Brianous / in absence of the kynge toke a Cristen man, & surmysed agayne hym felonye and murder. For the whyche by fauoure of the sayde lady / the sayde Jewes set a crowne of thorne vppon the sayd cristen mannys hedde, and after scourged hym, and lastely in derysyon of Cristes relygyon and despyte of the same, crucyfyed the same persone. wherof when the kynge was enfourmed / in all haste he sent into the sayd coūtrey or castell of Brayon, and surprysed the sayde Jewys so sodaynly that none escaped / and brent there of them to the nomber of.lxxx. for theyr malycyouse and abhompnable dede.

In the.xi yere of the reygne of thys Phylyppe, dyed Jsabell the quene of Fraūce his wyfe / a womā of good fame and of great vertue.

In the.xii. yere of his reygne as sayth the frenche boke / thys Phylyp toke vppon hym the crosse, haupnge promyse of kyng Rychard then newly crowned kyng of Englād, to kepe company wyth hym in that iourney. But he kept not promyse. wherwith thys Phylyppe beynge dyscontēted / sayled before and layde syege vnto the cytye of Acon or Acre. From this sayenge varyeth Polycronica, and also Peter Delroy. For Polycronycon sayth, that after the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce, hadde made suerty betwen them for performaūce of this iourney / they both togyther tarryed at Turon in Fraunce, for to abyde the somer tyde. And at sprynggynge of the yere / they of one wyll & purpose, toke theyr vyage towarde the holy lande / that ys to wytte that one by water and that other by land / and mette agayne in Cecilia. where the Frēche kynge depted from hym / and so sayled to the sayde cytye of Acone or Acre, and layde hys syege there vnto. In whych passyme kyng Rycharde warred vppon the kynge of Sypres, & hym wyth his land subdued / & after came vnto Acon, where the Frenche kyng had longe lyen at syege without gettynge of any great auauntage of his enymyes / sayngе vnto kynge Rycharde that he hadde spared the wynnynge of the towne tyll hys commynge, to the ende that he at his commyng myght be partyner as well of the honoure as of the wynnynge. But howsoever it was, such debate and kyndenesse fell betwene theym there, after they hadde wonne the sayde towne, as after in story of kynge Rycharde shalbe shewed, that this kyng Phylyppe returned into Fraunce shortely after. In the whych returne the sayde Phylyppe sykened, and the duke of Burgoyne dyed. And when kyng Phylyppe a season had soiourned in Fraūce / he maryed Jngebert the doughter of the kynge of Denmarke. The whyche maryage, as sayth Ranulfe, was desyred of the Frenche kynge, to haue wyth her graunted the tytle whyche the Danes had vnto the crown of England, wyth also.x. thousand marckes of syluer, for to wynne wyth hym sayd ryght and tytle. But yt was not longe or

she were

she were frō hym deuorced, for cause of alyaūce of gossypred or otherwise. Howe be yt in processe of tyme after/ the said Jugebert was to him agayn ioyned by the authorite of Pope Innocent the thyrd of that name, in the yere of grace. xii. hūdred and.ix. and yere of reygne of this Philyppe. xxx/ so that the sayde Jugebert was deuorced frome her lorde by the terme of. xbii. yeres or therupponn.

In whych tyme and season the sayd Phylyppe had maryed the doughter of Phylyppe duke of Sweuy, that then was retutned vnto her father.

THE .CCXLIII. CHAPITER.

Kynge Phylyp for displeasure whych he bare towarde kyng Rycharde / made sharpe and cruell warre vpon the Normans, and wan therein dyuerse holdes and townes/ and fynally layde syege vnto the cytye of Roan. wherof herynge Johñ erle of Huntyngeton, or after some erle of Orenforde brother to kynge Rycharde, whome the Frenche boke nameth Johñ withoute lande/ wyth the erle of Arundell and other noble men, spedde hym into Normandye/ and so ayded the cytezens and the soldyours of Roan, that as testifyeth the frēche cronycle, the French kyng was so moued wyth the warre and defence of the same towne, that in a passynge fury consyderyng the wynter season drewe vppon, and that he myght not carye awaye his gunnes and other great ordynaunces/ he set all vppon a fyre / and so wyth great agony departed. And within thre monethes after he layde syege vnto the castell of Vernyel/ where whē he had lyen.iii. wekes or more, a messynger came vnto hym and sayde, that the cytye Eurovx was taken of the Normans / and the people therof taken prysoners. wherfore in all haste he departed, and rescued the sayd cytye and prysoners/ and that done retourned to the forsayde syege/ and assyeged yt so strōgely, that lastely he had yt delyuerid by appoyntement.

By thys season was kynge Rycharde delyuerid out of the handes of the duke of Ostryge. And then beganne the warre to be more cruell / whych here I passe ouer, for so mych as I entende to shew the effecte therof in the storye of kynge Rycharde folowynge.

Aboute the. xbiii. yere of the reygn of thys Phylyppe/ fell such plenty of water, that the grouide was therwith so bucked and drowned, that corne & other frutes by reason therof greatly decayed and scanted, in such wyse that whete was shortly after at. xx. s a quarter after sterlynge money.

In the. xx. yere of the reygn of this Phylyppe/ dyed Rycharde kynge of England/ to whom was heyre Johñ before named his brother. The whyche cōcluded a trewce wyth this Philyppe for certayne yeres. as after in the storye of this Johñ shall more clerely appere.

And soone there after meanes were made to kyng Phylyp, that he shuld receyue agayne vnto his company Jugebert hys wyfe/ and to renounce Mary doughter of the duke of Sweup, or after some authours, the doughter of the duke of Bohemy. But the kynge wyth this mocyon was no thynge contentyd / nor yet agreable to folow any such mocion or request. wherfore the prelasy of the lande assemled theym in counsayll/ and by a full and hole authorite, seynge they myghte not induce the kynge to no conformyte or agrement to resume hys lawfull wyfe, and to refuse that

other/ they denounsed hym and hys realme accursed. wherwith the kyng was so amoued and vexed / that he deprpued certayne bysshoppes from theyr sees / and also toke in hys possessyon the spyrytuall goodes / and prysoned many prestes and other religyous men / and ouer that closed the sayde Jugebert wythin the castell of Sampys / and forthermore greued hys comons wyth greuous exaccyons and tarys. Than wythin a shorte terme after Johñ de sayncte Poule cardynall and Athá or Othemon bysshoppe of Osty and legate of the pope of Rome, wyth the archebysshoppe of Burdeaux and other/ by the commaundement of the pope than Innocent the thyrde, kepte a greate counceyle in the cytye of Sorsore. where the kynge was monysshed to apere / for so mych as before he hadde graunted to be reconcyled vnto hys fyrste wyfe. where thys mater kynge in argument before the spyrytuall iudges by ỳ space of .xv. dayes, wythout sentence gyuynge. wherfore the kynge beynge wyth the delayes dyscontented / sodenly wyth hys wyfe departed, wyth out takynge of them any congye or leue/ sendynge them vnderstandyng that as yet he wolde be aduysed or he were dysseuered from hys wyfe. wherof whan the sayd Johñ cardynall and the other bysshoppes hadde wyttynge / accomptynge theyr laboure loste, they retourned shortely after vnto Rome, and shewed vnto the pope all as they hadde done.

And soone there after kyng Johñ was honorably receyued of thys kynge Phylyppe, as in the storye of the sayd Johñ shall be more playnly shewed.

And in the yere folowynge, which shulde be in the begynnynge of the yrith. yere of thys Phylyppe, dyed Mary hys wyfe/ whyche he wrongfully had holden cõtrary to the law of the chyrche by the terme of tenne yeres or there vppon. Of the whyche Mary he hadde receyued a man chylde and a doughter / the whyche after were made legyttymate by Innocent the thyrde, though some noble men of Fraunce there agayne grudged.

THE.CCXLIIII. CHAPITER.

IT was not longe after, that ỳ kyng assembled greate people and entendyd to haue entred the landys of the erle Rossell, or Roger de Role / of the whyche he hadde brought before hym many greuous complayntes, of greate extorcyons and exaccyõs that the sayd erle and Roger hadde executed and done vppon the chyrches nere to the valey of Soysons / and wolde not refrayne for all the kynges cõmaundement. wherfore he rygged hys armye and drewe towarde them. But as soone as they were aduertysed of the kynges comynge / anone they submytted them to the kynges grace/ obligynge them selfe to make restytucyon accordynge to the kynges pleasure, to all suche places and persons as they hadde offended. And thys acte thus fynysshed/ kyng Phylyppe returned vnto a place betwene Verdon, and the ile Audely/ in the whyche place the kynge hadde appoynted a greate counsayle or parlyament. where amonge other maters yt was concluded, that Johñ kynge of Englande shulde be somoned to appere as the Frenche kynges lyege

ges lyege man, at the same parlya-
ment to be holden at parys wythin
xb. dayes of Ester/ to answere suffy-
cyently to the kyng vppon such quest
tyons as there shulde be purposed
vnto hym, for the duchy of Normā
dye, for the cōtrey of Aungeou and
of Poytyers. But for ỳ kynge Johñ
came not at that day appoynted, nor
none for hym accordynge to the mo-
nyshement to hym gyuen, therfore
thys kynge Philypppe not withstan
dynge the amytye and trewce before
confermed, assembled hys hoste and
entred the duchye of Normandye,
and made therin sharpe and cruell
warre/ and wanne a castell therein
named Bonte or Bowte, and brused
or crased the castellys of Gentylyne
and Gurney/ and seased all ỳ landes
whyche Hugh de Gurney helde, and
gyue theym vnto the duke of Bry-
tayne. And also he gaue vnto hym
the erledome of Aungeou, and two
hundred knyghtes pysoners of Nor
mans and Englysshe wyth a great
summe of money.

It was not longe after that the du
ke of Brytayne was departyd from
the kynge/ but that he wyth suche
power as he myght make entred the
countrey of Aungeou, to take therof
possessyon. where in shorte space he
was encountred of kynge Johñ, and
fought to geder a cruell batell. In
the whyche in the ende the duke was
put to the worse/ for the more parte
of hys people were slayne, and hym
selfe wyth Hugh le Bruns, Godfrey
de Lesygnan, and many other no-
bles of Fraunce and also of Bry-
tayne, were taken prysoners. wyth
whyche tydynges the Frenche kyng
was greuously dyscontentyd. And
where as at that tyme he had becle-
ped ỳ castell of Arches wyth a strong
syege/ he remoued from thens and
and yode to the citye of Towrs and
brent a part therof. But as testifyeth
the frenche cronycle he taryed not
the commynge of kynge Johñ. But
for that wynter was commynge to-
warde/ he ceasyd of hys warrys for
that yere, and so drewe hym into
Fraunce.

In the yere folowynge, whyche
was the yere of this Phylyp. xxiii, & of kynge Johñ the. iii. yere/ ỳ warre
newely began, whyche I ouer passe,
for as myche as yt shall be shewyd in
the storye of kynge Johñ.

In the .xxbi. yere thys Phylyppe
Almaricus a studyent of Paris held
certayne opynyons of heresye. Of
the whyche when he was abiured/
he toke suche thought that he dyed
shortely after. It was not longe af-
ter but that other clerkys and study-
auntys helde an other erronyous
opynyon cōcernynge ỳ vnyon of the
trynyte. Of the whyche nomber Pe-
ter byshoppe of Paris, and one Ga-
ryne a man of great connynge were
two/ the whyche were degraded, &
after cōsumyd wyth fyre/ and the bo
dy of the forenamed Almaricus was
agayne taken oute of the erthe, and
after brent.

Here about the. xxx. yere of the rey-
gne of thys Phylyppe/ for conside-
racyon as sayth the frenche boke,
that Johñ kynge of Englande had
exylyd dyuerse of hys byshoppes,
and taken from them theyr possessy-
ons and goodes/ the whyche to this
kynge Phylyp were comen for ayde
and socour: he therfore monyd with
pytye, assembled a great hoste, and
entendyd to haue sayled into En-
glande to haue reformed these ma-
ters. wyth the whyche hoste he pas-
sed tyll he came to Grauenynge by
lande, where he appoynted hys na-
uey to mete wyth hym. And to the

same place also Ferrande then erle of Flaundres had affermely promysed to come, wyth the ayde of hys Flemynges / where the kynge for hym taryed a certayne of tyme. But shortely after the kynge was ascertayned that the sayde erle was alyed wyth kynge Johñ hys enymye / and purposed to ayde hys partye in all that he myghte. wherof the occasyon was as affermeth the sayde Frenche cronycle, for so myche as Lewys eldest sonne of kynge Phylyppe helde from the sayde Ferrande two castel lys or townes named sayncte Omer and Ire.

when kynge Phylyppe apperceyued that he was thus of the erle dysappointed/he by counsayll of his Baronye putte by hys iourney into Englande, and assayled the countrey of Flaundres / and so rode vnto Cassyle a lytell from Grauelynge, & wyth sharpe assaute wanne the sayd towne / and so from thens to Brugys / and commaunded hys nauy to be brought vnto the haué of Sluse, whyche is wythin shorte waye of Brugys. And when he hadde executed hys pleasure at Brugys, leuyng a certayn of his peple for to strength hys Nauy / he rode vnto Gaunte, and there rested hym and hys people. In whyche season Reynolde erle of Boleyne, Guyllyam longe Espe, or Guyllyam wyth the longe sworde, wyth a crewe of Englyshe men aryued in Flaundres/ to whom shortely drewe Ferraunde the erle wyth a great power of Flemynges. The whyche shypped theym in small carueles and barkes and other shyppys of aduantage/ and wyth a fyerse corage sette vppon the Frenche kynges nauey lyenge at Sluse as before is shewed / where was foughten a stronge and cruell batayll. But in the ende the Flemynges hadde the victorye, and hadde the rule of all the frenche flote, the whyche in nomber as testifyeth the sayd frenche cronycle, were a thousande & ten sayle. The whyche for nombert and greatnesse myghte not all lye wythin the hauyn / but spradde a great parte of the ryuer besyde. whyche so lyenge wythout the hauen, the Flemynges conueyed thens / and after layde ordinaunce to the towne of Sluse, and assyeged yt.

Kynge Phylyppe herynge of the losse of hys naupe, and of the assautynge of the towne of Sluse, in all haste spedde hym thyther / and there in suche wyse refresshed hys enymyes, that he slew of them vpon two thousande / and toke of theym dyuerse prysoners, and rescued the towne. But for he sawe he myght not recouer hys shyppes beynge wythin the hauyn / he causyd theym to be discharged of vytell and other necessaryes, and after set them on fyre and the towne also/ and that done, toke certayne hostages of Brugis of Gaunte and of Ipre, and so retourned into Fraunce.

THE.CCXLV. CHAPITER.

When kynge Phylippe was returned into Fraunce / yt was not longe after, that by the meanes of some well dysposyd persones, he was reconcyled and toke to hym his lawfull wyfe Ingeberta or Ingebert,

bert, doughter of the kynge of Denmarke/ whyche was great comforte to all hys people. And thys yt nowe apperyth that the sayde Ingebert was from her lorde or husbande by the terme of.xvi. yeres and more, as before yt is touched in the seconde chappter of thys storye.

In the yere of grace.xii.hundred.xiiii. as sayth the frenche boke, whyche maketh the yere of the reygne of this Philyppe.xxxv/Otho the.iiii.of that name and duke of Saxony, whyche of some of the electours was chosen for emperour/ in the quarell of kyng Johñ intred ỹ prouince of Henaude, and there beynge accompanyed with Reygnolde erle of Boleyne, Fatraunde erle of Flaundres, and dyuerse other nobles, as well of Englande, Saxonye, and other places / made prouysyon to fyght wyth kynge Philyppe, whyche then warred in Flaũdres/ so that the Frenche kynge was at the castell of Peron, and Otho was at the castell of Valensyens or Valenseus.

About Mary Madgdaleyns tyde, the Frenche kynge in wastyng ỹ coũtrey of Flaũdres came vnto the town of Turney/ and Otho returned from the forsayde castell, and came vnto the castell or towne named Mortenge, the whyche was but .vi. myle from Turney. wherof herynge the kynge, entendyd to haue set in shorte tyme vppon hys enymyes. But by the aduyse of hys barons he was letted / for so myche as the wayes and places were streyghte and narowe towarde hys enymyes. For the whyche consyderacyon by counsayll of hys sayde barones he was letted, and retourned towarde Henawde for to haue more larger playnes. So that after saynte Jamys daye he retourned / purposynge that nyghte to haue lyen and also his hoste at the castell called Lylly. But he was letted of hys purpose. For Otho whych was warned of hys remouynge, demed hym to haue fled and pursued after the vaungarde of the kynge/ of the whyche were captaynes the vycounte of Mylyon, and one named Fryer Garnye/ the whyche was a fryer and relygyous man, a man of great counsayll and hardynesse. These beynge accompanyed wyth iiii.thousande men / rode tyll they came to an hyll or lytle Mountayne, where they espyed the auauntage of Otho and hys hoste. wherfore fryer Garny retourned to gyue the kynge knowlege / and the vycounte remayned in the place, and houed with his companye.

when the kynge hadde knowlege of the commynge of his enymyes/ he in good maner kepte on hys tourney. In whyche season Otho, wyth hys people came vnto ỹ ryuer which was somdeale daungerous to passe/ howe be yt in procesle he passed yt. And when he & his hoste were ouer/ he made waye towarde Turney/ in so myche that the Vycounte & his cõpany demed them to haue retourned to Turney. But so soone as Fryer Garny was returned vnto the sayde mount, anon he demed the coũtrary/ & sayd prerysely that other they must gyue batayll to theyr enimyes, or elys they must fle wyth shame. In thys whyle the kynges people came vnto a brydge where they shulde passe ouer. And the cautele of hys enymyes was, that when the kynge wyth the more parte of hys people hadde ben passed that brydge / they wolde haue sette vppon the rerewarde, and haue dystressyd theym / and so haue kepte that brydge that the kynge shulde not haue socoured

his people. But or the kynge were passed the fyght was begonne/in so myche that hydeous crye came to the kynges crys, at armys at armys, to harneys to harnes, our enymyes be come.

Nere vnto the kyng was a chapell halowed in the honour and worshyp of sayntę Peter/ wherunto the kyng yode and made there hys deuoute prayers/ and that done armed hym, and lepte to horse ioyously cryenge/ as barons at armys. Then the Ory flambe which was passed ẏ brydge, was countermaunded. And then began the trumpettys and tabours to blowe/ whyche reuyued the palled hartes, and caused theym to forgete the drede of deth. But for the kynges people myght not so hastely retourne and passe the brydge/ the kynge as a valyaunt knyghte toke hys horse wyth hys spurrys, and set forwarde to encourage the other of hys knyghtes/ so that his enymyes herynge of hys commynge, were somdeale dyscoraged and gaue place vnto the kynges hoste. Then Otho herynge of the kynges retourne, enbatayled hys people. But so ẏt was that he toke the northe parte of the felde/ by reason wherof the sonne was in hys face to hys afterdeale/ for that was excedynge hote ouer the other. Then was the batell begonne in dyuers partyes of the felde so cruelly that many a mā was there ouerthrowen. The whyche endured be a longe space, in suche wyse that harde ẏt was to dyscerne whyche parte hadde the better of that other. Eyther prynce enforcyd so straytely that other/ that eyther of theym were vnhorsed and in great ieoperdye. Yf here I shulde reherse the dyctorymouse dedys of the Frenche kynge and hys knyghtes in order, after the expressement of the frenche boke/ I shulde therof make a longe storye. But trouth ẏt is that in the ende/ Otho was compelled to forsake the felde, to the great losse of hys people/ and Feraunte the erle of Flaunders was taken wyth many other, as Reygnolde erle of Boleyn, and .xxviii. other of name.

And one thynge hardely me semeth to be credence gyuen vnto, rehersyd by the frenche cronycle, whych sayth that of all the frenche hoste myssed but one syngle man/ the whyche after was founde amonge the dede Almaynes sore wounded, and after cured and helpd agayne. whyche maye be tolde for a great wonder/ consyderynge the sayde fyghte lasted ouer foure howres, as testyfyeth the sayd cronycle. But sure the authoure or the wryter ouerseeth hym selfe in that reporte/ for he shewyth before in the dyuysynge of the fyghte of thys batell, that when kynge Phylyppe was felled from hys horse, two of hys knyghtes were slayne ryghte before hym/ that one named Guyllyam de longe Champe, and that other Gerarde le Tirne. But maister Robert Gagwyne expressyth thys more clerely/ sayenge that after the felde was done and the emperoure was fledde, leuynge hys banner of splayed Egle behynde hym/ a bysshement of the nombre of .vii. hundred men recouerȳd that standarde, and so kepte theym to gyther. wherof when the kynge was enfourmed/ he sente agayne them one of hys knyghtes called syr Thomas Valary, accōpanyed wyth .l. fotemen a two thousand horsemen. The whych dyd tressyd ẏ sayd cōpany, wythout losse of one man as before is sayde. And more ouer the sayd authour sayth/ ẏ vppon the partye of the sayde Otho

of knygh

of knyghtes and gylte harneſſe were ſlayne a thouſande & fyue hundred/ and of other horſe men and fote men a hundred and fyfty thouſande. But of ꝑ Frenche men whych ſhulde be ſurcſte of rekenynge / he maketh no mencyon. But trouth it is, that in all the cronycle thoroughe the Frenche boke reherſed / all thynge touchynge theyr honour is declared and ſhewed to the vttermoſte. And that whyche concerneth theyr dyſhonoure or loſſe, yt ys ouer ſubtely excuſed/or ſo darkely or myſtily wryten, that the reader therof ſhall hardely come to the knowlege of the trouthe. And that is well apparent in the ſtoryes of Phylyppe de Valoys and of kynge Johñ hys ſonne, in expreſſement of theyr faytes done and exercyſed agayne the thyrde Edwarde kyng of England and prynce Edwarde hys ſonne.

Than it foloweth in ꝑ ſtory/whan Phylyp hadde obteyned this greate victory of hys enemyes, and ordered other thynges concernynge hys people, as countermaũdynge them the next waye vnto theyr countrees/ he wyth hys pryſoners ſpedde hym to Parys / and there of hys greate bounte graunted to the ſayde erlys of Boleyne and Flaunders theyr lyues, but not of pryſonement. For the erle of Boleyne was ſent vnto the caſtell of Peron / and Feraunt erle of Flaunders was commytted to the caſtell or towre of Louour wythout the wallys of the cytye of Parys thã newly made. But wythin leſſe than xv. monethes after/ by labour of his wyfe, he with other of hys lyege men was delyuered / payenge theyr fynaunces, and perfourmyng of other ſtreyght condycyons.

THE.CCXLVI. CHAPITER.

IT was not longe after that kynge Phylyppe reaſſembled hys knyghtes, and ſpedde hym towarde the countrey of Poytow. wherof beynge warned the erle of Thoners that than was chefe ruler of that countrey vnder kyng Johñ, ſeynge the feblenelle of the comons that dayly were vexed wyth warre, and alſo the loſſe of kynge Johñs frendes, not wythſtandyng the ſayd Johñ was than wythin twenty myles / yet he made ſuche meanes to kynge Phylyppe by the laboure of Peter than duke or erle of Bryttayn, that the ſayde kynge accepted the ſame erle to hys grace / and graunted to hym and hys a treuce for .iiii. yeres. But that not wythſtandyng/ the kynge kept on hys iourney towarde kynge Johñ. wherof kynge Johñ beynge enfourmed / and alſo of the peace bytwene the erle of Thoners and the Frenche kynge: he by meanes of one Roberte a legate of Rome ſought meanes of treaty and of peace/ ſo that in proceſſe by dylygence of the ſayde Robert and other, a peace was concluded for .v. yeres. whyche peace concluded and aſſured eyther kynge returned into theyr owne prouynces.

Wythin ſhort whyle after ꝑ Frenche kyng was returned into Fraũce/ he called to mynde the great victory had of the Almayns / wyth alſo one other whych Lewys his ſon about ꝑ ſame tyme had agayne or of kynge Johñ in the countre of Aungeou, at the caſtell of Moyne or Mayne. For the whyche.ii. victoryes, the kynge edyfyed a monaſtery beſyde the cyty of Dayntles, in the honour of ſaynt Victor/ and endowed it wyth fayre and ryche poſſeſſyons, and named it the abbey of ſaynt Victor.

In the

In the.xxxvi.yere of the reygne of thys Philyppe / Lewys hys sonne by procurynge and sturrynge of the lordes of Englande, sayled into the sayde prouynces / as more playnely shall be shewed in the.xvi. yere of the reygne of kynge Johñ.

Many mo storyes & actes myght I bringe in and set in thys story of thys kynge Philyppe, yf I shulde folowe the Frenche boke. For he maketh there a rehersayll that conteyneth. xxxix. greate leuys of parchemyne. Of the whyche I haue taken out suche as to me semeth moste conuenyent / and haue ouer passed the other for lengthe of the tyme.

Than it foloweth / thys Philyp after these dayes drewe hym to more quyet and reste / so that after thys peace or trewce cõcluded wyth kyng Johñ of Englande, the authour speketh not or myndeth of any noble dede by hym done. So that in the yere of our lorde.xii.hundred and. xxii, whyche shulde be the yere of hys reygne .xliii/ the sayd authour begynneth, and sayth that in that forsayd yere apered a greate eclypce of the son, wherof the lyke hadde not ben seen in many peres passed.

And in the yere folowynge dyed thys Philyppe in the moneth of Junii, whan he hadde reygned vppon xliiii. peres. Before whose deth apered a great comete or blasyng starre / the whyche the Frenche men, wyth also the forsayde eclypce / they adiudged for pronostiquys and tokens of the kynges deth / the whyche was buryed wyth excellent pompe in the monastery of saynt Denys, in the yere of our lorde a thousand two hundred and.xxiii. and of hys age. lviii / leuynge after hym the fore named Lewys / whyche was enoynted kyng after hym.

Thys Philyppe amonges other notable thynges ordeyned in hys testament / be sette to the aydynge and wynnynge of the holy cyte of Hierusalem thre hundred thousande pownde of Parys money / to the hospytall in Mount forte a hundred thousande pownde / and to be dystributed amonges the poore comons of hys londe he gaue twenty thousande pownde.

But here is to be noted, there is a great dyuersyte bytwene a pownd of Parys money and a pownde of sterlynge money. For a pownde of Parys money is but two shyllynges and.vi.pence sterlynge, or nere there about. And so it foloweth that a thousande pownde of Parys, is but a hundred fyue and twenty pownde sterlynge. By whyche accompte it foloweth that thys kynge gaue to the ayde of the holy londe. xxxvii. thousande and fyue hundred pownde sterlynge / to the hospytall xii.thousande and fyue hundred pownde sterlynge / and to the poore people two thousand & fyue hundred pownde.

And thus here I make an ende of thys volume, for cause and cõsyderacyon, as after is shewed in the begynnynge of the nexte volume, more manyfestely.

Lenuoye.

PRece forth rude volume/and recõmende me,
To my derest frende experte in all scyence.
Praye hym at leysour the to ouerse.
And where in meter or prose he fyndeth offence,
Or congrewe englysshe, or of perfyte sentence/
Humbly hym praye that he woll the correcte,
whyche in all hys faytes is so circumspecte.

And shewe to hym forther hys merpt to encreace,
The seconde volume ys redy to hym dyght.
Praye hym he woll not therfore wyth the surcease,
Tyll that thy felow, he haue by hys insyght
And by hys scyence brought in so good plyght,
That to all readers it maye be delectable,
And to the herers frutefull and profytable.

And not to dysdayne my malapert rudenesse/
That to hys payne I shulde thus boldely sende.
Or hym to wyll to suche greate besynesse,
So rude a worke to correcte and amende.
But shew hym sothely that all that I entende,
Is for to enhaunce hys prayse and greate laude/
As he shall knowe I truste wythout fraude.

The seconde volume of Fabyans cronycle

Conteynyng the cronycles of Englande and of Fraunce, from the begynnyng of the reygne of kyng Rycharch the fyrste, vntyll the begynnyng of the reyne of our moste redoubted souerayne lorde kynge Henry the. viii.

Prentyd at London By wyllyam Rastell.

1533

CVM PRIVILEGIO.

HEre begynneth the table of the seconde volume, whiche denounces and sheweth all the actes done in euery kynges dayes conteyned in the sayde volume/and that euery acte folowes by letter and by the noũber of ꝑ lefe, as in thys sayd table is erpzessed/ and begynneth at the wardes of London & at kynge Rychard the fyrste/ whose actes moze at legth in thys sayd volume shalbe shewed, wyth other kinges ensuyng by letter in this sayd table/ as fyrste. A. B. C. and so forthe.



Crys a stronge cytye in the holy lãd was wonne by the crysten as appereth. fo. iiii

Actes of the great Caue of Tartaris folio xxiii

Abbotte of waltham was accoꝛded wyth the cutelyns of Lõdon. fo. xxviii

Accoꝛde made betwene kyng Henry the. iii. and hys barons. fo. xxxviii

Actes done in Hethenes/ by Lowys the frenche kyng. fo. xlviii

Actis oꝛ Icon abouenamed cytye wõne agayn by ꝑ Turkes. fo. lxix

Accoꝛde oꝛ agrement was made bytwene Englãd & Scotlãd. fo. xc

Actes were made foꝛ weryng of sylk. folio xci

Actes in fraunce done by the duke of Lancastre. fo. ciii

Actes made by frẽchmẽ foꝛ the occupyeng of ꝑ admissiõ of ꝑ enheryteur of fraunce. folio cxxxvii

Accoꝛde made betwene the dukes of Oꝛleaunce and of Burgoyne. fo. cix

Accusacyõs by the duke of Burgoyn agayn the duke of Oꝛleaunce. fo. cixi

Accoꝛde made betwene the sayde dukes. folio cixi

Acte made foꝛ gyuynge of lyuereys. folio cixb

Actes made agayn straungers/ se in folio. cixx

Actes made foꝛ halowynge of the sondaye wythin the cytye of Londõ. folio cxxi

Abbay of Bury was spoyled. fo. cxiii

Dyme was graunted to kyng Hery the fyft. fo. cixxxiii

Iquyndecyme was graũted to kyng Henry the. iii. fo. xxi

Iletter deuysed by the bazõs & sente to kyng Henry the. iii. fo. xxxbii

Iletter was sent by Rychard kynge of Romayns to the barõs. fo. xxxbiii

Iquarter of whete was solde foꝛ. ii. s. folio xc

Itraye was made in Fletestrete vpõ a bakers seruaunt. fo. cxlb

Itray made in Fletestrete by one Herbottell. fo. cxxi

Indzewe Trollop dyscepurd the lozdes. folio cxiii

Iletter sent by Edward the. iii. vnto the kyng of fraunce. fo. cxiiii

Agrement was made with the Scottes. folio. lxiii

Inswere made by the french kynge to kyng Edwardes letter. fo. xcb

Inswere made by the French kynge to kynge Henry. fo. cixi

Imballade sent by the French kynge into Englande. fo. lxxxix

Imballade sent agayne by the sayde kynge. folio lxxxix

Imballade sent into fraũce. fo. lxxxix

Imballade sent frõ the pope. fo. ccbiii

Iparte of London bzydge fylle into Thamys. fo. lxxxix

Ayde graunted by kynge Johan. folio cxiii

Ayde was graunted by the inhabytaunters

tauntes of the countre of Langue-dok. folio cxxiiii.
Archebysshoppe of Orleaunce was slayne. fo. lxx.
Archbysshop of Caunterbury was slayne. folio cxiii.
Archebysshop of Caunterbury maketh a collacyon. folio cliiii.
Archebysshop of yorke wyth other was taken in batayle. fo. clxvii
Artycles of treason layde agayne Syr Roger Mortymer. fo. lxxxviii
Artycles of peace ratyfyed betwene kynge Edwarde and kynge Johñ. folio cvi.
Artycles of displeasure shewed in writynge by the duke of Glocester agayne the bysshop of wynchester. folio clxxx.
Archebysshop of yorke ouerturneth the Scottes. folio .xcix.
Artycles of peace concluded betwen the erle of Flaunders and hys subiectes. folio cxxxix.
Assembles made by lordes. fo. cxliiii.
Annyuersary honourable was foũden in Poulys chyrche. fo. cxi.
Auoutry was espyed. fo. ccxiii.

BArons warre began to grow in the. xli. yere of kyng Henry the thyrde. folio. xxx.
Barõs warre renewed and of newe kyndeled in the. xliiii. yere of Henry the thyrde. folio xxxiii.
Barons assembled theyr companyes in the marches of wales in the. xlvi yere of the sayd kynge. fo. xxxiiii.
Barons entred the cytye of London folio xxxv.
Barõs dyscoyded among them selfe. folio xxxvii.
Barons were chasyd the. xliii. yere of Edwarde the seconde. fo. lxxix.
Batayle of Lewys betwene kynge Henry the. iii. & the barons. fo. xxxvii
Batayle called the whyte batayle, loke in the. xi. yere of Edwarde the seconde. folio. lxxvii.
Batayle of Burbrydge betwen kyng Edwarde the seconde and the barõs in hys. xiiii. yere. fo. lxxix.
Batayle very cruell agaynste the Scotte called Halydon. fo. lxxxix.
Batayle of Swyn or Sluce vppon the see/betwene the Frenchmen and Edwarde the thyrde, in the. xv. yere of hys reygne. fo. xciii.
Batayle of Cressey in the. xxi. yere of Edwarde the thyrde. fo. xcviii.
Batayle of Potyers betwene kynge Edwarde the thyrde and the French kynge. folio ciii.
Batayle betwene kynge Philyp of Fraunce and the towne of Cassile in Flaunders. fo. cxvii.
Batayle of Shrowysbery/ in the. iii. yere of Henry the fourth. fo. clxvii.
Batayle at Blak'pole/ in the. vi. yere of Henry the. iiii. fo. clxvii.
Batayle of Agyncourt/in the thyrde yere of Henry the. v. fo. clxxii.
Batayle of sayncte Albons fyrste the xxxiii. yere of Henry the. vi. fo. cc.
Blore heth felde apperys in ỳ. xxxvii yere of kynge Henry the. vi. fo. ccxii.
Batayle of Ludlowe / as it doth appere in folio ccxii.
Batayle of Northamton / as appereth in folio ccxiii.
Batayle of wakefelde apperys and the batayle of sayn Albons. fo. ccv.
Batayle of yorke or Towton or Shyrborne. fo. ccvi.
Barnet felde. fo. ccxix.
Batayle of Tewkesbury. fo. ccxx.
Bartrã de Cleyõ warred in Spayn and chasyd the kynge. fo. cix.
Blasynge sterre apperys in folio. xc. and fo. cxviii. and fo. clix
Blanke charters vses in Eng. fo. cli.
Brekyng of peace betwen England and Fraunce / loke in the. xliii. yere of kynge Edwarde the. iii. fo. cxi.
Brest a stronge towne of Brytayne besyeged. fo. cxiii.

Benyuolence was fyrſte foũded and graũted in Edwarde the.iiii.dayes folio cxxxb.
Byſſhop Groſſeheede and of his actes apperyth in ỹ.xxxiii.yere of kyng Henry the thyrde.folio xxvi.
Byſſhop of Exceter was beheded apperyth in the.xviii. yere of Edwarde the ſeconde.folio lxxxii.
Byſſhop of Norwyche made warre in Spayne by the popes cõmaundement in the. vi. yere of Rycharde the ſeconde.folio cxiiii.
Byſſhop of London hath a memory of the cyteſyns of London.fo. cxlvii.
Byſſhop of wynchester lent to kyng Henry the fyfte.xx.thouſand poũde. folio clxxvii.
Byſſhop of wynchester forelayd created cardynall.folio. clxxx
Byſſhop of Salyſbury was ſlayne in the ende of.xxviii.of Henry the.vi. as more playnly is ſhewed fo.cxcviii.
Byſſhop of Chychester called Reynolde Pecok was abiured of hereſye folio ccii.
Boke of prophecy was founden by a Jewe in Spayne.folio xxiiii
Blode of Cryſte was broughte into weſtmynſter by kynge Henry the.iii. folio xxb.
Bonifacius pope of hys cõdycyons. folio. lxxi.
Bull of the pope manyfeſted at Poulys croſſe.folio xxxiii
Buſſhe, Baggot and Grene and of theyr actes. folio cli.
Bytõs reſyſt ỹ Frenchmẽ. fo. xxxix.

CHarles the. v. of that name & ſurnamed the fayre, and brother to Philipp ſurnamed the longe, ſonne of the.iiii. Philipp, began hys reygne ouer the realme of Fraunce, in the yere of grace. M.iii. hundreth and.xxii/and the.xb.yere of the ſecõd Edwarde kynge of Englande, and reygned yeres.vi.folio. lxxxiiii.

Cardynalles that were ſent into Englande from the pope were robbed/ appereth in the.ix. yere of Edwarde the ſeconde.folio lxxvi.
Caen a ſtronge towne in Normandye beſyeged by kynge Edward the thyrde and won it. folio xcviii.
Calys beſyeged and gotten by kyng Edwarde the thyrde.folio xcix.
Cardynall ſent from the pope/laboured for peas.folio cii.
Caſtell of Pount was yolden vp by appoyntement.folio cxxb.
Carekes.iii.were taken by the duke of Clarence and the erle of Kente.folio. clxvii.
Charyte of kynge Lewys. folio i.
Charles de Valoys brother to Philyppe le Beawe & vncle vnto Charles the.v.forſayd dyed.folio.lxxxvi.
Charles de Bloys was ſlayne in the batayle betwene ſyr Johñ Mountforte and the ſayd Charlys.fo. cx.
Charles the.vi.of that name & ſonne of Johñ,bẽganne to rule the Frenchmen,in the yere of our lorde. M. iii. C.lxiiii/& xxxviii. yere of the thyrde Edwarde kynge of Englande/ and reygned yeres.xvi.folio xxxvi.
Charles the. vii. of ỹ name a yonge chylde and ſonne of the.vi. Charlys, began hys reygne ouer Fraunce, in the moneth of ſeptember and yere of our lorde a thouſand.iii hũdreth and lxx/and the thyrde yere of the ſecõde Rycharde then kyng of Englande/& reygned yeres.xiii.folio civ.
Charles the. viii. of that name, and ſonne vnto Charles the. vi. as ſayen the Frenche authours / but the Engliſſhe wryters ſheweth the cõtrary, as in the ſtory of thys Charles ſhall appere/thys began to reygne ouer ỹ Frenchmen, in the yere of our lorde thouſande.iii.hũdreth and. xxii/ and the laſte yere of Henry the. v. themme kynge of England/& reygned yeres xxvi.folio cxvii.

Chaũtrpes

Chauntryes foũded in Poulys chur che in London.fo. cxi
Ceremonyes for the coronacyon of kynge Henry the.iiii / as appereth. folio clxiii
Creacyõ of dukes by kyng Rychard the.ii.fo. clxiii
Clement pope dyspleased for that he myght gyue no byshoprychés withi the realme of Englande/ in the.xviii yere of kyng Edwarde the.iii.as apereth.fo. cxvi
Cytezyns of London / are tolle free. folio xx
Cytezyns of Londn were arrested. folio. xxx
Clerkes of Orleaunces wythstande the kynge of Fraunces commaundement.fo. cxix
Churche or monastery of westmynster was ended of buyldyng/ as apereth.fo. lviii
Condycions made by the borough-maysters of the towne of Burgys agaynst theyr erle.fo. lxxxvi
Constable of Fraunce was murdered by the aduyse of Charles kyng of Nauerne.fo. cxxii
Constable of the towre of London was drowned whose name was called syr Thomas Ramston / as appereth.folio clxviii
Constantynoble was wonne by the Turkys / as it is shewed in. folio cxcix
Colacyon made by the archebyshop of Caunterbury to the lordes for the deposycyon of kyng Rychard the.ii. folio cliiii
Conclusyon of maryage by kynge Henry the.vi.fo. cxcii
Condycyons of kynge Lowys/as is shewed.fo. ccxii
Commynge of the emperoure into Fraunce and of hys honourable reteyte.folio cxxxvii
Composycyon was made betwene kynge Henry the fyrste and the duke of yorke/as appereth.folio cxb
Copy of a letter sent from Edwarde the.iii.vnto the Frenche kynge / and answere to the same made / loke in. folio. xcb
Copy of an instrument made for deposyng of kyng Rychard/as is shewed.folio cliii
Coppe of a byll put into the parlyament house for the temporalties / as is shewed.fo. clxix
Copy of a letter sent by the byshope of wynchester vnto the duke of Bedforde.folio clxxxi
Copy of a pardon made by the kyng vnto the cytezyns of London/as apereth.fo xli
Correccyon of aduoutry / as is shewed.folio lxxiii
Coronacion of quene Katheryne/ as appereth.fo clxxvi.
Courses of seruyce for the feest of the sayd coronacyon.fo. clxxvi
Corps of kynge Henry the.v. was with great solempnite brought vnto the monastery of westminster/as apereth.fo. clxxi
Countesse of Henawde laboured to make a peace betwene kyng Edward the thyrd & kynge Phylyp of Fraūce folio xxb
Couenauntes betwene the regente & the kynge of Nauerne are expressed and shewed.folio. cxxxi
Couenauntes of maryage betwene kynge Henry the.v.and the Frenche kyng beholde in.fo. clxxv
Crossed freers came fyrste into Englãde/in the.iii.yere of kyng Edward the.ii.folio lxxv
Crucyfix of golde belongyng to sait Denys church in Fraunce was arrd by the kyng of the monkes for ayde folio. cxx

Dame Blaunche was ayded/ by Phylip the French kynge as appereth.folio. lii

Dame Elynour Cobham was arrested of treason/as it is shewed in. folio cxci
Dauyd brother of Lewyn prynce of walys wrought treason/ as it is shewed in.fo. lvii
Dauyd afterclayd was taken. folio lviii
Daunsynge wonderfull beholde. folio lix
Derthe of corne.folio lx
Dede knyght apered to one mayster Morres in walys.fo. xiii
Derknesse intollerable fylle in Paulys churche the bysshoppe beynge at masse.folio xvi
Deuorce betwene Charlys ꝑ French kynge and Blaūche/as it is shewed. folio lxxxiiii
Dede corpsys what noumbre in one yere were buryed in London.fo. c
Depe a towne in Normandy was strongly assayled by the lord Talbot. folio cxcii
Denham esquyer toke the lorde Ryuers at Sandwyche.folio cciiii
Dyscencyon amonge the lordes of Englande.fo. xxiii
Dyscencion fyll amōge the lordes in Normandy.fo. cxix
Dyscencion grewe betwene ꝑ Frēche kynge and the kynge of Nauerne. folio cxxii
Dyscencyon fylle amonge the Frēch men for cessynge of an ayde. folio cxxiii
Dyscencyon grewe amonge the thre astates of the realme of Fraunce. folio cxxvi
Dyuers inconuenyences fyll in Englande and in Fraunce/ as is shewed. folio c
Dyuerse byspons and mernayles were sene in the ayer/as it is shewed. folio cviii
Duke of Ostryche dyed/ and the hostages of kynge Rycharde were free delyuered.folio ix
Duke of Lancasters actes. folio ciii
Duke Johñ of Lācastre made warre in Fraunce.folio cxi
Duke of Lancastre passed thorugh Fraunce wythoute fyghte. folio cxiii
Duke of Burgoyn complayneth vpon syr Johñ Chalons knyghte. folio cxviii
Duke of Normandy maketh hys oracion to the cytesyns of Parys. folio cxxviii
Duke forclayde was proclaymed regente of Fraunce / as it is shewed. folio cxxx
Duke of Lancastre reentred Fraūce. folio cxxxvi
Duke of Lācastre warred in Spayñ folio cxlv
Duke of Glouceter spake sharpe wordes to kyng Rycharde the secōd. folio cxlix
Duke of Glouceter was arested and murdered.folio cxlix
Dukes of Herforde and of Northfolke fyll at dyscencyon for cause shewed.folio cl
Duke of Lancastre clayned the crowne.folio cliii
Duke of Orleaunce laboured agaīst the vnpuerspte of Parys. folio clx
Duke of Orleaunce was slayne. folio clx
Dukes of Orleaunce ꝫ of Burgoyn maketh new warre.fo. clx
Duke of Burgoyne was slayne. folio clxiii
Dukes and barons were put to deth for treason.folio clxv
Duke of Clarence was slayn. folio clxxvii
Duke of Glouceter was made protectour of Englande / in the fyrste yere of the reygne of kynge Henry the syxte and the duke of Bedforde, regente of Fraunce/ as it is shewed

shewed in.fo. c.lxxix
Duke of Bedforde wynneth holdes in Fraunce/se in.fo. clxxx
Ducheſſe of Holād was taken pryſoner/loke in.fo. clxxxi
Duke of Alenſon was delyuered for hys raunſom.fo. clxxxii
Duke of Northfolke was in greate ieopardy of drownyng.fo. clxxxiii
Duke of Burgoyne turned from the Engliſshe partye to ỹ French partye as is ſhewed in.fo. clxxxviii
Duke of Burgoyn layde ſyege to Calays.fo. clxxxix
Dukes & erles were created/ as apereth in.fo. cxciii
Duke of Suffolke was arreſted. folio. cxcv
Duke of Somerſet was arreſted as ſheweth in.fo. c.xcviii
Duke of yorke gathered people / as apereth in.fo. cxcviii
Duke of yorke diſcharge of hys protectourſhyp.fo. cci
Duke of yorke and othe were attaynted as apereth in.fo. cciiii
Duke of Bukkyngham & many other were ſlayne.fo. cciiii
Duke of yorke taketh the kynges royall ſee.fo. ccv
Duke of yorke with other was ſlayn folio. ccv
Duke of Burgoyne aſſiſteth ỹ Frēch kynges ſonne agaynſt hys father/as is ſhewed in.fo. ccix
Duke of Bryttayn & other conſpyred agayne theyr kyng.fo. ccix
Duke of Somerſet wyth other put to deth.fo. ccxv
Duke of Clarence wyth other lāded at Dartmouth.fo. ccxviii
Duke of Exceter was founde dede in the ſee.folio. ccxxi
Duke Clarence was drowned in wyne.fo. ccxxii
Duke of Glouceter was made protectour.fo. ccxxiiii
Duke of Bukkyngham ſheweth the tytle of kyng Rychard.fo. ccxxv
Duke of Glouceter taketh poſſeſſyō at weſtmynſter/as appereth. folio. ccxxv
Duke of Bukkyngham cōſpyreth agaynſt kyng Rychard / & was taken & beheded at Salyſbury.fo. ccxv
Duke of Orleaūce was taken in batayll as is ſhewed.fo. ccxviii
Duke of Bryttayne dyed whereby great warre foloweth / as it is ſhewed.fo. ccxviii

EDwarde the fyrſte of that name & ſonne of Henry ỹ thyrde, ſurnamed Edwarde Longe ſhanke / began hys reygne ouer England the xvii.daye of Nouembre the morowe after ſaynt Edmond the archbiſſhop in the yere of our lorde.M.CC lxxii/ & the.ii.yere of the.iii. Phylype than kynge of Fraunce / & reygned nobly yeres.xxxiiii.fo. ix
Elyanoure mother to kyng Richard was enlarged.fo. xiii
Edmounde Crouchbak was maried to the doughter of ỹ erle of Ymnarle as apereth in.fo. xliii
Edmoūd wodſtocke wroughte treaſon.fo. lxxviii
Edward the ſonne of Henry forſayd diſtreſſed the barons/as it is ſhewed folio. xxxix
Edwarde forſayd dyſtreſſed the Barons the ſeconde tyme/as is ſhewed folio. xxxix
Edwarde the holy kyng and confeſſour was tranſlated / as it ſhewed in folio. xliii
Edwarde was croſſed into the holy lande/and of hys feates there done. folio. xlv
Edwarde of Carnaruan/ as apereth folio. lviii
Edward the ſecond called Edwarde Carnaruan,the ſonne of the fyrſt Edwarde / began hys dompynyon ouer Englande in the moneth of July

and yere of our lorde god.M.iii.C.&
vii/and the.xxi.yere of the.iiii. Phy-
lyppe or Philip the fayre than kynge
of Fraunce / and reygned yeres full
xii.fo. lxxiiii.
Edwarde the fyrst maryed to hys.ii.
wyfe the Frenche kynges syster.
folio. lxb.
Edwarde the.iii.of that name, & sonne
of Edwarde the secõde and of dame
Isabell the doughter of Philippe le
Beawe, or the.iiii.Phylyp late kyng
of Fraunce/whych Edwarde aboute
the age of.xv.yeres began hys reygn
ouer the realme of England the.xx v.
daye of Januarp, in the yere of grace
M.iii.C.& xxvi / and the .iiii. yere of
Charles the fayre thã king of Fraũce
the whyche reygned yeres.ii.
folio. lxxxvi.
Edwarde Carnaruan/ was myserab-
ly slayne as is shewed. fo.lxxxvii.
Edwarde Baylol was made kynge
of Scottes.fo. lxxxviii.
Edwarde the.iii.sayled into Brabant
wyth hys wyfe loke in.fo. xci.
Edward the.iii.chaleged ꝑ holc king
dome of Fraunce.fo. xciii.
Edward the eldest sone of the duke of
yorke was electe for king of Englãd
loke in.fo. cc.vi.
Edwarde the.iiii. of that name and
eldest sone of Rychard duke of yorke
whych was proclaymed heyre parãt
to the crowne, began hys dompnyon
ouer the realme of Englande, in the
iiii.day of Marche in ꝑ yere of grace
M.iiii.C.lx/& the.ii.yere of the.xi.Lo
wys than kyng of Fraũce/& reygned
at that tyme, viii.monethes & yeres
viii.fo. cc.xiiii.
Edwarde the.iiii.beforenamed wan
the felde of Barnet vpon Ester daye
agayne kyng Hẽry the.vi. in the yere
of grace.M.iiii.C.lxxi.& yere of Lo-
wys the French kyng aforesayd/and
reygned after that day.x. monethes/
and yeres .xii. So that fyrste & laste
he reygned ouer.vii. monethes assyg
ned to Henry the.vi.dayes.xxvi. mo
nethes & yeres.xxi.or wyth the sayde
monethes of Henry the.vi. set to Ed-
wardes reygne make.xxii.yeres and
odde dayes.fo. cc.xx.
Edwarde the.v.of that name & sonne
of Edward the.iiii.of the age of.xiiii.
yeres and lasse, began to reygne as
kyng of Englãd the.x.daye of Apryll
& yere of our lord.M.iiii.lxxxiii.& the
xxv.yere of the.xi. Lowys thã kyng
of Fraunce / and reygned tyll the.xx.
day of July next folowyng/in which
season passed dayes.lxxii.
folio. cc.xxiiii.
Elizabeth the holy womã doughter
of the kyng of Hungery.fo. xxi.
Eleanoure quene & of her progenye/
loke in.fo. ixi.
Emperoure of Almayne came into
England.fo. c.lxvii
Emperour forsayd came agayn into
thys landé.fo. c.lxxi
Enuye of Frenchmen.fo. b
Enguerram was put to deth.
folio. lxxxiii.
Epytaphye of Rychard the fyrste/as
apereth in.fo. c
Epytaphye of Frederyke the emper-
our.fo. xxb
Epytaphye of Edward the fyrst/loke
in.fo. lxviii.
Epytaphye of Edward the.iii.
folio. cxbi
Epytaphye of kyng Rycharde the ii.
loke in.fo. clxbi
Erthquake fell in Englãd.fo. xxb
Erle of Penbroke was ouerset with
Frenchmen & other.fo. cxiii
Exprellemẽt of the grudges atwene
kyng Rychard the fyrst & the Frẽche
kynge.fo. iiii
Eugeny pope and of hys actes.
folio. clxxbii

HAlse Cryst was crucyfyed / as
is shewed in.fo. xix

Falſe clerke of Orenkorde whych kay ned hym ſelfe madde, came to wod-ſtocke entēdyng to haue ſlayne king Henry the.iii.fo. xxii

Faytes or actes of warre done at Dō ſtable.fo. xcvi

Fyſſhes wonderfull take in the.xxv. yere of kyng Hēry the.vi.fo. cci

Florēs of golde was made by kynge Edward the.iii.fo. xcvii

Fryers mynors came fyrſt into Eng lande/loke in.fo. xix

Fryers Auguſtynes in the.xxxb.yere of kynge Hēry the.iii. buylded theyr houſe, in a place in walys called wod hous as is ſhewed.fo. xxvi

Fryers were put to deth loke in. folio. clix

Frenche kyng ſent for hys doughter that was kynge Rychardes wyfe. folio. clx

Frēch nauy diſcōfyted.fo. clxxiii.

Froſte excedyng/loke in.fo. clxviii

Galcoynes make warre againſt Frenchmē borderers in kyng Charles the.v.days as is ſhewed in folio. lxxvi

Gabell or tare reyſed vppon ſalte in Fraunce/loke in.fo. cxix

Guynes caſtell was yoldē to Engliſh men/loke in.fo. ci

Grudge betwene Baldwyn and his monkes .fo. vii

Grudge aroſe betwene kyng Johñ & hys lordes.fo. xvi.

Grudge and diſpleaſure betwene ỳ biſſhop of wyncheſter and the duke of Glouceter/it is ſhewed in. folio. clxxci

Grudge and murmure toke place a-monge the nobles of Fraunce/ as ap pereth.fo. cc.xxviii

Harme done by thonder/as ap-pereth in.fo. cvii

Hawle wythout reuerence of the ſa-crament was ſlayne in the churche. folio. cxli

Haſtynges lord Chamberleyne was ſodeynly put to deth.fo. ccxxiiii

Henry the thyrd of that name & ſonn̄ of king Johñ, a chyld of.x.yeres/be-gan to reygne ouer Englād, in the moneth of Octobre, and yere of oure lorde.M.CC.&.xvii/and the.xxvii. yere of ỳ Phylype thā kyng of Fraūce/ and reygned yeres.lvi fo. xviii

Henry Bolyngbroke ỳ.iiii.of ỳ name and ſonne & heyre of Johñ of Gaunt duke of Lācaſtre, the whyche Johñ was ſecōd ſonne of Edwarde the.iii. lyuyng after theyr father, or the.iii. ſonne to reken pryncē Edward/ this Henry after the depoſitiō of Rychard in the ende of the moneth of Septē-bre, begā to reygne ouer Englād, in the yere of our lorde.M.iii.C.lxxx.& xix/and the.xix.yere of Charles ỳ.vii than kyng of Fraunce/ and reygned yeres.xiii.fo. clxiii

Henry the.vi.of that name & ſonn̄ of Henry the.v.of ỳ name & ſonne of Hē ry the.iiii.began hys reygne ouer the realme of Englād, vppon the morne after ſaynt Cuthberts day or ỳ.xx. day of Marche, in the ende of ỳ yere of grace.M.iiii.C.&.xiii/ and ỳ.xxxii yere of Charles the.vii.than kyng of Fraūce/and reygned yeres.xx.fo.clxx Hēry the.v.& dame Katerine dough-ter of Charles the.vi.or.vii.a chylde of halfe yere of age/begā hys reygne ouer Englād & Fraūce, in the ende of the moneth of July, and yere of our lord.M.iiii.C.&.xxii/and ỳ fyrſt yere of Charles the.vii.or.viii. ỳ thāne a-monge the Frenchemē was allowed for kyng/and reygned yeres.xxxix. folio. clxxix

Henry of Derby wyth other landed at Raueſpore/as is ſhewed.fo. cli

Henry the fyfte forſayd ſayled into Fraunce/loke in.fo. clxxi

Henry Derby forenamed and of hys

ſſlue is ſhewed.fo. cxliiii
Henry the.iiii.afore ſayd maryed the ducheſſe of Bꝛytayne.fo. clxvi
Hereſye of Johñ wyclyf apereth. folio. cxlvii
Heretykes taken in ſaynt Gyles feld and after bꝛent.fo. clxxi
Homage done by lorꝛdes of Almayne, to Rychardꝰ erle of Cornewayll bꝛother to kyng Henry the thyꝛde. folio xxxviii
Homage done by the kyng of Scottes to kyng.E.the.iii.fo. lxxxix
Hughe holy byſſhoppe of Lyncolne dyed.fo. xi

Iohñ bꝛother to Rychardꝰ the fyꝛſte was oꝛdeyned kynge of Englande, in the moneth of Apꝛyll & yere of our lorꝛd .M.C.xcix / & the.xx. yere of the ſecond Phylyp than kyng of Fraunce/and repgned yere.xvii. The interdiccion of thys lande, begã in the.vi.yere of thys kynge, & endured tyll the.xiii.yere. Henry the ſonne of Alwyn, in the.x.yere of thys kynge was admytted foꝛ the fyꝛſte mayꝛe of Lõdõ. And in the ſayd.x. yere of king Johñ, London bꝛydge was begon to be made of ſtone.fo. x

Johñ the fyꝛſt in Fraunce of that name & ſonne of Phylyp de Valoys, began hys repgne ouer the lande of Fraunce, in the moneth of Auguſt & yere of our lorꝛd.M.iii.C.xxxl/ and the xxxiiii.yere of ꝑ thyꝛd Edward kyng of England/& repgned yeres.xiiii.

Thys kynge was taken pꝛyſoner of Edwarde, the pꝛynce of Englande at the batayll of Poytyers in Fraũce folio. cxxiii
Japhet was gotten by kynge Rychard.fo. b
Jakys de Artyuyle fauoured the Engliſſhe partye.fo. xciii
Jacke Strawe & wyll waw made an inſurrecyon.fo. clii
Jacke Sharpe was taken and putt to deth.folio. clxxxb
Jacke Cade and hys felowes. folio. cxcvi
Jacke Cade wꝛoughte moche of hys wyll in London / & after robbed & ſo ſlayne.fo. cxcvii
Jewes were banyſſhed thys lande. folio. lx
Jewes were ſpoyled & ſlayne.fo.clv.
Johñ bꝛother of kyng Rychard was pꝛowd.fo. iii
Johñ reconcyled to hys bꝛother apereth in.fo. viii
Johñ duke of Lancaſter dyed / as is ſhewed.fo. c.l.
Johñ duke of Bedfoꝛde dyed. folio. clxxxviii
Inquyſycyons were made vpon the rulers of London/ as is ſhewed in. folio. xxix
Joꝛdan of the ile of Gaſcoyne gꝛewe out of kynde.fo. lxxxb
Ingliſſhe loꝛdes wanne fyꝛſt vppon Frenchmen.fo. xcviii
Ingliſſhe ſoudyours ſlayne vnder ſafe conduyt.fo. cxii
Itenerarii plees were holden in Southwerke.fo. xxxi
Ile of Ely holdeth banyſſhed men. folio. xlii
Ile of Rodes fyꝛſt wonne.fo. lxxb
Iſabell late wyfe vnto kynge Rychardꝰ/was maryed to the eldeſt ſoñ of the duke of Oꝛleaunce.fo. clx
Iſſue & dyſſent of ſyꝛ Roger Mortymer.fo. cxliiii
Juſtyces oꝛ iuges punyſſhed.fo. lx
Juſtes holden in Smythfelde. folio. cxliiii

Binge Johñ and hys lãde was enterdyted.fo. x
Kynge Johñ was reconcyled to the churche.fo. xvi
Kyng Henry the.iii.ſayled into Noꝛmandy.fo. xxiiii
Kynge Henry the.iii.in pꝛoper ꝑſone ſat in iugement.fo. xxix

Kynge

Kynge Johñs fury serche in.fo xliiii
Kynge Johñ of Fraunce was taken prysoner.folio ciiii
Kyng Johñ was delyuered.fo. cbii
Kyng Johñ dyed in Englande. folio cbiii
Kyng Rychard sought many prouysyons.folio iiii
Kynge Rycharde sayled into ꝑ holy lande.folio iiii
Kynge Rychard was take prysoner. folio vi
Kyng Rychard was delyuered. folio. vii
Kynge Rycharde sayled into Normandy.folio ix
Kynge Rycharde assayled the castell of Gysors.folio x
Kynge Rycharde was slayne.fo. x
Kynge Henry the thyrd craynetheco sayll of the mayre.folio. xxiiii
Kynge Henry sayled into Fraunce to be presente at the Frenche kynges parlyament.folio. xxxb
Kynge Henry was taken of hys barons.folio xxxvii
Kynge Henry layd hys syege to London as it is shewed.folio xliii
Kynge Henry chosed shyrefes. folio xliii
Kynge Lowys toke vppon hym the crosse.folio xlviii
Kynge Edwarde the fyrst buylde castelles in walys.folio lviii
Kynge Edwarde sayled into Fraũce. folio lix
Kynge Edwarde the.ii.was taken & also resygned the crowne.fo. lxxii
Kynge Edward the.iii.came secretly to London.folio xcvi
Kynge Edwarde warred sharply in Fraunce.folio xcvii
Kynge Edwarde chased the Spanyardes from the sea.fo. ci
Kynge Edwarde yode into Scotlande.fo. cii
Kynge of Scottes was delyuered. folio ciiii
Kynge Edward spedde hym toward Parys.fo. cv
Kynge of Nauerne was sodaynly taken/as it is shewed.fo. cxxiii
Kynge of Nauerne was set at large. folio cxxvii
Kynge Edwarde warred newly in Fraunce.fo. cxxxb
Kynge Johan was receyued into Fraunce.fo. cxxxb
Kynge of Nauerne became feodosy vnto the French kynge.fo. cxxxvi
Kynge of Ermonye asked ayde of kynge Rychard the.ii.fo. cxliii
Kyng Rychard ayded the Januayes folio cxlv
Kyng Rychard maryed the Frenche kynges doughter.fo. cxlvii
Kyng Richard sayled into Irelande. folio cli
Kyng Rycharde was myserably put to dethe.fo. clxb
Kyng Henry the.iiii. maryed the duchesse of Bysytayne.fo. clx
Kyng Henry the.v. sayled into Normandy.fo. clxiii
Kynge Henry maryed the Frenche kynges doughter.fo. clxxb
Kynge Henry was receyued into Lõ don.fo. clxxvi
Kyng Henry and hys wyfe sat crowned in Parys.fo. clxxvii
Kyng Henry the.vi.shewed hys vertue beholde.fo. clxxix
Kyng Henry was dubbed knyghte. folio clxxxii
Kinge Hẽry was crowned.fo.clxxxiii
Kynge Henry was crowned at Parys.fo. clxxxb
Kynge of Scottes was murdered. folio cxc
Kyng Hẽry the.vi.was taken.fo. ccb
Kyng Edward the.iiii.was receyued into London.fo. ccvii
Kynge Edwarde ayded the duke of Burgoyne.fo. ccxii
Kyng Edwarde spoused dame Elizabeth Graye.fo. ccxvi

Kynge

Kynge Edwarde fledde thys lande. folio ccrbiii
Kynge Henry was taken oute of the towre.fo. ccrbiii
Kynge Edwarde was proclaymed vsurper.fo. ccrix
Kynge Edwarde landed at Raupnspore.fo. ccrix
Kynge Edwarde repossessed/as apereth.folio. ccrx
Kyng Hēry the.vi.dyed in the towre of Loudon.fo. ccrx
Kyng Edwardes chyldren were takē out of kepntwary.fo. ccrxiiii

LAzars of Languedok were brent.fo. lxxxiiii
Letter sente by the barons to kynge Henry.fo. xxxbii
Lewelyn prynce of walys rebelled. folio lbi
Lewelyn was slayne / as appereth. folio lbii
Letter takked vpō the crosse in chepe folio. lxxxi
Lordes assemble at Arundell/as apereth.folio cxlix
Lordes put to deth.fo. clxxii
Lordes fledde from Ludlowe feelde. folio. cciii
Lordes proclaymed traytours/as is shewed.folio ccliii
Lordes came to London.fo. cciiii
Lordes of Fraunce warre vpō theyr kynge.fo. ccc
Lordes contynue theyr malyce/as is shewed.fo. ccci
Lordes dyscorde wythin them selfe. folio ccciii
Lorde Morley appeled the erle of Salysbury/as it is shewed in. folio. clxb
Lorde Straunge / and syr Johanne Trussell fyghte in the churche for cause shewed in.folio clxxiiii
Lorde Talbot was slayne / as appereth.fo. cc
Lorde Egremoude was commytted to Newgate/as is shewed.fo. ccii
Lorde welys conspyred agayne the kynge.folio ccxbiii
Lorde chamberlayne beheded / as is shewed.fo. ccxx
Lolle of Normandy/ as is shewed. folio ccxbiii
Lowys sonne vnto the French kyng warred in Englande.fo. xbii
Lowys retourned into Fraunce / as appereth.fo. xbiii
Lowys sayled into the holy lande. folio xxb
Lowys gaue sentence agayne the barons.fo. xxxbi
Lowys the.ix.of that name and sōn of Phylipp the seconde, beganne hys reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of oure lorde.M.CC.and.xxxiii/ and the.bi yere of the thyrde kynge Henry than kyng of Englande / and reygned yeres.iii.By thys kynge retourned the blode of Charles into ꝑ possellyon of the crowne of Fraunce. folio xlbi
Lowys the.x.of that name a chylde of.xii.yeres,and sonne of the abouenamed the.ix.Lowys whyche is named sapnt Lowys/began hys reygne ouer Fraunce,in the yere of our lord M.CC.and.xxvi / and the.ix.yere of the iii.Henry than kinge of Englād/ and reygned yeres.xliii/ as appereth folio. xlbii
Lowys the.xi.by accompt and sonne of Phylipp the.iiii,beganne to reygn ouer Fraunce,in the yere of our lord M.CCC.and.xb / and the.viii.yere of the seconde Edwarde than kynge of Englande,and reygned yeres .ii. folio lxxiii
Lowys the.xii.of ꝑ name afte the accōpt of thys boke,a.x.after the frēche accōpt,wherof ꝑ cause is before shewed,sōn of the laste Charles/begā to rule ꝑ Frenchmē,in ꝑ yere of our lord M.iiii.C. and.lviii / & xxxvi.yere of Hēry the.vi.thā kyng of Englande,& reygned

reygned peres.xxvi.fo. cclx
Lowys refused lordes company and counsayll.fo. cclx
Lowys rescueth Parys.fo. ccc
Losse of townes and castelles in Normandy.folio cxxxvii

Marvayles sene in the fyrmament.folio xii
Mayre of London presentment/ loke in.folio xxvii
Mayr and hys bretherne foūd guilty in hurtyng the cōmons.fo. xxix
Mayre and cytezyns agreed to the lordes.fo. xxxi
Mayns of sylver were fyrste graūted to officers of London.fo. xci
Men of Norwyche enraged.fo. xlv
Manhode of Mathew de Roya. foll. liiii
Marchaunte straungers encroched vpō the cytezyns of Lōdon and were punysshed.fo. lx
Maddocke a walshman rebelled/ as it is shewed.fo. lxi
Mariage of the.ii. Edward.fo.lxxiiii
Malyce sprange amonge the lordes of Flaunders.fo. lxxxv
marueylous heyle fylle.fo. lx
Mychaell Tony mayre of London adiuged/loke in.fo. lvi
mortmayne was fyrst enacted .fo.lvi
Mortymer was howgely anaunced. folio lxxvii
Mortymer was put to deth / as it is shewed.fo. lxxviii
money borowed of the cytye of London.folio xcii
Martyn Pyldo Paryeyen / was put to cruell deth.fo. cxxv
manet of cysme in the church of Rome/loke in.fo. cxxviii
Maner of the metyng of the kynges of Englande & of Fraunce.fo. clvii
many knyghtes of the bathe made. folio clxiii
Marvayles of Thamys.fo. clxx
malles ordeyned by kyng Henry the fyfte/as it is shewed in.folio.clxxviii
Maner of treaty betwene the landes of Englande and of Fraunce/loke in folio clxxxviii
maryage was dyspoynted.fo. cxcii
Maryage concluded.fo. cxcii
manhode of chalons.fo. cxcv
Maximilian and the Frenche kynge dyscorden.fo. ccxxviii
Margaret syster vnto Edwarde the iiii.departed from London towarde the see.fo. ccxlii
monycyon dyuyne was gruen to the Frenche kynge.fo. cclvii
Mountague a noble man was slayn folio cli
mummyng made for treason / as is shewed.fo. clxv
Murder was punysshed.fo. clxvii

Nombre of wardes in ỳ cityе of London.fo. ii
Names of twelfe peres of England. folio xxx
New tolle was brought vp.fo. xlviii
Nycholas Brembre wyth other was put to deth.fo. cxlvi
Naupe of Frenchemen dystressed/as is shewed.fo. lb
Newe coyne of sylver was stryken. folio. lvii
New displeasure kynge Rycharde toke agayne ỳ cytye of London.fo. cl
Newe coyne of golde smitten as appereth in.fo. clxx

Octoboon the popes legate was pursued of the clergy of Englande for causes shewed in.fo. xxi
Occasyon of the fraye in Fletestrete. folio. cxlv
Occasyon of displeasure betwene kynge Rycharde and the duke of Glouceter.fo. cxlx
Of the chere and curious receyuyng of kyng Henry by the Frēche kyng. folio xxxi
Officers charged and dyscharged/ as it is

as it is shewed. folio. xxxiiii
Of kyng Johns pledges. fo. cviii
Order of scrytoures in the tyme of quene Katherins coronacio. fo. clxxvi
Orleaunce that cytye was besyeged folio. clxxxii
Othes swome by the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce for peace ke folio. cvii
Olyuer Daman and Danyell sometyme chyef counsayllours of Lowys the Frenche kynge were hanged/ as appereth. fo. xxxviii

PReface of thys werke/ as apereth. fo. I
Peace was taken betwene the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce. folio xi
Philyp kynge of Fraunce warred vpon kyng Johñ. fo. xi
Philyp brake the peace. fo. xii
Pope Innocente sente vnto kynge Johñ. fo. xiii
Parlyamente holden at London. folio. xix
Pyers of Pountfret for hys vertue put to deth. fo. xvii
Parlyament holden at Mertone. folio xxii
Periurye was punysshed / as appereth. fo. xxb
Parlyament holden at Oxenforde. as apereth. fo. xxx
Parlyament holden at westmynster. folio xxxi
Parlyament holden at Oxenforde. as is shewed. fo. xxxvi
Parlyament holden at westmynster. folio xxxviii
Parlyament holden at westmynster. folio xlb
Peace was made betwene the kynge and Gylbert de Clare/ as is shewed. folio xliii.
Punysshement of Londoners/ as is shewed. fo. xl
Philyp the thyrde of that name and sonne of saynte Lowys, was made kynge of Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde. M. CC. lxx/ and the. liii. yere of the thyrde Henry than kynge of Englande/ and reygned yeres. xb. fo. li
Philyp the. iiii. of that name and son of the. iii. Philyp la beawe or fayre/ began to reygne ouer Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde a. M. CC. lxxvi/ and the. xiiii. yere of the fyrste Edwarde than kyng of England/ and reygned yeres. xxix. fo. lxviii
Philyp the. v. of that name and surnamed the longe, sonne of the fourth Philyppe and brother to Lowys the xi. by accompt/ bega hys reygne ouer Fraunce, in the yere of grace a. M. iii C. and. xvii/ and the. x. yere of Edwarde the. ii. than kynge of Englande/ and reygned yeres. v. fo. lxxiii
Philyppe de Ualoys, erle of Ualoys, and the sonne of Charlys de Ualoys brother to the fourthe Philippe/ was nat wythoute some stryfe chosen and ordeyned for protectoure of the lande of Fraunce, and after kyng of the same, the. ii. days of February, in the yere of oure lorde. M. iii. C. and. xxviii / and the. ii. yere of Edwarde the. iii. than kyng of Englande/ and reygned in greate trouble yeres. xvii. fo. cxvi
Philyppes actes in Italye/ as appereth. folio. lxiii
Parlyament holden at westmynster. folio lvi
Plees remoued from London / as is shewed. fo. lvi
Punysshement for murdre/ as apereth. folio. lviii
Parlyament holden at westmynster folio. lix
Parlyament holden at London / as apereth. folio lxxb
Peace concluded betwene Fraunce & Flaundres. fo. lxxiii
Parlyament holden at London / as apereth. fo. lxxviii

Parlyament

Parlyament holden at westmynster as is shewed in.fo. xci
Parlyament holden at Northampto as is shewed.folio xii
Parlyament holde at yorke.fo. lxxix
Parlyament holden at Northampton/as appereth in.fo. lxxxvii
Parlyament holden at Salysbury/ as appereth in.folio lxxxvii
Parlyament holden at Bury/ as is shewed.folio. cxcviii
Parlyament holden at Couentre beholde in .folio cxiiii
Parlyament holden at Leycester /as is shewed.folio clxxi
Parlyament holden at Leycester called Battys/as is shewed.fo. clxxxii
Paulys steple sette on fyre.fo. cxciii
Pagentes and other ordenaunces made by Lõdoners for the receyuyng of the kynge.fo. clxxx b
Parys was loste by treason / as it is shewed.fo. clxii
Peace concluded betwene the regent and the kyng of Nauerne.fo. cxxx b
Peter kynge of Castyle was beheded/as is shewed in.fo. cxi
Perys was drawē out of the church/ and hanged/as is shewed.fo. cxxix
Plees put in exercyse for the countre of Arthoys.folio cxbii
Plees remoued frome London to yorke/as is shewed in.fo. cxlvi
Pryde of the Frenche kynge/ as it is shewed in.fo. lxxiii
Prynce Edwarde maryed the erle of Henawdes doughter.fo. lxxxi

Quene hythe was fyrste let to ferme to the cytesyns of London/as appereth.fo. xxvi
Quest passed betwene the abbot of westmynster and the cytye of Londō as is shewed in.fo. xxx b
Quene of Englande sayled into Fraunce for cause.fo. lxxxi
Quene of Englande was proclaymed enemye.fo. lxxxi
Quene forsayd landed in England by strength.fo. lxxxi
Quene Anne was speciall good lady to the cytye of London.fo. cxlvi
Quene Anne dyed.fo. cxlvii
Quene Margarete was receyued of the Londoners.fo. cxciii
Quene Margarete made a voyage into Englande.fo. cxcv
Quene Margaret was taken / as is shewed in.fo. cxcv

Richarde the fyrst of that name and sonne of Hery the second, began to reygne in Englande, in the yere of our lorde. M.C.xci / & the.xi. yere of the second Phylyp/ & reygned yeres wyth odde monethes.x. In the fyrste yere of thys kynge the cytye of London was commytted to the rule of two baylyfes/whyche so cõtynued tyll the.x. yere of kyng Johñ, as it is shewed in.fo. iii
Rycharde the.ii.of that name, & sonñ of prynce Edwarde sonñ of Edward the.iii/began hys reygne ouer Englande, the.xii.daye of Juny, in ỹ yere of our lord.M.iii.C.lxxvii/ & the.xiii yere of the.v.Charles than kynge of Fraunce/and reygned yeres.xxii. folio cxlii
Rycharde the.iii.of that name & brother vnto Edwarde the.iiii. beynge duke of Glouceter and protectour of England, began to vsurpe the.xxvi. daye of Juny/in the yere of our lord M.iiii.C.lxxxiii.& yere of Lowis thā kyng of Fraunce / and so contynued yeres.ii.full/& as moche as from the xx.day of Juny to the.xxii.day of August/by dayes.lvii.fo. cxxx b
Ranulphe erle of Chester and of hys doughters.fo. xxi
Rayne excedyng.fo. lxxvii
Resygnacyon of the duchye of Normandy.folio xxxii
Resygnacyon of kynge Rycharde. folio clii

Resygnacyon shewed in the parlyament.folio cliii
Robert Knollys knyghte and of hys feates.folio ciiii
Robert Knollys toke sayntOmers/ and other holdes.fo. cxi

SIuoye a place of honoure in London was brent by the cõmons.folio. cxliii
Saynt mary Overyes in Southwerke was fyrste byloed.fo. xv
Sait Stephyns chapell of westmynster begonne.fo. cix
Syege layde to sayntc Omyers folio xciiii
Syege layde to Ampás.fo cxxxiii
Scottyshe kynge dyd homage to kyng Johñ.fo. xi
Scottes brekyng theyr othe.fo. lxiii
Scottes were subdued.fo. lxiii
Scottes had peace to theyr aduauntage.fo. lxxxvii
Scottes were agayne ouerturned. folio lxxxviii
Scottisshe kynge taken prysoner. folio cii
Spensers were banysshed.fo.lxxviii
Spensers bothe the father and the some were put to deth.fo. lxxxii
Sõne was turned to the coloure of blode.folio lxxx

TAnner a vyllayne surmysed hym heyre to the crowne of Englande.fo. lxxvi
Table of syluer was gyuen to kyng Rychard.fo. cxlviii
Templers knyghtes of religyõ were dystroyed.fo. lxxii
The sentence agayne kynge Johan was denounced.fo. xiii
The wardys of London were cessed folio xcii
Thre fyftenes were graunted at one tyme.folio cxi
Tytle or ryghte whyche the kyng of Englande hath vnto Scotlãde/se in folio lxii
Tytle of Edwarde the thyrde whych he hadde to the crowne of Fraunce. folio cxvi
Tytle of the duke of Glouceter had to the crowne was shewed atPaules crosse.fo. ccxxiiii

WIrdes and churches wythin Lõdon.fo. ii
Uaryaunce began betwene the pope and kyng Johñ.fo. xii
Uaryaunce betwene Londõ & Northampton.fo. xxxiii
warre betwene the kynge of Englãd and of Fraunce.fo. xiii
warre was concluded betwene the sayd landes.fo. cxxxiii
warre betwene kynge Johñ and hys lordes.fo. xvii
warre was made in Normandy / as appereth.fo. lxii
warre made in Gupan wyth fortune therof.fo. lxxx
warre betwene the Frenche kynge & the kynge of Nauerne.fo. cxxiii
warde and mayage of heyres was graunted to the kynge.fo. xx
wyllyam walworthe slewe Jacke Strawe.folio cxlii
Usurers were punysshed/as it appereth.folio cxxi

☞ Here endeth the seconde (::) Table. (.·.)

Now for as mych as we be comen to the tyme, that officers were chosen and chargyd wyth the rule of the cytye of London / yt is necessary that here we do shewe what offycers they were, & of the name that to them was admitted ad gyuen. Then ye shall vnderstand that at the commynge of wyllyam conquerour into thys lande, as euydently apperyth by the chartet of hym to the cytezens of London graunted / that before those dayes and then, the rulers of the sayde cytezens were named Port greuys / whyche worde ys diriuate or made of.ii.saxon wordes, as port and greue. Port is to meane a town, and greue is ment for a gardyen or ruler / as who wolde meane, gardeyn, ruler, or keper of the town. These of olde tyme, wyth the lawes and customys then vsyd within thys cytye / were regystred in a boke called the Domysday in Saxon tunge then vsed. But in later dayes when the sayde lawes and customes alteryd and chaunged, and for consyderacyon also that the sayde boke was of small hande and sore defacyd, yt was the lesse set by, so that yt was enbeselyd or loste / so that the remembraunce of suche rulers as were before the dayes of thys Rychard the fyrst, whose story shall nert ensue, are loste and forgoten.

wherfore nowe I shall begynne at the fyrste yere of the sayde fyrste Rychard, the whyche of some wryters is surnamed Cure de Lyon / and so contynew the names of all offycers, as well baylyuys, mayres and shyrues, tyll the laste yeres of Rychard the thyrde kynge in dede and not of ryght. whyche baylyues I shall appoynt the rule of, from Mychelmas to Mychelmas / and the mayres from suche tyme and season as nowe ys accustompd & vsed, that is to saye from the daye of Symon and Jude vnto the same feste nexte ensuynge / vpon whyche daye the newe mayre taketh hys charge at the Guylde hall, and the olde mayre is there and then dyscharged of the sayde office of mayraltye.

Nowe wolde I fayne
In wordes playne
Some honour sayne
And bryng to mynde
Of that auncyent cytye
That so goodly is to se
And full trewe euer hath be
And also full kynde.

To prynce and kynge
That hath borne tuste rulynge
Syn the fyrste wynnynge
Of thys Jlande by Brute
So that in great honour
By passynge of many a showre
Jt hath euer borne the flowre
And laudable brute.

Of euery cytye and towne
To seche the worlde rowne
Neuer yet caste downe
As other many haue be
As Rome and Carthage
Hierusalem the sage
wyth many other of age
Instorye as ye maye se

Thys so oldely founded
Is so surely groundyd
That no man may confounde yt
Jt is so sure a stone
That yt is vppon sette
For though some haue yt thrette
wyth manasses grym and great
yet hurte hadde yt none

Cryste is the very stone

That the cytye is ſette vppon
whyche from all hys foon
Hath euer preſerued yt
By meane of dyuyne ſeruyce
That in contynuall wyſe
Is kepte in deuout guyſe
wythin the mure of yt

As houſes of religyon
In dyuerſe places of thys towne
whyche in great deuocyon
Ben euer occupyed
when one hath done another begyn
So that of prayer they neuer blyn
Suche order is theſe houſes wythin
wyth all vertue allyed.

The paryſhe chyrches to reken
Of whych nomber as I ſhall ſpeken
wherin ſpeke many preſte and deken
And Cryſte dayly they ſerue
By meane of whyche ſacrifyce
I truſte that he in all wyſe
Thys cytye for her ſeruyce
Doth euer more preſerue.

This citie I meane is Troynouaũt
where honour & worſhyp doth haũte
wyth vertue and ryches accordaũte
No cytye to yt lyke
To ſpeke of euery commodytye
Fleſhe and fyſhe and all dentye
Cloth and ſylke wyth wyne plentye
That is forhole and ſyke.

Brede and ale wyth ſpyces fyne
wyth houſes fayre to ſoupe & dyne
Nothynge lackynke that is cõdygne
For man that is on molde
wyth ryuers freſhe & holſom ayer
wyth women that be good and fayre
And to thys cytye done repayre
Of ſtraungers many folde.

The vytayle that herein is ſpente
In thre houſholdes dayly tente
Betwene Rome and ryche Kent
Ire none may theym compare

As of the mayre and ſhyriues twayne
what myght I of the iuſtyce ſayne
Kepte wythin this cytye playne
It were longe to declare.

For though I ſhulde all day tell
Or that wyth my ryme dogerell
Myght I not yet halfe do ſpell
Thys townes great honoure
Therfore ſhortely as I began
Pray for yt both chylde and man
That yt may continue and
To bere of all the floure

And ſo to dwell in reſte and peace
Good lorde graunt that yt not ceaſe
But euer to haue more encreace
If yt be thy wyll
And to contynue the olde fame
The kynges chaũber ỹ ỹ right name
London to kepe wythout blame
Is yt hath hyther tyll.

who ſo hym lyketh theſe bỹſs to rede
with fauour I pray he will thẽ ſpell.
Let not the rudeneſſe of theym hym lede,
For to deſpraue thys ryme dogerell.
Som pte of ỹ honour it doth you tel
Of thys olde cytye Troynouaunt.
But not therof the halfe dell/
Cõynge in the maker is ſo adaunt

But though he had the eloquence
Of Tully, and the moralytye
Of Seneck, and the influence
Of the ſwete ſugred Iremonye,
Of that fayre ladye Caliope:
yet had he not cõynge perfyght,
Thys cytye to prayſe in eche degre/
As yt ſhulde ducly aſke of ryght.

Here after I ſhall declare the wardes of this forſayd citye/ with alſo ỹ paryſh chyrches ỹ ſtande within the ſayd wardes. And after I ſhal ſhew to you ỹ houſys of religyõ ſtandynge

standyng in the cytcuyte of the same cytye.

The warde of the towre wherin are thre paryshe chyrches. .i.
Saynt Olaue
Alhalown at Barkynge.
Saynt Dunstane.

Billyngysgate. .ii.
Saynt Botulphe
Saynt George in podynge lane
Saynt Andrewe in Estchepe
Saynt Margarete callyd Patens.
Saynte Mary hyll.

Lande brydge warde .iii.
Saynte Benet at Grace chyrche
Saynt Leonarde in Estchepe
Saynt Margarete in Brydgstret
Saynte Magne in Brydgestrete.

Dowgate warde .iiii.
Saynte Laurence Pountnay
Alhalown the more
Alhalown the lesse.

walbroke warde. .v.
Saynt Johñ in walbroke
Saynt Mary Bothawe
Saynte Swythyne in Candelwyke strete.
Saynte Stephan in walbroke
Saynt Mary wolchyrch in ꝑ pultry
Saynt Syth in Bocerysbury.

Candelwyke strete warde. vi.
Saynte Martyne Orgor
Saynt Clement
Saynt Mychaell in Crockyd lane
Saynte Mary Aschyrche.

Langbourne warde .vii.
Alhalown Stanis in Lumbarstrete
Saynt Gabryell
Saynt Denys in Fanchyrche strete
Saynt Edmund
Saynte Nycolas Acon
Saynt Mary wolnoth in Lumbarde strete.

Algate warde. .viii.
Saynt Andrewe vndershaft
Saynt Kateryns by Crystes chyrch
Saynt Katerynes Colman.

Porte Sowkyn warde. .ix.
Saynt Botulphe without Algate.

Lyme strete warde. .x.
Saynt Mary Mare.

Byshoppes gate warde. .xi.
Saynt Botholphe at the gate
Saynt Alborgth.
Alhalowns wythin saynt Helyns.

Cornehyll warde. xii.
Saynt Mychaell
Saynt Petyr

Bradstrete warde. .xiii.
Saynt Martyne Otwewyche
Saynt Benet Fynke
Saynt Bartheline w the lytle
Saynt Crystofer.
Saynt Petyr the poore
Alhalowns in the walle.

Colmanstrete warde .xiiii.
Saynt Stephan.
Saynte Olaff in the Jury.
Saynt Margaret in Lothbery.

Chepe warde. .xv.
Saynt Laurence in the Jury
Saynt Mary Bowe
Alhalowns in Hony lane
Saynte Mary of Colchyrche
Saynt Mylbredys in the Pultry
Saynt Benet Shorhogge
Saynte Martyne Ponyers
Saynt Martyn in Iremonger lane
Saynt Mary.

Cordwayner strete warde .xvi.
Saynt Mary or Aldermary

as ii. Saynt

Saynt Ancelyne
Saynte Pancras.

Quene hyth warde .xxbii.
Saynte Mychaell.
Saynt Mary somerset
Saynt Mary Mouthawe
Saynt Nycholas Olaffe
Saynt Nycholas colde abbey
Saynt Petyr.

Bredstrete warde. xbiii.
Alhalows in Bredstrete.
Saynt Mylbrede
Saynt Mathye
Saynt Johñ euangelyst
Saynt Augustyne at Poules gate
Saynt Margarete moyses
Saynt Botolphe.
Saynt Margarete in Fryday strete.

Uyntry warde .xix.
Saynt Martyne
Saynt Mychell colege
Saynt Thomas apostle
Saynt Jamys Garlyke hyth
Trynyte in knyghtryder strete.

Baynarde castell warde. .xx.
Saynte Andrew
Saynt Benet
Saynt George
Saynt Mary Magdaleyne in olde fysshe strete.

Faryngedon warde wyth in .xxi.
Saynt peuan
Saynt Nicholas in ỳ Fleshechāblis
Saynt Faythys in Powlys chyrche
Saynt Martyne wythin Ludgate
Saynt Mychaell at Querne
Saynt Fauster in fauster lane
Saynt Petyr at the crosse of Chepe
Saynte Gregory in Ponlys chyrch yarde.
Saynte Benyn wythin saynte Martyne the graunte.

Faryngdon warde wythout .xxii.
Saynt Dunston
Saynt Bryde
Saynt Andrew in Holborne
Saint Sepulcre without Newgate

Aldrysgate warde .xxiii.
Saynt Botolphe wythout the gate
Saynte Anne
Saynt Johñ zacharye
Saynt Leonarde in Fauster lane
Saynt Mary stanynge
Saynt Mathew in sylver strete.

Basshynges haue warde .xxiiii.
Saynte Mychaell there.

Crepelgate warde xxv.
Saynte Mary magdaleyn in mylke strete.
Saynt Mary in Aldermanbury
Saynt Mychaell in Hogynlane
Saynt Albons in woodstrete
Saynt Alphy by Crepulgate
Saynt Olaff in Sylver strete
Saynt Gylys wythout the gate.

The summe of the paryshe chyrches wythin London .C.xiii.

Here after ensue the howsys of relygyon, monasteryes, colleges, chapellys, and other bewnge no paryshe chyrches wythin the cytye.

The cathedrall chyrch of saynt Poule in the ende of Chepe.
The pryory of saynte Barthelmewe in Smythfelde.
The hospytall or spytyll a cell of the sayde pryory.
The charter house standyng wythin the warde of Crepulgate.
Elsynge spytall wythin the sayde warde.
The chapell of our Lady of Bedlem in Bysshoppes gate warde.
The house of saynt Elyne in ỳ same warde of nunnys,

The

The pryory of Crystes chyrche with in Algate.
Saynte Anne abbaye wythin Portsokyn warde of whyte munkys.
The howse of ỳ Menerellys of close nunnys wythin the same warde.
The chapel of our lady of Barkyng in the towre warde.
An howse of crossed freerys in the same warde.
A colege of saynt Antony in ỳ warde of Bredstrete.
A colege of saynte Thomas called Acrys standynge in Chepe.
An house of frere Augustynes in Brode strete warde.
An house of gray freerys standyng in the warde Faryngedon wythin.
An house of blacke freres standynge by Ludgate within ỳ forsaid warde
An house of whyte freres standynge in Flete strete.
A chyrche or college called the Temple standynge at Temple barre.
A chapel standyng in pardon chyrch parde wythin Poulys.
A chapell standyng in ỳ chirch parde at Poulys ouer the chamell house.
A chapell standynge wythin Crepell gate saynt Jamys in the wall.
A chapell called Pappey stādyng be syde Bishoppes gate founded by the prestes of that fraternyte.
A chapel of corp⁹ Cristi in ỳ Poultry.
A chapell of saynt Thomas of Cauterbury stādyng vpon Lōdonbrydge.
A chapell standynge in peide Hall parde of our Lady.
A colege of prestes standynge by Poulys called saynte Martyne le graunde.

The summe of housys of relygyon, chapellys, and other. xxvii.

westmynster.

The abbbaye of westmynster
The kynges newe chapell
Saynte Stephans chapell
Saynt Margaretes chyrche.
A chapell at Totehyll
A chapell of saynt Anne in Totehyll strete.
Saynte Jamys in the felde.
A chapell at Rauncyuale.
A paryshe chyrche therby of saynte Martyne.
A chapell of our lady of Pewe.

Chyrches, monasteryes, chapellys and other housys wherin god is dayly seruyd / standynge in the cyrcuyte of the cytye wythoute the wallys and fyrste.

wythoute Algate.

A paryshe chyrche of our ladye standynge wythoute the barrys called whyte chapell.
A colege of saynte Katheryne standynge on the eest ende of the towre of London.
A paryshe chyrch or chapell wythin the sayde towre, of saynte Peter.

Southwarke.

The monastery of Bermundsey
A paryshe chyrch of Mary Magdaleyne standynge faste by.
A paryshe chyrche of saynt George.
A paryshe chyrch of saynt Magaret.
An holspitall or college of saynt Thomas.
A paryshe chyrche of saynte Olas.
A monastery of chanōs callyd saynt. Mary Ouereys/and with a paryshe chyrche of saynt Mary Magdaleyn standynge faste therby.

wythout the Temple barre.

A paryshe chyrch of saynte Clement.
A chapell of saynte Spyryte.
Saynte Ursula at strande.

wythoute Smythfelde.

The pryorye of saynte Johñ in Hierusalem.
A house of nūnys named Clerkewel
A a chapell in pardon chyrche yarde

wythout Bysshoppes gate.
Shordyche parysshe chyrche.
Sayute Mary spyttell.
A house of nunnys callyd Halywell.

And of the dyuyne houses without the cytye. xviii.

The summe of all the dyuyne houses wythin the cytye and wythoute is a hundred and. lxviii.

RIcharde the fyrst of that name, and seconde sonne of Henry the second/ begaune hys reygne ouer Englād in the moneth of July, and yere of our lorde. r. hundred. lxxx. and. x/ and the. xi. yere of the seconde Phylyppe then kynge of Fraunce.

Thys Rycharde prouyded beselye to sette good rule in Normādy, when he hadde harde of hys fathers deth, and after spedde him into England/ where he was ioyously receyued/ & in the moneth of September folowynge and thyrde daye, he was crowned at westmynster of Baldwyn archbyshoppe of Caunterburye. Uppon the whyche daye the Iewys of Englande, and specyally suche as dwelyd within London and nere about/ assembled of them a certayn nomber, and presumyd farther then requyred for theyr authoryte. For whyche presumpcyon they were fyrste rebuked, & after one of the fyrste. which thyng sene of the cōmon people, supposyd that to be done by the kynges commaundement. wherfore in a fury as those that they hated as the deuyll for theyr vsury & other vnhappy condycyons, they fell vppon theym, and chased them to theyr houses, & them robbed and spoyled wythout pytye, and byrent some of theyr houses/ wher of the rumour ranne to westmynster to ꝑ kynges audyēce. wherfore in all haste he sent downe/ gyuyng strayte cōmaundement that they shuld cease of that ryot. But the people were in suche ire and wodenesse, that they re frayned not for all the kinges sonde, tyll they hadde executed the fyne of theyr malyce. And all be yt that thys ryot was after greuously shewyd agayne the commons of the cytye/ yet yt passed vnpunyshed, for the great nomber of the transgressours.

And the sayde daye of coronacyon/ all prysoners that lay in any pryson aboute London at the kynges sute, or for other small or fayned accyons, were freely delyueryd.

Soone after the kynge gaue many dygnytyes/ and to hys brother Johñ he gaue the prouynces of Notyngham, Deuonshyre, and Cornewall/ and creatyd hym erle of Lancaster. And then the kynge ordeyned the cytye of London to be ruled by two baylyues whose names were as folowyth.

Anno domini. M. C. xc.

Henry of Cornehyll

Balliui

Anno domini. M. C. xci.

Anno primo.

Rycharde fyrs Ruer.

IT was not longe after that ꝑ the kynge hadde thus exalted hys brother Johñ as before is shewyd/ but that he also preferryd hym to the marryage of the erle of Glouceters doughter/ by reason wherof he

was

was lorde of that erledome. These great auãcementis made him after vnkynde to his broder/and by pryde therof to couepte afterwarde the hole kyngdome.

Thys yere kynge Rycharde was assoyled of the offence that he had bsyd in rebellyon agayne hys father. In recompẽsacyon wherof as testyfyeth the authour Guydo/ he voluntaryly toke vppon hym and promysed to warre vppon Crystes enymyes. All be yt that other wryters shewe, that yt was for that that hys father had so wylled hym by hys lyfe. But for what cause, so yt was, preparacyon and prouysyon for that iourney was made from that daye forthwarde.

Thys yere also the kynge enlarged Elyanoure hys moder/whyche long before at the commaundement of his father her husbande, was as a prysoner kepte in secrete keppynge. After whych enlargyng, ꝑ land was mych guydyd by her counsayll. And thys yere,as sayth Ranulfe / kynge Rycharde gaue ouer the castellis of Barwyke and Rochysburghe to ꝑ Scottyshe kyng, for the summe of.v. thousande pounde, for the exployte of his voyage. And farther more he sold to the olde byshoppe of Durham hys owne prouynce for a great summe of money, and creatyd hym erle of the same. wherfore the kynge sayde after in game, I am a wonders crafty man/ for I haue made a new erle of an old byshop. By suche meanes the kyng emptyed many byshoppes and ryche prestys bagges and fylled hys cofers. And ouer that he graunted oute annuytyes and fees oute of the crowne, as though he roughte nothynge of hys retournynge. For this dede some of hys famylyers as they durste blamed hym. But he sayde to thẽ ꝑ in tyme of nede, it was good polycy for a man to ayde hym wyth his owne. And more ouer he ioyned ther to, that yf London were hys/at that tyme of nede he wolde sell yt, yf he myght gete a conuenyent marchaũt that for yt were able to pay.

In other waye he hadde also to gather money / for he hadde lycence of pope Innocent the thyrd of that name, to dyspence wyth suche as hym lyked wythin his realme for takyng vppon theym the crosse.

Anno domini.M.C. xcı. Anno domini.M.C.xcii.

Balliui Johñ Herlyon. Anno secundo

Roger duke.

IN the seconde yere in the moneth of October / kynge Rycharde betoke the guydynge of the lande vnto the byshoppe of Ely then chaunceller of Englande, and sayled into Normandye/ where lettynge the coũtrey vnder sadde guydyng, shortly after mette with the Frenche kyng Phylyp the second/the whych ioyntly rode to Turon, and there ouer passyd the shortnesse of wynter. In whyche passe tyme makynge eyther wyth other assuraunce for contynuaunce of so great a iourney / at the sprynge of ꝑ yere these two princes toke theyr voyage towarde the holy lande/that is to meane kyng Rycharde by ꝑ see, and kynge Phylyppe by the lande/ and appoynted to mete agayn in the land of Scicilia or Scycyll. In this meane tyme, in England the Jewes in dyuers places of ꝑ realme, as Lyncolne, Staunforde, and Lynne were robbed and spoyled/ and at yorke, to

the nomber of foure hundred & mo, cutte theyr mayster beynes and bled to deth.

The two kynges accordynge to theyr appoyntemēt met in Scycyll/ where grudge beganne to kyndle betwene theym for correccyon of theyr souldyours. Then the French kyng departyd agayne from kynge Rychарde/ the whyche there made certayne ordynaunces for warre, as a towre or castell of tymber whyche he named Mategryffons/ and also prouyded for vytayll for both hostes.

In thys tyme also the kynge of Cyprys hadde taken two shyppes of kynge Rycharde, and denyed the delyuery of theym. wherfore the sayde Rycharde entryd the land of Cyprys makynge therin sharpe warre/ & chasyd so the kynge from cyty to cyty, that lastely he yelded him vnto kyng Rycharde, vppon condicyon that he shuide not be throwen in bondes of iron/ wherof kynge Rycharde in keppynge of hys promyse caste hym in bondes of syluer.

when kynge Rycharde hadde dwellyd there vppon two monethes, and hadde taken his pleasure of that cōtrey, and taken amendes at his own wyll for hys shyppes/ then he departed from the sayde yle of Cyprys, and sayled towarde Icon or Acris. In whyche course so keppynge towarde Acris/ he encountred a great shyppe of the Soudans of Sury, fraughte wyth great ryches, and toke yt/ and so came at length to ỳ cyty of Acris, where at that tyme lay before ỳ sayd towne the Frenche kynge wyth hys hoste/ and had lost a lytle before two thousande of hys men, whyche were partyd from hys hoste to haue done an enterpryse vppon the Turkes/ but they were layde for & dystressed.

Then as testyfyeth Peter Dyprop, kynge Rycharde was ioyously receyued of the Frenche kynge. After whose comynge yt was not longe that the sayd cyty was gyuen vp by appoyntement as folowyth, and as affermeth the sayde Peter, and also the cronycle of Fraunce. Fyrste that the Sarasyns shuide departe out of the cyty/ leuynge behynde theym horse, harneys, vytayll, and all other thynge belongynge to warre. Also they shulde cause to be restoryd all such prysoners of cryste men as they had vnder theyr keppyng, wyth other couenauntes whyche I passe ouer. And thus was the cyty of Acris yelden into the crysten mennes handes, in the moneth of Auguste, & the yere of our lorde. M. hundred. lxxx. and xii. But when yt came to the partyng of the pray of the cyty/ there beganne malyce to kyndle hys bronde, whych was not lyghtly after quenchyd.

Of thys variance betwene these two kynges of England & of Fraūce dyuers maners are shewyd. For Polycronica sayth that yt beganne by reason that kynge Rycharde denyed vnto kynge Philyp halfe hys wynnynges in Cyprys, accordyng to the couenauntis betwene theym assured at Turon. But kyng Rychard sayd that the cōuencyon there made/ stretched no further then to suche goodes as was wonne wythin the lymytes or boundes of the holy lande. An other grudge was, by reason that the French kyng ayded not ỳ erle of Champeyne beynge in dystresse of nede. wherfore the sayde erle beynge discontent sayde to the Frēche kyng. Syr hytherto I haue done accordynge to my dutye/ but hereafter I shall do as I am compellyd be nede. For your grace hath hytherto cherysshed me but for myn/ but now I shal go to hym ỳ is more redy to gyue thē to take/ and so departed to kyng Rycharde, of the whyche he had all hys

pleasure,

pleasure. The thyrde cause was as sayth Ranulph, for as mych as kyng Rycharde at hys begynnyng in Scycyll maryed the syster of the kynge of Nauerne / where before he hadde promysed to mary the syster of the sayde kynge Phylyppe. But of these artycles speketh nothyng the frenth cronycle / all be it he sayeth greate default vnto kynge Rycharde / sayeng in sedycyous and vyle wordys, that kyng Rycharde falsly brake hys appoyntmentes and kepte no promesse that by hym was made. Moreouer the sayd cronycle sayth that he solde the ile of Cyprys vnto the Templers for .xxx. thousande marke / and after toke it agayne fro them by strength, and delyuered it vnto Guy de Lesygnan that was the laste crystened kynge of Hierusalem. And ouer this the sayde frenche cronycle sayth, that he toke from a knyght of the duke of Osteych the sayd dukes banner / and in despyte of the sayde duke trade it vnderfote, and dyd vnto all the despyte he myghte. And ouer all thys, where as Conradus Marches of Tyre was traytorously slayn by two of his owne seruauntes / that kyng Rycharde shulde laye the charge therof vnto the frenche kynge.

For these grudges and spytenesse, wyth also fere of treason to be wrought bytwene Saladyne the Soudā, and kynge Rycharde as affermeth or allegeth the forsayde authoure / kynge Phylyppe wyth a small company of shyppes departed from Acō or Acris, & sayled to Puyll or Poyll / and there tarryed hym a season, cōtynued hys iourney vnto Rome, and so lastely vnto hys owne prouynce of Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. C. xciii. Anno domini. M. C. xciii.

Wyllyam Hauershall.

Ballliui Anno .iii.

Johñ Buknot.

IN the thyrde yere and moneth of Nouember, when the Frenche kynge was thus departed / kyng Rychard with the duke of Burgoyn whom the French kynge hadde lefte behynde hym to haue the rule of the Frenche hoste lafte and remaynyng in Acre and the countre there about, called before hym dyuers persons or pledges of Turkes, for the performaunce of certayne appoyntementes taken wyth them at ꝑ wynnynge or gaynge vp of the sayde cytye of Acris. wherof one especiall couenaūt was, that by a certayne daye than expyred, they shulde cause ꝑ holy crosse to be restored vnto the crysten prynces. The whyche for he saw well that they wolde not or myghte not performe / he therfore put in execucyon of Turkes ouer the noumber of. v. thousande as testifyeth the Frenche cronycle. But that agreed not all of the beste wyth the former sayeng / cōsyderynge the cytye was delyuered by appoyntement, there shulde not so many Turkes remayne there. But Peter Dystroye sayth, that for breakynge of thys appoyntement, kynge Rycharde put to deth all suche Turkes as were than wythin the cytye of Acris / whyche maye be ment by the hostages or pledges.

It was not longe after that tydynges were brought vnto kyng Rycharde, that the cytye of Hierusalem was wythout any greate strength of Soldyours, and that it myghte be wonne wyth easy labour. wherfore kyng Rycharde assembled the lordes to haue

to haue they; coũsayll / where it was cõcluded that euery cappteyne shuld p;epare hym to go thyther. Vppon whyche agrement, the cryſten hoſte ſped them in ſuch wyſe, ꝑ they were withtn. v. myles of ꝑ ſayd city of Hie ruſalem / where they toke a new coũ ſayll how they ſhuld o;der them and they; people to lay they; ſyege about the cytye. In whyche coũſayll it was concluded, ꝑ kynge Rycharde wyth hys Engliſhe men ſhulde haue the vawewarde / and the duke of Bur goyne the rere warde. After whyche concluſyon taken / the kynge ſpedde hym vppon his waye towarde the cy tye. But by what myſhappe o; myſ fo;tune I can not ſaye / ſo ſoone as the kynge was departed, the duke called the lo;des of Fraunce befo;e hym / and ſayde, yt is euydent vnto you, that all be yt our hedde and ſo uerayne lo;de is abſent, the floure of the chyualry of Frãce is p;eſent. And yf any thyng be done to the ho nour of the Cryſten, and rep;oche of infydels / yt is moſt lykely to be done by vs, conſyderyng ꝑ miſſuffyrpencye of Engliſhemen and other. yet ne uertheleſſe, what ſomeuer honoure grow by our dedis to ꝑ criſten hoſte / yt ſhall be accompted vnto kyng Ry charde becauſe of hys p;eſence / ſo ꝑ we ſhall haue all the payne and tra uayll, and Engliſhemen ſhall haue the honour. wherfo;e if ye wyll do by my counſayll / we wyll returne vnto Acrys, and there tarye tyll we ſe far ther. Some agreed to this counſayll and the mo;e in nombet / & the other ſpedde them in all haſte after kynge Rycharde, and ſhewed to hym of the dukes returne / wherof he beynge ſo enfourmed returned alſo vnto Acrys.

It was not longe after that the ſayd duke was taken wyth greuous ſykeneſſe and dyed. And about that tyme alſo dyed Baldewyn archbyſ ſhoppe of Caunterburye / whyche a monge other lo;des of Englande, accompanyed the kynge in that tour ney.

Anno domini. M. C. xciii. Anno domini. M. C. xciiii.

Nycholas Duke.

Balliui Anno quarto.

Pety; Nowlay.

ABout the ſeaſon of Mychel maſſe, in ꝑ. iiii. yere of the rey gne of thys ſayde Rycharde / tydyn ges were b;ought to hym ꝑ the to wn o; caſtell of Japheth was beſyeged of Saladyne / and lykely to be ſoone wonne, wythout the cryſten were the ſooner ayded. wherfo;e kynge Ry charde, whych Peter Dyſrop calleth the good kynge Rycharde / ſped hym thyther with his army by water, and ſent a nother hoſte of Frẽchemen and other by lande. But ſo yt was o; the criſten myght wynne thyther / ꝑ ſayd towne and caſtell were wonne / and the p;yſoners therin taken, were ſent by water towarde ſuch p;yſones as Salandyne hadde appoynted them vnto. wyth the whyche of good fo;tune kynge Rycharde mette, & them reſcowyd. And that done, wyth the Turkes whyche theym conueyed he put in ſure holde / and helde on hys iourney to Japheth / and there by ſtrength reſcuyd the towne & caſtell, and reſto;yd the cryſten to they; fo;mer poſſeſſyon, and left wyth theym mo;e ſtrength of knyghtes. And ſo; to be the mo;e feryd of the myſcreãtes / kynge Rycharde cauſed hys p;y ſoners to hym belongynge to be ſlayne, where other ſolde theym to

they;

theyr great auauntage/by meane wher of he was hadde in wonderfull fere of the Turkes.

Then kynge Rycharde after thys victory hadde at Japheth/wonne.ii. strong holdes callyd Daron and Gazres, and strengthyd them wyth cry sten knyghtes. And wyth such goodes as he there wāne of the Turkes, he repayred the castel of Ascalon and other, that greatly was impayred by the warre of the Turkes.

In thys season and tyme ꝑ kyng Rycharde was thus occupyed in the holy lande / the byshoppe of Ely as before is sayde haupnge the rule of Englande, dyd many cruell dedys/ and oppressyd the clergy and also the lay fee. He wolde cōmenly ryde with a thousande horse / and greued abbeys by meane of hys gestys or lodgynge wyth theym. Also he helde in hys handes the see of yorke for longe season. And after ꝑ deth of Balwyne dede as before is shewed in the holy land/ he also toke the see of Caunterbury vnder hys rule. Then he pryued Geffrey that was chosen to the see of yorke of hys mouables / & caste hym as prisoner in ꝑ towre of Lōdon. And soon after called a counsayll at westmynster as the kynges procurator, and as legate of the pope then Innocent the.iii. At thys counsayll Hughe Nouaunt then byshoppe of Chester, a great kamplyer of the sayd byshoppe of Ely/ putte forth a complaynt agayne ꝑ munkes of Couentre, that they hadde sued the sayde Hughys blood before the hygh aulter of theyr chyrche. For whych cause the byshoppe of Ely demyd, that the sayde munkys shulde be putte from theyr sayde abbey, & clerkes shuld be set there for thē/ so that by myght the munkes were put thens and dysperbled about in sondry places, and clerkes wyth prebendys set in theyr stallys. For thys dede sayth Guydo and other, that thys Hugh byshoppe of Chester hadde thus causyd the munkes of Couentre to lose theyr lande and house / he toke therfore so great repentaunce, that vppon hys deth bed he ared of god that for a due and conuenyent penaunce, he myght redeme that offence by the lyeng in the fyre of purgatory from ꝑ daye of his deth vnto the generall day of dome.

Also the forenamed byshoppe of Ely called in proper name wyllyam de longe shampe / contynuynge hys tyrannyes, pursuyd Hugh byshoppe of Durham of all maner worshippe/ and greued the byshoppe of wynchester, and wretched nygh all the lande. But so faste as thys innaturall or cuyll dysposyd man besyed hym to ver and greue the crysten men in England/ so fast besyed this good kyng Rycharde to vexe & dere the infydels of Surry. So ꝑ dayly he wanne of theym / or at the leste putte theym from the wynnynge of suche townes and holdes, as they by theyr great strength entendyd to haue wonne.

Anno domini. M.C. xciiii. Anno domini. M.C.xcv.

Roger Duke.

Ballitut Anno quinto

Rycharde kyng Alepn.

IN the ende of September and begynnynge of the fyfte yere of kynge Rycharde/ Guy de Lesyngeman laste crysten kynge of Hierusalem dyed/ & Thoras a noble Crysten man captayne of a towne called Sur, was shortly after slayne by the Turkes, whose wyfe for as mych as she was

ſhe was ryghtfull enheryteur of the crowne of Hieruſalē / the kyng gaue her in maryage vnto ꝑ erle of Champayne. And for kynge Rycharde perceyued well ꝑ criſten hoſte mynyſhed dayly, as well by infyrmytees as lacke of vytayll and otherwyſe / he ſought meanes of a peace or trewce for a tyme, and had yt graunted for thre yeres. The whyche peace ſtablyſhed and proclaymed in the hoſte and countrey nere about / kynge Rycharde betoke the rule and guydyng of the Criſten vnto the erle of Champayne / promyſynge hym or ꝑ trewce were endyd to come wyth a ſtronger hoſte, and wyth goddes myght to ſet hym in poſſeſſyon of the cytye of Hieruſalem as the ryght of his wyfe.

Then Hubert byſhop of Salyſbury yode forth hym ſelfe from ꝑ kyng to the holy citye / and offeryd there an

hoſte, and returned agayne to the kynge. After whoſe returne, ꝑ kynge takynge leue of the erle of Champayne and other / toke his ſhyppyng at Acres or Acon, whyche ys named Tholomayda alſo / and ſo returned to the yle of Cypre or Cypres.

Thens the kynge ſent the quene hys wyfe and her ſyſter wyth ꝑ more parte of hys people vnto Scycyll / and he wyth a ſmall company for he myght not endure the ſoftenelle of the ſee, toke his ſhyppynge in the moneth of September, and ſayled wyth a ſtronge wynde towarde a coūtrey callyd Hiſtria. But he was dryuen by force of wederynge betwene Venyſe and Aquilia or Aquilegia, and houyd there a ſeaſon, and coſted hyther and thyther / ſo that laſtely he was eſpyed and taken of the duke of Oſtrychys men.

Anno domini. M. C. xcb. Anno domini. M. C. xcbi.

wyllyam fyz Iſabell.

Balliui Anno ſexto.

wyllyam fyz Arnolde.

ABout the moneth of Octobre ꝑ. bi. yere of hys reygne / thys good kynge Rycharde was taken in fourme folowynge. As he lay thus as before is ſayde, betwene Venyce and Aquilegia a ſyſter of the duke of Oſtrych / one Meynart of Gorzeyn ruler of that countrey vnder the forſayde duke, made out certayne ſouldyours for to haue taken hym. But he by hys prouydence and manhode eſcapyd ꝑ ſayd Maynarde or Maynart / how be yt that ſome of hys knyghtes were there takyn.

Then kynge Rycharde paſſed ꝑ coūtrey ſecretly, tyll he came to a towne named Fryſake. In thys towne was then prouoſte or ruler a knyght called Frederyk de ſaynt Moom / ꝑ whyche alſo dyd hys deuoure to take the kynge, and toke. bi. of his knyghtes pryſoners / but hym ſelfe wyth the remenaunt of hys company eſcaped. Then the kynge ſeynge that he was in daunger of hys enymyes / drewe more into the way towarde Almayn. But thys was ſoone knowen of hys enymyes / ſo that by the meanes of one called Duke of Lymple and roſyn to the emperoure / all the wayes were cloſyd in ſuche wyſe, that in the ende kynge Rycharde was taken by the ſeruauntes of the ſayd duke, nere vnto a cytye or towne called Wenne or Weune, wythin the lande or terytory of the emperoure / and after brought vnto the ſayde duke Lymple, or after ſome to the duke of Oſtriche / ꝑ which ſpoyled hym of all ꝑ he hadde, and after caſte hym in pryſon,

and

and there ſtreyghtely kepte hym by the ſpace of a moneth/and at the monethes ende ſente hym vnto Henry the .vi. of that name, or after ſome wryters the .v. ſonne of the fyrſt Frederyke then emperour of Almayne/ the whyche helde hym in more vyle pryſon from that tyme tyll lent after and couenaunted wyth the duke of Oſtryche to haue the thyrde parte of the profyte that came of kynge Rycharde. About the ſonday of Palmys the emperour brought forth the kynge before the lordes of Almayne, there to gyue anſwere vnto ſuche thynges as ſhuld be layde vnto hym. where he came forth wyth ſo good a contenaunce, & alſo anſwered ſo dyſcretely and dyrectely to all maters layde vnto hys charge/ that the emperoure was not alonely bende to ſhewe to hym mercy, but alſo he dyd to hym honour and worſhyppe/ and helde hym at more libertye after that dape.

It is redde of thys Rycharde, that durynge the tyme of hys impryſonement he ſhuld ſle a lyon, and tere the harte oute of hys bodye, where thorough he ſhulde deſerue the name of Rycharde Cure de Lyon / and ỹ he ſhuld wyth a ſtroke of his fyſt ſle the emperours ſonne, and alſo deflowre the emperours doughter. But theſe are fablys ymagined by englyſh tale tellers, to auaunce theyr kynge Rycharde/as the Bryttons by theyr fayned tales auaunced theyr kynge Arture. In this paſſetyme wyllyam Longechamp byſhop of Ely, contynuynge his crudelyte and tyrannye wythin Englande/ was laſtely by ſtrength of the lordes put oute of the lande. Then he came to the kynge beynge pryſoner, & ſhewyd for hym ſelfe the beſte he coude. But when he ſaw he myght not begyle the kynge wyth his ſugryd wordes, he hadde ſmall truſte of the kynges fauour/ & returned into Fraunce, to tarye there the kynges commynge.

Thys yere Johñ the kynges brother by excitynge of the French kyng, when he harde of the takyng and impriſonynge of hys brother/begaan to make warre within ỹ lande/ & toke by ſtrength ỹ caſtelles of wyndeſour and of Notyngham & other. And the frenche kyng vpon his partye made ſtrong warre in Normãdy, as it is before ſhewed in the ſtory of the ſecond Phylyppe than kynge of Fraunce.

Anno domini .M. CC. lxxxvi.

Robert Beſaunt.

Ballitui

Anno domini .M. C. lxxxvii.

Anno .vii.

Jokell Joſne.

IN the .vii. yere of kynge Rycharde/ Hubert byſhoppe of Salyſbury, the whych hadde accompanyed the kynge in that voyage, and was ſente wyth the quene into Scycyll, retourned or came to the kyng where he was pryſoner. whom the kynge ſente ſoone after into Englande, to haue the guydynge therof, and alſo to treate wyth the lordes and commons of hys realme, howe he myght be ſette at lybertye.

It was not long after the cõmyng home of this Hubert, but the mũkes of the houſe of Criſtes chyrch of Cantorburye chaſe hym to the archebyſhoppes ſee/and hadde the palle, and was ſtallyd ſoone after. This was eaſy to the mũkes/how well ỹ ſharpnes of Baldwyne had ſomdeale greued theym. And though thys Baldwyne were a good man & holy in his

lyuynge/ yet one thyng he dyd to the derogacyon of the munkes of Caun terburye/for he purpolyd to put the p;erogatyue of the electyon of the archbilhoppe from the munkes. And becauſe therof, he beganne to buylde great houſes nere vnto the munkes chy;che, by fauour of the kynge Hen ry the ſeconde (but not wythout ſhe dynge of blood) and there entendyd to haue ſet in ſecular chanons with p;ebendys and ſuffraganes of byſ ſhoppes for to treate wyth the ſayde chanons of the fore ſayde electyon, & to put by the mũkes clerely. But the munkes when they ſawe they myght no lenger reſyſt Baldwyn, they then appealed to the pope Innocent the thy;de/ by whoſe cõmaundemẽt that wo;ke ceaſyd, and ſo ſtode vnfynyſ ſhed tyll the ſayde Baldwyne was dede. After whoſe deth the munkes made that wo;ke playne wyth the grounde. Treuiſa tranſlatoure of Polycronycon, ſayth yt was won der that Baldwyn wolde in that ma ner deale wyth the munkes/ conſyde ryng he was fyrſt archdeacon, & then white munke, and then abbot, & after byſhop of wo;ceter, and laſt archbyſ ſhoppe/ & to b;ynge men of mo;e im perfyte lyfe, into ỳ place of men mo;e perfyte, & to chaunge religyous men fo; ſeculer men. But yet the ſayde Treuiſa alloweth Baldwynes dede o; entent fo; good. Fo; he ſayth that Criſte was the hedde of holy chy;ch, and callid and made his apoſtles byſ ſhoppes/ but none of them was mun ke o; yet freere. wherfo;e Baldwyne dyd better to p;eferre the relygyon whyche Cryſte made, then the relyg gyon whyche was inſtytuted and o;deyned by man.

Anno domini. M. C. xcviii. Anno domini. M. C. xcviii.

Gerarde de Antiloche.

Ballitui Anno. viii.

Robert Duraunt.

IN the moneth of January, and. viii. yere of the regne of kynge Rycharde, when the ſayde Ry charde had ſuffe;yd harde p;yſone ment vppon the terme of a yere and thy;e monethes/ he was deliuered out of P;yſon fo; the ſumme of an hun d;ed thouſande pounde of ſterlynge money.

Fo; pledge wherof he lefte in the kepynge of the emperoure the byſ ſhoppes of Roan and of Bathe. But not fo; all/ fo; a great parte was pay cd o; the kynge were delyuery d. Fo; payment of whyche raunſom all the wolle of whyte munkes & chanons was taken and ſolde, & rynges and croſſes of p;elates, wyth veſſels and chalyces of all chy;ches thoro;ough ỳ land/ & ouer that. xx vii. ſhy;nes were ſcraped o; ſpoylyd of ỳ gold & ſyluer that vppon theym befo;e tyme was layd/ fo; no p;yuylege of holy chy;ch no; other perſone at that ſeaſon was ſparyd. Then kynge Rycharde came vnto Swyne in Flaũd;es, and taryed there two monethes/ other to abyde the wynde, o; elys to make p;oupſyon fo; thynges whych he ne ded. There the emperours men had almoſt taken him agayn. So the em perour fo;thought ỳ deliuery of king Rychard, as Pharao fo;thought the delyuery of the chyld;en of Iſrael.

Ornamẽ tes of the chy;che ſolde.

Then the kyng toke ſhippyng, and lãded in ỳ ende of Marche at Sand wyche/ & from thens came ſtreyght vnto Lõdon, where he was receyued wyth all ioye and honour. And when he had a ſeaſon reſted hym there/ he wyth a certayn nomber of knyghtes rode to Nothyngam, & wan ỳ caſtell

and

and after the castell of Tykhyll by force of armes, and set the wardeyns of theym in warde. And that done he called a counsayll of hys lordes at wyncheſter / where by authoryte of the sayd coũsayll, he deprpued Johñ hys brother then beynge in Fraunce of all honour / and toke from hym al suche landes as he before had gyuen to hym / & crowned hym soone after agayn kyng of England in the sayd cytye of wyncheſter. After the whych coronacyon he called a parlyament / by vertue wherof he resumpd all patẽtes and annuytees, fees and other grauntes before hys voyage by hym solde and graunted / and caused the partyes to be contentyd wyth such reuenous and profytes as they had receyued of the sayde offyces or landes in tyme of hys absence / and sparyd not any persone for any sufficience of wrytyng ẏ to hym before was made.

when kynge Rycharde hadde by these forsayd meanes gaderyd some money / he then in the moneth of July sayled into Fraunce, and besegyd a castell callyd Arques, and spedde there as wytneſſyth Polycronyca dyuersly. whyche worde dyuersly may well here be spoken. For who so redyth the frenche cronycle / he shall fynde that the Frenche kynge was victor. But and he rede the englyshe boke / than shall he fynde kynge Rycharde victour. wherfore me thynketh Ranulphe sayde well / when he sayde they spedde dyuersely. For yt is so dyuerse by the reporte of wryters, that the certayntie to whom the honoure shulde be gyuen is harde to be knowen. All be yt that in the countrey of Bloys, as wytneſſyth ẏ sayde frenche cronycle / kynge Rycharde scaryd the Frenche hoſte, and toke the kynges somer horse, wyth parte of hys treasour. But in shorte whyle after / a trewce was concludyd betwene these two kynges for a yere.

Then Johñ whyche hadde tourned to the Frenche kyng agayne his owne brother, seynge that the fame and honoure of hys brother, & feblenesse of his own power, made meanes to Elyanoure hys mother / by whose medyacyon he was recõcyled to hys brother the kynge, & after became hys trew knyght.

when the kynge and hys brother Johñ were thus agreed / they rode ouer the lande to vysyte ẏ countreys and se howe they were guyded by the offycers of the kynge. Amonge other two there were, whyche shewyd that they wolde do many thynges to the kynges profyte, the one was abbot of Cadonence wythin Normandye / and that other was named wyllyam wyth the longe berde. The abbot warned the kynge of the fraude of hys offycers / wherby he thought by the ponyshement of hys offycers, he shulde wynne great fauoure of the people. Then thys abbot gate a warrant of the kynge / and at London callyd dyuerse offycers before hym, for to yelde to hym theyr accompte. But he dyed shortly / so that hys purpose came to small effecte. And wyllyam wyth the longe berde shewyd to the kynge the outrage of the ryche men / whych as he sayd sparyd theyr owne and pyllyd the poore people.

It is sayd that this wyllyam was borne in London / & purchasyd that name by vse of hys berde. He was sharpe of wytte and somedeale lettred, a bold man of speche and sadde of countenaunce, and toke vppon hym greatter dedes then he coulde welde / and some he vsyd cruelly, as apperyth in appechynge of hys own brother of treason the whyche was a Burges of London, and to hym hadde shewed great kyndnesse in his youthe.

This willyam styred and excyted the cõmon people to desyre & loue fredoin and lybertye/and blamed the excesse and outrage of ryche men. By suche meanys he drew to hym many great companyes/and wyth all hys power defended the poore mennys cause agayne the ryche/and accused dyuers to the kynge, shewyng that by theyr meanys the kynge loste many forfaytes & escheatys. For this, gentylmen and men of honour malygned agayn hym. But he had such cõforte of the kynge, that he kepte on his purpose. Then the kynge beynge warned of the congregacyons that thys willyam made / commaũded hym to cease of such doynges, ỹ the people myght exercise theyr artes & occupacyõs/by reason wherof it was left for a while. But it was not long or the people folowed hym as they before that tyme had done. Then he made vnto them colacyons or exhortacyons/and toke for hys anteteme, *Haurietis aquas in gaudio de fontibus saluatoris.* That is to mean, ye shall drawe in ioye waters of the wellis of our saupour. And to this he added, I am sayde he the saupour of poore men: ye be poore, and haue assayed ỹ harde handes of riche men. Now draw ye therfore holefull water of lore of my wellys, & that wyth ioy/ for the tyme of your vysytacyon is comen. I shall (sayde he) departe waters from waters / by waters I vnderstande the people. Then shall I departe the people whych is good and meke, from the people that ys wycked and prowde/and I shall dyscerne the good and the vile, as the lyght is departed from ỹ darkenes. when thys came to the knowlege of the archebyshoppe of Caunterbury/ he by counsayll of the lordes of the spyrytualty sent vnto this willyam/ commaundynge hym to appere before the lordes of the kynges counsayll, to answere vnto suche maters as there shulde be layde vnto hym. It whyche daye thys willyam appered, haupng wyth hym a multytude of people, in so myche that the lordes were of hym adrad. For the whyche cause they temptyd hym wyth plesaunt wordes for ỹ time/ & commaundyd certayne persones in secrete maner to espye when he were doyde of hys company, and then to take hym, and to put hym in sure kepyng. The whyche accordynge to the commaundement at tyme conuenyent as they thought sette vpon hym and to haue taken hym. But he wyth an axe resysted theym and slewe one of theym/ and after fled to sayne Mary Bowe chyrche of Chepe, and toke that for his sauegarde / defendynge hym by strength and not by the suffrages of the chyrche, for to hym drew shortlep great multytude of people. But in shorte processe by meane of the heddys and rulers of the cytye the people mynysshed/ so ỹ in shorte tyme he was lefte wyth few persones, & after by fyre cõpellyd to forsake the chyrch and so was taken, but not wythoute shedynge of blood. After whyche takynge he was areygned before the iudges/& there wyth-in. of his adherẽtes caste and iudged to dye, & was hanged & they wyth hym the day folowynge. But yet the rumour ceased not/for ỹ cõmon people reysed a great cryme vpon the archbyshop of Caunterbury & other/ and sayd ỹ by theyr meanes willyam, whych was an innocẽt of such crymes as were obiecte & put agayne hym, & was a defendor of the poore people agayn extorcyoners & wronge doers, was by theym put wrongfully to deth/ approuyng hym an holy mã & martyr by this tale folowyng/sayeng ỹ a man beyng syke of the feuers, was cured by vertue of a chayn whych this willyam was

bounde

bounde wythin tyme of his dures of imprysonement/ which by a preste of the allye of the sayde wyllyam was openly declared & preached. wherby he brought the people in suche an errour, that they gaue credence to hys wordes/& secretly in the nyght cõuey ed away the iebet that he was hãged vppon, & scraped away ỹ blood that was shed of him when he was taken or ellys when he was hedded & quartered, so ỹ they made there an holow place by fetchyng away of that erth/ and sayde ỹ syke men & women were cured of dyuerse sykenesse by vertue of that blood & erth. By these meanes and blowynge of fame/ ỹ place was the more vysyted by women & vndyscrete psones, of the whych some watched there the hole nyght in prayer/ so that the lenger thys cõtynued, the more dysclaunder was anoyd to the iustyces, and to suche as put hym to deth. Not withstandyng in processe of tyme, when hys actes were publyshed, as the sleynge of a man wyth hys owne hande, and vsynge of hys concubyne wythin sayncte Mary chyrche in tyme of hys there beynge, as he openly cõfessed in the houre of hys dethe, wyth other detestable crymes: somwhat keled the great flame of the hasty pilgrymage. But not clerely / tyll the archebyshoppe of Cãterbury accursed ỹ preste ỹ broughte vp the fyrste fable / and also causyd that place to be watched, that suche idolatry shuld there no more be vsed

Anno domini. M. C. xcviii. Anno domini. M. C. xcix.

Roger Blount.

Balliui Anno .ix.

Nycholas Duke.

IN the moneth of Aprill and ix. yere of kynge Rycharde, when he had prouided to sende forth xx. thousand poũde to the emperour, for full payment of hys raunsome/ the pledges whyche had lyen for the same, came sodeynly into England/ and shewed vnto the kyng that after his departynge, the emperour sente them vnto the duke of Ostrych, to remayne with him tyll the money were payde. And forther there they shewed that the sayd duke was accursed of ỹ pope ỹ then was Innocent ỹ thyrde, by reason of his wronge done to the kynge/ & that his prouynce was greuyd wyth many myscheues. And as the duke rode forth on a daye in hys disport beyng sayncte Stephans day, he hurte his foote in such wyse wyth a thorne or other venym/ whyche rancled & grewe so sore, ỹ lastly he shuld dye or cutte yt of. But in hope of recouery he contynued tyll in the ende he was warned that he shulde dye. Then he sent for his byshoppes, and aryd to be assoyled of the sentence of the chyrche whyche he stode in. The whyche was denyed hym/ excepte he wolde swere to stande and abyde the ordynaũce and dome of holy chyrch, touchynge the wronge that he hadde done to kynge Rycharde. The duke swore, and was assoyled/ and shortly after the two byshoppes pledgys for ỹ money were delyuerred at theyr lybertye. Then kynge Rycharde callyng to mynde that the vttermost daye of the trewes take betwene hym and the Frenche kynge approched/ made hym redy and sayled into Normandye. where before his commyng the Frenche kynge by occasyon of the Normannis as sayth the frenche boke, was entred the cõtrey of Burgys/ towarde whom kyng Rycharde

sped hym wyth all possyble spede/ so that both hostes laye partyd wyth a ryuer called Olon or Ollyne.

Then to folowe the sayenge of the frenche boke, for so myche as the englyshe cronycle spekyth lytle or nothynge of thys acte/ lette wyse men that here thys cronycle, construew yt after theyr dyscrecyons. For all be yt the Frencheman wrote yt to the honour of Frenchmen/yet to other that shall rede or here yt, because yt soundyth so nere vntrouth, yt shal rather redounde vnto theyr dyshonour. For the frenche cronicle sayth, that these two hostes thus as aboue is sayde lyenge to gyther wythout skyrmyshe or assaute/ kynge Rycharde contrary the opinyon and mynde of hys lordes, wyth a few accompanyed and vnharnayled, shuld come to ỹ Frẽche kynges tente/ and there in presence of hys lordes shulde do homage to the frenche kynge for the duchye of Normandye and cotiteys of Angeou and of Poytyers, and there swore to the kynge to kepe peace duryng his lyfe/ and after. viii. dayes met agayn and fynyshed the sayde peace, wyth assuryd othe vppon eyther partye/ and after departed as frendes eyther returnyng into theyr owne countrey. But yt semed a feynte peace. For within foure monethes or lesse folowynge/ kynge Rycharde wyth hys hoste entred the prouynce of Berry/ and layd syege to the castell of Wyersoune, and gate yt by strength/ and after rode to the castell of Norycourte/ the whyche was delyuerd to hym by appoyntement.

When kyng Philyppe harde of the wynnynge and ouerthrowe of the castell of Wyersoun/ he in damagynge of kynge Rychard layde syege to the castell of Iubeuyle, and yt assayled egerly. But yt was so stronge and so well defendyd by the Normannys, that the Frenche kynge was holden of. when kynge Rycharde had garnyshed and fortyfyed the castell of Norycourte wyth all thynge necessarye to the warre/ he drewe hym towarde Iubeuyle to remoue kynge Philyppe from that syege, and fell vppon the Frenche men vnwarely. But the Frenchemen quyt theym so knyghtly, that they chaced kyng Rycharde and hys people/ and toke a Norman knyghte named Guy de Thonars a man of great hardynes. And then kynge Philyppe returned to the castel and towne of Iubeuyle/ and assauted it more sharpely, so that in the ende ỹ souldyours of the town yeldyd yt wyth the castell for a certayne summe of money. And when he hadde possessyon of the towne/ he threw downe the castell playne wyth the ground, and after strengthed the towne wyth Frenche men/ and then rode to the castell of Gyssours/ and from thẽs resorted to the forenamed castell of Norycourte, and assayled yt in so cruell maner, that shortely he wanne yt/ and toke therin. xv. knyghtes and. xxiiii. yemen, wyth plente of vytayll and armour. In thys tyme and season kynge Richarde gadered newe strength, and allyed hym wyth Baldwyn erle of Flaūdres and with Renolde erle of Dampmartyn and of Boleyne. By whose meanes as wytnessyth the frenche boke, kynge Rychard wasted sore the countrey of Fraunce/ and brent therin some townes and vyllages, and toke therein many ryche prayes.

Anno domini. M.C. xcii. Anno domini. M.CC.

Constantyne fyrs Arnolde.

Ballitui Anno .x.

Robert le Beawe.

ABout the begynnynge of the moneth of October, and.x. yere of Rycharde / the sayde Rycharde entryd the countrey of Unequeryne wyth a stronge hoste / and made therin cruell warre, in destroyenge of the countrey / and assauted the castell of Gysours / and threwe to grounde a stronge holde called Courcellys, and brent there about many vyllages. wherwyth kynge Phylyppe was so greuously amoupd / ꝑ wyth a small noumber of knyghtes he percyd the hoste of Englyshemen, and entryd the castell or towne of Gysours. But of his men were taken a certayn nōber / as Jlayne de Rully, Mathewe de Melly, Guyllyam de Mello, and many other. wyth the whyche prysoners and many riche prayes, kyng Richarde then departed, leuynge the Frenche kynge wythin Gysours.

It was not longe after that kynge Rycharde was thus departed / but that kyng Phylyp callyng to mynde the great losse and dishonour that he had receyued by that warre of kynge Rycharde, assembled a great army, and entred the duchy of Normandy / and wasted the coūtrey from Nuelbourth to Beawmōt le Rogyer. And that done he returned into Fraunce / and lycēcyd hys knyghtes to go eche man into hys owne countrey.

When kynge Phylyppe hadde thus fynyshed hys warre in Normandye / kynge Rycharde then wyth hys armye entred the forenamed countrey of Unequeryn, and also Beawuoysyn / and toke wythin theym as he before had done ryche & many prayes / and with theym departed. whom the byshop of Beawuays beyng a good knyghte and hardy of his handes, wyth a companye of knyghtes, and other / folowyd to haue rescowyd the prysoners that kynge Rycharde had taken. But they were taken / and a certayne of hys company slayne.

Then the erle of Flaundres by the ayde of the Englyshe men, toke the towne of saynt Omer from ꝑ Frēche men.

In this season Innocent the Pope before named, sente a legate into Fraunce named Peter de Capys, to reformme the warre betwene the two prynces. The whyche at that tyme was in such dyssoynte that he coulde not bryng yt to any frame / and specyally as sayth the Frenche boke, because kynge Richarde wolde not delyuer hostages & gagys as ꝑ Frēche kynge wolde.

Then kynge Rycharde after Crystmas besyeged a castel nere vnto Lymogys. Thys castell in ꝑ Frēche cronycle is called Chalons / & in the englyshe boke yt is named Gayllarde. The cause of this syege as sayth most wryters, was for certayne ryche treasour founden wythin the lordshyppe or sygnyory of kynge Rycharde / the whyche one wydomer vycounte of Lemonke hadde founden and wyth helde from kynge Rycharde / and for hys sauegarde fledde vnto the forenamed castell / and defendyd yt manfully from the fyrste weke of lent, tyll the.vi. daye of Aprylll. Uppon the whyche daye kynge Rycharde walkynge vnwysely about the castell to espye the feblenes therof / one named Bertrāde Guedon markyd the kynge and wounded him in the hedde, or after some wryters, in ꝑ arme with a venemous quarell. After which woūde receyued by the kynge, he commaunded sharpe assaute to be made / in the whyche assaute the castell was won. Then he made enquery who yt was that so had wounded him / the which was brought vnto the kynges presence, and named hym self as aboue is sayde, or after some wryters Peter Basyle. Then the kynge demaūded

of hym why he shuld so lye in a wayte to hurte hym, rather then any of his felowys. For thou slew my father & my bretherne sayde he / wherfore I entendyd to auenge theyr deth, what someurr became of me. Then ỳ kyng forgaue hym his offence and sufferyd him to go at lyberte. And the other of ỳ soudyours taken in that castell, the kynge commaunded to be hanged.

But Polycronycon sayth, that after kynge Richarde was dede / the duke of Braban whych then was present, caused the sayde Bartrande to be taken and slayne quycke and after hanged. Then kynge Richarde dyed the .iii. daye after, that is to say, the xi. daye of Aprill / and was buryed at Fount Ebrard at the fete of hys father. Howe be yt some wryters say that his harte was buryed at Roan, his body as before is sayde, and hys bowelys at Carleyll in Englande / when he hadde reygned .xi. yeres .ix. monethes and odde dayes, leuynge after hym none yssue. Of thys Richarde a metrycyan made these versys folowynge.

Christe, tui calcis prædo sit præda caducis
Ere breui reiecis, qui tollit æra crucis.
Viscera Carleolum, corpus fons seruat Ebardi.
Et cor Rothamagũ magne Richarde tuum
In terra dimittur, vnus quia plus fuit vno.
Non superest vno gratia tanta viro.

The which versys may be englysshyd as folowyth.

Cryste, of the theefe whyche on the ryght hande was,
And aryd mercy, to vs thou made a praye /
That we lyke wyse shulde for our trespasse,
Are of the mercy and shewe no delay,
Nor for erthly thynges caste our selfe away.
For who of thy crosse accompteth lyte tell store /
The mercyte of thy passyon he lovyth euermore.

Thys mankull knyghte thys prynce dyctorpouse,
whyche toke thy crosse on hym wyth greate payne /
He folowed the theefe and aryd mercy thus.
For hys offence he warred thy foes agayne /
And shadde theyr blood on hyll and eke on playne.
And all for loue good lorde he hadde to the.
wherfore swyte Jesu on hym thou haue pytye.

Of whom the bowellys at Carleyll / and the trunke
At fount Ebrarde full rychely ys dyght.
The harte at Roan into the erthe ys sunke
Of the worthy Richarde. And so in thre is twyght,
That more than one whylom was in myght.
In erthe is separate that lyuynge more then one
was, and of grace founde lyke to hym none.



Ohñ brother of ỳ aboue named Richarde, a pongeste son of Henry the secondc / was ordeyned or proclamed kyng of England, the tenth day of Aprill in the begynnynge of the yere of our lorde .M. hundred. lxxx.ix. / and the .xx. yere of the seconde Phylyppe then kynge of Fraunce. Thys Johñ at the daye of his brothers deth was in Normandy / where at Chynon as soon as his brother Richarde was dyseasyd, he possessyd

poſſeſſyd hym of hys bzothers treaſour/ and ſent Hubert archbyſhoppe of Caunterbury into Englande, to make pzouiſyon foz his cozonacyon. And vppon Eſter daye folowyng he was gyrde with the ſwozde of the duchy of Bzytayne/ & layed ſoon after into Englād. where he was crowned kynge at weſtmynſter vppon holy thurſday next folowynge of the foꝛenamed Hubert. After whyche ſolemnitye done/ he oꝛdeyned the ſame Hubert chaunceller of Englande.

In thys whyle the Frenche kynge helde a counſayll at Cenomannia in Curon / where to the derogacyon of kynge Johñ, Arture the ſon of Gefrey Plantagenet and neuewe to the ſayde Johñ, was made duke of Bzytayne. whyche incontynently after wyth a great army entryd the countrey of Angeou, and toke poſſeſſyon therof. And kynge Phylyppe wyth hys people entryd the duchy of Nozmandy, and layde ſyege to the cytye of Eurour / and wanne yt, wyth all the ſtronge holdes there about/ and ſtuffyd theym wyth vytayll, & ſtrengthed them with his owne knyghtes/ and that done waſted & ſpoyled the countrey tyll he came to the cytye of Meaus. wherr met wyth hym the foꝛenamed Arture/ & dyd to hym homage foꝛ the countrey of Angiers.

In the moneth of May, Elyanour ſomtyme wyfe of Henry the ſeconde, and mother to kyng Rycharde, came into Fraunce/ and ſo to the kynge to Meaus foꝛeſayde, and made to hym homage foꝛ the coũtrey of Poytiers, as her enheritaunce. And ſoone after the kinge retourned into Fraũce/ and the duke of Bzitayne wyth hym whyche as yet was within age.

Kynge Johñ heryng of this warre in Nozmandy, and loſſe of the countreys aboue named/ aſſembled a coũſayll and arid ayde of his lozdes and cõmons, to wynneagayne ỹ foꝛeſayd landes/ & had it graunted after ſome wzyters .iii. s. of euery plough land thozough Englande, beſyde ỹ ſubſydy of ỹ ſpyzytuall landes. And when he hadde made redy foꝛ that belonged to hys voyage/ he about herueſt layled into Nozmandy/ where he taryed tyll Octobzre folowynge, ſpendynge the tyme to hys loſſe and dyſhonoure.

Anno domini. M. CC. Anno domini. M. CC i.

Arnolde fyz Arnolde.

Balliui

Anno pzimo

Rycharde fyz Darry.

After Mychelmas in the moneth of October, and fyrſte yere of the reygne of kynge Johñ/ a trewce oꝛ peace was concluded betwene the two kynges of Englande and of Fraunce, from that daye tyll mydſomer nexte folowynge / and in lyke wyſe betwene the French kyng, and Baldwyne erle of Flaundzes. And thys yere was made a deuozce betwene kynge Johñ and hys wyfe the erle of Glocetyrs doughter, because of nereneſſe of bloode. And after was he maryed vnto Iſabell the doughter of the erle of Engolesym in Fraunce, and had by her two ſonnys Henry and Rychard, and. iii. doughters Iſabell, Elyanoure, and Jane.

Thys yere dyed at London bleſſyd Hugh byſhop of Lyncolñ/ and was conueyed to his owne chyrch & there enterryd. Foꝛ whom god hath ſhewyd many myracles, ſo that at thys

daye

he ys authoryſed by the chyrche for a ſaynte. At mydlent after, kyng Johñ ſayled agayne into Normandy. And after Eſter he mette with kynge Phylyppe betwene Vernon and the yle Andeley / where the peace betwene both realmes was ſtablyſhed and cõfermed for terme of theyr two lyues / and the landes deuyded betwene the two kynges, as eyther of them ſhuld holde theym contentyd for theyr lyues after. And in ſhorte tyme after, Lewys the eldeſt ſon of kynge Phylyppe, maryed dame Blanch doughter to Alphons kynge of Caſtylle, and neuewe to kynge Johñ. To the whyche Lewys / kyng Johñ for loue of that woman ſhewyd to hym great bountye / and gaue vnto her many ryche gyftes.

In the moneth of July folowyng kyng Johñ rode into Fraũce, where he was receyued of the Frẽche kynge wyth myche honour / and ſo cõueyd into ſaynte Denys, where he was receyued wyth proceſſyon. And vppon the morow the Frenche kyng accompanyed hym vnto Parys / where he was receyued of the cyteȝens wyth great reuerẽce / and preſentyd by the prouoſte of the towne in name of the hole cytye wyth ryche preſentis. And there kynge Phylyppe feſtyd hym in hys owne paleys / & gaue vnto hym and hys lordes and ſeruauntes many ryche gyftes / and after conueyd hym forth of that cytye, and toke leue of hym in moſte louynge wyſe. And when kynge Johñ hadde ſpedde his maters in Normandy / he then returned into Englande.

Anno domini. M. CC i.

Anno domini. M. CC ij.

Roger Deſert.

Balliui

Anno ſecun.

James hyȝ Barth.

IN ỹ moneth of december and ſeconde yere of kynge Johñ / Ranulphe erle of Cheſtre by the example afore ſhewed by kynge Johñ, lefte hys owne wyfe named Conſtaũce and counteſſe of Bȝytayne, whych before he had maried by counſayll of kynge Henry the ſeconde / & wedded one Clemens. One cronycle ſayth he dyd ſo, becauſe he wolde haue yſſue. But the ſayd authour ſayth that after hys opynyon, he dyſpleaſed god ſo greatly that god wolde ſuffer hym to haue nony yſſue / but the rather for that dede dyed wythout.

About thys tyme after opynyon of moſte wrȝters / the people of nacyon callyd Tartares beganne theyr domynyon. Theſe men dwellyd vnder the hyllys of Inde, ỹ belonged to prieſter Johñ / & chaſe of them ſelf a captayn of low byrth called Dauid / & ſo wyth wyues and chyldren paſſed the next countreys wyth robbynge and ſpoylyng, and grew ſhortly in great ſtrength / and after ſubdued the partes & many other byeyne countreys / and grewe laſtely vnto great dompnyon and lordſhyppe in the eeſt partes of the worlde / ſo that lately theyr prynce or ſouerayne ys called the great Cahan.

In this yere as wytneſſyth Polycronycon, the kynge of Scottys dyd homage to kynge Johñ at Lyncolñ, and ſware vpon the croſſe of Hubert archbiſhoppe of Caunterbury, in the preſence of a legate of Rome & .xiij. byſhoppes, to be trew lyege man to hym and to hys heyres kynges.

And in this yere one Eſtate called abbot of Flay, came into Englande / and

and amonge other myracles by hym shewyd, he blessed a well beside the towne of wye in kent / so ꝑ men and women drynkyng of that water were curyd of dyuerse maladyes. But last ly he displeasyd so the bysshoppes of England, ꝑ he was glade to leue the lande, & after sayled into Normandy

Anno domini.M.CC.ii. Anno domini.M.CC.iii.

Arnolde.

Balliui Anno. iii.

Rycharde

About the moneth of December, in ꝑ thyrd yere of Johns reygn in the prouynce of yorke, were seme.v.moonys. One in the East, the seconde in the weste, the thyrd in the North, ꝑ fourth in the South, and the fyfte as it were set in the myddes of the other / and yode. vi. tymes in compassynge the other, as yt were by the space of an howre/and vanyshed away soone after. Thys yere in the moneth of February/ kynge Phylyp callyd a parliamẽt at Uerdon/where yt was amonge other maters concluded, that kynge Johñ as hys lyege man shulde appere at his parlyamẽt holdẽ at Paris wythin .xv. dayes of Easter next folowynge. But for so myche as kynge Johñ nor none for hym apperyd to shewe some lawfull impedymẽt/ the Frenche kynge ther fore entryd the duchy of Normandy, and toke the castellys of Bounte, of Gentelyne, and Gurnay / and sealed into hys handes all suche landes as Hugh de Gurnay held, & gaue them vnto Arture forelayde duke of Bry tayne. And more ouer he gaue to the said Arture ꝑ coũtye of Angeou, with two hundred prysoners, and a certayne of money to defende the sayde countrey agayn kynge Johñ.

When kynge Johñ had vnderstandynge of all the cruell dealynge of kynge Phylyppe / he callyd a counsayll and there asked ayde, and was graunted a new ayde to wythstande the Frenche kynges malyce. And about Lammasse after, the kyng with a fayre cõpany sayled into Normandye/and so spedde hym into the countrey of Angeou, for so myche as he was enfourmed that Arture hys neuew and duke of Brytayne warryd wythin the same / and toke hym prysoner with certayne other knyghtes, as syr Hugh le Bruns, syr Godfrey de Losyngham, wyth dyuerse other. At whych tyme kynge Phylyppe lay at the syege of the castell of Arques/ and herynge of thys dysconfyture, brake vp hys syege to the entent to haue rescowyd the sayde duke. But when he was warned that he shulde come to shorte/he then chaunged his purpose and went vnto the cytye of Towrys, and wanne yt by strength. And after for that wynter drew nere, he returned into Fraunce. In which season also kynge Johñ retourned wyth his prysoners into Englande.

In this yere by counsayll of the burgeysys of the cytye of London / were chosen. xxv. of the moste substancyall and wyseste myn / whyche after some were called the counsayll of the cytye. Of the whych yerely the bailyuys were chosen/ and after the mayre and shyryues were taken of the same nombre.

Anno domini.M.CC.iii. Anno domini.M.CC.iiii.

Balliui Norman Blondell Anno.iiii.

Johñ of Ely.

IN thys fourthe yere of kynge Johñ, were sene many wonderfull tokens. For ouer the wynter, the whyche passyd in length and hardenesse many yeres before gone/ wonderfull wederynge, as of excedynge lyghtenynges, thunders, and other stormes of wynde and rayne apperyd/ and therwyth hayle of the bygnesse of hennes egges, the whyche perished frute and corne/ besydes other hurtes and harmes done vppon houses and yong catell goynge abrode. Also spyrites were sene in the ayer in lykenesse of foulys, berynge fyre in theyr byles/ the whych sette on fyre dyuerse houses. And soone there after dyed Hubert archbyshop of Caunterbury. In whose place was chosen cõtrarye to the mynde of ỳ kynge, by the more partye of the couent of Cañterburye, mayster Stephan Langton. All be yt some there were that accordynge to the kynges pleasure, named the byshoppe of Norwyche, and some other. For thys electyon the kynge was greuously amouyd agayne the munkes/ and wolde in no wyse alowe or admyt theyr electyon. wherfore they sent theyr electyon vnto pope Innocynt the thyrde/ ỳ whyche admytted the sayde mayster Stephan and refused the other, and sacrid hym at Vyterb a citye of Italy/ and sent hym after with letters of comendacyon vnto kyng Johñ to take the possessyon and frutes of his benefyce. Kynge Johñ wyth thys was sore amouyd/ in so myche ỳ he warned hym his lande and dyuers of the munkes of Caunterbury that fauored hys cause.

Aboute Ester kynge Johñ sayled into Normandye/ for the Frenche kynge had recommencyd his warre in the countye of Guyan, and wanne therin dayly dyuerse stronge holdes and castellys/ and allyed wyth hym the erle of Alenson/ and hadde great ayd of the Portuyns and Bretons. And when he had brought that countrey vnder his subiectyon/ he then returned by Normandye and wanne Conket, the vale of Ruell, and the yle of Judeley. In this season the forenamed pope sente the abbot of Casmer into Fraunce, to reforme these two prynces. with whome was also accompanyed the abbot of Cressons/ the whyche endeuored theym so, that they were nere agreed of a peace. But for they wolde that the Frenche kynge shulde repayre and amende suche houses of relygyon, as he had hurte & ouerthrowen in Guyan and other places belongynge to the crowne of Englande/ therfore he forsoke the peace/ not withstandyng that kynge Johñ in lyke wyse shuld haue repayred all lyke houses apperteynynge vnto ỳ crowne of Fraunce.

Then the Frenche kynge in the ende of Auguste layde syege to the castell of Raydepount/ & assauted yt by the terme of.xv.dayes contynually. But the soudyours wythin defendyd yt so mankully, that they slewe many of theyr enymyes/ so ỳ kynge Phylyppe was fayne to gyue backe, tyll he hadde deuysed newe engynes after the warre fassyon. By reason wherof he lastely wanne the sayde castell/ and toke there.xx. knyghtes, and an hundred and. vii. yomen and other, and.xxi. arblasters. And when he hadde fortefyed that castell wyth Frenche men/ he then yode to the castell of Gaylarde, and layde hys ordynaunce to that, as he hadde done to that other. But he laye there a moneth or he myghte do to yt any hurte or harme. In all whych season kyng Johñ warryd vppon the Borderers of Fraunce/ but of hys dyctorres I fynde lytle writen.

Anno domini. M.CC.xiiii. Anno domini. M.CC.v.

Balliui. water Bzowne.

Anno.v.

wyllyam Chaumberleyn.

IN this yere, that is to saye the .v. yere of kynge Johñ/ by reason of the vnreasonable wederynge, that in the last yere fell/ whete was solde for.xv.s. a quarter.

Kyng Johñ in the somer folowyng maryed hys bastarde doughter vnto Lewelin pzice of walys/ & gaue with her the castell and lozshippe of Elyngesmere, beynge in the marches of South walys.

In Mozgans land in walys soon after a knyght apered after his deth to one callid master Mozis/ to whom by hys lyues tyme he hadde ben specyall louer and frende. The whyche knyght by his dayes was well letteryd/ and vsyd for hys recreacyon to make versys wyth this mayster Mozys, so that the one shulde begynne the metyr and the other shulde ende yt. At whyche tyme of his apperaūce the knyght sayde to mayster Mozis, mayster Mozys I woll ꝑ thou ende thys verse, Destruet hoc regnum rex regum. Nay sayd mayster Mozis, ende thou yt / for thou hast all moste made the hole thy selfe. Then sayd the knyght for that I se now thou arte olde and slow, I wyll ende yt my self.

Destruet hoc regnum, rex regum duplici plaga.

The whyche verse maye be engly-
shed as folowyth.

The kynge of kynges that lozde that ruleth all,
And in whose power all thynges is conteyned/
Thys realme for synne he destroye shall
wyth dowble plage, be therof ascertayned/
Excepte the people here after be refrayned
From synne, and them to vertuous lyfe alye,
And vyce before vsyd vtterly renye.

Thys yere the pope sente letters of recommendacyon vnto kynge Johan / shewynge that he hadde fauorablye harde hys pzoctours for all suche maters as they hadde layde agayne the archebyshoppe of Caunterburye and some of hys munkys, that he shulde not of ryght be admyttyd to that see.

But for the sayde maters of obiectyon were by hym and hys courte thoughte insufficyent / he therefore erected and wyllyd hym to accepte the sayde archebyshoppyc to hys grace, and suffre hym to enioye the frutes of hys benefyce / and the munkes by hym cryled, to retourne vnto theyr pzoper abbay.

But the more hys lozdes and frendes aduysed hym to folowe the popes mynde, the more was he moued to the contrarye/ in suche maner

cc that

that the popes messengers returned wythoute spede of theyr message.

yet haue ye harde before, how the Frenche kynge laye about the castell of Gayllarde/and myght not wynne yt by the space of a moneth. wherfore he after sente for newe ordynaunce, and assayled yt so fyersly, that wythin .xx. dayes after he wanne the sayd castell, to the great losse of men on partyes / and toke prysoners there wythin .xxxvi. knyghtes, besyde the other nomber of yomen and arblasters/ and that done sealyd the countrey there about, and strengthed the sayde castell wyth hys owne men/ and then wyth great pryde returned into Fraunce.

Anno domini. M.CC.v. Anno domini. M.CC.vi.

Thomas Haueryll.

Ballitui. Anno .vi.

Hamonde Bronde.

ABout that season after Mychelmas, in the vi. yere of the reygn of kyng Johñ/ came downe a streyght commaundement from the pope, that excepte the kynge wolde peasybly suffer the archbyshoppe of Caunterbury to occupy hys see, and the munkes theyr abbay, that ỹ land shulde be enterdyted / chargynge these foure bishoppes folowyng, that is to saye wyllyam then byshoppe of London, Eustace byshoppe of Ely, walter byshoppe of wynchester, and Gylys byshoppe of Herforde, to denounce the kynge and his lande accursyd, yf he ỹ cumaundement dysobeyed. Then these foure byshops wyth other to thẽ assocyate/made instaunte labour to the kynge, for the obseruynge of the popes commaundement, and to exchewe the sensours of the chyrche. But all was in vayne. wherefore the .iiii. sayde byssshoppes accordyng to the popes wyll tynge to them sent/the morow folowynge our ladye day annũcyacyon, or the. xxvi. daye of Marche, denouncyd kynge Johñ wyth his realme of Englande accursyd / and shyt faste the dores of the chyrches and other places where dyuyne seruyce before was vsyd, fyrste in London, and after in all placys as they wente thorough the lande. The kyng for thys dede was so amouyd wyth the sayde foure byshoppes, that he sealed all the temporalties to them belongyng into hys handes / and put theym in such fere, that they forsoke this land, and sayled to the archbyshop of Cãterburye.

In thys yere at Orforde in Suff. was taken a fyshe in ỹ see of forme lyke to a man/and was kepte. vi. monethes after vpon lande wyth rawe flesshe and fyshe / and after for they coude haue no speche of yt, they caste yt into the see agayne.

Anno domini. M.CC.vi. Anno domini. M.CC.vii.

Johñ walgraue.

Ballitui. Anno. vii.

Rycharde of wyncheſter.

IN the moneth of nouẽber and vii. yere of the kynge/ one named Hugh Oysell for treason at London was drawen and hanged. And thys yere in ỹ moneth of May, the French kynge entryd into Normandy wyth a stronge

a strõge power/ and wanne there the castellys of Faloys, and Dalyeunt or Dankfrount and after sealyd all the landes to the sayde castell belongynge, and so tyll he came to a place called sayncte Mychaell in the parell of the see.

when the Normannes sawe that kynge Phylyppe thus subdued the stronge holdes of Normandye, and that kynge Johñ to the countrarye made no defence/ ỳ capytayns of Cõstaunce, of Bayour or Bayon, of Lyseur, of Intreuches, and Enrout yelded them all to the French kyng, and became hys lyege men/ so that he was in possessyon of the substaũce of the duchye of Normandye, excepte Roan and other few castellys.

Then kynge Phylyppe seynge these stronge holdes thus yeldyd vn to hym/ layed hys syege to the cyty of Roan. where after he hadde lyen a seasõn/ the capytayne of the towne desyred a respyte of .xxx. days, gyuynge pledges and hostages, that yf the cytye were not by kynge Johñ or hys assygnes reskwyd wyth in the forsayde terme, they wolde yelde the cytye vnto the French kynge. And in lyke wyse was appoyntement taken for the castellys named Arquys and Vernoyll. In whyche tyme for that no socoure came/ both cytye and castellys were delyuerid into the frenche kynges handes. And thus hadde thys seconde Phylyppe the possessyon of Normandye/ whyche no frenche kynge hadde sen the tyme of Charlys the symple, whyche gaue the same duchye to Rollo leder of the Normannys, wyth Gylla hys doughter in marryge/ synne the whyche tyme hadde passed ouer iii. hundred yeres.

when the frenche kynge had thus brought into his subiccyon ỳ duchye of Normandye/ he then about sayncte Laurence tyde yode into the countye of Guyan, and wanne there the cytye of Poytyers, wyth all the castellys and townes to the sayde cytye belongynge. and when he hadde sette that countrey in an order and rule/ he spedde hym into Fraunce wyth great pompe and glory.

It ys affermed of some authours, that the frenche kynge made thys warre vppon kynge Johñ by excytynge of the pope, for hys contumacye agane the chyrche.

In thys yere also was a communycacyon of a peace to be hadde betwene kynge Johñ and the archebyshope of Caunterbury/ and was dryuen to a nere poynte of accorde, except restitucyon that kynge Johñ shulde haue made to the archebyshop and other bishoppes, the which his officers hadde taken in the tyme of theyr absence. To the whych restytucyon kynge Johñ in no wyse wold be agreable/ wherfore the sayd communycacyon toke none affecte. After thys communycacyon/ kynge Johñ was so frette wyth malyce, that in a fury he let proclayme in sondry placys of hys realme, that all suche personys as hadde landes and possessyons wythin Englande spyrytuall or temporall, that they shulde returne into Englande by Mychelmas next folowynge/ or elys to be clerely excludyd from all suche landes. And ouer that strcyght commaundement was gyuen to euerych officer in his countrey, to make besye serche, yf any wrytynges were broughte from the courte of Rome, to any prelate of thys realme/ and yf any suche were founden, to bryngc hym and his wrytynges to the kynges presence. And more ouer that they shuld sease to the kynges vse, all suche landes as to any person were gyuen by the sayde archbyshoppe or by the pryour

of Caunterbury, syn the tyme of elec cyon of the sayd archebyshoppe/and the woodes of the same to be kellyd and solde in all haste.

Anno domini.M.CC. viii. Anno domini. M.CC.viii

Roger wyncheſter.

Balliui. Anno .viii.

Edmunde hardell.

UPpon the fyrſte daye of the moneth of October, and. viii. yere of ỹ reygne of the kyng/his fyrſt ſonne Henry by name was borne of dame Iſabell his ſecond wyfe in the cytye of wyncheſter. And thys yere rebellyd the Iryſhemē, and dyd myche harme in that countrey. whych rebellyon after ſome wryters was, for ſo myche as the kynge wolde haue leuyed of thē greuous taſkys to haue made warre wyth vppon the French kynge. But at lengthe they greuyd or dyſpleaſyd the kyng in ſuch wyſe, that he was fayne to ſette a taſke thorough hys land to oppreſſe theyr ma lyce. And ouer that he aſked of the whyte munkes of England. vi. thouſande marke. But they excuſed them by theyr generall hedde / ſo that the kynge toke wyth theym great dyſpleaſure. By reaſon wherof after his retourne oute of Irlande, he beryd theym ſore/ and gatheryd of theym more then before he hadde deſyred/ and cauſed ſome abbottys to forſake theyr houſes.

Then he wyth a puyſſaunte armye wente into Irelande, and ſhortely ſubdued theym / and after he hadde ſette the countrey in a rule, he retourned into Englande.

Anno domini.M. CC.viii. Anno domini.M.CC .ix.

Serle the mercer.

Balliui. Anno. ix.

Hugh of ſaynt Albon.

IN this. ix. yere the kyng conſyderynge the great loſſe whych he had ſuſteyned by the Frēche kyng in Normandy, & alſo in Angeou and Poyteau/ made puyſyon of all thynges belongynge to the warre/and after about mydſomer ſayled ouer the ſee, and landed at Rochell in Poyteau wyth a myghty hoſte. At whyche ſeaſon the Frenche kynge was at Thymon and fortyfyed yt/ wyth alſo the caſtellys of London and Myrable, and ỹ town of Poytyers whyche lytle before he had wonne/and after wythoute taryenge returned into Fraunce. Then kynge Johñ hearynge of the Frenche kynges departynge/ſped him to Angiers & wanne that towne wyth lytle payne, and deſtroyed ỹ ſayd towne. Thyther came to hym the vycoũt of Thonars, whyche before was for dzede become the Frenche kynges man/ & by his ayde kynge Johñ then recouerd ſome parte of that countrey.

In thys meane whyle kynge Philippe gatheryd a new hoſte/ and hearynge of the vnſtedfaſtnes of the vycoũt of Thonars, entryd ỹ landes of the ſayde vycounte, and waſted and ſpoyled the countrey withoute pyty. Then kynge Johñ ſpedde hym towarde the Frenche kynge / ſo that in ſhorte proceſſe of tyme the two hoſtys were wythin lytle dyſtaunce. But by what meane of fortune I can not

not saye (for the meane therof ys not expressyd) the two kynges there toke peace for two yeres folowynge/ and after eyther of theym retourned into his owne countrey.

In this yere the pope beyng ascerteyned of ỳ trueinesse of kyng Johñ executed agayne the whyte munkes of hys lande/ and also of his obstynacye that he perseuered in agayne holy chyrche: sent done a new commyssyon/ by vertue wherof the curse of enterdytynge was newly denoũcyd and manyfestyd in sondry places of England. And ouer that the pope by authorite of the sayde bulle, assoyled or acquyted all the lordes of Englãd as well spyrytuall as temporall, of all homage and feauty that they of eyght owyd to the kynge/ to the entent that they shulde aryse agayne hym, and depryue hym of all kyngly honour. But all this myght not moue the kynge from hys errour.

ABout the feast of saynt Medard, in the moneth of Juny and later ende of this forsayd .ix. yere/ the forenamed baylyues were admytted to ỳ offyce/ and the olde, that is to meane Roger wynchester and Edmunde Hardell were dischargyd, for so myche as they wythstode the kinges purueyour of whete, & wold not suffer him to conuey certayn mesures of whete oute of the cytye tyll the cytye were storyd. For thys the kynge toke such displeasure, that he sent downe streyght cõmaundement vnto the .xxvi. heddes or rulers of the cytye, that they shulde discharge the sayde two baylyuys, and to put theym in prysson tyll they knewe the kynges further pleasure. wherfore the sayd .xxvi. persons toke aduyse/ & appoynted a certayne of theym selfe wyth other, and rode to the kynge then beynge at Langley, to empetet grace for the sayde baylyues/ shewynge forther that at that season such dystresse of whete was in ỳ cyty, that the common people were lyke to haue made an insurrecyon for the same. By whyche meanes and frendeshyppe whyche they had in the court, the kynge was so satysfyed that he releasyd theym from prysson. And in shorte tyme after, the cytesyns of London made such sute to the kyng, that they had graunted to them by ỳ kynges letters patentes, that they shuld yerely chose to them selfe a mayre and two shyrues. After whyche graunte to theym confermyd/ they amonge them selfe ordeyned, that the two shyrues shulde be chosen yerely vppon saynte Mathewes daye. ix. dayes before Mychelmas, and vppon Michelmas daye to take theyr charge/ and the mayre to be chosen vppon the same daye, and chargyd wyth the other vppon the sayde daye of Mychelmas/ all be yt that now yt is otherwyse ordeyned. *Fyrst mayre & Shyrryffes*

Anno domini. M. CC. ix. Anno domini. M. CC. x.

Primus maior.

Peter Duke.

Henry fyz Alwyn. Anno .x.

Thomas Neell.

IN the daye of saynte Mychael the archaũgell, and .x. yere of kynge Johñ/ Henry the sonne of Alwyne was swoyne & charged as fyrst

cc. iiii. mayre

mayre of London / and Peter duke, wyth Thomas Neell ſworn for thy ues / and the name of bayliues was after this daye clerely auoyded wyth in the ſayde cytye from that daye forewarde. Alſo where before thys tyme the brydge ouer Thamps at Lõdon, was made of tymber, and was ruled guyded, or repayred by a fraternyte or college of preſtes. This yere by the great ayde of the cyteſyns of London and other paſſyng that way, the ſayde brydge was begonne to be edyfyed of ſtone. And in thys yere ỹ monaſtery of ſaynte Mary Ouereys in South warke, was begonne of

to be buylded. And in thys yere the pope ſente two legates, or after ſome writers one legate named Pandulphus / the whyche in the popys name had many ſore wordes of monycyon of obedience to kynge Johñ / and charged hym to ſuffre the arche byſhoppe of Caunterburye wyth the pryour and munkes of the ſame, to enioy theyr ryghtes and poſſeſſyons wythin Englande / and taryed here a certayne of tyme to bryng hys purpoſe aboute. But all was in vayne / for he rode agayn to Rome wythout releaſynge of the enterdytynge.

Of ỹ maner of this enterdyccyon of this lande, haue I ſene dyuerſe oppynyons. As ſome there be ỹ ſaye, that the lande was enterdyted thoroughly / and the chyrches, and houſys of relygyon cloſyd, that no where was vſed maſſe nor dyuyne ſeruyce. By which reaſon none of the. vii. ſacramẽtes in all this terme ſhulde be mynyſtred or occuppyd, nor chylde cryſtenyd, nor man confeſſyd, nor maryed. But yt was not ſo ſtreyghte / for there were dyuerſe places in Englande whyche were occuppyd wyth dyuyne ſeruyce all that ſeaſon, by lycence purchaſyd then or before. Alſo chyldren were cryſtyned thorough all the land, and men houſelyd and aneyld / excepte ſuche perſones as were excepted by name in the bull, or knowẽ for maytenners of the kynges yll entent.

Anno domini. M. CC. l.

Peter ponge

Henry fyz Alwyn.

Anno domini. M. CC. li

Anno .xii.

wyllyam Elande.

IN this yere whych was the .xi. yere of kynge Johñ after mydſomer, or the terme of the trewce were fully runne / kynge Phylyppe wyth a ſtronge hoſte entryd the countye of Guyan, and made newe warre vpon the vycounte of Thonars / and toke hys caſtell called Parteny, wyth dyuerſe other ſtronge holdes to ỹ ſayd vycounte belongynge, and mannyd theym wyth Frenche men / and ordeyned one Guyllyam de Roches marſhall of Fraunce cheke ruler of that countrey / and after retourned into Fraunce. But yt was not longe after the kynge was departed / but that the ſayd vycount of Thonars made ſharpe warre vpon the Frenchemen, with ſuch power as he myght make / and recouerpd a parte of hys lande. But one daye when he hadde wonne a lytle holde, and taken therin a certayne of pryſoners / in his retourne towarde hys holde where he lodged, he was ſuppryſed wyth the forenamed Guyllyam de Roches & a great multytude of Frenchemen / of ỹ wych after longe fyght he was fynally taken, wyth fyr Hyugh Thonars hys brother, fyr Aymery de Leſyngnam ſonne of the erle of Poyctyers, & to the nomber of. l. perſones of his cõpany / ỹ whyche were all as pryſoners, then ſent vnto ỹ Frenche kyng.

Anno domini M. CC. xi. Anno domini M. CC. xii.

Adam whetley.

Henry hys Alwyne. Anno. xii.

Stephan le Graag.

IN this .xii. yere of kyng Johñ the pope sente agayne Pandulphe his legate/ and monyshed the kynge in sharpe maner that he shuld receyue mayster Stephan Langton to hys benefyce of the see of Caunterbury, and the pryour wyth hys munkes vnto theyr abbay. Then ꝑ kyng callynge to mynde the daungers whyche he was wrapped in, both wythin hys owne realme and also in Normandy, and the hurtes whyche daily grew to hym by the same / made a promyse by othe that he wold be obedyent vnto the courte of Rome, and stande and obey all thynge, that the same court woll adiudge hym. Upon whyche promyse so made/ the legate sent knowlege vnto the pope, & had commaundement from hym that he shulde bynde the kynge to these artycles folowynge. Fyrste that he shuld peasybly suffer ꝑ forenamed mayster Stephan Langton to entre his land and to enioye the archebyshoprych of Caunterbury, wyth all profytes and frutes belongynge to the same. Secondarily, that he shulde in lyke maner and forme receyue the pryour of Caunterbury and hys munkys, wyth all other before tyme exyled for the archbyshoppes cause/ and not at any tyme here after ber or punyshe any of the sayde persones spyrytuall or temporall, for any of those causes. Thyrdely that he shulde restore vnto the sayd archbyshop & to all ꝑ other, all such goodes as were before tyme taken from any of them by hys offycers, syn the tyme of thys varyance growynge. And fourthly ꝑ he shulde yelde vp into the handes of the pope, all his ryght and tytle that he hadde vnto the crowne of Englande, wyth all reuenews, honoures, and profytes belongyng to the same, as well temporall as spyrytuall/ and to hold yt euer after both he and hys heyres of the pope & his successours as feodaryes of the pope. And when these artycles were graunted, and the lordes of the lande sworne to the maynteuaunce of the same/ the kynge kneelyng vpon hys knees toke the crowne from hys hedde, and sayde these wordes folowynge to the legate delyuerynge hym the crowne. Here I resygne vp the crowne of the realme of Englande and Irlande into the popes handes Innocent the thyrd and put me holy in hys mercy and ordynaunce. After rehersall of which wordes, Pandulphe toke the crowne of the kynge, and kepte the possessyon therof .v. dayes after, in token of possessyon of the sayde realme of Englande. And whē ꝑ sayd .v. days were expyred/ the kyng resumpd ꝑ crowne of Pandulphe, by vertue of a band or instrument made vnto the pope, ꝑ whyche at length is sette out in the cronycle of Englande and other places. wherof the effecte is, ꝑ the sayde kynge Johñ & his heyres, shuld euer after be feodaryes vnto the forenamyd pope Innocent and to hys lawfull successours popys of Rome/ and to pay yerely to the chyrche of Rome a thousande marke of syluer, that ys to saye for Englande. vii. hundred marke, and for Irlande .iii. hundred marke. And yf he or hys heyres layed or brake that payment/ that then they shulde fayle of theyr ryghte of the crowne. But Polycronycon sayth vii. hundred marke for Englande and

two hundred marke for Irlande. For the whyche summes after the affyrmaunce of that authour Guydo, the money called ℟ Peter pens are at thys daye gathered in sondry places of Englande.

℟ Peter pens.

Anno domini. M. CC. xii. Anno domini. M. CC. xiii.

Iohn kyng Pet.

Henry kyng Aleyn. Anno. xiii.

Iohn Garlonde.

IN this. xiii. yere of kyng Iohn and moneth of Februarye/ maister Stephan Langton archebyshop of Caunterbury, wyth the other exyles landed in Englande/ and after in processe of tyme met wyth the kynge at wynchester. where the kyng receyued hym with a louyng countenaūce, and after there was alloyed of the sayde archebyshop. But yet was not the interdiccyon of the land released/ for so myche as the kyng at that day hadde not made restitucyon vnto the archbyshope and other, accordynge to the thyrde artycle before rehersed. For the whych as testifyeth the Englyshe boke, he payed vnto the archbyshoppe thre thousande marke/ and to the other by partyculers. xv. thousande marke. After whyche thynges performed and done/ the interdyccyon was annullyd and fordone, in the moneth of July, and yere of our lord M. CC. xii hundred and. xii/ when yt had standen in force full. vi. yeres, & as myche as from the. xx vi. daye vnto the moneth of July, whyche is vppon. iii. monethes and odde dayes.

Anno domini. M. CC. xiii. Anno domini. M. CC. xiiii.

Rauf Eglande.

Henry kyng Alwyn. Anno. xiiii.

Constantyne le Iosne.

IN thys. xiiii. yere of the kyng/ for that he wolde not holde the lawes of sayncte Edwarde, and also for displeasure that he bare to diuers of them, for they wolde not fauoure hym agayne the pope / and for other causes whyche here be not manyfestyd/ the kyng fell at dyssencyon with hys lordes, in so myche that great people were reysyd on eyther partyes. But for the kynges partye was the stronger/ the erle of Chester with the other lordes toke the cytye of London, and helde them therin a certayn of tyme. The whych cronycle of Carton wyth other, sayen that a great parte of this varyaūce betwene kyng Iohn and his barons was, for because the kynge wolde wythout skyll full dome haue exyled the sayde erle of Chester/ whyche to hym hadde no cause, but for so myche as before seasons he hadde often tymes adupsed the kynge to leue hys cruelnesse and his accustomed auowtry, the whych he exercysyd wyth his brothers wyfe and other. But by the meanes of the archebyshoppe of Caunterbury and other prelatys / a peace was taken for a whyle.

In this yere vppon the daye of the translacyon of sayncte Benet, or. vi. day of July / a great parte of the Borough of Southwarke was brent. And in the moneth of Auguste nexte folowynge, was great and myche harme done in London by fyre.

Soone after to stablyshe the peace betwene

betwene the kynge and hys lordes, an assemble was made on Bertham downe/ where the kynge and the lordes mette wyth great strenght vpon eyther syde. where a charter or wry-tyng was dyuysed and made, & there sealyd by the kynge/ so that the baronye was wyth yt contentyd, and departyd in peasyble wyse euerych man into hys countrey.

Anno domini.M.CC.xiiii. Anno domini.M.CC.xv.

Martyne fyz Alys.

Roger fyz Aleyn. Anno .xv.

Peter Batte.

IN thys.xv. yere of the kynge/ the peace whych in the laste yere was betwene kyng Johñ and his baronyes agreed, was by the kynge vyolate and broken. wherfore the lordes assembled to them great powers & made sharpe & cruell warre vppon the kynge/ in so myche that he was constrayned to sende into Normandye for ayde and socoure, & into other places. Then shortely after came into Englande a Norman knyghte, whyche brought wyth hym a companye of Normannes, Flemmynges, & Pycardes. This knyght or capitayn was named Foukes de Brent/ ỹ whyche wyth his company was so cruell, that he destroyed as well relygyous houses as other, and wrought myche harme to the lande, and putte the lordes to the worse. Then the kynge made Foukes and other of hys company wardeyns of castelles & strõge holdes in Englãd. The lordes seyng the kynge perseuer in hys wronge, and wolde in no wyse be enduced to holde his owne grauntes/ but to execute all thynge after pleasure, and nothynge after lawe or iustyce: cast in theyr myndes howe they myghte brynge the lande in a better rule or state/ and by one aduyse and consent wrote vnto Phylyp kyng of Fraũce, that he wolde sende some noble man into Englande/ and they wolde rendre ỹ lande vnto hym. In this whyle kyng Johñ caused to be drawen and hangyd at London one Pyers of Pomfrette/ for the sayde Peter had monyshed dyuers mysse happes that shulde come to hym for his vycyous lyfe/ and also for he had often warned kynge Johñ that he shuld reygn but.xiiii. yeres / the whyche he ment wythout payenge of trybute. For after he was become feodary to the pope/ he thought the pope reygned as prynceypall lorde of the land and not he. For the whyche and for other malyce he putte that vertuous man to deth. Of whom in ỹ.xxxiii.chapiter of the.viii.boke of Policronycon are many vertues shewed/ the which I ouer passe for lengthynge of the tyme.

Anno domini.M.CC.xv. Anno domini.M.CC.xvi.

Salomon Basynge.

Roger fyz Aleyn. Anno.xvi.

Hugh Basynge.

VPpon saynt Andrewes euen or the.xxix.daye of Nouember, in the.xvi. yere of hys reygne/ kynge Johñ after he had lyen a certayne of tyme wyth hys ordynaunce aboute the castell of Rouchester in Kent, he wanne the sayde castell, and toke therin certayne gentylmen that

hadde

hadde conſpyred agayne hym, the whyche he ſente to dyuers pryſons. And the barons helde theym to gyther at London, abydynge the commynge of Lewys ſon to the Frenche kynge, the whyche nere about aſcencyon tyde landed in Englande wyth a ſtronge armye/and ſo came to Rochester, and layd ſyege to the caſtell, and wane yt wyth lytle payne, for ſo mych as yt was greatly febled wyth the aſſautys lately made by kynge Johñ, and ſyn that tyme not ſuffycyently repayred. And when he had wonne the ſayde caſtell, he cauſed all the ſtraungers therein taken, to be hanged/ and after came to London, where certayne allyaunces and couenauntes were ſtabliſhed betwene the lordes & hym, and receyued of them homage as affermeth Polycronicon. And after theyr maters betwen them there fynyſhed/he with the lordes departed from London, and gatte the caſtellys of Rygat, of Gylford, and and of Frenham/ and from thens to wynchester, where the cytye was yelden vnto them, wyth all the holdes and caſtellys there about, as wolneſey, Odyham, and Beawmere. And about ſaynte Margaretes daye, he wyth the lordes came agayne to London/ at whoſe commynge the towre of London was gyuen vp to theym by appoyntement. And where Roger fyz Aleyn hadde tyll that tyme ruled the cytye of London as mayre/he for ſo mych as he was accuſyd to the lordes to be fauorable to the kynges partye, was then dyſcarged of that offyce/and one called Herle Mercer was choſen in hys place, and ſo contynued tyll Mychelmas folowynge.

In thys paſſe tyme kynge Johñ beynge thus ouer ſette wyth hys lordes, ſent meſſengers to ỹ pope/ ſhewynge to hym the rebellyon of hys lordes, and how they labored hys deſtruccyon. wherfore the pope in all haſte ſent a legate into Englande named Gualo or Walo/ the whyche after hys commynge, commaunded Lewys to returne into Fraunce/and labored to the vttermoſt of his power, to appeaſe the kynge and hys baronye. But all hys labour was in vayne.

Anno domini. M. CC. xvi.

wyllyam Hardell.

Anno domini. M. CC. xvii.

Johñ Trauers.

Anno. xvii.

Andrewe Newlande.

In thys. xvii. yere of kynge Johan / the warre betwene hym and his lordes ſtyll contynuynge, he dyed of the flyxe, as teſtyfyeth Polycronycon, at the towne of Newerke, vppon the daye of ſaynte Calyxte the pope, or the. xiiii. day of October. How be yt the Engliſhe boke or cronycle ſayeth, that he dyed at Sebynſhede an abbay aboute Lyncolñ, by the impoyſonynge of a munke of the ſame houſe, the daye after ſaynte Luke or the. xviii. daye of October/ and was buryed at the cytye of wynchester. But the authour of Polycronycon ſayth he was bowelled at Crongthon abbaye/ and buryed at worceter in the myddle of the quyer of munkes, when he hadde reygned xvi. yeres. vi. monethis & iiii. dayes/ leuynge after hym two ſonnes, Henry and Rycharde, wyth ſondry doughters.

Of thys Johñ yt is redde, that he founded the abbay of Belewe in the new foreſt/in recompenſacyon of the

paryſhe

parysh chyrches which he there ouer turnyd to enlarge that forest/ and an abbay of blacke munkes in the cytye of wynchester, where after ỳ sayeng of the englysshe cronycle he shulde be buryed.

This kynge Johñ also after some wrytters, maryed one of hys doughters vnto Otto the fourth of ỳ name emperour of Almayne and duke of Saxony/ the whyche beide warre agayne kynge Phylyppe of Fraunce, as in the. v. chappyter of the storye of the sayde Phylyp before is declared. whyche Otto for hys rayne and extorcyon done to the chyrch of Rome, was accursyd / and the sayd Phylyp and also kynge Johñ for theyr dysobedyence to the chyrche were also accursyd / the whyche warred eyther wyth other/ so that eyther of thẽ greuyd and herid other, to the great hyn deraũcis of them and eyther of them. For the whyche consyderacyon a metrycyan made these balades of them as foloweth.

O quam mirabilia, good lorde
thy worckes been
In punyshement of synners by thy
myght wonderfly/
As by old storyes yt is playnely seen.
One synner the other hath correcte
vtterly.
As Alexander, wyth Julius, Pompey, and Tholomy,
And many other whych as thy scourgys were,
To punyshe synners and theym self also dere.

In lyke wyse nowe reader, yf thou lyste take hyde,
And well reuolue in mynde thys hystorye
Of these thre prynces, and loke well on theyr dede/
Thou shalte conceyue that they dyd wyckydly.
I meane kynge Johñ, Phylyppe, and Otton/
whyche vnto synne made them selfe so thrall,
That of pope Innocent they were accursyd all.

wherfore god sufferyd that one the other to greue,
And warre & chase wyth dedely hate and stryfe.
Glad that one the other to mischeue/
Manassynge eche other wyth spere, sworde, and knyfe/
wyth cruell batayll durynge theyr synfull lyfe.
wherfore I maye conclude, in factis horum,
That multa sunt flagella peccatorũ.



Enry the thyrde of ỳ name, & eldest son of kyng Johñ, a chylde of the age of .ix. yeres/ beganne hys reygne ouer the realm of Englande, the. xx. daye of the moneth of October in the yere of our lorde. M. two hundred and. xvi/ and the. xxxvi. yere of the seconde Phylyp yet kyng of Fraunce.

ye haue before harde of the cruell warre, whyche Lewys son vnto the Frenche kynge wyth the ayde of the baronys of Englande, mayntaynyd agayne kynge Johñ. The whyche after the deth of the sayde Johñ contynued/ for as mych as then some of the lordes that before hadde mayntayned the quarell of Lewis now for soke hym, & toke parte with this Henry as theyr naturall and souerayne lorde. wherof the chefe were the erles of Penbroke & of Chester/ the whych wyth theyr retynewe helde sharpe warre

warre wyth the sayde Lewys & his affynyte, the whych entēdyd to haue ben kynge of Englande, by reason of couenauntes made wyth certayne lordes of the lande, when he was fyrste sent for by them. wherfore the forsayd erles wyth the other of theyr partye, to make theyr partye the stroger/ proclayned the sayde Henry kynge of Englande, vppon the forsayde. xx. daye of Octobre thorough the cytye of London / and in all possyble haste after made prouysyon for hys coronacyon / so that vppon the daye of Symonde and Jude next ensuynge, he was crowned at Glouceter, of Peter then bysshoppe of wynchester/ Lewys the frenche kynges son beynge then at Lyncolne. In which yere stode styll as gouernoure of the cytye of London tyll Mychelmas nexte folowynge.

Anno domini. M. CC. xvii.

wyllyam Hardell.

Anno domini. M. CC. xviii.

Johñ Trauers.

Anno. i.

Indrewe Newlande.

SO soone as the kynge was crowned/ cōmyssyons where sent ouer in his name into all places of Englande, to gather strength of men to withstand the forenamed Lewys/ & to put hym wyth his frenche men and other allyaunces out of the land, whych then hadde vnder theyr rule and custodye the castellys of Berkhamsted, of Hertford, & dyuers other. And for thys Lewys wold not cease of hys warre and retourne into Fraunce/ therfore the forsayd Gwalo or Swalo the popys legate, accursyd hym fyrste by name, and after all such as hym maynteyned or fauored in thys warre agayne kynge Henry. Then the forenamed erlys accompanyed wyth wyllyam erle Marshall of Englande, wyllyam le Bruyr erle of Ferrys, wyth many other rode to Lyncolne/ and wanne that towne vpon the straūgers. where was slayne a French man called erle of Perches wyth many other souldyours. And there was take of Englyshmē Gerle erle of wynchester, and Hūfryde Bohum erle of Herford, wyth dyuerse other of name. And in thys whyle Lewelyn prynce of walis, for that he ayded the partye of Lewys was accursyd, and his lande enterdycted.

After the towne of Lyncolne was thus wōne from the frenchmen, Lewys wyth other parte of his souldyours drewe towarde London/ for so myche as word was brought to hym that his fader had sent to hym a new company of souldyours, the whyche shulde lande in Englande shortely. Trouth yt was that such an ayde of souldyours was made by the frēche kyng, & cōmyttyd to a cayptayn whyche in the cronycle is named Eustace the mūke/ the whych was encoūtryd vpon the see with a cayptayn or mayster of the. v. portis called Hubert at Burgh, & gaue to hym batayll, and scomfyght hym at length/ & sent the hed of ỹ sayd Eustace vnto ỹ kynge. when Lewys harde of these tydynges, and consyderred howe dayly his strength mynyshed / he was more inclynable vnto peace/ soỹ in cōclusion he toke money as sayth Polictronica & yelded vp his castellis & strengthis which he held/ & after was alloyled, & so returned into Fraūce. But of this money ỹ Lewis receyued, ben diuers opinyons/ for the englyshe boke nameth yt a thousande marke, and the frenche boke sayth .xv. M. marke.

Anno domini.M.CC.xviii. Anno domini.M.CC.xix.

Thomas Bokerell.

Robert Serle. Anno.ii.

Rafe Gylande.

In thys seconde yere of kynge Henry, when the lande was voyded of the straūgers / then inquysycyons were made to knowe what persones hadde fauored the partye of Lewys agayne the kynge / of the whyche the kynge pardonyd many of the laye fee. But ꝑ spyrytuall were put to suche fynes, ꝑ they were compellyd to laye that they myghte to pledge to please the kynge / and ouer that to sue to Rome to be assoylyd.

And thys yere Ranulphe erle of Chester, for consyderacyons hym mouynge / toke hys iourney into the holy lande. But one cronycle sayth he toke that iourney vppon hym, for to myche as hadde contrarye hys allegeaunce, made homage vnto Lewis abaue named / and for malyce whych he bare towarde kynge Johñ, entendyd at the tyme of that homage doynge to haue made the sayde Lewys kynge of Englande.

Anno domini.M.CC.xix. Anno domini.M.CC.xx.

Benet le Ceytur.

Robert Serle. Anno .iii.

wyllyam Blounde.

In thys thyrde yere of kynge Henry, a parlyament was holden at London / by vertue wherof was graunted to the kynge .ii. s. of euery plough lande thorough England / whych was for ꝑ charge that he before had wyth Lewys warre. Also this yere saynt Thomas of Cauntcrburye was trāslated in the .vii. day of this moneth of July / the whyche was done wyth so great a charge vn to mayster Stephan Langton then archbishop of Caunterbury, that the charge therof was not contented many yeres after ꝑ deth of the said Stephan. And thys yere as wytnessyth Polycronycon, kynge Henry began the new worke of the chyrche of west mynster / whyche after that sayenge shuld be in the .xii. yere of hys age.

Anno domini.M.CC.xx. Anno domini.M.CC.xxi

Johñ wayle.

Robert Serle. Anno. iiii.

Iosne le Spycer.

In thys yere Alexander kynge of Scottes, maryed dame Jane or Johan the syster of kynge Henry. And this yere was great harme done in Englande by vyolence of a whyrlewynde / and fyry dragons, and spyrytys were sene fleynge in the ayer. And this yere were proclamacyons made in London and thorough out Englande, ꝑ all straungers shuld auoyde the lande by Mychelmasse next folowyng / except such as came wyth marchaūdyse, and to make sale of them vnder the kynges saufe cōduyt. which was chefely made to auoyde Foukes de Brent and his complyces, whyche kepte the castell of Bedforde agayne the kynges

wyll and pleasure. And in thys yere was kynge Henry secondarily crowned at westmynster the.xvii. daye of May. And thys yere the cytye called Damas in the holy land, was by crysten men gotten from the Turkys. And thys yere came out of the holy lande into Englande Ranulphe erle of Chester, and begānne to buylde the castellys of Charteley & of Bellone/ & after he buylded the abbay of Delacresse of ỳ whyte order. For charge and coste of whyche sayde castellys & abbay/ he toke toll thorough all hys lordshyp, of all such as passyd ỳ way wyth any chaffre or marchaundyse.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxi.

Robert Serle.

Anno domini. M. CC. xvii.

Rycharde wymbedap.

Anno. v.

Johñ wayell.

IN thys .v. yere of kynge Henry/ at Orenforde was holden a generall coũsayll of the byshoppes and clergye of thys lande. In tyme of whyche counsayle a man was taken, the whyche shewyd hym selfe to be Cryste, and preached many thynges of errour, whyche the clerkes at those dayes vsyd. And to approue that he was Jesus the sonne of god, and that he was comen to refourme those errours and other/ he shewyd the caractys and tokens of woundes in hys bodye, handes, and fete, like to Jesus that was nayled on the crosse. Then he was apposyd and approuyd a false dyssymuler. wherfore by dome of ỳ counsayll he was iudgyd to be nayled to the crosse, and so delyueryd to the executours/ the whyche at a place callyd Aldurburye nayled hym to a crosse tyll he was dede.

Also this yere the kynge layde syege vnto the castell of Bedforde that Fowkys de Brent hadde so longe holden by strength. Thys syege beganne vppon the euen of the Assencyon of our lorde/ and so contynued tyll our Lady daye assumpcyon. In whyche passetyme many stronge assautys were made, to the great losse of men on bothe partyes. But fynally aboute thys forsayde daye of assumpcyon, yt was taken by fyerse assaute. wherein was taken the forenamed Fowkys de Brent, and vpon the nõber of. lxxx. souldyours, whereof the more parte were put to deth: and the sayde Fowkys after he had lyen a certayne of tyme in pryson, was for hys hynaunce delyueryd and flemyd the lande. And in this yere came the frere Wynorys fyrst into Englande. These are grape freres of the order of saynte Fraunces/ whych yf that be trewe, they shulde come in to Englande vppon. vi. yeres before the deth of saynt Fraunces. For after affyrmaunce of the authoure of Cronica cronicarum, Jacobus Philippus and other/ saynte Fraunces dyed in the yere of grace. xii. hũdred and. xxvii. And that order was fyrst confyrmed of Honorius the thyrde of that name pope of Rome, in the yere of grace .xii. hundred and. xxiiii. Thys order fyrste beganne vnder a fewe nomber of freres at the cytye of Caunterbury / and after came vnto London, and restyd theym there tyll they hadde an house there foundyd by Isabell wyfe of Edwarde the secondе, as after shall be shewyd in the storye of the sayde Edwarde / all be yt the sayde house was begonne of Margarete the wyfe of Edwarde the fyrste.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxiii.

Rycharde Renger.

Robert Serle. Anno .bi.

Joseus le Joine.

IN thys.bi. yere of the reygne of kynge Henry, a conspyracy was made by one Constantyne the sonne of Arnulphe wythin the cytye of London / for the whyche he was drawen and hãged the morow folowynge our Lady daye Assumpcyon. This conspyracy was dysclosed by a cytezyn named walter Bokerell / and was so heynous & greuous to ỹ king that he was in mynde & purpose to haue throwen downe ỹ walys of the cytye. But when he had well conceyued that the persones whych entẽded this cõspiracy were but of the raselalys of the cytye, & that none of ỹ heddys or rulers of the same were therunto consentynge / he aswagyd hys ire and greuouse dysplesure, whych he entendyd towarde the cytye.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxiii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxiiii.

Rycharde Joyner.

Robert Serle. Anno. vii.

Thomas Lamberde.

IN this seuenth yere / Johan kynge of Hierusalem came into Englande, and requyred ayde of kyng Henry to wynne agayne that holy cytye / but he retourned wyth small comforte. And about this tyme Johñ the sonne of Dauid erle of Ingwyshe in Scotland, and nere kynuesman vnto Ranulphe of Chester, maryed the doughter of Lewelyn prynce of walys / as yt were for a fynall accorde betwene the sayde Lewelyne and Ranulphe euer after to be contynued.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxiiii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxv.

wyllyam Joynour.

Rycharde Reynger. Anno.viii.

Tomas Lamberte.

IN thys.viii.yere of kyng Henry / a parlyament was holden at .where among other thynges / the lordes and baronye of the lande graunted vnto the kynge and to his heyres kynges, the warde and mariage of theyr heyres / which deve was after ordeyned men called Initium malorũ, that is to meane the begynnynge of yllys or of harmes. The cruell of warde & mariage

Anno domini.M.CC.xxv. Anno domini.M.CC.xxvi.

Johñ Trauers.

Rycharde Renger Anno .ix.

Andrew Bokerell.

IN thys.ix.yere of kynge Henry / Frederyke the seconde of that name, & emperour of Almayne, for his contumacy agayn the chyrch of Rome was accursyd of the.ix.Gregory then pope, wherfore soon after

dd ii. he

he toke two cardynallys and dyuers prelatys as they were goynge to a generall counsayle kepte by the sayd pope, at a place callyd Spolete a cytye of Italye.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxvi. Anno domini.M. CC.xxvii.

Roger Duke.

Rycharde Renger. Anno.x.

Martyne hys wyllyam.

IN thys.x.yere of the reygne of kynge Henry/the plees of the crowne were pletyd in the towre of London. In this yere also as wyt nessyth the Frenche cronycle, dyuerse souldyours, whyche as to thys daye kepte certayne castellys in the countye of Poytiers, as the castell of Monstruell the castell of Myort, and the townes of Angely and of Rochel were by the Frenche kynge so assautyd, that they were constrayned to gyue them ouer to the Frenche kyng then beyng Lewis the nynthe of that name/or after some writers the.viii, and sonne of Phylyppe the seconde.

Anno domini.M.CCxxvii. Anno domini.M. CC.xxviii.

Stephan Bokerell.

Roger Duke. Anno.xi.

Henry Cobham.

IN thys.xi. yere of thys kynge Henry/the shyrywyke of London and of Mydd. were lettyne to ferme for the summe of.iii. hundred poũde, by yere to the shyryues of London. And the.xviii.daye of Februarye the same yere, was graunted by the kynge that all weyrs in Thamys shulde by plucked vppe and destroyed for euer. And the .xvi. daye of Marche folowynge, the kynge grauted by hys charter ensealyd, that the cytyzens of London shulde passe toll free thorough all Englande. And yf any cytezyns were cõstrayned in any cytye, borough or towne in England to paye any toll/ẏ then the shyryues of London to attache any man commynge to London of the sayde cytye borough or towne where suche toll was payed/ and hym and hys goodys to wythholde and kepe, tyll the cytesyners of London be restoryd of all suche money payed for the sayde tolle, wyth all costes and damagys sustayned for the same. And the xviii. daye of Auguste folowynge, the kyng grauted to ẏ sayd cytesyns of London wareyn/ that is to meane that the cytesyns haue free lybertye of huntynge certayne cyrcuyte aboute London. And in thys yere the towne of Lymosyn wyth dyuers holdes in Pyerregot and Aluerne in the countye of Supan, were geuen vppe to the forenamed Lewys the Frenche kynge. wherfore the kynge sente ouer hys brother Rycharde erle of Cornewayll shortely after/ whyche landed at Burdeaux wyth.iii.hundred sayles.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxviii. Anno domini.M. CC.xxix.

Stephan Bokerell.

Roger Duke. Anno.xii.

Henry Cobham.

IN the begynnynge of thys. xii. yere of kynge Henry/ mayster Stephan Langton archbyshoppe of Caunterburye dyed/ and the great deane of Paulys mayster Rycharde wethyrshed was hys successour. And in thys tyme the fraunchyse and lybertyes of the citye were by the kyng confyrmyd/ & to euerych of ꝑ sherynes was graũted to haue. ii. clerkes & .ii. officers wythout mo. And to the citesyns of Lõdon was also graũted thys yere, that they shuld haue & vse a common seale. And in this yere Rycharde erle of Cornewayll besyeged the town of sayne Machayre in Guyan. And whan he hadde wonne yt by strength/ he then layed hys syege to ꝑ town of Rochell, tyll yt was restoryd by the marshall of Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. CC. xvii. Anno domini. M. CC. xvi.

walter wynchester.

Roger Duke. Anno. xiii.

Robert fyz Johñ.

IN this xiii. yere of kynge Henry/ vppon Trynyte sondaye, or after an other authour vpon whyt sondaye, whyle the byshoppe of London was at the hygh masse in sayncte Paulys chyrch of Lõdon, fell sodeynly suche thyckenesse of darkenesse of cloudes, and therwyth suche stenche and tempeste of thunder and lyghtenynge, that the people there assemblyd boyded the chyrche/ and the vycarres and chanons forsoke theyr deskys, that the byshoppe remayned in great fere alone/ excepte a fewe of his menyall seruauntys and suche as attendyd vpon hym at the aulter.

Also in thys yere the fame of that blessyd woman Elyzabeth doughter of the kynge of Hungarye beganne to spredde. The whyche before and after the deth of her husbande Langraue duke of Thoryngne in Almayne, shamyd not for Crystes sake to wesshe the sorys and bylys of lazars and of other poore men, besyde other manyfolde dedes of charyte. By vertue of whyche blessyd and vertuouse lyfe/ she by her lyfe thorough the power of god shewed many and dyuerse myracles. Among the whyche by her prayer. xvi. men were from deth to lyfe arteryd/ and a man borne blynde, to syght restoryd. wherfore by Gregorye the. ix. of that name and pope of Rome/ she was amonge the college of the blessed nomber of sayntes ascrybyd and alowed/ and commaunded her feast to be halowed the. xiii. kalendas of December.

Anno domini. M. CC. xvi. Anno domini. M. CC. xvii.

Rycharde fyz wyllyam.

Roger Duke. Anno. xiiii.

Johñ wodbourne.

IN this. xiiii. yere of the kinge was ordeyned by the mayre, and rulers of the cytye of London, that no shryue of that cytye shulde contynew lenger in offyce then one yere. wherof the cause was, that dyuerse of theym by contynuaunce of theyr offyce dyd dyuerse extorcyons, and toke brybys of bytellers wyth other defautys/ whyche were founde and proued pretudycyall & hurtefull to the comyon weale of the sayde citye.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxi. Anno domini.M.CC.xxxii.

Mych aell of sayncte Elene.

Roger Duke. Anno.v.

walter Denfelde.

IN this.xv. yere, the kynge had graũted tyll hym a quindecim o; fyftene of the tempo;altye / and a dyme and an halfe of the ſpy;ytualty, to recouer hys lãdes loſte in No;mandy, Guyan, and Poyteau. And in this yere Huberte of Burgth, ỳat this daye was cheſe iuſtyce of Englande, hadde greuyd o; dyſpleaſed the kynge in ſuche wyſe, that he was compellyd to fle the kynges ſyght. But he was ſo ſtrayghtly purſued, ỳ he was taken in a chapell of Bzentwood in Eſſex / and ſo caſt in p;yſon at the kynges commaũdement. But after by labour of the bleſſyd byſhop Edmunde of Pountenay, he was re cõcylyd to the kynges fauour / when he had ben p;yſoned bppon .iiii. monethes, and eryled bppon .xiii. monethis. And this yere was done grete harme in London by fyre / the whych beganne in an houſe of a wydowe named dame Jane Lambert.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxii. Anno domini. M. CC.xxxiii.

Henry Eldementon.

Andzew Bukerell. Anno .xvi.

Gerarde Batte.

IN this.xvi.yere / kynge Henry vppon complaynt bzought be fo;e hym, by the frendes of Lewelyn p;ynce of walys, ỳ willyam le Bzuce o; Bzunze ſhuld cõſpyre agayne the kynge / o; after ſome, fo; he kepte vnlawfully the wyfe of the fo;enampd Hauylyn: he was after longe p;yſonement hanged. And this yere dyed Ranulphe erle of Cheſter, Lyncolne, & Hũtyngedon. And his ſyſters ſon named Johñ, ſonne vnto the erle of Angwyſhe as befo;e in ỳ. vii. yere of this kyng is declared was his hey;e, and helde that lo;dſhyp after hym. This Johñ of moſte wy;ters is called Johñ Scot / fo; ſo myche as his father was a Scotte. This fo;eſayd Ranulphe hadde no chylde, all be yt he hadde .iiii. ſyſters. The eldeſte hyght Wolde o; Wawde / and was maryed to Dauid erle of Angwyſhe, and was moder to ỳ fo;eſayde Johñ Scot. The ſeconde was named Hawys, and was maryed vnto the erle of Arundell. The thy;d Agnes, was toyned to the erle of Derbye. And the fourth named Mabely, was maryed vnto the erle of wyncheſter called Robert Quynacye. Thys Ranulphe dyed at walyngfo;de / and was buryed in the chapter houſe of the munkys at Cheſter / and o;deyned the fo;enamed Johñ Scotte to be hys hey;e, fo; that he wolde not haue ſo noble a lo;dſhyppe runne amonge o; to be dyuyded betwene ſo many dyſtauys. And thys yere dyed mayſter Rycharde wethy;ſhed archbyſhoppe of Caunterbury / whoſe ſucceſſour was bleſſyd Edmunde of Pountenay.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxiii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxxiiii.

Symonde fyz Warre.

Andzew Bukerell. Anno .xvii.

Roger Blounte.

IN this .xviii. yere of the reygne of kyng Henry / the forenamed Edmunde of Pountenay or of Abyndon, was sacred archebyshop of Cauterburye. He was named of Pountenay, for so myche as he was buryed at Pountnay in Burgoyne. And he was named Edmunde of Abyndon by reason he was borne i Albyndon. Thys blessyd man as before in the xb. yere is shewyd / reconcyled Hubert of Burgth to the kinges grace, and causyd hym to be restored to his former office, as chefe iustyce of this lande. In thys yere also the kyng begane the foundacyon of the hospytayll of saynte Johñ wythout the Estgate of Oxenforde. In whyche yere also fyll wonderfull wether, as thunder and lyghtenynge bulyke vnto other. And theruppon folowed an erthquake, to the great fere of the inhabytauntys of Huntyngdon, and nere there aboute. *An erthquake.*

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxiiii. Anno domini. M. CC. xxxb.

Rafe Ischewy.

Andrew Bukerell. Anno. xviii.

Johñ Norman.

IN thys . xviii . yere of kynge Henry / the Jewys dwellynge at Norwyche were broughte to fore the kyng at westmynster, to answere to a complaynte made agayne them by one callyd Johñ Toly of the sayd towne of Norwyche, that they shuld stele a chylde, and yt cyrcumcysyd of the age of a yere, and after kepte the same chyld secret to the entent to crucyfye yt, in despyte of Crystes relygyon. But howe the mater was folowed, or howe so the Jewys acquytyd theym selfe by theyr answere / trouthe yt is that they retourned vnpunyshed. And in thys yere Frederyke the second of that name, and emperour of Almayne / maryed the syster of kynge Henry named Isabell, as testyfyeth Policronica.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxb. Anno domini. M. CC. xxxbi.

Gerarde Batte.

Andrew Bukerell. Anno. xix.

Robert Ardell.

IN thys. xix yere. the morow after saynte Hyllary, or the .xiiii. daye of January / Edmunde archbysshoppe of Caunterburye spowsyd the kynge and Eleanoure the doughter of the erle of Prouynce in his cytye of Caunterburye. And in the dtas of the sayde Hyllary / she was crowned at westmynster as quene of Englande. where in the felde by westmynster lyenge at the weste ende of the chyrche, was kepte royall solempnite and goodly iustes, by the space of. viii. dayes. And the same yere the statute of Merton was enacted / whych is to meane certayn actes made by acte of parlyament, holden by the kynge & his lordes & cõmons at ỳ towne of Merton. where among other actys was ordeynyd a remedy for wydowes that were defrauded of theyr dowers / & also how heires with in age shuld be intreated / & remedies for such as were stolen or with holde cõtrary ỳ gardeyns willis. But more certaynly yt was ordeyned at a plyamẽt at Merton forsayd, which was holde the .xxx. yere of this kyng, in ỳ morowe folowyng the daye of saynt Martyn, or the .xii. day of Nouẽber. *Statute of Merton*

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxvi. Anno domini.M.CC.xxxvii.

Henry Cobham.

Andrew Bukerell. Anno.xx.

Iurden Couentre.

IN this.xx. yere of kynge Henry/ Johñ Scot before named erle of Chester, dyed wythoute yssue male. wherfore the kynge cõsyderyng the great prerogatyues belongynge to that erledome, gaue vnto his doughters other possessyons, & toke the erledome into hys own hand. Thys Johñ dyed at Dorondale/ and was buryed amonge hys antecessours at Chester, as sayth Policronycon. And also he sayth that he dyed wyth out any chylde/ and that the forsayd exchaunge was made wyth the forenamed systers of Ranulphe, before expressyd in ỹ.xvi.yere of this kyng.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxvii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxxviii.

Johñ Thelalan.

Andrew Bukerell. Anno.xxi.

Gerarde Cordwaner.

IN this.xxi. yere, Octoboon a legate of the.ix. Gregory pope, came into Englande/ and ordeyned many good ordynaunces for the chyrche. But not all to the pleasure of the ponge clergy of England. wherfore as he one daye passed thorough Oxenford, the scolars sought occasyon agayn his seruauntes and fought wyth them, & slew one of the same/and put the legate in such fere, that he for his sauegarde toke ỹ bel fray of Olney/ and there helde hym tyll the kynges mynysters cõmynge from Abyndon wyth strength, medelyd with fayre wordes deliuered him and conueyed hym after wyth a competente companye vnto walyngford. where he accursyd the misdoers, and punyshed theym in suche wyse, that the regentes & maysters of that vnyuersyte were lastely compellyd to go barefote thorough Chepe to Paulys at London, and there to aske of hym forgyues, and hadde that trespace wyth great dyffyculte forgyuen.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxviii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxxix.

Johñ whylhale.

Rychard Renger Anno.xxii.

Johñ Goundesse.

IN thys.xxii.yere/a false clerke of the forsayde vnyuersyte of Oxenford, whyche feyned hym selfe madde, and beforetyme had espyed the secret places of the kinges court/ came by a wyndowe towarde the kinges chamber at hys maner of woodstoke, entendynge to haue slayne the kynge. But he was espyed by a woman and taken/ and so conueyed to Couentre, and there arreygnyd of that dede. where after lawfull proues of hys malycyous entent made, he for the same was there drawen & hanged. And in thys yere vppon the euen of sayncte Botolphe/ or the xxvi. daye of Juny, was borne at westmynster Edward that after was surnamed Longeshanke. This after his father was kynge.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxix. Anno domini. M. CC. xl.

Remonde Bengly.

wyllyam Joynour. Anno .xxiii.

Rafe Alchewy.

IN this .xxiii. yere of kyng Henry/ before the tyme of the electyon of the shyryues of London, one Symōde fyz Mary, whych before in the .xvii yere of the kynge had ben in that offyce, had purchased a cōmaundement of the kynge dyrected to the mayre and rulers of the cytye, ꝑ they shulde cause hym to be electe to that offyce for that yere folowynge. But the mayre wyth the heddes of the cytye, consyderynge that commaundement to be a derogacyon vnto the lybertyes of ꝑ cytye, wythstode yt/ and chase the forenamed Rafe Alchwy, & put the sayde Symonde by / for the whyche he complayned hym to the kynge. Then the kynge sente for the mayre and the rulers of the city/ and hadde vnto theym many wordes of displeasure, for the dysobeyenge of his cōmaundement/ and farthermore discharged willyam Joynour which that yere was agayne chosen newely to be mayre for the yere folowynge/ and chargyd the cytesyns to proceede to a newe electyon for theyr mayre. whyche then to satysfye the kynges pleasure, chase Gerarde Batte. By whose meanys and good polycye the sayde mayr wyth the cytesyns demeaned theym so well to the kynge, that they obteyned hys gracious fauour, and caused the forsayde Symonde to fayle of his purpose/ and was not after admyttyd to that offyce, tyll he hadde submyttyd hym to the rule of the mayre and rulers of the same cytye. The whyche Symonde behaued him so well after, that he was admyttyd for an alderman. But in shorte processe after he demeanyd him so yll, and so contraryously vnto the weale and good order of the cytye/ that he was dyscharged of hys aldermanshyp, and dyschargyd from all rule and counsayll of the cytye, as in the .xxxiiii. yere of thys kynge folowynge is touched.

Anno domini. M. CC. xli. Anno domini. M. CC. xli.

Johñ Gyloys.

Gerarde Batte. Anno .xxiiii.

Wychaell Tony.

IN thys .xxiiii. yere of kynge Henry/ sayntē Paulys chyrch of London was newely halowyd. And the great Chaan of Tartarys before in the seconde yere of kynge Johñ mynded or touched of theyr begynynge, in thys yere after he had from the Turkys wonne myche of the Eest landes, he sent an hoste into the lande of Hungary/ the whych held the people of that countrey so shorte, that as witnessyth the authour of Policronica and other, they were constrayned of necessyte to ete theyr own chyldren and other vnlefull metys. But the authoure of Cronica cronicarum sayth, that this mysery fell to the peple of Hungary, in the yere of our lorde .xii. hundred and .xii. whyche after that sayenge shulde be in the fyfte yere of thys kynge.

Anno domini.M.CC.xli. Anno domini.M.CC.xlii.

Johñ Uyoll.

Remonde Bengley. Anno.xxb.

Thomas Durelyne.

IN this.xxb.yere of kynge Henry/Gerarde Batte was agayn chosen mayre for this present yere. And after whose electyon, he was by the worshipfull of the citye conueyed vnto woodstoke, and presentyd after the custome vnto the kynge. But the kynge enfourmed of hys laste peres dealynge, by suche as ought to hym no good will / sayde that he wolde not admytte hym to that offyce, tyll such tyme as he came to westmynster wyth whyche answere the sayde Gerarde wyth his companye returned vnto London. It was not longe after or the kyng came to westmynster/ where accordynge to theyr dutye the cytesyns of London agayn awapted vppon the kynge to know his pleasure. where the kynge callyd before hym the sayde mayre/ and after certayne questyons to hym put, he caused hym to be sworne in his presence. After whyche othe to hym geuen/the kynge charged hym by vertue of the same, that he shulde not take of the bakers and bruers and other bytellars of the cytye.xl.pounde, whyche other of his predecessours, and also he that laste yere hadde taken. And also that he incontynently after hys commynge to London, shuld restore vnto the sayd bytellars and other cytesyns, all suche money as he hadde wyth wronge in that precedyng yere taken of the compnaltye of the citye. But for the sayde Gerarde allegyd for hym certayne consideracyons, besechynge the kynge to pardon hym of that resyntucyon/ the kynge in dyl pleasure swore a great othe, that he shulde not that yere be mayre, nor at any tyme there after. And so the commons certyfyed of the kynges pleasure, chase in his place or stede/Reynet de Bungaye. And this yere the kynge yode into walys. wherof hearynge Dauid then prynce of walys, mette wyth the kyng at Ruthlande/ and submyttyd hym to the kynges grace. Also this yere the blessyd Edmunde archebyshoppe of Caunterbury, beynge at Pountnay in the prouynce of Burgoyne dyed/and there was buryed/ & was after translatyd into ꝑ same place within .x. yeres after his deth, by commaundement of Innocent the fourthe then pope of Rome/ because of his manyfolde myracles whyche god shewyd for hym after hys deth. All be yt in hys legende yt is shewyd that he dyed twentye myle from Pountnay called Soly/ and was after buryed and translated at Poũtnay. Of this blessed man Polycronycon shewyth many vertuyes in the.xxxb.chapiter of his.vii. boke, whyche here I ouer passe for lengthynge of the tyme. And thys yere one wyllyam of the Marshe, was at London for treason drawen and hanged. * Thys yere also were aldermen fyrste chosen wythin the cytye of London/ whyche then hadde the rule of the cytye and of the wardes of the same/ and were then yerely chaũgyd, as now the shyryues be chaũged.

The mayre sworne in ꝑ kynges presence

Fyrst aldermen of London. *

Anno domini.M.CC.xlii. Anno domini.M.CC.xliii.

Johñ fyz Johñ.

Remonde Bongley. Anno.xxbi.

Rafe Alhewy.

In this.xrbi.yere of kyng Henry/ Bonyface was sacryd archbyshoppe of Caunterbury. And this yere the kyng wyth a fayre company sayled into Normandy. whyche bycause as sayth ꝑ frenche cronycle was made by the shrynge of a Frenche man named erle of the Marche / for so mychē as ꝑ sayd erle refusyd to do homage vnto Alphons brother vnto Lewys the.x. of that name, and surnamed sayncte Lewys then kynge of Fraunce. Thys Lewys the yere before hadde maryed his sayde brother vnto the doughter of the erle of Tholouse/ and hadde gyuen to his sayde brother the erledome of Poyteau, wyth all the landes of Aluerne.

By reason wherof he wold haue caused the sayd erle of Marche, to haue done homage vnto the sayde Alphōs for such landes as the sayd erle held of the sayde erledome of Poytyers. But for ꝑ sayd erle of Marche knew well that the ryght of Guyan belonged to the kinge of England/ he therfore, and for other allyaunces made betwene kynge Henry and hym, refusyd the doynge of that homage/ and after came to kynge Henry, and encrcyd hym to make warre vppon the Frenche kynge. By reason wherof the kynge made prouysyon, and so landed with a stronge power at Burdeaux. After the aggrmaunce of the frenche boke, this erle of the Marchis had maryed the mother of kyng Henry.

Then it folowyth in this whyle the Frenche kynge warryd vppon ꝑ landes of the erle of Marche/ and hadde wōne .ii. castellys of his named Fouteneys and Vpillers, wyth dyuerse other whych I passe ouer. And when he had beten downe some of them, & some storyd with new soudyours/ he then went vnto a castel named Mauconne, and brake a brydge after him, for so mychē as he was warned that the kynge of Englande was nere vnto hym. At the sayd brydge was a lytell skyrmyshe/ but lytle harme was there done. Then the Frenche kynge toke the way ouer the ryuer of Tharent towarde Taylbourgh, wastyng and destroyenge the countrey as he went/ and so forth towarde the town callyd Saynces. And kynge Henry wyth hys hoste made towarde hym in al that he myght. In keppng this course/ the vawarde of the kynge encountryd wyth the erle of Boleyne, whyche was vppon the Frenche kynges partye. That season the erle of Saynces bare the banner of ꝑ erle Marches, beyng in ꝑ vaward of the kynge. Betwene these two erles was sore fyght / so that many a man vppon both partyes was slayn/ among the whych the sayde erle of Saynces was slayne. Then came on bothe strengthes vppon eyther syde, so that both kynges fought in that batayll/ and great slaughter of men was vpon both sydes. But in the ende the Frenche men were victours, & toke prysoners.xrii. men of name, as knyghtes and of hyghe degre, and .iii. clerkes of great fame and ryches, beside other to the nombre of .v. hūdred of meane people as wytnessyth the frenche boke. But of these men of name, nor yet of the ryche clerkes, none is named, nor yet shewyd what good they payed for theyr raāsome. wherfore me lyste to wryte no farther of this great victory/ all be it ꝑ the sayd boke sayth farther, that kyng Henry forthere tourned backe vnto Burdeaux/ and there made meanes to the kynge of Fraunce for a peace. But of all thys fynde I no worde in the englyshe cronycles.

Then the erle of Marches by meane of his sonne, was reconcyled vnto the Frenche kynge, and restoryd to hys

hys landes / excepte thre castellys, whyche were named Melpyne, Cretaye, and Estardye / the whyche the Frenche kynge retayned in his owne possessyon. And soone after came vn to the Frenche kynge the lordes of the castellys of Myrabell, & of Mortaynge / submyttynge theym also vn to the kynges grace / besechyng hym of pardon, that they hadde so to his hygh displeasure fauored hys enymy the kynge of Englande. And after came in dyuerse other lordes & capytaynes / so that he was in possessyon of all the countrey of Guyan & Poyteau, vnto ỳ ryuer of Gyrondē.

I haue rehersyd the more of thys cronycle of Fraunce / to the entente that the reders may well apperceyue the pryde and boste of the Frēchmen. For in all theyr wrytynge, when they come to any mater that sondyth any thynge to theyr honour / yt is wryten in the lengest and most shewyng manner to theyr honour and worshyppe. But as I haue sayde before in the .b. capyter of the storye of the .ii. Phylyppe kynge of Fraunce / yf yt sound any thynge to theyr dyshonour, then shall yt be abreuyatyd or hyd, that the trouth shall not be knowen. And that apperith well here by theyr own wrytynge. For in ỳ .vii. yere of kyng Johñ, yt is shewyd howe Phylyppe the seconde then kynge of Fraunce had wonne all Normandy and Guyan. And yet at thys daye thys kynge Lewys warryd agayne in the same countrey / so that they euer tell of the wynnyng, but they touche nothynge of the agayne losynge.

Then yt folowyth in the storye / when kynge Henry hadde as before is sayde, concludyd the forsayde peace, of the which by myne authour is no terme sette / the kynge retourned into Englande.

Anno domini. M. CC. xliii.

Rafe Ashewy.

Anno domini. M. CC. xliiii.

Hugh Blount.

Anno. xxvii.

Adam Basynge.

IN this .xxvii. yere, the kynge returned from Burdeaux into Englande. And thys yere the pleas of the crowne were kept in the towre of London. And thys yere Gryffyth, whych was sonne of Lewelyn lately prynce of walys, entendyng to haue broken pryson / fell ouer the wall of the inner warde of the towre of London and brake hys necke.

Anno domini. M. CC. xliiii.

Mychael Tony.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Rafe Spycer.

Anno. xxviii.

Nycholas Batte.

IN thys .xxviii. yere of kynge Henry as testifyeth Polycronycon / a Jew dygged the grounde in a place in Spayn called Tholeet, to the entent to make him a more larger vyne yerde. where in tyme of his dyggynge he fande a stone closyd on all partyes. But for he perceyued yt to be holowe he brake the stone / and founde therin a boke as bygge as a sawter, wyth leuys all of tree. This boke was wryte in nethre dyuers languagys, in greke, in ebrewe, and in latyne / and the mater therof was of

thre

thre worldes that shuld come. Of the whyche he poyntyd the commynge of Cryste to the begynnynge of the thyrde worlde, whyche was expressyd in thys maner of wyse. In the begynnynge of the thyrde worlde, goddes son shall be borne of a mayde. when the Jewe had well beholden the contentys of the boke, and sawe that yt conteyned so longe tyme as from Adam to Anticriste, and shewyd many prophecyes that were fulfyllyd and passe / he anon renouncyd hys iudaisme or Moysen lawe, and was crysteyned, and lyued after as a crysten man.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv. Anno domini. M. CC. xlvi

Robert Cornehyll.

Johñ Gysors. Anno. xxix.

Adam Bewly.

IN thys .xxix. yere / Nycholas Batte contrary the ordynaūce before in the .xiiii. yere of thys kynge made, was agayne chosen shryue of London. For the whych he was conuycte of periurye / and so dyscharged and punyshed. And for ỳ Mychaell Tony, whych for this yere also was chosen mayre, was by deposycyon of the Aldermen founde gylty in the sayde cryme of periurye: therfore he was deposyd from his offyce & punyshed. And for hym was chosen mayre Johan Gysours / and for Nicholas Batte was chosen shryue Robert of Cornhyll. In this yere also as testyfyeth Jeffrey of Monmouth, Robert Grosehed thē bysshoppe of Lyncolne, wyth other prelatys of ỳ land, complayned theym vnto the kynge of the waste of the goodes and patrymonye of the chyrche, whyche dayly was wasted and mysspent by the alyaunt bysshoppes and clerkes of this lande. Of the whych straungers one named mayster Martyne, and nere kynnysman of Innocent the thyrde late pope was one. The whyche the kynge by helpe of the Englysshe bysshoppes auoyded, wyth other lyke offendours out thys realme. Also in thys yere the patryarke of Hierusalem, sente vnto the kynge a neume of bloode / whych was kepte at sayne Thomas of Acris in Lōdon tyll the yere folowynge.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlvi. Anno domini. M. CC. xlvii.

Symonde fyz Mary.

Johñ Gysors. Anno. xxx.

Laurence Frowyke.

IN this yere the neume of blood sent before to the kynge / was wyth moste solemne processyon, the kynge wyth great noumber of hys lordes beynge presente, conueyed from sayne Thomas fore sayd vnto westminster, in ryght solemne wyse wyth processyon & other accordyng obseruaunces to suche a relyke appertaynynge. And in this yere dyed Frederike the emperour of Almayn / whyche as before is touchyd in the xviii. yere of this kyng, maryed Isabell syster vnto the kynge. The whyche for his rebellyon agayn ỳ chyrch of Rome, was accursyd fyrste of the ix. Gregory / and lastely of Innocēt the iiii. he was agayne cursyd and deprayed of his imperyall dygnyte / gyuynge commynyon & lyttce to the

ee electours

electours of the emperoure, to chose a new. The whyche were of so many myndes in theyr electyon, that some chase the duke of Thoryng, some the erle of Holande, and some chase the kynges brother Richarde erle of Cornewayll, whyche causyd stryfe that endurȳd longe after, so that the onely emperoure of Almayne was not of all men alowyd, tyll Radulphus duke or erle of Habspurghe in Almayne, was chosen by one assente to that dygnyte, and therunto admitted by Gregory the.ix. of that name, in the yere of our lorde.xii.hundred and.lxviii. And so that barrayne ende durȳd vppon.xvbii. yeres, to ȳ great impouerysshyng of Italy, and the landes of the empyre. Then as before is sayd this Frederyk dyed vnassoyled, & was buryed in a cytye called Feretiola, wyth thys superscrypcyon vppon hys toumbe.

Si probitas, sensus, virtutis gratia, census,
Nobilitas orti, possent resistere morte:
Non foret extinctus, Fredericus qui iacet intus.

whyche verlys are thus myche to meane in Englysshe.

If excellente of wytte, or grace of good vertue,
Or nobylnesse of byrth myght vnto deth resyste,
Then shuld thys Frederyke mortall fate erchewe,
whych hym hath closyd here now in hys chyste.
But none of these maye erthly man assyste
To strywe wyth deth, but all muste pay hym dette,
Noble and vnnoble there nothynge maye lette.

An other versyfyoure made these.ii. versys folowynge, of the interpretacyon of this name Frederyke.

Fre fremit in mundo, de deprimit alta profundo,
Re res rimatur, cui cuspide cuncta minatur.

The whyche may in this maner of wyse be englysshed.

Fre fretyth thys worlde, and de confoundyth all,
Hyghe thynges of honoure, into depenesse darke.
Ri sercheth besyly ȳ goodes generall
Of thys worlde both of the laye and clerke.
Makynge no questyon in hys moste cruell werke,
And cus with swerde all thyng doth manace.
And thys is Frederyke all deuoyde of grace.

Anno domini.M.CC.xlvii.

Pyers Aleyne.

Anno domini.M.CC.xlviii.

Johñ Voyle.

Anno .xxxi.

Nycholas Batte.

IN thys .xxxi. yere of the reygn of kyng Henry, Lewys which is surnamed Saynt Lewis then kyng of Fraunce, with a conuenyent hoste sayled into the holy lande, and there warred vpon Crystes enymyes, and wanne the cytye of Damas at hys fyrste landynge, & after taryed there frō ȳ begynnynge of ȳ moneth of June, to the.xxii. day of Nouember, and after departyd thens towarde Babylon, entendynge to haue layde syege to the cytye. But fortune was to him so cōtrarye, that by sykenesse & other casueltyes he loste myche of his people, and in the ende was hym selfe taken prysoner of the Turkis, as more playnely shall be shewed in the story of the sayde Lewys folowynge.

And in this yere was a myghty erthquake in Englande, that the lyke to yt was not sene many yeres before.

Also

Also thys yere the kynge sealyd the fraunchyse of the cytye of London vppon the euen of sayncte Bartholomew, for a iudgement that was gyuen by the mayre and aldermen agayne a wedowe named Margaret Upell / and commyttyd the rule of the cytye to wyllyam Hauerpll and Edwarde of westmynster, tyll our ladye daye nexte folowynge. At whyche season the mayre and shrynes were agayne to theyr offyces admyttyd.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlviii. Anno domini. M. CC. xlix.

Nycholas Joy.

Mychaell Tony. Anno. xxxii.

Geffrey wynton.

In thys .xxxii. yere of the kyng the wharfe of London callyd quene hythe, was taken to ferme by the comynaltye of the cytye, to paye yerely therefore. l. pounde. The whyche was then commyttyd to the shrynes charge / and so hath contynuyd euer sen that tyme to thys daye. whereof the profytys and tollys are so sore mynyshed, that at thys daye yt is lytle worth ouer. xx. marke or xl. pounde one yere wyth a nother. And thys yere fell great dystemperaunce of wether, in suche wyse that the grounde was bareyne vppon the same / and other myshappys folowyd anon theruppon. And thys yere when the mater aforenamed of Margarete Upell wydow was well examyned / the iudgement therof was founden good and trewe. wherfore the cytezens enioyed the lybertyes wythoute interrupcyon / all be yt the kynge was wyth theym some what agreuyd, for so myche as they at his requeste wolde not exchaunge wyth the abbot of westmynster, suche lybertyes as they hadde in Myddelsex of the kynges graunte, for other to be hadde in other places.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlix. Anno domini. M. CC. l.

Rafe hardell.

Roger fyz Roger. Anno. xxxiii.

Johñ Tolalane.

In the .xxxiii. yere of kyng Henry in the moneth of October dyed Robert Grosthede byshoppe of Lyncolne. He was the maker of the boke callyd Pety Caton and many other.

This Robert for so mich as ꝑ. iiii. Innocent pope, greuyd ꝑ chyrch of Englãde with talys & paymẽtes agayn reason / he therfore sente vnto hym a sharpe pystle. This pope than gaue vnto a chylde a neuew of hys, a chanonry whych fell voyde in the chyrch of Lyncolne / and sent the chylde vnto the byshoppe, chargynge hym to admytte the sayd chylde, and to sette hym in hys place. But thys byshoppe boldely denyed the receyt of the chyld / & wrote vnto the pope ꝑ he wold not nor shuld receyue such to ꝑ cure of soule, ꝑ could not rule the selfe. Therfore this Robert was somoned to apere before ꝑ pope, & therupon accusyd. Thẽ he appealyd frõ Innocẽtis courte vnto Crystes owne trone. Then after the deth of thys Robert as the pope laye in hys bedde at hys reste / one aperyd to hym in clothyng

An appele from the pope.

of a bysshoppe, and sayde to hym a-ryse wretche and come to thy dome/ and after smote hym wyth hys crosse vpon the lefte syde. Upon the morne after, the pope was fonden dede, and hys bedde all blody. But of thys is nothynge in the cronycle or storye of Innocent.

After that sayenge of Polycronycon, this bysshoppe Grosthede shuld dye in the.xvii. yere of thys kynge Henry/ the whyche sayenge agreeth better with the storye, except that the sayde pope lyued after the deth of the sayde bysshoppe.vi.yere.

Anno domini.M.CC.l.

Johñ Norman.

Anno domini.M.CC.li.

Humfrey Basse.

Anno.xxxiiii.

wyllyam fyz Rycharde.

IN this.xxxiiii. yere was an exedynge wynde, the whyche in sondry places of England dyd great harme/ whyche was in the begynnynge of this yere vppon the daye of Symon and Jude. About thys tyme in the duchy of Burgoyne as testifyeth Fasciculus temporũ and other an hyll remouyd from hys proper place, and glode by many a myle/ and lastely ioyned hym vnto other hyllys. In the whyche glydynge or ronnynge, the sayde hyll oppressyd or slewe.v. thousande people. And thys yere Symon fyz mary alderman of London/ for hys dysobedyence and euyll counsaill that he gaue vnto Margarete Uyell, before in the xxxi. yere of thys kynge touchyd, wyth other secret labours and maters entendyd by hym to the hurte of the cytye, was dyschargyd of hys aldermanshyppe, and put oute of the counsayll of the cytye.

Anno domini.M.CC.li.

Adam Balynge.

Anno domini.M.CC.lii.

Laurence Frowyke.

Anno.xxxv.

Nycholas Batte.

IN thys.xxxv. yere of kynge Henry, beganne the frere Augustynes to buylde or inhabyte them in walys, in a place callyd woodhouse.

And in this yere maryed kyng Henry his doughter Mary, or after some wryters Margarete, vnto Alexander kynge of Scottys at the cytye of yorke/ and dyd receyue homage of the sayde Alexander for the kyngedome of Scottes, or for the prouynce of Scotlande, in lyke maner as many of his progenytours had done dyuerse and many tymes before/ as in this worke both before thys tyme and also after is shewyd.

Anno domini.M.CC.li.

Johñ Tolefon.

Anno domini.M.CC.liii.

wyllyam Durham.

Anno.xxxvi.

Thomas wymborne.

IN thys .xxxvi. yere, the kynge graunted vnto the shyryues of London, that they shulde yerely be alowyed of .vii. pounde, for certayne pryuyleges or grounde belongynge to sayncte Paules chyrche/ the whych at this daye is allowyd by the Barons of the kynges exchekier, to euery shyryue when they make theyr accompte in the offyce of the pype. Also thys yere was graũted by the kynge for the citesens moze ease/that where before tyme they vsyd yerely to present theyr mayre to ꝑ kynges presence, in any such place as he then were in Englande, that nowe from thys tyme forthwarde they shulde for lacke of the kynges presence beynge at westmynster, presente theyr mayre so chosen vnto the barons of hys Exchekier/ and there to be swozne & admyttyd as he before tymes was before the kynge.

Anno domini .M. CC. lii. Anno domini .M. CC. liii.

Johñ Northampton.

Nycholas Batte. Anno .xxxvii.

Rycharde Pycarde.

IN thys .xxxvii. yere/ the water of the see aboute the daye of sayncte Paulyn in the moneth of January rose of suche heyghte, that yt drowned many vyllagys and housys nere vnto yt in dyuerse places of Englande. And thys yere the kynge, the quene, and syr Edwarde his son, wyth Bonyface archebyshoppe of Caunterburye, and dyuerse other nobles of the realme/ sayled into Normandye and tarved at Burdeaux a certayne of tyme. But of theyr dedys or cause of theyr saylynge thyther, is no mencyon made in the cronycle of England. How be yt in the Frenche boke yt is shewed, the cause was to ioyne Edwarde the kynges sonne vnto the syster of ꝑ kyng of Spayne by marvage.

This yere also the water of Thamys sprange so hygh, that yt drowned many housys about the waters syde/ by meane wherof myche marchaundyse was perysshed and lost. And thys yere the cytezyns hadde graunted of the kynge, that no cytesyns shulde paye scauage or tolle for any beestes by them brought, as they before tymes hadde vsyd.

Anno domini .M. CC. liii. Anno domini .M. CC. liiii.

Robert Belyngton.

Rycharde Hardell. Anno .xxxviii.

Ranfe Aschewye.

IN thys .xxxviii. yere, by procurement of syr Rycharde erle of Cornewayll, for dysplesure whyche he bare towarde ꝑ citye for exchaũge of certayne grounde to the same belongynge/ the kynge vnder coloure that the mayre hadde not done due execucyon vppon the bakers for lacke of theyr syzys, sealed the lyber-

tyes of the cytye. That ys to be vnderstanden, that where the mayre and comynalte of the cytye, hadde by the kynges graunte the cytye to ferme wyth dyuerse customys and offyces, for assynted and ascertayned summe of money/ now the kyng sette in offycers at hys pleasure, the whyche were accomptable vnto hym

for all reuenues and profytes that grew wythin the sayde cytye. But wythin foure dayes folowynge the feste of saynte Edmunde the byshop, or by the.xix. daye of Nouember/ the cytesyns agreed wyth the sayde erle for .vi.hundred marke. After whych agrement wyth hym concluded, they soone after were restored vnto theyr lybertyes.

This yere syr Edward the kynges sonne and heyre was maryed vnto Eleanour ꝑ kinges sister of Spayn. And in the Cristmas weke, the kyng landed at Douer, and ꝑ quene wyth hym, wyth many other lordes. when the kynge was comen to London, he was lodgyd in the towre / where he sent for to come vnto hym the mayre and the shyrues, wyth whom he resoned greuously for the escape of one callyd Johñ Gate. This Johñ had murderyd a pryour allyed vnto the kynge. The mayre layde the charge of this mater from hym vnto ꝑ shyrues, for so myche as to theym belonged the keppynge of all prysons wyth in the cytye/ so that the mayre returnyd home, and the shyrues remayned there as prisoners by ꝑ space of a moneth after or more. And in theyr places and for theym were chosen Steuen Oystergate & Henry walmoode. But how the old shyrues passyd out of the kynges daunger I fynde not.

Anno domini. M. CC. lttti.

Rycharde Hader.

Anno domini. M. CC. lv.

Stephan Oystergate.

Anno. xxxix.

Henry walmoode.

IN this. xxxix. yere in the feaste of saynte Etheldrede / dame Eleanour wyfe vnto the kynges son syr Edwarde, came vnto London/ where she was honorably receued of the cytesyns, and the cytye rychely curteyned and garnysshed wyth dyuerse ryche clothes/ where the kynge was present at her commynge. And she was honorably cõueyed through the cytye to saynte Johñs wythoute Smythfelde, and there lodgyd for a whyle. But after she was remouyd vnto Sauoy.

It was not longe after ꝑ the kyng sealyd the lybertyes of the cytye, for certayne money whyche ꝑ quene clayme for her ryght of the cytesyns/ so that about saynte Martyns tyde in Nouẽber, they gaue vnto his grace .iiii.hundred marke, and then were restored to theyr sayde lybertyes/ and the kynges vnder treasourer dischargyd, the whych for ꝑ tyme was made custos or keper of the cytye. In the feast of saynte Scycyle, or the. xxii. daye of nouember ensuynge, were brought vnto westmynster. lxxx. and xxii. Jewes from Lyncoln/ the which were also accusyd of the crucyfyenge of a chyld at Lyncolne in the dessyte of Crystes relygyon/ whyche Jewes were after sent vnto ꝑ towre of London. Of the whyche in procesle of tyme after, xviii. were conuycte and hangyd/ & the tother remayned long after in prysson. In the vygyll of saynt Andrew syr Edwarde the kynges sonne came to London from beyonde the see. And the kyng of Scottys with the quene hys wyfe came in the somer season vnto the kynge to hys maner of woodstoke / where he dysporyd hym a season, and after returned into Scotlande/ leuynge his wyfe wyth her mother tyll she were lyghtyd of chylde. And vppon ꝑ day of the decollacyon of saynte Johñ/

the kyng

the kynge, the quene, and the quene of Scottes came to London / where they were honorably receyued, and so conueyed vnto westmynster.

Anno domini. M. CC. lv.

Anno domini. M. CC. lvi.

Mathew Bokerell.

Rycharde Hardell.

Anno .xl.

Johñ Mynoure.

IN thys .xl. yere, entryd ꝑ land dyuers lordes of Almayne / the whych in Crystmas weke vppon the day of ꝑ Innocentes, made homage vnto syr Rychard erle of Cornewayl & brother to the kynge / the whych as then stoode kyng of Almayne and of Romayns. And the thursdaye nexte folowynge he departed from the kynges courte, and spedde hym wyth his wyfe and syr Henry his sonne vnto the see syde / and after toke shyppyng in Jarnesay the .xxvii. day of Apryll, and landed at Dordreth in Holande the fyrste daye of Maye nexte ensuynge. And vppon allencyon day after, he was crowned kynge of Romayns in the citye of Aquisgranum.

Thys yere vppon the fyrste daye of Auguste / the kynge toke hys iourney towarde walys, for to subdue Lewelyn the sonne of Gryffyth the whyche wyth his welshemen rebellyd agayne the kynge, for so mych as syr Edwarde hys son to whom he hadde lytle before geuē the erledome of Chester, wolde haue chaunged some of theyr skyttyshe condycyons. And for to bryng hys purpose the better aboute / he sente for an armye of souldiours into Irlande, and taryed for theyr commynge at hys castell of Genocke. But the yere passed farre on or hys people were gatheryd / so that by the aduyse of hys lordes he strengthyd there certayne castellys and returned for that yere into Englande.

And aboute the feaste of the Natyuyte of our ladye / a concorde and a peace was cōcluded betwene ꝑ Londyners & the abbot of the holy crosse of waltham / the whych hadde ben in suyte many yeres before, for certayne dystresses takē by the abbottis officers of the Lōdoners, when they came wyth theyr mercymonyes vnto the fayre of waltham / where as now yt is agreed that all suche dystressys shulde be restoryd / and yf any were perysshed or loste for longe kepynge, that then the abbot to contente and pay to the partyes the value in money, of suche distressys so perysshed or loste / and that the cytesyns shulde enioy the lybertyes of that fayre euer after, wythoute payenge of any tollage or toll.

Anno domini. M. CC. lvi.

Anno domini. M. CC. lvii.

Rycharde Ewell.

Rycharde Hardell.

Anno. xli.

wyllyam Athewy.

IN this .xli. yere & begynnynge of the same, was founden in the kynges warderobe at westminster a byll or rolle closyd in grene ware, and not knowē from whens yt shuld come / in the whyche rolle was cōteyned dyuerse articles agayne ꝑ mayre and rulers of the cytye of London, and that by theym the comynaltye of the cytye was greuously talked and

wrongyd. whyche byll was presentyd at length to the kynge. wherupon he anon sent Johñ Mancell one of his iustycys vnto London / and there in the feaste of the conuersyon of saynt Paule by the kynges authoryte, callyd at Paulys crosse a Folkmot / beynge there presente syr Rychard de Clare erle of Glouceter, & dyuerse other of the kynges counsayll. where the sayde Johñ Mancell causyd the sayde rolle to be redde before the compynaltye of the cytye / & after shewyd to the people that ỳ kynges pleasure and mynde was, that they shuld be ruiyd with iustyce / and that the lybertyes of the cytye shuld be mayntayned in euery poynte. And yf the kynge myghte knowe those persones that so hadde wrongyd the cominaltye of the citye / they shuld be greuously punyshed to the example of other. And that done, the sayde Johñ Mansell chargyd the mayre, that euery Alderman in hys warde shulde vppon the morowe folowyng assemble hys wardemote / & that all those wardemotys shuld assemble in one place, and chuse of theym selfe wythout any counsayll or aduyse of any of theyr alderme. xxvi. persons, and them to present before the lordes and hym, at the same houre of ỳ next day in the bysshoppes paleys at Paulys. Then vppon the morow all thynge was done accordynge to hys commaundement. And when ỳ sayd xxvi. persones were presentyd before the sayde Johñ Mansell, Henry Baa iustycys & other / the sayd Johñ sayde vnto theym, that they vppon theyr othe shuld certyfye all such persones as they knewe gylty in the artycles before vnto the compynaltye shewyd. whereunto the sayde. xxvi. cytesyns answeryd, ỳ yt was contrary theyr lybertyes to be sworne so many, for any mater of trespas betwene the kynge and any of hys cytezyns / wherfore they requyred a sparynge. wyth whych answere the sayd Johñ Mansell beynge dyscontentyd / warnyd theym to appere before the kynges coũsayll at ỳ Guyldehall vppon the morowe folowynge / where they kepte theyr daye. And thyther came the sayde iustycys Johñ Mansell, & Henry Baa, syr Henry wengham chauncellet of Englande, Phylyppe Louell vndertreasorer, and dyuerse other of the kynges counsayll. Then the sayde Johñ Mansell erorytyd the sayde personys to be sworne by many meanys, as he the other daye hadde done. But all was in vayne / for they excusyd theym alway that yt was contrary theyr othe and lybertye of theyr cytye. wherfore the kynges counsayll departed from the hall in partye dyscontentyd, & shewyd vnto the kynge the demeanour of the sayde cytesyns.

Vppon the euen of ỳ Purificacyon of our lady, ỳ mayre beyng warned ỳ the kyng shuld come to westmynster / he wyth the more parte of the Aldermen rode vnto Knyghtbrydge, and houyd there to salute the kynge, and to knowe his forther pleasure. But when the kynge came nere that place and harde of theyr beynge there / he sent vnto them a squyre of household and chargyd theym that they shulde not presume to come in hys syght. wyth whyche message they beyng greatly dyscõfortyd, retourned home to the cytye. Afterwarde in the Octaues of the purifycacyon of our Ladye, returned from the courte Wychacll Tony and Adam Balynge / the whyche before were sente by the mayre to such frendes as they had in the courte, to knowe the cause of the kynges hyghe displeasure. The whych brought worde that the kyng was well mynded vnto the citye / but

he was

he was in full purpose to haue suche persones chastised that hadde oppressyd the comynaltye of the same. Upon the morow folowynge, came vnto ꝑ Guyldhall Johñ Wansell wyth other of the kynges counsayll / the whych to the people there assembled, shewyd many fayre & plesaunt wordes. Amonge the whych he declared that the kynges mynde & wyll was, to correcte all suche persones as had oppressyd the comynaltye of that his derysle beloyd cytye / and asked of the commons whyther they wolde be agreable vnto the same. The whych incontynently many suche as knewe litle what the mater ment, cryed without dyscrecyon, ye, ye, ye, nothyng regardynge the lybertye of the cytye. And after ꝑ graũt thus had of the cõmons / the sayde Johñ Wansell dyscharged the mayre, shyrues, & chamberleyn of theyr offyces / and delyuerd the custodye therof vnto the constable of the towre / and putte in the rome of the shyrues Wychaell Tony and Johñ Audryan. And ouer that, all tollys of tollys and tallages before made, were delyuerd vnto the sayd Johñ Wãsell / the whych he there sealyd and redeliuerd them vnto the chamberleyne. when the cõmons hadde beholden all thys besynesse, they retourned vnto theyr housys all confusyd.

This mater thus ordered / the sayd Johñ Wansell wyth dyuerse of the kynges counsayll kept theyr courtes dayly the sondayes excepte, tyll the fyrste sondaye of lent, the whych that yere was the .xxv. daye of Februarye / callyng before hym .xii. wardes, of ꝑ cytye. Of the whyche .xii. wardes of euerych of them was take thre men, so that of those .xii. wardes .xxxvi. me were impanellyd and swore, for to enquyre of the forsayd artycles, and what persons of the cytye had offendyd in them. This courte thus kept and holden at Guyldehall / no man was callyd to answere, nor no questyon put vnto any person by the sayd enquest or by any other. Uppon the sayd sonday of lent, the mayre, alder men, and shyrues, wyth the sayd enqueste, & foure men of euery warde, were chargyd to appere at westmynster before the kynge / at whych appearaunce they were contermaũdyd tyll vppon the nexte morowe. At whyche season they commyng into the kynges exchekyr / sonde syttyng there the erles of Glouceter, and of warwyke, Johñ Wansell, Henry Baa tusticys, the cõstable of the towre, the custos of the cytye, and dyuers other of the kynges counsayll. Then was callyd by name Rafe hardell that yere mayre, Nycholas Batte, Nycholas fyz Josne, Mathew Bokerel, Johñ Tolesham, and Johñ le Wynoure alder men. Then sayde Johñ Wansell, ꝑ the kynge by his lawes and inquysycyon of the cytesyns of the cytye, had founden theym culpable, that they had wronged and hurte the comynaltye of hys cytye by dyuers meanes, as by the sayde inquysycyons appeared / and forthwyth causyd yt to be redde before them. And whẽ the more parte therof was redde, he sayd vnto theym: thus may you se that the comynaltye of the sayde cytye hath ben by you greuously oppressyd / and by your meanys and counsayll the common weale of the same dystroyed, as by alterynge of the tollys and other good auncyent customys, turnynge them to your synguler auauntage & lucre. All whyche maters the sayde Rafe and his company denayed / and that the commons was not by any suche meanys by them nor none of them greuyd or hurte / and that they offeryd to be tustyfyed and iudged by the lawe and customys of the cytye.

Then

Then Henry Baa iustyce, askyd of them whyther they wolde byde the aduenture of the enquery that they hadde harde redde before / or elys stande vppon the sayeng of the other wardes, that yet had not ben sworne, but they kepte theym to theyr fyrste answere. Then Johñ Wansell frayned of ỳ mayre what was theyr lawe and custome. The mayre answered and sayde, that for trespace of a cytesyn done agayne ỳ kynge, he shulde defende hym by .xii. of the sayde cytesyns / and for murder or sleynge of a man by .xxx. cytesyns / & for trespace agayn a straunger by the othe of .vi. and hym selfe. Then after many reasons made by the sayde Johñ Wansell, and also by the mayre and his aldermen/ daye was gyuen to them to appere vppon the morow before the kynge and his counsell.

Vppon the day folowynge ỳ kyng wyth many of his lordes syttynge in the sayde exchekyr, the forsayde inquysycyon was redde. And that done the mayre and aldermen were called in by name/ and two aldermen more whyche before were not callyd / that is to saye Arnolde Thedmare & Henry walmode. when Rafe Hardell had harde the kynge speke in the mater/ he toke suche fere that he and Nycholas Batte wythout farther answere, put them in the kynges grace/ sayyd to theym theyr lybertyes and fraunchyses of the cytye. But the other .vi. besought the kyng of his ryght wysenes that they myghte then be demyd after the lawes and customys of the cytye. Then was layde vnto theyr charge that ouer many wronges by theym done to the kynge and the comynaltye of the cytye, they had alteryd ỳ kynges beame, and orderyd it to the aduauntage of them selfe and other ryche men of the cytye. wherun to the partyes answeryd, and sayde that the alteracion of the beame was not done by them onely/ but by ỳ aduyce and consente of .x. hundred of the beste of the cytye. For where before tyme the weyer vsyd to lene hys draught towarde the marchaundyse so that the byar hadde by that meane l. or lxii. pounde in a draught to hys aduauntage, and the seller so inyche dysauauntage/ nowe for indyfferencye and egalytye of both personys or marchaũtys, was ordeyned that the beame shulde stand vpryght, ỳ clefe therof enclynynge to neyther partie/ as yt doth in weyenge of golde and syluer/ and the byer to haue alowed of the seller for all thynges .iiii. poũde onely in euery draught.

After these reasons and other by theym made/ the kynge commaunded that vpon the morynynge folowynge, a folkmoot shulde be callyd at Paulys crosse / & so that courte was dyssolvyd, and the mayre & the other returned to London. Vppon the morowe the folkmoot beynge at Pawles crosse assemblyd / there .vi. aldermen herynge the murmuracion of the common people, and knowynge that the aldermen nor the worshypfull of the city shuld haue litle or no sayeng in thys mater, ferynge theyr cause pode into a chanons house of Powlys/ where at that tyme the sayde Johan Wansel and other sent from the kynge tarved the assemblynge of the people/ and shewyd vnto theym that they entendyd not any lenger to plede wyth the kynge, but were contentyd to put them fully in the kynges grace and mercy/ sauyng alway to them and all other cytesyns theyr lybertye and fraunchyse of the cytye. After whyche agrement the sayde Johan Wansell wyth the other came vnto the courte of Folkmoot/ where vnto the people was rehersyd a fayre and a pleasaunt tale, prouyding to them

that

that theyr lybertyes shulde be hooly and inuyolatly preserued by ꝑ kyng, wyth many other thynges to ꝑ great comforte of the common people. And lastely was aryd of them whether the law and custome were such as aboue is rehersyd or no. wherunto lyke vndyscret and vnlerned people they answeryd & cryed rabbysshely nay, nay, nay/ not wythstãdynge that the sayd law and custome hadde before tymes ben vsed tyme oute of mynde. But to thys was nother mayre nor aldermen nor other of the great of the cytye that myghte impugne or make any reason, for the vpholdynge of theyr auncyent lawys or customys.

And no wonder though the kynge were thus hedy or greuouse to the cytye/ for by suche cupll dyspolyd and malycyouse people as he had aboute hym, the lande was yll rulyd, & myth myscheke was vsyd. wherof ensuyd myche sorow after, as ye shall here in the sequele of the storye. Then Johñ Mansell callyd the mayre and aldermen before hym / and chargyd them to be at westmynster the morowe folowynge, to gyue attendaunce vpon the kynges grace. Uppon the morow the mayre and aldermen tarynge the kynges commynge in the great hall at westmynster/ lastely the kynge came into saynte Stephans chapell. where a season he helde a coũ sayll wyth his lordes/ and after yode into the chekyr chamber, & there sat hym downe and hys lordes aboute hym. Anon after the mayre and aldermen were callyd into the sayde chamber, and soone there after callyd by name, and commaundyd to stande nere to the barre. Then Henry Baa iustyce sayde vnto the mayre and the xii. aldermen, that for so myche as by fourme of the kynges lawes, they were founde culpable in certayne articles touchynge trãsgressyon agayn the kynge/ therfore the courte awardyd that they shulde make fyne and raunsome after the dyscrecyon of the sayde courte. But for they hadde put theym in the kynges grace and mercy/ the kynge hath commaundyd the fyne to be put in respyte, that ye be not payned so greuously as ye haue deserued. After whyche iudgement gyuen, they kneled downe/ and then the mayre wyth weppynge terys, thanked the kynge of his bountye & goodnesse, and besought hym to be good and gracyous lorde vnto the cytye, and vnto them as hys faythfull subiectys. wherunto the kynge made none answere, but rose streyght vppe and so yode hys waye leuynge them there. Anon as the kynge was departyd, they were all arestyd and kepte there, tyll they had founden suerty/ and euerych alderman of theym dyscharged of his warde & office ꝑ they had wythin the cytye. But shortly after they put in suertyes, and so returnyd heuely to London. And shortely after was wyllyam fys Rycharde by the kynges commaundement made mayre, and Thomas fys Thomas and wyllyam Grappysgate shyryues. After this, daye by daye the chamberlayn was callyd to accõpte before the sayde Johñ Mansell, of all suche tollys as were gadered in tyme of the mayraltie of Johñ Tolesham and of Rafe Hardell/ beynge present to here the sayde accompte dyuerse of the comynaltie of the cytye, but none of the heddys. By the whyche accompt no defaute myght be arrectyd vnto any of the forenamed persones conuycte afore the kynge. By reason wherof dyuerse of theym were admyttyd to the kynges fauour shortly after, and restored to theyr offyces agayne/ but not wythout payeng of money, wher of the certaynte is not knowen.

And in this yere whete was so scãte, that

yt was solde at London for .xviiii.s. a quarter. And scanter shulde haue ben, yf plenty hadde not come out of Almayne/ for in Fraunce and Normandye yt fayled in lykewyse. By meane of this derth & scarcytie, mych poore people dyed for hunger/ and many of dyuerse countreys of Englande came vnto the citye, and nere there aboute for comforte of vytayll/ for yt then was better chepe in London then in many shyres of England there aboute. And soone after was the forenamed Johñ Wansell made knyghte & cheefe iustyce of England.

IN thys.xli. yere also/ ỹ kynge about the feast of saynt Barnabe in the moneth of Juny, kepte hys hyghe courte of parlyament at hys towne of Orenford. Thys of some writers is named insane parliamentum) that is to meane the woode or madde parlyament. For at this counsayll were made many actys agayne the kynges prerogatyue & pleasure, for the reformacion of the state of the lande/ whyche after prouyd to the cõfusyon and hurte of the lande, & deth and destruccyon of many noble men/ so that by occasyon therof began the famouse stryke callyd at thys day the Barons warre. wherof ensued mych myscheefe as hereafter shalbe shewyd and declared more at large.

Then as aboue is sayde, to auoyde the enormytes and to reformme the euyll rule then vsyd in the lande, by suche persons as dayly were about the kynge/ many and dyuerse ordynaunces were made, wherof the tenoure is sette oute in the ende of this boke. wherunto the kynge somdeale agayne hys wyll, wyth syr Edwarde hys sonne and other agreed. And for theese actys shulde be holden ferme & stable/ at thys parlyament was chosyn.xii. Peeres, whyche were named Douze Peris/ to whõ authorite was gyuen by strength of this parliamẽt. to correcte all such as offendyd in the kynge of theese ordinaũces and other, by the sayd twelue Peeres after to be deuysed and ordeyned, touchyng and cõcernyng ỹ same mater & purpose. Of whyche.xii. Peeres the names ensue. Fyrste the archebyshop of Cauntorbury, the byshoppe of worceter, syr Roger Bygotte then erle of Norffolk and marshall of Englande, syr Symonde de Mountfortde erle of Leycester, syr Rychard Clare erle of Glouceter, syr Humfrey Bothum erle of Herforde, of warwyke, and of Arundell, syr Johñ Wansell cheefe iustyce of Englande, syr Roger Mortymer, syr Hugh Bygraue, syr Petyr de Sauoy, syr Jamys Audeley, and syr Peter de Mountforde. And for the kynges brother vppon the moders syde, that is to saye syr Eym erle of wynchester, syr wyllyam de Valaũce, syr Godfrey de Lindesey, and syr Guyde Lyndesey, wold not assente vnto the foresayde ordynaunces/ they wythdrew them toward the see syde wyth suche stuffe as they hadde, and wold haue departyd ỹ land yf they myght then haue had shyppynge/ for lacke wherof they were fayne to retourne, and so yode vnto wynchester. But yt was not longe after that they were lycensyd to departe the lande wyth a certayne companye, and a certayne summe of money to paye for theyr costys/ and theyr daye sette by Bartylmew tyde to auoyde vppon payne of prysonement, whyche daye by them was kepte.

It was not longe after the kynges shynge of this parlyament, but that stryfe and varyaũce began to kyndle betwene the kynge and the erlys of Leyceter and of Glouceter, by meane of such officers as the sayd erles had remouyd and put other in theyr romys.

nys. Amonge the whyche Johan Mäsell was dyscarged of his offyce, and syr Hugh Bygotte then admytted for hym. And for the forsayde Pyers harde of the murmure in the courte, feryng that the kynge shuld be aduertysed shortely to alter from his promyse/ therfore they entēdyng to make theyr partye the strōger, vpon the morowe folowynge Marye Magdaleyns daye/ the kyng beyng at westmynster, the erle Marshall, the erle of Leycester, wyth dyuerse other came vnto the Guyldehall of Lōdon, where the mayre, aldermen, and comynaltye of the cytye were assembled/ where the sayd lordes shewyd an instrument or wrytynge, at the whyche hynge many labellys wyth sealys, as the kynges seale, syr Edwarde hys sonnes seale, wyth many other of the nobles of the lande, the whyche was the contente of the artycles whych were ordeyned and made at Orenforde / wyllynge the mayre and aldermen (cōsyderynge the sayd actys were made to the honoure of god, hydelyte vnto the kynge, & profyte of the realme) that they wold also in vpholdynge of the same, sette theyr common seale of the cytye. After which requeste thus to the mayre and the cytesyns made, after aduyse and counsayll amonge theym selfe taken/ they desyred a sparyng of the lordes, tyll they myght speke wyth ỳ kyng and know his pleasure in that behafe. But fynally no sparynge at that tyme myghte be graunted / so that in the ende by the labour that the lordes made, wyth helpe of suche solycytoures as they hadde wythin the cytye, the common seale was put to, and the mayre and dyuerse of the cytye swore to maynteyn the same/ theyr allegeaunce sauyd to the kyng wyth preseruacyon of the lybertyes and fraunchyses / and so departed.

Then daye by daye after the sayd douze Peres assemblyd at the newe temple in where they kept theyr counsayles and courtes for the reformacyon of the olde greuys/ and remoued from the kynge dyuerse of hys menyall of houselde, and sette in theyr places and offyces suche as lyked theym.

And vppon the.xx. daye of August/ proclamacyon was made in dyuerse accustomyd places of the sayde cytye, that none of the kynges takers shulde take any thynge wythin the cytye wythout the wyll of the owner, excepte two tunne of wyne, whyche the kyng accustomably hadde of euery shyppe comynge from Burdeaux, payenge but .xl. s. for a tunne. By meane of whyche proclamacyon nothynge was taken by the kynges officers, but yt were streyght payed fore wythin the cytye and lybertye of the same / whyche blaunce contynued but a whyle.

Anno domini. M. CC. lviii. Anno domini. M. CC. lviii.

Draper. Thomas syr Rycharde.

Rycharde Hardell. Anno .xlii.

Robert Catelyon.

IN this .xlii. yere/ the kyng held one parlyament at westmynster and a nother, or elles prorogyd the same to wynchester. And in this yere, syr Hugh Bygotte iustyce, wyth Roger Turkelay and other kept his courte at sayncte Sauyours / and helde there the plees callyd Itinerit,

The whyche is to meane the trauay lynge or the waye pleas. For ye shall vnderstande that at those dayes they were kepte in dyuerse places of Englande, whyche nowe ben holden at westmynster, and iudges ordeyned to kepe a cyrcuyte, as now they kepe the syzys in tyme of vacacyõ. At this sayde courte these iudges ponyshed sore baylyes and other officers, that before theym were conuycte for dyuers trespassys/ and specyally for taykynge of merceamentes otherwyse then the lawe theym commaundyd. For the whych the sayd cheefe iustyce prysoned them/and after sessyd them at greuous fynys. Also he somonyd the cytesyns of London to come vnto the sayde courte, for tollys that they hadde taken vppon the farther syde of the water. But yt was answered that the tollys that they there toke were take lawfully, as they were redy to proue in places and court conuenyent to the same, whyche was wythin the precyncte of theyr lybertye. But not wythstandynge that answere, the sayde syr Hughe chargyd vppon quelle xii. knyghters of Surrey, to enquyre of that mater and other/ the whych acquytrd the sayde cytesyns, and shewyd that the sayde tolle belongyd to them of ryghte.

In processe of tyme after, the sayd syr Hugh wyth other came to Guyld hall, and kepte hys courte and pleas there, wythout all order of lawe, and contrarye to the lybertyes of the cytye/ and there punyshed the bakers for lacke of syze by the Tumbercll, where before tymes they were punyshed by the pyllory/and ordeyned many thynges at hys wyll, more then by any good order of lawe.

Thys yere vppon Candelmasse euen came vnto London from beyonde the see Rychardc kynge of Almayne and erle of Cornewayll, wyth hys wyfe and chyldren/ whyche had ben there and taken possessyon of that kyngedome as before is shewyd. Agayne whose commynge the cytye of London was rychely hãged wyth clothes of syike and aras / & royously he was receyuyd of the cytesyns.

Anno domini. M. CC. lviii.

Peperer.

Johñ Gylours.

Anno domini. M. CC. lix.

Johñ Adyan.

Anno. xliii.

Robert Cornehyll.

IN thys. xliii. yere, the frydaye folowynge the feaste of Symonde and Jude, in the parlyament holden at westmynster / were radde in presence of all the lordes and commynaltye at sondry tymes, all the actys and ordynaũces before made in ỹ parliament holden at Orenford, wyth certayn other artycles by ỹ fore sayd xii. Peers there vnto added. After redyng of which articles, there be ynge trusted the archebyshoppe of Caunterbury, wyth dyuerse other to the nomber of. xx. byshoppes, besyde abbotes & other/ denouncyd all them accursyd that attemptyd in worde or dede to breke the sayd actes or any of them. ℞ In this parliamẽt also was graunted vnto the kynge a taske cal lyd the Scutage / that is to meane xl.s. of euery knyghtes fee thorough Englande / the whyche extendyd to a great summe of money. For after dyuerse writers, there be in Englãde in possessyon of the spyrytualtye and of the temporaltye, or at that dayes were, ouer & beyonde. ix M. knyghtes fees. whych after ỹ rate shuld extende vnto. vi. score. M. li. & more. And yf it shuld be gadered of ỹ tẽporal mẽ

Scutage

oncly/

onely / than yt shulde not amounte ouer the summe of .lxiiii. thousande pounde. The kynge vppon the daye of sayncte Leonarde, or the .vi. daye of Nouember came vnto Pawlys, where by his commaundement was assembled the courte of Folkmoot/ where the kynge accordynge to the former ordynaunces made, axyd lycence of the comynaltye of the cytye for to passe the see/ & promysed there in the presence of a great multytude of people, that he wolde be good and gracyous lorde vnto the cytye, by the mouth of syr Hugh Bygotte hys cheke iustyce, and to maynteyne theyr lybertyes vnhurte. For ꝑ whyche the people for ioye made an excedynge showte.

Uppon the .viii. day of Nouember the kynge rode thorouge the cytye to warde the see syde. And vppon the daye of sayncte Bryce or the .xiii. daye of Nouember he toke hys shyppe, and so sayled vnto Burdeaux. where when he had taryed a season, he rode vnto the Frenche kynge then beyng holy Lewys or the tenth Lewys vnto Paris. Of whom he was honorably receyued, and lodged hym in his own paleys by ꝑ space of an hole weke makynge to hym great feast, & gyuynge to hym and hys ryche & many gyftes. And from thens kynge Henry rode vnto sayncte Denys / where of the abbot and conuent he was receyued wyth processyon, and taryed there by the space of a moneth. In whyche season a marryage was concludyd betwene Johñ duke of Bryttayne and one of his doughters. And at hys departynge he gaue to the abbot a cuppe of golde, & a basyn wyth an ewer of syluer. And for hys more consolacyon / kyng Lewys assygned vnto hym a certayne lordes & other noble men of Fraunce to gyue attendaunce vppon hym, and to conuey hym, and to shewe hym a parte of Fraunce, wyth all dysporte and hunynge and haukynge and other many pleasures of the countrey. In whych passe tyme the Frenche kyng assembled hys parlyament at Parys / where he shewyd vnto hys lordes that hys conscyence was grudgyd, wyth ꝑ withholdyng of all such landes as Phylyppe the second wan from kynge Johñ in Normandye / vpon ꝑ whych he desyred theyr sayth full and trutefull counsayll. where after many reasons and argumentes made, yt was concludyd for a fynall concorde to be hadde betwene kynge Henry and hym, that yf kyng Henry wyth the agremente of hys lordes wolde resygne into the Frenche kynges handes, all suche tytle and ryghte as he hadde in the hole duchye of Normandye, of Angeou, poyteau, and Mayne, for hym and for his heyres for euer/ that then the Frenche kynge of his great bountye and grace, shulde gyue vnto the kynge of Englande and to hys heyres kynges, the lordshyppe of Guyan, Angeou, and Mayne / and by ryghtfull tytle callyd euer after duke of Guyan / and ouer that he shulde be admyttyd for a Pere of Fraunce. to all whyche condycyons as affyrmyth and wytnessyth the Frenche cronycle, kynge Henry at hys retourne from hys dysporte was agreable/ and wyth consente of hys baronye, and in theyr presence, wyth also the baronye of Fraunce, dyd hys homage vnto the sayde Lewys for the duchye of Guyan, and after made hys othe accordynge to the same.

And after great gyftes receyued on eyther syde/ kynge Henry returned vnto Burdeaux.

Of thys peace and concorde speketh a cronycyler named Guydo or Guy/ & sayth that kyng Henry sayled into

Fraunce, and asked restytucyon of the forenamed Frenche kyng, of all suche landes as hys ayle Phylyppe the seconde had wyth ertorte power taken from kynge Johñ hys father. But for he sande the Frenche kynge straunge in his answere, & also had lytle truste in hys lordes for to haue theyr ayde/ he fell to agrement wyth the Frenche kynge, and solde to hym all his tytle that he had in Normandye, Gascoyn, and Guyan/ ꝑ whych ertendyd to the yerely value of .xx. thousande pounde/ takynge for the same tytle .iii. hūdred thousand pound of small Turon money, whereof a pounde is in value after sterlynge money but .ii. s. iii. d. or there about/ so that he shulde after that rate haue for his sayde tytle after the value of sterlynge money .xxxiii. thousand seuen hundred and .l. pounde.

In the season and tyme that kyng Henry was thus occupyed in Fraunce/ dyssencyon fell in Englande betwene syr Edwarde the kynges son, and syr Rycharde erle of Gloucester. For appeasyng wherof a parleamēt, whyche is to meane a counsayll of hys lordes was callyd at westmynster/ whyche contynued by the space of .iii. wekes and more. To the whyche counsayll the lordes came wyth greate companyes/ and specyally the sayde syr Edwarde, and the erle of Gloucester, the whyche entendyd to haue lodged within the city. wherfore the mayre rode vnto the bysshop of worcester, and syr Hugh Bygotte, and syr Phylyppe Basset, to whome the kynge wyth the archbysshoppe of Caunterburye had taken the rule of the lande in hys absence/ the whyche all went vnto the kynge of Almayne to haue hys aduyse in that mater. where it was concludyd, that nother the sayde Edwarde nor the erle shuld come wythin the cytye then there to be lodgyd, nor none that helde vpon eyther of that partyes. And forther yt was prouydyd, that all suche wythin the cytye as were of the age of .xb. yeres and aboue, shulde be in harnes to watche and kepe the cytye bothe daye and nyght/ and that the gates shulde be kept shyt vppon the daye, and a certayne men in harneys to kepe euery gate of the cytye. And soone after for the sauegarde of the cytye, and sure keppynge of the peace wythin the same/ the kynge of Romaynes wyth the sayde syr Hughe and syr Phylyppe, came into the cytye and there were lodged with theyr companyes/ and suche other as they wolde assygne to strength the cytye yf nede required.

Then aboute the feaste of saynte Marke the kynge came to London from beyonde the see, and was lodgyd at the bysshoppe of Londons paleys. After whose commynge by his assygnement, the erle of Gloucester was then lodged wythin the cytye, and syr Edwarde hys sonne was lodgyd in hys owne palays at westmynster. And soone after the kynge commaunded hym to be lodgyd at saynt Johñis/ and all the other lordes were lodgyd in other places wythoute the cytye. And the kyng of Romayns remoued agayne to westmynster. In whych tyme a direccyon was take betwene the sayd ptyes, & a new assemble and parlyament assygned to be kept at westmynster in the quindena of saynt Johñ Baptyst. And for that then all thynge myght not be sette in an order, yt was prorogyd vnto the feast of saynt Edwarde/ at the which season all thyng was put at reste for a whyle. In this yere also fell that happe of the Jewe of Tewkysbury/ whyche fell into a gonge vppon the saterdaye, and wolde not for reuerēce of his sabbot day be plucked out

wherof

wherof herynge the erle of Glouceter, that the Jewe dyd so great reuerence to hys sabbot daye/thought he wold do as myche to his holy daye whych was sondaye/ and so kept hym there tyll monday, at which season he was founden dede.

Anno domini.M.CC.lx. Anno domini.M.CC.lx.

Adam Browne.

wyllyam fyz Rycharde. Anno.xliiii.

Rycharde Couentre.

IN this. xliiii. yere, soone after the feast of Pynonde and Jude, the kynge kept a royall feaste at westmynster, where he made dyuerse knyghtes. Amonge the whych Johñ duke of Bytayne, whyche had maryed one of the kynges doughters was there made knyght. And soone after was syr Hughe spencer made chefe iustyce.

After ꝑ feast of Cãdelmasse, ꝑ kyng commaũdyd a folkmoot to be called at Paulys crosse/ where he in ꝓper persone, wyth the kynge of Almayn, the archebyshoppe of Caunterbury, and many other nobles came. where the kynge commaundyd vnto the mayre, that euery styppelynge of the age of.xii. yeres and aboue, shuld be before his aldermã be swoꝛn the day folowynge, to be trew to the kyng & to hys heyres kynges of Englande/ and that the gates of the cytye were kepte wyth armyd men as before by the kynge of Romaynes was dyuysyd. This yere also at a fayre kept at Northampton, varyaunce fell betwene the Lõdoners and men of the towne/ so that betwene the cytesyns and them contynued longe sute and plee, for a mã of Northampton that then was slayne, to the great vexacyon & trouble of both partyes. But in the ende the cytye had the better.

This yere also aboute Ester, the Barons of the lande, wyth the consente of the Peeres / dyschargyd syr Hugh le spencer, and admyttyd for hym syr Phylyp Basset in his rome of chefe iustyce vnwittyng the kyng. For whych cause and other, grudge and displeasure beganne of newe to kyndle betwene the kynge and hys lordes, whyche encreasyd more and more. But by polycy of the kynge of Almayne and some prelatys of the land, yt was set in quyet for a whyle, hardely to the ende of that yere.

Anno domini.M.CC.lx. Anno domini.M.CC.lxi.

Johñ Northampton.

wyllyam fyz Rycharde. Anno.xlv.

Rycharde Pycarde.

IN this.xlv.yere, shortely after Alhalowyn daye, the Barons admyttyd and made shyryues of dyuerse shyres of Englande, and dyschargyd suche as the kynge before had admyttyd/and named them Sardaynes and keepers of the countyes & shyres. And ouer that the Barons wolde not suffer the iustyce that the kynge hadde admyttyd, to kepe the pleys & lawes callyd Itinerarij/ but suche as were of theyr admyssyon. wherwith the kynge was greuously dyscontented/in so myche ꝑ after that season he labourd that he myght do dysanull the former ordynaunces &

statutes, and to cause them to be broken / in so myche that vppon the seconde sondaye of lent folowynge, the kynge commaundyd to be crȳde at Paules crosse, a bull of the graunte of pope Urban the .iiii. of that name, as a confyrmacyō of an other bull before purchased of hys predecessoure Alexander the .iiii, for to assoyle the kynge and all other that before had sworne to the mayntenaunce of the foresayde artycles made at Orenforde/and after causyd the sayde absolucyon to be shewyd thorough the realme of Englande, walys, and Irlande/ gyuynge strayghte charge to all his subiectys, that none be so hardy to wythstāde nor dysobey the sayd absolucyon. And yf any were fouden dysobedyent to his commaundemēt, that he were strayght put in pryson, and not to be raunsomyd nor delyuerd tyll ȳ kynges pleasure were forther knowen.

About the feast of saynt Albon, in the moneth of Juny / the kynge of Almayne toke shyppyng and sayled into Almayne. And the kynge at a folkmoot holden vppon the sonday after saynt Peters daye in ȳ moneth of July, hadde lycence to saile into Fraunce. And the morowe after he departyd from London towarde the sees syde, wyth the quene and other lordes/ hys two sonnes syr Edward and syr Edmunde beynge at that season in Gupan. when the kyng hadde ben a season in Fraunce, he returnyd vnto Burdeaux, where he fell sycke/ by occasyon wherof he tarved in those partyes tyll saynte Nycholas tyde nexte folowynge. And in thys yere dyed Rycharde Clare erle of Glowceter / and syr Gylbert de Clare hys sonne was erle after hym. To whom the father gaue great charge that he shulde vpholde the forenamed ordynaunces.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxi.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxii.

Phylyppe walbroke.

Thomas fyz Thomas

Anno .xlvi.

Rycharde Taploure.

IN thys .xlvi. yere in the feaste of saynte Martyne, or the .xi. day of Nouēber/a Jew fell at varyaunce wyth a crysten man in Colchyrch in the warde of Chepe/ & wolde dyd the crysten man within the same chyrche. wherfore the people of the cytye in a fury pursued the sayd Jew to hys house, and there slew hym/ & after fell vpon the other Jewes, and robbyd and slew many of them.

And the euen of saynte Thomas the apostle folowynge, the kyng landed in Englande at Douer / & came to Lōdon the wednysdaye before .xii. day. This yere ȳ froste began about saynt Nycholas daye/ and so contynued by ȳ space of a moneth & more, so feruently that Thamys was ouer frozen, that men passed ouer on horsbacke. And in the same wynter ȳ kynges lytell halle at westmynster, with other houses adioynyng to the same were perysshed wyth fyre, by the negligence of a seruaūt of the kynges.

In this yere also vnkyndnesse began to growe betwene the Londoners and the Constable of the towre/ for that he cōtrary the lyberte of the cytye toke certayne shyppes passyng by the towre wyth whete and other vytayll, and toke yt into the sayde towre, makynge the price at his pleasure. wherfore great harme had ensued, had not ben the polycy of wyse men. whyche was shewyd vnto the

kynges

kynges counsayll/ by whose dyrecc on the mater was comptyd vnto syr Phylyppe Basset then cheke iustyce and other, to set an ordet and rule be twene the sayde partyes. Then be fore hym were brought all euydéces and pryuyleges for the aduauntage of both partyes / where fynally after longe plee & argument, yt was fyrmely demyd and adiudgyd, that yf the constable or any other offycer of the towre wold at any tyme take any whete or other vytayll to the vse of the kyng or of ỹ towre, that he shuld come vnto the market holden wyth in the cytye, and there to haue pt.li.ō in a quarter wythin ỹ mayres pryce/ and other vitayll after the same rate. And if he or any of his offycers wold do contrarye to that ordynaūce/ that then the shyrues shulde make report vnto the kynges counsayll, and to wythstāde hym in all that he myght/ so that the kynges peace were kepte.

In this yere also many murmures and grudgis were tolde in many pla ces of the land/ supposynge ỹ warre shulde in shorte proceſſe haue ensued betwene the kyng and his lordes, for the bull of dyspensacyon before in that other yere shewyd. But by help and mediacyon of good & wyse men/ these murmures & grudges were so appeasyd, that the kynge agreed a gayn to the mayntenaūce of the sayd statutes/ & sent hys wrytes, wherin the sayde artycles were compryſed, into all shyres of England/ gyuynge streyght commaūdement to all men to obserue and kepe the same, and suche other as were to theym ioyned by the dyscrecyon of the erle marshall the erle of Leycester, syr Phylyp Bas set, syr Hugh Bygot, and other/ the whyche shortely after was reuoked and denyed. whereuppon the archbys shoppe of Caunterbury, seryng that after myght ensue, made hym an er rande to Rome/ and so by lycence of the kyng and of the lordes departed the lande, and so kepte hym out tyll the trouble was appeased and ceased Then vppon mydient sondaye, the mayre and the commons beynge pre sent, at a folkemote holden at Paulys crosse before syr Phylyppe Basset and other of the kynges counsayll/ the mayre was sworne to be trewe to the kynge and to his heyres kynges. And vppon the morowe at Guylde hall, euery alderman in presence of the mayre toke the same othe. And vppon the sondaye folowyng, euery ſtrypelynge of the age of. xii. yeres & aboue, before hys alderman in hys warde was newly charged wyth the same othe. Then the dyspleasure be twene the kynge and hys Barons be gan to appere and dysclose, whyche longe whyle hadde ben kepte secret/ in so myche that dyuers of theym as sembled in the marches of walis and gatheryd vnto them stronge power/ and sent a letter vnto the kynge vn der the seale of syr Rogyer Clyfford, beseechynge hym to haue in remem braunce the othe & manyfolde pro mysse that he hadde made, for the ob seruynge of the statutes made at his towne of Orenford, wyth other or dinaūces made to the honour of god, for sayth and allegeaūce to hys per sone, and weale & profyte of all hys realme/ wyllyng hym farder to with stande and defye all suche persones, as wyll be agayne the sayde actes, sa uynge the quene and her chyldern.

After the whyche letter thus sent, and receyuynge of yt none answere/ the sayde Barons wyth banner dys played wer agayn such as they knew ỹ helde agayne the sayd actys. And fyrste at Herford they toke the bys shoppe of that see, and as many of hys chanōs as were allyaūtes born/ and toke such treasour and catell as

they there fande, and bare yt wyth theym. And after rode and sent vnto suche maners as the sayde byshoppe and chanons hadde, and them spoyled and robbed / and some of theym threw to the grounde and consumed wyth fyre / and put the sayde byshop and chanons in sure kepyng, and set other in theyr places / and after went vnto the other costes where they supposyd to fynde of theyr enymyes / kepynge theyr course toward London, berynge before them a banner of the kynges armys / & so holdynge theyr tourney, myche people drewe vnto them. In the whyche progresse euer as they fande any that they knew to be agayne the mayntenaūce of ỹ sayd actes / they imprysoned thē & spoyled theyr places, were they spyrytuall or temporall men. And in dyuers of the kynges castellys they set in such persones as to them lyked, and put out suche as there were set in by ỹ kyng / and gaue vnto theym an othe that they shulde be trew and faythfull to the kyng, and kepe those castelles to hys vse and weale of the realme.

About mydsomer when they drewe nere to London / they sent a letter vnto the mayre and aldermē, vnder the seale of syr Symonde Mountfordе / wyllynge to know of theym whyther they wolde obserue the actys and statutes made in the parlyament of Drenforde or not, or ellys they wolde ayde and assyste such persones as entendyd the breche of the same / & sent vnto theym a coppe of the sayd actes with a prouiso, that yf any that there were specyfyed were to the hurte of the realme or common weale of the same, that they then by dyscrete persones of the lande, shulde be alteryd and amendyd. The whych coppe the mayre bare vnto the kynge then beyng at the towre, accompanyed with the quene and the kynge of Almayne whyche lately was retourned from beyonde the see, and syr Edward his son, wyth other of his counsayll.

Then the kynge entendynge to knowe the mynde of the cytye, and the mayre what he thoughte of those ordynaunces and actes / knowynge well that before hys commynge thyther, he hadde counsayled wyth the aldermen and some commons of the cytye. The mayre then abashed with that questyon / besought the kynge ỹ he myght comon wyth his brethern the aldermen / and he shuld shew vnto hym his and theyr opinyons. But the kynge sayde he wolde here his aduyse wythout more counsayll. Then the mayre boldely sayde, that before tymes he wyth his brethern and cōmynalty of the cytye, by hys commaundement were sworne to mayntayne all actys made to the honoure of god, to the fayth of the kynge and profyte of the realme / whyche othe by hys lycence and moste gracyous fauour they entended to obserue and kepe. And more ouer to auoyde all occasion that might grow of grudge or varyaunce betwene his grace and his Barons wythin the cytye / they wolde auoyde all allyauntes & straūgers out therof, yf his grace were so contentyd. whych answere the kyng shewyd as he were therwyth pleasyd so that the mayre with his fauour departed, and sente answere to the barons to the same accordynge / theyr lyberties alway vpholden and sauyd.

Then shortely after, for so myche as dyuerse noble men of the lande whyche helde agayne those statutes, were ryden towarde Douer, & there entēdyd to haue taken shyppyng for fere of the barons / the kynge sent after them dyuers persones of his household and of the cytesyns of London, to returne and enduce theym to returne, and to tarye wyth the kyng.

And

And in that season all allyauntes, the whych were taken suspecte of any fauour owynge to that one parte or to that other, were auoyded the cytye. But yt was not longe after that sr Edwarde the kynges sonne, sette them or many of them in offices with in the castell of wyndesore. Than watche was kepte dayly wythin the cytye/ and in the nyghtes a certayne were assigned to ryde about ꝑ town, wyth a certayn fotemen assygned to theym, to serche all the towne ouer. But of that insued harme. For while the rydyng watche was in one place of the cytye/ some cuyll dysposyd persones vnder colour of watche men, and to serche for straungers, robbed and spoyled many houses within the cytye. For remedy wherof a standyng watche was ordeyned in euery ward. And the kynge herynge of the Barons were commynge vnto the cytye/ departed thens shortely after.

Then the Barons entryd the cytye the sonday before sayne Margarets daye. And shortely after the kynge returned to westmynster, with the quene and other of his counsayll. And soon after by the consent of the kynge and the Barons / sr Hughe le Spenser was made cheefe iustyce and keper of the towre.

Vppon the morow folowynge Mary Magdaleyne daye, a wryt was directed vnto ꝑ mayre and aldermen/ chargynge them ꝑ the kynges peace were fermely kepte wythin the cytye. For in the same wryt yt was also expressyd, that the kynge and hys Barons were louyngly agreed. Farther more was by the sayd wryt cõmaundyd, that yf wythin the precyncte of theyr franches, were any persone or persones knowen, that wolde withstande the forsayde ordynaunces & statutes / that all such shulde be attached and put in pryson, and theyr goodes attached for the kynge tyll they knew his forther pleasure.

Ye shall vnderstande that whyle ꝑ lordes laye thus wythin the cytye/ dyuerse conuenticulis and gaderyngis were made of the citesyns and other, that robbed in dyuerse places of the cytye, and dyd myche harme. The whyche was smally corrected / they were so borne oute and mayntayned by theyr maysters. And the commõs of the cytye were farre oute of rule by insensyng of tyrotouse psons/ that in assembles and courtes that thẽ were kepte at Guyldhall or other places, symple and vndyscret persons shuld haue the voyce, and the worshypfull mẽ lytell or nothyng regarded/ wher of ensuyd dayly myche vnhappynes and sorow, as after shall appere.

The Barons then to obteyne the more fauour of ꝑ cytye/ wylyd them to shewe yf they hadde any of theyr lyberties wythdrawẽ, that they myght agayne to theym be restored/ and also to dyuyse some new to theyr weale and profyte, and they wolde labour to the kynge that they myght haue theym graunted. For the whych comforte of the lordes, the mayre called the commons to the Guyldhall, and shewed to them the beneuolẽce of the sayd lordes/ & willed them that euery officer for hys office, to deuyse such thynges as myght be beneficyall for the cytye. wheruppon they counsayled to gyther, and made a note in paper of dyuers statutes, prouysyons, and ordynaunces to be graunted / whyche myght more properly be named abhompnacyons. For they were deuysed to theyr synguler profyte, & to ꝑ great hurt of all other marchaũtes commynge to the cytye, and to all other fayres and markettes of Englande/ and also prejudycyall to the dyuyers all weale of the realme. The whyche when they were ouersene by the

Singular profyte.

the heddes of the cytye/ yt was shew
yd vnto the sayd cõmons, that theyr
ordynaunces were not lefull nor cha
rytable orderyd, and therfore they
knewe well they shulde not be ad-
mytted/ wyllyng thẽ to deuyse other.
But all was in vayne. By meane
wherof both those & other that were
ryght necessary for the cõmon weale
of the cytye, were reiected & put of.

Then ỹ Barons vpon the morowe
folowynge sayntt Jamys daye, depar
ted from London towarde wynde-
sore, to se the gydynge of the castell.
where at theyr commynge they putte
out the forsayde allpauntes before
set in by syr Edward the kinges son/
the whyche assocyat wyth other yode
vnto Fulham, where the kynge then
lay/ and shewyd to hym that the Ba
rons had spoyled them of suche goo-
des as they hadde, and that wythout
cause. But the kynge put them of for
that season, and warned them to sue
to hym agayne about Mychelmasse
when more of his coũsayll was with
hym/ & then they shuld haue iustyce.

Uppon the second daye folowyng
the feaste of sayntt Mathew, or the
xxiii. daye of septembet / the kynge,
the quene, with his sonnes and other
nobles of thys land/ toke shyppyng
and sayled into Fraunce, to be pre-
sent at the Frenche kynges parlya-
ament then holden at Bonony. And
the morow after the octabis of sayntt
Mychaell, he landed agayne at Do
uer. And the frydaye folowynge he
came vnto London.

And vppon the tuesday folowyng,
passed a queste of .xii. knyghtes of
Mydd̃ swore vpon a iury, betwene
the abbot of westmynster and the cy-
tye/ for certayne prepupleges that the
cytesyns of London clayned wyth-
in westmynster. where by the sayde
iurye it was founden before Gylbert
of Preston then chefe Baron of the
kynges exchcker, that the sherues
of London at those days myght law
fully enter into the town of westmyn
ster, and all other tenemẽtes that the
abbot then hadde wythin Myddel-
ser, & vnto the gate of the sayd abbay
and there to make summons and dy
strayne for lacke of apparaunce, all
and euerych tenaunte of the sayde
abbot.

About the quindena of sayntt My-
chaell/ the fourmer complaynt of the
allpauntes and other, whyche as a-
boue ye haue harde, was shewed be-
fore the kyng and ỹ lordes in the par
lyament holden at westmynster.
where lastely yt was sentencyd, that
the Barons shulde restore all suche
goodes as they and theyr companye
hadde taken from all suche persons
before that daye, as well to allpaun-
tes as other both spyrytuall and tem
porall / and also that suche menyall
seruauntes as shulde be dayly in the
kynges house and about his person,
shulde be suche as the kynge wolde
chose and admyt hym selfe/ the why-
che ii. artycles the Barons vtterly
denyed. wherfore the olde rancoure
toke place/ and dyssencyon kyndled
his fyre of malyce agayn, betwen the
kynge and his lordes fervently.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxii.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxiii.

Robert Woumplere.

Thomas fyr Thomas

Anno .xlvii.

Robert de Hull.

IN thys .xlvii. yere, by procure
ment and styrynge of the Ba-
rons, the semmons of the cytye of
London chase vnto theyr mayre for
that

that yere Thomas fyr Thomas, and wythout counsayll of the aldermen ſware at Guyldehall vppon the day of Symon and Jude/ and made no preſentement of hym vppon the motowe folowynge, nother to the kyng nor yet to the Barons of the kynges ercheker, as they of ryght ought to haue done. For the whych preſumpcyon the kynge was greuously diſcontentyd agayne the cytye. Soone after the kynge aduertyſynge well ỹ the citye wolde take the Barons partye/ and cauſyd ſyr Edwarde his ſon to take the caſtell of wyndeſore by a trayne. wherof when he knewe that he was in poſſeſſyon/ the kynge erly in a morynynge a lytell tofore Cryſtemas departed from weſtmynſter, & rode vnto the ſayde caſtell/ whyther ſhortely after came alſo many of the lordes that were vppon the kynges partye. And as faſte the lordes and knyghtes whych helde wyth the erle of Leycetter, drew them toward London/ ſo ỹ on eyther partye was myche people aſſembled. In the whyche paſſe tyme ſome well diſpoſyd, labored a concorde betwene the kynge & hys lordes. By whoſe meanes fynally yt was agreed by bothe partyes, that all maters concernynge the fore ſayde artycles of ſtatutes and ordynaūces made at Orenford, and after by the .xii. Perys / that the Frenche kynge ſhuld deme and iudge, whych ſhulde be holden and whyche not. And as he demyd / both partyes promyſed aſſuredly to abyde. Upon wht the agrement coppes were made of the ſayde ſtatutes / and wyth letters ſhewynge the effecte of the fourmer agrement ſent vnto the ſayde kynge of Fraunce/ then beynge ſaynt Lewys. And in the Cryſtmas weke folowynge/ the kyng toke ſhyppynge with ſyr Edward his ſon and other of his counſayll/ and ſayled into Fraunce, for the foreſayde cauſe. And for the partye of the ſayd Barons, was ſent ouer ſyr Peter de Mountforde and other. Then before Lewys kynge of Fraunce thoſe ſtatutes were fore argued vppon both parties. How be yt in the ende, the Frenche kynge callynge before hym both parties vpon the day before ỹ conuerſyon of ſaynt Paule, or the .xxiii. daye of January / ſyttynge in iudgement gaue erpreſſe ſentence that all and euerych of the ſayde ſtatutes and ordynaunces, ſhulde be from ỹ daye forewarde vtterly forebone and ſet at nought/ and all ſuche bandes and promyſes that the kyng or any other had made for the mayntenaunce of the ſame, ſhulde be adnulled & cancellyd/ and the kynge and all other, for any mater concernynge thoſe ſtatutes ſet at lybertye. After whyche ſentence thus gyuen the kynge retourned into Englande/ ſo that he came to London the .xv. daye of Februarye. But the Barons beynge fore amoued wyth this ſentence, & notynge greate parcyalty vnto the Frenche kynge/ departed from London weſtwarde, & ſo into the marchys of walys, where they drew to them great power, and warred vppon the landes and caſtelles of ſyr Roger Mortymer, & threw ſome of them vnto the grounde, and ſpoyled of hys what they myghte fynde/ and ouer that brent of hys manours and houſes. In whoſe ayde ſyr Edwarde the kynges ſonne commynge, hys people were diſtreſſyd and he almoſte taken. For redreſſe of whyche maters, a newe parlyamēt was appoynted to be holde at Orenforde in the quindena of Eſter nexte folowynge, whyche came neuer to effecte. All be yt an other cronicle ſayth that from this parlyament then holden at Orenforde, the kynge and his lordes parted all diſcorded. Then

the

the barons drewe towarde London/ & the kynge remayned at woodstok. And then newe assurauncē by wrytynge endentyd was made betwene the comynaltye of the cytye and the Barons, wythoute consent of many of the rulers of the sayde cytye. wher fore the commons as men enraged made of theym selfe two capytaynes, whych they named constables of the cytye/ ỹ is to say Thomas de Pywel don & Stephan Bukerel. At whose commaundement by tollynge of the great belle of Paules, all the cytye shulde be redy shortely in harnes, to gyue attendaunce vppon theyr sayd capytaynes.

About the begynnynge of lent / the constable of the towre, syr Hughe le Spenser, came wyth a fayre compa ny of men of armys before hym into the cytye, and desyred assystence of the forenamed constables. The whyche commaunded the sayd belle to be tolled. By meane wherof the people shyt theyr shoppes, and came out in harneys in great multytude. The whyche after proclamacyon made, that they shulde folowe theyr capytaynes, wythout knowlege what to do or whyther to go, folowed theyr sayde capytaynes / and so rode vnto Thystelworth vppon two myles be yonde westmynster, & there spoyled the manour of the kynge of Romaynes, and sette yt after vppon a fyre. And that done, hys water myllys & other commodities that he there had put theym to vtter ruyne. And after wyth great noyse and crye, returned vnto London.

This dede as sayth myne authour was cause of the mortall warre folowynge. For where before tyme the sayde kynge of Romaynes hadde ben for allyaunce that was betwene hym and the erle of Glouceter, a treatye of peace to be hadde betwene the kynge and hys Barons/ after that dede done he was enmy vnto them to the vttermoste of his power.

The kynge herynge of thys tyra gaderyd vnto him great power. And for he harde that syr Peter de Mont forde was at Northampton, gathe rynge of people to strength the Ba rons partye/ he spedde hym thyder, and wanne the towne vppon hym by force, and slewe many of hys men/ and fynally toke hym & syr Symon the son of the erle of Lepceter, wyth dyuers other on lyue/the which with many burgeyses of that towne that hadde take theyr partyes, the kynge sent vnto dyuers prysons/ and some he closyd wythin the castell of ỹ same towne.

In thys passe tyme on Palmesondaye weke all the Jewes in London were spoyled and robbed/ & the nomber of .v. hūdred of them were slayn, and dyuers of theyr mansyons brent and destroyed / and suche as of them were saued, were conueyed for great mede vnto the towre/ and there kept from the fury of the commons. wher of the occasyon was, for so myche as a Jewe wolde haue forced a cristen man to haue gyue to hym more then ti.d. for the vsure of .x. s. for a weke. For ye shall vnderstand that at those dayes, by lycence graunted vnto the Jewes of the kynge. they myght take by vsury of euery man ỹ of theym wolde borowe money .ti. d. of a pound for a weke lendyng/ and so of greter & of smaller summes after that rate. And soon after the Jewes were thus punyshed/ many houses of relygyon wythin ỹ citye and nere there about, were serched for goodes of alliaūtis/ and myche founde. wherof a parte was brought vnto the lordis/ but the more parte was stolen and conueyed. In whyche season the kynge passed by diuers cōtreys/ and lastely came vnto

into Southſex with a ſtrong power. wherof herynge the lo:des made p:e paracyon to go towardes hym. In all whyche tyme the wardeyns of the v. po:tes kepte the ſee wyth hyppes, that no ſtraungers ſhulde entre the lande to ayde the kynge agayne the Barons.

Then in the ende of Ap:yll the Barons wyth a multytude of the cytye, whyche they put in vawarde/departed from London, takyng they:r tourney towarde the kynge. And when they were well onwarde vpon they:e way/ wo:de was b:ought vnto them that the kynge wyth an huge power was at Lewys.

wherfo:e they by an hole aſſent dyuyſed a letter/ and ſent yt in ꝑ name of all the Barons vnto the kynge, whoſe names here vnder folowe but not all.

Sy:̄ Symonde de Mountfo:de erle of Leyceter, and hyghe ſtewarde of Englande.
Sy:̄ Gylbert de Clare, erle of Glouceter.
Sy:̄ Robert Ferres, erle of Derby.
Sy:̄ Hugh le Spenſer cheſe iuſtice/ and ſy:̄ Henry de Mountfo:d ſon and hey:e to the erle of Leyceter.
Sy:̄ Rychard G:ay.
Sy:̄ Henry Haſtynges.
Sy:̄ Johñ fy:̄ Johñ.
Sy:̄ Robert de Uenpount.
Sy:̄ Johñ Gyuyle.
Sy:̄ Robert Roos.
Sy:̄ wyllyam Warmpon.
Baldwyne wake.
Sy:̄ Gylbert Gyſſo:de.
Sy:̄ Nycholas de Segraue.
Sy:̄ Godfrey de Lucy.
Sy:̄ Johñ de Uepſy.
Sy:̄ wyllyam de Mountchelſey.

whyche letter ſealed wyth the ſeales of the ſayde erle of Leyceſter, and of Glouceter conteyned as folowyth

A letter ſent by the Barons to the kyng

TO the moſt excellent lo:d the kynge, Henry by the grace of god kynge of Englande, lo:de of Irlande, and duke of Guyan/ the Barons & other faythfull your ſeruaun tes, they:̄ hydelyte and othe to god and to you couenytynge to kepe, ſendyng to you due ſalutyng with all reuerence and honour, vnder due obeyſaunce. Lyketh yt youre hyghnes to vnderſtãde, that many beyng about you haue befo:e tymes ſhewyd vnto your lo:dſhyppe of vs many euyll & vntrewe repo:tes/ and haue founde ſuggeſtyons not alonely of vs, but alſo of your ſelfe to b:yng this your realme vnto ſubuerſyon. Know your excellency, that we entende nothyng but helth and ſuerty to your perſon, to the vttermoſte of our powers/ and not onely to our emmyes, but alſo to yours and of all this youre realme, we entende vtter greuaunce and co:rrecyon. Beſechyng your grace her after to gyue vnto theym lytell credẽce/ fo:̄ ye ſhall fynde vs your trew and faythfull ſubiectes to the vttermoſte of our powers. And we erle of Leyceter, and erle of Glouceter, at the requeſt of other and fo:̄ our ſelfe, haue put to our ſeales/ the .x. day of the moneth of May.

The anſwere vnto this fo:eſayde letter.

HEnry by ꝑ grace of god, kyng of Englande, lo:de of Irland and duke of Guyan / to Symonde de Mountfo:de, & Gylbert de Clare, & they:̄ cõplyces. where as by warre & generall yturbaũce in this our realme by you begon & contynued, wyth alſo b:ennynges, and other hurtes and eno:mytyes that euydently apperyth that your hydelyte to vs due, ye haue not kept, no:̄ ꝑ ſuerty of our perſon ye haue lytell regarded/ fo:̄ ſo mych as our lo:d & other our truſty

frendes whyche dayly byde wyth vs ye veryn and greue, and theym purſue to the vttermoſt of your powers/ and yet dayly entẽde, as ye by the repoꝛte of your letters haue vs aſcertayned: we the greue of them admyt & take foꝛ our owne, ſpecyally when they foꝛ theyꝛ fydelyte whyche they to vs dayly impende, ſtande and abyde by vs to oppꝛeſſe your infidelyte and vntrouthe. wherfoꝛe of your fauoure oꝛ aſſuraunce we ſette lyttell ſtoꝛe/but you as our enymyes we vtterly defye, wytneſſe our ſelfe at our towne of Lewys, the.xii. daye of this moneth of May.

And ouer this the kyng of Romaynes, ſyꝛ Edwarde the kynges ſonne, and the other loꝛdes beyng thẽ with the kynge/ ſente vnto them a nother letter, wherof the tenour enſuyth.

EIcharde by the grace of god kynge of Romaynes alwaye Auguſtus, and Edwarde the noble fyꝛſt begotten ſon of the kyng of England, allother Barons fermely ſtandynge and abydynge wyth our ſouerayne loꝛde the kynge, to Symonde de Mountfoꝛd, Gylbert de Clare, and all other theyꝛ falſe felowes. By the letters whych ye ſent vnto the kynge our moſte ſouerayne loꝛde, we vnderſtande that we are defyed of you. Neuertheleſſe this woꝛde of dyſſyaunce apperyd vnto vs ſuffycyently befoꝛe, by the depꝛedacyon and bꝛennyng of our manours, and catenge away of our goodes. wherfoꝛe we wyll that ye vnderſtande, that we defye you as our moꝛtall & publyke enmyes. And when ſo euer we may come to reuẽgement of the iniuryes ꝑ ye to vs haue done/we ſhal acquit it to ꝑ vttermoſt of our powers. And where ye put vpon vs, that nother trewe noꝛ good counſayll to our ſouerayne loꝛde the kynge we gyue/ ye therin ſay falſely and vntrewly. And yf ꝑ ſaieng ye ſyꝛ Symonde de Mountfoꝛde and ſyꝛ Gylbert de Clare wyll iuſtifye in the courte of our ſouerayne loꝛd/ we are redy to purchaſe to you ſuerty & ſafe commynge, that there we may pꝛoue our trew and faythfull innocencye, & your falſe and traytoꝛouſe lyenge. wytneſſyd wyth ꝑ ſcales of Rychard kynge of Romaynes, & ſyꝛ Edwarde foꝛenamed. Gyuen at Lewys the.xii. daye of May.

Cruell and deteſtable Bataylle.

When the Baronys had receyued theſe letters from the kyng and his loꝛdes/ they perceyued well that there was none other mean, but defẽde theyꝛ cauſe by dynt of ſwoꝛd. wherfoꝛe they puttyng theyꝛ truſt in god/ ſpedde theym foꝛth toward the kynge. And vppon a wednyſday beynge then the.xiiii. daye of May, early in the moꝛnynge both hoſtes met. where after the Lõdoners had gyuen the fyꝛſt aſſaute, they were betyn backe/ ſo that they began to dꝛaw from the ſharpe ſhot and ſtrokes, to the diſcomfoꝛte of the Barons hoſte. But ꝑ Barons encoꝛaged and comfoꝛted theyꝛ men in ſuche wyſe, that not alonely the freſhe and luſty knyghtes fought egerly, but alſo ſuche as befoꝛe were ſcomfyted, recouerꝑd theyꝛ vertue & ſtrength, & fought wythout fere, in ſo myche that the kynges vaward loſt theyꝛ places. Then was the felde couerꝑd wyth dede bodyes/ & gaſpynge & gronyng was hard on euery ſyde. Foꝛ eyther was deſyꝛous foꝛ to bꝛyng the other out of life. And the fader ſparyd not the ſon, noꝛ the ſon ꝑ fader. Allpaſſe at ꝑ tyme was turned vnto dyſſyaunce/ and cryſten blood that daye was ſhad wythoute pyttie. Thus durynge the cruell fyght by the moꝛe parte of ꝑ day, laſtely the victoꝛy fyll to the Barons/ ſo ꝑ there was taken the kynge, & the kynge of Romayns, ſyꝛ Edwarde the kynges

ſon,

son, wyth many other noble men to the nomber of. xxv. Barons and Banerettes/& people slayn a great multytude ouer .xx. thousande as sayth myne authours.

When the Barons had thus obteyned victorye, prouysyon was made for ỳ sauf kepyng of the prysoners/ so that all were sent vnto dyuers castellys and prysons, except the kyng, his brother the kynge of Almayne, & syr Edwarde his son / the whych the Barons helde wyth theym tyll they came to London.

Then a new graunte was made by the kynge, that the foresayd statutes shuld stande in strength. And yf any were thought vnreasonable/ they to be corrected and amendyd by foure noble men of the realme / that is to meane .ii. of the spyrytualtye, and .ii. of the temporaltye. And yf those .iiii. myght not agree / that then the erle of Angeou and duke of Burgoyn to be iudges of that mater. And this to be fermely holden and obeyed by the kynge and hys brother/ the kynges graunted that theyr sonnes & heyres shuld remayne wyth the Barons as pryseners, tyll all thynge were fynyshed accordynge to the former agrement. And vppon thys was a parlyament appoynted, to be holden at London at Pentecoste folowynge/ but that came neuer to purpose. The the tuesday before the Assencyon day peace was proclaimed in London betwene the kynge and hys Barons. And vppon the daye folowynge, the kynge & the Barons came vnto London/ with the kynge of Romayns, & syr Edwarde the kynge sonne. Then syr Edward as pledge for the kyng, and syr Henry sonne vnto the kynge of Almayn were sent vnto the toure, and there lodged/ and from thens vnto Douer castell. And the kyng was lodged in the bysshoppes palays by Paules/ and the kynge of Almayne with dyuers other within the towre. Then yt was agreed by the kynge, that for his more suertye, and for the weale of the lande / that the erle of Leycester shuld be restyaũt in the kynges courte. Vppon the whyche agrement & other, many of the pryseners were set at large.

In this passe tyme before the felde of Lewys/ ỳ quene & the kyng of Romayns had sent ouer ỳ see for souldyours, to ayde the kynge agayne the Barons/ whych now were comen in great nomber vnto Douer, & there houed in ỳ see to haue lãded. wherof herynge the Barons sent the kyng of Romayns to the castell of Berkhamstede as prisoner, tyll the sayde allyauntes were retourned / and caused kynge Henry wyth a great power to ryde thyder, and force the sayde hoste of straungers to retourne into theyr owne countreys.

And when the kynge had returned the sayde straungers/ he shortly after wyth agrement of the barons sayled ouer into Fraunce, and retourned agayne wythin short terme.

Anno domini. M. CC. lviii. Anno domini. M. CC. lviiii.

Osbert wynter.

Thomas fyr Thomas. Anno. xlviii.

Phylyppe Taylour.

IN this .xlviii. yere/ the lordes of the marches about the feast of Crystmasse, assembled theym in those costes, and dyd myche harme vppon the lordeshyppes and manours of the erlys of Leycester and of Glouceter standynge in the marches of walys. wherfore the kynge

rode shortely after to Glouceter, and called there a counsayl of his lordes. By authorite of whych counsayll yt was enacted, that as many of ꝑ sayd lordes as came not in by the octaues of saynte Hyllary nexte folowynge, & yelded them vnto the kynges grace, shuld be exyled. And by the sayd cou sayll was also agreed, that in ꝑ sayd octaues shulde a parlyament be holdyn at westmynster. At whyche daye the kyng wyth his lordes spyrytuall and temporall and commons of hys lande, beganne his forsayde parlyament. Durynge the whyche yt was there shewed the kynge beynge present, that he nor syr Edward his son nor none of theym, shulde after that daye greue or cause to be greuyd, the erles of Leyceter and of Glouceter, ꝑ Barons, Banerettes or knyghtes, the citesyns of London and Barons of the .v. portes/ nor none other pson or persones of hyghe or low degree, that was vpon the partye of the sayd erles, for any mater of dysplearure done agayne the kynge and the sayd syr Edwarde his sonne, at any tyme before that day. And that to vphold/ the kynge before hys lordes was sworne. And after that was shewed and rad a charter of pardon concernynge the sayde cause/ and a confyrmacyon of the statutes of the forrelle, wyth many other actes and statutes before graunted of the kynge. Then in the feaste of saynt Gregory folowynge, or the .xii. daye of Marche/ syr Edwarde the kynges son, ꝑ before was also sworn to performe such promyses as the kyng had made before in the parliament, was delyueryd at lyberte/ & also syr Henry the kynges son of Almayne, the whych had ben kept as pledge as ye before haue harde vppon the terme of .xv. monethes & odde dayes/ vpon allurance made, that ꝑ sayd syr Edwarde shuld dwell and abyde in the kynges courte, and not to departe from thens wythoute lycence of the kyng and of a certayne of the Barons. After this many instrumentes & bandes were made by the kynge and syr Edwarde his son, for the performaunce of couenaunts & paccyons made betwene the kynge and the Barons, whyche shortly after came to small effecte.

In the season betwene Easter and Penthecoste, for orderynge of the aforesaid statutes made at Orenford, fell dessencyon betwene the erles of Leyceter & of Glouceter/ so that wordes of dysplearure was vtteryd betwene them, the kynge and they also beynge then at Glouceter. Then the kynge and his Barons had labourc to set theym at vnyte and reste.

And vppon the see the Barons of the .v. portes robbed and spoyled all men that they myght take/ sparynge nother Englyshe marchauntes nor other. Of whych prayes as ꝑ cõmon fame then went, some of the Barons of the lande hadde good parte.

In the whytsonweke folowynge, ꝑ kynge wyth the erle of Leyceter, and syr Edwarde hys sonne, wyth many other lordes beynge at Herford in ꝑ edge of walys/ the sayd syr Edward secretly and wythout lycence departed from the courte, and yode vnto Chester/ where he accõpanyed to him the erle of Glouceter and ꝑ lordes of the Marches, the erle of warẽne, syr Roger Mortymer and other/ & from thens went vnto Glouceter, brekyng the brydges as he went, to the entent that he were not folowed tyll he had assembled his power.

when knowlege of thys came vnto the erle of Leyceter/ he in al hast sent vnto syr Symõde his son, ꝑ he shuld gather his knyghtes vnto hym. The which accordyng to ꝑ cõmaundemẽt assembled vnto hym myche people, &

wyth

with them drew toward wyncheſter/ ſo that he came before the cytye vpon the euyn of the tranſlacyon of ſaynte Swythyn, or the.xiiii.daye of the moneth of Julye. where he was ſhyt out, for ſo mych as the cyteſyns knewe not whyther he came as the kynges frende or not. And alſo lytell before they hadde receyued a letter from ſyr Edwarde, wyllynge theym to holde theym out of the cytye. For theſe cauſes the citeſyns cloſed theyr gates agayn the ſayd ſyr Symonde and hys companye. But yt was not longe or the cytye was yelden. Then they ſpoyled the town/ and ſlewe the more partye of the Jewes that dwellyd wythin the ſame. And that done, layd ſyege vnto the caſtell and aſſauted it. But for tydynges were kayned of the cõmynge of ſyr Edwarde with hys power/ they departyd ſhortely thens, and ſo yode vnto Kenelworth.

Vppon the laſte daye of July/ ſyr Edwarde wyth hys hoſte came vnto Kenelworth forſaid, and fyll ſodaynly vppon the hoſte of the forenamed ſyr Symonde, and wyth ſhedynge of lytell blood, toke there priſoners the erle of Orenford, wyllyam de mount Canyſe, Adam de Newmarket, ſyr Balwyne wake, and Hughe Neuyle, wyth dyuers other/ and ſyr Symonde fledde into the caſtell and ſo eſcaped. Then theſe forenamed priſoners were all ſent vnto Glouceſter/ and there putte in ſuer keppynge.

In this meane whyle ſyr Symonde erle of Leyceter, toke leue of the kynge/ whyche then from Herford paſſed the ryuer of Seuerne, and ſo yode vnto worceter. And ỹ erle with great payne paſſed the brydges before by ſyr Edwarde broken, and paſſed the coũtreys in gaderynge of people as he went/ ſo ỹ in proceſſe he had wyth hym ſtronge power. wherof he kynge ſyr Edwarde, coſted towarde hym/ and the.xi. daye of Auguſt met wyth hym at Euyſham in worceter ſhyre/ where betwene theym was foughten a cruell fyght. In ỹ whych at length was ſlayn the ſayd ſyr Symonde, and ſyr Henry his ſonne and heyre, ſyr Hughe le Spenſer, ſyr Peter de Mountford, and many other noble men that helde vppon the Barons partye.

After whych ſcomfyture, ſome malycyous diſpoſed perſons, in deſpyte of the erle cut of his hode & his dimyſ ſarpes, and faſtyned them vppon eyther ſyde of hys noſe/ and after made a preſent therof vnto the wyfe of ſyr Roger Mortymer. Hys fete alſo and his handes were cut from the body, and ſente to ſondry places/ and the trunke of hys bodye buryed wythin the chyrch of Euyſham. Of this erle ſpeketh Ranulphe mũke of Cheſter in his boke of Policronycon, and calleth hym Symon the ryght wiſe/ ſayynge that god wrought for hym myracles after his deth, the whyche for fere of the kynge and ſyr Edwarde his ſonne were kept cloſe and ſecret, ſo that no man durſte ſpeke of them. Soone after this victory thus obteyned by ſyr Edward, ỹ kyng & he met/ by whoſe authorytes all priſoners thẽ which were in hold in dyuers places, by ỹ cõmaundemẽt of ỹ ſayd ſyr Edward, were ſet at lybertie/ & many other dayly accuſed & ſet in for them. And about the natyuyte of our lady, a parliamẽt was holdẽ at wincheſter where by authorȳte of ỹ ſame, all ſtatutes & ordinaũces before made by ỹ Barons at Orenford in the.xli. yere of ỹ kyng, were vtterly fordone & ſet at nought/ and all bondes & wrytynges made by the kyng or any other for the obſeruynge of the ſame, were cancellyd and broken. Alſo at thys coũſayll was ordeyned, that all ſuch as had fauoured the Barons, were

they in pryson or at large / shulde be disherited. And then ꝑ kyng resumed into his hande, all grauntes before made and gyuen to any person. And for syr Symounde de Mountforde myght not agree wyth the kynge at the parlyament / he was restored to the castel of Kenelworth, as he before was assured / the whyche he wyth syr Henry de Hastynges and other kept longe after.

When the parlyament was ended / the kyng came vnto wyndesore with a great power, entendynge as the fame then went to destroye the cytye of London, for the great ire and dyspleasure that he hadde vnto yt. wher of herynge the mayre and aldermen, were striken in a wonderfull fere / all be yt many of the rabbysh and wylde cõmoners, were in full purpose to haue defended the cytye agayne the kynge. And thus amonge them were dyuers and many opinyons. And no wonder / for at those dayes the cytye was inhabyted with many maner of nacyons, whyche then were admytted for cytesyns.

LAstely by grace and sad counsayll of the beste of the cytye / they condescended to make a supplycacyon to ꝑ kynge, & send yt by some religyous person. Of the which they made dyuers, and sent them by sondry persones / but all auayled eyght nought. For the kynge was so greuously encensyd by some of his counsayll agayne the cytesyns, ꝑ he wold not loke vppon none of their supplycacyons. And yf any man spake for theym / he soone wold make such countenaunce, that men whyche were in his fauoure feryd to speke for them. Then the cytesyns were counsayled by their frendes, ꝑ they shuld make a writyng, and seale yt with their common seale / by vertue whereof they shulde offer theym selfe to put theym holly in the kynges grace and mercy touchynge their lyues & goodes. Accordynge to the whyche counsayll they deuysed a wrytynge, and sealed yt wyth their cõmon seale / and that done chose .viii. persons of the cytye such as had frendes in the courte, and sent them toward wyndesore the .vi. daye of October. Vppon whych day they encountered beyonde Colbroke a knyght of the kinges callyd syr Roger Leybourne, the whych turned the sayde .viii. persones vnto the cytye / and he also rode wyth theym tyll he came nere vnto the cytye, and there departed from them, and rode vppon the backe syde of the towne vnto the toure. But at his departynge he wylled them to warne the mayre wyth a certayne of the cytye, to mete wyth hym vppon the morow at Berkynge chyrche, whyche standeth nere vnto the towre. Vppon the morow when the mayre and the sayde syr Roger were met / he after a longe processe made, shewed to them of the kynges greuous displeasure whyche he bare towarde the cytye / and the meanes that hadde be vsed by their frendes and louers, to obteyne grace for the cytye. Lastely he expressed ꝑ no grace for them myght be had / excepte they wolde by their common seale bynde theym selfe fully and holly to stande at ꝑ kynges grace, and to put in his mercy their lyues and goodes. wher unto in the ende the cytesyns graunted, and delyueryd the forsayde wrytynge vnto the foresayd Roger / prayenge hym to be good meane for them to ꝑ kynge. The whych departyd towarde ꝑ kyng vpon the morow, and returned agayne the .vi. daye after / and wylled the mayre and aldermen to mete wyth hym agayne at the forsayd chirch. where he shewyd to them that the kynge by great instaunce of

their

theyr frendes hadde receyued theyr wryttynge/ and wold fyrste for the begynnynge of cõtentacion of his mynde, that all the chaynes/whych stode in euery strete and lanes ende wyth in the cytye, shuld be louſyd frõ theyr postes, and the post also drawen out of the erthe, and all to be brought vnto the towre/ and that done, that the mayre wyth a certayne of ỹ cyteſyns to the nomber of .xl. perſones, shuld the daye folowynge be at wyndeſore to confirme the graunt of theyr wrytyng. And ỹ they shuld go & come in ſafe & ſuer wiſe/he delyuered to them the kynges letter & ſeale for ỹ terme of foure dayes. whyche all was done accordynge to theyr former deuyſe/ and the mayre wyth the foreſayd perſones was redy at wyndeſore vppon the morow bynge ſondaye by one of the clocke/ and there taryed tyll .viii. of the ſame daye. At whyche ſeaſon the kynge commynge from his dyſporte, entred the caſtell wythout contenaunce or caſtyng his eyen vppon the Londoners. And when the kyng and his peole was entred the caſtell/ the Londoners wolde haue folowed. But they were warned to abide without. Then shorte tyme after the kyng cauſyd a proclamacyon to be made, that no man of hygh or low degre, to the Londoners shulde make any ſaynges of dyſpleaſure, or make to thẽ any quarell. And in the euenynge came vnto them the foreſayd ſyr Roger & ſyr Robert waleys knyghtes, and brought theym into the caſtell/ and ſayde the kynges pleaſure was not to ſpeke wyth them that nyght. And after the ſayde knyghtes delyuerȳd them vnto the cõſtable of ỹ caſtell/ which cloſyd them all in a large toure, where that nyght they hadde ſmall chere and worſe lodgynge.

Then vppon the morowe bynge mondaye towarde nyght/ they were taken oute of that toure, and delyuerȳd vnto ỹ bayly of the ſayd caſtell, and lodged by his aſſygnement/ except .v. perſons, that is to mene Thomas ſyr Thomas then mayre, Mychaell Tony, Stephan Bukkerell, Thomas Pwellyſon, and Johñ de Flete. The whyche .v. perſones the kynge hadde gyuen to ſyr Edwarde his ſonne/ at whoſe commaundemẽt they remayned ſtyll in the ſaide toure longe after, not wythſtandynge the kynges ſaue conduyte to theym as before is ſhewed, made. when tydynges hereof came vnto the cyte of London/ all be yt that for fere many before were auoyded, then there auoyded many mo/ & conueyed theyr goodes in ſecrete wyſe, into dyuers countreys of Englande, ſo that many of them neuer returned after.

Anno domini .M. CC.lxiiii. Anno domini .M. CC.lxv.

Thomas de la Fourdeous.

Thomas ſyr Thomas. Anno .xliv.

Gregory Rokkyſle.

IN thys .xliv. yere, vppon the daye of ſaynt Leonarde or the vi. daye of Nouember/ ỹ kyng came vnto weſtmynſter. And ſhortly after he gaue vnto diuers of his houſhold ſeruaũtes, vpon thre ſcore houſes & houſholdes wythin the cytye/ ſo ỹ the owners were compellyd to agre and redeme theyr houſes and houſholde wyth all goodes as in them were, or ellys to auoyde, and ſuffer ſuch perſons to enter as ỹ ſayd houſes were gyuẽ vnto/ & not alonely that, but alſo all ſuche landes and tenementes,

goodes & catalles, as the sayde cyte-zeyns had in any other places of En glande. And than he made custos or gardeyn of the cytye, syr Othon con stable of the toure/whych syr Othon chase to be baylyues vnder hym, and to be to hym accomptable to the vse of the kyng, Johñ Adrian, & wal ter Herup cytezeyns of the same cy-tye. And after thys the kynge toke pledges of the best ménes sonnes of the cytye, that hys peas shulde be su-rely kepte within the same. The whi che were put in the toure of Londō, and there kepte at the coste of theyr patentes. And shortly after by great laboure & suyte made/all the forsayd persones which were in the keppynge of ỹ bayly of the castell of wyndesore iiii. onely except, that is to saye Ry-charde Bonauenture, Symō de Ha-dissiok, wyllyam de Kent, & wyllyam de Glouceter/all the other Lōdoners xxviiii s. nōber, were delyuered & ca-me to erondon the Thursday folo-wynge the feast of saynte Luke, in ỹ xvi. day of Nouember/& the other. ix. were kepte styll in the toure of wyn-desore.

Then dayly suyte & labour was made vnto ỹ kynge to haue hys gra-cyous fauour/and to know hys plea sure what fyne he wolde haue of the cytye, for theyr transgressyons & dis-pleasure by theym vnto hym done. For the whyche the kynge asked. xl. M. li and fermely helde hym at. l. M. mar ke. But the cytye layde for them that the poore commons of the cytye, whe reof many were auoyded were the trespassours / and ouer that the best men of the cytye by these ryotous p-sones, were spoyled and robbed/and by the rouers also of the see, as the wardeynes of ỹ. v. portes and other, in thys troublous seasō they had lost a great part of theyr substance. For the whych cōsyderacyons and many other whyche were tedyous to wryt the cytezeyns besought the kynge of hys most gracious fauour and pyte, and to take of theym as they myght bere.

Thys matter thus hangyng / the kynge vppon seynt Nycholas euyn departed from westmynster towarde Northampton. And ipteil before hys departynge/ordeyned syr Johñ lynd knyght and mayster Johñ waldren clerke, to be gardeynes of the cytye & toure/the whyche were named in the kynges writtynge Seneschalles or stewardes of the cytye. Vppon the daye folowynge that the kynge was ryden/these. ii. forenamed stewardes sent for .xviiii. of the mooste notable men of the cytye, and warned theym to apere the day folowynge before ỹ kynges counsayle at westmynster/ where at theyr apparaunce was she-wed vnto them by syr Roger Lepbor ne, that the kynges mynde was, that they shulde haue the rule of the cytye in hys absens vnder the forsaid Se neschalles & for to se good rule kept wythin ỹ cytye/they shuld be swor ne there before hys counsayle.

The which there were then swor n & countermaunded vnto the cytye. And alwaye labour was made vnto the kynge for the fyne of the cytye/so that in the Crystmas weke an ende was made wyth the kyng, by labour of suche frendes as the cytye had a-bout hym, for the summe of .xx. M. marke, for all transgressyons and of fences by them before done/certayne persones excepted whyche the kynge had gyuē to syr Edwarde hys sonne, beynge as before is sayde in the tour of wynsore. For the paymēt of which summe at dayes by agremēt set / syr Roger Lepborne & mayster Roberte wareyn clerke, were assigned to take the suertyes for ỹ same. After whych suertye by theym receyued, and sente

vnto

vnto the kynge to Northamptō/ the kynge sent immedyatly after vnto ꝑ cytezeyns, a charter vnder his brode seale, whereof the effecte ensueth.

HEnry by the grace of god, kig of Englande, lord of Irlande and duke of Guyan/to al men helth. Knowe ye that for the fyne of.xx.M. marke, the whyche our cytezeyns of London to vs made, for the redemp-cyon of the transgressions and tres-paces to vs, to our quene, to our no-ble brother Rycharde kynge of Al-mayne, and to Edward our fyrst be-gotē sonne done/we rempitte and par-done for vs and for our heyres to the sayd cytezeyns and theyre heyres, as moche as in vs is / so that they haue and enioye all theyre former graun-tes and lybertees, rentes and profit-tes, from the feste of Crystmas laste paste / and also that the sayde cyte-zeyns haue to theym all forfaytes of all malefactours of ꝑ cytye, which in the parturbasice before made were endyted, or for the same be yet for to be endyted / Excepte the goodes and catalles of theym, of the whyche we haue gyuen the bodyes vnto our for-sayd sonne Edwarde/and except the rentes and tenemētes of all those cy-tezeyns, whyche now be and shalbe our eschete by reason of the forsayde transgressyons. And that all pryso-ners whyche now in our prysons re-mayne, be freely delyuered / excepte those psones whose bodyes we haue gyuē to Edwarde our sonne. And ꝑ the sayd cytezeyns be as fre as they before the sayd transgressyons were, in all partes and costes of thys our landes. In wytnes whereof we haue made these letters patentes / wytnes-seth my selfe at Northampton, the.x. day of Januarii, the yere of our regy-ne.xlix.

After whyche pardone by the cyte-zeyns receyued/ all pledges for them beyng in the toure of Londō, And al-so.iiii.of them that were in the toure of wyndesore, that is to say Rychard Bonauenture, Symō de Hadistoke, wyllyam of Kente, and wyllyam of Glouceter, were delyuered. Thanne also was dyscharged the forenamed stewardes syr Johñ Lynde & may-ster Johñ waldrē / and the cytezeyns of them selfe chose for mayre wyllyā Fyz Rychārd, and for shyrefes Tho mas de la fourde, & Gregory de Rok-kysley. Than for leuyng of this fyne were set as well seruauntes coucnāt men, as housholders / & many refu-ced the lyberties of the cytye for to be qupt of that charge.

whyle the kynge lay thus at Nor-thampton/syr Symō de Mountford put hym vpon the dome of the Po-pes legat Octobonus, ꝑ before was come into thys lāde to reforme thin-ges in the chyrche of Englande, and also to set vnyte & reste betwene the kynge and hys lordes. To whose do me, & also of the kynge of romayns, the forsayde syr Symond had boun-den hym to stande. Upon whych pro myse and bande, he was lybertied to be at large in the kynges courte, and so contynued a season. But in ꝑ ende when the kyng was comm̄ into Lō-don, he departed sodaynly out of the courte & rode vnto wynchelsee, whe-re he accompanyed hym with the to uers of the see/and after some pryses taken, departed from theym and so sayled into Fraunce, and put hym in secupce with holy Lowis than kyng of that prouynce.

Thys yere also vppon the eupn of sayne Johñ baptyst/ the kynge begā hys syege about the castell of Kenel-worth with a mighty power. But syr Hēry Hastynges, with suche as were within it, defended it so strōgly, that the kynge and all hys power myght

nat

nat wynne the sayde castell of a lõge tyme, as after in the nexte yere shall appere.

It is before shewed, howe ꝑ quene by her purueiaũs had caused an host of straungers to ꝓpare them to come into Englande, for to ayde her lorde the kynge agayn the barons: She had also purchased a curse of ꝑ Pope, to acurse all the sayde barons and all theyr ayders & helpers/and had commyssiõs dyrected to certayn bysshoppes of Englande, to execute the same/as of London, and of wynchester, and of Chychester/the which for fere of the barons than denyed & deferred the execucyon and sentence of the sayd curse. wherfore the quene made newe laboure to the pope than Urban the.iiii. and had it graũted, that the sayde Bysshoppes for theyr dysobedyence shulde be corrected. And for thys, Octobon the forsayde legate, thys yere at a counsayl holden by hym and the clergy of Englande at Paules chyrche in Londõ suspended the sayde Bysshoppes, & theym sente vnto Rome to be assoyled of the pope, beynge at thys daye Clement the.iiii.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxv.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxvi.

Edwarde Blont.

Thomas fitz Thomas.

Anno. i.

Peter Junger.

IN thys. i. yere vppon the cuyn of saynt Thomas the apostle before Crystmas, was yelden by appoyntement the castel of Kenelworth At the whyche the kynge with hys power had lyen as before is sayd, frõ mydsomer tyll that day/ and thã gyuen ouer by syr Henry Hastynges & hys complyces, vppon condycyon ꝑ he and all the other shulde haue lyfe and lym, and horse & harneys, with all thynges within the castell to thẽ belongynge/ and a certayne tyme of leyser to cary a way the same. And in thys yere in the tyme of Lent/ were ꝑ wardeyns of the. v. portes recõcyled to ꝑ kynge, by fauour of syr Edward the kynges sonne. And natwithstandynge the greate harmys they had done by rouyng vppon the see, as wel to Englysshe marchauntes as to other/they had to them confermed all theyr fourmer ꝓpuyleges. And ouer that to theym was graũted, ꝑ yf any man Englysshe or other wolde sewe for restitucyon of good by thẽ before taken, or for the deth of any of theyre frendes before slayne / that all suche complaynctes shuld be sued & shewed in theyr courtes/ & there to haue theyr maters determyned & nat ellys where. But what the cause was of thys ende thus made atwene ꝑ kyng & thẽ it is nat shewed. But ꝑ cõmon fame at ꝑ day ran ꝑ the sayd wardeins of ꝑ v. portes had at thys day ꝑ dominiõ of the see. wherfore ꝑ kyng was fayn to folowe theyr pleasures.

About the feast of Philip & Jacob ꝑ kyng helde hys parlyamẽt at Northãpton. At ꝑ whych were cõfermed ꝑ olde fraunchyses & lybertyes, by the kyngs ꝓgenytours before graũted vnto the cytye of Lõdon, with a new graũt for ꝑ shyre of Myddelser. And at thys parlyament were dyshcrysted many noble men of the lande, ꝑ before tyme had taken the barons partie. For whyche cause they accompanied theym togyder, & robbed and reuyd in diuers coostes of the lande/ & toke the towne of Lyncolñ & spoyled it, & after raunsomed many of the ryche burgeyses of the towne/and toke the ile of Ely, & strẽgthed it in suche wyse that they helde it longe after.

Anno

Anno domini.M.CC.lxvi. Anno dñi.M.CC.lxvii.

Johñ Iorpan.

Willm Fiz Rycharde. Anno.li.

Luke Badecot.

IN thys.li.yere/at the chosyng of the mayre, certayne contrauersies fyll attwene the rulers & the commons of the cytye of London.wherfore by aduice of the mayre and aldermen / syr Roger Leydorne with other came vnto ꝑ Guyhalle, beyng harnesed vnder theyr gownes and vppon the frydaye folowyng Alhalowyn called the commons to the eleccion of the new mayre/where the best of the cytye gaue ꝑ nominacyō vnto Alei sowch/& diuerse of ꝑ other cryed vpon Thomas fyz Thomas, whych at that tyme was prysoner in wyndesore castell/ wherfore the sayd Roger with ꝑ assystence of the mayre and other, toke the sayde Rascal and cupll disposed persones, and sent thē vnto dyuers prysons. Thys yere also the gentylmen that helde the Ile of Ely brake oute sondry tymes and dyd moche harme in Northfolke, & in Suffolke, and Cambrydgeshyre/ and toke the cytie of Norwyche/and after the spoylynge thereof, caryed awaye with theym many of the cytezeyns beynge ryche, and fynaunced theym at great summes of money/ & lyued there in that Ile lyke vnto out lawes. By thys and other, many hurtes in dyuers places of the lāde was done, by theuys and other yll dysposed people / whereof the charge was euer layde vnto the fore name gentilmen. Thē the legate laboured vnto the kynge, that the sayde disherited gentylmen myght purchase theyr lā des of hym by fyne and raunsome. By whose labour the kynge lastly agreed, that the sayd gentylmē shuld haue theyr landes agayne by fynes of.v.yere value of theyr lande. As he that myght dyspende .rr.li. by yere, shulde paye an.C.li.and so other after that rate, except syr Robert ferers Erle of Derby, syr Johñ de la warre and hym that strake of ꝑ fyste of the kynges purseuaūt. And some other persones whyche were of small hauoure, shulde be fyned by discrecyon of the kynges counsayll/ but this toke no conclusyon.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxviii. Anno dñi.M.CC.lxviii.

Thomas Walynge.

Aleyn South. Anno.lii.

Robert de Cornehyll.

IN thys.lii. yere, for what hap is nat expressed, syr Gylbert de Clare erle of Gloceter refused ꝑ king and in the marche of walys gadered vnto hi a stronge power. To whome also drewe syr Johñ Eyuile & other of the company disherited. And after the feest of Crystmasse, with a greate hoost came nere vnto London/ that tyme the Popes legate Octobonus beynge lodged at the toure of Lōdō. whan the mayre and aldermen of the cytye were ware of the eries comynge, with so stronge a power, nat knowynge whether he were the kynges frende or nat/ shytte the gates agayne hys fore ryders. And for the kynge nor none of hys cōsayll was than nere vnto the cytye / the mayre and aldermen went vnto the legate, and

and requyred hys counsayl, whether they shulde suffre the erle to entre into the cytye or nat / whereunto the legate answered that he thought nat the contrary / for he knewe wele that he was the kynges trewe subyect & frende. It was nat lõge after that a messanger came from the erle vnto the mayre, wyllynge to haue lycence to passe thorugh the cytye into Southwerke, where he entendyd to lodge hym and hys people / whyche was graunted/and so the erle passed thorough the cytye, and was lodged in Southwerke. To whõ came shortly after by Southerey, syde syr Johñ Cyuile with a greate company.

Than the mayre kepte the gate of ỹ brydge shyt, and watched it dayly with a certayne of armyd men, and euery nyght caused the draw brydge to be drawen, & the waters syde dayly and nyghtly to be watched with many armyd men. In lytell processe of tyme after/ the legate and the erle agreed in suche wyse, that the erle by hys aduyce was suffered with a certayne of hys people to be lodged within ỹ cytye. By reason wherof he dayly drewe more & more of hys people into the cytye/ so that fynally many thynges were ordered by hym, & many of the commons toke hys partye agayne the mayre and aldermen.

Then in the Easter weke he toke ỹ keyes of the brydge and of the gates from the officers of the cytye, and deliuered them to such as pleased hym and receyued into the cytye many of the dyshcrited persones, and gaue to them fre lybertye to passe the brydge by all houres of the daye & ỹ nyghte. The mayre of all thys sente worde vnto the kynge, whych than was gadering of hys power in Northfolke, and made hasty spede towarde London. In whyche meane tyme the erle with hys company made bulwerkes and barbycanys atwene the toure & the cytye, and caste dykes & trenches in some places of ỹ cytye, & fortyfyed it wonderously.

Then many of ỹ cytezeyns fering a newe insurrecyon, voyded the cytye as secretly as they myght/whose goodes the erle sealed to hys owne vse: or suffred hys men to spoyle thē at theyr pleasure. Than the commõs of the cytye forgat theyr late punysshment/ and as men without drede of god or of theyr kynge, toke certayne of the aldermen & caste theym in pryson, and sequestred theyr goodes, & dyspoyled moche therof. And therupon ranne to the Guyldhalle, and there chose for theyr mayre or for custos or ruler of the cytye syr Rychard de Culworth knyght, and for bayliues Roberte de Lynton and Roger Marshall / and dyscharged the olde mayre and sherysses. And that done, all suche prysoners as were in Newgate, Ludgate, and Creplgate, or in any other prysons within the cytie for bycause of the barons warre before passed/they were delyuered & set at lybertye.

Whan the legate beheld all thys re bellyõ and dyscorde/he repented hym of hys fourmer counsayll gyuē vnto the mayre. And for he sawe he might nat reformme the erle of hys errour / he thretened hym wyth the censurs of the chyrch, and to accurse hym as the dysherited were. And vpon thys he commaunded the deuyne seruyce to be sayd without note, & the chyrch dores to be shytte in tyme of the seruice doynge, & that no belle were ronge vnto the sayde seruyce/and all to the entent ỹ the dysherited, whych stode accursed shuld nat entre ỹ churches to here the deuyne seruyce of god.

Then vpõ .iii. wekes after Easter/ the kynge came to Hatfi .iii. myles from London, and was lodged hym

selfe

selfe in the abbaye of whyte monkes of Stratforde. whyther came vnto hym the legate soone after, and was lodgid also in the same abbay/ where for strenghtnes of lodgyng his horse and mules were sette wythin the cloister of the sayde abbay. Then the kynges hoste made dayly assautes vpon the cytye/ and gunnes and other ordynaunces was shot into the cytye, whyche lytell or nothynge hurte the towne, yt was so strongly fortyfyed.

In this season ỳ legate vppon his partye, and the kynge of Romaynes vppon the other partye, for allyance that was betwene hym and the erle of Glouceter/ labored so to the kyng that a reformacyon of peace was spoken of. Durynge whyche treaty the souldyours lyenge in Southwerke, made many robberyes in Southery and other places/ and rowed ouer to westmynster, and spoyled there the kynges paleys, and deuoured hys wyne, and brake ỳ glasse of the wyndowes/ and all other necessaryes to that paleys they destroyed & wasted/ and somtymes came in lyke wyse into Lõdon and robbyd there also. Of whyche there was taken. iiii. ỳ bare the Conysaunce of the erle of Derby / the whyche the erle caused theyr handes and legges to be bounden, and then put into a sacke, and so cast into the Thamys.

About the feast of sayne Barnabe/ the peace betwene the kynge and the erle of Glouceter was concludyd.

After the whyche conclusyon taken/ the erle remouyd out of the cytye, & was lodged agayne in Southwerke. And the kyng entryd the cityе the sondaye before mydsomer daye. And forth wyth the kynges proclamacyons were made throughe the cytye, of the peace betwene the kyng & the erle. And after was gyuen liberte to ỳ dysherited persons ỳ they shuld haue. xi. dayes respyte to shyft for them selfe/ that is to meane other to auoyde to suche places where they myght be in some suertye, or elles to agre to the former composycyon made by the legate, and to paye the. v. parte of the ryente of theyr landes/ certayne persones to be excepted, as before is rehersyd. And as touchyng to the erle and suche other as before were not dysherited, wyth also the cytesyns of London, to be clerely forgyuen and pardoned.

And then was restord to theyr offyces Aleyn Sowch for mayre, and Thomas Basynge and Robert de Cornehyll for shyreffes. And the aldermen whych before were deposyd, were agayn restored to theyr wardes and offyces.

Vppon the wednysday folowynge, the legate interdyted all the cytye. whych endured from. vi. of the clocke in the mornyng, tyll. iii. of the clocke the nexte day at after none/ and then yt dyscharged, vppon the othe of. xi. commons sworne in the name of all the cytye, that the cytye shulde stande to the ordynaunce and iudgement of holy chyrche. But an other cronycle sayth, that this interdyccyon shulde haue contynued longer, ne had ben the sterenesse of the Londoners/ whyche helde the legate so streyght, that they enforced hym to withdraw that sentence vppon the forsayde condycyon. Then after this, all the bul werkes and barbycans made by the erle in the cytye were plucked clene vppe/ and the dyches fyllyd, that no parte of theym was sene. when the cytesyns shulde haue theyr newe pardon graunted/ an obstacle was made, for so myche as they as yet hadde not recompensyd the kynge of Romaynes for the subuersyon of his manour of Thystylworth. For the whyche was ared. vi. thousande marke/

bb so that

so that fynally wyth great labour and frendshyppe, thy agreed to gyue vnto hym for amendes a thousande marke, to be payed in two yeres.

It was longe after the kynge accepted to his grace syr Johñ Cyuyle, syr Nycholas de Segraue, syr willyam Warmeryn or Wermyon, syr Richarde Gray, syr Johñ fyz Johñ, and syr Gylbert de Lucy, with other. And accorde was also made betwene syr Edwarde the kynges sonne, and the forenamed erle of Gloucester. And then was all forteresses and other defences which before tyme were made in Southwerke and in other places toynynge to the same, pulled vp and destroyed / and the erle and all other souldyours clene voyded. And after all thynges set in order and reste, excepte such as yet kept the yle of Ely / the kynge rode to Shrowysburye, where he taried a seson, for to cõmon of maters betwene hym and Lewelyn prynce of walys.

The kynge thus beyng at Shrowysbury / a wrytte was dyrected to syr Aleyn Souch mayre of Lõdon, viii. dayes before Mychelmas from the kynge / chargynge hym that the cytesyns shuld not procede to electyon of newe shyrefes tyll his commynge to London, but to suffer the olde to abyde styll in office.

Innodomini. M. CC. lxviii.

Anno dñi. M. CC. lxix.

Aleyn Souch.

willyam de Durham.

Anno. liii.

walter Henry.

IN this. liii. yere in the moneth of Nouember, fyll a varyaũce betwene the felyshyppes of goldsmythes and taylloures of London. whyche grew to makynge of partyes / so that wyth the goldsmythes toke parte the felyshyp or craft of / Parte tokyng.
Awyth the taylloures helde ꝑ craft of stayners. By meane of thys myche people nyghtly gaderyd in the stretes in harneys. And at length as yt were prouyded, ꝑ thyrd nyght, of the sayde partyes met vpon the nomber of. v. hũdred men on both sydes, and ran to gyther wyth such violence, ꝑ some were slayn and many woũded, Then outcrie was made / so ꝑ the shyreffes with strength of other cõmons came to the ryddynge of theym, and of theym toke certayn persones / and sent them vnto dyuers prysons / and vppon the morowe suche serche was made, that the moste of the cheke causers of that fray were taken and put in warde.

Then vppon the frenday folowyng saynt Katheryns day, sessyons were kepte at Newgate by the mayre and Laurẽce de Broke iustyce and other / where. xxx. of the sayd persones were arreygned of felony, and. xiii. of them caste and hanged. And for one Godfrey de Beuerlay holpe to arme one of the sayd persons, he was also caste amonge the other. In lent folowyng the kynge beyng at westmynster commaũded the mayre of London to presente vnto hym. vi. persones such as were able to be shyrreffes. Of the whyche. vi. so presented, ꝑ kyng chase. ii. for to be shyreffes / that is to say wyllyam de Durham and walter Henry / and then caused theym to be sworne, that they shulde gader the profytes of the cytye, and to gyue a trewe accompte before the Barons of the exchecker.

And the morow after saynt Jamis daye, or the. xxvi. daye of July / the kynge dyscharged syr Aleyn Souch

mayre

mayre, and made Stephā Edworth constable of the toure, and custos of the cytye of London. Of these rulers of the cytye after the yere that Thomas fyz Thomas was mayre are dyuers opynyons. For after some writers, from that yere, whyche as the xlviii. yere of kynge Henry tyll the lviii. yere of hys reygne, in the whyche yere Johan Adryan draper was mayre/ were all custodyes and gardeyns and no mayres/ and who to ỳ was then constable of the towre of Lõdon, was also custos of the cytye.

About this tyme also by medyacyon and meanes of fyr Edwarde/ all suche dysheryted persones as kepte the yle of Ely, were reconcyled vnto the kynge/ and all fortresses and defences therin by theym made, plucked away and destroyed.

And in thys moneth of July, Octobonus the legat after he had made many good rules in the chyrche, not wythoute great charge of dymes leuyed of the same/ toke his leue of the kynge, and rode towarde the see syde with great treasour, and so returned in processe of tyme to Rome. where after Innocent the fyft, about the yere of our lorde. xii. hundred & .lxxvi. he was chosen and created pope, and then named Adryan ỳ. v. of ỳ name, and dyed wythin. l. dayes of his elecyon. This yere also, for so myche as many of the cytesyns of London for the great imposycyon & charge that they were sette at, towarde the fyne of .xx. thousande marke forenamed wyth other charges, voyde the cytye wyth theyr houlholdes and goodes, & enhabited them in dyuers places of the lande, thynkynge therby to be acquited of the sayd sessyng or charge/ the other of the cytye whych remayned, made instant labourre to ỳ kyng and had yt graunted, that all suche as for the sayde cause hadde voyded theyr goodes out of the cytye, shulde be distrayned by the shyryfe of ỳ shyre where they then dwelled, and forcyd to paye all suche summes as they before were assessyd at.

And in the moneth of September, the forenamed .v. cytesyns whych remayned prysoners in the towre of wyndesore, that is to saye Thomas fyz Thomas, Wychaell Tony, Stephan Bucherell, Thomas Pywelysdon, and Johñ de la Flete, as before in the ende of the. xlviii. yere is expressyd/ made at thys season theyr ende wyth fyr Edwarde the kynges sonne for great summes of money, & were delyuered.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxix.

Thomas fiz Thomas.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx.

wyllyam Haddystoke.

Anno. liiii.

Anketyll de Aluerne.

IN this .liiii. yere, begane an harde froste about the feaste of sayne Andrew, and endured tyll yt was nere vnto Candelmasse. The whych was so feruent, that Thamys aboue the bridge betwene London & westmynster was so harde frosyn, ỳ men and beestes passed ouer on foote from Lambhyth to westmynstr/ and so by ward in dyuers places to Kyng stone/ and marchaundyse was caryed from Sandwych & other hauens of the see vnto London by lande, for that shyppes at ỳ season myghte not entre into the ryuer of Thamys.

And about the feaste of sayne Vedast syll suche plent of water, ỳ Thamys flowed and rose so hyghe, ỳ the lyke therof was not sene by men then lyuynge. wherof ensued myche harme

about London/ for the seiers by the water syde were all drowned, and in theym great plente of marchaundyse perysshed and losse.

In this yere in the begynnynge of lent/ ꝑ kynge gaue vnto syr Edward his son the rule of the cytye of London, with all reuenues and profytes to yt belongynge. After whyche gyft ꝑ sayd syr Edwarde made syr Hugh the son of Othon cõstable of ꝑ towre and custos of the cytye.

And vppon the .xv. daye of Apryll ensuynge/ syr Edmunde the kynges other sonne surnamed Crouch bake, maryed at westminster the doughter of the erle of Aumarle. For solempnyte wherof, the kynge kept there in ꝑ great hall a great honorable feaste the sondaye folowynge.

And vppon the daye of saynte Erkenwalde, or the laste daye of Apryll nexte ensuynge / syr Edwarde ꝑ kynges sonne commaunded the citesyns of London to presente vnto hym .bi. persones able to be shyrefles of London. Of the whyche he admytted to that office wyllyam de Hadestoke & Inketyll de Aluerne / & sware them to be accomptauntes as theyr predecessours were. And the .bi. daye of May folowyng ꝑsentyd at ꝑ Guyld hall, and there chargyd of new.

At these dayes a newe custome or toll was vsed to be payed by the cytyzyns of London vnto the kynge/ whych toll syr Edwarde then hadde letten to ferme to a marchaunt straũger for .xx. marke by yere. wherfore the cytesyns not wyllynge to be vnder the rule of a straũger, made grete suyte vnto the sayde syr Edwarde/ and lastely agreed wyth hym to bye the sayde tolle free, for the summe of two hundred marke.

And in the ende of this yere, that is to meane the .xiii. daye of October/ the kynge lette translate wyth great solemnyte, the holy body of saynte Edwarde kynge and confessour, that before laye in the syde of the quere where the monkes nowe synge, into the chapell at the backe of the hyghe aulter of westmynster abbay/ & there layde yt in a ryche shryne. And in this yere the kynge hadde graunted vnto hym towarde his vyage purposyd by hym into the holy lande, the xx. peny of euery mannes substaunce mouable thorough out hys lande of the lay fee/ and of the spyrytualty by assent of ꝑ .x. Gregorye then pope .iii. dysmes, to be leuyed in thre yeres.

Anno domini .M.CC. lxx.

walter Porter.

Anno domini .M. CC.lxxi.

Johñ Idryan Vyntyner.

Anno.lb.

Johñ Taylour.

IN thys .lb. yere, the kynge of Romains cõcludid a couenaũt betwen ꝑ kyng & syr Gylbert de Clare erle of Gloucester, for a vyage to be taken into the holy lande by the sayd erle for the kynge. For the whych vyage the saide erle shuld haue toward his charge .viii. thousand mark, and at the takyng of his shyppyng other viii. thousande marke, and to be redy by the fyrst daye of May nexte folowynge/ and yf the erle were not redy at the see syde at that day with his company to take his shyppynge, he shuld then forfayte to ꝑ kyng .ii.M. marke. For suertie wherof ꝑ sayde erle shuld deliuer into the kynges possessyon his castell of Henleger standynge vpon ꝑ marche of walis. But this came after to no purpose, wherfore ꝑ cause

is not

is not shewyd. But ꝑ tourney was perfourmed by syr Edwarde the kynges sonne, as after shall be to you declared. In this yalle tyme the cytesyns of London contentyd so well syr Edwardes mynde, that he labou red so for them to the kynges grace, that they had then theyr chartour so cõfermyd, that they shuld after theyr auncyent lyberrtyes chose of them self a mayre and two shyryues/and ꝑ sayd shyryues to haue the offyces therun to belongynge to ferme, as they to fore hadde/ except that where tofore they payde for the fee ferme. iii. hun dred and l. punde, nowe they shulde pay. iiii. hundred and. l. pounde. After whyche confyrmacyon thus grauted and passed by ꝑ kynges brode seale/ the cytesyns vppon the. xiiii. daye of July assembled at the Guyldhall, & chase for theyr mayre Johñ Adryan draper/ and for shyrreffes walter Por ter and Johñ Tayller. And vppon ꝑ xvi. daye folowynge syr Edwarde be ynge present, presented them vnto ꝑ king at westminster/where they were admitted & swore. And then was syr Hugh of Othon dyschargyd of that rule of the cytye.

Then the citesyns of theyr fre wyll gaue vnto the kynge an. C. marke/ & to syr Edwarde. v. hundred marke/ whyche gyft the kyng well accepted. And soone after they receyued theyr chartour of confyrmacyon, berynge date the. xvi. day of July, and yere of the kynges reygne. iv.

And for the former conuencyon be twene the kyng and the erle of Glou cester was not holden/ syr Edwarde toke vppon hym the kynges crosse. To whom the kynge gaue all suche money as was graunted of ꝑ lay fee as before is shewyd, & then toke his leue of the kyng/and after toke shyp pynge at Douer the. xx. daye of Au guste, and so sayled to Burdeaux with his wyfe and other noble company. And for that holy Lewys then kyng of Fraunce was gone, he taryed at Burdeaux a certayne season/and af ter sped hym with his forsayd compa ny toward ꝑ cytye of Thunys, where ꝑ Frenche kyng was. But or he came thyder sayne Lewys was dede. And ꝑ peace cõcluded betwene Philyppe hys son and the kynge of Thunys. wherfore syr Edwarde entendynge to greue goddes enmyes, wyth some knyghtes of Fraunce whych entred the same / toke leue of the Frenche kynge and of syr Charles hys vncle then kynge of Sycyle/ & sayled fur ther into the holy lande, and arryued at a porte of Acris or Acon. For at ꝑ daye in the holy lande was no mo cy tyes in the possessyon of cristen men, but that and the cytye of Tyre/ wyth certayne castellys, whervnto the cry sten fled often for socoure agayne the Sarazyns.

when syr Edwarde was comẽ to ꝑ cytye of Acon/ ꝑ crysten knyghtes re ceyued hym with gret honour & glad nesse, and lodged hym in theyr beste maner. where he taryed by the space of a yere after, as affermeth ꝑ french cronycle. For yt was not longe after his commynge thyder, but that the Soudane of Surry (the whych had wonne al the countreys there about) came thyther wyth a great power of Sarazyns, and assauted the towne vygurously. But syr Edwarde with the ayde of crysten men bare hym so knyghtly, that he defended the cytye and the castellys to the same belon gynge, & terrytoryes of the same/that the Soudane for all hys great mul tytude and power gate there lyttell honoure / notwythstandynge that he hadde in hys hoste, as affyrmeth the frenche cronycle, ouer an hundred thousande Sarazyns. And more af fyrmeth the sayde cronycle, that syr

Edwarde in his polycyes and manfull actes so honorably behauyd him that he neuer dyd such acte in all his lyfe folowynge/ all be it that after he dyd many of grete honour. But none that was lyke vnto the actes that he there accomplyshed and brought vn to ende. By reason wherof his name amonge infidelys was had in memory many yeres after.

Of the honoure of thys marcyall knyght I haue shewed the lengeer reherfall, for so myche as I fynde yt te stifyed of the French men/ the which I knowe well by theyr other cronycles that they make of Englysh prynces must be of great authorite, or elys by them yt shuld not so specyally haue ben noted. And more ouer I am assured, that yf a Frenche prynce had deserued suche a generall prayse/ yt shulde haue ben set out and artycu led euery acte thereof, that yt shulde haue contayned a large worke, & the specyalityes therof declared to theyr moste laude and honour. Then thys noble prynce beynge thus in Acon, and dayly puttynge the Surycns to shame and great damages / they seynge they might not preuayle agayn hym by strength of batayll, cast how they myght destroy hym by treason/ and sente vnto hym a Sarazyne in name of a messanger, the whyche in tellynge of hys fayned message, wou ded hym wyth a knyfe enuenomyd/ of the whyche wounde he laye longe or he were therof cured. But after confessyon made by the Sarazyn of all hys cōpassed treason, he was put vnto cruell deth.

In thys yere also fyll downe the steple of saynt Mary Bow in Chepe of Lōdon, & slew women & chyldren.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxi.

Anno vii. M. CC. lxxii.

Gregory Rokkysle.

Johñ Adryan wyntener

Anno. lvi.

Henry waleys.

IN this. lvi. yere, in the moneth of Nouember at the parliamēt holden at westmynster/ the marchaū tes of Lōdon and other places of Englande, complayned them to ỹ kyng that the countesse of Flaundres had taken from them certayne gooddes amountynge to a great summe. Upon whych complaynt the kyng sent to her to make restytucyon. But for none was had/ the kyng cōmaunded that all men born in ỹ partyes in Englande shulde be arrested, and they & theyr goodes to be vnder suer kepynge. By the whych meane in conclusyon she sent ouer embassadours, and besought the kyng that his marchaūtes myght vse theyr entercourse into Flaūdres as they before tymes had done, & such losses as before was

Deth & buryenge of Richard kynge of Almayne.

by theym susteyned, shulde be recompensyd. And so soone after, an amytye betwene the kynge and her was concluded.

In this yere about ỹ ende of May the dyed Richard kynge of Almayn and erle of Cornewayle brother to the kynge/ and was buryed at Hayls an abbaye of whyte monkes by hym before tymes buylded, after he hadde ben kynge of Almayne by the terme of. xb. yeres. But after the reherfall made before in the .xxx. yere of this kyng Henry, he shuld reygne xvi. yeres.

In the moneth of Juny, ỹ monastery of ỹ Trinite in ỹ citie of Norwiche was consumed wyth fyre / by treason of a frayre made betwene seruauntes of the abbaye and some of the cytesyns of

ryens of the cytye / whyche grewe to a great shrympshe. For the pryour of the same and other of the monkes purueyed sowdyours, and helde ꝑ belfray and the chyrch by force of armys/and threwe out stones & dartes and shotte many arrowes, by reason wherof many of ꝑ towne were bothe wounded & slayne, whyche broughte the comons and yonge men in suche a furye and madnesse, that they syrid the gates / and after forced the fyre with rede and dyre woode, that the chyrche wyth the bookes & all other ornamentes of the same, and all houses of offyce belongynge to the same abbey, were clene brent and throwen downe/so that nothynge was preserued/excepte a lytell Chapell. whā tydynges of thys cryst came to ꝑ kynges knowlege/he was therwith greuously displeased, so that he rode thyder soone after / and there commaunded questes to be charged of knyghtes & esquyres that dwelled in the countre aboute/ and to endyte all suche persones as were occasyoners and executours of that dede. By reason of whyche enquery, fynally were caste and iuged vppon the nombre of.xxx. yonge men of the towne/ the whyche were after drawen to the place of execucyon and there hanged and brent to the great dyscomfyture & sorowe of the cytezeyns. For they thought ꝑ pryour of the place was the occasyoner of all that myschyef / whych was borne out & defended by the bysshop of Worwyche than beyng named Roger. And this yere were diuers prodygies & straūge tokens sene in dyuers places of Englande amōge/ꝑ whych at Stene wyche besyde London a lā- & mysse be was penyd, haupnge.ii. perfyte bodyes wyth all membres, and but one heed.

Anno domini. M. C. lxxii.

Rycharde Parys.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxiii.

Syr walter Henry.

Anno. lvii.

Johñ Bedyll.

IN thys. lvii. yere of kynge Hēry and begynnynge of the same, the kynge sykened / so that he was forced to kepe his bed at westmynster, where he called before hym syr Gylberte de Clare erle of Glouceter and caused hym to be newly sworne to kepe the peas of the lande, to the behofe of Edwarde hys sonne / and than dyed vppon the daye of sayncte Edmunde the bysshoppe, or the.xvi. day of Nouembre / and was buryed vppon the southesyde of sayncte Edwarde in westmynster, whenne he had reygned. lvi. yeres. xxviii. dayes leuynge after hym syr Edwarde beforenamed for hys heyre, & Edmūde Crowchbak. In a table hāgyng vpō the tombe of the sayd Henry are wryttē these verses folowynge.

Tercius Henricus iacet hic, pietatis amicus
Ecclesiam struxit istam, quam post renouauit
Reddat ei munus, qui regnat trinus & vnus.

The whyche may be Englysshed as folowyth.

The frende of pyte and of almesse dede
Henry the thyrde whylome of Englande kynge.
who thys chyrch brake, & after hys mede
Agayn renewed into this fayre buylynge

Nowe resteth in here, whyche dyd so
great a thynge
He yelde hys mede, that lorde in
deyte
That as one god regneth in perso-
nes thre.

Francia.

LOwys the.ix. of ỹ name and sonne vnto the seconde Philipp, begā his regne ouer the realme of Fraūce in the yere of our lorde .xii.C.xiiii. and the .vii. yere of the thyrde Henry then kynge of Englande. Thys Lowys was crowned at Raynes vpon the daye of sayne Sixtus the pope or the.vi. day of Auguste. By the meane of thys Lowys as testifieth the fresshe cronycle, retourned the blode of Peppyn to the enheryteaunce of the crowne of Fraunce, whose name was Isabell doughter of Bawdewyn erle of Henaut/ whych Bawdewyn was discendyd of Ermengaunte, somtyme countesse of Namoure, whyche was doughter to Charles duke of Lorayne / the whyche Charles was lynyally dyscended of Charles the Conquerour that was sonne of Charles Martellus the sonne of Peppyn.

whan thys Lowys had passed the solempnytye of hys coronacyon / he made a vyage into ỹ countre of Poytiers, and there wanne from the Englysshe men certayne castelles & townes, as before in the .x. yere of Henry the thyrde is touched. The whyche vyage by hym fynysshed/ he at ỹ contemplacyon and prayer of kyng Johan kynge of Hierusalem, toke vpō hym the crosse to warre vpō the Turkes / and after all thynges for that vyage made redy, passed with hys hoost by Burgys & Neuers, and so to Lyon/ and from Lyon to Auygnō the whyche for dyso bedyence to the chyrche of Rome had stande accursed vppon the terme of.vii. yeres. But where as kynge Lowys supposed he shulde haue passed with hys people as he had passed the other cytyes / ỹ cytezeyns closed the gates agayne hym, & wolde nat suffre hym nor hys to come within the cytye.

wherfore the kynge commaunded assaute to be made/ and so continued there hys siege tyll the myddell of Auguste, the whyche was begon aboute the ende of Nouembre/ and loste there many of hys men/ amōge the whych Guy erle of sayncte Paule a man of great fame was one, with ỹ bysshop of Lemeryk and other, to the nōbre of.ii.M. or theraboute. wherewith thys Lowys was so amoued, that he made a solempne othe, that he wolde nat departe thens tyll he had wonne the towne.

when that the rulers of the towne had knowlege of the kynges aswe and promesse that he had made/ they toke adupsemente / and shortly after sent vnto the kynge .ii. noble men of the cytye to entreate and common of peas. But peas was to them vtterly denyed/ except they wolde submytte them hooly to the correccyon of the pope. For the offence done to god & hys chyrch of Rome / & after to stande to the kynges dome, for dysplesshure done agayne hym. In the ende thoughe thys condycyon were greatly agayne they? mynde/ it was lastly agreed vnto, and the kynge with his people was receyued into the cytye. And after he had restyd hym there a seasō, that the cytezens had agreed them with the popes legate, and receyued of hym absolucō/ with a new bysshop named Peter Corbio of the popes electyon than Gregory the.ix. with other thynges done accordinge

to the

to the sayd popes commaundement: Then kynge Lowys commaunded fyrste the dyches of the towne to be fylled playne with the grounde. And that done, he caused to be caste vnto the erthe .iii. C. of ꝑ sayrest houses of the cytye. And after certayne sūmes of money by hym receyued towarde hys charge / he departed thens towarde Tholowse / & there by aduyce of hys barony, for so moche as wynter was towarde he retourned into Fraunce / & so sped hym on hys iourney, that vppō the euyn of all Saintes he came to a place called Moūte Pauncer in the prouynce of Aluerne where he was take with stronge sykenesse, and dyed within .iiii. dayes after, whose corps with grete honour was conueyed vnto sayne Denys, & there buryed by hys father / when he had reygned .iii. yeres / leuynge after hym a sonne, the whych is nowe named saint Lowys, and was than of ꝑ age of .xii. yeres or nere thereaboute.

LOwys the .x. of that name surnamed saint Lowys, and son of the .ix. Lowys laste kynge / began hys reygne ouer the lande of Fraūce in the moneth of Nouember, and yere of grace .xii. C. & .xl. vi. and ꝑ .x. yere of Henry the .iii. then kynge of Englande. The whyche for hys tendernesse of youthe, was thought insufficyent to take so greate a charge / and specyally of ꝑ duke of Bryteyne thā named Peter Mauncler, the whyche encensed and fyred many noble men agayne the sayde Lowys. But at length by prouysyon of quene Blanche hys mother and other lordes, he subdued hys enemyes / & at Raynes was crowned in the moneth of December folowyng, of the bysshop of Soyssons, for so moche as at that tyme ꝑ see of Raynes was voyde.

The .iiii. yere of hys reygne and of hys age .xvii. he buylded the house of relygyon called Royan mount / & set therin monkes of Cysteaure order whyte monkes, and endewed theym with ryche possessyons.

It was nat longe after that great varyaunce fyll betwene the vnyuersyte or studentes of Parys and the cytezeyns of the same / in suche wyse that the studyentes were in purpose to haue lafte ꝑ cytye, & to haue kepte theyr study elsys where. Of ꝑ whych seyde the frenche boke expresseth nat the cause / but sayethe that the kynge made good spede to agree theym, for so moche as kyng Hēry of Englande had made laboure to the sayde studyentes to come into hys countre, & to enhabyte theym there with many great pryueleges. But in cōclusion ꝑ frenche kynge so entreated thē, that they agreed to reste there styll. And that of a congruēce / for they myghte dwell in no lande, where they shulde more surely be defended. For ꝑ kyng of Fraunce bereth the floure de Lyce for one of that causes, that is to saye for to defende the clergy. And the fayth of Chryste betokeneth the mydle leef. And the tyrde betokeneth Chyualry. So that by the chyualry the clergy is defended, whych mayntayne the fayethe of the holy chyrche. Aboute thys season kynge Lowys maryed to hys fere Margarete the doughter of the erle of Prouynce. Soone after ꝑ matrymony was solēpnysed / Frederyk the secōde before in ꝑ story of Hēry the .iii. myndyd Emperour of Almayne, sēt vnto Lowis requyrynge hi ꝑ he wolde mete hym at a place called Valcolour, to ꝑ ende that he myght cōmō with hym: whyche requeſt kynge Lowys accepted / & with a goodly company kepte there hys daye of metynge. But whan the Emperour was ware that he was comen thyder wyth suche a company / he fayned hym syke, and

The stoune de Lyce.

and broke hys appoyntement. wherfore the frenshmen construyed, that yf the kynge had comen thyder with a small or weke company / he wolde haue conueyed hym into hyghe Almayn, and there to haue kepte hym tyll he had of hym hys pleasure, concernynge the warre betwene kynge Henry and hym or in other thynges. But when kynge Lowys espyed the delucyon of the Emperour / he then retourned into Fraunce. It was nat longe after that ỹ kynge was enfourmed of the obstynacy of the Albygenses / the whyche of longe tyme had be effected with dyuers poyntes of herysy, and many tymes recōcyled by the kynges of Fraunce and other / & yet fallen agayne to the sayde errour / wherfore the kynge sent vnto syr Johan Beawmount the whych ioyned vnto theym / chargynge hym to enuade that countre, and to waste and distroy it, tyll he had forced theym to restore to the chyrch suche goodes as they before had taken frome it / and ouer that to cause theym to make amendes to the good chrysten people, whyche they had harmed by meanes of theyr rappynes and erorcyōs. Upō whyche commaundement thus frō ỹ kynge receyued / the sayde Johan with a competent nombre of knyghtes entred the sayd countre, and layde syege to a strōg castell named Mont Royall. And after many forte assautes wanne the sayd castell & manned it with Frenshemen. And than rode to an other stronge holde than named Saygos / and there lykewyse ordered the same. And after wastyng the countre, waste from theym many townes & holdes / so that in the ende he forced the chyef rulers of that prouynce to obey theym to all hys will / and delyuered to hym suerties or hostages for the performaunce of the same. So ỹ he retourned into Fraūce with greate pompe and honour / and receyued of the kyng at hys home cōmynge great thanke, with many ryche gyftes. Aboute the .xv. yere of kynge Lowys / the warre was quyckened betwene thys Lowys & Henry the .iii. than kynge of Englande, for causes before shewed in the .xxvi. yere of the sayde Henry. And after that warre as there is shewed ended / the kynge, whyche was towarde the cyte of Lyon to haue bysyted the pope Innocent the .iiii. whyche thyder was fled for fere of Frederik the fore named Emperour / was taken with a sykenesse named dyssenterya of the flux. wherwith he was so greuously vexed, that he laye longe at a towne called Poyntoyse / and was in great ieopardy of lyfe / where lastly after many pylgrymages for hym done, with prayers and other obseruaunces longe to accompt / lastly it came to hys mynde, that yf it pleased god to restore hym to hys helth, he wolde make a vyage into the holy lande, & there warre vpon Chrystes enemyes After whyche promyse solemnly auowed / he mended dayly, and was sone after restored vnto hys helthe. whan the kynge was recouered and retorned vnto Parys / he called a counsayll of spyrytuall and temporall, & there shewed vnto theym of the promesse whyche he had made / requyryng the of theyr assystence and ayde / wherin he fonde hys lordes were agreable.

And in the tyme and season ỹ prouysyon was made for that iourney / the kynge wyth a goodly company rode vnto the abbey of Clunp, to vysyte the forsayd pope / and he taryed with hym .xv. dayes. And after hys matter with hym sped, wyth playne tempsyon to hym graunted, and all other that kept with hym that vyage he retourned into Fraunce. And vpō wytsondaye folowynge / he kepte a great

great courte of hys landes at Melcō where in presence of them, he called before hym Beatryce doughter vnto the erle of Prouince and syster to the quene hys wyfe / and there gaue her in marryage vnto Charles hys brother and made hym there knyghte, with many other for hys loue. And þ day folowyng he gaue vnto the sayd Charles the erledome of Anioy with þ lordshyp of Mayn. And soone after he rode to Paris, where he assembled many of his lordes to hold with hym hys tourney.

The fryday folowynge þ feaste of Penthecoste, in the yere of our lorde .xii.C.and.xliiii. & the .xvii. yere of the reygned of þ sayd Lowys he with many of his lordes departed from Parys vppon hys iournay towarde the holy lande. In which was croysed also þ archbyshops of Bourges, and of Raynes, the byssshoppes of Laon, of Orleaunce, and of Beauuais, þ erles of Artoys, of saynt Paule, of Bloy, of Barre, of Marche, and of Boūtfort, with many other noble men whyche were longe to reherce. with the whyche company the kyng passed thorugh Burgoyn / and so to Lyō the vttermost border of Fraūce where the kynge fonde at þ tyme the forenamed pope, which there taryed for fere of the Emperour Frederyke.

whan the kyng a season had there taryed with the pope / he sent forth þ dawe warde of hys host towarde the place called Aque Mort. And shortly after folowed hym selfe with the rest of hys people. But certayn of hys warde passynge by a castell called þ Roche of Clin / were spoyled and robbed, and some slayne. wherof þ kyng beyng enformed, charged hys knyghtes to assaute the sayde castell. The whych was done / and the Mouldpours hanged, and the castell made playne with the grounde. And after he helde on hys way tyll he came to the forsayd porte of Aque Mort or þ deed see / where he toke shyppynge, & so sayled forthe vppon Bartylmewe euyn or the .xviii. day of August / and lāded after in the prouynce of Cipre / where he taryed all the wynter folowyng, for some parte of his host that as yet was behynde. wherof þ kynge he was ioyously receyued / and at his departynge thens, kept cōpany with hym in the same iourney. But there fortune began to frowne vppon kyng Lowys. For in the tyme of hys there taryenge moche of hys people sykened and dyed. Amonge the whyche, passed to god these men of name folowynge / the byssshop of Bauuais, the erles of Mountfort, of Barre, and of Vendosme, with dyuers other to þ nombre of .xi.C.xl. whan kynge Lowys not all without troubles, as dyssencions amōge his people, and daūger of takynge of the see, had passed the wynter and a parte of the begynnynge of the yere / lastly aboute Trynyte sondaye he toke shyppynge at the porte of Cypre then named Dometon or Dōmeson, and landed nere vnto the cytye of Damasse or Dampyet the frydaye after. whan the crysten host were comyn nere vnto the porte of Damasse / the kynge caused theym to be shypped in small vessels and so in order to saple or rowe towarde the cytye. But the Sarazeyns beynge ware of theyr comynge, issued oute of the cytye, and defended the porte vygorously / so that many a crysten man was slayne at that recounter. But in the ende the dyscomfyture tourned vppon the Sarasyns. For the chyefe capytayne of the towne wyth .ii. Admyralles were there slayne, & many of theyr knyghtes. Then they gaue backe vnto þ towne, and suffered the crysten to lande. The kynge then pyghte hys

paulylons, and strengthed hys felde for sodayne brekynge out of the Turkes/ and so rested hym and hys people the sonday and môday folowing. As faste as the crysten made prouysyon to ordre for theyr suer lyenge in the felde, so faste the Turkes within the towne made puruey aunce to conueye suche goodes as they myghte out of the cytye / and lastly sette the houses on fyre, & voyded vnknowynge to the crysten hoost. Anone as the flambe of the fyre appered/the crysten men without resystence entred ꝑ cytye and quenched the fyre, & after possessed the cytye. Here I passe ouer certayne legacios and messages sent fro a prynce of the Oryēt vnto kynge Lowys/wherin appereth more fame of wordes than of thynges of trouth Then the temples and synagoges of the cytye were hallowed & occupyed to crysten mennes vse. And there the kynge with hys hoost rested hym tyll the moneth of Nouēber folowynge / in the whych season came vnto hym the erle of Poytyers with a fayre cōpany. Then kynge Lowys with hys people departed from Damasse ꝑ.xx. day of Nouembre, by the ryuer of Nilus, passynge with small vesselles to warde a stronge holde called Malfour/ whyther at lengthe they came with greate daunger. How be it they myght nat come nere vnto the towne to laye theyr syege therunto, bycause of a ryuer there rūnyng named Thanoys or Thanoes. wherfore ꝑ kyng pyght hys Paulylons betwene the sayd ryuer and the ryuer of Nylus.

In thys whyle ꝑ the crysten hoost was thus lodged/ worde was brought to the kynge that the Sowdan of Babylon was dede, the whych before hys deth had prouyded a greate hoost to be sent into Egypte to withstāde the crysten hoost/& had committed the rule therof vnto an hardy and baliaſt Turke named Saphardyn. The whyche with a greate people came downe to thys towne of Malfour or Macour, & there dayly made assautes vpon the crysten hoost/ so ꝑ betwene theym were had many bykerynges & skyrmysshes to bothe damages. Lastly the kynge aduertysynge in hys mynde that he myghte nothynge dere the Sarazeyns, without he myght passe ꝑ ryuer of Thanoys/cōcluded by aduyce of hys maryners to make a brydge of shyppes so that fynally he cheyned and fastened hys shyppes togyder, in suche wise that a passage was made for his knyghtes.

whan the Turkes espyed thys ordenaūce/ and apperceyued well that ꝑ the crysten hoost had passed that ryuer, it shulde be to theyr greate dysauaūtage, anone with all ordenaūce and shot that they myght make, they dyd the vttermest of theyr powers to let the perfytyng of thys brydge and passage of the crysten hoost. And to thys fyll an other contrarye to the crysten. For the water of that ryuer whyche was brode and depe was so troublous of wawe, that the brydge therwith was all to shaken / & daungerous to stande on.

But these Turkes entendynge to damage the cristen/left a certayne to defende the passage, whyle the other by a forde or passage vnknowen to ꝑ crysten men, came ouer the ryuer / & assauted the Frenchmen egerly/ so ꝑ there was betwene theym foughten a cruell batayle. Howe be it thorugh dyuyne power of god, the Turkes were ouerset and many of the slayne and taken. The whyche batayll was foughten vpon the daye of saynt Fabyan and Sebastyan, or the.xx. daye of Januarii. But yet myght nat the crysté wyn ouer the ryuer. For dayly the strength of the coūtres there nere

came

came downe and fortefyed the hoost of the Sarazyns more & more.

The day folowynge the Purifycacyon of our Lady, blewe suche a tempest of wynde, ỹ it dyd moche harme bothe to the shyppes, and also to the tentes and pauylyons of the crystien hoost. And with that scarcite of victayle began to appere/ so ỹ the kyng determyned to retourne agayn vnto Damasse.

When the Turkes espyed the retourne of the Frenchemen/ they ordeyned .iiii. barges or suche lyke vessayles/ and stuffed them with pytche, rosyn, grece, and other lyquet and brénynge stuffe/ and in the nyght sodaynly brought thé a borde where the crysten flote lay/ and then cast on them Grekysh fyre, ỹ whyche anone set them in a lyghte fyre. By reason wherof the crysten flote was in great ieopardy, and with great laboure preserued from brénynge. For thys despyte that the Sarazyns had done to the crysten/ the kyng was so therwyth amoued, that he sayde and promysed that he wolde nat departe thens tyl he had done to the Turkes some displeasure. And vpon enquysycyó made/ he was enfourmed of a passage or foorde, that was within .iii. myles of hys pauylion. wherupó he called a counsayll of hys lordes, & shewed to them his purpose/ gyuynge vnto the erle of Artoyes the leadynge of hys forewarde/ & charged hym ỹ whan he were passed the foorde, that he shuld tary there tyll ỹ other deale of the hoost were ouer passed. whan al thynges was ordered to the kynges mynde/ the sayd erle with hys company set forthwarde, and passed the sayd foorde wythout daunger/ and there forgettynge what to hym was before commaunded of the kynge, set forth incontynently towarde the Turkes, whyche he weale knewe kepte ỹ place where the brydge was before made. And there faughte with theym which were al vnpurueyed, & vnknowynge of hys sodeyne commynge. wherfore he slewe many of theym/ & after chased the other, whyche for socoure fledde vnto the cytye of Massour forsayd/ whome he folowed so egerly, that in ỹ entrynge of the cytye he entred with theym, and there was slayne with a certayn of hys knyghtes. By reason wherof ỹ Soldyours of the towne were so encoraged, that they issued out vpon the crysten and draue them backe tyll they sawe the kynges power come/ & then retourned to the cytye & shytte with strégth theyr gates. Thã kyng Lowis being ascertayned of the sayd erles dethe, made for hym great dole. And after prouysyon made for the lodgynge of hys people/ he thé made dyuers brydges & passages ouer ỹ ryuer of Thanoyes. And for the crysten hoost shuld be assured frõ the sodayne & vnware assautes & reprochys of ỹ infydelies/ therfore he closed theym wythin a strength of a dyche & pale, that theyr enemyes myght no waye haue waye into them/ & named that strengthe a park. In the whyche the crysten hoost there lodged all the season of Lent.

In ỹ whych tyme ỹ yõge Sowdã came downe wyth a great hoost of people. And for he myght nat lodge hys people within the towne/ therfore he made an other lyke parke vnto the cristen men, & there closed hys peple/ so that betwene the crysten and them was many conflyctes and assautes/ somtyme to the losse of that one, and eft to the losse of that other. But the Sowdane made all the meanes he myght to kepe vytayll frome the crysten hoost/ & stopped all the passages betwene Damasse & them, that from thés they myght haue no socour. By meane wherof dyssease & sykenesse

fyll amonge the crysten, so that they dyed hougely.

when kynge Lowys was ware of these miseries on euery syde, he sente to the Sowdane to haue a truce for a certayne tyme. But in conclusion none wolde be to hym graũted. wher fore of necessyte he was forced to dre ke hys felde, & wyth as good polycy as he myght drewe hym to the ryuer of Nylus / & so by shyp passed downe by the sayd ryuer towarde Damasse. But he passed nat ferre or þ he was assauted on euery syde / so þ the fight contynued styll without seasynge, to the great losse of the crysten host.

kynge Lewys taken of þ Turke

Then lastly came the Sowdane with a fresshe cõpany / & beset þ kyng so about, that in the ende he was taken, wyth hys .ii. brethrne Charles & Robert, the erle of Poytyers, þ erle of Angeou, the erle of Flaunders, the duke of Brytayne, the erle of Soyssõs. And in þ fyght was slayne / þ byl shoppes of Langrees, & of Soysons with many other of whome þ names be nat put in wrytynge.

when kyng Lowys was thus takẽ he was syke. wherfore with all dylygence the Sowdan cõmaunded hym to be conueyed vnto Massoure / and after caused all the other of hys men to be slayne as many as were wounded or syke, excepte they were men of great fame, by whome great aduauntage myghte ryse by reason of theyr raunsome. And thus was the cristen host takẽ & spoyled of the Sarazyns the thursday next folowyng the feast of Easter, in the yere of our lord. M. ij. C. l. and the. xxiiii. yere of þ reygne of thys kynge Lowys. The whyche after wyth the other of the nobles of Fraunce were sent vnto Babylon or Cayer / & there kept in sõdry prysõs.

IN processe of tyme it was agreed, that kyng Lowis shuld be delyuered fro pryson & conueyed saufly into the handes of crystẽdome vpon condycyon that he shulde fyrst render and gyue vp into the Sowdans power the cytye of Damasse, wyth all suche prysoners as he had of Turkes and Sarazyns at that daye in hys power / and ouer that he shulde pelde by a certayne daye a certayne summe of besauntes, whyche after the frenche boke shulde be. viii. M. Besauntes Sarazyn. But Peter Dystoy sayth. iii. C. M. Besauntes.

Of these Besauntes I haue lerned there shuld be. ii. That one is called a Bezaunde Imperyall, and the other a Bezaunte Ducall. The Bezaunde Imperyall is worth. l. ducates, & the Ducal Bezaunde is worth xx. ducates. A ducate whyche is named a ducat de camera, is worth. iiii. s. viii. d. A ducat Papall & Venyzią be of lasse value, as. iii. d. or. iiii. d in a pece. Then yf hys raunsome be estemyd after þ imperyall Bezaunde, he payde after the rate of. iiii. s. vi. d. the ducate, and after the summe of. viii. M. Bezaundes in sterlynge money lxxxx. M. li. And for thys the Sowdane promysed to delyuer all suche prysoners as he had in hys prysons of crystẽ men. But in þ he brake promyse / for of. xii. thousande he delyuered scarsly. iii. In thys tyme of takynge of the frenche kynge / a company of ponge men assembled theym togyder in Fraũce / and vnder theyr capytayne, whyche toke vppon hym lyke a bysshoppe, passed by Parys & Orleaunce and other good townes of Fraunce, sayeng that they wolde restore the kynge to hys lybertye. But lastely whan they drewe nere to the porte of the deed see, where they shulde haue taken shyppynge / there they fyll to all thefte and auoutry. wherfore the people of that cõtre sette vppon theym, and slewe they

they⁊ capptayne and the moze parte of they⁊ cõpany where thozugh that symple selelhyp whyche named them selfe Shepherdes, was dysseuered & sparkelyd. whan thys blessed kyng Lowys was delyuered from the daũger of hys enemyes, & was brought out of Egypte into Syrye / he there executed many dedes of charyte and of mekenes, and repayred the cytye of Joppen and other standyng vpon the see syde/and from thens went on pylgrymage vnto Nazareth, and to the mount of Thabor. And when he was retourned vnto Joppen / he receyued there tydynges of the deth of dame Blãch his mother. where after dyuers obseruaũces & prayers done for the soule of hys mother / he toke there shyppynge and sayled towarde Fraunce. And nat withoute trauayle and trouble of the see, at the ende of xii. wekes he landed in the Hauen of Marcyll or Martyll/and so sped his iournay that he came to Parys, in ỹ yere of our lorde. xii. C. and. liiii. and the. vi yere after that he toke vppon hym the voyage / where of the cytezeyns he was receyued wyth mooste honoure and gladnes. And there callynge a coũsayl/ he refourmed many thynges for the weale of hys realme, & made one lawe whych is specyally remẽbred/that is that no man beyng in auctorytye of any hygh office, as Prouost, Prẽtour, or any lyke office, shuld bye any landes or tẽtes within that lordshype ỹ he had rule of. And for that cause that he shuld nat ertort or wronge, or bye suche landes ỹ better chepe by reason of hys myghte or power.

At thys day the Prouostry or chyef rule or office was in the handes of ỹ cytezeyns of Parys, by reason of a seale therof made to theym by the kynges progenytours. By meane wherof many iniuryes and wronges were done vnto the common people, and many theuys and other transgressours by fauoure and money passed vnpunysshed. wherof thys blessed kynge Lowys beyng enfourmed vpon sufficyent proffe made, dyscharged the cytezeyns therof / and assygned a man named Stephan Boyle in that office/ assygnynge to hym yerely a certayne stipend for executyng of that office/and ordeyned that euer after, the Prouost of Parys shuld be named by the kynge and hys heyres kynges.

He also made ordenaunces to auoyde strumpettes out of the cytye, and punysshement for all accustomable great swerers / wyth many other good ordenaunces and lawes, the whyche I passe ouer for lengthynge of the tyme.

In this tyme and season were abydynge in Fraunce in a place called saynt Nicholas de Boys. iii. chyldrẽ borne in Flaundres/the whych were sent thyder to lern ỹ manet of fraũce & also to teche ỹ chyldrẽ of a knyghte named syr Guyllm̃ de Brunz to shot. These chyldrẽ vpon a season passed the boũdes of the abbey groũde & entred the warrayn of a lord of Fraũce called Enguerran lorde of Coucy, & there chased and shote at Conyes for they⁊ disport. The whych were there takẽ of the seruaũtes of the sayd Enguerran, & presented to they⁊ lorde/ ỹ whych of hasty cruelnesse caused the iii. chyldrẽ without pyte to be hãged. wherof herynge ỹ Abbot of saint Nycholas, cõplayned hym with the assystẽce of ỹ fornamed syr Guillm̃ vnto the kyng. The whych incõtynẽtly sẽt to the sayd Enguerrã, charging hym to apere before hys barony, to answere to such matters as there shuld be layd vnto his charge. wher in ỹ ende after many realõs for hym layde / he by great instãce of hys frendes was

ii .ii. pardoned

pardoned of ꝑ greuous offence wyth cõdicion folowyng/that is to meane fyrst he shuld pay vnto the kynge.x. M.li.of Parys money, whych is to meane.xii.C.li.sterling.And ouer that he shuld warre vpõ goddes enemyes in Syria by the space of.iii. yeres contynually, vpon hys owne cost and charge. And thyrdely he shulde buylde a chapel wherin two preestes shuld synge for euer, for the soules of the sayd infauntes. Or after mayster Gagwyne, with the forsayd.x. M.li. & other ayde of the kynge/the hospytall in Parys named ꝑ house of god in Pontoyse, with the frayter of the freer minors or gray freers in Paris were made and repayred.

Than after many dedes of charite done by this vertuous prince/as ma kynge of dyuers houses of relygyon seruyng of the poore people with his owne handes, with fastinges & other inkynde dedes of pytye: he lastly in the.xxxiii.yere of hys reygne honourably receyued Hẽry the.iii.thã kyng of Englande/and stablysshed with hym a peas as before in the.xliiii.yere of the reygne of the sayd Henry is declared.

And that done/he in the.xxxvi.yere of hys reygne, maryed hys eldest son Phylyp vnto Isabell the doughter of Jamys kyng of Aragon. By reason of whyche maryage/the frenshe kyng gaue ouer to the sayd Jamys, all suche ryght as he had in the lordshyppes of Besac, Dampierre, Roussellon, and Barsellon. And the sayde Jamys acquyted & gaue ouer to Lowys, all suche ryghte and tytle as he had in the lordshypes of Carcasson, of Bygorre, and of Amilly.

And soone after he sente Charles hys brother at the requeste of the.iiii. Alexandre than pope, into Cicilia with a great power, to withstande ꝑ violence of Manfrede sonne of Frederyke the second than Emperoure/ the whych agayne ryghte withholde that kyngdome frome the chyrche of Rome. whome Charles after longe fyght, at a place named Boneuente slewe in batayll/and after was made kyng of the sayd countre by auctorytye of the sayde pope Alexander/ payenge yerely vnto the chyrche of Rome.xl.M.ducates, which is moch lyke after the rate of sterlyng money viii.M. vi.C. lxvi.li. xiii.s. iiii.d. euery ducat accõpted at. iiii.s .iiii.d.

IT fyll so after, that in the.xliii. yere of kynge Lowys/Pope Clement the.iiii.of that name, sent a legate vnto Lowys, requyrynge hym to ayde the crysten whyche in Siria were greuously warred with ꝑ Turkes and Sarazyns. At whose requeste the kyng called a counsayll/wherin it was agreed ꝑ socour shuld be made wherfore the kynge with hys.iii.sonnes, Phylyp, Johñ, & Peter, toke on them the crosse. And in the fyrste day of May, the yere of hys reygne.xlui/ he with hys sayde sonnes and many other lordes of Fraunce as well spirytuall as temporall, departed from Parys/and frome thens rode vnto Clunye, where he rested hym.iiii.days And from thẽs sped hys iourney tyll he came to the forenamed porte of ꝑ deed see. where mette with hym a cardynall and legate of Rome, with dyuers other bysshoppes of Fraunce, the kyng of Nauarne, the dukes son of Bryttayn, Alphõs erle of Poytiers the erles of Artoys and of Flaudres, with many other.

And whyle the kynge wyth hys hoost laye at the sayde porte tarying a conuenable wynde/a dyssencyon fyll betwene the Catholeynes and the men of Prouynce/so that amonge theym was foughten suche a skyrmysshe, that betwene theym was

was slayne vppon a hondreth men/ and many mo wounded or the strife myght be all seased.

Soone after the kynge with hys lordes toke shyppynge / and sayled with great daunger of tempest, tyll lastly he came to the ile of Sardynes where the cristen host rested theym a season/and after kept theyr courts til they came to the porte of Thunys or Cartage, the.xviii. day of the moneth of Iuliu / where they rested in theyr shyppes that nyght. Upō the morne whan they shuld lande / all the porte was beset with Turkes and infydeles, whych shotte dartes and kast stones, to the greuaunce of the cristen host / so that they wanne lande with great difficulte & payne.

whan the kynge was landed, he lodged hys people / and after sent to serche for fresshe water to refresshe with hys hooste. In whyche meane whyle the Admyrall of the kynges naup came vnto the kynge / requyryng hi to haue a certayne of knyghtes assygned vnto hym/trustynge in god to wynne shortly the towne. And so sped hym, and assauted the towne. But anone as the capptayne of the towne was ware of theyr commyng/ he with a great company issued oute of the towne, and forced the cristen hooste to gyue backe. wherfore kynge Lowys sent the Marshal of hys host with a certayne nombre of knyghtes to socoure the sayd Admyrall/and in tyme of the fyght gatte betwene the Sarazyns and the towne / so that whyle some faught with the Turkes the other wanne the towne / wherof the Turkes beynge ware fled soone after/but nat without great slaughter of thē. For after that fyght, many of theym whyche escaped frō the batayll, were after slayne in cauernys and holes where they hyd theym in the grounde. whan the towne of Cartage or Thunis was by ỹ cristē thus wonne/anone the kynge commaunded the dede bodyes to be caste out, & the towne to be clēnsyd of all ordours and fylthes. And when all was done as the kynge had commaunded / he then entred the towne, and lodged within as many as the towne wolde holde. And ỹ other he fortyfyed with dyches and other strengthes, to preserue them from theyr enemyes /and so tarved there the cōmyng of Charles hys brother and kyng of Cycilia. It was nat lōge after that the cytye or towne was wonne, but ỹ the kyng of Thunys with a great host of Turkes came nere to the towne, & made showys & offers / but they abode not therby. One day the erle of Artoys in one company, and a knyghte called syr Peter Cabellanc in an other company/gatte betwene the see and the Turkes that they were compelled to fyght/ so that betwene theym was a cruell fyghte, & many slayne vppō both sydes. But in the ende the Turkes were scomfyted & chaced to theyr shyppes. In thys fyghte were slayne ii. cristen knyghtes, named le Chaste layn and syr Johñ de Ronssoylyers. After thys batayll or fyght/the Sarazyns made no great assautes. But thē by reason of the vnholsomnes of that countre, sykenes fyll amonge ỹ cristen hoost/so that the people dyed faste. And shortly after the kyng was take with suche a flixe, and therwith an agu that he kept hys bedde. And after the ryghtes of the chyrche take, and certayne monycyons gyuen to hys sonne Philyp how he shulde behaue hym in gydynge of the realme of Fraunce / knowynge the houre of dethe approched, charged suche as were aboute hym that they shuld lay hym vpon a bed of asshes & powdre. where he so lyeng a season in prayer expyred, the day folowyng saint Bar

tholomeus day, or the.xxv.day of Auguſt, when he had reygned.xliiii. yeres lackynge.ii. monethes / leuynge after hym the .iii.forenamed ſonnes Philyp, Johñ, & Peter. The the Bowellys were buryed in Cecilia / and the body enbawmed with ryche oyntementes, was recaryed vnto ſaynte Denys of Fraũce, & therwith greate reuerence enterred. The whych after for hys myracles, of ỹ. viii. Bonyface was ſette amonge the nombre of ſayntes.

Philyp the thyrde of that name, and ſonne of ſaynt Lowys / beganne his reygne ouer the realme of Fraũce the.xxvi. daye of ỹ moneth of September, in the yere of our lord.xii.C.lxx. and the .liiii. yere of Henry the.iii. than kynge of Englande / and began than as before is ſhewed in Affrica, at the towne or cytye of Thunys or Cartage / accõpanyed with Charles hys vncle kynge of Cycyll, the whych came to ỹ porte of Thunys the ſame day that kynge Lowys dyed / & after taryed there & had many conflictes wyth the Turkes / and bare hym ſo manfully, that in the ende he forced ỹ kynge of Thunys to ſeche to hym for a peas. The which was cõcluded for.x. yeres with certayne condycyõs of payeng of certayne money for ỹ kynge of Fraũces coſtes, and certayne trowages of old tyme due vnto the kyng of Cycyll yerely to be payde / with many other artycles concernynge the ſame peace whyche I paſſe ouer.

After whyche peas concluded and aſſured / the kynges of Fraunce and Cycyll toke ſhyppynge at the ſayde porte of Thunys, & ſayled towarde theyr countrees with great daunger of tempeſt of the ſee / & in proceſſe of tyme landed in Cycyll, where Philyp with greate reuerence & obſeruaũce in mount Royall buryed ỹ bowelles of his father. And ỹ done he toke his iourney towarde Fraunce thorughe Italy. In whyche iourney dyed Iſabell hys wyfe, & ỹ kyng of Nauerne & Mary hys wyfe, with many other to the nombre of.iii.M. and mo.

Laſtly the kyng came vnto the cyty of Viterbe / where the cardynalles & other ſpyrytuall men were in counſayll for the choſyng of a newe pope. For at ỹ tyme the ſee was voyde by the deth of Clement the.iiii. But that election was ſo dyuers, that.ii. yeres expyred or they myght agree vpon a new paſtor. And thã they agreed vpõ Theobalde archidiacon of Landẽlle named after the.x. Gregory.

Frõ Viterbe the kyng rode to the moũt of Flaſton, & ſo ouer to the coũtre of Tuſcayne, & ſo to the mount of Bergue, & then to ỹ cytye of Florẽce & from thens to Boloyng le Gryſſe and frõ thens to Cremoygñ, where ỹ kynges officers were nat all well entreated. In recõpenſement wherof / ỹ mayre & burgeyſes of that towne preſented the kyng with.viii. ſtedes trapped in cloth of ſylke & other preſẽtes whych the kyng with curteys & thãkfull wordes refuſed. Then frõ thens the kyng departed to Milan, & from Milan to Innergeaur, and ſo to Suſane a cytye of Sauoy / and after paſſed the moũtaygnes, & ſo into the valys of Myeyen / and frõ thens tourned towarde the cytye of Lyõs vpon Roſne, and ſo to the cytye of Maſtõ in Burgoyñ / and paſſed ỹ coũtre tyl they came to the abbey of Cluny, and frõ thens into the coũtre of Chãpayn & ſo to the city of Trois / and frõ thẽs paſſed the countrees, tyll he came to the lordſhype of Parys, and ſo into the cytye of Parys.

Here

Here I passe ouer the great prouysyon made by the cytesyns of Parys for the receyuynge of theyr prynces/ ỳ is to mene, the corps of Lewys, and theyr naturall prynce Phylyppe hys son/ and of the obseruaunces done, and great assembles of the lordes spirytuall and temporall to welcome theyr prynce, and doynge of theyr duties euery man accordyng to honour. But after al these ceremonies in due order fynyshed/ prouysyon was made for the coronacyon of the kynge. The whyche was crowned at the cyte of Raynes, vppon the daye of the assumpcyon of our lady, in the yere of grace. cxii. hundred. lxxi.

Shortely after that the solempnyte of this coronacyon was passed, kynge Phylyppe for his recreacyon rode into the countrey of Vermendoyse. where after he hadde restyd hym a season / Robert erle of Artoys requyred hym to vysyte hys countrey. where he was receyuyd of the burgeysys of Artoys wyth great honour and gladnes/ and there was feastyd with all disport and gladnes by a certayne of tyme after. The whyche erpyred, he returned into Fraũce

About the thyrde yere of his regne/ the erle of Foys contrary ỳ kynges pleasure, toke partye agayn Gerarde a knyght a lorde of the castell of Casseboun or Tasseboun/ ỳ which before had slayn ỳ brother of the erle of Armenac fyerpall frẽd of the sayd erle of Foys. whyche sayde two erles to reuenge the deth of theyr sayd brother, pursued the sayde Gerarde so narrowly, that for his sauegarde he refused his owne castell, and fled vn to a castell of the kynges / and there helde hym wyth his wyfe, chyldren, and substaũce. But when the two erles were ware therof/ they sped them thyder wyth theyr powers and layd syege to the castell / and in the ende threwe it downe to the grounde, and slewe all the souldyours that they there founde, as well the kynges seruauntes as other, hoppynge to haue founde theyr enymye Gerarde, the whyche was escapyd thens secretly.

When the rumour of this dede came vnto the kynge / he dysdayned sore that dede, and toke yt ryght greuously. In so myche that he called hys lordes, and by theyr counsayll assembled hys knyghtes, and entred wyth force the prouince of the erle of Foys. The whyche herynge of the kynges great dysplesure/ fortyfyed hys castell and there helde hym. The which was so besette wyth rokkes of stone, that the kynge myght not wynne to yt wyth ease. wherfore the kynge cõmaunded the rokkes to be cutte with masons and other worke men/ a made a solempne othe, that he wold not depart thens or he hadde the erle and his castell at his pleasure.

When the erle hadde beholden the great power of his enymyes, and the prouysyon of the kyng to wynne his castell, wyth other ieopardyes / he made meanes to the kynge for grace and fynally putte hym and his into his mercy. Then the kynge commaũded hym to be bounde, and so to be conueyed to the castell of Beauquesu, where he was imprysoned by an hole yere after. And the kynge seased all hys landes, and set a certayne of hys knyghtes to kepe hys castell/ and caryed hys wyfe and chyldren wyth hym into Fraunce. But after a yere runne / the kynge was so sabboured to by the frendes of the sayd erle, that he was enlarged from prysonn, and vppon suertye suffred to serue in the kynges courte. where he bare hym so well, ỳ fynally the kyng made hym knyght, a restored hym to all his lãdes. But what fyll of ỳ erle of Armenac the story sheweth not.

Aboute the.vi. yere of his reygne/ kynge Phylyppe maryed Mary the doughter of the erle of Burbon, or after some the doughter of Johan the duke of Brabant/the whych he loued entyerly. wherof Peter de Broſſhe then beynge lorde chamberlayne, hauynge enuy and diſdayn/ſought the wayes and meanes to mynyſhe the great loue betwene her lord and her/ and fonde by his meane that a ſonne of ꝑ kynges named Lewys was pry-ſoned, the whyche dede he by ſubtyle & ſecrete meanes, as though yt had nothyng comen of hym, layde yt to ꝑ charge of the quene. For this ꝑ kyng made many maner of inquyſycyons as well by ſorcery as other. But in al his workes he found his quene gyltleſſe. wherfore he ſufferyd the mater to paſſe, tyll he myght haue more aſſured profe in that mater.

Aboute thys ſeaſon Ferdinandus kynge of Caſtyle, that before tyme hadde maryed Blanche doughter of ſaynt Lewis, dyed/leuyng after hym two ſonnes borne of ꝑ ſayd Blanch, named Ferdinande and Alphons/ whych by couenaunt at the mariage made ſhulde be heyres vnto the kyngdome of Spayne and Caſtyle. But the father of this Ferdinande ſo beynge dede/contrary hys honour and promiſe, wrote vnto the lordes of Caſtyle/ amoneſtynge theym that they ſhulde admytte for theyr kynge hys ſeconde ſon named Sãcyon or Sancio, and ſwere to hym both feautye & homage. The whyche was all done accordyng to hys commaundement/ ſo that Blanche was dyſpoynted of her dower, and her chyldern of theyr ryght and enherytaũce. For ꝑ which kyng Phylyppe her brother was greuouſly dyſcontẽtyd/ and for reformacyon therof ſente vnto the kynge of Spayn his cheke boteler wyth other, deſyryng hym to perfourme all ſuch couenaũtes as betwene hym and his fader were cõcluded, at the maryage of his ſyſter Blanche/ or at the laſte yf that he refuſyd ꝑ to do, ꝑ he wold ſende hys ſayde ſyſter wyth her two chyldern ſauely into Fraunce. In cõcluſyon ꝑ mother wyth her two chyldern were brought by the ſayde boteler vnto the kynge, wythoute other pleaſure other in worde or in dede. For the whyche he the yere folokyng gaderyd a ſtronge hoſte, and paſſed wyth theym by Poyteau and Gaſcoyne, tyll he came vnto a towne ioynynge to the border of Spayne named Sainterre/where the kyng met a nother party of his hoſte. There by counſayll of ſome of his lordes, the kynge concluded to retourne into Fraunce, for daunger of wynter that was cõmynge and other hyd cauſes. But the rumour in the hoſte went, ꝑ ſome of the kynges counſayll hadde receyued rewardes of the kynge of Spayn. By meane wherof the kyng loſte that tourney, and returned into Fraunce to his great dyſhonour and damage.

In tyme of kynge Phylyppes returne into Fraunce/ tydynges were brought to hym, that Euſtace de Beau Marche, whom the kyng had appointed to haue the gydyng of the countrey or kyngdome of Nauarre/ was beſyeged in the citye of Pampulyne. wherfore ꝑ kyng cõmaunded ꝑ erle of Artoys to ſpede hym thyder, to reſcowe the ſayde Euſtace. The whyche behaued hym ſo manfully, that he reſcowed the ſayde Euſtace/ and chaſyd Garſymerans cheke ſtyrer of that rebellion, and brought the people of that countrey agayne to due ſubiecyon. whyle the erle of Artoys was thus occcuppyed in the ſayd countrey/ meſſangers came to hym from the kynge of Spayne/ requyrynge hym ſene that he was ſo nere,

that he

that he was so nere, ꝑ he wold come & dispoꝛt him there foꝛ a season. wher of ꝑ erle of Artoys sent kyng Philip woꝛde/ & hauyng of hym lycẽce pode vnto the sayd kyng of Spayn, as to his nere kynnesmã/ & there dispoꝛted him a certayn of tyme to his great cõ solacio. In which season diuers letters came out of Fraũce frõ some of ꝑ kinges coũsall. By reason wherof ꝑ kynge of Spayne was infoꝛmed of mych of the Frẽche kinges coũsayll. which letters he shewed vnto ꝑ erle of Artoys/ sayẽg ꝑ he was not without frẽdes in Fraũce. But he wold not disclose what psons they were. whẽ the erle had taryed in Spayn a cõpetent seasõ/ he toke leue of ꝑ king, & depted with great giftes/ & so sped hym, ꝑ in ꝓcesse of tyme he cam vnto ꝑ king of Fraũce/ & at cõuenient leyser shewed vnto hym of the letters shewed vnto him by ꝑ kyng of Spayn/ wherof the king was not a litle ameruayled. It was not lõge after ꝑ a currour oꝛ messanger, which vsed to bere letters frõ Pet de Bꝛosh vnto ꝑ king of Spayn syll syke at an abbay. where when he knew he shuld die/ were it by exoꝛtacion of his gostly fader oꝛ otherwyse, he called to hym ꝑ abbot oꝛ hed of ꝑ house/ chargyng him ꝑ he wold delyuer such letters as he there had vnto ꝑ Frẽche kyngꝛ own pson/ & after dyed. After whose deth ꝑ said religyous man in cõuenyet hast sped hym vnto ꝑ kinges court, & pꝛesented him with the said letters/ shewyng vnto him ꝑ mynde of ꝑ sayd messanger. which letters when the kyng had vnclosyd/ he anon knew ꝑ his chãberlayne Peter de Bꝛosse was the discloser of all his coũsayles. wherfoꝛe foꝛthwith he cõmaũded ꝑ said Peter to be had vnder sauke keppyng. wherof heryng the byshop of Bayon fled streyght ꝑ lande, & so pode vnto Rome. The kynge thẽ pode vnto Paris/ where he called a coũsayl of his loꝛdes to etampyne ꝑ sayd Peter. where finally he was iudged to be hãged. After which iudgemẽt he was cõmytted vnto ward, tyll ꝑ moꝛow folowyng. At which season long befoꝛe the son rysyng/ ꝑ duke of Burgoyn, the duke of Brabant, the erle of Artoys, with ꝑ pꝛouost of Paris, came vnto the gayole, & there receyued the said Peter, & saw hym hanged oꝛ the sonne were vp.

It was not long after ꝑ Peter was thus put to deth, but meanes were made betwene these. ii. kynges/ so that a day of metyng was appoynted, ꝑ the said kyng shuld mete to haue cõmunycacion foꝛ the mater cõcernyng the wꝛõges done to dame Blanche & her .ii. chyldꝛen befoꝛenamed. wherfoꝛe ꝑ king of Spayn cam vnto ꝑ citte of Bayon/ & king Philip to a town in ꝑ pꝛouynce of Tholouse named Mout marchaũt. where these two pꝛinces beyng in cõmunicacyon of ꝑ foꝛesayd mater/ certayn messangers cam to thẽ frõ ꝑ pope then Martyne ꝑ. iiii/ chargyng them vpõ payn of fallyng into ꝑ cẽsures of ꝑ chirch, that they agree & fall vnto accoꝛde, that warre betwen theym be not exercysed. By reason wherof kyng Phylyp remitted the mater to ꝑ pope, & returned vnto Tholouse. where mette him the kyng of Aragon named Peter. The which after he had there taryed with kyng Philip a tyme at his pleasure/ he toke his leue of ꝑ kynge & after went into Catholoyne, where he met with Cõstance his wife & doughter of Manfred somtyme kyng of Scycyll/ ꝑ which was pꝛyued of his lyfe & kyngdome by Charles bꝛoder of saint Lewis, as befoꝛe in ꝑ. iiii. chapyter of the stoꝛye of sayne Lewys is shoꝛtly touched. This Cõstance in all ꝑ she might exoꝛted her husbãd to gader his people, & to enter ꝑ land of Scicill, ascertaynyng him ꝑ ꝑ Scicilyens

lyens wolde take his partye agayne Charles, for so myche as they well knew that she was rightfull heyre to that kyngdome.

In thys tyme and season whyche was the .x. yere of kynge Philyppe/ the ryuer of Sayne rose of suche an hyght, that yt compassed the cytye of Parys in suche wyse, that no man myght come thyther wythoute bote or barge. And the water passed wyth suche vyolence, that yt brake vi. arches of the great brydge of Parys, and one of the small brydges.

Then let vs turne to ỹ kyng of Aragon, whych by incensyng of his wyfe gadered his peple/ and vnder colour that he wold haue gone agaynste the Turkes, hadde graunte of the pope to receyue ỹ dymes of his owne land for certayne yeres. whyle this was in doynge/ he sent certayne persones into Scycyle to see the state of that countrey. The whyche made confederacyes wyth dyuers great men of Scycylyens/ and ouer that brought wyth theym dyuers of the rulers to the presence of ỹ kynge. wyth whom the sayd Peter made certayn appoyntementes/ and after retourned them into Scycyle. where after theyr returne, they counsayled so wyth theyr rulers of Palermo, and Messene, & of other cytyes, that in one nyght all the Frenche men in Scycylie were slayne/ and after in most cruell wyse slewe the women as wel those ỹ were wyth chylde as other, and lefte few or none of the Frenche men in all the chefe cytyes or townes of Scicyll on lyue. whē tydynges of this myschyef was brought vnto Charles beynge then in the countrey of Angeou / he sent messangers vnto the pope Martyne the.iiii/ requyrynge his ayde to defende his enymyes. The whych in all hast sent vnto Palermo ỹ byshop of sayncte Sabyne, to charge the cytesyns vppon payne of cursynge, to obey vnto Charles for theyr kyng & to none other. But the rulers of Palermo and also of Messene wold not suffer the sayd byshoppe to passe any farther. And also sayde that Peter was entred the countrey, of whome they wolde holde and on none other/ wyth whyche answere he was fayne to retourne.

In this whyle Charles hadde sent vnto his neuew Philyppe kynge of Fraūce/ the whyche wyth his power to reuoke Peter from Scycyll, entred the lande of Aragon by Purpunyan/ and toke the cytye of Jeane. In whyche passe tyme Charles entred Scycyl, and besyeged Messene. But the towne was so strongely fortyfyed, that he loste there his labour. wherfore he left that syege, and yode into the playnes of sayncte Martyne/ and there taryed the cōmynge of hys son then prynce of Salerne. The pope thē accursed Peter, for as mich as certayne worde was broughte to hym that he hadde proclaymed hym selfe kynge of Scycyll. And to the entent to styre the more people agayne hym / he gaue his lande of Aragon vnto Charlys erle of Ualoys & son of kynge Philyp of Fraunce.

when Philyppe as before is sayde kynge of Fraūce had won Jeane/ for as myche as the ways towarde Aragon were harde to passe, as well for prouysyons made by the enmyes as otherwyse/ the kyng therfore sought great aduyse how he myght with lest daunger wyn to his enymyes. And after many meanes sought/ a Russylyan was broughte vnto the kynges presence/ the whyche assured ỹ kyng to gyde him away into Aragon wythout the daunger of his enymyes. wherof the kynge beynge glad promysed to the sayde Russylyan fredome and lybertye with other great rewardes

wardys, whyche then stode as pryso ner to the Frenche men. After whych promyse made/ the kyng put hym & the more parte of his hoste vnder the ledynge of the sayd Russylyan. And for to blynde ꝑ more his enymyes he sent a parte of his hoste towarde the mountaynes, to make a shewe as though all the hoste hadde passed the same waye. when kynge Phylyp had ordeyned all thynge after his mynde, he cõmaunded the forewarde of hys people to folowe the sayd Russylyan/ the whyche brought theym a strayte and narrow way, all to growen with wood & busshes to the kynges great trauayle and all hys. But fynally he brought them into the playns where theyr enmyes lay, so that they made prouysyon in ordeynge of theyr people to set vppon the Aragons. whereof the Aragons beynge ware/ suppo synge the Frenche men myght not so lyghtly haue wonne vnto theym, beynge then oute of aray and dysprueyed to fyght, fled vnto the next holdes/ leuyng to ꝑ Frenche men myche of theyr vytayll and harneys.

when kynge Phylyp had sene that his enmyes had forsaken theyr feld/ he restyd hym there a season after his trauayle/ and after rode to a towne named Pyerlaat and besyeged yt. wherof the soudyours after they had a season defended that towne/ in the deade of the night fyred ꝑ sayd town And departed when they had done. But the Frenche men wan shortely into the town and quenched the fyre. and after the kyng had manned and vytaylled yt/ he then went to a town named Gozon, and layde his syege there about/ where he lay long after.

We haue harde in the precedynge yere, howe Charles kynge of Scycyll laye in the playnes of Saynte Martyne, there abydynge the commynge of his son the prynce of Salerne. whyther lastely cam vnto him his sayde son, the duke of Burgoyn, the erle of Alanson, Peter brother to kyng Phylyp, Robert erle of Artoys the erles of Dempmartyne, & of Bolygygne, wyth the lorde of Mounte Morency, and many other nobles of Fraunce and Burgoyne. After commyng of which lordes/ Charles with baner dysplayed sped hym towarde his enymyes, and so passed the lande of Calabre wythout fyght/ and sente his son to Naples with a part of his hoste/ and hym selfe kept on his iourney tyll he came vnto Prouynce. where he heryng of the great purueyaũce that Peter kyng of Aragon had made of shyppes, to saile toward the lande of Naples/ sent certayn letters vnto the prynce his sonne, that in no wise he shuld set vppon his enmyes/ but kepe hym within the cytye of Naples, tyll he sent vnto hym such shyppes and galeys as he then had redymãned to be sent vnto hym from the hauen of Marcylle. whych messanger & letters were taken wyth ꝑ Aragons/ by reason wherof they knewe myche of kynge Charles counsayll.

It was not longe after or the nauaye of the kynge of Aragons wyth great trymphe and pryde came vnto Naples/ & prouoked so ꝑ Frenche men to fyght, that lastely the prynce wyth suche shyppes and companye as he myght make, made out vppon them, and fought wyth them a long fyghte. But in the ende the Frenche men were betyn and ouercomen, and the prynce wyth the more partye of his shyppes taken, and sent to Constance quene of Aragon/ and remayned longe after vndelyuerd wyth many other prysoners.

To myche hast is cause of repẽtaũce

wythin a shorte season after this scõ future Charlys cam vnto Naples/ by which

whych tyme myche of the town was tourned agayn hym, so that the most parte of the French soudyours were slayne and fled the towne. wherfore after that Charlys was entred he punyshed them ryght cruelly, by diuers maner of toutmentes. And when he hadde done there his wyll, he retourned into Calabre/ where mette wyth hym Robert erle of Artoys. where they toke theyr counsayll howe they might passe the water of Phaar, and to laye theyr syege vnto the cytye of Meissene. But for dyuers causes he was counsayled to the contrarye/ so that he toke shyppynge at an hauen called Brandyse. But or hys people were all shyppyd / suche a sykenesse toke hym, that he was hadde agayn to lande and dyed shortely after, not wythoute suspeccyon of venyme. whose corps was then conueyed to Naples, and there buried, in the yere of our lorde .xrii. hundred .lxxxiiii, and the .xiiii. yere of the reygne of Phylyppe his neuewe then kynge of Fraunce. Of whyche tydynges Peter kynge of Aragon reioysed not a lytell, when word therof to hym was brought/ the whyche before that tyme had betaken the rule of the lande of Scycyll to Constaunce hys wyfe then beynge in the citye of Palermo. And he hym selfe wyth a stronge nauye sayled into Aragon for to rescow the cytye of Geron, whych was besyged of kynge Phylyppe as ye before haue harde. And when he wyth hys people were there landid/ he toke his counsayll how he myght most greue the Frenche hoste. Fynally he concluded that he wolde make a busshemēt wyth a certayne nomber of his knyghtes/ and lye in awayte to take the vytayll that was brought to the hoste from the porte of Russylyan/ whyche porte was foure myles frō the Frēch hoste. Vppon whyche conclusyon so taken/ he wyth two thousande chosen mē, lodged them where the praye shulde passe, and was espyed of the Frenche men. wherof beynge warned the constable of Fraūce, & syr Iohon Harcourt thē marshal of ỹ hoste toke wyth them the erle of Marches wyth dyuers other knyghtes to the nomber of .v. hundred speres, wyth a certayne of fotemen, and went towarde theyr enmyes. But when they came nere vnto theym, and saw they were so many in nomber / they ferryd to set forthwarde, tyll they were comforted by the wordes of a knyghte in theyr companye called Mathew de Roya sayeng as foloweth.

O ye noble knyghtes, beholde in your syghtes the enymyes whych ye haue farre sought. Lette vs now remember that thys is the daye of the assumpcyon of our blessed Lady, and truste we in her that she wyll helpe vs agayne them ỹ ben putte out of holy chyrche by cursyng. For lyke merytes shall to vs grow to reuenge ỹ iniuries done vnto the chyrche, as though we faught agayn the enmyes of Crystes fayth.

By meane of whyche wordes they were so encouraged, that wythoute fere they sette vppon theyr enymyes, so that betwene them was cōmensed a sore and cruell fyght, cōtynuyng a longe season or yt myght be knowen whyche parte hadde the auaūtage of the other. At the laste the kyng was drawen from his horse, and cōstrayned to fyghte wyth the other on fote so that he was in great ieoperdye to haue ben taken. But by his owne knighthode & good helpe of his men he recouerryd his horse agayne. when ỹ French men were ware ỹ the kyng was there in hys owne persone/ they were the more egre vppon the Aragons, to the entente to haue taken or slayne theyr kynge. So that fynally

they

they compelled them to forsake the felde, & to saue them selfe by flyght, by reason wherof the kynge with the more parte of his knyghtes were saued from the daūger of they⁊ enemyes. But in this fyght Peter kynge of Aragone was so hurte that he dyed shortly after. whan these forsayd knyghtes with they⁊ prysoners were returned vnto the Frenche kynge, & had shewed vnto hym of that victory, he reioyced therof greatly/& more wolde haue done, yf he had knowen how sore his enemy Peter was woūded. But to bryng to fyne his purpose, he dayly more and more assauted the towne.

In ỳ tyme that Gerounde or Gyrōde was thus besyeged of ỳ Frēche kynge / the erle of Foyx, that to the capytayne of the towne ought great fauour, many tymes by lycence of ỳ kynge rode into the towne, and had dyuers comunycacyons with hym/ so that he lastly knowynge the sayde towne to be bare of vytayle, shewed to the kynge that he wolde labour the sayde capytayne named syr Raymōde de Cerdon, ỳ the towne myght be gyuē vp into the kynges handes/ so that soone after ỳ sayde capytayne desyred a respyte of. viii. dayes, to send vnto ỳ kyng of Aragō to knowe whether he wolde rescowe the towne or nat. Upon ỳ whiche grauīte made/ the messangers were sente, and returned with a certaynte of the kynges dethe. Upon whiche knowlege had/ the sayde capytayne agreed to delyuer the towne, vpon cōdicion to haue with thē suche mouables as he with ỳ cytezyns & sowdyours had within the towne. All whiche condicions assured/ the kynge receyued the towne of Gerounde into his possessyon. The whiche whan he had manned with knyghtes of his owne/ he thē by coūsayle, whiche tourned after to his harme, diuided his nauy/ and sente a parte of them into Fraunce, and the other into Tholous, wher the kynge entended to tary the wynter folowynge. But so soone as his nauy was thus deuyded / the Aragons mette with them that rested in the hauen of Russilian/ and gaue to them suche battayle, that they toke many of them/ and slewe the kynges admyrall, and many other noble men of Fraunce/ and beide the Frenchemen so shorte, that for so moche as they wolde nat that so good shyppes shulde come to the handes of they⁊ enemyes, they set fyre vpon the remenaūt & brent thē/ and after retorted vnto the kynge.

Whē kynge Philyp was ascertayned of the losse of his nauy/ he toke it greuously/ in somoche that for that and other thynges that he myght not bryng to his purpose, he fyll into a feuer, & was therwith greatly anoyed. Than for strengthe of his enemyes, whiche kepte the passage of the mountaynes called in latyn Mōtes Pireni/ and for wekyng of hym selfe by reason of his sekenesse / he passed by the straytest places, tyll he came to Parpynyan, where his sekenes encreased so sore, that he dyed in shorte tyme of his thyder cōmynge in ỳ moneth of October, whā he had regned xb. yeres lackynge certayne dayes. whose bowelles were buried at Nerbon, and his body at sayne Denys.

This Philyp had. ii. wyues. By the fyrst Isabel by name, and doughter of the kynge of Aragon, Jaques or James by name, he had. iii. sōnes/ Lewes whiche was poysoned, Philyp whiche for his beaute and fayre shappe was named Philyp le Beau or Philyp the fayre, & Charles the Valoys. And by Mary his wyfe and doughter of the duke of Braban / he had Lewes, Margaret, & Blanche/ whiche Margarete was after mary-

ed to Edwarde the fyrste than kynge of Englande.

Thus endeth Phylyp the.iii. of Fraunce.

Anglia.

EDwarde ꝑ fyrst of that name, sone of Henry ꝑ thyrde, surnamed lõge shãke/ begã his reygne ouer Englãde, in the moneth of Nouember/and.xvii.day of ꝑ same, and the yere of our lorde.xii.C.lxxii.

Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxii.

Johañ Horne.

Syr walter Heruy.

Anno primo.

walter Potter.

IN this fyrst yere of kynge Edwarde the fyrst/vpon the daye of Symon and Jude, were certayne attemptes made by some of the cytyzyns to haue made suche a mayre as they had lysted/but for they were dysapoynted of theyr accessaryes, they let for that tyme / whiche in the yere folowyng vpon the same day toke further effecte, as in the begynnynge of the nexte yere shalbe towched. In ꝑ ende of this yere and seconde day of Auguste / kynge Edwarde came to London from his great iourney of ꝑ holy lande. where of the cytezyns he was receyued with all ioy & honour, and so conueyed vnto westmynster/ where he kepte great obseruaunces for his father by a certayne tyme after.

Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxiii.

Nicholas wynchester.

Henry waleys.

Anno.ii.

Henry Couentre.

IN thys seconde yere of this kynge/and daye of Symon & Jude / whan Phylyp le Taylour/ which before was chosē to be mayre, shulde as that daye haue taken his charge in the Guyldehall of Londõ/ dyuers cytezyns put hym beside the mayres seet/and set therin syr walter Heruy, that the yere before had been mayre. For the whiche great rumour and grudge arose amonge the cytezyns/ wherfore the mater was after brought before the kyng/the whiche herynge the reasons of bothe partyes/for somoche as he coude not agre theym / he putte bothe the sayde syr

walter

walter and the ſayd Philipp aſyde/ and chaſe Henry Forwyk for cuſtos of the cytie/ the whych ſo contynued tyll Cãdelmas after. At whych tyme by diſcrete and wyſe peaſyble meanes/the forenamed ſyr walter Heruy was ſet in auctorite as mayre, and ſo contynued the full of the yere after.

Thys yere vppon the .xiiii. daye of Decembre/ was the kynge crowned at weſtmynſter, of mayſter Roberte Kylwardy than archebiſſhop of Cantorbury. For Bonyface hys predeceſſour dyed the yere that kynge Henry dyed. At thys coronaciõ was preſent Alexandre kynge of Scottes / the whyche vpon the morowe folowyng dyd homage to kyng Edward for the kyngdome of Scotlande.

After the Solempnytie of the coronacyon was ended/the kyng herynge of the rebellyon of Lewelyne prynce of walys, that diſdayned to come to hys coronacyon / anone gathered a ſtronge power, & wẽt into ỹ prouince & ſubdued ỹ ſayd Lewelyn. And after retourned, & ordeyned certayne newe lawes for ỹ welth of ỹ realme, whych are to lõge here to reherce. Amõg the whych one was, ỹ bakers makinge brede lackyng the weyghte aſſygned after the price of corne/ſhuld firſt be punyſſhed by loſſe of hys brede, and the ſeconde tyme by priſonemente, and the thirdly by the correccyon of the Pyllory / and millers for ſteling of corne to be chaſtiſed by the tũbrell. And thys to be put in execucyon, he gaue auctorytie to all mayres, baylifes, and other officers thorugh England/and ſpecyally to the mayre of London.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxxiiii. Anno dñi. M.CC.lxxv.

Lucas Patencourt.

Gregory Rokkiſle. Anno .iii.

Henry Frowyke.

In the thirde yere/the kyng cõfermed the lybertyes of ỹ cytie of London, and graunted to thẽ ſome newe. And thys yere he helde hys great court of parlyamente at weſtmynſter/and gaue monycyon to Lewelyn prynce of walys to come vnto the ſame / the whyche preſũptuouſly that denyed. wherfore the kyng after Eaſter entred agayne into walys / & ſo warred vppon Lewelyne, that he was cõſtreyned to ſubmyt hym vnto the kynges grace / and optreyned it wyth greate difficultye. Then kyng Edwarde buylded the caſtel of Flynt/ and ſtrenghthyd the caſtell of Rutlande and other with Engliſſhemen, to kepe the walſhemen in due obedyence / and toke of theyr prynce a greate ſumme of money/ whych of ſome writers is named .l.M.li. and of ſome .l.M. marke, & of ſome other laſſe/& ſo retourned into Englande.

In thys yere one water Harup, whych the firſte yere of thys kynge, after longe contrauerſie and ſtryfe ỹ he had kept with ỹ aldermen of Lõdon / at a folkmote kepte at Poules croſſe was made mayre of London / and ſo contynued to the hurte of the cytye that yere: thys yere was he accuſed of dyuers periuries & other deteſtable dedes cõtrary hys othe. For the whyche, & for makynge of aſſemblies of the commons whiche fauoured hym in hys yll dedes, he was depryued of hys aldermanſhyppe and counſayle of the cytye for euer / & foũde ſuertye of twelf honeſte perſones, that he ſhulde be good of berynge, for kepyng of ỹ kynges peas within the cytye for terme of hys lyfe after.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxv. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxvi.

Johñ Hoyne.

Gregory Rokkysle. Anno.iiii.

Rauffe Blount.

IN thys.iiii. yere of kynge Edwarde Michael Tony, whych in tyme of warre had wyth the walsh men demeaned hym otherwyse than stode with his trouth and alegeaūce, was accused of treason, and therof arrepgned, iuged, and dāpned / & after was drawen, hanged, & quartered.

And thys yere was the statute of Mortmayne enacted fyrste / whyche is to meane that no man shulde gyue into the chyrch, any landes or rētes wythout a specyal lycence of ỹ kyng / whyche acte syne that tyme hath ben more strongly enacted, and deuysed wyth many addycyons thereunto augmented or annexyd.

Statute of Mortmayn

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxvi. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxvii.

Robert Bracy.

Gregory Rokkisle. Anno.v.

Rauffe Fenour.

IN this.v.yere. of the reygne of kyng Edwarde / pope Nycholas the thyrde of that name, made doctour Robert Kylwarby than beynge archebysshop of Caunterbury a cardynal of Rome / and admytted to that see a frere named doctour Johan Pekham.

And in thys yere the kyng gaue vnto Dauyd brother to Lewelyne pyrnce of walys, the lordshyppe of Froddesham. The whyche Dauyd dwelled in the kynges court, and dyd vnto hym pleasaunte seruyce, to the entent to spye the kynges secret cōsayll. And yf any thynge were spoken or done to the hurte of hys brother, that he therof myghte gyue to hym warnynge, as after by hys dede appered.

Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxvii. Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxviii.

Johan Iorpan.

Gregory Rokkysle. Anno.vi.

walter Langely.

IN thys.vi. yere the kyng commaunded the courtes of his lawes, as ỹ kniges bēche, ỹ chaūcery, ỹ comō place, & the ercheker, to be remoued vnto Shrewysbury / where Myghelmas terme was holdē & kept, but agayne Hylary terme, ỹ bokes & officers was cōtermaūded agayn to west mynster to be there holdē. In whych caryeng of ỹ recordes to & fro / they by reason of great plēte of rayne whiche in ỹ season fyl, caught great hurt & were sore defaced / in so moche ỹ the bokes were greatly imperysshed, & ỹ clerkes had great laboure to bryngē them to theyr former state.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxviii. Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxix.

Robert Basynge.

Gregory Rokkysle. Anno.vii.

wyllyam Mazerer.

In thys

IN this .vii. yere, the kyng held hys parlyament at London / whyche was chefely set for the reformacion of the kynges coygne, which was clypped in suche wyse, that yt was therby wonderfully mynyshed and empayred.

In the season of this parlyamẽt, many of the Jewes of Lõdon and other places were taken and put in holde for money clyppyng. And in December folowyng certayn enhãstes were charged in Lõdon to enquyre of the sayd Jewes and other that so hadde blemyshed the kynges coygne. By the whyche enquestes the Jewes of the cytye wyth dyuerse goldesmythes that kepte exchange of syluer, were indyted.

And the mondaye folowynge the Purifycacion of our lady / the mayre wyth dyuers iustices of the lande sat at London / where before them was caste .v. hundred .lxxx. and .xvii. persones. Of the whych but .iii. englysh men / and all the other were Jewes and Jewes borne, all be yt that many of theym were borne in England, and therfore of some wryters they be named Englyshe Jewes / the whyche were all at sondry times & places put in execucyon.

In this yere also began the foundacyon of the whyrche of the freer pre chour or blacke freres by Ludgate, by theyr founder.

And in this yere the town of Bosten was greatly blemyshed wyth fyre.

Anno domini .M. CC. lxxix.

Thomas Bor.

Gregory Rokkysle.

Anno domini .M. CC. lxxx.

Anno .viii.

Rauffe Moze.

IN thys .viii. yere / the kynge caused in syluer the halfe peny to be coygned / where before tyme other coygnes of metall rãne among the people, to theyr great noyaunce and losse / and farthynges of syluer were also coygned the selfe tyme.

Fyrst coygnyng of half pens and farthynges.

And the wynter folowynge, aboute the daye of sayute Denys, or the .ix. daye of October / fell suche plente of snowe, that therof ensued myche harme.

Anno domini .M. CC. lxxxi.

wyllyam Faryngdon.

Gregory Rokkysle.

Anno .ix.

Nycholas wynchester.

IN thys .ix. yere of kynge Edwarde / Dauid the brother of Lewelyn prynce of walys, the whych as ye before haue harde dwelled in the kynges courte to knowe the kynges counsayll, and therof enformed his brother / whe he had that he wayted for, he secretly gat hym into walys to his brother, and hym excyted agayn the kyng in all that he myght and caused his brother to man and bytayll dyuers castelles within walys / & specyally the castell of Dwandon, wherin he myche trusted / and ga theryd vnto hym the walshemen by gyftes and other meanes, so that he was very stronge.

wherof when the kynge was informed / he wolde therunto gyue no credence, tyll he had sent thyther and receyued from thẽs the certaynte. But for so myche as wynter was toward,

and he myghte nat conueniently go thyder wyth any power / he therfore prouyded to send men and vytayl to strength the castelles of Flynt & Rutlande, and other holdes, whyche he there had / and wyth prouysyõ made to warre vppon theym in the begynnynge of the nexte yere, suffered that wynter to passe.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxxi. Anno dñi. xii. C. lxxxii.

Henry waleys. wyllyam Mazerer.

Anno. x. Nycholas wynchester.

IN thys. x. yere / ỹ kyng herynge more and more of the vnstedfastnes of the walshe men / for to let them of theyr purpose to greue hys holdes beforenamed, he sente thyder with a crewe of sowdyours, the erles of Northumberland and of Surrey. with whome amonge other went syr Rogyer Clyfforde, syr wyllyam Lyndesey, syr Rycharde Tanny, & many other noble knyghtes and squyres. The whyche with greate corage entrede into walys, and made with the walshe men many skyrmyshes / tyll lastly vpon Palme sondaye, Daupd with a great power of walshmẽ met with the sayde lordes & knyghtes at a place nere to a towne called Hanardyne / where betwene thẽ was a sore fyght. But in the ende the losse fyll to the Englysshmen. For there were slayne syr wyllyam Lyndesey, syr Rycharde Tanny, with many other / and syr Rogyer Clyfforde was taken. After whyche ouerthrowe of the Englysshmen / the sayde Daupd layde syege vnto the castelles of Flynt and of Rutlande. And his brother in that season warred and occupyed the landes of syr Edmunde Mortymer / and wanne the towne called Lambatre baure / and there threwe the walles therof downe to the grounde. Thys towne is also called Abreswith. It was nat longe after or the brute of thys ouerthrowe of the Englysshmẽ came vnto ỹ towne. wherfore he sped hym the faster thyderwarde.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxxii. Anno dñi. M. CC. lxxxiii.

Henry walys. Rauffe Blunt.

Anno. xi. Hawkyn Betnell.

IN thys. xi. yere vppon the day of saynte Leonarde or the fyrst daye of Nouembre, whyle kynge Edwarde was thus occupyed in rescowynge of hys men, whyche were besyged of Daupd / syr Rogyer Clyfforde wyth other, whyche entended to make a reysynge vppon the walsh men, was drowned by folye vppon a brydge made of bargys and plankes to haue passed a water, betwene Snowdon and Anglysley. And the thyrde daye of Decembre folowynge / was Lewelyne prynce of walys slayne by syr Edmunde Mortymer and hys company / and hys hed sente vnto the kynge thã beyng at Rutlande. The whyche he sent vnto London / chargynge that yt be set vppon the toure of London. Of thys Lewelyne a walshe metrycian made these foure verses folowynge.

Hic iacet

Hic iacet Anglorum tortor, tutor venedorum.
Princeps wallorum, Lewelinus regula morum,
Gemma cenorum, flos regum preteritorum,
Forma futurorum, dux, lanx, lex, lux populorum.

whyche verses are thus to meane as foloweth.

Of Englyshmen the scourge, of walshe the protectour,
Lewelyn the prynce, rule of all vertue,
Gemme of all kynges, and of all other the floure,
Whyche vnto dethe hath payde hys dette due,
Of kynges a mirrour that after hym shall sue,
Duke and prayse, and of the lewe the ryght,
Here in thys grave, of people lyeth the lyght.

But an Englysshe metrician wrote other.viii. verses in dyspraysynge of the sayd Lewelyn as foloweth.

Hic iacet errorum princeps, ac predo virorum,
Proditor Anglorum, fax stulta secta reorum,
Numen wallorum, trux, dux, homicida piorum,
Fex troianorum, stirps, mendax, causa malorum.

The whyche maye in thys wyse be Englysshed.

Here lyeth of errour the prynce yf ye wyll ken,
Theef, and robbour, & traytour to Englysshmen.
A dym bronde, a sect of doers yll,
God of walshmen, cruell without skyll
In sleyng the good/and leder of the badde.
Lastly rewarded as he deserued hadde.
Of Troyans blode the drastes, and nat sede.
A rote of falshode, and cause of many yll dede.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxxviii. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxviii.

Iordan Goodchepe.

Henry waleys. Anno.xii.

Martyn Bor.

IN thys.xii. yere, the kynge beynge styll in walys, pursued Dauyd the brother of Lewelyn from towne to towne/so that lastly he was taken and broughte vnto the kynge aboute the natyuyte of sayne Johñ/ and so holden in warde tyll the kyng had there sped hys nedes. Then the kyng had all the countre at hys wyl, and gaue vnto Englysh lordes townes in the myddes of walys/and deuyded the coũtre into shyres/and ordeyned there shyryfes and other officers as then were vsed in Englande. At Aberconow he made a stronge castell, where before was a house of whyte monkes. The whych he remouyd thens, and ordeyned for them in some other place. He also made than the castel of Carnaruã fast by Snowdon, and repayred agayne the towne of Lambatre or Abrcswyth which Lewelyn had before betyn downe. Also he garnysshed the castelles and holdes standyng vpon the see syde with Englysshmen/ and made Englysshe men lordes of the groundes belongyng to the same. And whan ỳ kyng had set that coũtre in rule/ thẽ about Mychelmasse he retourned to Shrewysbury, where he set a parlyament. In the tyme wherof the forsayd Dauyd as chyef styrrer & begynner of al thys warre/ was there demyd to be drawen, hãged, & quartered/ & so he was shortly after at ỳ sayde towne of Shrewysbury, & hys hede sent to Lõdon, & set by the hed of hys brother Lewelyn.

And thys yere was the fyrste son of kyng Edwarde borne, whyle the kyng was in walys at ỳ castel of Carnaruan. By reason wherof he was after named Edward of Carnaruan. He was born vpõ ỳ day of sait Mark or ỳ.xv.b.day of Aprill. This yere also one Laurẽce Duket a cytezyn of Lõdõ, was foũde dede & hanged within sait Mary bow chyrch of chepe. For ỳ which enqueres were made & lastely for ỳ dede were ataynted these.viii. persons folowing, ỳ is to say, Reygnold

of lancaſter, Robert Pynnot, Paule of Steppnhith, Thomas Cordwayner, Johñ Tolanſon, Thomas Ruſſell, and Robert Scotte / the whyche were all for that dede drawyn & hanged. And a woman for the ſame dede was alſo brent. And Rauffe Creppyn, Jourdan Good chepe, Gilbert Clerk and Geffrey Clerke, were alſo attait for the ſame cauſe. But they were reprued and ſent vnto the toure of Lõdon / where they remayned lõge after and laſtly delyuered. And in thys yere the greate condupte ſtandynge agayne ſaynte Thomas of Acres in Chepe, was begon to be made. In this yere alſo ſtryfe and vnkindenes beganne to kyndelle betweene the kynge & the erle of Leyceſter / whych after grewe to the great dyſturbaũce of dyuers townes of Englande, and ſpecyally of the cytye of London as after ſome dele ſhall appere.

Annodomini. M.CC.lxxxiiii. Anno dñi. M.CC.lxxxv.

Stephen Cornyſhyll.

Gregory Rokeſle. Anno.xiiii.

Robert Rokeſby.

The fraunchies ſeyſed, and why.

IN thys.xiiii. yere vpon the day of the conuerſiõ of ſaynt Paule or ỹ.xxv.day of Januarii / ỹ kynge ceaſed the fraunchiſe and lybertyes into hys handes, and diſcharged the mayre of London thã beyng Gregory Rokkiſle / & admytted for cuſtos or gardeyn of the cytye Stephã Sãdewyche. The whyche contynued in that offyce tyll the mõday folowyng the puryfycacyon of our Lady. At whyche ſeaſon the ſayd Stephã was diſcharged / and ſyr Johñ Bretoñ knyght charged for the reſydue of ỹ yere. The cauſe of thys diſpleaſure that the kyng had vnto the cytye is nat ſhewed of no certaynte. But in an olde panklete it appereth, that the ſayd Gregory Rokkiſley toke certayne brybes of the bakers, and ſuffered them to ſell brede lackynge .vi. vnces / or .vii. or in a peny lofe, for ỹ whyche the kynge ſhuld be ſore diſpleaſed. But yet to me it ſemeth no conuenyent cauſe, to ſeaſe the lybertyes of the cytie for the offence of one man. wherfore it is to preſuppoſe, ỹ it was for a more greuous cauſe. And in this yere was fully fynyſſhed and ended the new werke of ỹ chyrch of weſtmynſter vnto the ende of the quere, begonne as before is ſhewed / in the thyrde yere of the.iii. Hẽry. By whyche reaſon it ſhuld apere, ỹ thys chyrche ſhuld be in edyfyenge vpon lxvi. yeres. Of the fyrſte fundacyon of thys chyrche are dyuers opiniõs. For as before is ſhewed in ỹ thyrde Chapytre of the ſtory of Carce, and v. parte of thys werke / thys chyrche was fyrſte founded by a cyteyzeyne of Londõ, and after reedyfyed by ſaynt Edwarde, and laſtly by kynge Hẽry the.iii. But in the ſame abbey of weſtmynſter, where of lykelyhode ỹ moſt certaynte is to be had / it is regyſtred that thys ſayd chyrche was a temple of the Brytons longe or they receyued the fayth of Chryſte. And in the tyme of theyr cryſten kynge Lucius, it was hallowed of Auguſtyne & hys felowes. And ſecundarply it was reedyfyed by Sebertus than kynge of Eſſtarons or Eſſex, aboute the tyme whan Ethelbert kyng of Kent buylded ſaynt Paules chyrch of Londõ. whyche was after the tyme that Lucyus receyued the fayth of Chryſte, vppon.iiii.C. yeres. Than thyrdly it was buylded by ſaynt Edwarde the

confeſſour

confessoure / whiche reygned vpon CCCC. and xl. yeres after the sayde Sebertus. And fourthly or lastly by the forsayd Henry ꝑ thyrde, whiche began his reygne after the dethe of sayne Edwarde. C. l. yeres.

Anno domini. xii. C. lxxxb. Annodo mini. M. CC. lxxxvi.

walter Blount.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno. xiiii.

Johan wade.

IN the xiiii. yere of kynge Edwarde, at a parliament holden at westmynster were made ꝑ statutes called *Additamenta Glocestrie* / whiche is to meane addicions of statutes, made and put to suche as before tyme were made at ꝑ parlyamẽt holdẽ at Glouceter. The which statutes were made to reformme suche ꝓfites as mysused the landes and tenementes commynge to them by reason of ꝑ dower or landes of theyr wyues / so that the the chyldren of the seconde husbande putt by ꝑ ryghtfull enherytoures / or suche as were nerre alyed vnto the fyrst donours. By reason of whiche statutes and addicions now in this parliamẽt made, suche mysorder was reformed.

In this yere or nere there aboute, in a towne of Almayne called Tratect / many men and women (as wytnesseth ꝑ auctour of *Cronica cronicarum*) were dauſyng vpõ a brydge / whiche lay ouer a ryuer called Moose. In whiche tyme of theyr dysporte & dauſynge, came by a preest berynge the sacramẽt towarde a seke man / wherof the sayd men and women beynge in reuell toke no regarde vnto the sacrament, nor dyd to it any honour & reuerence. But were it by the wreche of god or otherwyse / shortly after the preest was passed ouer, the brydge brake, by meanes wherof, nere vnto the nombre of. CC. persones were drowned. And aboute this same season in the coũtre called in Englysshe the Swetzers, a woman was delyuered of a chylde, that from ꝑ nauyll vpwarde had. ii. complete bodyes, as iiii. armes, and two hedes, with two bodyes to the wast / and downeward but. ii. legges / the whiche with ꝑ forsayd armes be clypped eyther others body. And an other woman bare a chylde or a monstre / wherof the heed and the face was lyke vnto a man, & all the body lyke vnto a lyon / with tayle and fete and all other fetures accordynge to the same.

In this yere also a cytezyn of London named Thomas Pywyleſdon, ꝑ whiche in ꝑ tyme of ꝑ barons warre before in the story of kynge Henry shewed, had ben a cayptayne / and a great styrrer of the commons of the sayd cytie, for to mayntayne the barons partie agayne the kynge / was newly accused, that he with other of euyll dyspoſycyon, shulde make conuentycles and assembles to the newe dystourbaunce of the cytie. wherof re porte was made vnto the kynge / the whiche remytted the enquery therof vnto syr Rauffe Sandewyche than custos or gardeyne of the cytie. Thẽ the sayde Thomas with other was putte in sure keppynge tyll the mater were duly enquyred of. After whiche inquyſycyon made and founde, reporte was made vnto the kynge. Then the kyng sent downe a wrytte / and commaunded it to be proclaymed shortly after within the boundes of the cytye / wherof the effecte was thus, that the sayde Thomas

Pywelyſdon

Pywelysdō, wylyam de Heywoode, Rychard de Coundzis, Rychard le Cofferre, Robert de Derby, Albyne de Darby, wyllyam Mayo Mercer, and Iuo Lyng Draper/with diuers other to ꝑ nōbze of.l. persones, shuld be banyshed out of ꝑ cytye foz euer. And if any of the sayd.lviii. persones were at that tyme of the pzoclamaciō voyded ꝑ cytye foz fere oz otherwyse/ that they shuld so remayne, and nat to retourne vnto the cytie vpō payne of lyfe losynge.

In thys yere also, where as of olde tyme longe before thys season, ꝑ marchauntes straūgers commynge with theyz marchaundyse, were lodged within cytezeyns of the cytye of London, and solde all theyz marchaundyses by the pzocurynge of hys host/ foz the whyche hys sayd hoost had a certayne of euery .li: by meanes of the sayd marchauntes straūgers it was at thys daye brought to passe, ꝑ they myght hyze to the houses foz to dwel in, and foz stowage of theyz wares so that no cytezeyne shulde entermedle hym with the sayd straūgers noz yet theyz wares/ by meane whereof they vsed many disceytes, bothe i vtteraūce of false wares, and also by theyz weyghtes whyche they vsed in theyz owne houses, to the great hurt of the hole realme of Englande. wherfoze sodaynly serche was made, and theyz weyghtes founde and pzoued false. And ouer ꝑ all suche wares as they shuld haue weyed at the kynges beame/they weyed moche therof in theyz sayd houses, to the hynderaunce of ꝑ kynges custome. Foz whyche offēces agayne theym pzoued/to the nombze of.xx. of the sayd straungers were arrested, and sent vnto the toure of Lōdon, and theyz weyghtes bzent & consumed in westchepe of London, the thursdaye before the feast of Symon and Jude. And fynally the sayd marchauntes were delyuered by fyne makynge to the kyng of a thousande.li, when they had suffered by a season harde & vyle pzysonement.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxvi. Anno dñi. xii. C.lxxxvii.

Thomas Crosse.

Syz Johñ Bzyton.

Anno.xv.

wyllyam Hawteyn.

IN thys.xv. yere, the Jewes of Englande were sessed at great summes of money whych they payd vnto the kyng. But of one other auctour it is sayd, that the commons of Englande graunted to the kyng the v. parte of theyz mouables foz to haue the Jewes banyshe out the lāde. Foz whyche cause the sayd Jewes to put the commons from theyz purpose, gaue of theyz free wylles great summes of money to ꝑ kyng. whych sayeng appereth to be trewe/ foz the sayd Jewes were exyled within few yeres after.

Thys yere about the begynnynge of May the kynge sayled to Burdeur/ and frome thens he rode into Fraunce, where as witnesseth ꝑ freshe boke he was honourably receyued of Philyp le Beau oz Philyp the fayre than kynge of Fraunce/ and after receyued homage of the sayd Edward foz the duchy of Gupan. And when kynge Edwarde had taryed a season in Fraunce, he retourned vnto Burdeur/ whyther came vnto hym a certayne ambassadours from the kyng of Spayne, with the whych he helde longe dalyaunce. wherfoze of ꝑ freshe kyng he was suspected, that he shuld allye hym with the kyng of Spayne

agayne

agayne the Frenche kynge.

And thys yere as testifyeth Politronycon, the somer was so extreadyng hote, that men dyed for hete.

And thys yere where was so plentuous, that it was solde at London for.xl.d.a quarter.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxxvii. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxviii.

wyllyam Herforde.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xvi.

Thomas Stanys.

IN thys.xvi. yere of kynge Edwarde/ saynt Thomas of Herforde was translated. And thys yere fyll dyssaucte betwene syr Payne Tiptoft wardeyn of certayn castels in walys, & a walsh knyght called syr Ries ap Mordek. So þ sundry skyrmyshes were foughten betwene them, & many men slayne vpon bothe sydes, to the great dyshourdaunce of all þ countre.

Thys yere vpon saynt Margarettes euyn, or the.xix. daye of Julii / fyll wonderfull great hayle, that the lyke therof was nat of men than lyuynge seen. And after that ensued extreme cayne/ whyche dyscreryd the grou̅d in such wyse, that the vere folowyng where was sold for.xviii.d.a bushel, and thys yere for.xiiii.d. And so encreased percly after durynge þ reygne of the kynge, and after in hys sones dayes, tyll it was lately solde for.xl.s. a quarter and aboue.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxxviii. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxix.

wyllyam Betayn.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xvii.

Johñ of Cauntorbury.

IN thys.xvii.yere, the warre before in the yere lasse paste, betwene syr Payn Typtoft & syr Ryes contynuynge/ to the entente that the sayd Ryes myght reuenge hys cause agayne the sayd syr Payne, he arreyd a greate multytude of walsheme and brent and wasted dyuers townes in walys/ so that the kynge then beynge in Normandy, sente [illegible] the erle of Cornewayll then beynge the kynges lyeu tenaunte in Englande, that he shuld sende thyder an armye of knyghtes to withstande the malyce of the walshmen. The whych prepared shortly an armye, & yode with them into the borders of Northewalys. where he with hys cõpany bare hym so knyghtly, that in the ende the sayd Ryes was take & brought vnto yorke/ where he was after drawen, hanged, and quartered.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxxix. Anno dñi.M.CC.xc.

Fulk [illegible] saynt Edmunde.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xviii.

Salamon Langforde.

IN thys.xviii.yere vppon oure Lady euyn Assumpcion/ kyng Edwarde was honorably receyued of the cytezeyns of London, and so conueyed vnto westmynster / where shortly after were brought before hym

hym many greuous complayntes of dyuers of hys iustyces, as syr Thomas weylande, Adam Stretton and other. The whych the kynge caused strayghtly to be examyned/and lastly were founde guylty, of such trespasses and causes as they were accused of. wherfore some of theym were outlawed and loste suche goodes as they hadde/and the other punyshed by longe emprysonemente, and lastely delyuered by payenge of greate fynes.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxx. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxi.

Thomas Romayn.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xix.

wyllyam de Lyre.

IN thys.xix.yere, the kynge ordeyned ỳ all wolle whych shuld be sold vnto straungers, shulde be brought vnto Sandewyche/where the staple therof longe after was, as it is now at ỳ towne of Caleys. And thys yere were the Iewes banyshed the lande, for the whych cause the cõmons gaue vnto the kyng a quindecym or fyftene.

Thys yere also syr Gylbert de Clare erle of Glouceter, maryed dame Jane doughter of kyng Edwarde. Thys was called Johanne of Acrys for she was born at Acrys, whẽ kyng Edwarde was there vpon hys great tourney. And soone there after in the same yere, the duke of Brabannys sonne wedded Margarete the syster of the sayd Johanne.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxi. Annodomini.M.CC.lxxii.

Rauffe Blount.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xx.

Hamonde Boxe.

IN thys.xx.yere is begynnynge of the mayres yere, and also of the kynges.xx.yere/that is to meane vpon the euyn of saynt Andrewe or the.xxix.day of Nouembre/dyed quene Elyanore the kynges wyfe, and was buryed at westmynster in the chapel of saynt Edwarde at the fete of Hery the thyrde. where she hath.ii. were tapers brennyng vpon her tumbe both daye and nyght/whyche so hath contynued syne the day of her buryenge to thys present daye. Thys gentyll woman as before is towched in the xxv.yere of kyng Henry the third, was syster vnto the kyng of Spayn By whome kyng Edwarde had. iiii. sonnes/that is to saye, Johñ, Henry, Alphons, and Edwarde. whych Edwarde succeded his father, by reason that the other.iii.died before theyr father. Also he had by her.v.doughters The fyrste Elyanore, was maryed vnto wyllyam erle of Barre/the seconde Johan of Acrys, was maryed as before is sayde vnto the erle of Glouceter/the thyrde Margarett, was maryed to the dukes sonne of Brabãt/the.iiii.Mary by name, was made a menchon at Ambrysbury/& the.v.named Elyzabeth, was maried vnto the erle of Holande/ and after hys deth she was maryed vnto Humfrey Boherum erle of Hereforde.

And thys yere dyed also the olde quene Elyanore wyfe vnto Hery the thyrde and mother to thys kyng Edwarde/ whose herte was buryed at the

the graye freres in London, and her body at Ambrysbury in the house of Nunnes.

Anno domini.M.CC.xcii. Anno dñi.M.CC.xciii.

Henry Bale.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xxi.

Elys Russell.

IN thys.xxi.yere, the kyng helde hys great courte of parlyament at London/to the whyche with dyuers lordes of that prouince came the kyng of Scottes. And after he had contynued there a conuenyente season/ he was cõueyed with dyuers lordes ferre vpõ hys iourney towarde hys owne countre.

And in thys yere, as one Rychard Bagle offycer of the sheryfes of London, was ledynge a prysoner towarde the Gayole, the whyche he before had arrested / thre men rescowed the sayde prysoner, and toke hym from the offycer. The whych were pursued and taken/and by iugemente and lawe than vsed brought into westchepe, and there had theyr ryghte handes smyten of by the wrystes.

Anno dñi.M.CC.xciii. Anno dñi.M.CC.xciiii.

Robert Rokysley.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xxii.

Martyn Awbry.

IN the .xxii. yere of kynge Edwarde, vpon the daye of saynt Tyburce and Valeryan, or the. xiiii. daye of May/ fyll a wõderfull snow and therwith and excedynge wynde. By vyolence whereof greate harme was done in sundry places of Englande. In remembraunce whereof a Metrycyan made these verses folowynge.

Crastino Tiburci sanctorum Valeriani,
Nix cadit immanis, ventus vehemens borealis,
Exuit siluas, vulsit quas reperit ibidem,
Ædes dampnose detexit & impetuose,
Quas eciam prostrauit/sic plurima dãpna parauit.

The whyche verses may thus be Englysshed as here after foloweth.

The morow folowynge Tiburce & Valerian
The blessed sayntes/of snow fyll suche plentie,
That at that day was no syght a man,
That myght remembre of so great quantyte.
The Northyn wynde blewe with suche fyerse,
That houses, trees, with herbys it ouer cast.
And many other harmes by lande & eke by see,
Of that wynde came, the whyle that it dyd lasse.

IN thys yere also about ỹ ende of the moneth of Julii, dyed freer Pekham than archebysshop of Caunterbury. In whose see was after stalled mayster Robert of wynchester.

And aboute the myddes of Septembre folowynge/ the erle of Barre a frenche man, maryed Elyanore ỹ kynges doughter in ỹ towne of Bry stowe. And about the ende of thys yere dyed Alexandre kyng of Scottes/ where soone after ensuyd great warre and trouble, for the enherytaunce of that lande, as in some parte shall after appere.

And thys yere whete was solde at London for.ii.s.a busshell. In this yere also as wytnesseth the frenche cronycle Phylyp le Beawe the kyng of Fraunce made warre in Gascoyne

ll. and

and Guyau, for the cause as there is shewed / sayeng that kyng Edwarde vnder coloure to haue made a vyage into the holy lande, gathered a great army, and sodeynly entred into Normandy bothe by lande and water, & dyd moche harme in spoylynge and takyng dyuers shyppes of Fraunce, and brynnyng and spoylyng diuers townes of the same / and after came vnto the towne of Rochell, where to it the Englysshemen made dyuers assautes, wherby the dwellers & also the towne susteyned moche harme.

Wherof the kynge of Fraunce beynge enfourmed / sent vnto kyng Edward, monyshing hym to come vnto hys parlyamente, & also to make satysfaccyon for suche harmys as hys people had done within hys dompnyon of Fraunce and Normandy. But for that kyng Edwarde refused that to do / therfore ỹ sayd Phylyp le Beawe sent Rauffe de Necll thā cōstable of Fraunce into Gascoygne with a greate & mygthy power / the whyche made sharpe warre vppon ỹ Gascoynes. But the Gascoines with helpe of the Englysshemen defended theym in suche wyse, that great hurt was done vpon bothe partyes. Thā fynally as testifyeth the sayd frenche cronycle, to the entent that kyng Edwarde mygthe make the better clayme to al the hole duchy of Normādy / he sent the Frenche kynge worde, ỹ he wolde gyue ouer into hys handes the duchye of Guyan & holde no lande of the kyng of Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. CC. xciii.

Henry Bore.

Syr Johñ Bryton.

Anno domini. M. CC. xcv.

Anno. xxiii.

Richarde Glouceter.

IN thys. xxiii. yere / the walshemen by styrryng of one named Madok, rebelled agayne the kynge. wherfore he in all haste spedde hym vnto westchester / and about the feast of sayntе Nycholas, wan frome the walshmen the ile called Anglesya or the ile of Manne, and buylded newe the cytye & castell of Beau Maryse / and broughte the vnstedfast walshemen to newe reclayme / & then caused the woodes of ỹ countre to be hewyn downe, wherein before tymes they vsed to hyde theym as a cony dothe in hys claper / and repayred so the castelles and stronge holdes with buyldynge of some newe, that he caused the walshmē to thryue agayne theyr wylles. For by the strengthe of those castelles, they were kepte from theyr olde accustomed raupns and stelyn-

How the walshemen were trapned from raisyn.

ges / and put so in execucyon by the rulers of the sayd castelles & stronge holdes, that they fyll vnto occupacyon and to byenge and sellyng and gathered treasoure, and beganne to lyue after the maner of Englysshemē, so that more and more that countre grewe to more restfulnesse and peace.

In thys yere also the frenchemen arryued at Douer wyth a certayne of shyppes, beynge vnder the rule of syr Mathew de mounte morency and of syr Johan Harcourte knyghtes / and spoyled that towne, and brent a parte of yt.

In whych skyrmysshe was slayne or martyred an holy man named sayntе Thomas of Douer. And in this yere as testifieth ỹ frenche cronicle / Charles de Valoys brother vnto

kynge

kyng Phylyp of Fraunce, was sent by hys sayd brother into Gascoygne with a greate hooste. The whyche Charles layde hys syege vnto the castell of Ryon / wherin at that tyme were syr Johan Seyn Johñ, & Johñ de Bretayne / the whych manfully & vygorously defendyd the sayd castel agayne the Frenchmen all that yere and more, as in the next yere shall appere.

Anno domini. M. CC. xcv. Anno dñi. xii. C. xcvi.

Johñ Dunstable.

Syr Johñ Bryton. Anno. xxiiii.

Adam Halyngbery.

IN this. xxiiii. yere / the kyng for the great warre ỹ he had wyth the Frenche kyng and els where, cõmaunded a new subsidie to be leuied vpon all the sarplers of wolle goyng out of Englande, with all fellys and hydes in lyke maner. And ouer that, all suche money as before was grauñted by the clergy of Englande toward the defence of the holy lande / the kyng then for reporte that he hadde from Rome of the popes maners thã Bonyface the. viii, cõmaunded it to be brought vnto hys tresoury. And by a cõuocaciõ made of the sayd clergye / he had graunted towarde hys nedes halfe of theyr spyrytuall & temporall landes, begynnyng at. xx. mar ke benifice, & so ascendyng vpward / the whych was nat payd in one yere, but by deuided portions in. iii. yeres ensuyng. And of the lay fee or temporall men of Englãde, he had grauñted to hym the. x. peny of theyr mouables / the which was payd in. ii. yeres next ensuyng. And thys yere in ỹ moneth of Marche, was drawen & hanged at London for treason done in Fraunce, a knyghte called syr Thomas Turbeuyle. And aboute ỹ tyme of Easter whan Charlys de Valoys as ye before in that other yere haue harde, had lyen longe at the castell of Ryon, & myght nothyng wynne vpõ the Englyshmen, but dayly loste of the best of hys knyghtes / he sent for more ayde and socoure. At whyche tyme came vnto hym syr Rauffe Nele constable of Fraunce with a fressh company, and thã assawted it of new But whan they had lyen there a season, & sawe they preuayled nothynge agayn theyr enemys / they rode vnto an holde there by named Boudency, and it assauted for so moche as the more nombre of the sowdyours there were Normans / and after. viii. days by appoyntemente or otherwyse gat the sayd holde, so that all the Englisshemen had theyr lybertye & goodes and the Normans taken as prysoners / the whyche they brought after vnto the castell of Ryon, and there in syghte of the sowdyours, hanged al or the more partye of the sayde Normans. whan the Gascoynes beynge wythin the towne and castell of Ryons, sawe then theyr cosyns and cõtrey men hanged before theyr eyen / they caste in theyr myndes that yt was done by treason of the Englysshmen, and that they wolde at length deale wyth them in lyke maner. By reason wherof stryfe and varyaũce arose betwene the Englysshemẽ and the Gascoygnes / so that eyther of theym feryd the treason of the other. For the whyche cause, syr Johan Seyn Johan, syr Johñ de Bretayn, syr Robert Typtoft, syr Rauffe Tãny, syr Hugh Bardolfe, & syr Adam Cretynge, with dyuers other kledde

Cruelte.

by see and in that maner saued them selfe/and soone after the sayd towne and castell of Ryons was wonne by the Frenchemen, and the inhabytaũtes of the same swoꝛne vnto the frẽch kynge.

ye haue harde befoꝛe in the .xrii. yere of thys kynge, howe after the dethe of Alexander kyng of Scottes many questyons fyll amonge ꝑ sayd scottes, who by ryght of enherytaũce shulde be kynge of that lande/consyderynge that the sayde Alexander had lefte after hym thꝛe doughters, the whyche lyuyng theyꝛ father were maryed. The fyꝛste to syꝛ Johan Bayoll, the seconde to Roberte le Bꝛuze, and the thyꝛde to one named Hastynges. Many of the loꝛdes of Scotlande wolde haue crowned syꝛ Johan Bayoll, by reason that he maryed the eldest of the doughters. But the frendes of Robert le Bꝛuze withstode it with all theyꝛ power. And other there were that helde with Hastynges/so that after greate stryfe and longe varyaunce, the matter was bꝛoughte befoꝛe kynge Edwarde as chyef loꝛd and soueraygne of that lande/ꝓmysynge to hym to abyde all suche determynacyon and iugemente as he shulde sette therin. Than kynge Edwarde to the ende that the scottes shulde knowe perfytely, that the kyng of Englãde ought of ryghte to be there chyefe hede and soueraygne / shewed vnto theym suche olde wꝛytynges as he lyttell tofoꝛe had caused to be serched and founde/in the whyche it was conteyned by the auctoꝛyte of olde cronycles and wꝛyters, as Maryanus ꝑ scotte, wyllyam of Malmesbury, Roger of Huntyngdon, and other, that in the yere of our loꝛde .ix.C. xx. kynge Edwarde the elder made subget vnto hym the kynges of Cumbꝛys and scottes.

Also in the yere of grace .ix.C. and xxi. the foꝛesayd scottes & Cumbꝛys, chase the sayd Edwarde the elder to be theyꝛ chyefe loꝛd and patron. And in ꝑ yere of our loꝛde .ix.C.xxvi. Ethelstane than kynge of Englande subdued constantyne than kyng of scottes/and after admytted the sayd Constantyne to reygne as kynge vnder him, by othe of obeysaũs, with feaute and homage. Also Edꝛedus bꝛother to the sayde Ethelstane, subdued of newe the scottes with the Noꝛthumbꝛys/ and receyued of them agayne othe and homage. And ouer that it is founde in the sayd cronycles, that Edgar ouercame Alphunius the son of Kynadus kynge of Scottes, and receyued of hym feawty & homage/ and helde hym vnder hys obeysauce as he had done hys father Kynadus befoꝛe tyme. Moꝛeouer it is there wytnessed/ that Canutus in the .xvi. yere of hys reygne, subdued Malcolyne than kyng of scottes, and receyued of hym feawty and homage. Furthermoꝛe wyllyam Conquerour in the .vi. yere of his reygne, subdued Malcolyne kyng of Scotlande/ the whyche befoꝛe tymes had receyued the sayde kyngdome of the gyfte of Edwarde kynge and confessoure. And wyllyam the rede dyd in lykewyse vnto the sayde Malcolyne, and vnto hys two sonnes that reygned in Scotlande the one after the other. Also Dauyd kynge of scottes dyd homage vnto Stephane than kyng of Englande.

And wyllyam kynge of scottes dyd homage vnto Henry the thyꝛde, at the tyme of hys coꝛonacyon/ and after came vnto hys father Henry the seconde, whan the foꝛenamed Henry was deed in Noꝛmandy, & made hys homage to hym agayne.

Thys Henry that was sonne vnto Henry the seconde is of many

wꝛyters

wryters named Henry the thyrd, for so moche as he was the .iii. kyng that was crowned of that name. But for he dyed before hys father, hys dedes ben lytell spoken of / so that of some wryters he is nothyng mynded. And it foloweth in the story, howe that Alexãdre kyng of Scottes in ỳ .xxxv. yere of Hẽry the thyrd, or son of kyng Johñ, maryed at yorke Margarete doughter of the sayd Henry / and dyd vnto hym homage for the realme of Scotlande / and boũde hym and hys heyres kynges of Scotlande by hys letters patentes, to be trewe vnto the sayd Hẽry, & vnto his heyres kynges of Englande, lyke as before tyme wyllyam kyng of Scottes had obly ged hym vnto the seconde Henry / as before in the .xxii. yere of hys regne is more manyfestly shewed.

And more to them was shewed ỳ popes bulles, the whych were sent be fore tymes into Scotlande / by aucto rite wherof the kynges of Scotlãde were accursed for they wolde nat be obedyent to theyr lordes kynges of Englande.

Whan all these presedentes were sene by ỳ Scottes / a day was al sygned of metyng at Norhñ in the marches betwene Englande and Scotlande, whyther vnto the kyng, came the chief rulers of the Scottes. where they excused them to be boũde vnto the kyng for the obseruynge of the kynges ordenaunce, for so moche as they lacked a kynge & an hede, by whome all suche ordenaunces shuld be maynteyned and holdẽ. But after by aduyce of bothe parties / agremẽt was made by the scottes, that they shuld be bounde to obey the kynges iugement. whereuppon bondes were made vpon bothe partyes / that is to meane the kyng was bounde to thẽ in an hondreth thousande pounde, ỳ within .ii. monethes after he had re ceyued the possessyon of the lande, he shulde gyue it vnto hym that was thought most ryghtfull enherytour. And the scottes were agayne boũde vnto hym, that they shuld holde ferme & stable all suche decree and iuge ment as the kyng shuld gyue in that mater / and also that they shulde vp holde & mayntayne for theyr kyng & ruler, hym that the kynge shulde ad mitte & chose, and none other. After whych bondes made and delyuered vpon bothe sydes / the scottes seased kyng Edwarde, and delyuered vnto hym by theyr chartours the possessiõ of Scotlande, with castelles, with rightes, with customes, and al other appertynañces to that kyngdome be longynge / and sette wardeynes in the townes, maners, and castelles, that shuld saue to hym that the kyng admytted, al aduauntages and pro fytes, of the sayde townes and other in that meane whyle growyng.

And whan all assurañce was ma de and fynysshed to the agrement of bothe parties / the kyng called before hym and hys counsayll all those par tyes that made clayme vnto ỳ kyng dome of Scotlande. And after theyr reasons were wele and suffycyently argued and debated vpon al sydes, by aduyce aswell of some of the lor des of Scotlande as by hys owne counsayll he fynally admytted for kynge syr Johan Bayoll as moste ryghtefull enherytour to the crowne of Scotlande. The whych receyued it of hym thankefully / and for the same in presence of the barony of En glande and of Scotlande, dyd vnto the sayde kynge Edwarde hys ho mage, and swore vnto hym fealty. And that done the scottes with theyr newe kynge retourned into Scot lande.

And thys yere was take the fore

named Madok or Meredok/whych as ye before haue herde in the. xxiii. yere, caused the walshemen to rebell and was drawyn and hanged at London.

Anno domini. xii. C. xcvi. Anno dñi. M. CC. xcvii.

Thomas de Hull.

Syr Johñ Bryton. Anno. xxv.

Adam de Fullam.

IN thys. xxv. yere the kyng commaunded in dyuers shyres of Englande, great quantyte of whete to be gadered, & sent it into Gascoyne and Guyan, to the nombre of an. C. M. quarters after some writters/and soone after sent thyder syr Edmunde hys brother erle of Lancastre, syr Hẽry Lacy erle of Lyncolne, & syr wyllyam Veysy barõ, with diuers other lordes & knyghtes, to strength suche people as he there had redy, whyle he prepared an other army to haue a gaynst the scottes.

ye haue herde in the precedynge chappytre, howe syr Johan Bayloll kyng of scottes made othe & homage vnto kyng Edwarde for ỹ kyngdom of Scotlande. Of the whych othe he shortly repẽted hym after, by meane of coũsayll of the abbot of Menros as sayth Polycronycõ. All be it that it shuld seme to be as wel by the coũsayll of the kyng of Fraũce, by wordes that ben wrytten in the frenche cronycle. But how so it was by one or by both / full vntrewly he forsoke hys former othe & promyse, & arrered warre agayne the kynge. wherfore kyng Edward sped hym thyder with a great hoost/ & in processe layde hys syege vnto the towne of Berwyk. But the scottes defẽded it egerly, & bete the Englysshe men backe, and brent some of the Englysh shyppes. wyth the whyche enterprise they were so enflamyd wyth pryde, that in derisiõ of the kyng, they made this mokkysshe ryme folowyng.

What wenys kyng Edwarde with hys longe shankys,
To haue wonne Berwyke / all oure vnthankys.
Gaas pykes hym
And whan he hath it
Gaas dykys hym.

WHan kynge Edwarde herde of ỹ pryde of the scottes, and knewe of theyr scornefull ryme/he was somdeale amoued/& encouraged his knyghtes in suche wyse, that they wanne the dyche of the towne/& after in processe with greate laboure and daunger, the Bulwerkes / so that they came vnto the gates, and made there so stronge assawte, that in the ende they wanne the towne, & slewe of the scottes as wytnesseth dyuers writers ouer the nombre of. xv. M. and tooke prysouers syr wyllyam Douglas, syr Symon de Freysell, the erle Patryk, & syr Robert Bruse, wyth dyuers other / and in shorte tyme after the wardeyn of the castell of Berwyke seynge that to hym was sent no socoure / yelded vp the sayd castell by appoyntement. And whã the kyng had possession of the towne and castell of Berwyke / he than strengthed theym wyth Englysshe men. And after wanne the holdes of Tyndall of Exham, of wyterbyrd, and of Lamerstoke, wyth dyuers other.

And whyle ỹ kyng Edwarde was thus besyed about the wynnyng of these forsayd holdes/he set syr Hugh Spencer,

Spencer.with syr Hugh Perry and other noble men, with a parte of his host, to laye siege vnto Dunbarre. where whē they had layne a certayne of tyme, an host of Scottes came thyder to remoue the syege, with whome the Englysshe men had a fyers / and cruel batayle. But in ꝑ ende by helpe of god and saynt George, the Englysshe mē had the victorye / & slewe of the Scottes aboue the nombre of. xx.M, and lost of the Englysshe company a very fewe in nombre. wherfore the Englysshe mē in reproche of the Scottes, made this ryme folowynge.

These scaterande Scottes
Holde we for sottes
Of wrenches vnware
Crept in a mornynge
In an euyll tympynge
Came they to Dunbarre.

AND after this victorye, the towne & castell of Dunbarre was wonne/in the whiche were take prysoners thre erles, vii. barons, and xxvii. knyghtes, with dyuers men of the churche. Than the kynge spedde hym to Edenborow, and in processe of tyme wanne the towne with the castell. In the whiche were founde ꝑ regalyes of Scotlāde, ꝑ is to meane the crowne with the septre & clothe of astate/the whiche after were offered by kynge Edwarde at the shryne of saynt Edwarde vpon the morowe after the feast of saynt Botholfe, or ꝑ xviii. day of Junii, in the yere folowynge. And when the kynge had thus subdued the Scottes, and set the coūtre in a rule/he retourned with many prysoners into Englāde. In whiche tyme and season the Englysshemen susteyned many harde houres in Gascoyne & Gyan. Among ꝑ whiche one is remembred in the Frenche cronycle / sayenge that Edmunde duke or erle of Lancastre, dyed at Bayon. After whose dethe whyle the towne and other stronge holdes prepared them to withstande the Frenchemen Robert erle of Artoys, whiche a lytel tofore had encoūtred with syr Johñ, & had ben of hym ouerset, resembled his cōpany/and made hym an other skrymysshe. In the whiche he slewe vpon an hundreth Englysshmē and Gascoynes, and toke prysoners the forenamed syr Johan Seyn Johan, syr wyllyam Mortymer, and other, to the nombre of.lxx, ꝑ whiche were sente into Fraunce vnto dyuers prysones.

Anno dñi.xii.C.xcvii. Anno dñi.M.CC.xcviii.

Johñ de Stortforde.

Syr Johñ Bryton. Anno.xxvi.

wyllyam de Stortforde.

IN this.xxvi. yere / kynge Edwarde with a pusaunte armye in the moneth of August, toke shyppynge at douer, & sayled into Flaunders, to ayde and to helpe Guy than erle of Flaunders agayne ꝑ Frenche kynge. The which at that tyme was sore warreyd of the Frenche kynge, in somoche that he hadde wonne the towne of Wargquet and the countre therabout. And for to put the sayde Guy vnto the more trouble/ the sayd Frenche kynge caused Robert erle of Artoys to inuade the coūtre of Flaūdres toward Pycardy / & encountred with ꝑ sayd Guy nere vnto a towne called Furnes. whereat wene ꝑ said.ii. erles was foughte a sharpe batail/so

that many men were slayne vpon bothe partyes. After whiche fyght the Erle of Flaunders spedde hym towarde Gaunt, where as kynde Edwarde than soiourned / & the erle of Artoys drewe hym towarde ꝑ frēche kynge, the whiche shortly after was receyued into the towne of Bruges. In whiche tyme and season whyle ꝑ sayd. ii. kynges laye thus at eyther towne, a meane of peas was there treated of / so that fynally a peas was cōcluded atwene the. ii. kynges, and atwene the Frenche kynge and Guy erle of Flaūders, vnto the feest of all sayntes than nexte ensuenge. And frō that day, vnto the feast of all sayntes thā. ii. yeres folowyng. After whiche peas so stablysshed / kynge Edwarde departed from the towne of Gaunte & rode to Burdeaux. And ꝑ Frenche kynge retourned into Fraunce. And ꝓysoners were delyuered on bothe partyes.

H Frenche cautyle.

In this tyme and season whyle kynge Edwarde was thus occupyed in Flaūders / the Scottes by the entysement of the Frenche kynge, to the entent to cause kynge Edwarde to kepe his countre, & that he shulde nat ayde the erle of Flaunders, began to make warre vpon the kynges soudyours, whiche ꝑ kynge had lafte there in dyuers holdes. And also entred vpon ꝑ borders of Northūberlande, & made sharpe warre vpon the inhabytauntes of that countre. And for that syr Johū Baylol theyr kynge, after some wryters, was at ꝑ tyme ꝓysoner in the towre of London, or els boyded the coūtre for fere of the kynge of Englande: therfore the sayde Scottes made them a cayptayne / the whiche was named wyllyam waleys a man of vnknowen or lowe byrth, to whom they obeyed as vnto theyr kynge. Anone as ꝑ kynge herde of the rebellyon of the Scottes, which to hym was no great wonder consyderynge theyr greate vnstedfastnesse / he wrote his letters vnto syr Hēry Persy erle of Northūberlande, to syr wyllyam Latymer, and to syr Hugh Cressyngham than tresourer of Englande, and to other, that they in all goodly haste shulde make ꝓuysyon to withstande the Scottes. The whiche persones after receyte of the kynges letters, spedde them all in spedy maner / so that they entred Scotlande shortly after, and cōpelled ꝑ Scottes to returne backe vnto a towne named Streuelyn, where i a skyrmysshe foughtē atwene the Englysshe and the Scottes, syr Hugh Cressyngham forenamed with dyuers Englysshemen was slayne. But yet the Scottes were holden so strayte of the Englysshe hoost, that after that skyrmysshe they wolde nat of a certayne tyme come in playne felde, but kepte theym within theyr castelles and strōge holdes. And this yere atwene Easter and wytsontyde certayne psones of Londō brake vp the tunne in the warde of Cornhyll, and toke out certayne persones that thyder were commytted by syr Johū Bryton, then custos or gardeyn of the cytie, for nyght walkynge. For ꝑ whiche ryot, the sayde persones, that is to meane Thomas Romayne and viii. other, were afterwarde greuously punysshed / as fyrst by ꝓysonmēt, and after by fynes. And this yere the kynge in ꝑ moneth of October came into Englāde, and so to wynchester / where the cytezyns of London made suche labour vnto his grace, that shortly after they optayned graunte of theyr lyberties and fraunchyses, that had in some parte be kepte from them by ꝑ terme of. xii. yeres & more. So that vpon the daye of the translacyon of saynt Edwarde kynge and confessour next folowyng, they chase them

them a mayre of them selfe/ where by all the forsayd tyme theyr custos or gardeyn was appoynted by ꝑ kyng, or by suche as ꝑ kyng wold assygne. But ye shall vnderstande that this was not redemed without great summes of money. For after some writers the cytezyns payde for it to the kynge.iii M.marke.

Also this yere kyng Edwarde put out of his protectcyon certayne Aly-auntes, whiche were rychely benefy-

ced in Englande. The cause was for the sayd alyauntes wolde nat ayde ꝑ kynge with theyr goodes, as ꝑ other of his lande dyd / but purchased an inibicyon of pope Boniface the. viii, that they and theyr goodes shulde be fre from all the kynges dymes or taskys. Therfore ꝑ kyng ceased theyr temporaltyes, and suffered thē with theyr spyrytualtes tyl they were agreed with the kynge.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxviii.

Richarde Kelkham.

Henry waleys.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxix.

Anno. xxviii.

Thomas Bely.

IN this. xxvi. yere after Chrystmasse, certayne persones made a dyggyng and a serche in ꝑ churche of sayne Martynes le graūde in Lōdon, for certayne tresoure that there shulde be hydde, as it was reported of a gardiner. But theyr labour was in vayne, for nothynge was there founde. For the whiche dede ꝑ deane of Poules the seconde sonday of lent folowynge, denounced all thē accursed that were at that dede doynge, or consentynge to the same.

In this yere aboute ꝑ begynnyng of Aprell, the kynge rode towarde Scotlande/and appoynted his lordes with theyr companyes to mete with hym at yorke. where with hym met a great hoost, ꝑ whiche he ladde into Scotlande, and brent and spoyled the countre as he went/ and tarryed a season at Barwyke. And from thens he spedde hym in wynnynge of the townes and castelles as he went, tyll he came nere to a towne named Fawkyrk or Fankyrk. where vpon ꝑ day of mary Magdaleyne, or ꝑ. xxii. day of Julii, met with hym ꝑ power of Scotlande, and gaue vnto hym a sore fyght. But in the ende the victory fyll vnto the Englysshmē / so that of the Scottes were slayne in ꝑ felde as afftyrme dyuers writers, ouer the nombre of. xxxii. M. and of Englysshmen but barely. xxviii. persones. After whiche scomfyture the Scottes yelded to the kynge the more partye of the stronge holdes & castelles, that they tofore had holden agayne hym, and made vnto hym newe othe and promysse, and yelded them selfe vnto his grace and mercy. And whan he had set that countre in an ordre and rule/ he thā retourned into Englād, and so to Lōdon. where by ꝑ aduyce of some of his counsayll, he sodeynly dāpned certayn coynes of money called pollardes, crocardes, & rosaries/ & caused thē to be broughte to newe coynage to his great aduaūtage.

ye haue before herde in that other yere, how that a truce or a peas was stablysshed atwene the kynge and ꝑ kynge of Fraunce, for the space of. ii. yeres and more / the whiche fynally was concluded this yere, that kynge Edwarde for a peas to be had bytwene both regyons, shulde take vnto wyfe Margarete the suster of Philip le Beawe / then kynge of Fraūce.

The

The whyche Margarete whyle the kyng was in Scotlãde was brought vnto Douer, and so vnto Cauterbury/where the kyng spoused her in the moneth of Septembre as wytnesseth the Frenche cronycle/ and receyued of her in processe of tyme folo wyng two sonnes named Thomas and Edmunde, and a doughter named Margarete. The fyrste of the sonnes was surnamed Thomas of Brotherto, and the seconde Edmũde wodestoke.

Anno domini.M.CC.xcix.

Elys Russell.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.

Johñ Irmenter.

Anno .xxviii.

Henry Fryngeryth.

IN thys.xxviii.yere/ the kynge herynge of the vntrowth and rebellyon of the scottes, made the.iii. vyage into Scotlãde/and bare hym so knyghtly, that in shorte processe after hys commynge he subdued the more parte of the lande. And after he sped hym vnto the castell of Estryuelyn, wherin were many of the greate lordes of Scotlande/ and enuyroned the sayd castel with a strõg siege. But he laye there somwhat oftyme without wynnynge of any great aduauntage, or hurte doynge vnto the scottes. wherfore of polycy he caused to be made.ii. payre of galowes in ỹ syght of the castell/and after cõmaũded proclamacyons to be cryed, that yf the scottes by a certayn day wolde yelde that castell to the kynge, they shuld haue lyfe & lyme. And yf nat, but that he wanne it by strength / as many as were within the sayd castel, shuld be hãged vpon those gybettes, none astate nor persone to be excepted. In processe of tyme whan ỹ scottes had well dygested thys proclamacyon, and sawe the strength of theyr enemyes, & cõsydered theyr owne feblenes & lak of socoure/they assented fynally to yelde theym & theyr castell vnto the kyng / whyche shortly after was done. wherof kyng Edwarde beyng possessed, stuffed it with Englisshe knyghtes / & after toke a newe othe of the lordes and capptaynes the whyche he founde closed within that castell, of trewe & feythfull allegeaũce/ & after sufferyd them to go where theym lyked.

And whan wyllyam walys, whych as before is sayd pretended the rule & gouernaunce of Scotlande, harde tell that the stronge castell of Estryuelyne was yelden vnto kynge Edwarde / & that lordes and knyghtes therin founden in whyche he moche affyed, were sworne to the kynges allegeaunce: he feryd sore leste ỹ sayd company wolde betray hym, & bring hym vnto ỹ kyng. wherfore he with hys adherentes withdrewe hym into the mareyses & other daũgerous places, where he thoughte he was in suertye for pursuynge of the kynges hooste.

Then the poore commons of the lande presented theym by great companyes, and put theym holy in the kynges grace & mercy / so that the kynge thought then that he was in peasyble possessyon, or in a greate suertye of the lande. wherfore after he had caused to be sworn vnto hym the rulers of dyuers boroughes, cytyes, & townes, with other officers of the lande/ he retourned vnto Berwyke, & so into Englande, and lastly vnto westmynster.

In thys tyme & season that ỹ kyng was

was thus occupyed aboute his warres in Scotlande/the quene was cõueyed vnto London. Agayne whom the cytezyns vpon the nombre of .vi. C. rode i one lyuerey of rede & whyte, with the conysaunce of dyuers mysteryes broodered vpon theyr sleues, and receyued her .iiii. myles without the cytie/ & so conueyed her thorugh ỳ cytie, whiche then was garnysshed and behanged with tapettes & arras and other clothes of sylke and ryches in most goodly wyse, vnto westmynster, and there lodged.

whan the kynge this yere was retourned out of Scotlande/he caused shortly after an * inquysycyon to be made thorugh his lande / the whiche after was named Troilbastõn. This was made vpon al offycers, as mayres, shyreffes, baylyffes, archeters, & many other that had mysdoyne them in theyr sayd offyces, and had extorcioned or mystreated ỳ kynges lyege people otherwyse than was accordynge with the good ordre of theyr sayd offyces. By meane of whiche inquisicyon many were accused, and redemed theyr offyces by greuous synes, to the kynges great lucre and auauntage. Other meanes were fõdé also, as forfaytes again ỳ crowne/ the whiche broughte great summes of money to the kynges cofers, towarde the great charge of his warres ỳ he sustayned in wales, Fraũce, and Scotlande, as before is shewed. this yere also the kynge for cõplaynt that was brought vnto hym by mayster walter Langton byssshop of Chester, of syr Edwarde his eldest sone, for that he with Pyers of Gauestõn and other insolent persones had broken the sayde parke of the sayde byssshop, & ryottously destroyed ỳ game within it: he therfore imprysoned the sayd syr Edwarde his sone with his complyces. And in processe of tyme after, when the kynge was thorughly enformed of ỳ lasciuyous & wantõ dysposicyõs of the sayd Pyers of Gauestõn/for that he shulde nat enduce the forenamed syr Edwarde to be of lyke dyspospcyon: he therfore banysshed the sayd Pyer of Gauestõn out of Englande for euer. But after the dethe of kynge Edwarde ỳ banysshmente was soone denulled by Edward his sone/ wherof ensued moche harme and trouble, as after shalbe shewed.

* Inquisycis de Troyl Baston.

Anno domini. M.CCC. Anno dñi. M.CCCi.

Luke Hauerynge.

Elys Russell. Anno.xrix.

Rycharde Champeis.

IN this.xrix. yere of kynge Edwarde/dyed Edmunde erle of Cornewayle, the sonne of Rycharde somtyme erle of the sayd coũtre and kynge of Almayne, without yssue. wherfore that erledome retourned agayne to the crowne of Englande.

And in this yere the kynge gaue vnto syr Edwarde his sone the pryncypate of wales/and ioyned there vnto the sayd erledome of Cornewayle.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.i. Anno dñi. M.iii.C.ii.

Robert Caller.

Johñ Blount. Anno.xxr.

Peter Bolhayt.

In this

IN thys.xxx.yere/ the kyng held hys greate counsayll of parlyamente at hys cytye of Cauntrebury.

Anno domini.M.CCC.ii.

Hugh Pourt.

Johñ Blount.

Anno domini.M.CCC.iii.

Anno.xxxi.

Symon Parys.

Anno domini.xiii.C.iii.

wyllam Combmartyn.

Johñ Blount.

Anno domini.xiii.C.iiii.

Anno.xxxii.

Johñ de Burlozde.

Anno domini.M.CCC.iiii.

Rogyer Parys.

Johñ Blount.

Anno domini.M.CCC.v.

Anno.xxxiii.

Johñ Lyncolñ.

IN this.xxxiii.yere / wyllyã waleys that vnto the kyng hadde done so many dysplesures and treasons, agayne the trouth and allegeaunce of hys othe, as some deale bezore is shewed/was takē at the towne named saint Dompnyk in Scotlād, and sent vnto London, and there arraygnyd/and vpon the euyn of sayne Bartylmewe, drawen, hanged, and quartered/ and hys hedde set vppon London bzydge, and hys.iiii. quarters sent into Scotlande, & there hāged vpon the gates of certayne townes of the lāde. And at Mygheimas folowynge, the kynge holdynge hys parlyament at westmynster / thyder came out of Scotlande the bysshop of saint Andzewes, Robert le Bzuze, syz Symon de Fryssell erle of Dunbarre, syz Johñ of Cambzees erle of Atles, and syz Johñ Compyn with other / the whyche voluntaryly were swozne in pzesence of the kynge and hys lozdes, that they shuld be trewe vnto the kynge of Englande, & kepe the lande of Scotlande to hys vse agayne all other persones. And yf any rebell oz other malycyous persone disturbed the lāde, oz breke ỹ kynges peas/they shulde cause hym to be taken, and sent vnto the kynge/ wyth many other articles cōcernyng theyr allegeaunce, the whyche full falsely they brake and contraryed shortly after.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.v.

Raynold Doderell.

Johñ Blount.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.vi.

Anno.xxxiiii.

wyllyam Cansyn.

IN thys.xxxiiii.yere/ Robert le Bzuze contrary hys othe to kynge Edwarde befoze made, assembled the lozdes of Scotlande/and by the coūsayll of thabbot of Stone and other that fauoured hys vntrouthe, he sent vnto the pope than Clement the. v, foz a dyspensacyō of hys othe befoze made vnto kynge Edwarde/ and surmysed to hym that kyng Edwarde bered and greuyd the realme of Scotlande wzongfully. wherupō

the

the pope wrote vnto kyng Edwarde to leue of suche doynges.

And whyle thys matter was thus complayned on vnto the pope/ ỹ sayd Robert le Bruze made all the labour he myght vnto ỹ lordes of Scotlãde that he were admytted for kyng of ỹ regyon/so that vpon the daye of the conceptyon of our Lady, or the.viii. day of December, a great assemble of the lordes was made at the abbey of Stone. And vpõ the day folõwyng, by the meanes of the abbot of ỹ place many of the sayd lordes assented to ỹ wyl of the sayd Robert, except syr Johan Comyn onely. The whych in defence of hys trouthe and othe before swore vnto kyng Edwarde, many reasons & excuses made / and fynally sayd that he wolde nat false hys othe for no man. For thys the sayd syr Johan Comyn had great maugre of syr Robert le Bruze, & many of ỹ nobles of Scotlande. But he helde hys opynyon so fermely, that other began to take hys parte / that in that counsayll rose suche contrarite of opynyons and reasons, that the sayd cõsayll was dyssolued, and a newe sette at the graye freers of Dunstrye after Candelmas next ensuyng. At whych daye of assemble whenne the cause of theyr meting was by Robert le Bruze denoũced and shewed / & many of the great lordes of the land had graũted to hym theyr aydes & assistence: the fornamed syr Johñ Comyn & other sat styll and sayd no worde. whyche Robert le Bruze marked well, and to hym sayd: And you syr Johñ I trust for defence and weale of thys realme ye wyll nat be behynde. whereunto he answered, syr I wolde that ye and al my lordes here present knowe well, that for the weale and defence in the ryght of thys lande, I wolde stande with it to the vttermost of my power. But for I se that ye entẽde rather the subuercyon than the weale therof/ I wyll therfore ye know, I shal nother ayde you with counsayll nor yet with strength. Some other also there were whose names the auctoure mynded nat, whyche allowed the sayenge of the sayde syr Johñ/and in some wordes admytted hys sadde and trewe answere. For the whyche Roberte le Bruze was so amoued, that when syr Johñ Comyn with syr Rogyer hys brother was departed from the counsayll, and was comyn into the chyrch of the freers/Robert le Bruze hym folowyd and wounded to the deth with his swerde/and after slew syr Rogier hys brother, whyche wolde haue defended the foresayde syr Johñ. After whose deth lytell or no relyssee was made agayne the vntrewe meane & dedes of the sayd Robert le Bruze/so that he at saynte Johñs towne was crowned kynge shortly after. Shamfull murder.

It was nat longe after that kyng Edwarde was monysshed of all this vntrouth of the scottes / wherfore he prepared hym to wende thyder. And at Pentecoste he helde a great feaste of hys barony at westmynster / & durynge that feast made a greate nõbre of knyghtes ouer. CC. after mooste worpters. And that feast ended/ he set with a fayre company of knyghtes syr Aymer de Valaunce erle of Penbroke, and syr Henry Percy erle of Northumberlande into Scotlãde / & sped hym selfe wyth hys hoost soone after.

Victory agaynste the Scottes.

Than about the feast of the assũpcyon of our Lady/ the kyng faughte with the sayd Robert le Bruze and al the power of Scotlande, in a playne nere vnto saynt Johñs towne. And after lõge fyght and great slaughter of the scottes to ỹ nombre of.viii. M, he chased the scottes. In whyche chase syr Symon de Fryselyll erle of Dũbarre was take, with also the bysshop

pes of saint Andrews and of Bastoon, the abbot of Stoon or Scoon, & syr Johñ Chambres erle of Ates. which bysshoppes and abbot kyng Edward sent after vnto innocēt the. v. thā pope, with reporte of theyr iniury, & how they were taken armed in the felde to shede the blode of cristē men. And ỹ tē porall lordes he sent into Englāde, & so vnto the towre of Londō. And Robert le Bruse after thys scomfyture & losse of hys chyef krēdes, feryng lest ỹ scottes with suche Englysshmen as kyng Edward laft there wolde aryse agayne hym / all comfortles fledde vnto the kynge of Norwaye, & there abode durynge whyle kyng Edwarde lyued.

Bysshoppes prisoned.

whan thys noble prynce Edward had thus subdued ỹ scottes / he yelded thankes to god of hys victorye. And whē he was ascertayned of the auoydyng of Robert le Bruse, & had set ỹ lāde in a quiet & ordre / he retourned into Englande.

In thys passetyme were ỹ forenamed lordes of Scotlāde arepgned at Londō / & vpō the euyn of the Natyuyte of our Lady put to deth, & theyr heddes after set vpō Londō brydge. And shortly after was Johñ waleys brother vnto wyllyā waleys (whych for lyke treason was put to deth in ỹ precedyng yere) taken & hāged & quarterid. And some scottes that were taken as prysoners, remayned lōge in Englāde or they mpght acquite theyr fynaunce.

Anno dñi. xiii. C. vi.

Johñ Blount.

Anno dñi. xiii. C. vii.

Symon Bolet.

Anno. xxv.

Godfrey de la Condupt.

In thys. xxv. yere / ỹ kynge for certayne causes hym mouyng, retourned agayne into Scotlande. Or after some wryters he tarped at Berwyke, & helde hys Cryftmaffe & Caster in those partyes / & came nat into Englāde after he had scōfyted ỹ scottes. In the season of somer as he was retournyng into Englāde / a fyckenes toke hym so feruētly, ỹ he knew wele he shuld dye. wherfore he beyng at Burgthe vpō the sande beyonde Carleyll / called to hym syr Aymer de Valance erle of Pēbroke, syr Henry Percy erle of Northūberlande, syr Hēry Lacy erle of Lyncolñ, & syr Robert Clyfford barō / & caused them to beswore before hym, ỹ they shuld crowne hys sonne Edwarde in as conuenyent tyme after hys dethe as they mpght / and kepe the lande to hys bletyll he were crowned.

And that othe by the sayd barons takē / he called before hym hys sonne Edwarde, and charged hym with dyuers poyntes vpon the charge of his blessynge. Amonge the whyche one specyall was, ỹ he shuld neuer after that daye suffre Pyers of Gaueston to retourne into Englande / & so lyke a good crysten prynce dyed shortly after, vpon the day of the translatiō of saynt Thomas of Caunterbury, or ỹ vii. day of the moneth of Julii / whan he had regned. xxxiiii. yeres, vii. moneths & odde days / & after with great solēpnite cōueyed vnto westmynster, & there buryed in ỹ chapell of sait Edwarde vpō the southsyde, in a playne tombe of marble at the hed of hys father. This noble mā had. ii. wyues / by the whych as before is shewed in the xx. & xxvii. yeres of his regne, he had issue as in the sayd yeres appereth.

Of thys noble prince a versifyer made these. ii. verses folowynge.

Dum

Dū vixit rex, & valuit ſua magna poteſtas;
Franc latuit, pax magna fuit, regnauit honeſtas.

whych verſes maye be engliſſhed in thys manet folowynge.

¶ whyle lyued thys kyng/
By hys power all thynge
was in good plyght.
For gyle was hydde,
Great peace was kydde,
And honeſte had myghte.

In other verſifyer alſo of him made theſe verſes folowynge / and cauſed them to be hanged ouerthe place of hys ſepulture.

Mors eſt meſta nimis, magnos quia tangit in imis.
Maxima mors minimis, cōiungēs vltima primis.
Nullus in orbe fuit homo viuens, ne valet eſſe,
Qui non morte ruit, eſt hinc exit neceſſe.
Nobilis & fortis, tibi tu confidere noli.
Omnia ſunt mortis, ſibi ſubdit ſingula ſoli.
De mundi medio, magnum mors impia nouit.
Anglia pre tedio ſatis anxia plangere nouit.
Corruit Edwardus vario veneratus honore,
Rex nuper & nardus fragans virtutis odore,
Corde leopardus, intrepidus & abſq; pauore,
Ad rixam tardus, diſcretus & eucharis ore,
Viribus armorum quaſi gigas, ardua geſſit
Colla ſuperborum prudens per prelia preſſit,
Inter Flandrenſes fortuna ſibi bene fauit,
Vt quoſq; Wallenſes, & ſcotos ſubpedituit.
Rex bonus abſq; pare, ſtrenue ſua regna regebat,
Quod natura dare potuit bonitatis habebat,
Actio iuſticiæ, pax regni, ſanctio legis,
Et fuga nequicie, premunt preconia regis.
Gloria tota tuit, regem capit hæc modo foſſa.
Rex quandoq; fuit, nunc nil niſi pulvis & oſſa.
Filius ipſe dei, quem corde colebat et ore,
Gaudia donet ei, nullo permixto dolore.

The whych verſes, to the entent þ they ſhuld be had in mynde, & alſo þ the reder myght haue þ more deſyre to ouer rede thē / I haue therfore ſet them out in baladde royall, after my rude makynge as foloweth.

This ſorowfull deth whiche bryngeth great full lowe,
And mooſte & leeſt he ioyneth into one/
Thys man to whome hys pere was nat knowe,
Hath now ſubdued/ nat ſparyng hym alone,
whyche of all other thys worlde to ouergone,
None was to be ſpared/ of ſo great equytie
As he, if any, for nobleſſe ſpared ſhuld be.

Therfore thou noble or myghty, truſte none other grace,
But thou ſhalt pay to deth thy naturall dette
And lyke as he from thys worlde dyd chace
Thys myghty prynce, & from his frendes ſette,
For whome all Englande ſoude mourned and grette:
So ſhalt thou & other in dethes ſnare fall
None ſhall eſcape, to rekyn kyndes all

Edwarde with many & dyuers graces endowed/
And lyke as Nardus mooſt ſwteſt of odoure,
In ſmellynge paſſeth, and mooſt he is allowed,
Of all ſwete odours/ ſo dyd thys knyghtly floure,
By vertuous actes ſurmount in honoure,
All other princes/ whoſe herte was lybarde lyke,
And wit hout fere, were he bole or lyke.

This prynce was ſlowe to all maner of ſtryfe,
Diſcrete, & wyſe, and trewe of hys worde,
In armys a geaunt/ terme of all hys lyfe
Excellyng actes doyng by dynt of the ſworde,
Subdueyd the proude, of prudence he bare the horde,
Of Flaunders by fate he had great amyte
And Walſhe, and Scottes, by ſtrength ſubdued he

Thys good kyng perelleſſe, hys landes fermly gyded.
what nature myght gyue, he fayled it nothynge /
No parte of bounte frō hys was diſcided/
He was iuſtice and peace, & of law ſtablyſſhynge,
And chaſer of iniquyte by hys vertuous lyuyng,
In whome theſe graces with innumerable mo,
Fermly were roted, that deth hath tane vs fro.

That whylom was a kyng, now is but duſte & bone.
All glorie is fallen, & thys pytte kepeth the kynge.
But he that yeldeth all thyng by hys one,
The ſonne of god, to whome aboue all thynge
with herte and mouth he dyd due worſhyppyng/
That lorde of hys ioy perdurable to laſte,
Graunt hym ſorowleſſe euermore to taſte.

PHylyp the .iiii. of that name & ſonne of the thyrde Phylyp, whyche was ſurnamed Philyp le Beawe or Phylyp the kayſe/ begā hys reygne ouer ꝑ realme of Fraunce, in the yere of grace.M.CC.lxxvi, & the .viii. yere of ꝑ fyrſte Edwarde thā kyng of Englād. Thys for warre that he had with the duke of Gelderlande/arteryd greate impoſycyons thorugh hys lāde, both of the ſpyrytualtye and alſo of the tē poralty.

About the.iiii.yere.of hys reygne/ the prynce of Salerne, that long had ben holden in pryſon by the kynge of Aragon, was delyuered vpon a hard condycyon as foloweth, fyrſt that he ſhuld to the vttermooſt of hys power labour a concorde and peas betwene the chyrch of Rome and the Aragōs/ & that done to ſet a peas betwene the Frenche kyng & hym. And ouer that to paye in the ende of .xv. monethes nexte enſuynge, an .C.M. Florȳns for hys raunſome. A Florȳn is in value after ſterlyng money .ii.s.i.d, & ſo he ſhuld pay after ꝑ value ofengliſ ſhe money.xvii.M.l.v.C.li. And ꝑ after that day he ſhuld neuer bere armys agayne the kyng of Aragō. And yf within the terme of.iii. yeres nexte enſuyng he myght nat conclude the forſayd peas/ ſhe ſhuld then retourn and yelde hym ſelfe pryſoner as he before was. All whyche couenauntes fermely to be holden, he fyrſt made ſolempne othe/ & after delyuered to the kynge certayne hoſtages and ſo departed.

But thys compoſycyon or agrement was thoughte ſo vnreſonable vnto hys frendes, that he was counſayled by them that he ſhuld ſue vnto the pope for a dyſpenſacyon of hys othe/ & ꝑ had, they wolde helpe hym to recouer hys forſayd hoſtages. After whoſe coūſayl he ꝑ were folowyng made ſuche labour vnto Honorius ꝑ iiii. of ꝑ name thā pope, that he alonely optayned nat ſoluciō of hys othe, but alſo by hi he was declared kyng of Scicill/ & of pope Nycholas ꝑ. iiii ſucceſſoure of the forſayd Honorius after confermyd. Thys prynce of Salerne as ye before haue herde in ꝑ ſtorye of Phylyp the thyrde and .iii. and iiii. chappters of the ſame, was ſonne vnto Charles brother of ſaynte Lowys & kyng of Scicill. And the forenamed kynge of Aragō that hym vpon the aboueſayd cōdiciōs thus delyuered, was ſonne vnto Peter kyng of Aragō, whych as before in the ſtorye of ꝑ forſayd thyrd Philip, helde warre with hym & with ꝑ ſayd Charles. This prince of Salerne was alſo named Charles after the name of his father/ the whych after hys admyſſiō of ꝑ pope, was crowned kyng of Scicil in ꝑ cytie of Palermo ſoone after/ & defended the lāde knyghtly agayne the Aragōs, with helpe of the Frēche men by the terme of.v. yeres after. At whych termes ende Alphōs thā kyng of Aragō dyed/ & Jaques or James, to whome the forſayd Alphons had be take the rule of Scicill, & held warre with the forenamed Charles, was as brother & nexte heyre vnto the crowne of Aragō, admitted kynge of ꝑ regyon. After whych admiſſiō, he ſhortly after cōcluded a peas with ꝑ ſayde Charles/ & redelyuered vntd hym all ſuche hoſtages & pledges as hys brother Alphōs had before tyme of hym receyued, for keppyng of the former cōuencions. And for a more ſtablyſſhemēt of the ſame peas/ ꝑ ſayd James toke to wyfe one of the doughters of the ſayde Charles.

About the.vi.yere of the reygne of this Philip/ certayne ſowdyours of

Fraunce

Fraunce to the nombre of .xb. hondreth, whyche were sent by the procurement of pope Nycholas the fourth vnto Acrys, to fortifye that towne cõtrary the truce betwene the cristen & the Sowdan before concluded for ỳ terme of.iii. yeres / brake oute of the towne and castelles adiopnant, and spoyled and robbed suche Sarazyns as to that towne were dwelling nere and dyd vnto them all the sorowe & shame that they myght. wherof the Sowdan haupnge knowlege, was therwith greatly amoued. But yet or he wolde attẽpte any warre agayn the cristen/he sent vnto the captayne of the cytye of Acone, & wylled hym to sende vnto hym suche persones as had broken the peace, and done that iniurye to hys people. And yf he it refused, he sente them worde he shulde nat blynne tyll he had dystroyed thẽ/ as lately before he had done the inhabytauntes of the cytye of Tryple. But they sette hys manace at nought, for so moche as they thoughte them able to withstande hys malyce. Upon whych answere, the Sowdan made great prouysyon to besiege the sayd cytye.

In whyche passe tyme in Fraũce was borne of dame Johãne or Jane than quene of Fraunce, Lowys the kynges eldest sonne, that after his father was kyng of Fraunce.

when the Sowdan had prepared all thyng necessary for that iournay/ he sped hym wyth an innumerable multytude of Sarazyns towarde ỳ cytye of Acon or Acris. In whyche iournay he was taken with so greuous sykenesse, that he knew well he shulde shortly dye. wherfore he callynge before hym hys admyrailes/ charged a certayne of theym to kepe forthe they iourney towarde Acon, whyle the remenaunt retourned into Egypt / & there to create hys sonne Sowdan. After whyche creacyon he charged them that they shulde cause hys sayde sonne to haste hym vnto ỳ sayd siege/& soone after dyed.

Then all thynges was ordeyned as he before had deuysed/ and ỳ cytie was besegyd with a stronge hoost of Sarazyns, the whyche assauted yt cruelly by the space of.vi. wekes. In whyche season the cristen defended it so manfully, that the Sarazyns myght therof gette none aduãtage At the ende of thys.vi. wekes, came the ponge Sowdan wyth a freshe hoost/the whyche made such a dynne and noyse wyth they tabours & horns and other mynstrelsy that they at those dayes vsed, that it was hydous & ferefull to here. And after they had rested theym.ii. dayes, and prepared for the rygpnge of they ordenaunce/they assauted the cytye xiiii.dayes contynually. In whyche season moche people was slayne vpõ bothe partyes/but the more nombre of the cytye. For by the vyolence of they ordenaunce they ouer threwe moche housynge within the cytye/ where with moche people were oppressed and slayne aswell mã as woman & chylde.

At the ende of thys .xiiii. dayes, when the rulers of the cytye had seen the harme that they had receyued by thys syers and cruell assaute/ aswell in losse of they sowdyours, as of the great enpeyrynge of they wallys & other defences of they cytye / they sore rydde sore, for ỳ whych they of one assẽt cõdyssẽded & sent soone after by they shyppes, a great nõbre of olde men & womẽ & chyldren vnapt for ỳ warre, with ỳ reliques & treasours of ỳ cytie into Sicill. It was nat lõge after or ỳ Sarazyns made a newe assaute ỳ cõtinued.iiii.dayes/by meane wherof the cytye was sore defaced. Then the kyng of Cyprys, whych at ỳ day was

there as one of the chyef rulers in the cytye, layned hym syke. wherfore in ỹ nyght folowyng desyryng a knyght of the cytye to kepe hys watche/ he cowardly & shamefully with. iiii. M. mẽ toke shipping & sayled thens/ leuyng the cytye in all daunger. Uppon the morowe whan the certaynte of thys was knowẽ/ the patryarke of Hierusalem with other there left to the nõbre of. vii. M. or therupõ, sent vnto ỹ Sowdã for a trewce for. ii. moneths But none they myght purchase/ & therfore they defendyd them in ỹ best maner they myght. But shortly after for lak of defẽce vpon the wallys, the Sarazyns fylled the dykes/ also soon after vpõ the. xv. day of May pforce entred in the cytye, & slewe such people therin as they there foũde. Than the Sowdan gaue the pray of ỹ cytie vnto hys knyghtes/ & after spoylyng of the same, caused the wallys & toures to be rased vnto the groũde/ & the houses, aswell churches, temples, & all other, were clerely brẽt & distroyed And thus was ỹ noble cytie of Acris, whych is also called Tholomayda, subuerted/ the whyche was the chyef porte or hauyn towne for cristẽ mẽ to lande at, when any hoste or power of them shuld entre into the holy lãde/ & had cõtynued for the more partye in the possessiõ of cristẽ mẽ, by the terme of. C. ix. yeres and aboue.

The cyty of Acris stroyd

IN the. vii. yere of thys kynge Philyp/ the erle of Armenake was accused of certayne poyntes of treason, by syr Raymonde Barnade erle of Foys. where vpon, a day of batayll betwene these. ii. erles was appoynted to be foughten at Gysours, in the kynges presence and of hys barony. But after by the great instaũce & laboure made by syr Robert erle of Artoys, ỹ batayll was forbone.

In the. viii. yere of hys reygne, he gadered a great taske of his cõmõs. And in the yere forsayde, at a feaste holden at Cõpeyne, he made aboue vi. score knyghtes.

And in the. x. yere/ ỹ glorious confessoure saynt Lowys, grandfather vnto this Philip, was the day folowynge saynt Bartylmew the apostle, translated into a ryche shryne in the monastery of saynt Denys/ ỹ whych the yere before of Bonyface the. viii. thã pope, for hys great myracles was wrytten in the Cathologe or nombre of sayntes.

In the. xi. yere of hys reygne/ syr Robert of Artoys entred the towne of saynt Omers, & toke therin many Burgonions & other as prysoners/ & soone after mette wyth Guy duke of Burgoyne at a towne called Furnes where betwene theym was foughten a stronge fyghte, and many men slayne vppon eyther syde. But lastly the victorye fyll to syr Robert of Artoys/ so that he put the duke to flight & toke there prysoners Henry erle of Dabencourt, & syr Guyllyam de Uplers, & other. After whyche victorye by hym thus opteyned/ ỹ sayd towne of Furnes was polden vnto hym, & a greate parte of the vale of Cassyle.

In thys yere also the warre betwene thys kynge Philyp and Edwarde the fyrste than kynge of Englande, was put in vre, for so moche as the sayde Edwarde toke partye wyth the sayde duke or erle of Flaundres/ as it is at length sette out in the xxiii. xxiiii. xxvi. yeres of the sayde Edwarde, wherfore here nowe I passe it ouer.

In the. xiii. yere of thys Philyp, whã the trewce before sette betwene kyng Edwarde & hym and the erle of Flaũdres was expired/ he sẽt syr Charles de Ualoys his brother with great power into Flaũdres, ỹ whych made sharpe warre vppon the Flemynges,

and

and toke from theym the townes of Douay and Bethune / & after yode towarde the haué towne of Dam or Dan / where he was encoũtred of Robert sonne vnto ỳ erle, where atwene them was foughten a cruell fyght, to the great scathe of bothe partyes / for eyther departed from other without great auaunte or bost. Thã the sayd Robert with his company drewe towarde Gaunt / and the sayd syr Charles after the departynge of the sayde Robert, layd hys syege vnto the forsayd towne of Dãme.

In this passe tyme the archebysshop of Orleaunce was slayne by a knyghte called syr Gautier / for somoch as the sayd bysshop, as ỳ fame than went, had dyshonysshed a mayden and doughter of ỳ sayd syr Gautier. And for hym was chosen to that dygnyte mayster Barthãde doctour of diuinyte.

Than to retourne where we lafte of the forsayd warre of Flaundres / the sayd syr Charles so sharpely assauted the towne of Dam, ỳ in shorte proces after it was poldẽ vnto hym. And than he prepared hym to lay his syege aboute the forenamed towne of Gaunt. wherof whan Guy erle of Flaunders was ware, consyderynge he myght nat shortly be ayded of the kynge of Englande, whiche thã warred vpon the Scottes, as i the.xxvii. yere of Edwarde the fyrst it doth appere / he than made meanes vnto the sayd syr Charles de Ualoys, that he wolde be a meane to the kynge, that he myght be accepted vnto his grace and mercy. So that by his meanes, the sayde syr Guy with Roberte his sonne, vpon certayne conuencyons in shorte tyme after was reconcyled vnto the Frenche kynge. But whyle these conuencyõs were perfourmed / the sayde erle with his sonne Robert were kepte in a lyberall prysons. And the countye of Flaundres by the assygment of the kynge, for the whyle was committed vnto the rule of Jaques de sayne Paule knyghte. The whiche entreated ỳ cõmunes of that lãde sternly, & oppressed thẽ with imposycyons & tasses / in so moche ỳ in ỳ.xvi. yere of the kynge, a certayne of ỳ towne of Courtray in Flaundres after certayn skyrmysshes & loueday made, the cõmune people in a nyghte slewe ỳ forsayd syr Jaques, and as many Frẽchmẽ as they myght fynde within the towne. After whiche murder was knowen in Brugys and in other townes of Flaũdres / anone by yll coũsayll they also chased al suche Frẽchemẽ as by ỳ forsayde Jaques were put in dyuers offyces within ỳ sayd townes / & made them stroge to make defence agayne ỳ Frẽch kyng.

wherof whã ỳ Frẽche kynge was ascertayned / he sente thyder with a stronge companye, the erle of sayne Poule, the erle of Boleygne, syr Robert erle of Artoys, & Robert ỳ sonne of the erle of Cleremount, with dyuers other noble mẽ of Fraũce. The whiche sped thẽ towarde Brugys / & in ỳ playnes atwene Courtray and Brugys pyght there paulyons and tentes. For they myght not come no nere vnto Brugys, for so moche as ỳ Flemynges had brokẽ ỳ brydge ouer the ryuer ỳ there rũneth / the whiche lastly nat without great slaughter of mẽ of both partyes was by ỳ Frẽche mẽ reedified & made / so ỳ the Frẽche hoste passed ỳ ryuer, & layde they for denaunce nere to ỳ towne of Brugys. But the Flemynges had so garnysshed they towne with defence of sowdyours, that they fered the Frenche men lytell or nothynge. And of one thynge they bare theym the bolder, for soo moche as they hadde within the towne one of the sonnes of Guy they erle, the whiche before was

scaped from ꝑ frēche kynges pryſō.

Thus the Frenchemen lyenge before the towne/many frayes and bykerynges were made atwene the Flemynges and them, to theyr both paynes. Laſtly a day of batayll by ꝑ prouocacyon and dyſpyteous wordes of the Frenchmē was appoynted to be holden atwene them, vpon the wednyſday beynge than the. vii. day of ꝑ moneth of Julii. At whiche daye the Flemynges beynge confeſſed and reconciled to god, as they ſhulde forthwith haue depted out of this worlde/ in ſober wyſe, groūdynge them vpon a ryghtfull and good quarel, that day to lyue and dye for the defence & ryght of theyr countre, yſſued out of ꝑ town in good ordre/ berynge before them certayne relyques of ſayntes, in the whiche they had great truſte & aſſyance.

Anone as the nobles of Fraunce beheelde the countenaūce of theyr enemyes, dyſdaynynge them as bylaynes & artyſycers/truſtynge ſo moche in theyr strēgthes, that they thought ſhortly to ouer ryde theym, & bere thē downe with ſtrēgthe of theyr horſes/ and without ordre ran with great ire vpon theyr enemyes, thynkynge to haue oppreſſed them at ꝑ fyrſt bȝōte. But the Flemynges with theyr arbalaſters and theyr longe mareys pykes ſet aſlope before them/ wounded ſo theyr horſes, that they lay tumbelynge one in the others necke/ſo that they were the letters of the other whiche were on fote, that they myght not exercyſe theyr feat of armes. And alſo the ſhotte that was ſhotte on the Frenche partye dyd aſmoche harme to thoſe horſe mē as it dyd vnto theyr enemyes. So that in ſhorte whyle ꝑ felde was all ſpred with ſlayne horſes and clene armed men. wherof ſyr Roberte Erle of Artoys beyng ware and ſeynge theſe noble ſperes thus ſlayne vpon the felde/ auaūced hym with his company, and ſlewe & woūded of the Fleminges great nombre, ſo ꝑ they fledde before hym as ſheepe before the wolfe/ & put further backe that hooſt of Flemynges, than they by the fyrſt metyng had auaūced the ſelf. And yf ayde of Guy de Namour ſone vnto the erle of Flaunders, had nat the ſoner been comyn vnto them/ the ſayde erle of Artoys had that day wonne the renowne of the felde. Thā the ſayd Guy with a freſſhe compapany of Almaynes and other bolde ſowdyours corageouſly entred the felde, and bete downe ꝑ Frenchemen egerly. Than was the medle newe begon, in ſo feruent wyſe that men & horſe fyll downe to the grounde wonderfly thycke. And euer the erle of Artoys where ſo euer he wente he ſlewe moche people before hym. But the Flemynges kept them ſo hole togyder, ꝑ he myght neuer dyſſeuer them/ and ſlewe of the nobles of Fraunce great plentye. whiche mortalite thus contynuynge, ꝑ ſtremes of blode ran wonders to beholde. And alway the Frenche partye weked more & more. Laſtly the erles of ſaynt Poule and of Boleyn, with Robert the ſonne of this erle of Cleremounte, and other with the nombre of. ii. M. horſemen, ſeynge the rage and woodnes of the Flemynges, whiche ſo cruelly ſlewe and bet downe the Frenche men/ ſettynge a parte all honour and knyghthode, ſhamefully fled out of the feld/ leuyng the erle of Artoys in ꝑ myddel of his enemyes, whiche lyke vnto the lyon rampaunte contynued in one, ſleynge & kyllynge the Flemynges without mercy or pyte. But the Flemynges lyke wood tygres were ſo enraged vpon the Frenchemen, ꝑ they wolde neuer leue them, tyll they by pure force draue them into theyr tentes/ where they ſlewe of theym a

great

a great multytude.

In this batayll were slayne the forelayd erle of Artoys, Godfray de Braban nere kynnesman to the sayd erle & lorde of wyrson, Adam the erle of Dabenmale, Johñ the sonne of ỹ erle of Henaut, Rauf de Neell cõstable of Fraunce, Guy his brother marshal of the hoste, Renolde de Try, Elmer chamberlayne of Cancaruple, Jaques ỹ sonne of Godfrey de Braban, Pyers Floot, & Johan Braillis maister of ỹ arbalasters knyghtes, & many mo mẽ of name to the nombre of .CC. and aboue / besyde esquyers and other men of lower degrees, as yomen, gromes, pages, to the nõbre of .xii.M. The whiche after this victorye the Flemynges dyspoyled, and suffred the carcyns of them to lye in ỹ feilde, that all wylde bestes & fowles myght them perysshe and deuoure.

Whan this yonge knyght syr Guy hadde thus opteyned victorye of the Frenchmen, he reioyced not a lytle/ and soone therafter layde syege vnto the Ile or a castell soo named, and gat it also were it by trecheri or other wyse. Then the townes of Iper, of Gaunt, of Douaye, and diuers other of that countre, obeyed to hym / and cõdyscended and agreed to take partye eyther of them with other agayne the Frenche kynge.

Than kynge Philyp herynge of the great dysconfyture of his men/ made countenaunce of mournynge, and specyally for his true knyght the erle of Artoys.

Kynge Philyp then after for to reuenge the forelayd displeasure to hym doone by ỹ Flemynges/ assembled by our lady day Assumpsion nere ensuynge, an excedynge nombre of men of armes / entendynge to haue entred Flaundres, & vtterly to haue destroyed a great parte of that countre/ & so drewe towarde his enemyes, so that he pyght ỹ tẽtes of his vanward within .ii. myles of his enemyes/ and there lay to his excedynge charge, cõsiderynge the great multytude of his hoost by all ỹ moneth of Septẽbre. Of ỹ nõbre of this hoost I haue doubte to wryte. For mayster Gagwyn sayth, ỹ nõbre was so great ỹ it may nat be byleued/ & ỹ sheweth wel by ỹ expresseinẽt of ỹ nõbre made by ỹ Frenche cronycle. For he sayth they were an hũdreth tyme an. C. M, & .xl. tymes .xl. M. By whiche sayeng somdele appereth, how ỹ Frenchmẽ cã make mensoũge. But how it was for all this great & excedynge nõbre of Frẽchmẽ / ỹ Flemynges laye styll vnhurte or assawted. And fynally vpon a great substancyall cause, as ye after shal here, this great hoste was dissolued or returned euery mã to his awne/ & kynge Philyp with smal honour into Fraũce/ wherof ỹ Frẽchmẽ sayth ỹ occasion or cause was thus.

Kynge Edward of Englãde whiche vnto ỹ Flemynges bare great affeccion, cõsideryng ỹ great daunger they were in, and he at ỹ tyme myght nat thẽ ayde nor socour / of a policy cast in his mynde / & with an heuy or morynge coũtenaũce, shewed vnto ỹ quene & syster vnto kyng Philyp, ỹ he was very heuy & sorowfull for his brother & hers ỹ kyng of Fraũce. wherof, whẽ & wherfore she had frayned the cause/ he answered & sayde ỹ he had certayne knowlege ỹ at suche tyme as the Flemynges & he shulde mete in batayle that his lordes & cõpany shulde leaue hym amonge his enemyes/ for he was solde vnto them before hande. wherof whan ỹ quene was thus ascertayned / anone in all possible hast she sent letters & messangers vnto the Frenche kynge, counsaylynge hym to be well ware of that treason and daunger. To the whiche he gyuynge credence / shortely after

Kynge Edward no-table policy

after sente frome hym the sayd great company of people, and he with a certayne as aboue is sayd retourned into Fraunce.

After whyche departynge, the Flemynges were so bolde, ꝑ forthe wyth they entred into Pycardy & the countre of Artoys, and spoyled & brent dyuers townes of the same. But in the yere folowyng as testyfyeth the sayd frēche cronicle / ꝑ Flemynges of Bruges were foughten with of Otthon than duke of Burgoyn, to whome by reason of marryage the frenche kyng had gyuen the erledome of Artoys / & he of them slewe with the ayde of the Frenchemen. xb. thousande.

In thys .xvii. yere about mydsomer / Philyp an other sonne of the erle of Flaundres, whyche had by a certayn terme passed ben in the court of Charles de Valoys, & by hym put in truste to receyue certayne summes of money in Sicill to ꝑ vse of pope Bonyface the. viii, sodaynely departed / and with a stronge company of Almaynes came into Flaundres, to ayde & assiste his brother. whome the Flemynges or Brabanders receyued with great ioy / & by the comforte of hym inuaded the borders & landes of the frenche kyng / & boldly assaulted the castell of saynt Omers. But for they there gat none aduauntage, but loste many of theyr men / they forsoke that & rode vnto a towne belonging to the frēche kyng called Thorouan Morayne / the whyche in processe they wanne and spoyled. About thys tyme dyed Bonyface the. viii. of that name than pope, a man of euyll name and fame / the whyche by hys trechery caused hys predecessour Celestyne the. v. that was a good & holy man, to resygne and leue his papacie And by thys meane, when thys sayd Celestyne had sytte in Peters chayre a shorte tyme / this Bonyface espyeng hys innocency, whyche was all sette to the seruice of god, as he before had vsed hym i ledyng of an ankers lyfe, thoughte howe he myght bryng hym in myude to resigne hys hyghe office to him. And it to bring about he fyrst made hym frendes secretely / & after hyred one of the cubyclers of ꝑ pope, that he in the dede nyght shuld specke in a rede, and saye, Celestyne yf thou wylt be saued & be partyner of blysse renounce thys pōpe of the worlde, & serue me as thou before dyd. Or after the latyn storye, yf Celestynus wyl be saued / let hym openly the papall dygnyte resygne. whych voyce this ghostly mā sundry tymes heryng, thought verily it had ben a deuyne mocyon. wherfore in all that he myghte, he laboured to be dyscharged / so that at ꝑ ende of. v. monethes he resigned. And shortly after was the foresayd Bonyface admytted. The whyche nat beynge contented with hys synystre optenyng of thys hygh dygnyte, but ꝑ he for fere lest ꝑ sayd Celestyne shuld repent hym of hys insolent dede, and by strengthe of some prynces be restored agayne to hys former dygnite / he therfore wolde nat suffre the sayd Celestine to retourne to wildernes there to contynewe hys olde accustomed lyfe, but helde hym in a castell as prysoner / where for sorowe and euyll kepynge he dyed shortly after.

For the whyche thys Bonyface was nat vnpunysshed. For ouer the sorow & trouble that he durynge the terme of hys papacy suffred, whyche was nat a lyteil / in the ende of. viii. yeres he was taken by strēgth and put in prysō / where so miserably & cruelly he was entreated, that or he dyed, what for madnesse or for hunger, he ete hys owne handes / & so in mysery ended hys lyfe within. xxiiii. dayes of hys imprysonement.

Boniface the viii. pope

Than to retourne where I last, & to shewe

to shewe you ferther of the warre atwene Fraũce & Flaundres / trouth it is that the Frēche men with ꝑ ayde of the Henaudours, made sondry & many tymes assautes vpon the Flempynges. In the whiche dyuers chañces of ꝑ warre fyll/so that ꝑ that one had the better at one tyme, that other had as moche aduauntage the nexte tyme. For reformacyon of whiche warre/syr Guy with his sone before-named erle of Flaundres, that by all this season had cõtynued in ꝑ Frēche kynges pryson, were suffred to go in to Flaundres / vpon condycyon that yf they myght pacyfye the countre to the kynges pleasure, that then they shulde styll enioye theyr lyberte and go at large/or els to retourne againe as prysoners. The whiche erle with his sayd sonne dyd what they cowde to reconcyle the sayde Flempynges. But al theyr trauayle was in vayne/ so that by ꝑ day to them appoynted, they retourned to theyr former prysõ. wherfore the kynge in the. xviii. yere of his regne, assembled a mesurable hoste of people. In the whiche were accompted for noble capytaynes vnder the kynge, syr Charles de Valoys brother to the kyng, Lewys erle of Eurour that othe brother to ꝑ kyng, Guy erle of saint Paule, Johñ erle of Dampmartyn. whiche noble men with many other mette with the kyng at a towne called Mount. And whē they had a season rested there/by meane of messangers goyng atwene kynge Phylyp and the Flempynges, a day of batayll was atwene them appoynted, to be foughten vppon the. xvi. daye of Auguste in ꝑ aboue sayd. xviii. yere. At whiche day ꝑ Flempynges of Brugys and ꝑ other townes set forthe theyr ordenaunce, and made them a stronge felde / and enbatayled them in suche wyse, that the Frenchemen made daũgerous to set vpon them. Then meanes of treatye were offered / so that the daye passed without stroke strykynge.

But in the euenynge, the Flempynges thynkynge to take auauntage vpon theyr enemyes, came so sodenly vpon the Frenchmen, that hardly the kynge myght be armed, or they had slayne two men within his tent. wherfore hasty spede was made, so that the kynge was goten to horsbacke/and forthwith by his marcyall power made waye thorough his enemyes, and slewe them without mercy. And by the knyghtly example of hym/ the remenaunt of his lordes quytte them so honorably, that the poore Flempynges were layde in the feld bathynge in theyr owne blode to a great nombre/and lastly cõstrayned to flee shamefully, and to leue theyr ordenaũce behynde them. And yf nyght hadde nat fallen on / it is to deme that many mo of them shulde haue ben slayne / consyderynge the great fyersnesse of theyr enemyes, and the exceedyng rancour of malyce that the Frenchmen to them bare. But yet the Frenchemen escaped not without losse of some noble men. For in that batayll was slayne the erle of Ancetre, and dyuers other knyghtes and men of fame. After whiche scomfyture and chasynge of the Flempynges/the kynge for darknesse was fet vnto his tentes with torche lyghte. where after he hadde buried the dede bodyes slayne in that felde, and also garnysshedde some stronge castelles with his knyghtes, to the ende that the Flempynges shulde nat breke to-ferre abrode / knowynge that with his enemyes he shulde that yere haue no mo playne batayles, he retourned agayne into Fraunce.

In ꝑ. xix. yere of kyng Phylyp/ by meanes of Enguerrã a mã in especyall

in especyall fauoure with the kynge, a peas betwene Fraunce and Flaun dzes was concluded, the whych as ye shal after here dured but shozt whyle Nat withstandynge by the reason of thys peas, Robert de Bethune and wyllyam hys bzother / whyche by all thys seasó with theyz father syz Sup erie of Flaundzes had contynued in pleasaunt oz esy pzyson, were now de lyuered. But the father was dede in the moneth of Febzuary befoze the có clusyon of thys peas passed / & by lice ce of the French kyng carped to War quet a town in Flaundzes, and there buryed.

Heygthyng of rente.

In the.xx. yere of thys kyng Phil lip / a great dyssencyon & stryfe fylle betwene the ryche mẽ oz gouernours of Parys, & ꝑ compnaltie of the same foz heythyng of ꝑ rent of dyuers hou ses aparteynyg to ꝑ sayd comnaltie. wherfoze the sayd comons secretely accõpanyed them in greate nombze / and pode vnto the house of Stephan Barbet that was accused to be occa syoner of that dede, & spoyled it. And after that they pode to a maner of his in the counntre named Courtile Bar bet, and it in lykemaner spoyled / and that done set it in fyze, and bzent it. And the ozcharde of the same, whych was passynge commodious and plea saunt / they defaced and vtterly dy stroyed.

And nat yet with thys beyng con tent / they retourned agayne vnto the house of the sayde Stephan / and all such wynes as were within hys sel lers, dzanke of them tyll they were wood dzunke. And what they mpght nat in that wyse deuoure / they bette out the heddes and let the wyne rõne in the strete. And all fozmys, stolys, & other vtensillis in the house, by them foundyn all to bzake in peces / and of federbeddes rypped ꝑ tykys, & helde theym in the wynde that the fetherꝭ mpght be blowyn a way and lost foz euer / and vnrypped the house in dy uers places, that the rayne and other wederyng mpghte entre, as than fyll about ꝑ tyme soone after Crystmas. And thus contynuyng in theyz fury and rage / after the dyspoplynge and defasyng of these fozsayd houses, as men nat knowynge what they than dyd / pode streyght in greate nombze vnto the place of the templers there nere, where at that season kyng Phi lyp with a certayn of hys barõs was than lodged / & there kept the entrees of that place in suche wyse, that no man mpghte yssue noz entre but at theyz pleasures / and suche metes as were bzought thyder to the kynges vse and hys housholde, they cast it in the myze and fylth of the strete. The kyng and his lozdes seynge the rage of thys rude and vnresonable people sent vnto them the pzouost of ꝑ cytie with some of hys lozdes / the whyche gaue vnto them so pleasaunt & com foztable wozdes, that at length he re tourned theym in peasyble maner to theyz houses. But vpon the mozowe folowynge / the kyng nat fozgettyng thys rage and ryot of the people, cõ maunded many of the sayde comons to be attached, and to be sent vnto dy uers pzysons.

And vpon Candelmasse euyn folo wyng, foz the same ryot. xx viii. of thé were hanged at. iiii. entrees of ꝑ cytie of Parys / ꝑ is to say. viii. at Louure, viii. towarde the partyes of sayne An toyne. viii. at a place toward the roule & other. viii. in a place towarde nostre Dame oz notyz Dame. whych execu cyon caused the cominaltye of ꝑ cytie to lyue longe after in great fere.

In the. xxi. yere of the reygne of kyng Philip, whyche maketh thye re of our lozde. xiii. C. and. vii. all be it that other wzyters allyzmeth it to be in the yere of grace. xiii. C. and. xi.

all the

all the templers in Fraunce were destroyed, & theyr goodes & possessions throughe cristendom gyuē (by auctorite of a synode kept by Clement the v. than pope at the cytye of Narbon in Fraunce) vnto ye relygyō of knyghtes of sayncte Johñ Baptyst. Thys ordre of templers was destroyed for theyr detestable heresy, whereof they were cōuycte in .x. artycles expressed in the frenche cronycle at length/which here I passe ouer for lengthe of the matter, & also for the rehersall therof is nat scryptefull to all herers or readers.

In the .xviii. yere of his regyn/this kyng Philippe, for almoche as he by some of the electours of the Empyre was chosen Emperoure/ he therfore with a great army sped hym toward Rome, and passed throughe Almayne tyll he came vnto the duchye of Quarantayne. Of whyche duchye the people receyued hym with all honoure. And after he passed the mountaynes and so came vnto Padua/where also he was ioyously receyued where he tarienge a season, receyued from Mylayne ambassadours/ the whyche offered to hym that cytye with all conuenable seruyce. And after hys people was to hym more plenarli assembled he than departed from Padua & rode vnto Mylayne. whome the lordes of the cytye met vpon the waye, & conueyed hym vnto the mayster paleys of the cytye, and there lodged hym/& within fewe days after brought hym with great solempnyte vnto the cathedrall churche, and there crowned hym kyng of Lōbardy & called hym Augustus.

Thā he departed from Mylayn, and spedde hym to the cytye of Cremoyne, & layd siege to the same. But it was to hym shortly yolde. Fro thēs he passed to ye cyte of Brelle, where he was holde out a lōge whyle. Thyder to hys ayde came many soudyours of ye towne of Pyze/ & made there many sharpe assautes. In whych assautes Guyde Namoure ye was marshal of the kynges hoost dyed, of hurtes ye he there toke. In peelle of tyme shorte ly folowing, ye rulers of Brles offered meanes of treaty. But ye kyng was so annoyed with ye dethe of hys marshall, ye he wolde graūt to the no cōdycional peas/but to stāde at his grace & mercy. wherfore they fynally seyng no better meane, offered vnto hym ye keys of the cytye.

Thā kyng Philip for othe before made, or for some other excellēcy/caused anone ye part of the towne dyche fore agayn hys pauilio to be fylled/& ye walle of ye cytye, with as many houses as stode betwene the walle & the mayster palays of the cytye to be throwyn downe/ ye he with hys hoost myght entre ye streyght waye, & so to go or ryde vnto the sayd palays. And whē all thyng was ordered to hys deuyse, he entred by ye way the cytye of Cremō, & therin tarved a certayn season/& toke hys counsayll with ye Gebellynys, how he myghte the cytye of Rome wynne. And whā he had fynyshed ye counsayl/he toke certayn hostages of thys cytye of Cremō, ye whych he sēt vnto Pyze to be kept/ & so sped hym toward Rome, & gettyng many cyties & other holdes by ye way/lastly he came vnto ye cytie named Bowlonia Grasse/whyther cam vnto hi a cardynall or legate sent frō pope Clemēt the .v., to treate of ye state of ye empyre.

But how it was the cōtynuaūce or fyne of thys iournay tourned nat to the honour & pleasure of the frēchmē For after the metyng of the kynge & thys legate, ye matter is no more touched. For the frēch kyng was agayn in Fraūce, or the legate myght bryng vnto hym any ans were frō the pope. Also it is the more suspect, for of this

matter speketh nothyng mayster Robert Gagwyne, whyche leueth nothynge out of hys boke ỹ may sounde to the auaunceme̅t of the French nacyon. In the.xxiiii. yere of the reygne of kyng Philip/was brent in dyuers places of Fraunce vpon.xx. templers for the heresy before rehersed.

And in the yere folowynge, a new rebellyon began in Flaunders. Of the whyche Robert erle of Flaũders was accused/but he acquyt hym self, & after Guy hys sonne was attached for the same and sent to pryson. Fro the whych he after escaped, for fere of prose to haue ben tustyfyed agayne hym/& retourned vnto Gaunt. where he was defẽded fro hys aduersaries/ so that the Holanders & Brabãders helde theyr partye agaynst the Frẽch kyng, & also agayne theyr owne erle/ whych so contynued without any notary batayll, tyll the.xxvi. yere of the reygne of kyng Philip. In the which yere, vpon the euyn of mary Magdaleyn at the towne of Courtray in Brabande/was by the bysshops and other spyrituall men of Fraunce and Flaundres a peace cõcluded. wherof the condycyons were, ỹ the Flemynges shuld haue pardõ & forgyuenesse of all theyr former rebellyon, as well agayne the kynge as theyr naturall duke. And for thys they shuld paye a certayne summe of syluer, wherof the summe is nat expressed/& ouer that they shulde at theyr proper costes & expenses, bete downe certayne stregthes & holdes as the Frẽche kynges Depute wolde to them assygne/begynnynge at Gaunt, & so to Bruges, & other places/ & more ouer they shulde yelde vnto Robert theyr erle ỹ castell of Courtray, with all abylemẽtes of warre & other necessaries therũto belongyng. Al whych cõdicions to obserue, they shuld deliuer vnto ỹ kyng of Fraũce good hostages. But al this came to small effect, as after shal appere.

In the.xxvii. yere of thys Philipp/Jacob the mayster of ỹ templers, with an other greate ruler of ỹ sayd order whych was named Visytour of the same, after longe prysonment were brent at Parys.

And in the same yere kynge Philipp arrered a tare thorugh Fraunce, whyche before that dayes was neuer herde nor spoken of. Thys was so greuous, that al Normãdy, Picardy & Champeygne, allied them togyder & vtterly denayde the paymẽt therof. wherof herynge other countrees, toke the same oppynyon/ so that a greate rumour & murmour was reysed thorugh out ỹ realme of Fraũce, in such wyse that the kyng for pacyfyeng of the people was fayne to repeale the sayd tare.

In the.xxviii. yere of the reygne of kyng Philip, in ỹ weke of Easter/the iii. wyfes of the.iii. sonnes of kynge Philip, that is to say Margarete the wyfe of Lowys hys eldest sonne and kyng of Nauerne, Johanne or Jone the wyf of hys seconde sonne Philip erle of Poytyers, and Blaunche the wyfe of hys thyrde sonne Charles & erle of Marches, were accused of spouse brekyng/ and sent fro a place of nunnes where they lay, and conueyed vnto more streyghter keppyng/ ỹ whych.iii. wyfes were al.iii. doughters vnto the duke of Burgoyn. Thã vppon strayte examynacyon made, Margaret and Johanne were gylty of that crymne foũd. wherfore they were sent vnto the castell of Gaylard in Normãdy, there to be kept as prysoners terme of theyr lyues. And the forenamed Blanche, for so moche as she was foundẽ gylties/ was agayn restored vnto her lorde Charles erle of the Marches.

And in shorte tyme after, the two paramours

paramours of the sayd Margaret & Johanne, that is to saye Philip Dānoy, and Gautyet Dānoy or walter Dannoy knyghes, men of fame and goodly personage & bretherne/at the kynges commaundement were fyrst brent in the vysage with hote irēs, & after drawē to the gybet at Pōtoyse & there hanged. whyche myssortune the kynge toke so greuously, that he reioysed neuer after.

About the feast of saynte Peter or the begynnyng of August/the kynge herynge of the rebellyon of the Flemynges, by Enguerram hys mooste secrete coūsaylour made an assemble of the cytezyns of Parys / and by the mouth of the sayd Enguerram desyred a subsydye of the sayd cytezeyns, to mayntayne hys warre agayne the Flemynges / the whyche by Stephā Barbet in the name of the hole cytye was graunted. By prescriptē wherof, all the great cyties & good townes of Fraūce were charged in lyke maner/ whyche caused greate vnkyndnes & grudge of the people towarde ỹ sayd Enguerram. Than prouysyon was made for a newe iourney into Flaunders/so that the kynge sent hys twoo sonnes and many other nobles of his lande in the moneth of Septembre folowynge, into the sayd countre of Flaūders. The whyche made good spede, & layde fyrste theyr siege to the castel of the Ile and wanne it/& after that entred towarde other stroge holdes. But the flemynges put them of/ and gaue vnto the Frenche hoost so sharpe assautes, that in processe they were constrayned to retourne into Fraunce wyth smal honoure. wherof the great defaute was layde vpō Enguerram, and vpō one of the sonnes of the erle of Flaundres/ whych lytel tofore by meanes of ỹ sayd Enguerrā was made erle of Neuers. In the moneth of Nouembre folowyng/ kynge Philyp beyng at soūtayne Beliaunt in the prouynce of Gastenoys, was taken with suche sykenesse and dyed shortly after when he had reygned. xxviii. yeres and more/and hys body after caryed vnto saynt Dionise, and there buryed leuing after hym ỹ three forenamed sonnes, Lowys, Philyp, & Charlys/& a doughter named Isabell, whych before tyme was maryed vnto the seconde Edwarde thā kyng of Englande.

Anglia.

Edwarde the seconde of ỹ name & sōne of Edwarde the fyrst, born at Carnaruan in a towne of walys/beganne his reygne ouer Englande, in the moneth of Julii & .vii. day of the sayd moneth, in the yere of our lord. xiii. C. & .vii/ & the .xvi. yere of the .iiii. Phylip than kyng of Fraūce. The whych was crowned at westmynster the .xiiii. daye of December, after the oppinīō of dyuers writers. But Ranulph mōke of Chester in his boke of Policronicon sayth, ỹ he was crowned in the forsayd monastery of the bisshop of wynchester, the sonday in quinquagesima, whych is the .xiii. day after the closyng of Alleluya / & of the bisshoppe of wynchester, for so moche as Robert than archebisshope of Caūterbury was than out of Englande. Thys Edwarde was fayre of body & great of strengthe but vnsted faste of maners, & vyle in cōdicions. For he wolde refuse the company of lordes & men of honour/& haūte hym with vylayns & vyle playes. He also gaue hym to great drynkyng/& lightly he wolde dyscouer thiges of great coūsayl. with these & many other disalowable condicions he was exercysed/whych tourned hym to great dishonour, & hys lordes to great vnrest,

as by the ſequele of thys hys ſtory ſhall appere.

Anone as hys father was buryed, and hys erequy ſcantly fynyſſhed/he forgettynge the hyghe & chargeable commaũdement of hys ſayd father, ſent in all haſte for hys olde compere Pyers of Gaueſtone. The whych he receyued wyth all ioy & gladneſſe, & auaunced hym to moche honour.

And thus paſſed the ſeaſon of ỹ olde mayre and ſhyreffes of London/ ſo ỹ at the feaſtes of Myghelmas & Symon & Jude folowyng, ỹ olde mayre and ſhyreffes, that is to meane ſyr Johan Blount, Symon Bolet & Godfrey at the conduyt were dyſcharged, and the newe as vnder foloweth admytted.

Anno domini.M.CCC.vii. Anno domini.M.CCC.viii.

Nycholas Pygotte.

Syr Johñ Blount. Anno primo.

Myghell Drury.

IN thys begynnynge of thys mayres yere, and fyrſt yere of ỹ kynge / the ſayd kynge Edwarde in the moneth of Decembre ſayled into Fraũce/and the.xv.day of Januarii folowynge, at Boleyn in Pycardy maryed Iſabell the doughter of Philyp le Beaw than kyng of Fraunce/ & ſoon after retourned with her into Englande, & ſo vnto London/where of the cytezeyns they were ioyouſly receyued, and ſo conueyed vnto weſtmynſter / where as before is ſhewed vpon the ſonday in quinquageſima they were bothe ſolemply crowned. At whyche coronacyon was ſo excedynge preaſe, that a knyghte called ſyr Johñ Bakwell was threſted to deth. Than the kynge gaue ſhortely after vnto Pyers of Gaueſtone the erledome of Cornewayl and the lord ſhyp of wallyngford, & was ruled all by hys wanton counſayll/& folowed the appetite and pleaſure of his body nothynge ordeynge by ſadneſſe nor yet by order of lawe or iuſtyce.

In thys yere alſo floured ỹ holy man called Robert a chanon of the houſe of Bridlyngtone / the whyche of ſome writters is accompted for a prophete, for verſes that he made of thynges to come after in Englande, whyche I paſſe ouer at thys tyme.

Anno domini.M.CCC.viii. Anno domini.M.CCC.ix.

wyllyam Baſynge.

Nycholas Faryngdone. Anno.ii.

Johñ Butler.

IN thys.ii.yere/ kyng Edward callynge to mynde the diſpleaſure done vnto hym and to hys famulyer Pyers of Gaueſtone, by the byſſhoppe of Cheſter mayſter walter Lanton, as before is towched in the xvbiii.yere of the reygne of Edwarde hys father/ commaunded hym vnto the toure of London, where he was ſtreyghtely kepte many dayes after.

Than the lordes of the lande, and ſpecyally ſyr Henre Lacy, ſyr Guy, & ſyr Aymer de Valance erle of Lyncolne, of warwyke, & of Penbroke /to whome ỹ noble prince Edwarde ỹ.i. had gyuē ſo great charge ỹ Pyers of Gaueſtone ſhuld no more come into

Englade,

Englande, sawe the rule of the lãde, and howe the kynges treasoure by meane of the sayd ppers was wasted assembled them in counsayll/& of one assent with ayde of other lozdes of ꝑ realme spake so with the kynge, that contrary hys pleasure he was auoy-

ded the lande, and banisshed into Ire lande foz that yere. But the kynge sent vnto hym oftentymes secret mes sangers, and comfozted hym wyth many ryche gyftes, oz made hym hys chyef ruler of the countre.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lx. Anno domini.M.CCC.x.

Jamys of saynt Edmunde.

Thomas Romayne. Anno.iii.

Roger Palmer.

IN thys.iii.yere /dyuers grud- ges began to moue & spzynge betwene the kyng and his lozdes, foz the exilynge of Pyers of Gaueston. wherfoze to contente ampte betwene hym & them/the sayd Pyers about ꝑ feast of the natiuite of our Lady was fette home agayne, and so contynued to the moze myschyef of ꝑ realme.

About thys tyme as testifyeth Cro nica Cronicarum & other/ the knygh tes of the ozdze of saynte Johñ Bap tyste called saynt Johñ of Hierusalẽ by theyz knyghtly manhode put out of the ile of Rodes oz Rodhis ꝑ Tur kys and infidelis, that to that day oc cupyed the sayd ile/& after that wan ne vpon the sayd Turkys dayly and yerely/so that at thys day they haue in theyz domynyon moche of the lan des, whyche at that day and longe af ter/was in the power of the sayd Tur kes. Thys relygyõ also was greatly pzeferryd by the fall of the templers/ whose possessyons and lãdes were to them gyuen, as it is befoze erpzessed in the thyzde chapptre, and.xii. yere of Phylyp the fayze. Thys yere also after some wzyters the crowched fre res came fyzste into Englande.

The fyrste wynnyng of Rodys.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xi. Anno domini.M.CCC.xi.

Symon Croppe.

Kycharde Rokham. Anno.iiii.

Petyz Blacnay.

IN thys fourthe yere, the rule and power of Pyers of Gaue stone moze and moze encreasynge/in so moche that he hauynge the guy- dynge of all the kynges iewellys and treasoure, yode vpon a day vnto west mynster/ and there out of the kynges iewell house, toke a table & a payze of trestyllys of golde/ and conueyed them wyth other iewellys oute of the lande, to the greate inpouerysshyng of the same/ and ouer that bzoughte the kynge by meane of hys wanton condycyons to manyfolde vyces, as auoutry and other.

wherfoze the fozesayde lozdes se- ynge the myschyefe that dayly en- creased by occasyon of thys vnhap- py man/ toke theyz counsayll togy- ther at Lyncolne/and there conclu- ded to voyde hym agayne out of En glande, so that shozty after he was exyled into Flaunders to the kynges great dyspleasure.

Anno dñi.M.CC.xii. Anno dñi.M.CC.xii.

Symon Werwode.

Johñ Gylours. Anno.v.

Kycharde wylfozde.

 In thys

Byrth of Edwarde the thyrde.

IN thys.v.yere vpon the day of saynt Bryce, or the.xiii.daye of Nouembre/was borne at wyndesore the fyrst or eldest sonne of kyng Edwarde, ꝑ after hys father was kynge of Englande, and named Edwarde the thyrde. And this yere was agayn reuoked by the kynge Pyers of Gaueston out of Flaunders / the whych after hys agayne commyng, demeaned hym worse than he before dyd.

In so moche that he dysdayned the lordes of Englande, and of them had many dyspytous and sclaunderouse wordes. wherfore the lordes of one mynde assented to put this Pyers to deth / & soone after assembled theyr powers, and besyeged hym in the castell of Scarburgh / & in proces wan that castell, & toke hym and brought hym vnto Gauerlede besyde warwycke / and there the.xix.daye of Junii smote of hys hede. wherof whan the kynge hadde knowlege, he was greuously dysplcased agayne the sayd lordes / and made hys auowe ꝑ hys deth shuld be reuenged.

By meane of thys the rancoure that before betwene the kynge and hys lordes was kendeled, now began further to spredе / so that after thys day the kyng sought occasyō agayn hys lordes, howe he myght put theym to greuaunce and dysplcasure. In thys whyle dyed syr Henry Lacy erle of Lyncolne / the whych lyeng vpon his dethe bedde, requyred syr Thomas erle of Lācastre that had maryed hys doughter, that he wolde stande with the other lordes in theyr defence for the weale of Englande.

The whyche requeste the sayd erle graunted / and so fermely kepte or obserued it, that at length he wyth many other loste theyr lyues, as after in the story shall be shewed.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xii.

Johñ Pontenay.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xiii.

Johñ Lambyn.

Anno.vi.

Adam Lutebyn.

IN thys.vi.yere / the kyng held hys great court or counceyl of parlyamēt with the lordes spirituall & temporall at London. where by the aduyces of theym many good ordenaunces and statutes were made, to oppresse the ryottouse and other myscheues that at those days were vsed. Than the kyng was swore to kepe those ordenaunces, and after all his lordes to theyr powers.

After the whyche othe so takyn / Robert archebysshope of Caunterbury, blessed all theym that vpheide the sayde statutes / and accursed all such as attēpted to breke any of the same. It was nat longe after that worde was broughte vnto the kynge, howe Robert le Bruze was retourned into Scotlande, and hadde caused the Scottes to rebell of newe.

ye haue before harde in the.xxxiiii. yere of Edwarde the fyrste, howe the sayd Edward chased the forenamed Roberte le Bruze oute of Scotland into Normandy. But whenne he had harde of the mysgydynge of the realme of Englande, and specially of the dyuysyon betwene the kynge and hys lordes / he anone wyth a small ayde of the Norgans or Norwayes retourned into Scotlande.

where he demeaned hym in suche wyse to the lordes of Scotlāde, that he in shorte proceſſe was agayne made kynge of that realme / and warred strongely vppon the kynges frē-

des, &

des, and wanne from theym castel-
les and stroge holdes, and wrought
vnto Englysshe men moche sorowe
and tene.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xiii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xiiii.

Idam Burden.

Nicholas Faryngdon. Anno.vii.

Hugh Gayton.

IN this.vii.yere, for to oppresse
ỳ malice of ỳ Scottes, ỳ kyng
assembled a great power/and by wa-
ter entred the realme of Scotlande,
and destroyed suche vyllages & towns
as lay or stode in his waye. wher
of heryng Robert le Bruze, with the
power of Scotlande costed towarde
the Englysshe men / and vpon ỳ day
of the natyuyte of sayntJohan the
Baptyst, mette with kynge Edwarde
& his hoste at a place called * Estry-
uelyn, nere vnto a frethe ryuer that
than was called Bannockysbourne/
where atwene the Englysshe and the
Scottes that daye was foughten a
cruell batayle. But in the ende the
Englysshe men were constrayned to
forsake the felde.

Thā the Scottes chased so egerly the Englysshe men ỳ many of thē were drowned in the fore named ryuer/and many a noble man of Englande that day was slayne in that batayll, as syr Gylbert de Clare erle of Glouceſtre, syr Robert Clyfforde, syr Edmunde of Maule the kynges stewarde, with other lordes & barones to the noumbre, as wytnesseth Guido de Columpna, of.xiii, & of knyghtes and baronettes to the noumbre of.lxvii/ouer.xvii.mē of name which that day, of the Scottes were taken prysoners. And the kynge hym selfe from that batayll scaped with great daūger/& so with a fewe of his hoste ỳ with hym escaped came vnto Berwyke, and there rested hym a season. Than the Scottes enflamed with pryde, in derysyon of the Englysshe men made this ryme as folowyth.

Maydens of Englande sore may ye morne
For your lemmans ye haue loste at Bannockysborne.
with heue a lowe.
what weneth the kynge of Englande
So soone to haue wonne Scotlande,
with rumbylow.

* Batayle of Estryuelyn.

THis songe was after many dayes songe in daunces in ỳ carolles of the maydens & mynstrels of Scotlāde, to ỳ reproffe & dysdayne of Englysshe men, with dyuers other whiche I ouerpasse. And whan kyng Edwarde had a season tarryed in Berwyke, and sette that towne in suche suerty as he than myght / he retourned with smal honour into Englāde, & came secretely to westmynster vpon the daye of sayntWagne or the xix. day of August.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xiiii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xb.

Stephan of Abyngdone.

Johan Gylours. Anno.viii.

Hamonde Chykwell.

Traiterous presumpcyõ of a Villayn.

IN this.viii. yere of kynge Edwarde/a vylayn called Johan Tanner yode aboute in dyuers places of Englande, & named hymselfe to be the sonne of Edwarde the fyrst/ & sayd ỹ by meane of a falce noryce he was stolne out of his cradell, and Edward whiche was a carters sonne was layde in ỹ same cradel for hym, & he hym selfe was after hardly fostred and brought vp in the northe partyes of walys. But whan this vylayne was layde for to be taken/ forthere he fled to the churche of the frere Carmes or the whyte freres of Oxynforde. where he thynkynge to be in a suertye because kyng Edward ỹ fyrst was theyr founder/ rehersed agayne the former sayenge/ addynge more there vnto, that it appered well that ỹ kynge was a carters sonne, for his condycyons were accordynge to the same, as by many kamplier examples and customes in hym dayly were apparent. whan he had thus contynued a season not without some rumoure in the lande/ lastely he was take out of that place, & caryed as a felon vnto Northampton, and there reygned and iuged for his falsenes, & so drawen & hanged. The whiche at ỹ houre of dethe cõfessed, that he had a fende in his house in the symylytude of a catte/ the whiche amonge other promessys to hym made, hadde assured hym that he shulde be kynge of Englande. And Guydo sayth that he confessed that he had serued the fende.iii. yeres before, to bringe his peruerse purpose aboute. Thus kynge Edwarde beset with many aduersytes/ kepte a counsayll at London for reformacion of ỹ warre in Scotlande, and other thynges for the welfare of Englãde. Thẽ was syr Peter Spaldynge knyght sente vnto Berwyke with a crewe of sowdiours, for to for tyfye that towne, for somoche as the kynge had certayne vnderstãdynge, that Robert le Bruze entended hastly to laye his syege to that towne.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xv. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xvi.

Hamonde Goodchepe.

Stephan Abyndon. Anno.ix.

Wyllyam Redynge.

Berwyke lost

IN this.ix.yere vpon mydlente sonday, was the towne & castel of Berwyke yelden or loste, by treason of the fore named Peter Spaldynge as the cõmune fame went, vnto Robert le Bruze kynge of Scottes. This yere also the derth of corne that had encreasyd yerely more and more, from the.xvi.yere of Edwarde the fyrste, was this yere at London solde for.iiii.s. a busshell. And therwith also fyll suche a morayne of bestes, that al vytayle wared scant and dere, as after shull be shewed.

In this yere also.ii.cardynalles ỹ were sent into Englãde from the.v. Clement than pope, to set an vnyon & a peace atwene the kynges of Englãde and of Scottes/ were met with vpon the moore of wygylsdone in yorke shyre, & there robbed of suche stuffe and tresure as they with theym broughte. For the whiche robberye great enquery was made/ so ỹ lastly a knyght callyd syr Robert Gylbert Myddelton was accused, and sent to prison for that felony, and after at London drawen and hanged for the same, and his heed set vpon London bridge. But the cardynalles receyued of the kynge dowble the value of theyr harmes.

In this

In this yere also fyl so excedynge rayne in the monethes of Julii and August / that husbandes myght not bringe in theyr lytle store of corne that than stode vpon the grounde/so that where before was great scarcyte of whete, now by this was more/and beues and motons were at excedyng prices, by reason of the morayne before spoken of.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xvi.

wyllyam Caston.

Johan wengraue.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xvii.

Anno.x.

Rauke Palmer.

IN this yere ꝑ Scottes entred the borders of Northumberlande, and robbed and brent the countrey moste cruelly/in somoche ꝑ they brent the howses that women at that tyme laye in chylde bedde, and spared nother man, woman, nor chylde, nother relygyous nor other/and dyd so great harme that ꝑ countrey by it was greatly impouerysshed. To this myschefe was ioyned another mysery. For as before is sayd, vytayll by reason of the morayne was so scante and dere, and whete and other grapnes so hyghe prysed / that poore people ete horse flesshe & dogges flesshe, and many other vyle bestes, whiche wonder is to byleue. And yet for defaute dyed great multytude of people in sundry places of the lãde. And whete was solde this yere and ꝑ nert folowynge, at Londõ for.iiii.marke a quarter and aboue. And after this derthe & scarcsytye of vytayle, ensued mortalytye of mẽ by goddes hãde and punysshment/so that what with warre of the Scottes, and for hungre, and deth by mortalite and sycknesse/the people of ꝑ lande was wonderfye wasted and perysshed. But al those monycyons amended not the kynge of his inordynate lyuynge.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xvii.

Johan Pyrroure.

Johan wentgraue.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xviii.

Anno.xi.

wyllyam Furneur.

IN this.xi.yere, ꝑ kynge assembled a newe host and went into Northũberlãde, to resyste the malyce of the Scottes / whiche dayly made assawtes vpon the borders, and entred ferre within the lande. wherfore for great dystresse & nede of fyghtyng men, the kynge had moch people out of ꝑ southe and east partyes of Englande. Amonge the whiche contrery to theyr liberteys, the cyte of London was constrayned to fynde at theyr costes and charge. CC. men, and so sent theym to yorke, whan the kynge at yorke hadde receyued his people frome sundry countrees and good townes of Englande/ he with a conuenyent noumbre rode towarde Berwyke, & so sped his iournayes that at lengthe he came nere vnto Berwyke, and layde his syege aboute ꝑ same.

But whyle the kynge was besyed in assawtynge of the towne / the Scottes brake ouer the water of Swale in great noumbre/& leuynge the rooste where the kynges people laye, in secrete wyse came downe into the marchys

the marchis of yorke shyre, and there slewe the people and robbed them in moost cruell wyse. wherefore ꝑ arche bisshop of yorke constrayned of pure necessyte to defende that countre, gathered vnto hym an vnredy & dispurueyed hoost for ꝑ warre, as ꝑyours clerkes, chanons, and other spyrituel men of the churche, wyth husbande men and other vnapte people/and so with great nombre of men and fewe warly or discrete cheuetaynes, yode agayne ꝑ Scottes/and them encoũtred at a place called Mitton vppon Swale, the.xii. day of the moneth of Octobre, and gaue vnto thẽ batayle. But for lacke of wyse and warely ꝓuysyon, the Englysshemẽ were beset of theyr enemyes vpon euery side/so that of them was slayne a great multytude, & the remenaunt shamefully put to flyghte/by reason wherof the sayde archebisshop with the abbot of Selby and other were ꝓiserupd.

And for so many spyrytuell mẽ were slayne in thys batayl/therfore it was after named of many wrytters the whyte batayll. whan the kynge was enfourmed of this ouerthrowe of the Northryne men, and for it drewe towarde wynter/he therfore brake vp hys siege and retourned vnto yorke and soone after forther into Englãd. Than was nothyng done without ꝑ aduyces and rouncelys of syr Hughe the spẽcers, the father and the sonne. By whose entysemẽt many thynges were done in Englande, to the great grudge as well of the noble men of the realme as of the commons of the same/so ꝑ they were had in as greate hatred and indygnacyon, as before tymes was Pyers of Gaueston. And many euyll reportes and great errorꝑs were of thẽ reported, as lightly men shall do that ben oute of the fauoure of the comon people.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xviii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xix.

Johñ Pontenay.

Johñ wengraue. Anno.xii.

Johñ Dallynge.

IN this.xii. yere, the kyng helde hys greate counceyll at yorke/where cõtrary the mynde of ꝑ lordes syr Hughe Spencer the sonne was made hyghe chaumberlayne of Englãde. By reason wherof he bare hym so hawtely and so prowde, that no lorde of thys lande myght gaynsaye hym in any thynge that he thoughte good. wherof grewe the occasyon of the barons warre as after folowyth. In thys passetyme forasmoche as ꝑ forsayd cardinalles might nothyng do concernyng the peace betwene Englande and Scotlande/the kynge purchased a curse of the .xxii. Johan then pope, to accurse Robert le Bruse and all suche as wyth hym helde or maynteyned/and it to stande so in strenght, tyll the sayd Robert had recompensed kynge Edwarde for all suche harmys as hys lande had by hym receyued/& also tyl he had reedifyed the monasteryes and churches by hym and hys caste downe in Englande, and restored to them suche spirytuell goodes as the Scottes had reued and taken from them. But all thys auayled nothyng, but putte the kyng and the realme to great coste & charge/so that ꝑ comons were vexed and troubled many maner of ways/and theyr possessyons and moueable goodes taken from them, vpon surmysed & feyned causes/so that many were vtterly vndoon, and a fewe syn-

guler

guler & mysguyded persones auaū-
ced. whan the more partye of the ba-
rones of Englande beheld this my-
sery of the people, how they were pu-
nysshed by the hande of god, and al-
so by the ygnoraunce of the kynge/
they in secrete maner assembled them
togyder at a towne called Whytbo-
in , and there condiscended for
a reformacyon of this myschefe, to re
moue from the kynge the sayd Spē-
sers bothe the father and the sonne.
And this to bringe aboute, syr Tho-
mas erle of Lancastre, syr Humfrey
Bohum erle of Herefor de, syr Johan
Woubray baro, syr Roger Clyfford
baro, syr Goselyn Danyell baro, syr
Roger Toket, Roger Benefeelde, syr
Roger Mortymer, Syr wyllyā Sul
lāde, syr wyllyam Elmynbrydge, syr
Johan Gyfford, and syr Johan Ty
ers barons and knyghtes, with dy-
uers other swate eche of thē to stāde
by other, tyll they had amended the
state of the realme. And soone after
by theyr aduyce and agrement, syr
Johan Woubraye, syr Roger Clyf-
ford, and syr Goselyn Danyel, with
a stronge company entred vpon the
manours and castelles of the sayde
Spensers standynge in the marche
of wales, and them spoyled and de-
stroyed. Of the whiche ryot the Spē
sers complayned them to the kynge.
In punysshment wherof, the kynge cal
lynge to hym dyuerse of his counceyll
at wyndsore/ there determyned that
the sayde syr Johan Woubraye, syr
Roger Clyfford, & syr Goselyn Da-
nyell, with other theyr assystentes,
shulde appere before the kynges
counsayle shortly after/ and there to
make answere vpon that ryot. And
yf they refused that to do/ that than
they shulde auoyde the lande shortly
after as banysshed men. But no day
of apparence by theym was kepte.
wherfore proclamacyons were made
in dyuers placys of the realme, and
at London the .xvi. daye of Marche,
that the sayde syr Johan Woubray,
syr Roger Clyfford and other, shuld
auoyde the lande within .x. dayes fo-
lowynge vpon payne of dethe. wher-
of herynge ꝑ lordes and barones be-
fore named, assembled theym a more
strenger power/ and vpon that sent a
messynger vnto ꝑ kynge, besechynge
hym humbly to remoue frome his
persone and counseyle the Spensers,
ꝑ whiche dayly dyd vnto hym great
dyshonour, and to the comune weale
of the realme great hyndraūce. The
kynge herynge this humble request,
nothynge with it beynge contente,
but herynge greatly the destruccyon
of his owne persone / assembled his
counseyle for reformacyon of this ma-
ter. where it was concluded that the
kynge shulde call a parlyamente at
London, there to be holden in the
folowynge. And that con-
clusyon so there taken by the sayde
counseyle / the kynge sent his letters
vnto the sayde barones, commaun-
dynge theym to come vnto the sayde
parlyament. The whiche at the day
aboue sayde, with a great hoste of
men of armes came to London/ in a
sute of takettes of cotes of demy par-
tye of yelowe and grene, with a bāde
of whyte cast ouerthwarte.

For this skyll that parlyamente
lōge after of the comune people was
called the parlyament of whyte ban-
des.

Than for to se the kynges peace
were substancyally kepte within the
cytye of London / the mayre caused
dayly a thousande men well harnes-
sed to watche in dyuers wardes, and
at dyuerse gates of ꝑ cytye/ ꝑ whiche
began at foure of the clocke in the
mornynge, and so contynued tyll .vi.
at nyghte. At whiche season as ma-
ny were ordeyned too take thanne
the charge

the charge of the nyght watche, and so to contynue tyll the houre of.v. in the morynge. And for thys nyghte watche shuld be surely kept / two aldremē nyghtly were assygned to ryde about the cytie with certayne officers of the towne, to see the watchemen wele and dyscretly guyded. And the gates were shyt at.ix.of the clocke, & opened agayne at.vii.on the morow & euery cytezyn warned to haue hys harneys by hym, that he myghte be redy with shorte warnynge when so euer he were called.

Thus in ỳ cytye the sayd watche cōtynuyng/the forsayde parlyamente was holden at westmynster / where amonge other thynges for the weale of the lande, as that councell than coulde thynke determyned/ one was that syr Hugh Spenser the father & syr Hughe the sonne, shuld be banysshed out of ỳ realme of England for terme of lyfe. And soone after that banysshement was put in execucion/so that they bothe were broughte vnto Douer, there to take shyppynge. where syr Hugh the father made wōderfull great moone when he shulde take hys shyp/and cursed hys sonne in presence of suche as had the Guydynge of thē/ sayng that by hys meanes he was banysshed from the flour of all landes crystened. Than ỳ kyng dyssolued the parlyament, and euery man retourned to hys owne. But yt was nat longe after that worde was broughte vnto the kyng, ỳ syr Hugh Spenser the sonne houyd vpon the cooste of Englande, and toke prayes of all marchaūtes that passed by hys course.

But the kyng let as he had knowē of no suche thyng/ and suffered that wyth many mo eupl dedes to go vnpunysshed/the whyche at length he repented full soore, and toke therof great remors in conscyence, as it appereth in the ende of hys reygne.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xix. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xx.

Symon Ibyngdon.

Hamonde Chykwell. Anno.xiii.

Johñ Preston.

IN thys.xiii.yere, the kynge reuoked the actes, or withstoode them whyche were made at London in the laste parliament/ and called agayne into Englande the Spensers bothe the father & sonne, contrary the wyll of the barons / and set theym in lyke auctorite as they before had bē to the great dyshourbaunce of all the realme. And soon after vnder colour of a tytle made by the quene vnto the castell of Ledys in Kent, whych than belonged vnto syr Barthen de Badlysmere knyght than beynge on the baronys partye/the kynge besyeged the sayd castel/and by helpe of the cytezyns of London lastly wanne it by strength, and spoyled the mouables therof, whych was to a greate value after the sayeng of some wryters. In thys passetyme that the kyng hadde thus called agayne the Spensers, & ruled many thynges after hys sensuall apetyte and pleasure, nothyng regardynge the comon weale of the realme/ the barons cōsyderyng well that the Spencers shuld in processe bryng the lande in great ruyne, & the kyng to great dyshonoure, entēdyng to resourme the myschyef that therof myght ensu/gadered vnto thē great power. And whyle syr Thomas erle of Lancastre was gatherynge of hys people/ ỳ.ii.Mortymers, ỳ is to say syr Roger

syr Roger Mortymer of werke, & syr Roger of wigmoore with other, yode into the marche of walys, & toke by strengthe certayne cytyes & townes belongynge to the Spencers/ & pursuyd also some of the kynges seruaũtes. wherfore the kyng herynge of ỹ rebellyon of hys lordes, made hasty spede and with a greate hoste came about by Shropsbury, and was nere vnto them or they were ware/so that for fere the sayd Mortymers pelded them vnto the kynges grace & mercy the whiche forthwith were conueyed as prysoners vnto the towre of Lõdon.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xx.

Reynolde at Condupt.

Hamonde Chykwell.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxi.

Anno. xiiii.

wyllyam Prodham.

In thys. xiiii. yere, whã ỹ kyng had ordered the countre of the marchys forsayd after hys mynde, & had to hym gathered more strength about saynt Chaddys day or begynnynge of Marche, the kyng with hys people came downe to Gloweeter/ where with hym mette the Spẽsers with theyr people. And from thense he yode vnto Lychefeelde/at whyche season the erles of Lancaster and of Herforde were at , and there menaunt of theyr hoste at Burtõ vpon Trent/ & fortyfyed the brydge ỹ the kyng myght nat wynne ouer the sayde ryuer. Than the kynge was brought vnto a foorde, & beganne to set ouer his knyghtes, wherof herynge the sayde erles / forsooke the sayde towne of , and yode toward the towne or cytye of . But or they myght passe farre vppon theyr iournay / they were encoũtred of syr Aymer de Valance erle of Penbroke with the Spensers and other of the kynges hoste, vppon the. xii. daye of Marche/and of them ouerset and cõstrayned to flie, and so yode in proces of tyme to Pontfret. In thys meane season, the erle Thomas had sente a knyght of hys named Robert Holãd into Lancasshyre, for to arere hys tenauntes. But when the sayde syr Robert herde of that skyrmysshe, and howe hys mayster was fled / he than drewe hym to the kynge, and presented hym with suche companye as he had thã gathered. And thus ỹ kyngs power dayly encreased, and ỹ barons dyscreased. Thã the baronys herynge of the goyng of syr Robert Holande vnto the kynges pattye, were with it sumdeale abasshed / and toke theyr counsayll in the freers of Pountfret. where after many oppynyons & reasons amonge them debated & argued yt was fynally by them concluded, ỹ they shuld goo vnto the castel of Dũstanborough/ & there to holde thẽ tyll they myght purchase the kynges grace. And so spedyng theyr iournay thyderwarde with suche people as they than had they came in proceſſe of tyme to a towne called Burgh brydge. where they were encountred of syr Andrewe of Harkeley knyght, wyth other that were come out of ỹ North with a stronge company. The which there nere vnto the sayde towne sette vppon the barones, and in the ende sconfited thẽ and chased theyr peple. In the whyche fyght was slayne the erle of Herforde, syr Roger Benefeld, and syr wyllyam Sullãde and other and there was taken the erle of Lancastre, syr Roger Clyfforde, syr Johan Mowbraye, syr Roger Tuckettes, syr wyllyam Fyzwyllyam, with

oo. dyuerse

dyuerse other, & ladde vnto yorke. And thys feelde was foughten as wytnesseth Polycronycon the .xv. daye of Marche, in the ende of ỹ yere of oure lorde a thousande thre hundreth & twenty. It was nat longe after that syr Hugh Daniell and syr Barthew de Bladysmore were taken. And syr Thomas erle of Lancastre was brought agayn to his owne towne of Pountfret / where he was broughte in iugement before syr Aymer de Valaunce erle of Penbroke, syr Johan Brytayne erle of Rychemounde, syr Edmunde of woodstoke erle of Kent, syr Hughe Spenser the father, and syr Roberte Walmestorp iustyce wyth other / and before them fynally adiuged to haue hys hedde stryken of. whereof execucyon was done the twelefe daye of Aprell, in the begynnyng of the yere of grace after the rekenynge of the chyrche of Englãde. M.CCC.xxi. Of this erle Thomas are dyuerse opynyons.

For some wryters shew of hym to be a seynt. But Policronicõ in ỹ .xlii. chapytre of hys .vii. boke sheweth otherwyse. But what so euer erthlye men in such thynges deme, it is farre frome the secrete iugemente of god / so that to hym and hys sentence such thynges are to be referred.

From thys tyme forthwarde by ỹ terme of .v. yeres ensuyng, ỹ fortune of the Spensers hugely encreased, And as faste the quenes dyscreased, tyll she was releued by the kynge of of Fraunce than Charles the .v. of ỹ name, and brother vnto hyr, as after shalbe shewed.

Than to retourne vnto oure former mater, vpon the forsayde daye that erle Thomas was thus put in execucyon / syr Roger Tuthettes, syr wyllyam Fitzwyllyã, syr waren of Isclde or Isell, syr Henry of Bradborne, & syr willyã Cheyny Barones & knyghtes, were drawen & hanged, & theyr hedes smytten of and sent vnto London. whyche all were putte to deth at Pountfrete forsayd, with an esquyre called Johan Page. And at yorke soone after was drawen & heded syr Roger Clyfford, syr Johñ Mowbray & syr Golselyne Danyell Barons. And at Brystowe syr Hery womyngton, & syr Henry Monforde Baneretes / & at Glowceter syr Johñ Giffard & syr wyllyã Elmyngbrydge knyghtes / and at London syr Johñ Tiers or Tryers baron / and at wyncheisce syr Thomas Culpeppr knyght / and at wyndesore syr Fraunceys waldenham baron / and at Caunterbury syr Barthew de Bladismoore, & syr Bartholl de Asbornham baronys. And at Cardeeffe in walys, was putte to lyke execucyon syr wyllyã Flemyng knyght / vpon whose soules and all crysten Jesus haue mercy. whan the kyng had thus subdued his barons / he soone after aboute the feast of the assencyon of oure Lorde, kepte hys parlyamente at yorke. Durynge whyche parlyament syr Hugh Spenser the father was made erle of wynchester, and syr Andrew of Harkeley erle of Carleyle, or after some wryters Cardoyll / and dysheryted all suche as before hadde holden wyth the erles of Lancastre and of Herefordе, except syr Hugh Dandell and fewe other / the whych syr Hugh was receyued to grace by reason that he had maryed a kynneswoman of the kynges.

There was also ordeyned or soone after, that mayster Roberte Baldok a man of euyll fame shuld be chaũceler of Englãde. Than forfaytes & tynes were gathered into the kynges treasoury, without sparyng of pryuileged places or other / so that what myght be foũde, all was seased for ỹ kyng. By reason wherof moche treasoure

soure was brought vnto the kynges cofers, besyde great thynges ꝑ were brybed and spoyled by the officers of dyuers shyres.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xxi. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xxii.

Rycharde Constantyne.

Hamonde Chykwell. Anno.xv.

Rychard Hakeney.

IN thys.xv.yere the kyng gadered the .vi. peny of temporall mennes goodes throughe Englande, Irelande, & walys, that to hym was graunted at the forelayd parlyamẽt, for the defence of the Scottes. which was payed wyth great murmoure & grudge, consyderyng the manyfolde myseryes that the common people at those dayes were wrapped in. This yere also the sone appered to mannes syght as blode, and so continued by the space of.vi.houres / that is to meane in the moneth of Octobre and laste daye of the sayde moneth, from vii.of the clocke in the mornyng tyll one of the same day. After some writers about thys tyme ꝑ Scottes entendyng to wynne an enterprise in Irelande, and for to wynne that contrey to theyr obeysaunce / entered it with a stronge hoste vnder theyr capytayne Edwarde le Bruse brother to the Scottisshe kyng. But howe it was by ayde of Englysshe men or of them selfe, the Irysshe quyt them so well, and bare thẽ so manfully that they vaynquysshed the Scottes, and chased thẽ out of that countrey. In ꝑ whych chase & fyght ꝑ sayd Edward le Bruse / & many of the noble men of Scotlande were slayne.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xxii. Anno dñi.xiii.C.xxiii.

Johñ Grantham.

Hamonde Chykwell. Anno.xvi.

Rycharde of Ely.

IN this.xvi.yere, ꝑ kyng made greate prouysyon for to make a voyage into Scotland / so ꝑ about the begynnyng of Auguste he entred that countrey. But the Scottes consyderyng the great multytude of his hoste, drewe them into the mountaynes & other places where as the Englysshemen myght nat wynne to thẽ and all to the entent for to wery and tyre the kynges great hoste. Than diuerse maladyes fell amonge the Englysshmen / so that many of thẽ dyed and were loste in that iournay, as wel for lacke of vytayl as by infyrmyte & sykenesse / so that the kyng for theyse causes & other, was constrayned to retourne into Englande about ꝑ natyuyte of our Lady. where of the scottes beynge enfourmed / syr Jamys Dowglas with other capytayns of ꝑ Scottes, wyth a stronge hooste folowed or costed ꝑ kyng, in suche wyse that about the feest of sayncte Luke, they had almooste taken the kynge at dyner at an abbey called Bella Launde or Beyghlande. Thant he kynge of pure constraynte defended hym, and withstoode the Scottes as he myghte.

But after shorte and weke fyghte the kynge was compelled to flee, & by that meane to saue hym selfe. In thys skyrmysshe was taken syr Johan Bryttayne erle of Rychemõde and the kynges treasoure was there

spoyled and borne away/ and the ordenaunce belongynge to the hoste, great parte of it was by the Scottes conueyed into Scotlande. Than the Scottes in theyr retournyng homewarde wan the castell of Norham, & robbed the towne of Northallerton and other. Of thys losse and harmes was syr Andrewe of Harkeley put in wyte by mysledynge of the kynges hoste, as in the nexte yere shalbe shewed.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxiii.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxiiii.

Adam Salesbury.

Symon Franceys.

Anno. xvii.

Johñ of Orpyngorde.

IN thys. xvii. yere, the kyng beynge enfourmed that he & hys people were so put vnto dyshonoure (as in the precedyng yere is touched) of the Scottes, by þ vntrouth & treason of þ forenamed syr Andrew erle of Carleyl or Cardoyll/ sent a knyghte named syr Antony Lucy, for to arest the sayd erle, & to bryng hym safely vnto þ kyngs presence. The which syr Antony sped hym in suche wyse, that vpon the daye of saynt Chadde or þ seconde daye of Marche, the sayde erle was taken, and so kepte in prysõ lõge after tyl October folowyng at whych sealõ as affermeth Geffrey of Monmouthe, at Cardoyll in wayts the sayd syr Andrew was arreygned, & conuycte that he had takẽ money of the Scottes to betray þ kyng hys naturall lorde. For the whyche treason he was there, or after other at westchester or at Shrowsbury drawen & hãged/ and hys hede sente after to London and sette vpon the brydge.

Occasion of mortall warre.

In thys yere the warre begã to Quekyn in Guyan betwene the Englisshmen and the Frẽche. wherof the occasyon was as sayth the frenche boke, for a bastyle or fortresse made by the lord of Mount Pelayne or Pelart a lord of Gascoyne, vpon the frenche kynges grounde as the frenchemen sayd. But the Gascoynes & Englisshmen tustyfyed it to be within the terytorye of Guyan. For thys fyrst began great wordes, and after manasses/ But lastly mortall warre. So þ the Gascoynes wyth ayde of þ kyngs stewarde of Englande, slewe many frenchemen that came to ouerturne the sayde bastyle. whan Charles the v. or charles the fayre, whych at that daye was kynge of Fraunce, herde of the ouerthrow of the frenchemẽ, and howe the Gascoynes fortyfyed the forsayd Bastyle within hys kyngdom as he was enfourmed / he sente in all spede wyth a stronge hoste hys vncle Charles de Valoys/ the which made sharpe and cruell warre vpon the Gascoynys, and wanne frome theym the townes of Angeou and Ampas wyth other / and in processe came vnto the towne or cytye of Ryoll, and laye hys syege vnto the same. But the Englysshe wyth the Gascoynes issued out of the towne, and gaue batayll vnto the frenche men, and put theym to the worse, & slewe vppon fourtene hundreth of theym. Amonge the whyche a lord called the lorde of saynt Florentyne wyth other noble men of Fraunce were slayne/ & the other constrayned to lye forther from the towne. Howe be it in conclusion the sayd towne by apoyntement was yelden to þ frẽch men, vpon condycyon that all suche

Englysshmẽ

Englysshemen as were within that town, shuld go frely with theyr good to Burdeaux/or if they wold remayn there styll, thé to be sworne to ỳ frēch kyng, and to dwell there as frenchemen. After whych towne so yelden/ syr Edmunde of woodstoke ỳ kyngs brother than beyng at Burdeaux as the kynges deputye, made suche resistens agayne the sayd Charles de Valops, that a trewce was taken for ỳ yere. Than about mydlent the kyng hauyng knowlege of thys warre in Guyan, and how the frenche kynge entended to lease all Gascoyne and Guyan, for brekyng of certayn couenauntes before tyme betwene theym made, & nat by kynge Edwarde performed / sent ouer the quene hys wyfe the frenche kynges syster, to entreate a concorde & peace betwene thé. And in the beginnyng of August folowynge/syr Roger Mortymer of wygmore, by meane of a sleppynge poyson or drynke, that he gaue vnto his keepers as the comon fame went, escaped out of the toure of London, and went to the quene into Fraunce. And soone after were taken within ỳ castell of wallyngford, syr Johan Goldyngton, and syr Edmunde of ỳ Beche/the which syr Johñ was sent vnto yorke & there hāged and drawē for the barons quarell, and hys hede sent vnto Londō bridge. And about the feast of ỳ natyuytie of our Lady/ the kyng sent ouer syr Edwarde hys sonne into Fraūce, for to do homage vnto the frenche kynge for ỳ duchie of Guyan, whome the frenche kyng Philip le Beawe receyued ioyously, & caused hym to tary with the quene hys mother in the countre of Pōtyen lenger than kynge Edwarde was pleased.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxiiii. Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxv.

Benet of Fulham.

Hamon Chyckwell. Anno. xviii.

Johñ Canston.

IN thys. xviii. yere, kynge Edwarde beyng enfourmed that the frenche kynge had gyuen vnto syr Edwarde his sonne the duchye of Guyan cōtrary hys mynde and pleasure, & that also the quene hys wyfe, nor the sayde syr Edwarde made no spede into Englande, nat withstandyng hys often sendyng for thé/was with hys sayd wyfe & sone greuously displeased/in so moche that proclamacyons were made at London in ỳ moneth of December, ỳ yt the quene and her sonne entred nat the lande by the octaues of the Epyphany of our Lord nert folowyng in pealyble wyse, that they shuld be take for enemyes to the kyng & hys realme of Englande. But for the quene fered the treacherye of the Spēsers and other ỳ were nere vnto the kynge, she abode styll in Fraunce. wherfore kyng Edwarde after the erpyracyon of ỳ fore sayd day, caused to be sealed all such lādes as to hys sayd wyfe and sonne belonged/ and the profyttes of them toke to hys owne vse. when this rumour was knowē through the more parte of Englande / dyuerse men of name of the landes, as syr Wyllyam Trussell, syr Johñ Cromewell, with dyuerse other, departed secretely out of Englande and sayled vnto the quene.

whan kynge Edwarde was ware of thys/he sent vnto the frēch kyng so sharpe and sore letters, that he monyshed the quene out of hys lande,

Syr Johan Froyſſarde.

and wolde nother ayde hyr nor hyr company/but as ſayth Johñ Froyzarde ꝑ made a compendyous werke in Frenche of the hole lyfe or ſtoryes of the thyrde Edwarde, and therwyth expreſſed many other ſtoryes and cronycles, as of Fraunce, Flaunders, & other regions / at thys tyme when ꝑ quene was thus monyſſhed to auoyd out of Fraũce, syr Johñ de Henawde brother to the erle of Henawde a mã of great fame, was then in the Frẽche kynges court. The whych haupnge cõpaſſyon of the quene & of hyr põge ſonne, requyred her to go with hym vnto hys brothers court forſayde. wherof the quene beyng fayne graũted vnto hys requeſt, and ſpedde hyr thyther ſhortly after/ where ſhe with hyr company was ioyouſly & honorably receyued. In the tyme & ſeaſon ꝑ the quene with hyr ſonne lay thus in the court or countrey of the erle of Henawde/by meanes of ſuche as were about hyr, a maryage was cõcluded betwene syr Edwarde hyr ſonne, and Philip the ſayd erles doughter, vpõ certayne condyciõs. wherof one was that the ſayd erle ſhuld at his proper coſtes ſet ouer into Englande ꝑ ſayd syr Edward with a crew of. CCCC. men of armys. For the whych, prouyſyon was made with all dylygence.

Of thys, the fame ſprange ſhortly in Englande. wherfore the kynge in all haſte made prouyſyon to haue ꝑ hauyns & the portes of hys lãde ſurely kept, for to reſyſte the landyng of his enemyes. For ſubdie wherof/the cytezyns of London were conſtrayned to fynde at theyr proper coſtes an hundred men of armys / the whyche contrary theyr lybertyes, with a condycyon that after that daye it ſhulde be no preſident, they ſent vnto Portcheſtre. In thys ſeaſon & paſſe tyme the quene with syr Edwarde hyr ſon with a ſmall company of Engliſſhemen, and a crewe of Henawders, of the whych syr Johñ of Henawde the erles brother was capptayne / toke ſhyppynge in thoſe partyes / & had ꝑ wynde ſo fauorable vnto them, that they landed in Englande at a porte called Orwell beſyde Harwyche in Suffolke the. xxv. day of Septẽbre, without any reſiſtens of mẽ of warre agayne hyr made. To whome after hyr landyng, the people of the coũtre drewe by great companyes/& ſo ſped hyr towarde London. At thys tyme of the quenes thus lãdyng/the kyng was at hys cytye of Londõ. But whe he harde of the great people ꝑ drewe to hyr out of all countres, he fered. wherfore in ſafegardyng of hym ſelf he fled wyth a ſmall companye towarde walys/& lefte mayſter walter Stapplẽ biſſhop of Exceter behynd hym, to haue the rule of the cytye of London. It was nat longe after the kynges departyng, that ꝑ quene ſent a letter vnto the mayre & compnaltie of the cytye/& requyred of them ayde to ſubdue the oppreſſours of ꝑ comõ weale of the realme. But to that letter was made none anſwere. Therefore ſhe wrote the ſecõde tyme/ aduertyſyng them of theyr landynge, & of the entent that ſhe had to refourme ꝑ enormytyes & myſgouernaũce of the lande/in admoneſtyng them of theyr ayde & ſocoure, as by the tenure of ꝑ ſayd letter more playnly appereth. wherof the circumſtaũce I haue left out of thys boke, for ſo moche as I fynde varyaunce in the contentes thereof/and alſo for the coppes there of ben ſette oute in the cronycles of Englande and dyuers other bokes. Than thys ſayde letter was tacked vpon the croſſe in Chepe, whyche at that daye was called the newe croſſe. In the nyght before the day of ſaynt Denys or the. ix. day of October. And other coppes of the ſame were

faſtened

fastened in dyuerse other places of ꝑ cytye / wherof one was fastened vpō the mayres gate. After whyche letter thus publysshed in the cytye / the bysshop of Exceter, to whome as before is sayd the kyng had committed the rule of the cytye, sent vnto the mayre to haue the kepes of the gates of the cytye by vertue of hys commission. By the whych he stode so fermely, & vsed so sharpe wordes in the kynges name, that varyaunce grew betwene hym & the citezyns / so ferfourth that the commons of the cytye in theyr rage toke the sayd bysshop the .xiiii. day of Octobre, and hym with .ii. of hys housholde esquyers beheded vnreuerently at ꝑ standard in weschep. And the same daye was taken for a spye a citezyn called Johñ Marshal, whych fauoured the Spensers ptye & in ꝑ same place also beheded without proces of lawe. And then the corps of ꝑ sayde bysshop with hys .ii. seruaūtes, were harped to Thamys syde where the sayd bysshop had begonne to edyfye a toure / and there in the rubbusshe and sande of the same they buryed or conueyed these thre bodyes. whyche dispyte to hym was done after some auctoures, for so moche as he had vsurped of the comō grounde of the cytie in settyng of the sayd toure. But for what cause was he thus vngoodly & vnreuerentely delte with no mencion is made. And in thys passe tyme the quene easely & a foote space folowed ꝑ kyng / which by thys season was cōmē to Brystow hauyng with hym the Spēsers & his dyssamed chaūceller mayster Robert Baldocke, syr Johñ erle of Arundell & other. where by theyr counsayls it was agreed, that syr Hugh Spēser the father shulde remayne there and haue the rule of the towne & castell, whyle the kynge with the other toke shyppynge & sayled frome thens into walys to rayse the walshemen. And so the kyng with syr Hugh Spenser the sonne & the other, toke shyppyng at Brystowe & so sayled into walys. when the certaynte therof came vnto the quene anone she sent to Brystow the erle of Kent the kynges brother, syr Johñ of Henawde wyth dyuerse other, for to take syr Hugh Spenser the father. The whyche put them in suche deuour, that they tooke the sayde syr Hugh, and lefte & certayne to holde the towne & castell tyll the quene with hyr power came thyther. In the whyche tyme they sped them into walys / and in proces tooke ꝑ kynge, hys chaunceller, the erle of Arundell, and syr Hughe Spenser the sonne, and brought them all to the towne of Hereford. And in thys whyle the citezyns of London wan the towre of Londō and kept it vnto the quenes vse.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xxb. Anno dñi.xiii.C.xxbi.

Gylbert Wordon.

Rycharde Betayne. Anno.xix.

Johñ Cotton.

IN thys .xix. yere and begynnynge of thys mayres charge, vppon the morowe folowynge the feaste of Symon and Jude / the same daye that the mayre rode to westmynster to take hys charge, the same day at Brystow was syr Hugh Spenser the father putte to dethe, and after buryed at wynchestre. And vppon saynte Huys daye folowynge, or the .xviii. daye of Nouembre, was syr Hugh hys sonne drawē,

hanged, and quartered at Herforde, and hys hed sent to London and set amonge other vpon the bryge. The comon fame of hym went, that after he was taken, he wolde take no maner sustenaūce. wherfore he was the sooner put vnto deth. Of this Hugh a versyfyer made these two verses folowynge.

Finis cum signis a te miser ensis & ignis
Hugo securis equus absulit omne decus.

whiche verses to them that vnderstande no latyne, maye in thys wyse be expowned or engilysshed.

wyth ropes were thou bounde, and on the galowe honge.
And from thy body thyne hed wyth swerde was kytte.
Thy boweis in the fyre were throwe and burned longe,
Thy body in foure pecys eke wyth an axe was slytte,
wyth horse before drawyn fewe men pytyenge it/
Thus wyth these turmentys for thy synnes sake,
From ꝑ wretched Hugh, all worldy welthe was take.

In thys meane tyme and season, the kynge was conueyed vnto the castell of Kenelworthe, and there kepte vnder the garde of syr Henry of Lancaster, or brother vnto the erle Thomas of Lancaster that was behedyd at Pounfrette. And mayster Robert Baldoke the kynges chaunceliour was sent vnto London, and put into the pryson of Newgate/ where after he dyed myserably. The erle Johñ of Arundell was also put to deth at Herforde, wythin foure dayes of syr Hugh the yonger Spenser. Then ꝑ quene wyth syr Edwarde hyr sonne and wyth a goodly company of lordes and gentylmen retourned vnto London / and there of the cytesyns wyth greate honoure and ioye was receyued, vppon the daye of saynte Barbara, or the .iiii. daye of December/ and so conueyed vnto westmynster. where in the octaues of the Epyphanye of our lorde, a parlyament was holden/ durynge the whych certayne solēpne messangers were sent vnto the kynge to the castell of Kenelworthe/ that is to saye, thre bysshoppes, thre erles, two abbottes, iii. barons, and two iustyces, wyth the procuratoure of that parlyament syr wyllyam Trussell, to depose hym of all kyngly dygnytye, as before was agreed by all the lordes spyrytuall and temporall and comons of ꝑ sayd parlyament/ and they to resygne vnto the kynge, all homages and feautyes to hym before made in the name of all the barony of England. Then the forenamed syr wyllyam Trussell vppon the daye of the conuersyon of saynte Poule or the .xxv. daye of Januarye, by the authorȳte of hys office in the presence of the foresayd lordes hadde these wordes folowynge vnto the kynge. I wyllyam Trussell, in ꝑ name of all men of this lande of Englande, and procuratoure of this parlyament/ resygne to the Edwarde, ꝑ homage that was made to the somtyme/ and from thys tyme forth, depryue the of all kyngly power. And I shall neuer be attendaunt vnto ꝑ as kynge after thys tyme. And thus was Edwarde the seconde deposyd and his sonne made kynge/ when he hadde regned full. xviii. yeres. vi. monethes & odde dayes. Than Edwarde thus remaynynge in pryson, as fyrst in the castell of Kenelworth, & after in the castell of Barkle/ toke greate repentaūce of hys former lyfe, and made a lamentable complaynte for that he hadde so greuously offended god. wherof a parte I haue after set out / but not all, leste it shulde be

tedyous

tedyous to the reders or heters.

Dampnum mihi contulit tempore brumali,
Fortuna satis aspera vehementis mali.
Nullus est tam sapiens, mitis, aut formosus,
Tam prudens virtutibus, ceteris in famosus,
Quin stultus reputabitur, & satis despectus,
Si fortuna prosperos auertat effectus.

These wyth many other after the same makynge I haue seen/ whyche are reported to be of hys owne makynge in the tyme of hys emprysonement. The whych for length of tyme I haue lefte out of thys worke/ and shewyd ỹ effecte of them in Englysh as folowyth.

Whan Saturne with his colde isy face, (whyte,
The ground with hys frostys turnyth the grene to
The tyme of wynter which trees doth deface,
And causyth all verdure to auoyde quyte/ (alyte,
Than fortune, which sharpe was with stormes not
Hath me assautyd with hyr frowarde wyll,
And me beclypped with dangers ryght yll.

What man in this worlde is so wyse or fayre,
So prudent, so vertuose, or famous vnder thayre/
But that for a foole, and for a man dispised,
Shalle take whan fortune is from hym deuised?

Alas now I crye but no man doth me moone/
For I sue to them that pytye of me haue none.
Many with gret honours I dyd whylom auaunce
That newe wyth dyshonoure done me stynge and launce.
And suche as somtyme dyd me greatly feere/
Me dispise, and set not with sclaūder me to deere

O mercyfull god, what loue they dyd me shewe,
And with detraccion they do me hacke and hewe.
Alas moste syrfull wretche why shulde I thus complayne,
If god be pleasyd that I shulde thus susteyne?
For the great offence before by me doone. (soone,
Wherfore to the good lorde I wyll retourne efte
And hoolly cōmytte me thy great mercy vntyll,
And take in pacience all that may be thy wyll,
And all onely the serue with all dylygence/
Alas that before this tyme I had not that sence.

But now good lord, which arte omnipotent
Behold me moste wretched and greatly penitent/
And of my trespas forgyuenesse thou me graunt/
And by what sorow my carkes is now daunt,
Graunte it may be to my sowle remedy,
That the sooner I maye attayne it by.
For to the swete Jesu I yelde me sore wepynge/
And aske of the pardon for my greuous synnynge.

Moste blessed Jesu,
Roote of all vertue,
Graunte I maye the sue,
In all humylyte.
Sen thou for our good
Lyste to shede thy blood
And stretche the vpon ỹ roode
For our iniquyte.

And thou most myld mother and virgin most pure
That bareste swete Jesu the worldes redempture,
That shynyst and flourysshest as floure moste sure/
And lyke as nardus of his swete odoure,
Passyth all other, so thou in all honoure
Surmountes all sayntes by thy great excellence/
Wherfore to prayse for my grieuose offence,

I the beseche,
Moste holsome leche
That thou wylt seche
For me suche grace.
That when my body vyle,
My soule shall cryle,
Thou bryngе in short whyle,
It in reste and peace.

Francia.

LEwys the.vii. of ỹ name, and sonne vnto Philyppe le Beawe, or ỹ. iiii. Philyppe/ began his reygne ouer ỹ realme of Fraūce in the yere of our lorde. M. iii. hundreth and. xv, and the. viii. yere of the seconde Edward then kynge of Englande. Anone as thys Lewys was crowned/ Enguerram, whyche as ye haue herde, was chyefe and moste secrete counceyloure wyth Phylyppe the. iiii. laste

kynge

kynge of Fraunce, was called to accompte by the meane of Charles de Valoys vncle vnto thys kynge. And for so moche as the sayd Enguerram had gyuen sharpe and hastye wordes vnto the sayd Charles, in affyrmyng that moche of the kynges treasoure remayned in the handes of the sayde Charles/for thys he toke so great displeasure agayne the sayd Enguerrã, and bare towarde hym suche rãcoure and malyce, that he lefte nat tyll he had bereuyd hym of hys lyfe/ so that in processe he was accused of .xxxvi. artycles concerning treason & iniury done vnto kyng Philip forsayde, & vnto the realme of Fraunce/ which articles in order are set out in ỹ frẽch cronicle whych I here ouerpasse. By force wherof thys Enguerram was lastly conuycte and iuged vnto deth and for the same in the cuyn of assencion of our Lorde hanged vppon the gybet of Parys. Thys yere also fell greate scarcyte of corne and frute in Fraunce, by meane of vnseasonable wederynge/ as was in Englande in the .ix. and .x. yeres, & before & after of the reygne of Edward the seconde at thys day & then kyng of Englande. By reason wherof great sampne and deth of poore people fell in Fraunce, as it then dyd in Englande.

ye haue before in the .xxvii. yere of Philip father vnto this Lewys hard howe the Flemynges agayne rebelled/ & howe by the meane of Enguerram, the Frenche hoste was then retourned with dishonour into Fraũce for reuengemẽt wherof, thys Lewys assembled a ryght stronge armye of the more partye of all the noble men of Fraũce/ & in the moneth of Septẽbre entred the countrey of Flaũders & so came vnto ỹ towne or nere there vnto called Courtray, & lodged hys people nere vnto the ryuer of Lys or Lyse, for so moche as ỹ brydges ouer that ryuer by the Flemynges were broke. where the kyng with hys hoste so lyẽge/ the Flemynges vpõ ỹ other syde laye in howge nombre for to defende the passage of the Frenchmen. In whyche tyme & season fell suche plenty of rayne, that the ways wared noyous & foule in all that countrey. By reason whereof vytayll whyche thã was as aboue is sayd scant, was than more scars.

And ouer ỹ the feelde where the hoste laye was so wete & myry / that men and beastes were to greuously noyed. wherfore in conclusyõ ỹ kyng consyderyng those great hynderaunces & harmes to hys lordes & comõs, & that he myght in no maner wynne ouer to hys enemyes / he retourned as other before times had done, with lytell honour into Fraũce/ to ỹ great losse of ỹ kynges ordenaũce & other stuffe that myght nat be carryed thẽs by reason of depenes of the way. For whych cause & causes, the kyng was so sore displeased/ ỹ he made then a great othe, that yf he myght lyue tyll the yere folowyng, ỹ he shuld be sette so the Flemynges ỹ they shuld nat escape hys daũger / & ỹ he shuld neuer take treatye nor ende with thẽ, except they wolde fully & holy put thẽ in his grace & mercy. But in the yere folowynge about ỹ feest of Pentecoste whẽ the sayd Lewys had scantly reygned ii. yeres, he dyed at Boys in Vyncent & the .vi. daye of Junii honorably was buryed at saynt Denyse, leuyng after hym none issue male / wherfore hys brother Phylyppe succeded hym in the kyngdome.

Francis.

PHylyp the .v. of that name and brother of the forenamed Lewys, whyche for his heygth was surnamed Phylyp the longe / began hys reygne ouer ỹ Frẽchmẽ in ỹ yere of our

of our lorde. M.CCC. and. xbii, and the. x. yere of Edwarde the seconde than kynge of Englande. But fyrste he reygned but as regent of Fraūce, for so moche as Clemence the wyfe of kynge Lewys was left of her sayd husbande with chylde. The whiche in processe of tyme was delyuered of a man chylde named Johan, that dyed shortly after. After whose dethe ỳ sayd Philipp was forthwith proclaymed kynge of Fraunce, and crowned at Parys aboute Chrystmas folowynge/al be it ỳ the duke of Burgoyn with other for a whyle withsayd that coronacyon/and wolde haue preferred the doughter of Lewys last deed. But other of the lordes and nobles of Fraunce wolde not be agreable, ỳ a woman shulde enheryte so great a kyngdome. By meane wherof vnkyndnes kyndled atwene the kynge and the sayd duke. But by wyse medyatoures they were after acorded, in suche wyse that the sayd duke maryed the eldest doughter of ỳ kynge.

In this passe tyme suche meanes were made by the Flemynges, that an vnyte and accorde was stablysshed atwene Fraunce and them for ỳ tyme that it helde. whiche peace as testifyeth the Frenche cronycle, was labourd and ended by a cardynall named Josselyn, & sent frome ỳ. xrii. Johan than pope/ so that by medyacyon of the sayd cardynall, the erle of Flaūdres was receyued vnto ỳ kynges grace/ and at Parys dyd vnto ỳ Frenche kynge his homage, & sware vnto hym fealtye.

In the thyrde yere of the reygne of this Philipp/ the prouost of Parys hauyng in his pryson a Pycarde a man of great rychesse, whiche for felony or lyke cryme was iudged to be hanged. The sayd prouoste for great benefyte to hym doone, and payment of great summes by ỳ sayd Pycarde, toke an other poore innocent man & put hym to dethe in stede of the sayd Pycarde. Of the whiche offence whā due proffe of it was made before the kynges counceyll/ the sayd prouoste for the same dede was put vnto lyke iudgment.

In the fyfth yere of the sayd Philipp, all the lazarves of the countrey of Langadocke were brente, for so moche as they were accused of theyr owne confessyon proued, that they had poysoned and entended to haue poysoned all the welles of that countrey. And for many Jewes were vnto them consentynge/ therfore many of them suffered lyke iudgment. In this yere also for somoche as in those dayes in dyuers places of Fraunce, a fonde prophecy was brought vp amōge the comune people, that shepherdes and herdes shulde wynne the holy lande. Than they assembled thē selfe in dyuers places and companyes, and lastly came togyder at Parys. where they were so many in nombre, by reason of other of the comune people that fell vnto them, that the Prouost of Parys was not of power to withstande thē/ so that they brake prysones and toke out suche persones as them pleased/and from thens wente beggynge and robbynge tyll they came into Langedocke. where they fel vpon the Jewes, and robbed theym of all suche mouables as they myght fynde, and slewe of theym also. wherfore the other of the Jewes ferynge the sayd comunes/ gathered them with theyr wyues & chyldren to the noūbre of. v. C. into a towre, and thought to defende them & theyr wyues and chyldren from the sayd herdes. But anone as they hadde wyttynge therof/they assawted the sayd towre so egerly, that in the ende seynge they myght not escape, for very despyte they threwe theyr chyldren downe

downe at theyr hedes / & after slewe eyther other, for they shulde not fall in the handes of theyr enemyes / or elles to auoyde ꝑ peynes of the fyre, whiche the herdes hadde begunne to fasten vpon the sayd towre. whā the sayd Herdes hadde thus robbed and slayne ꝑ Jewes of Langdocke / they departed thens and yode towarde a a countrey called Carcasson, entendynge lyke robbery as they before had vsed. wherof ꝑ countrey beynge warned / stopped & kepte so the passages, & withstode them with suche power and strengthe, that they dyssuered thē selfe by small companyes / so that many of them were taken and hanged, & the other fled in saue gardynge them selfe / and so this folysshe prophecy was ended with synne and shame.

Kynge Philyppe by meane of yll cōseyle sette a great taske vpon his comunes / that is to meane the fyfth parte of theyr mouable goodes. For the whiche, consyderynge he had no charg of warres i no place, they murmured & grudged wonder sore. But how it was or this tare was leuyed / he fell in a feuer quarteyne & a great flyx. whiche sekenesse fell vpon hym by prayer of the comunes after the Frenche boke, for leuyenge of ꝑ sayd greuous tare. Than for hym was made many solempne processyons & other prayers. How be it in lōge processe he dyed, whan he had languysshedde from the begynnynge of August tyl the. viii. day of January. Upon whiche day he dyed, whan he had reygned. iiii. peres & .vii. monethes & odde dayes / leuynge after hym none heyre male / wherfore the crowne dyscēded vnto his brother Charles erle of the Marches.

Francis.

¶ Charles the fyfth.

Carolus the fyfth or Charles the yongest of the thre bretherne or sonnes of Philyppe le Bewe begāne his reygne ouer ꝑ Frenchme, in ꝑ moneth of January & yere of our lorde. M.CCC. and. xxii, and the. xv. yere of ꝑ secōde Edwarde yet kynge of Englande / & was crowned at Raynes the. xii. day of Februarye nexte ensuynge. After whiche solempnyte fynysshed & ended / he in shorte proces of tyme after sent vnto the. xxii. Johan than pope, & assertayned hym of ꝑ gossyprede ꝑ was atwene hym and Blanche his wyfe. wherof the exampnacyon by ꝑ sayd pope was committed vnto the bisshoppes of Paris & of Beauuais, & mayster Godfrey de Bleffys protho notary of the countre of Rome. The whiche after due and perfyte examinacyon in that mater made / they founde that Mawde countesse of Artoys and mother to the fore named quene Blanche, was godmother vnto kynge Charles her husbande. Of the whiche whan they had made reporte vnto the pope / he gaue sentēce that the sayd matrymony was not legyttymat / and cōmaunded a deuorce and a separacyon to be made atwene those. ii. persones. The whiche was shortly after executed. In the secōde yere of this Charles, dyed Robert erle of Flaūdres without yssue. wherfore the sayd erledam fell into ꝑ Frenche kynges handes / so that of it he was in processe by thagrement of the lordes of the same, put in peasyble possessyon / all be it the erle of Neuers made therunto a pretence & tytle.

And in this yere kynge Charles about the feest of saynt Mathewe in Septēbre, maryed his secōde wyfe named Mary the syster of the kynge of Bohemy

of Bohemy or Beme, and doughter of Henry erle of Lucembourgh and late emperoure of Almayne, named in the lyne of the emperours Henry the.viii, or after some wryters .vii. Also in ỳ sayd yere one named Jourdan of the Ile/a Gascoyne borne, a man of noble lynage but lowe & vyle of condycyons, to whom the forsaid pope Johñ in maryage hadde gyuen hys nyese for reuerence of his byrth/ thys season by the meane of his vyle condycyons and suche dyshoneste cõpanye as he drewe vntyll hym, he fell into many sclaũderous dyces/so that lastly he was accused of rape & murder and of felony. Of the whych he was at length in.xviii. artycles by due profe made cõpycte by the lawe, and iudged to be hanged. But the kynge at the request of the pope and for the honoure of hys blode/graunted to hym a charter, and pardoned hym of all former transgressyons. But that not wythstandynge he in processe of tyme fell or retourned vn to hys olde accustomyd condicyons. And among other greate crymes by hym executed / he slewe a sergeaunt of armys belongynge to the kynge, that to hym was sent in message. For whyche murder and other detestable dedys, he was newely accused/ and vppon that somonyd to apere at Parys before the kynge and hys counsayle. At whych day of apparence he came to the sayde cytye wyth a great companye, and some noble men whiche were to hym nere of kynne / and excused hym to the vttermost of theyr powers. But agayne hym and to accuse hym came many other lordes & barons. Of the whyche the marques of Ampton or Dampton wyth hys sonne were chyefe, that put causes of complaynt agayne hym. The which made suche proufys and declaracyõs agayne the sayde Jourdan, that he was cõmytted vnto the chastelet of Parys, & there to remayne as a prysoner. And in processe of tyme suche maters and trespaces were proued vpon hym, that he by authorite of a parlyament holden at Compeyng was lastly iudged to dye. And soone after, that is to meane the. vii. day of Maye, he was drawyn to the gybbet of Parys and there hanged. In the thyrde yere of his reygne/thys Charlys gaue vnto the erle of Neuers ỳ before tyme hadde made clayme to the erledome of Flaunders, ỳ sayde erledom/the whyche of the Flemynges and inhabytauntes of that cõtrey was wel and ioyously receyued. Than he in shorte whyle after gaue vnto the townes of Gaunt, Brugys, Ipre, and other, dyuers pryuyleges and grauntes to theyr great auauntage & profyte. But it was not longe after that he wanne of them as myche grudge and hatred as he to fore had loue & good wyll. And all for a tare ỳ he set vpon the dwellers of Brugys and the cõtrey nere there vnto/ and specyally of them that dwelled in the countrey. For they thought ỳ theyr charge exceded farre the charge of ỳ dwellers within the towne. wherfore by secrete meanys they appoynted a daye of assemble amonge them selfe/ and sodenly well armed entred the towne of Brugys, and slewe therin dyuers of the erles seruauntes, and some of the borough mayster of the sayde towne, suche as they suspected to be of counseyle of the leuyenge of the sayd taske. In the.iiii. yere of his reygne, thys Charlys after the dethe of Mary hys seconde wyfe, by dyspensacion of the pope the.xxii. Johñ/ he maryed Jane his cosyn Germayn the doughter of Lewys erle of Eurour, and vncle vnto thys kynge Charlys, or brother to hys father Phylyppe le Beawe.

IN this aboueſayd .iiii. yere/the quene of Englande and ſyſter vnto thys kyng Charlys of Fraũce, to treate an vnite and peace betwene hyr lorde and hyr brother, for the warre made in Gaſcoyne, as before is towched in the .xv. yere of Edward the ſeconde hyr lorde and huſbande/ and there tarved, and retourned, as aboue in the ſayde yere is expreſſed.

In thys yere alſo the erle of Flaũders fore named, for ſuſpeccyon that he hadde to Robert of Flaũders hys vncle, leſte he for hys ſyniſter auaũtage wold ſupplant hym of that erledome/ he made letters vnto the gouernours of the towne, where ꝑ ſayd Robert was reſyaunt and abydyng, that they ſhulde put hym to dethe. But by the warnyng of his olde and truſty frende the erlys chaũcellour/ he was warned and ſo auoyded that towne. For thys greate malyce and rancoure aroſe betwene this Robert and the erle, whyche was not ſhortly pacyfyed. But it was not longe after that a nother taſke or impoſycyon was leuyed of the townes of Gaunt, Brugys, Ipre, and other townys of Flaunders. The whyche taſke was leuyed in recompenſemẽt of ſuche warres made vpon Flaunders by Philyp le Beawe/ or more dyrectely for paymẽt of twelue thouſande pownde awardyd by Joſelyn the cardynall, as before is ſhewed in the ſeconde yere of the .v. Philyppe, that the Flemynges ſhulde paye to the French kyng for byenge of theyr peace. Of thys taſke to be leuyers or gaderers was aſſygned the prynce pall men of the ſayde townes/ ꝑ whiche by theyr demeanure in the leuynge therof demeaned them in ſuche wyſe, that they ranne in great hatred of the comon people. In ſo myche that they accuſyd theym and ſayde that they hadde leuyed or gatheryd moche more than the ſayde taſke amounted. wherfore they deſyred of the erlys counſayle, that the ſayde perſons myghte be called to accoũpt. But thys requeſte myght not be optayned/ whyche cauſed the comons to runne in further grudge and murmure. In other thynge alſo cauſed ſuſpeccyon/ for the erlys counſayle and the ſayde collectours hadde ſo many ſecrete aſſembles. At lengthe whan the erlys counſayle apperceyued the murmure of the comons/ they wyth the collectours condyſcendyd for a trayne, to haue taken certeyne capytaynes of the ſayd comõs/ and ſayde that at Turnaye at a daye aſſygned, the ſayd collectours ſhuld yelde vp theyr accoumpte. At whych daye the erle in proper perſone came vnto the ſayde towne of Tournaye. And there whan ꝑ erle with the other of hys counceyle ſhulde haue executed theyr purpoſed entẽt/ how it was by ſome warnyng or monycyon that the comons had, they wythſtode the erle and hys companye, and in the ende ſlewe many of theyr enemyes/ and toke the erle and putte hym in ſure keppynge wythin the towne of Brugys. But in thys buſynes by meane of ꝑ erlys party, a great part of the forſayde towne was brent. wherfore the towne toke partye with the Flemynges/ and were a greate cauſe that the erle was ſo taken and putte frome hys entent. Than the forſayde comons to the more pleaſure of the erle/ admytted for theyr lorde and capytayne Roberte the vncle of the erle forſayde/ and amonge them reputed hym for erle of Flaunders. The whyche for takynge vpon hym delyuered frõ pryſon hys frende the erlys chaunceilour, whyche as aboue is ſayde had delyuered hym from former daũger, & made hym chefe of his counceyle.

But

But to all thys was the towne of Gaunt repugnaũt/ in so moche that mortall warre beganne to sourde betweene the sayd towne & the towne of Bruges & other. And so farfourth cõtynued / that shortly after the people of Gaunt and of the other townes, met wyth them of Bruges in playne batayll, & fought cruelly. But in the ende they of Gaũt chased thẽ of Bruges/and slewe of them beyonde fyue hundreth men. But yet the erle was neuer the rather deliuered. After this the Frenche kyng sent vnto them of Bruges, requyryng them in curtoyse maner that they wolde set theyr erle at lybertye. But they sent the messangers agayne wythout spede of theyr message.

In thys whyle dyed Charles de Ualoys brother vnto Phylyppe le Beaw, & vncle vnto this kyng Charles/the whych langupssshed longe in a consumpcyõ or he dyed/in so moch that the oppynyon of the people was, ỳ he was so punyssshed for the iniury & malyce ỳ he bare towarde Enguerram / the whyche as ye haue before harde in the fyrste yere of thys kyng, was put vnto deth. And the rather thys fame ran vpon the sayd Charles/for so moche as in ỳ tyme of hys sycknes, he gaue great almesse. And to suche persones as he gaue or sente hys almesse vnto/he wylled them as well to pray for the soule of the sayde Enguerram as for hys owne hele.

Thys Charles de Ualoyes left after hym a sonne named Philipe de Ualoyes/the whych Phylip for so moch as thys Charles now kyng of fraũce dyed wythout issue, he by fauoure of the lordes of that regyon was made kyng of Fraunce/& put by the ryght and tytle of Edwarde the thyrde thã kyng of Englande, the sonne of Isabel & doughter of Phylipp le Beawe. whych Isabell by dyssent was right-

ful enheritour of ỳ crowne of Fraũce For whyche tytle was after cruell warre betwene the sayd Edwarde & Phylipp, as in the story of the sayde Edwarde after shall appere. In the v. yere of kyng Charles the Burghmaysters & Schepyns, ỳ is to meane the rulers of the towne of Bruges/ deliuered theyr erle & set hym at larg vpon certayne condicions folowyng the whych to be obserued they caused hym to be solẽply sworne. Fyrste that after that day he shuld nat punysshe nor hurt any of the lande of Flaundres, for any displeasure to hym done or any of hys seruauntes or councel, sen the tyme that he was erle, concernyng any cause of theyr rebellion. Secũdaryly ỳ he shuld nat abrydge nor mynysshe any of theyr lyberties that they of olde tyme haue had, or by hym newly to them graunted. Thyrdely, that in all grose maters that concerned the gouernaunce of hys realme / suche as he knewe well dyuerse of them to be expert therein, that he shulde nothynge conclude or do without theyr aduyces and assentys. And fourthly that after that day he shuld neuer vse the counsayl of the abbot of Uersellay/which they knewe for theyr dedely enemy, for so moche as they before tyme had slayne hys father named Petyr Floce or Floze in the batayll of Courtray as in the syxtene yere of Phylyppe le Beawe is before shewed, how be it the name of the sayde Petyr is nat there expressed. After whyche artycles wyth other fermely by the erle promysed to be kept and holden/ he was deliuered & set at large.

In the syxte yere of the reygne of thys Charles / a greate dyssencyon and varyaunce arose betwene the Dolphyne of Uyen and the duke of Sauoy/ so that mortall batayll ensued vppon the same. In the whyche

mothe people were slayne vpon both partyes. But in ꝑ ende the Dolphyn of Vyen had the better / and toke as ꝓysoners in the feelde the duke of Burgoyne and the erle of Ancerne, wyth other noble men. In thys yere also the Gascoynes with ꝑ Englissh men made warre vppon the bozders of Fraunce. Agayne whome kynge Charles sent a cosyn of hys, named syz Alphons de Spayne. But he spēt the kyng greate good, and retourned with lytle wozshyppe into Fraunce, where he dyed shoztely after. Then the kynge sent agayne the sayd Gascoynes the erle of Ewe, & syz Robert Barthzam than marshall of Fraūce, with dyuerse other noble men. In whyche season the Gascoynes wyth the sayd Englysshemen had gotten the castell of a towne standynge in ꝑ coūtre of Poytyew oz Poytyers named saynt Dyngne / within whyche towne the sayd erle & other the nobles of Fraūce were lodged / so ꝑ betwene them dayly cruell assautes were exercysed, to the great hurte of bothe partyes. Lastly betwene thē was a daye of batayll in playne feelde accozded / where the Frenchemen to the entēt to haue the aduaūtage of the sayd feeld & there to enbatayll thē selfe to theyr mooste auaūtage / the day of the sayd appoyntemēt issued of ꝑ towne, & yode to the place assygned, whyche was a good dystaunce frome the forsayde towne, & there taryed theyr enemyes. But the Gascoynes entendyng an other purpose, yode streyght vnto ꝑ forsayde towne / and knowyng it to be without greate defence, assauted and shoztly gatte it and set it on fyre nat sparynge chyrches noz other places of relygyon, as affermeth ꝑ frēch boke / and that done retourned vnto the fyresayd castel, and in ꝓcesse of tyme after retourned agayne into Guyan. whan kynge Charles was assertayned of thys delusion / he was greuously dyscontented agayne the Gascoynes, and manysshed theym very sozе. But in the moneth of Decembze shoztly ensuynge, he was taken with a greuouse sykenesse / so that he dyed vppon Candelmas euyn folowynge at Boys in Vyncent, and was entered at saynt Denyse whā he had reygned fyue yeres and odde dayes / leuynge after hym none heyre of hys body, excepte the quene was than wyth chylde. whyche chylde dyed soone after ꝑ byrthe. wherfoze some questions foz that kyngedome were moued as befoze touched in the ende of the fourthe yere of thys Charles, & after shalbe forther expzessed.

Anglia.

Edwarde the thyrde.

EDwarde the.iii. of that name, & sonn of Edward the seconde, and of Isabell ꝑ alone ly doughter & chylde of Phylip le Beawe oz Phylyppe the fayre, father to Charles laste kynge of Fraunce / beganne to reygne as kynge of Englande his father yet lyuynge, the syr & twenty daye of January, in the ende of the yere of grace a thousande thre hundzeth and syr and twenty, and the fourth yere of Charles the fyfth last kynge of Fraunce / and was crowned at westmynster vppon the daye of the purysycacyon of oure Lady nerte ensuynge.

In hys begynnynge came forthe plentye and gracyous happes / foz the erthe tooke plentye, the ayre tempoure, the see quyetnesse, and to the chyrche grewe peace.

In hys

In thys fyrste yere he confermed the fyberties and fraunchyses of ꝑ cytye of London / and ordeyned that the mayre for the tyme beyng shuld sytte in all places of iugement within the lyberty of the same for chiefe iustyce, the kynges persone onely excepte/ & that euery alderman that hadde ben mayre shuld be iustyce of peace in all London and Myddelsex/& euerych alderman that hadde not be mayre shulde be iustyce of peace wythin his owne warde. And also he graunted to the cytezyns the fee ferme of London for .iii. hundreth pownde / & that they shulde not be constrayned to go out of the cytye to fyghte or defende the land for any nede. Also that after that daye the fraunchyse of the cytye shulde not be seasyd into the kynges handes / but onely for treason or rebellyon done by the hole cytye. And Southwerke was admytted to be vnder the correccyon and rule of the cytye/and the mayre of London to be baylyffe of Southwerke / and the mayre to chose & ordeyne such a baylyffe of that borough as hym lyked/ whiche ordinaunce endureth to this day. In the moneth of Apryll, for so mych as meanes were made by the frere prechours or the blacke freres, for the delyuery of kynge Edwarde the .ii. out of pryson/therfore he was had out of the castell of Kenelworth, & cõueyed vnto ꝑ castel of Berkeley. where after about saynt Mathewys tyde the sayde Edward by ꝑ meanes of syr Roger Mortimer was mysera bly slayne. Of this Edward are lyke optinyõs as were of Thomas of Lancaster, whyche I referre to goddys iudgement. For certayne it is that for hys former wyld and insolent ly-

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxvi.

Henry Darcy.

Rychарde Betayne.

Anno.i.

Johñ Hawteyne.

uynge he toke greate repentaunce. And so he hadde great cause/ for du-rynge hys regyne there was hedyd and put to deth by iugement, vppon xxviii. barons and knyghtes, ouer ꝑ noble men that were slayne in Scot lande by hys infortunyte.

Kynge Edwarde as yet beynge of tender age, not passing xv. yeres/ he-ryng of the great pryde and presup-cyon of the Scottes, and howe they dayly warred vpon the borders, and entryd the lande in brennynge and spoylyng his people/ assembled hys people about Easter, & so sped hym toward Scotland. In whych meane tyme the Scottes were entred the land, & were comen as farre as Stã-hop in Tyrdale/and had lodged thẽ in the woddes of Stanhop parke in dyuers buysshementys. wherof ꝑ kyng beyng enfourmed, made such prou-syon that he beset them roũde about, and trusted well to haue brought thẽ vnder hys subiectyon. But when the kynge thoughte to be of them moste sure/ by treason of some of hys hoste the Scottes were clene escaped and retourned into Scotlande. wherof ꝑ fame ranne vpon syr Roger Mor-tymer. But how so it was ꝑ kyng lost that iournay, and retourned into En glande with lytle worshyppe. And here ye shall vnderstand that to this day the olde mayre and shyryffes, ꝑ is to meane Hamunde Chyckwell, Benet Fulham, and Johñ Canston, stode in offyce tyll ꝑ day folowyng of Symõ & Jude, which was almost ꝑ full of ꝑ fyrst yere of ꝑ sayd Edward the .iii. And then for the residue of the fyrst yere, & for the more party of the second yere, was elected and charged the mayre and shyryffes folowynge.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxvii.

IN the ende of the fyrste yere of thys kynge Edwarde, & begynnyng of thys mayres yere/the kynge after Crystmas maryed dame Phylyppe ye eriles doughter of Henawde in the cytye of yorke, in the euyn of ye conuersiõ of sayntPaule, or ye. xxiiii. daye of January.

The parlyament of Northamton.

And soone after the kyng about ye feast of Pentecoste, helde hys parlyament at Northampton. At the whych parlyament by cuyll coũsayl, wherof syr Roger Mortymer & the olde quene bare the blame/the kynge made wyth the Scottes an vnprofytable and a dyshonorable peace. For fyrste he released to theym theyr feauty and homage. Also he delyuered vnto theym olde auncyent wrytynges sealed wyth the seales of the kynge of Scottes, and of dyuerse lordes of that lande bothe spyrytuall & temporall, with many other charters & patentes, by the whyche ye kynges of Scottes oblyged them to be frodaryes vnto ye crowne of Englande. At whyche season also was delyuered certeyne ieweiles, whych before tymes had ben wõne frõ ye Scottes by kynges of England. Amonge the whych the blacke crosse of Scotlande is specyally named, a relyke accompted of great prectosyte. And nat alonely the kyng by hys synystre coũsayll lost hys tytle and ryght that he had to the realme of Scotlande, as farre as the sayd coũsayl might helpe it/but also all lordes & barones & all other men of England that had any landes or rentes within Scotlande, loste theyr ryghte in lyke maner, excepte they wolde dwel vpon the sayd landes and becomme the kynge of Scottes lyege men. And soone after was concluded a maryage betwene Dauyd le Bruse sonne of Robert le Bruse, and Jane the kynges syster/whyche of diuerse writers is surnamed Jane of the towre or Johan of Towers.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxvii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxviii.

Symon Fraunces.

Hamonde Chyckewell. Anno. ii.

Henry Combmartyn.

IN thys yere, whyche at thys daye was the seconde yere of the kyng/Dauyd forsayd the son of Roberte le Bruse thã kynge of Scottes, maryed vppon the daye of mary Magdaleyne at hys towne than of Berwyke, ye fore named Jane syster vnto the kynge of Englande. But it was nat longe after or the Scottes in despyte of the Englysshemen, called hyr Jane make peace. And also to theyr more derysyon, they made dyuerse trusses, roundes, and songes, of the whyche one is specially remembred as folowyth.

Longe beerdys hartles
Paynted hoodes wytles
Gay cotes graceles
Maketh Englande thryfteles.

whyche ryme as sayth Guydo was made by the Scottes, prynsypally for the deformyte of clothyng that at those dayes was vsed by Englysshemen. Thanne the kynge at hys parlyament holden at Walysbury, made syr Roger Mortymer erle of the Marche/and syr Johan of Eltha hys owne brother he made erle of Cornewayll. where after the sayd syr Roger toke moche more vpon hym than other lordes were contented

tented wyth / so that by the kynges mother and hym, all thynge was ruled and guyded. And suche lordes as before tyme were assygned to haue the rule and guydynge of the kynge, as the erle of kent, syr Edmunde of wodestock ꝑ kynges vncle, ꝑ erle of Lácastre, ꝑ erle marshal with dyuers bysshoppes & barons & knyghtes to the noumbre of.xii. in short proces of tyme for the more party were set by / so that the allonely rule of the lande rested in the quene and the sayde syr Roger. By meane wherof many and great thynges of the realme grewe out of ordre, whiche were tedyous to reherce.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxviii. Anno domini. M.CCC.xxix.

Rycharde Lazar.

Johan Grauntham. Anno.iii.

Henry Gylours.

IN this thyrde mayres yere / ꝑ aboue sayde syr Edmunde of wodestoke erle of kente entendynge the reformacion of the mysse ordre of the realme, beynge enformed that his brother syr Edward was in lyfe / deuysed certayne letters towchynge the delyuery of his sayd brother, and sent them to his sayd brother, of whyche dede he was shortly after accused / and by auctorite of a parlyamẽt holden at westmynster aboute Pentecost folowynge, he for that dede was iudged to haue his hede smyten of. wherof execucyon was doone the fyue and twenty day of May folowynge in the forsayd cytye of wynchester. And soone after kyng Edwarde sayled into Fraũce, and dyd homage vnto Phylyp de Valoyes then newly made kynge of Fraũce, for the duchy of Guyan in the towne of Amyas. After whiche homage so doone he was rychely feasted of the Frenche kynge, and solaced in dyuerse maner of fourmes / as by iustes, huntynge, hawkynge, and many other pleasures / and then in louynge maner toke his leue of the kynge, and so returned into Englande. The fyftenth day of June folowynge, was borne the kynges fyrst sonne, and at wodestoke crystened and named Edward / whiche in proces of tyme dyd growe to a noble and famouse man, and is moost comunely called in all cronycles prynce Edwarde. Of whome in this story some excellente dedes shall be expressed.

In the moneth of Octobre vpon the.xvii. daye & euen of saynt Luke / syr Roger Mortymer before named, by meanes of syr Wylliã Moũtague, syr Rafe Stafforde, syr Johñ Neuyle & other, by a cõpased meane was takẽ in ꝑ castel of Notynghã / not withstãdynge ꝑ the keyes of ꝑ sayde castell were dayli & nyghtly vnder his ward and keppynge / the kynge, the quene, the olde quene, with dyuerse other nobles, thã beynge in the same castell lodged. The maner of the takyng of this erle syr Roger Mortymer I passe ouer, for the dyuersyte that I haue sene therof of sundry writers. But many agreen that he with syr Symonde of Bedforde and other, were in that nyght taken and after sente vnto the towre of London / and there put in strayte keppynge. Then the kynge in shorte proceſſe after called a parlyament at London, for the reformacyon of many thynges mysordered in the realme, by meane of ꝑ forsayde syr Roger, as the comune fame went than.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xxix. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xl.

Robert of Ely.

Symon Swaylond. Anno.viii.

Thomas Harwoode.

IN this.viii.mayres yere & ende of the thyrde yere of this kyng duryng the forelayd parliamente as aboue is touched at Londō, the forelayd syr Roger Mortymer was accused before the lordes of the parliamēt of these artycles with other / whereof v. I synde erpressed. And fyrste was layed vnto hys charge, that by hys meanes syr Edwarde of Carnaruan by mooste tyrrannouse deth in the castell of Barkley was murdered. Secundaryly that to the kynges great dyshonoure & dammage, the Scottes by hys meanes & treason escaped frō the kyng at ỳ parke on Stāhope whych then shuld haue fallen in the kynges daūger, ne had ben ỳ fauour of the sayd Roger to thē thā shewed. Thyrdely to hym was layed, that he for execucīō of the sayd treason, receyued of ỳ capptayne of the sayd Scottes named syr James Dowglas, great summes of money. And also for lyke mede, he had to the kynges great dyshonoure and hurte of hys realme, concluded a peace betwene ỳ kyng and the Scottes / & caused to be delyuered vnto theym the charter or endenture called Ragman, wyth many other thynges to the Scottes great aduaūtage & impouerysshyng of this realme of Englād. Fourthlye was layed to hym, that where by synystre & vnlefull meanes contrary ỳ kynges pleasure & wyll, or assente of the lordes of the kynges counsayl, he had gotten into hys possessyō moche of the kynges treasoure / he vnskylfully wasted & myspent it. By reason wherof the kyng was in necessyte, & dryuen parforce to assaye his frēdes. Fyfthlie, that he also had enpropered vnto hym dyuerse wardes belōgyng to the kyng, to hys great lucre & the kynges great hurt / and that he was more secrete with quene Isabell the kynges mother, than was to goddes pleasure or the kynges honour. The whych artycles wyth other agayne hym proued / he was by auctorite of the sayd parlyament inged to dethe. And vpō sayne Andrewes eupn next ensuyng, at London he was drawen & hanged. About the begynnynge of August folowyng syr Edwarde Bayloll the sonne of syr Johan Bayloll some tyme kynge of Scottes, by meanes before purchased, opteyned suche fauoure that wyth the ayde of syr Henry Beawmoūt, syr Dauyd of Stroley, syr Geffery Moubray, and wyth the ayde of.ii.M. Englysshemē entred into Scotlād by water / whet in shorte space drew vnto thē such multitude of Scottes, ỳ the sayd Edwarde was lord of a greate hoste / & so kepte on his way tyll he came to a place called Gledismore, or after some writers Crakismoore. where he was encountred of ỳ power of Scotlād, & fought there a cruell batayl, in ỳ which were slayn a great multitude of Scottes. By reason of whych victorie he was crowned kyng of scottes at ỳ towne of Scone shortly after. And shortly after he mette wyth kynge Edward at the towne of Newe castell, and there vnto hym made hys homage & feawty for the lande of Scotlāde.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xxx. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xxxi.

Johñ Mockynge.

Johñ Pountnay. Anno.v.

Andrew Awbrey.

In thys

In thys fyfth mayres yere and fyrst yere of the kynge in the moneth of July, for so moche as ꝑ Scottes had busyed theym to haue slayne Edwarde Bayoll theyr kynge, and hym had constrayned to auoyde hys lande, or elles to kepe hym in some stronge holde tyll he myghte by hys frendes or lyeges be socoured / kyng Edwarde for the same entent wyth a stronge power persed the realme of Scotlande, & after layde hys syege vnto the towne of Berwyke. Uppon the.xix. daye of the forsayd moneth of July, the Scottes wyth a greate power purposyng to remoue ꝑ sayde syege, came towarde the sayd towne. wherof kyng Edward beyng enfourmed, made towarde thē / & at a place called Halydone hyll, gaue to ꝑ sayd Scottes batayll, & of them had triūphaunte victorye / in so moche that he slewe of them as testifyen dyuerse writers, viii. erles, ix. hūdreth knyghtes & bancrettes, iiii. C. esquyres, and vpon .xxxii. M. of the comon people & of Englysshe men were slayne but onely .xv. persones. After whych victory thus by the kynge opteyned/the capitayne of Berwyke vpō ꝑ morew folowynge beyng saynt Margaretes day, yelded to the kyng the sayde towne with the castel. And that done kyng Edward betoke the guydyng therof with all other castelles & townes within that lande, vnto the forenamed syr Edward Bayol as kyng of Scottes / & shortly after retourned into Englande. Than Dauyd the sonne of Robert le Bruse beynge as before is sayd kyng of Scottes, was constrayned with hys wyfe secretely to sayle into Fraunce / & thyder was brought by a Flemyng named Marcuell as testifyeth the Frenche cronycle. where of Phylyppe de Ualoys than Frenche kyng/the sayd Dauyd with Jane of the towre his wyfe was receyued. And for theyr comforte the sayde Frenche kyng gaue vnto them the castell of Gaylarde, tyll fortune to them wolde be more frendelye.

Thys yere also as wytnesseth ꝑ sayd frenche cronycle, the Frenche kynge sente vnto the kynge of Englande ꝑ bysshop of Beauuays and the hyghe constable of Fraūce / whych shewed vnto kynge Edwarde, that theyr soueraygne lorde entendyd a voyage into the holy lāde/and requyred hym of hys ayde and cōpany for perfourmaunce of the sayd iournay. whereunto the kynge gaue answere vnto that request, than whan the Frenche kynge had perfourmed all suche condycions as he before tymes had promysed to do/than he sayd he shuld be contēted to gyue suche answere vnto ꝑ requeste by thē in hys name made, as therūto shulde be cōuenient. And more he added to the same, ꝑ he marueyled greatly that the sayd Frenche kynge entended any suche voyage, tyll he had clerelye acquyted hym of the sayd promysse & couenaunt. with whyche answere the Frenche kynge was nothynge contented/ so that malyce and murmour grewe and encreased betwene them dayly after. And an occasyon of thys sharpe answere was, for so moche as kynge Edward was credyble enfourmed, that the Frenche kynge had vytayll and manned .x. greate shyppes to haue sayled into Scotlande, and there to haue warred/ the whyche by tempest were wedyr dryuen into Flaunders, & so sore betyn with the see that after they had sold moch of theyr stuffe at ꝑ hauyn of Sluce, they were cōpelled of necessyte to retorne without worshyp into Fraunce. Thys with other kyndelyd suche a dedely hate betwene these .ii. crysten prynces, ꝑ moche crysten blode in processe of tyme folowing was for theyr quarelles shadde.

Anno

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xxxi. Anno dñi.xiii.C.xxxii.

Johñ Pꝛeston. Nycholas Pyke.

Johñ Hulbande. Anno.bii.

IN thys.bii.yere in the wynter ſeaſon, and as ſayeth Guydo in the moneth of Nouēbꝛe/the kynge yode agayne towarde Scotlāde and helde hys Cryſtmas at yoꝛke. And after the ſolempnytie of that hyghe feaſt ended, he ſped hym into Scotlāde/where her layde ſiege vnto ꝑ caſtel of Kylbꝛydge, & laſtely wan it by ſtcengthe/ & ſet the countrey in ſome quyetneſſe. And after retourned vnto Newe caſtel vpon Tyne, and tarꝛyed there a certayne of tyme, and helde there hys feaſte of Pentecoſte wyth great royalte. whyther within ſhoꝛte ſpace after came ſyꝛ Edward Baylol kyng of Scottes/ and vpon the day of ſaint Gerualſ & Pꝛothaſi, oꝛ ꝑ.xix. day of June, made his homage vnto kynge Edwarde / and in pꝛeſence of many other noble mē of bothe lādes, ſware vnto hym feawty oꝛ fydelyte. And ꝑ done he retourned into Scotlande & kyng Edward vnto yoꝛke, & ſo vnto wyndeſoꝛ. Thē were al ſuch loꝛdes of Englande as bekoꝛe tyme were in Edward the ſecondes dayes diſſeaſed of ſuche landes as they had in Scotlād, reſtoꝛed agayne to theyꝛ ſayd poſſeſſions / & foꝛ theym made theyꝛ homage vnto ꝑ kyng of Scottes, ſaupnge theyꝛ allegeaunce vnto theyꝛ naturall ſoueraygne loꝛde.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xxxii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xxxiii.

Johan Ponteney. Johñ Hamonde.

wyllyam Hanſarde. Anno.biii.

IN thys eyghte yere certayne / ambaſſadours were ſent from Philip de Ualoyes kyng of Fraūce/ as the byſhop of Thuroyn, and the loꝛde of Ferry and Peyngup, foꝛ to cōclude certayn artycles of variaūce betwene theyꝛ loꝛd & the kyng of England. But theyꝛ purpoſe toke none effecte/except that the kyng graūted to ſende vnto the Frēch kyng ſhoꝛtly after, a certayn of hys loꝛdes to haue foꝛther comunycacion with hym towchyng the ſayd artycles. The whych pꝛompſe he fulfylled as appereth in the nexte yere enſuyng.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xxxiii. Anno domini.M.CCC.xxxiiii.

Johan Hynkſtone. Reynolde at Cundyte.

walter Turke. Anno.iv.

IN thys.iv. yere fell exceedynge plente of rayne / & therupō enſuyed great moꝛeyne of beeſtes. And in the moneth of Decembꝛe the kyng entred agayne into Scotlande, and helde hys Cryſtmas at the caſtell of Rokkyſboꝛough, the whyche he cauſed to be newly repayꝛed. And after thynges there oꝛdered to hys pleaſure, he retourned into Englande. And ſoone after he ſent the archebyſſhoppe of Caunteꝛbury, fyꝛſt Phylip de Moun-

de Mõtague, & syr Geffrey Scrope vnto the frenche kynge / to the entent to haue concluded an amyte betwene hym and the sayd frenche kyng whych before was moued by ꝑ frẽch ambassade, as before is shewed in the eyghte yere of hys reygne. But whã these sayde lordes were landed in Fraunce, they were longe delayed or they myghte come to the kynges presence / in so moche that they sayd playnly vnto suche lordes of Fraũce as were assygned by ꝑ frenche kyng to passe the tyme wyth theym, that they supposed that it was nat the kynges pleasure to speke with them. By meane of whyche wordes they were shortly after brought vnto the kynges presence / of whome they were receyued wyth ioyous countenaunce, and so contynued by a certayne of tyme in furtheryng of theyr ambassade/so ꝑ in processe of tyme a conclusyõ of peas to be had betwene Englande and Fraunce was accorded, and so forthwith spedde, that proclamaciõ therof shuld haue bẽ made in Parys and the countrey there aboute vppon the morowe folowynge But how it came in ꝑ kynges mynde the Englysshe ambassadoures were scantlye returned to theyr lodgynges, whan they were agayne sente for / and farther enfourmed thanne, that the kynges pleasure and mynde was to haue Dauyd late kynge of Scottes to be included wythin the same peace/ and that he shuld agayn be restored vnto hys kyngdome. whereunto yt was answered by the Englysh ambassadours, that theyr cõmyssyon stretched nat so farre/ nor that theyr prince had gyuen vnto thẽ any suche auctorite. wherefore all ꝑ former comunycacyõ was reuoked & adnulled / & they returned into Englande wythoute any conclusyon takynge.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxxiiii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxxb.

walter Mordon.

Reynolde at Cundyte. Anno.x.

Rycharde Upton.

IN thys.x. yere, for so moche as no conclusyon of vnyte & peas myght be had betwene the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce / therfore warre was proclaymed vpon bothe partyes. The whyche warre was greatly procured by the meane of syr Robert of Artoys, as in the story of Philipp de Valoyes shalbe after shewed. Then eyther prynce sought ꝑ wayes and meanes howe eyther of theym myghte discontent other/in so moche that the frenche kynge sente soone after into Scotlande a crewe of frenchemen, to ayde suche enemyes as kynge Edwarde there had. By reason whereof the sayde Scottes made sharpe warre vppon the kynges seruaũtes and frendes, and putte the lande to greate veracyon and trouble/ in so moche that ꝑ kyng was forced to assemble hys power, & to spede hym agayne thyther. Than about mydsomer the kynge entred Scotlande by the sea/ & warred vpõ the Scottes and frenchemẽ. Of the whych no notary batayl is specified, except in that iourney the kyng subdued hys enemyes, & toke there diuerse prysoners. Amonge the which one called erle of Morret a frenche man was chefe, ꝑ after was with other in processe of tyme there deliuered in exchaũge for ꝑ erle of Namur another frẽch lord, whych thã was takẽ by gyle of Scotts as he was comyng towarde

towarde saynte Johns towne for to ayde the partye of kynge Edwarde. whā kyng Edward had agayn pacified the Scottes, and take homage of suche as before rebelled / he than as testifyeth the Frenche cronicle stablysshed for hym named Edward Bayloll as kyng of Scottes / & commytted the rule of the lande vnto hym, as he before tymes had done. Than the Scottes for the greate kyndenesse whyche they had founde in the kyng & in recōpēsemēt of the great charge whych he by sundrye tymes had had in the defendyng of theyr enemyes / graunted & bounde them vnto hym & to hys heyres kynges of England, that they shuld ayde & assyste hym agayne all prynces. And whan so euer he had warre, or any kynge of Englāde beynge ryghtfull enheryteure, agayn any prynce other wythin hys lande or without / þ Scottes at theyr propre costes & expenses shuld fynde iii. C. horsemē well armed, and a. M. fotemen well & suffycyently arrayed for the warre / the whiche. xiii. C. men the Scottes shulde wage for an hole yere. And yf the kynge of Englande ended nat hys warre within the yere than he to hyre and wage the sayde Scottes as he doth the other of hys souldyours. After whyche grauntes made, & bondes for the suertie therof receyued by þ kynge, as wytnesseth the Frenche cronycle / the kynge leuynge at Edenborough a certayne of hys knyghtes to strength þ Scottes agaynste the Frenchemē, whych compalled all the wayes they myght to brynge Dauyd the sonne of Robert le Bruze in possessyon of that lāde / he shortlye after retourned into Englande.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxb.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxxvi.

wyllyam Bryckelsworthe.

Johñ Pontnay.

Anno.xi.

Johñ Northall.

IN thys.xi. yere, þ kynge remēbrynge the greate charge þ he had with the warre in Scotlāde, and also for the charge þ he dayly had in Guyan, & more contynually shulde haue in defēdyng of þ frēchmē & wynnyng of hys right / he therfore gathered treasour vpō euery syde / & by dyuerse & sundry ways wherof þ maner is nat expressed. But so great plente came to hys vse, þ it was scāt thorow out þ realme. By reason of whyche scarcytie, vytayll & moche other Merchimonies were exceding good chepe. For at Lōdō a quarter of whete was solde for. ii. s̄, a fat ore for. vi. s̄. viii. d, a fat shepe for. vi. ō. & viii. ō. vi. peiōs for a peny, a latte goos for. ii. ō, a pygge for a peny, & so al other vytayl after þ rate. This yere also vpō holy Rode day or þ. xiiii. day of Septēbre dyed syr Johñ of Eltha erle of Corne wayl & brother vnto þ kyng without yssu / wherfore þ sayd erldō fell into þ kynges hāde. This mā lyeth buryed at westmynster vpō þ right hāde of þ hygh auiter. In this yere also apered Stella cometa in englysshe named þ blasyng starre, in an huge strempyng maner / wherof many & dyuerse constructiōs were had amōge the comō people, whych I passe ouer.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxxvii.

walter Neale.

Henry Darcy.

Anno.xij.

Nycholas Crane.

In thys

In thys.xii. yere ꝑ kynge helde hys parlyament, at weſtmynſter about the tyme of lent. Duryng the whyth he made of the eriedom of Cornewayle a duchy, & gaue it with the eriedam of Cheſtre vnto Edward hys ſonne. And at thys parlyamente were made.vi. eries / that is to ſay of Derby, of Northampton, of Hūtyngdon, of Salyſbury, of Glouceter, & of Dull. as Henry of Lancaſtre was created erle of Derby or after ſomme wryters of Leyceter, wyllyam de Bothum erle of Northampt̄, wyllyam de Clynton erle of Hūtyngedon, wyllyam de Monūtague erle of Salyſbury, Hugh of Audeley erle of Glouceter, & Robert of Ufford erle of Suffolke. And in thys parlyamente was an acte enacted, that no man ſhulde were no maner of ſylk in gowne, cote or doublet, but yf he myghte ſpende of good rente an hundreth li. by yere, whyche acte was nat longe holden. In thys yere alſo the kynge amonge dyuerſe p̄yuyleges graūted vnto ꝑ cytezeyns of London, that the offycers of the mayres & sherykes, ſhulde from that day forthwarde vſe marys of ſyluer pareell gylte.

The kynge of Fraunce thys yere for ſo moche as he was credybly enformed, that kyng Edwarde wolde entre the lande of Fraūce, & to make warre vpō theſame, he therfore made great puruyaunce to reſyſte hym. For the cōmon fame ranne thanne in Fraūce, ꝑ kyng Edward entēded nat onely to clayme Gaſcoyne & Guyan, but alſo all Fraunce as hys p̄oper & rightfull enheryteaunce in the ryghte of hys mother. wherefore the French kynge aſſembled an huge hoſte, and commytted the rule of it vnto the kynge of Nauerne, and to the erle of Alenſon hys brother vnto the ſayde Frenche kynge. whyche ſayde cappytaynes wyth theyr people awayted daily the kynge of Englandes comynge / whyche theym for that yere dyſpoynted. But as teſtyfyeth the ſame Frenche cronycle / kynge Edwarde in thys whyle ſent into Flaunders a knyghte called ſyr Barnarde de Bzette, for to treate of an amyte betwene hym and the Flemynges. For this cauſe the erle of Flaunders whych was very faſt with the Frech kynge called hys counſayll to hym, to haue theyr aduyce howe he myght beſte order hym ſelfe and hys people. In whych coūſayll were dyuers oppynyons / ſo that many thoughte it better for dyuerſe conſyderatyons / whyche were longe to reherce, that the erle ſhulde rather p̄eferre the amyte of the kynge of Englande thā of the kynge of Fraunce. Of whyche oppynyon was a greate furtherer or p̄omoter a knyghte of Flaunders called Countryſlye. wyth whome the erle beynge for that cauſe diſcontent ſent hym to p̄yſon. And ſoone after at the requeſt of the Frenche kynge, whyche layed vnto hys charge that he hadde receyued greate ſummes of money of the kyng of Englande, for to p̄ocure and ſtyre the Flemynges agayne hym / he was behedded, for whyche dede the dwellers of Gaunte and of Bzuges were ſo miſcontente, that they vtterly refuſed ꝑ erle & hys counſayll, & made theym ſtronge to withſtande hys diſpleaſure. Than ꝑ erle was conſtrayned to gather hys lordes & knyghtes, for the more part of ꝑ cōmons were agayne hym. And in ſhort p̄oces after met in playn battayll a place called Warchie / where after lōge fyghte, the erle & hys hoſte was put to flyghte, & forced for hys ſafegard to take a caſtel named Wal or Walet. In which ſeaſon kyng Edward beynge enformed of ꝑ amytie ꝑ the Flemynges bare towarde hym anon ſent vnto them a knyght called

syr Galtyer or walter de Magny, with a goodly company of archers well apoynted/ the whyche arryued in an ile called than Cazãter. whome the erle of Flaunders with a certayn of hys knyghtes encountred, & gaue vnto the Englysshemen batayl. But in the ende the erle was shamefully chased, and many of hys gentylmen slayne and take/as syr Johñ Rodes syr wyllyã Spll, syr Nycholas Chaũcy, with many other slayne. And syr Guy bastarde brother vnto the erle, with dyuerse other taken/of ꝑ which some were sent as prysoners into Englande.

whan the Frenche kyng had vnderstandynge of the deuysyon that was betwene the erle and hys subiectes, & how faythfull ꝑ erle was vnto hym, entendynge to wynne by fayre meanes the fauour of ꝑ Flempynges, whyche he knewe well he myght nat wynne by rygoure. Than he sente vnto Gaũt the byssshop of sayne Denys with other/ whych made vnto ꝑ rulers of ꝑ towne & of Bruges and other townes there assembled, many fayre behestes & promyses. Amõge ꝑ whych one was, that the Frẽch kyng wolde acquyte vnto them & deliuer vnto theyr vse, all suche lordshyppes & seygnoryes as he than withheld of theyrs and hys progenytours before hym. But all was in vayn. For kyng Edward had so sped hys nedes with thẽ, by the meanes of one named Jaques de artuele a mã of Gaũt, which was of great substaũce, & passyng other in boldenes & capacyte of wytte & discretiõ ꝑ the sayd towne of Gaũt with Bruges, Ypre, Courtryke or Courtrey, Cassyle, and other there about, condyssended and promysed ioyntly and hooly, to refuse ꝑ Frẽche kynge, & to take the kynge of Englandes partye/ and the rather for the warre whych before tyme Philip de Ualoyes made vpon them in the begynnyng of hys reygne, as in ꝑ fyrst yere of the story of the sayde Philyp shall after appere.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxvii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxxviii.

wyllam of Pountfreyt.

Henry Darcy. Anno.xiii.

Hugo Wardre.

IN thys .xiii. yere, kynge Edwarde with quene Philip hys wyfe, for more assured stablysshemẽt of amyte to be had betwene hym and the Holanders, Zeläders, & Brabãders, passed the see in the begynnyng of ꝑ moneth of Junii / & sayled wyth a goodly cõpany into the coũtrey of Brabãt, the quene thã beynge great with chyld, where of the erle of Brabãt he was Honorablie receyued. In whyche season of hys there beynge, kyng Edwarde gat vnto hym many frendes. Amonge the whych Lewys of Bauyere, whych than toke vpon hym as Emperour, all be that before that tyme he was of the .xrii. Johan than pope accursed, was one. This Lewys had such fauoure vnto kyng Edwarde, that he assygned and ordeyned hym for Vycayr of ꝑ empyre, by reason of whyche office kyng Edwarde made oute hys commaundementes, & dyd many thynges to hys aduauntage and profyte.

* Byrth of Lyonell.

* In thys season quene Philyppe lyenge at Andwarpe, was deliuered of a man chylde, that was named Lyonell. And Philyp de Ualoys hauynge knowelege of all thys demeanure of kynge Edwarde, gathered vnto hym greate strenthe/

so that

so that he had about hym innumerable people / and tarved with them at Impas and there about, from ꝑ ende of Auguſt tyll ꝑ begynnyng of Octobre. And whā he ſawe that kyng Edwarde came nat / he deuyded ꝑ great hoſte, in retournyng many of theym into theyr owne countreys / and the other he ſente vnto ſtronge holdes & caſteiles for to let ꝑ paſſage of kynge Edwarde and hys hoſte into the lāde of Fraunce. And in thys paſſe tyme the Frenche kynge had ſent dyuerſe ſhyppes vnto the ſee wyth men of warre, for to take engliſſhe marchaūtes & other that came in theyr courſe. And ſo befelle that they encountred with .ii. great ſhyppes of Englande called the Edward and the Criſtofer the whiche as teſtifyeth the Frenche cronycle were freyght with greate ryches, and alſo well manned. Anone as eyther was ware of other / gonnes and ſhot of longe bowes arbalaſters & were nat ſpared on nother ſyde / ſo that betwene thē was a cruell fyghte but nat egall. For of the Frenchemē were .xiii. ſayles great and ſmal, and of the Engliſſhe men but fyue that is to meane theſe two forſayd great ſhyppes, two barkys, and a carvyll / the whyche thre ſmall ſhyppes eſcaped by theyr deliuer ſaylynge / & the ii. abode and fought beyonde .ix. houres, in ſo moche that there was ſlayn vpon both partyes aboue .vi. C. men But in the ende the ſayd .ii. ſhyppes were taken & brought into ꝑ Frēch kynges ſtremes / and many of the Engliſſhemen that were ſore wounded were caſt into the ſee. In thys yere alſo the ſayd Frenſchemē of that Nauy landed at Southāpton ſodeynly: and ſpoyled the towne, and brente a great parte therof. And ouer this the Frenche kynge made warre in Gaſcoyn, and wanne there dyuerſe ſmal pyles and one ſtrōge caſtell ſtanding in the countrey of Gaſcoyne called Agenoys, whych caſtell was named Pēne. But all this ſeaſon was kyng Edwarde in Almayne, & made allyaunce with dyuerſe prynces of that coūtrey and other / and toke aſſuraūces of them that they ſhulde ayde & aſſyſte hym to wynne hys ryght and tytle ꝑ he had to ꝑ crowne of Fraūce, & after returned into Flaūders, wher he tarved all thys mayres yere.

Anno domini .M.CCC.xxxviii. Anno domini .M.CCC.xxxix.

wyllyam Thorney.

Andrew Iwbry. Anno .xiiii.

Roger Forſham.

IN thys .xiiii. yere kynge Edwarde ſpedyng hys buſyneſſe in Almayn & Flaūders, as in ꝑ precedynge yere is touched, retourned into Englande, and called hys hygh court of parlyament at weſtmynſter about ꝑ tyme of lent. In whyche parlyamēt / ꝑ kyng ared of hys cōmons for the maynteuaunce of hys warre, & to recouer hys ryghte in Fraunce ꝑ .v. part of theyr mouable goodes, ꝑ cuſtome of wolles for .ii. yeres to be payed afore hāde, & ꝑ .ix. ſheſe of euery mānes corn / ꝑ which at lēgth was graūted. And for ꝑ leuyeng therof, he cauſed ꝑ lordes of euery ſhyre thorugh hys lāde to anſwere to hi, euery lorde for ꝑ cyrcuyte he dwelled nere vnto. But or all thys graūt were gadered & payed / the loue of the poore people tourned to hatred, & prayer into curſyng. And for ꝑ kyng ſhuld nede and occuppe for hys prouiſiōs moche money or this graūt myght be leuied / he

therfore borowed many notable ſummes of dyuerſe cytyes & partyculer perſones of thys lande. Amonge the whyche he than borowed of the cytye of London.xx.M.marke, to be repayed of the money cõmynge of the fore ſayd graunt / the whych foreſayd.xx. M.marke was leuied in the wardes of the cytye in fourme as folowyth.

The towre warde was ſeſſed at.iiii.C lxv.li, wherof wyllyam of Bꝛykleſworthe lent.C.li/ & the reſydue was leuyed of.xii.perſones of that warde.

Byllyngſgate warde was ſeſſed at viii.C.lxiii.li/wherof Johñ de Cawſton lent.ii.C.li, & Aleyn Gyll.ii.C.li and the reſidue was lét by.xxvi. perſones of that warde.

The bꝛydge was ſeſſed at.viii.C.lxv. li.vi.s.viii.d / wherof Johñ Louekyne bare.ii.c.li, Johñ Walwayn/& Rauffe de Lenone.ii.C.li/ and the reſydue was borne by.xxxiii. perſones of that warde. The warde of Dowgate was ſeſſed at.vi.C.lx.li.x.s/of ꝑ whych Henry Pycarde lent two.C. marke, Bartholmewe Freſlyng and wyllyam Léglyſhe.ii.C.marke/& the reſydue was leuyed of.xxv. perſones of that warde. Langbourne warde was ſeſſed at.ccc.lii.li.ſyxe.s.viii.d / wherof Thomas Hoꝛwoode lent.C. li, Johñ Perche.C.marke/ & the reſte was lent by .xv.dwellers of ꝑ warde.

walbꝛooke warde was ſeſſed at.ix C.xi.li, wherof Johñ Adam lent.ii.C li, Johñ de Bery and Symon Pyſtour peperer.ii.C.li, & Adã de Bery and Johñ Not.ii.C.marke / and the reſt was leuyed of.xxiii. perſones of that warde.

Byſſhoppiſgate warde was ſeſſed at.v.C.lix.li.vi.s.viii.d/wherof Adã Fraunceſſe lent.ii.C.li, & Symonde Bꝛowne and Johñ de ſaynt Albone ii.C.li / & the reſydue was leuyed of x.perſones of that warde.

Lymeſtrete warde was ſeſſed at.C x.li/wherof Auguſtyne waleys lent C.li/and.x.li.was leuyed of.iii.perſones of that warde.

Coꝛnehyll warde was ſeſſed at.iii. C.xv.li/ wherof Johan Colyng and Robert Wanhale dꝛapers bare that one.C.li, and the laſte.C. marke and the reſt was leuyed of.xx.perſones of the ſayd warde.

Chepe warde was ſeſſed at.v.C. xviii.li.x.s/wherof Barthilmew Thomaſyn mercer lent.cc.poũde, Stephã Caundyſſhe dꝛaper, wyllyã Holdech & Johan Hartwarde eyther of theym C.marke, Johñ Wolſoby goldſmyth cc.marke, and Johan Fawkys & Iames Nawarre eyther of theym.C.li & the reſt was leuyed of.lxi.perſones of the ſame warde.

Bꝛadſtrete warde was ſeſſed at.v C.lxxx.and.viii.li/ wherof Thomas Legge ſkynner lét.ccc.li, Johñ Hartwarde ſtoke.cc.marke / and the reſydue was leuyed of eyght perſones of that warde. Vyntrye warde was ſeſſed at.ccccc.xxxiiii.li.xvi.s.viii.d, wherof walter Turke fyſſhemonger lent.cc.marke, Johñ Stoday vyntener.C.li/ Symonde Boſſely & Johñ Rothynge.cc.marke / and ꝑ reſt was leuyed of.xxiiii. perſons of ꝑ warde.

The warde of Bꝛedſtrete was ſeſſed at.cccc.lxi.li.xvi.s.viii.d / wherof Adam Bꝛabeſone lent.cc.li, and the reſt was leuyed of.xxx. perſones of ꝑ warde. The warde of Quene hyth was ſeſſed at.cccc.xxv.li.xiii.s.iiii.d wherof Rychard of Aſſlyngbury lét cc.li, & Johñ of Gloucetre.C.marke/ and the reſydue was leuyed of.xvii. perſones of that warde.

Coꝛdwayner ſtrete warde was ſeſſed at two thouſande and hundꝛeth lxxx.xv.li.iii.s.iiii.d/wherof Andꝛew Iwbꝛey grocer lente.viii.hundꝛeth marke, wyllyam de Cawſtone.cc.li, Iames Andꝛewe and Thomas Bꝛãdon eyther of them.ii.hundꝛeth marke

wyllyam

wyllyam of worceter.ii.C.marke, Johan Bechamp and the wyfe of Johñ Halle eyther of them.C.li, and Johñ Bulle, Johñ Gonwardby, & wyllyã Hampstede eche of them.C.marke/& the reste whyche is.vi. hundreth .lxi. xvi.s.viii.d, was lent by.xliiii. persones of that warde.

The warde of Farynggedone within was sessed at.vii.C.xxx.li.xvi.s. viii. d.wherof Gylbert Staynedrope lent ii.C.li.& the reste was leuyed of.lxvii persones of that warde.

Farynggdone without the wallys was sessed at .C. xiiii.li. xvii.s. iiii.d. whyche summe was leuyed of.xxi. psones of that warde.

Crepulgate warde was sessed at iiii.C.lxii.li.x.s/wherof Rychard Lazar mercer let.ii.C.marke, Symõde de Bedyngton.C.marke/and the resydue was leuyed of.xxxvii.persones of the sayd warde.

Colmanstrete warde was sessed at M.li.li.xvi.s.viii.d / wherof Symõ de Fraunces lent.viii.C.li, Henry of warre and Johñ Demys .ii. hũdreth marke/and ỹ residue was lent by.vi. persones of that warde.

Candelwyke strete warde was sessed at.C.xxxiii.li.vi.s.viii.d/ỹ which sayd summe was leuyed of.xxiii. persones of the sayd warde.

The warde of Algate was stynted or sessed at.xxx.li, and leuyed of syx enhabytauntes of the sayd warde.

Portsokyn warde was sessed at xxvii.li.x.s,& was leuyed of.vii. persones of that warde.

Castell Baynarde warde was sessed at.lxiii.li.vi.s.viii.d, and lent by xii.persones of that warde.

Bassyngeshawe warde was sessed at.lxxx.li.xiii.s.iiii.d, and leuyed of syx persones.

Aldrysshe gate warde was sette or sessed at.lvii.li.x.s/and layed oute or lente by.v.persones of that warde.

whyche summe totall of the forsayd xxv.wardes, amounteth to the sũme of.xiii.thousande.iii.hundreth.lxxx & fyue.li.xiii.s.& iiii.d. whyche summe exceedeth the summe of twenty thousand marke.li.li.vi.s. viii.d. And ye shall vnderstãde that he ỹ payed leest towarde thys towne payed.l.s, & soo ascendyng to these summes aboue rehersed.wherof many was sessed at.xl li.l.li.& ix.li,& many other of dyuerse meane summes.

In thys yere also ỹ kyng chaũged hys coyne,& made the noble and the halfe noble of ỹ value of syx s.viii.d, whyche at thys day is worthe viii.s. ix.d.or x.d, & the half noble after the rate yt they kepe the trewe weyghte / and prouided dyuerse other thynges for the weale of hys realme & spede of hys iourney into Fraunce.

WHan kyng Edward had set his lande in an ordre, & had all thyng metely prouided for his nede/he than aboute Lammesse sayled into Braban,and there helde hys coũsayl with hys frendes/and by theyr aduyces made clayme to ỹ hole crowne of Fraunce as hys ryghtefull enherytaunce/& for more auctorytye of the same entermedeled the armes of England with ỹ armys of Fraũce,as ye se them at this daye. Then kynge Philyp beyng of these thynges warned/gathered an howge hoste,& came with them to a towne called Vernendops.And kyng Edwarde with hys people entred ỹ coũtrey called Thereste/& brẽt & wasted ỹ coũtrey before hym.Thã kyng Philip drew toward the Englisshe hoste,and came vnto a place or towne called in frech Buyzõ Fosse / where he entended as sayth ỹ frenche boke to haue set vpon ỹ En-

glyſſhemen. But by counſayl of hys lo:des, fo: dyuerſe cauſes he was let to hys dyſpleaſure. Fo: after ꝑ daye, he myght fynde no conuenyent tyme fo: to aſſayle hys enemyes/ſo that in concluſyon eyther hoſte departed frō other without batayll o: fyght / and kynge Edwarde toke hys wey towarde Gaunt, & kyng Philip retourned into Fraunce. Than kynge Edwarde by meanes of hys frende Jaques de Artyuele, had all hys pleaſure of the towne of Gaunt/& receyued of them othe and homage. And after dyuerſe concluſiōs with them and other také / he leuyng there the quene after the teſtymony of ſome wryters, retourned agayne into Enlāde/& left with the quene, which thā was great with chylde, ꝑ erles of Walyſbury & of Oxynfo:de / whyche in ꝑ kynges abſence ayded well ꝑ Flemynges agayne the Frēch kyng, & dyd dyuerſe marcyall actes/ whyche I here paſſe ouer. But I pers ꝑ erle of Walyſbury was také pryſoner/& diuers engliſh men ſlayne at ꝑ aſſaut of a towne called ꝑ Ile in Flaūders o: of flaūders.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxxix.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xl.

Adam Lucas.

Andrewe Iwbry.

Anno. xv.

Bartholomewe Marres.

IN thys. xv. yere, whyle ꝑ kyng was buſyed in Englande to make prouyſyō fo: mete & money to withſtande the Frēche kyng, aſwell fo: the warre that the ſayde Frenche kyng made vpō the Flemynges & other beyng ꝑ kynges frendes, as fo: hys owne particuler cauſes, ꝑ quene as before is ſayd beyng at the towne of Gaunt, was deliuered of a ſonne, which after was named Johñ, about Cryſtmas in the begynnyng of thys mayres yere, & ende of this. xiiii. yere. This chyld whā he came to mannes eſtate, was ſurnamed Johñ of Gaūt & was fyrſt erle of Rychemoūt & after duke of Lācaſter. & alſo faſt as kyng Edwarde puyded fo: abylemētes of warre in Englāde, ſo faſt & haſty pro uyſyō made the Frēch kyng to withſtande kyng Edward both by lāde & by water/ſo ꝑ he had a great & ſtrōge nauy vpō ꝑ ſee. Kyng Edward thā in ꝑ moneth of Junii, with. ii. C. ſayles tooke ſhyppynge, & ſayled towarde Flaūders/ & vpō the ſee met o: came vnto hym ſyr Robert Morley with ꝑ noꝛth nauye of Englāde/ſo ꝑ he had in al aboue. iii. C. ſayles. And at myd ſomer vppon ſaynte Johñs euyn he fought with the frēch kynges nauy, whyche lay in a wayte fo: hym nere to the towne called the Bluſe. Of thys nauy whyche were in noumber by the repo:te of the frēche boke vpō iiii. C. ſayles, wherof were chyefe admyralles ſyr Hugh Quyret, & ſyr Nycholas Buchet, & one named Barbe Noyre o: in Engliſh Blacke berde/ the whych capytayns o: admyralles anone as they eſpied ꝑ engliſh flote they made towarde thē to begyn the fyght. iiii. galeys ſet vpō a ſhyppe of auaūtage which ſayled before ꝑ other named ꝑ ryche Oliuer/the which. iiii galeys the fore named Barbe Noyre had the cunduyt of / & aſſayled thys ſayd ſhyppe on euery parte, & bet her with gunneſhot & her men with hayl ſhot exceedyngely / ſo that of the men within her were many ſlayn and mo woūded, & lykely to haue ben ſhortly won ne had bē the reſcous of her cōpany: thā were the ſayd fourr galeys ſoone beſeged with ꝑ Engliſh nauy, & ſo cruelly aſſayled, that they were

boꝛded

borded or they myghte be reskowed. Then approched the hole flote vpon bothe sydes, with hydous & feresull dynne & noyse of gunnes, with terrybie klampynge of wylde fyre & other, with thycke shot of quarelles & arowes, and crusshynge of shyppes, ꝑ hydous & wōderfull it was to beholde, so that many a soule was there expelled from theyr bodies i shorte whyle. This mortall and cruell fyght cōtynued as sayth the Frenche story by ꝑ space of.viii.howres or more, i suche wyse ꝑ harde it was to knowe whether parte had the better, & so many deed and wounded men were cast into the see, that the water whiche was in eyrcuyte aboute them was colowred or dyed as reed. * But in ꝑ ende by grace & great mähode of ꝑ kynge, whiche there was sore woūded. And by his great confort, ꝑ Frenchemen were chased, and many of theyr shyppes bowged & taken with many prysoners in them. Amonge the whiche the forenamed admyralles or cappytaynes, syr Nycholas Buchet & syr Hugh Queret were. ii. the whiche in despyte of the Frenchemen were hanged vpon ꝑ sayles of theyr shyppes, which they were take in. And amōge the shyppes that were at this season taken, were recouered the.ii. forsayd shyppes named the Edwarde and ꝑ Crystofer, the whiche before were taken by the Frenchemen, as it before is shewed in ꝑ.iii. yere of this kynge. In this batayle also as is testyfyed of many and dyuerse wrytters, were slayne vpon the noumber of.xxx.M. Frenchemen, al be it ꝑ Frenche boke nameth so many to be slayne vpon bothe partyes, & excuse this myssortune by the negligence of syr Nycholas Buchet, whiche kepte the Frēche naup so longe within the hauen, that they were so closed in with the Englysh naup, ꝑ a great noūbre of them myght neuer stryke stroke nor shote theyr ordenaunce, but to the hurte of theyr owne company. Whā kynge Edwarde had optayned this tryumphaunt victory of his enmyes, he yelded great thākes vnto god. Howbe it he was fayne to tary a season within his shyppe, by reason of a woūde ꝑ which he had receyued in his thyghe. In whiche season ꝑ quene his wyfe came to vysyte hym, and retourned agayne vnto Gaūt. And after a fewe dayes passed, ꝑ kynge departed from Swynne, & rode vnto our lady of Ardenbourghe, & sent his naup in the nerte hauen to Brugys, & moche of his people vnto the towne of Gaūt. And whā he had accōplisshed his pylgrymage, he rode vnto Brugys, and from thense vnto Gaūt, where of the dwellers he was ioyously receyued. The manly corrage of Edward the thyrde. *

Than kynge Edwarde there called a great counsayle, by the whiche it was determyned that he shulde prepare.ii. hostes, wherof ꝑ one shuld be of ꝑ mē of Gaūt & of ꝑ townes there aboute, of ꝑ which certayne lordes of Almayne shuld haue ꝑ rule, & ꝑ other hoste shulde be of mē of Brugys & of Englysh archers, & of ꝑ host was ordeyned syr Robert of Artoys to be leder & capitayne. whā ꝑ sayd.ii. hostes were all garnysshed with all thynge for thē nedeful, ꝑ fyrst of them was sent vnto ꝑ town of Turney, and the other vnto ꝑ towne of saynt Omers. The which.ii. townes at ꝑ day were lyke strēgth vnto Fraūce, as Calays is now vnto England. wherfore the Frēch kynge for the more suretye of them, sent vnto Tournay the erle of Foys & syr Barthā than marshall of Fraūce, with.iiii.M. men of armis, & vnto saynt Omers he sent ꝑ duke of Burgoyn with a great cōpany of lordes & other. whā sir Robert of Artois had lyen a certeyn tyme before saynt Omers, & many sharpe assautys by

hym and his people had ben gyuen to it, in the whiche dyuerse fortunes fell & chaunces of warre, which were tedyous and longe to wryte/ fynally vpon the morowe after sayne James day or the.xxvi.day of Julii / ꝑ duke of Burgoyne with his retynue yssued out of the towne, & foughte with ꝑ sayd syr Robert & his people a lóge season. In ꝑ which fyght was slayne of the dukes partye the lorde of Hamelcourte, syr Froyssard de Beaford, the lorde of sayne Uran a lorde of Spayne, & a Burgonyon lorde called the lorde of Brangen, with other dyuerse knyghtes and gentylmen to the nomber of.liiii.as sayth ꝑ Frèche cronycle / and of the comune people vpon.iii.M. But in shorte tyme after the power of the duke encreased in suche wyse, that syr Robert with his cõpany was fayne to departe thense, and so rode into Jpre, & there helde hym. Then as aboue is sayde when kynge Edwarde had sent forth ꝑ fore named.ii.hostes / he with the rest of his people rode vnto a place within. ii. Engylsshe myles of Tournaye called in Frèche le Mount de Mree / and there lodged hym & his people. And Phylyp de Ualoys ꝑ Frèche kynge, came with his people vnto an house of relegyon, whiche then was called ꝑ pryory of sayne Andrewe. At which two places these two sayde prynces thus lyenge with great strengthes vpon eyther syde/ kyng Edwarde by counseyll of his lordes sent vnto ꝑ Frenche kynge a letter, contaynynge as folowyth.

A letter sent by kyng Edward to the Frèch kyng

EDwarde by the grace of god kyng of Englãde & of Fraũce, and lorde of Irelande. Syr Phylyp de Ualoys, by longe tyme we haue erhorted by messangers and other manyfolde maner of wayes, to ꝑ ende ꝑ ye shulde restore vnto vs, & do to vs reason of oure ryghtfull enheritaũce of the realme of Fraũce/ the whiche we haue longe occupyed with great wronge. And for that that we se well that ye entende to persuer in youre iniurpous withholdynge without to do vnto vs reason / for our ryght to demaũde we are entred into our lãde of Flaundres as souerayne lorde of the same, and passe by that countre/ doynge you ferther to vnderstande, that we haue taken with the helpe of our lorde Jesu chryst the ryght, with the power of the sayd countrey, and with our people them allyed / beholdynge the ryght, which we haue in ꝑ herytage that ye wythholde frome vs with great wronge / and drawe vs towarde you to make a shorte ende vppon our ryghtfull demaunde and chalenge, yf ye wyll towarde vs approche. And for so moch that so great power of mẽ of Armes that came vpon our partyes, may not longe holde thẽ togyther without great destruccyon of ꝑ people. whiche euery good cryssten man ought to eschewe/ & specyally a prynce or other that haue the gouernaunce of people. we therfore moche desyre, ꝑ in shorte dayes they may mete. And for to eschewe ꝑ more mortalyte of the people / so that the quarell apparent atwene vs, to the destruccyon of oure chalenge, maye stãde in tryal atwene vs two/ whiche thynge we offre vnto you for the causes aboue sayd. Howbeit that we remembre well the noblenesse of youre persone, and your great wysedome & aduysement. And in case that ye wyll not therof/ that then in our chalenge be set to afferme the batayll of youre selfe with an hundreth persones of your party of the moste suffycyent/ & we in lyke wyse with as many. And yf ye wyl that one wey nor the other/ that then ye wyll assygne a certayne day before the cyty of Tournay to

fyght

fyght with strength agaynst strength, within .x. dayes after ꝑ fyght of these letters. And we wolde that all the worlde knewe, that these thynges abouesayd in thys oure desyre is nat for pryde nor for great presumpcion/ but for that that oure Lorde myghte set the more reste and peace amonge the cristen/and for that that the enemyes of god myght be resysted, and cristendome enhaunced. And ꝑ way ꝑ ye wyll chose of these offers abouesayd/wryte agayne to vs by the bringer of these letters, to hym makynge hastye delyueraunce. Gyuen vnder our great seale at Elchine sur le scaut nere vnto the cytye of Tourney, the xv. day of the moneth of Jule. Upon receyt of whych letters the Frenche kynge by the aduice of hys counsayl wrote agayne vnto kynge Edwarde in maner and fourme as foloweth.

The Frenche kynges letter.

Philip by ꝑ grace of god kyng of Fraunce/ to Edward kyng of Englād. we haue sene a letter sent to Philip de Valoys brought to our court/ in ꝑ which letter were certayn requestes. And for so moche as the sayd letter came nat to vs / the sayde requestes were nat made to vs, lyke as it apereth by the tenoure of ꝑ sayd letter. we therfore to you make none answer. Neuertheles for that that we vnderstonde by the sayde letter & otherwyse, that ye are enbatelled in our realme of Fraunce, doyng great domage to vs and our sayd realme, & to the people/ moued of wyll without reason, nat regardynge ꝑ whych a lyege man ought to regarde to hys lyege and sourayngne lorde / for ye are entred into our homage in youre selfe, a knowelegyng as reason is to the kynge of Fraunce, and promised obeysaunce suche as a lyege man ought vnto hys souerayngne lorde/ lyke as it appereth by youre letters patētes sealed with your great seale, the whyche we haue by vs, and for that shulde you be obedyente vnto vs. Our entente is suche that whā we shal thynke it good, we shal chase you out of our realme to our honour and mageste royall, and to the profet of our people. And in thys doynge we haue faythfull hope in oure lorde Jesu Chryste, from whome all good to vs commyth. For by your enterpryse whyche is of wyll nat reasonable / hathe ben lette the holy voyage ouer the see, and greate quantyte of crysten people put to deth, and ꝑ holy seruyce of god lefte, and holy chyrch vnworshypped & vnhonoured, wyth many great enormyties. And in that that ye thynke to haue the Flemynges in your ayde / we thynke vs to be assured, that the good townes and the commons wyll behaue theym in suche wyse agayne vs, and agayne our cosyn the erle of Flaunders, that they wyll saue theyr honoure and trouthe. And in that that they haue mysse done tyll nowe, hathe ben by euyll counsayl of suche people which regarde nat the common weale of the people, but of theyr owne profyte onely. Gyuen in the feelde of the pryorye of saynt Andrew besyde Ayre vnder the seale of our secrete sygnet in absence of oure greate seale, the thyrty day of the moneth of Jule.

It was nat longe after that the Frenche kynge hadde thus rescribed vnto kyng Edwarde, but that a messynger came vnto hym frome Tourney for hasty rescouse/ for the towne was dayly and sharpye assauted of the Englysshe hoste. wherefore in all haste he sente thyther the duke of Athenesse, the vycounte of Thonart, the vycount of Dannaye/ with dyuerse other to ꝑ noūber of .xv. men of name, with great noūber of peple.

The

The whych sped thē strepght vnto ꝑ mount of Cassyle. But or they came the sayd mount was gotten by ꝑ Flemynges, so that of theyr lodgynge they were dyspoynted. By reason wherof they kered to set vpon the Englysshe hoste, or yet to trauayll for ꝑ remouyng of the sayd syege of Tournay / but toke theyr counceyll & swarued from Cassyle, and entred ꝑ lande of the erle of Barry, and dyd moche harme therein, And when they hadde there executed theyr pleasures / they retourned vnto the Frenche kynge.

In thys meane whyle kyng Philip counsayled with hys lordes, whether it were better for hym to drawe towarde Tournay to remoue ꝑ siege or to go into Flaunders and to make warre vpon the townes that helde with kyng Edwarde. By whych counsayll it was thought moste honorable, that he shulde endeuer hym selfe to remoue ꝑ sayd syege. After whiche conclusiō so taken / he with hys hoste drewe towarde Tournay / and in the ende lodged hym and hys people at a place or towne called at that daye Bowyns, within .iii. myles of Tournay, in whose cōpany was ꝑ kynge of Nauerne, the kynge of Bohemy or Beame, the dukes of Normandy, & of Lorayne, & of Athenesle or Athēs, the erles of Alensone, of Flaunders, and of Sauoy, with other to the noūbre of .xiiii. erles, besyde vycountes, baronettes and knyghtes to a great noumbre. And with kynge Edwarde were these lordes folowynge / the erle of Herford, the erles of Northamptō of Derbye, of Southāpton, of Oxynforde, of Henawd, of Harclete, and of Rondell. Also of straungers, the duke of Geldre, and of Sclauonye, & Brabant / with many other vycountes, banerettes, and knyghtes whych I passe ouer. And thus laye these two prynces with two great and myghty hostes within fyue myles, without great batayll or fyghte a certayne of tyme. But euer in meane whyle the towne of Tourney was assayled of ꝑ Englysshe men and Flemynges / the whych defended them mankully and well. In the whyche passe tyme the countesse of Henaude whyche was mother vnto the quene of Englāde, and as testyfyeth the Frenche cronycle syster vnto the Frenche kynge, a woman of passynge discrecyon and eloquency, with ꝑ ayde of other pryncēs as the kyng of Beame and other laboured suche a meane of treaty, ꝑ a daye of dyet was betwene the two kynges appoynted / all be it that dyuerse of kyng Edwardes counsayll were sore agayne it, and specyally Jakes de Artyuele. Than for kyng Edwardes party was assygned the bysshoppe of Lyncolne, syr Geffrey Scrope, syr Johñ of Henaude brother to the erle, & syr wyllyā Cheyny wyth other. And for the frēche kyng was assygned the kynge of Beame, the erles of Armenake & of Sauoy, syr Lewys de Sauoy and other. And to the ende that thys appoyntement myght take the better effecte / a daye of trewce was concluded tyll mydsomer folowynge. But moste wryters testyfyen that kynge Edwarde lefte the syege before Tourney for defaut of money and negligēce of his slowe procuratours in Englāde, that sped nat hys nedes there as they shulde. For that one cause and for that other the kynge with hys hoste departed thense vnto Gaunt, and taryed there a certayne of tyme. In whych season the fore named lordes and knyghtes met at Tournay / and there debated the maters of chalenge of kynge Edwarde, and certayn artycles concernynge the countrey of Flaunders. In whyche counsayll it was graūted by the Frenche kynges partye, that ꝑ

Frenche

Frenche kynge shulde freely departe towarde the maryage of kynge Edwardes chyldren, with the hole seygnoryes of Gascoyn and Guyan, and the erledome of Poytyers, in so fre maner that no officer of the French kyng shuld medle or haue to do with in any parte of those lordshyppes. And for Flaūders it was by the sayd lordes graunted, that the commons of that cōtrey in all customes and lawes shuld be iuged & ruled as they of olde tymes had vsed/and also that all bondes and obligacyons that in tymes passed the chyefe townes had made to the Frenche kynge for any cause, shulde be cancelled and delyuered. And of theyr erle they shulde be acquyted in lyke wyse, for all offēces done before that day. Also all censuryes or curses þ they before were wrapped in, shulde be clerelye annulled & reuoked, with other cōclusions and offers, whych I passe ouer.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xl.

Kycharde Berkynge.

Johan Oxynforde.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xli.

Anno.xvi.

Johan Robyslee.

IN this.xvi. yere / kynge Edwarde vpon saynt Andrewes euyn came to the towre of London, and sent for suche lordes as before he hadde made hys procuratours to leuye hys money in hys absence, and for theyr negligēce & mysdemeanure cast thē in prysō. But in this voyage that the kyng passed from that other syde of the see into England / he had exceadynge tempest of wether, so that he passed with great fere and daūger whych tempest after the opynyon of some wryters, was rered by the negromauncers of the French kyng/to the ende to haue perysshed the kyng, or els to gyue hym the lesse courage to take the see agayne. In this yere also were sent from þ. xii. Benet thā pope two cardynalles, to treate of a peace betwene the kynges of Englande & of Fraunce. The whych concluded a peace betwene the sayd two kynges, as well for them as for other countreys whych to thē were allyed, for the terme of.iii. yeres and more. In whyche tyme it was agreed, that bothe the sayd kynges by theyr procutours shulde publysshe & declare before the pope theyr claymes and causes, to the ende that by hym and his cōsayl a fynall dyrection & cōcorde myght be set betwene theym. whych agremente of the sayde cardynalles was thus concluded in the towne called Walestrete, about the feaste of saynte Gregory in lente / kynge there presente for the kynge of Englande, the erles of Derbye and of Northampton wyth other / and for the Frenche kynge, the dukes of Burbon & of Burgoyne, with other for hys party. But this agremente stoode to lytle effecte. For it nat wyth standynge the warre betwene these two kynges was contynued, so that eyther forteyfyed theyr frendes and allyes. And soone after happened, that where Johan duke of Bretayn dyed wythout issu/ variaunce fel betwene Charles de Bloys and Johñ erle of Mountforde, for the tytle of that dukedome / so that betwene thē mortall warre was exercysed, as in the story of Phylyppe de Valoys shall after more playnly be declared. whyche warre so contynuynge/ the kynge of Englāde ayded þ party of the erle of Mountforde, and the Frēch king ayded Charles de Bloys

And

Truce betwe-ene.

And ouer that durynge the terme of ꝑ sayde treuce, the French kyng made warre vpon the Gascoynes, as after shall apere. And in Scotlande some styrynge was made thys yere by exc̄ytynge of the Frenche kynge, in so mych that the kynge was fayne to sende thyder a crewe of soudiours to strength suche holdes as he there helde. And in thys yere was ꝑ quene delyuered of a man chyld at ꝑ towne of Langeley, the whyche after was named Edmunde, and surnamed Edmunde of Langley.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xli. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xlii.

Johñ Kuskyn.

Symond Fraunces. Anno. xlii.

Rycharde Kyllyngbury.

IN thys. xlii. yere / kynge Edwarde at the requeſt of dyuers of hys yonge lo;des and knyghtes, ſuffered to be exercyſed certayn poynt̄es and feates of warre, as iuſtys, turnamentes and other. whych were executyd at Dunſtable / where the kynge and the quene were p;eſent, wyth the mo;e parte of the lo;des and ladyes of the lande.

Thys yere dyed the fo;enamed Johñ duke of B;ytayne / by reaſon of whoſe deth the warre as in the p;ecedynge yere is touchyd, grewe betwene the ſayde Charlys de Bloyes and the erle of Mountfo;de. Thys Charlys de Bloyes made his clayme to that duchery, by tytle of his wyfe, that was doughter of Guy bycount of Lymogys, and ſeconde b;other of the fo;eſayde Johñ duke of B;ytayne. And Johñ erle of Mountfo;t claymed by the tytle that he was thy;de b;other vnto the fo;enamed duke. But of thys mater I entende to ſhewe mo;e playnely, and of the ende therof in the ſto;y of Phylyp de Ualoys as befo;e I haue ſayde / and rather there than here, bycauſe the fayte therof was not done in Englande but in B;ytayne, wherof the ſayde Phylyppe p;etendyd rule and chyefe ſygno;y.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xlii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xliii.

Johñ Stewarde.

Johñ Hamonde. Anno. xliii.

Johñ Ayleſhñ.

IN thys. xliii. yere, the kynge ſho;tely after Eaſter callyd a parlyament at weſtmynſter. In tyme wherof Edwarde hys eldeſte ſonne was creatyd p;ynce of walys. And many o;dynaūces fo; the weale of ꝑ lande there were enactyd, whych fo; length I paſſe ouer.

Clement the vi. pope.

In thys yere alſo Clement the. vi. of ꝑ name, whyche newly was made pope, tokebpon hym to gyue dyuers byſſhop;yches and benefyces which then fell voyde in Englande. wherwyth the kynge was nothynge contented / in ſo mych that he ſent out cō myſſyons and ſtrayte commaundementes, that no man in tyme folowynge ſhulde p;eſent o; inducte any ſuche perſone o; perſones, that ſo by the pope were p;omoted wythout ꝑ agremente of the kynge, as farre as to wchyd hys p;erogatyue. The ſayd pope Clement was fy;ſte archebyſſhoppe of Roan, and munke of ſaynt Benettes o;der, a Frencheman of by;th, and befo;e called Peter / a man of excel-

of excellent cunnyng, but a waster of goddes patrymony/is promoted to ꝑ dygnyte, by instaunt labour of the frenche kyng/ which sent hys sonne Johñ duke of Normandy & the duke of Burgoyn vnto the cyte of Aupnyon or Aupgnō, to procure and further the electyon. By meane wherof he was there chosen pope aboute the vii. day of May, and tronysed in the sayd moneth of May, in the begynnynge of the yere of grace after that compte of the chyrche of Englande, M.CCC.xliii. By meanes and fauoure of whyche pope, the frenche kynges causes and maters betwene kynge Edwarde and hym were some deale promoted. For as testyfieth the frenche boke/the French kyng thys yere put to deth one mayster Hēry de Malestrete, a graduat man, and brother vnto syr Godfrey de Malestrete knyght, lately also put to deth by the sayde frenche kynge, for they hyde lyte whyche they bare towarde kyng Edward, as hys feodaryes. wherof kynge Edwarde made hys cōplaynt vnto the pope, of thys and other thynges to be done contrary the constytucyons of the former peace concluded by the two cardynalles/ and had therof no remedye. In thys yere also kynge Edwarde made a coyne of fyne golde, and named it the Flo- kynge Edwardes Flo ryne. ryne/that is to say, the peny of the value of syxe s. viii. d, the halfe peny of the value of thre s. iiii. d, and the farthynge of the value of. rr. d. whyche coyne was ordeyned for hys warres in Fraunce, for the golde therof was nat so fyne as was the noble, whyche he before in hys fourthen yere of hys reygne had cauled to be coyned.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xliii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xliiii.

Geffrey wychyngham.

Johan Hamonde. Anno. xiv.

Thomas Legge.

IN thys. xiv. yere, the kyng held a solempne feaste at hys castell of wyndsore/where betwene Candelmasse and lent were holden or executed many marcyall actes, as iustes, tournamentes with diuerse other/ at the whyche were present many straungers of other landes. And in ꝑ ende therof, he there deuysed the order of the garter, and after stablysshed it as at thys daye it is contynued. In this yere about midsomer, kyng Edward wyth a stronge armye sayled vnto Sluse, and so into lytle Bretayne. But for he was dyspoynted of the ayde of the Flemynges, by reason of the deth of hys trusty frende Jaques de Artyuele, whyche than was slayn of the Flemynges of Gaunt, by a cōspyracy that they made agayne hym by suche as fauoured the partye of ꝑ French kyng/ he tourned home into Englande agayne the same yere/ leuynge behynde hym the erle of Salysbury with a stronge company, to ayde Johñ erle of Mountforde agayn syr Charles de Bloys. The whyche Johñ by the ayde of the Englysshmē wan diuerse townes & holdes in Bry- Thorder of the garter. tayne, vpō the sayd syr Charles & his Frenchmē. But in the ende of thys yere he was taken with such sykenes ꝑ he dyed in a towne called Corentyne. After whose deth the sayd Charles possessed the more parte of the duchye of Bretayne.

Thys yere the kyng sent ꝑ erle of Derby with a strōg army into Guyā for to ayde the erle of Northāpton/ whome ꝑ kynge before had left there

rr. at Bur-

at Burdeaux, to strēgth that coūtrey agayne the French men. To whome after the dethe of the forenamed syr Johñ erle of Mountforde, drewe many of the soudyours that were on his partye.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xliiii. Anno domini.M.CCC.xlv.

Edmunde Hempnale.

Rychard Lacet. Anno xx.

Johñ Glouceter.

IN thys.xx.yere or later ende of the.xix.yere, þ is to wyt aboute saynt Nycholas tyde in the begynnynge of thys mayers yere/ the forsayd erles of Derby & Northampton had won the towne & castel of Bergarat in Gascoyne, & slewe there the erle of Valētynoys chefe capytayne therof/ & toke there a noble man called þ erle of the Ilys, wyth many other ryche prysoners. And about Aprylł þ sayd erles wanne a strōge towne called the Ryall. wherof herynge Philip de Valoys, in all haste sent hys sonñ Johñ duke of Normandy to wythstande & to gyue batayll vnto þ sayd erles. But whan the sayd duke was nere vnto the Englysshemen, he had suche tydinges of theyr strength that he retourned vnto hys father agayn. For the whych dede hys father wyth hym was greuously discontented/ in so moche þ by þ occasiō to auoyd his fathers displeasure, he retourned to Gascoyne, & layed siege vnto þ castel of Aguyllon/ & there remayned tyll þ moneth of August folowing without gettynge of it any aduauntage/ at whych season he retourned agayn to his father. After whose departure the erle of Northāpton with hys cōpany gatte a strōge towne called in french la Roche Darien/ which is to meane the Roche or Rocke of Aryen. In the tyme of whyche warre thus cōtinued in Bretayne & Guyan/ the Frenche kyng made purueyaunce to defende hys lande agayne kyng Edward, for whome he awayted dayly. And kyng Edwarde as faste gathered money, & made hys dayly purueyaunce to prepare hym thyderwarde.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xlv. Anno dñi.xiii.C.xlvi.

Johñ Croydon.

Geffrey wychyngham. Anno.xxi.

wyllyam Clopton.

IN this.xxi.yere, kyng Edward helde hys parlyament at westmynster about the tyme of lent. And in the moneth of July folowynge, he toke shyppynge and sayled into Normandy, & landed as wytnesseth the Frēche cronicle at a place in that pronynce named in Frenche la Hougne sent Vast, with.xi.C. sayles greate & small, þ.xii. day of þ forsayd moneth of July. And anone as he was lāded, he cōmaunded hys people to waste þ countrey before them. And by the leadyng of a knyght called syr Godfrey Harcourte/ he was brought vnto a towne called Heily, and from thens vnto Mountboure, where the kynge wythe all hys people rested hym a season.

In the whyche tyme the sayde syr Godfrey brent & spoyled the coūtrey of Cōstantyne there nere adioynyng. Than kyng Edward departed fro þ forsayd towne, & went vnto a strōge towne called Karenten or Karenton/ the whyche he gate wyth the castell to the

to the same belongynge. And so continued his tourney, ꝑ vpō the.xx. day of ꝑ sayde moneth of Iule, he layed hys syege before the cytye or towne of Caen. wherin were at ꝑ daye chyefe capytaynes, the bysshop of Bayen, ꝑ erle of Ewe, the lorde of Turnebu, wyth other dyuerse knyghtes & men of name. Than kyng Edwarde commaunded that the sayd towne shulde be assayled / ꝑ whych was done with so great force, & specyally with suche stronge and cōtynuall shot, that the Frenchmē forsoke the wallys & drew them towarde the castell. And in processe after longe & cruell fyght, ꝑ Englysshemen entred the towne, & there toke prysoners. Amonge the whyche there was taken ꝑ cōstable of Fraūce & the kynges chaūberleyne. * Than the Englysshemen spoyled and pylled the towne of Caen / and bare the pyllage vnto theyr shyppes, whyche after was conueyed by them into Englande. whan kynge Edwarde had thus spoyled and brent a parte of the towne of Caen, & forced the bysshope of Bayen & the other capytaynes to take the castell for theyr refuge / considerynge the strength of the same he departed thens, and so sped hym towarde the cytye of Roan chefe & prin cypall cytye of Normandye. But the Frenche kynge with a greate power was in thys whyle comē vnto Roan, & had broken the brydges, and stopped the passages in suche wyse, that kynge Edwarde was fayne to leue ꝑ way / so that he coosted toward Parys and came to a stronge towne called Uernon, & from thens to a towne named Imprlene / at whych townes he was resysted & loste some of hys soudyours. And the.xii. daye of Auguste he came to a towne named Poysy, & tarryed there. ii. dayes / and from thēs rode vnto saynt Germayn. And euer syr Godfrey de Harcourt kyng in ꝑ bawarde, brent the townes & spoyled the coūtrey as he went

And lyke as kyng Edwarde with hys hoste thus passed the coūtrey towarde Parys / so in lyke maner the Frenche kynge with hys power, passed or helde hys way towarde ꝑ sayd cytye / beynge so nere sundry tymes, that eyther hoste had syght of other. But the ryuer of Seyne was euer betwene them, so that for it they myght nat ioyne in batayll. whan kyng Edwarde was comyn to a towne called saynt Clowe / he set fyre therin, which was sene vnto Parys. whyche put ꝑ cytezeyns in great fere, in so moch as wytnesseth the Frēch cronycle, that if the Frēch kyng had nat ben there present / the cytye shulde haue be yelden vnto kyng Edwarde. Thā kyng Edwarde seynge he myght nat passe the ryuer of Seyn towarde ꝑ citie of Parys, occupyed all ꝑ chefe palaysys & royall Manours, where the Frenche kynges were accustomed for to sotourne and lye at / & dranke the wyne & occupyed suche stuffe & necessaryes as he there fande. And at hys departyng set fyre vpō them, & cōsumed the more parte of them. As at poyzy one, at saynt Germayne an other, and at Mount Joy the thyrde / & brente the towne of Poyzy, reseruyng an house of nunnes, whyche was founded by Philyp le Beawe father vnto kyng Edwardes wyfe. Here ye shal vnderstāde that the auctours or wryters sauoureth theyr owne nacyon. For the Englysshe wryters say, that ꝑ Frēch kyng fledde / & brake the brydges as he went, to the ende that the Englysh hoste shuld nat wynne to the Frenchmen to gyue vnto thē batayll. And ꝑ Frenche boke sayeth, that kynge Edwarde fled, & wolde nat abyde batayl with the Frenche men / wherefore the Frēch kyng brake the brydges to the entent that ꝑ Englysshe mē shuld nat

* Caen conquered.

Affectyō of Hystoryographers.

eſcape hys daũger. But howe it was as ſayth an other wryter called Johñ Froyſarde / the commons of Fraũce thought it a greate dyſhonoure vnto all the lande, that the Engliſſh hoſte ſhuld ſo paſſe thorough the harte or myddell of Fraunce / and to occuppe the kynges chief lodgynges, & nat to be foughten with of all that ſeaſon. whych myght nat be after the opiniõ of the ſayd common people, wythout great treaſon of ſuche as were nere about the kyng. Thã kyng Edward was ſo cloſed by reaſon of brekynge of brydges, ỹ he was forced to drawe backe, and to reedyfye the brydge of Poyſy. The whiche was repayred in ſo ſtronge wyſe, that he & hys hoſte paſſed there ouer withoute parell. Howe be it that in the tyme of repayrynge of it, the French kyng ſent thyder .xi. M. men to let the ſayde werke. But the archers kept theym of wyth theyr ſhot, in ſo ſharpe maner, that ỹ more partye of them was ſlayne, and the werke pfyghted as aboue is ſayd Than kyng Edwarde entred the coũtrey of Picardy / & the French kynge remoued frome ſaynte Denys vnto ſait Germains, & frõ thens to a town called Aubeuyle in Poyteau, & from thens to Antoygne. In thys whyle kyng Edward with baner diſplayed came vnto the cytye of Beauuayſe, & aſſayled the towne. But the towne was wel garniſſhed with ſoudyours which defẽded theyr enemyes bygouroully. wherfore kynge Edwarde cõſyderynge, he myghte nat lyghtely wynne that towne, ſette the bulwerkes on fyre / and ſo departed thens, & rode vnto a place called in Frenche Soygnoutle or Blãke Tache. where he paſſed the water of Dum vpon a frydaye the .xxv. daye of Auguſt, and lodged hym & hys people nere vnto a foreſt called Creſſy or Creey. wherof whan the French kyng was ware anone he ſped hym frome the fore named towne of Antoygne vnto Aubeuyle agayne. where after he hadde refreſſhed hym and hys people, he rode vnto an abbey faſte by the forenamed towne of Creſſy.

In thys paſſe tyme, Johñ duke of Normandy and ſonne of Phylyp de Ualoys, whyche as in the precedyng yere is towched, layd hys ſyege vnto the caſtell of Iguylon, herynge that hys father was thus warreyed wyth the kyng of Englande / brake vp his ſyege, and came with hys ſtrengthe vnto hys father.

THeſe .ii. greate hoſtes thus lodged within lytle compaſſe, nere vnto the forenamed towne of Creſſy / vpon the ſaterdaye folowyng the feaſte of ſaynt Bartholmewe, beynge the .xxvi. day of the monethe of Auguſt, eyther cruelly aſſayled other and foughte there a mortall & ſharpe batayll. whereof in the ende kynge Edwarde gloryouſlye was victoure, and chaced the Frenche kynge / and ſlewe in that fyght after the ſayenge of moſte wryters, the kynge of Bohemy or Beame ſonne of Henry ỹ Emperoure, viii. or the .eyght, the duke of Lorreyne, the erle of Alenſon brother vnto the frẽche kynge, Charles erle of Bloys, the erles of Flaunders, of Sancer, of Harcourt, and of Fyennes, wyth dyuerſe other to the noumber of eyght byſſhoppes and erles, & xviii. lordes of name / and of baneretes, knyghtes, and eſquyers, beyõde the noumber of .xxi. hũdreth / ſo that as concludeth the Frenche hyſtorye, in that batayll was ſlayne the floure of the Chyualrye of Fraunce, and of the cõmons vpõ. viii. M. men / & that the realme of Fraũce that day ſuſtyned ſuch confuſiõ, that the lyke therof had nat be ſene many yeres paſſed /

and

and ỹ be people and men of no reputacyon, as archers, by the vyolence of theyr inportune shot, whych hors nor man myght stande agayne. Thã the Frenche kyng with a small company fledde sore hurte vnto a towne called Bray, & lodged there ỹ nyght folowynge. And kyng Edwarde beynge warned that an other hoste of enemyes was commynge towarde hym, abode styll in the same feelde, & set good watches, & made great fyres thorough the hoste, and so cõtynued tyll the monday folowynge. Upon whyche day in the mornynge apered to them a new hoste of Frenche men/ to the whych they gaue batayle, and slewe of them more in noumbre thã was slayne vpõ the saterday before. But of cappytaynes or men of name the auctor reherseth none.

Than kyng Edwarde gaue great thankes vnto god of his tryumphãt victory/ and after departed frõ that towne of Crelly, and toke hys waye towarde Woustruell, and from thẽs to Boleyne, and lastly to Caleys. wherof than was cappytayne vnder ỹ Frenche kyng a Burgonyõ knyght named syr Johñ de Vyẽne/ to whom kyng Edwarde sent that he shuld delyuer vnto hym the sayde towne of Caleys. But for the kynge receyued from hym no comfortable answere/ he immedyatly layde hys syege vnto the sayd towne, whych was vpon the thyrde day of the moneth of Septẽbre/ & there abode a certayn of tyme in makynge of assautes to the same. In whyche tyme and season the erle of Derby spenge at Burdeaux, and hauynge the rule of Gascoyne and Guyan/ wan dyuerse townes & holdes from the Frenchemen, as the townes called Mayntez in Poyteaw sayne Johñ de Angely, and ỹ towne of Poytyers. In the whyche he had excedyng treasoure and ryches/ soo that he & hys soudyours were greatly enryched by the pyllage that they wan in those townes and countrey to them adioynaunt. And whã the sayd erle had spoyled the sayd townes, & brent a greate parte of the forsayde cytye of Poytyers, and the kynges palays within the same/ he than at hys pleasure retourned vnto Burdeaux.

In thys passe tyme also, the Frẽch kyng to the entente to haste kyng Edwarde into Englande/ sent Dauyd le Bruze sometyme kynge of Scottes, into ỹ lande with a strõge army. The which gathered vnto hym such lordes and knyghtes of Scotlande as before tymes fauoured hys party and with them entred the boundes of Northumberlande, & spoyled that countrey without pyte. But it shall apere by other auctoures, that thys Dauyd le Bruze at thys daye hadde recouered the crowne of Scotlande/ and that Edwarde de Bayoll was than dede, whych before was kynge. Than it folowith whan the archebisshop of yorke with other lordes than lefte in Englande herde tell that the Scottes were thus entred the lande anone the sayd archebysshppe, with syr Henry Perse, syr Rafe Neuyle, & syr Gilbert Umfreyle knyghtes, and other gentylmen aswell spyrytuall as other, apparayled theym in theyr best maner and sped them towarde ỹ Scottes/ so that they mette with thẽ and gaue vnto them batayll vpon ỹ euyn of sayne Luke or the .xviii. daye of Octobre in a place fast by Durhã called at that daye Neuples crosse. where god shewed to the Englysshe men suche grace, that they sõmytted ỹ Scottes, and slew of them great foyson/ and toke prysoners the sayd Dauid le Bruze, syr wyllyam Dowglas syr Thõlyn Fowkys, with other of ỹ nobles of Scotlande/ the whyche

rr. iii. shortly

shortely after were surely conueyed vnto the towre of London, and there kepte as prysoners.

whā kynge Edward from the .iiii. day of September as before is sayd, hadde by sondry tymes assayled the towne of Caleys, and sawe well he he might nat shortly wynne it/he prouyded for hi & hys people to lye there all ꝑ wynter folowynge/ so ꝑ for the lodging of hym & his hoste, he made so many houses & lodges, that it semed an other Caleys. wherfore in ꝑces of tyme durynge ꝑ syege, of the vytelers & suche as dayly resorted vnto ꝑ kynges hoste, it was named newe Caleys. where ꝑ kyng in proper persone abode al the wynter folowynge, & the more parte of the nexte somer as after shall apere.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xlvi. Anno dñi.xiii.C.xlvii.

Adam Bramston.

Thomas Legge. Anno.xvii.

Rycharde Basyngstoke.

THys.xvii. yere, kyng Edward after the stormy wynter was ouerpassed/ he cōmaunded certayne shyppes to be toyned mo in noumbre vnto such as before had kept the see, that no vytayll shuld come to the inhabytaūtes of Caleys/ so that ꝑ sayd towne was fayne to holde them content with such olde store as they had for any newe that to them myghte be cōueyd or sent. And the kynges hoste was plentuously vytayled by ꝑ Flemynges, & by other vytayllers dayly commyng out of Englande.

whā Calys was gotte.‡ kynge Philyppe hauynge dayly worde of the strength of his enemyes and the encreace of them, as by Estrlynges and other nacions that kyng Edwarde had to hym allyed / & sawe well that without the sayde towne were shortly rescowed, it shulde shortly be polden into the handes of hys enemyes, to the great hurte of all the realme of Fraunce: wherfore after a great counsayll holden at Parys, he chaunged hys money to hys greate auaūtage/and ouer that set an imposicion vppon hys commons, to their great grudge & murmure. And that done he toke his leue of saint Denys about the quyndene of Pasche, and so rode vnto a towne called Heldoun where he taryed the gadernyng of hys hoste, so longe that it was nere vnto the feast of mary Magdaleyn or hys people were all assembled. At whych season he set forthwarde to the town of Caleys, to remoue ꝑ kynge of England from that syege/and to spedde hym, that about the ende of ꝑ moneth of July, he drewe nere vnto Caleys. The whyche before hys commynge was polden vnto kyng Edwarde/ so that the Frenche cronicle sheweth no thynge of the Frenche kynges shamefull departynge, lyke as it is reherced in the Englysshe cronycle, & of other wryters that wryte of the same.

* Than after moste wryters, ꝑ town of Caleys was polden to kynge Edwarde about the ende of September after the kynge had contynued there hys siege an hole yere and somedeale more. After receyte wherof he taryed in the towne vppon a moneth, & voyded clene all the olde inhabytauntes and Frenchemen, and stored it wyth Englysshemen, and specyally wyth Kentysshmen. And whan he had sette that towne in a sure ordre and gydynge, and graunted a peace for .ix. monethes at the requeste of two cardynalles sente frome the forenamed pope Clement the syxte, to be holden

betwene

betwene hym and the frenche kyng/ he sayled wyth great tryumphe into Englande, and came to London a-boute the feaste of saynte Romayne or the thre and twenty daye of Octo-bre/where he was ioyously receyued of the cyteyeyns, and so cõueyed vnto westmynster.

In thys yere also an Englysshe knyght called syr Thomas Agorne, capytayne of the roche of Aryan be-fore spoken of in the.xx. yere of thys kyng, was fiersly warred of syr Char les de Blops. But after many byke-rynges & skyrmishes, a day of batayl was set betwene the sayd Charles & Thomas. Or after the frẽche bokes declaracion, the sayd Charles assau-tynge that towne vpõ one partie/ the sayd syr Thomas wyth a cõpany of stalworth archers & sowdyours, issu-ed out at an other parte of the towne & beset the sayd syr Charles & hys cõ pany about/ & assayled them in suche wyse, ỹ in the ende the more partye of hys cõpany was taken and slayne, & the sayd syr Charles there také amõg the other. And of men of name were there slayne, ỹ vicoũt of Roan, ỹ lord Dernall, ỹ lord of Quyntyne, wyth syr wyllm hys sõne, ỹ lord of ỹ castell of Bret, ỹ lord of the roche, & syr Gef-frey Turneuew, with many other mẽ of honour, whych I passe ouer. And after the sayd Charles was healed of suche woũdes as he had receyued in that syght/ he was conueyed into En glande, & there kept as prysoner.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xlviii. Anno domini.M.CCC.xlviii.

Henry Pycarde.

Johñ Luskyn. Anno.xviii.

Symonde Dolsely.

In thys.xviii.yere, syll great cõ-tynuall rayne from mydsomer to Crystmas, whereof ensued exce-dynge floddes. By reason wherof the grounde was sore corrupted, so that dyuers inconuenences ensued vpon the same, as sykenes & other, as in ỹ peres folowynge shall apere. And in fraunce thys yere the people dyed wonderfully in dyuers places of the realme/so vehemently that in the cy-tye of Parys dyed in thys yere or lyt tell more, ouer .l.M. people / and at saynt Denys beyonde. xiiii.M. And in Italy and many other countreys, thys mortalytye aboute thys season reygned also inportunely / and that in Hethẽnes aswell as in cristẽdome.

And in the ende of thys yere about the ende of August/ thys mortalytye began in dyuers places of England, and specyally at London/and so con tinued to the sayd moneth of August next ensuynge. And vpõ that ensued skerylite or barenes, aswel of the see as of the lande, so that vytayll and corne was more scante than it was before.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xlviii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xlix.

Adam Bury.

wyllyam Turke. Anno.xviiii.

Rauffe Lynne.

In thys.xviiii.yere, the mortali tie before sayde in Englande & specyally in London moost fercetly rayneynge / a treasone, as after ap-pereth was conspyred, to haue brou-ghte the towne of Caleys agayne

rr. iiii. to the

to the frenche kynges possessyon. Kynge Edwarde beforetyme hadde commytted one of the towres of Caleys vnto a January to whō he myth trusted. wyth the whyche January a knyght of Burgoyn named syr Godfrey de Charny, was very familyer/ in so mych that the sayd syr Godfrey at conuenyent leyser brake vnto the sayde January, for the betrayenge of ꝑ towne of Caleys. The which gaue vnto hym lykynge answere / so that the sayd January agreed for certayn sōme of money to be payde in hande, to deliuer vnto the sayd syr Godfrey and suche other as he then shulde bryuge wyth hym, the towre that he then hadde in keppnge. By meane wherof he shulde shortly after haue the rule of the towne. In tyme of dyp uynge and of apoyntynge of whiche bargayne as sayth the frenche cronycle/this January sent secrete word vnto the kynge of Englande/requyrynge hym in secrete wyse to come vnto Caleys. The whyche then holdynge hys Crystmas at Hauerynge Bower in Esser, vppon the morowe after newe yeres daye toke hys shyppynge, and landed that nyght at Caleys, in so secrete maner that fewe of the towne knewe of his there beyng.

* A great deth in London.

whan the daye of apoyntmente of delyuery of this forsayd towre was comyn, and thys January hadde receyued hys payment/at an houre assygned betwene the sayde syr Godfrey & hym, a token was gyuē by thys sayde January, that the frenchmen shulde drawe nere vnto ꝑ sayd towre to wynne theyr pray.

Then the sayd syr Godfrey wyth a certayne noumber came wythin ꝑ dangier of the towne of Caleys, warnyng ꝑ resydue of hys cōpany that they shuld tary there tyll he were entrede ꝑ towne/& than at his sendyng to come in all spedy wyse. But so soone as the sayde syr Godfrey was nere vnto the towre, a dussheyn of sawdyoures were sente out at a posterne/the whiche closed hym and his frenchemen vpon all sydes, & slewe of them many. Amonge the whiche, syr Henry de Bops knyght, with syr Gautyer de Valence, and syr Robert of Beuuays knyghtes, were slayne/ And the sayd syr Godfrey taken sore wounded/and the lorde of Mountmorency escaped with great dangier, the whiche gaue warnynge vnto the other company and returned theym into Fraunce. Than the sayd Godfrey de Charney was layde vpon a borde, and so presented vnto kynge Edwarde the whiche had suche pyte of hym, that he cōmaunded his owne surgyons to loke vnto hym, and to cure hym in theyr best manet. And whā he was somdeale cured he was sente as a prysoner with other into Englande.

In this yere also the kynge caused to be coyned grotes & halfe grotes, the whiche lacked of the weyght of his former coyne. ii. ℈. vi. ℈. in a. li. Troy. * And aboute the ende of August sessed the mortalyte or dethe in London / ꝑ whiche was so behemet and sharpe within ꝑ sayd cytie, that ouer the bodyes buried in churches, and churcheyerdes, monasteries and other accumed buryeng places/was buryed that same yere in the charterhouse yerde of London. l. M. persones and aboue.

This yere also was ꝑ yere of Jubile or clene remyssyon, whiche is kept at Rome at euery. l. wynter ende lyke as the yere of Jubile or grace is contynued at Cauntorbury.

And thys yere by the laboure of two cardynalles sent from pope Clemēt the. vi, was a peace cōcluded betwene the two kynges of Englande & of Fraūce for a yere, nere vnto the towne

owne of Caleys. wherefore the stablysshynge of the sayde peace for the sayde yere, assembled the two sayde cardynalles. And for the kynge of Englande, the byssshoppe of Norwyche than treasourer and chyefe chancellor of the kynge, with other vnto hym by the kynge assygned. And for the Frenche kynge, was there the byssshop of Laone, and the abbot of saynt Denys wyth other.

And the .xxiii. daye of the moneth of Auguste. In thys yere and yere of our lorde .xiii. hundreth and syxthty, dyed Phylyppe de Valoys kyng of Fraunce. Deth of Pylyppe de Valoys.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xlix. Anno domini.M.CCC.l.

Johñ Notte.

Rychard Kyllyngbury. Anno.xxv.

wyllyam worcestre.

IN thys .xxv. yere about ỹ feast of the decollacyon of sayntе Johñ Baptyste in the latter ende of August/a noble man of Spayne called syr Charles, to whome kynge Johan of Fraunce had newely gyuē the erledome of Angolesme, entendynge to wynne some honoure vpon the Englysshemen, wyth a stronge nauy of Spaynardes entrede ỹ Englysshe stremys, and dyd moche harme vnto kynge Edwardes frendes. ✠ So that the kyng about the season aboue sayde, mette wyth the sayde nauy vpon the cooste of wynchelsee/ where betwene the kynge and them was a longe and mortall fyghte, to ỹ greate losse of moche people vppon bothe partyes. But in the ende god sente vnto the kyng victory/so that he chased hys enemyes, and wanne frome theym .xxii. of theyr shyppes after moost wyters, wyth many pry soners.

And thys yere syr Thomas of Agorne, whiche as in the .xxii. yere of thys kyng; reygne, toke prysoner syr Charles de Bloys and other/ was slayne by chaunce medle of a knyght of Fraunce or Brytayne called syr Raulfe de Caours.

And thys yere were solempne messangers sente vnto Rome, for to conclude and parfyte the peace betwene the two kynges of Englande and of Fraunce. So that kynge Edward shulde resygne and gyue vp all hys tytle and clayme that he made vnto the crowne of Fraunce/& the Frenche kynge shulde clerely gyue vnto hym all the duchye of Guyan / wyth all suche landes as at any tyme before were taken by any of hys progenytours from it. And that kyng Edwarde and hys heyres kynges shuld freely holde and occuppe the sayde duchye, wythout doynge of homage to any Frenche kyng after that day. But the conclusyon of thys matyer was so prolonged and deferred by ỹ pope, and such delayes as dayly ben vsed in the courte of Rome, that the erle of Derby wyth other, whyche were appoynted for the kynge of Englande, retourned wythoute spede of theyr cause. wherfore kynge Edwarde made new prouisyōs to warre vpon kyng Johñ of Fraunce. Kynge Edwardes victory on the sea. ✠ Delayes of the courte of Rome.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.li. Anno dñi.M.CCC.lii.

Johñ wrothe.

Andrewe Awbry. Anno.xxvi.

Sybbosi Staynthorpe.

In thys

IN thys.xxbi. yere, the castel of Guynys was yolden vnto the Englysshmen dwellynge in Caleys/ whyche as testyfyeth the French cronicle was done by treason of a Frēch man named Guyllyam de Beaucōrop. For the whyche treason the sayd Guyllyam was shortely after put in execucyon in the towne of Impas.

And about the myddell of August vppon the euyn of our Lady assumpcyon / syr Guy de Neale than marshall of Fraunce, wyth a stronge cōpany gaue bataylle vnto the Englysshemen than beynge in Bretayn in the whych the sayde syr Guy with the lord of Byrkebet and the Chastelleyne of Beaunais, with many other noble men were slayne, & many takē prysoners.

Anno domini. M.CCC.li. Anno domini. M.CCC.lii.

Johñ Peche.

Adam Fraunceys. Anno.xxbii.

Johñ Stodeney.

THe somer of thys.xxbii. yere was so dry, that it was many yeres after called the dry somer. For from the latter ende of Marche tyll the latter ende of July, fyll lytell rayne or none / by reason wherof many inconuenyences ensued.

And one thynge whyche is specyally noted / corne the yere folowynge was scante / whereof the pryce thys yere began to enhaunce greatly / and beuys and mottons were also dere for scantnesse of grasse and pasture / and that aswell was expert in Fraunce as in the ile of Englāde.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lii. Anno domini. M.CCC.liii.

Johñ welde.

Adam Fraunceys. Anno.xxbiii.

Johñ Lytell.

IN thys.xxbiii.yere, kynge Edwarde holdynge hys parlyament at westmynster / amonge other thynges there enacted, soone after Pentecoste created the erle of Derby duke of Lācastre, & syr Rauffe Stafford was created erle of Stafforde. Than thys duke of Lancastre was sent agayne ouer the see / wherein the ende of this yere as witnesseth Johñ Froyssarde, he was appealed of the duke of Bryswyke a duke of the cōtre of Almayne, of certayne wordes contrary hys honoure, for the whych he waged batayll with the sayd duke in the court of the Frenche kyng.

Than thys Henry whych of some wryters is named Henry Bolyngbroke duke of Lancastre, purchased hys sauffe conduyte of the Frenche kyng / and kepte hys day appoynted for that batayll, in a felde called in Frenche La preaux clercs. where for them was ordeyned a place lysted and cloosed in goodly wyse / kynge Johan beynge presente wyth the more parte of hys nobles of Fraūce. And there came in fyrst into that feld the forenamed duke Appellasite / & after thys noble duke of Lācastre, to the great honour of all Englande. And soone after dyuers obseruaūces accordyng to the law of armys done & solempne othes taken / eyther set in the rest to haue cōne the fyrst course. But kynge Johan of hys especyall grace

grace ceased ꝑ mater, & toke the quarell into hys handes / so that eyther of theym departed the felde wythout any stroke strykynge / and pacyfyed the appeale, to the honoure of the duke of Lancastre as wytnesseth the frenche boke, nat wyth standynge he was the French kynges enemye.

And soone after the sayde duke of Lancastre wyth other nobles assygned to hym by the kyng of England, wentte to Iuynyon, wyth the archebysshoppe of Roan than chaunceller of Fraunce, and the duke of Burbō and other appoynted for the kynge of Fraunce / to conclude este a peace betwene theyr two prynces. The whyche at the eyrye before sayd were harde at lengthe, before the newe pope than named Innocente the .vi. whych also lyke to hys predecessour was a Frencheman / and cardynall of Lymosyne in Normādy, called by hys proper name Stephan Aubert. In conclusyon after great argumēte made on eyther partye before the pope and hys counsayl / fynally it was agreed, that ꝑ peace betwene the .ii. kynges shuld be kept & holden inuiolate tyll mydsomer next folowynge.

Anno domini. M.CCC.liii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.liiii.

wyllyam Tontynghā. Anno. xxix.

Thomas Legge. Rycharde Smert.

IN thys .xxix. yere / kynge Edward by the aduyce of hys cōsayll, for so moche as the townes of Flaunders brake theyr promyse before tyme made, and helde nat the bādes of ampte by theym promysed by the lyke of Jaques de Artyuele, but fauoured the frēche kynges partye: therefore he with drewe from theym the marketes and staples of wolles, that in sondry townes of Flaunders had than lately by the prouycyon of the forsayd Jaques, to theyr greate aduauntage vsed to be kept / and ordeyned than the sayde staples to be holden in sondry good townes of Englande as westmynster, Chychester, Lyncolne, Bryslowe, and Cauterbury.

And shortely after Easter / the frenche kynge sent hys eldest sonne Charles dolphyne of Vyenne into Normandy, for to take the rule of ꝑ countre / and specially for to seasse certayne landes & castelles, whyche at ꝑ daye belonged vnto the kyng of Nauerne, whyche than was oute of the frenche kynges fauour, for the deth of syr Charles of Spayne constable lately of Fraūce, ꝑ he had by his meanes murdered in a towne called the Ygle in Normandy, vpō .ii. yeres before passed. And whyle ꝑ sayd dolphyne was thus besyed in Normādy / he made suche meanes to ꝑ rulers therof, that they graūted vnto hym ayde of .iii. M. mē for .iii. moneths, at theyr proper costes and charges.

Of thys soone after sprange suche tydinges, ꝑ the kyng of Englād was enformed that the frēch kyng had gyuen to hys sonne Charles ꝑ duchy of Normandy with all Gascoygne & Guyan / and howe ꝑ Normānes had graūted vnto ꝑ sayd Charles .iii. M. mē for .iii. moneths, to warre at theyr costes vpō ꝑ Englysshmē / whych as ꝑ frēch boke testifieth, was graūted to hym onely to defende ꝑ kyng of Nauerne, ꝑ came to Cōstātyne shortly after, for to repossesse all such lāndes as the sayd dolphyn of hys had there seased & for that wyth a bygge armye made warre vpon the sayd dolphyn.

But

But were it thus or otherwyse/ trouth it is as diuers wryters agree, in the moneth of October and ende of thys yere, prynce Edwarde wyth a great hoste entred Gascoyne, and passed by Tholouse, and passed the ryuer of Gerounde or Geros/and so passed by Carcassyon, and brent the bulwerkes of that cytye/ and from thens he rode to Nerbos, in pyllyng & spoylynge the countre as he went.

And in the same yere kynge Edwarde wyth his power landed at his towne of Caleys/ where he rested hi by all ỳ tyme of this mayres yere.

And in this yere was the house of the freres Augustynes of Londō fynysshed/ whyche was reedyfyed by syr Humfrey Bohum erle of Herforde and Esser, whose body lyeth buryed in the quere of the sayde house or chyrche before the hygh auiter.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xliii. Anno domini.M.CCC.xlv.

Thomas Forster.

Symon Franceys. Anno.xxx.

Thomas Brandon.

IN this.xxx.yere/ the kynge as ye before haue herde beyng at Caleys, shortly after the feast of Alhallowne toke his iournay towarde the Frenche kynge/ and contynued his iournay tyll he came to a towne named Hesden/ and brake there the Frenche kynges parke, & toke suche pleasures as hym there lyked. In whiche season of his there beynge, tydynges were brought vnto hym, ỳ ỳ Scottes had gotē ỳ towne of Berwyke, and how they made dayly assautes to wynne the castell. wherfore the kyng made the more hasty spede, and returned to Caleys, and so into Englande. For whiche cause sayth ỳ Frenche cronycle, ỳ kynge Edwarde fled from the Frenche kynge, ỳ than with a strōge power came from Amyas vnto saynt Omers.

Than kynge Edwarde sped hym into Scotlande/ so ỳ in the moneth of January and begynnynge of the xxx.yere of his reygne, and.xxvii.day of the sayd moneth, he layd his syege to ỳ towne of Berwyke/ & had it polden vnto hym in shorte processe of tyme after. And that doone he entred ferther into the lande, and subdued ỳ cheyf townes & holdes as he went/ & pursued the Scottysshe kynge so narowly, that in the ende he was fayne to submytte hym to ỳ kynges grace as prysoner, and resygned his power into the kynges hande. And whan kynge Edwarde had set that coūtre in a rule/ he returned with the Scottysshe kyng agayne into Englande, and called his courte of parlyament at westmynster. In ỳ whiche amōge other thynges to the kynges auauntage, was graunted to the mayntenaunce of his warres.l.s̄.of a sacke of woll, for ỳ terme of.vi. yeres. But it contynued lenger though the marchaūtes staplers therat grutched.

Berwyke recouered.

Than let vs now retourne vnto that noble prynce Edward, the fyrst begotten sonne of the kynge/ whych by all thys tyme warred vppon the Frenchmen, as in ỳ precedynge yere is touchyd. So that lastly he retourned to Burdeaux wyth many ryche pryseners and pyllages, to the great honoure of hym selfe, and the greate auauncement of hys soudyours.

And all be it that in that countrees, whyche he then passed, were the erles of Armenake, and of Foyse, of Poytyers, and of Clermount, wyth syr James de Burbos, and many other knyghtes,

knyghtes, the whyche hadde dowble the people, as testyfyeth the Frenche cronycle, that the prynce had: yet passed he from Tholous to Nerbon, & fro Nerbon to Burdeaux wythout batayle.

And after the prynce hadde there a whyle rested hym and hys people, and sent dyuers of hys prysoners in to Englande / he wyth hys hoste entred the prouynce or coũtre of Berry in the moneth of July, & made therin sharpe and cruell warre. In whyche season also ỹ duke of Lancaster with the ayde of Phylyp brother vnto the kynge of Nauerne, was entred the countre of Constantyne / and so with a cõpany of .iiii. thousand men, came vnto a place called Lyseur vpon the see coste, & remoued a syege of Frẽch men, that had lyen at that castell vpõ viii. wekes / and after repayred the sayde castell.

Whan kynge Johñ hadde leuyed many great summes of money, to ỹ great grudge of hys comons and rebellyon of some of the sayd comons, as in the story of kynge Johñ shalbe towched, and prepared hys hoste / he fyrst made towarde the duke of Lancaster. But the sayd duke had so fortyfyed ỹ passage, that he myghte not wynne to hym wythout great ieopardye and daunger. wherfore he lafte that waye, & yode to a castell named Bretnell, and layde hys syege there vnto, and wan it in the ende of . viii. wekes by apoyntement. Then he yode to the castell of Chartres, and tarved there a certayn tyme for more people / and frõ thens toke hys iournaye towarde prynce Edwarde. The whyche prynce in thys season was passed the ryuer of Loyre or Leyre, & so by ỹ towne of Romũgtyne / where he was encountred of diuers nobles of Fraunce, and hadde wyth them a sharpe cõflycte. But in the ende god sent to hym the victorye / so that he slewe many of hys enemyes, & toke of them many prysoners. Amonge ỹ whych were taken the lord of Craon, and a knyght called syr Boucyquãt, wyth dyuers other to the nomber, as sayth the Frẽche boke of .viii. perlõs. And whan he had sent the sayde prysoners vnder sauke keppyng to Burdeaux, he sped hym toward Towrs.

And the duke of Lancaster wyth hys company, after he had repayred the forsayd castell of Lyseur, and bestowed suche ordenaũce as the Frẽch men for haste lafte behynde them at the sayd syege: he than toke his way towarde Bertneyll / & from thens vnto Eurour, in brennyng & wasting the countre and townes as he went / and from thens to Uerneyll in Perch, & toke by strength both the towne and castell. And whan he had spoyled & pylled the towne, he set it on fyre and brent a great part therof. And whan he had done moch of his wyll in that coũtre, he retourned into Brytayne and helde hym there.

Kynge Johñ then as aboue is sayde, holdynge hys waye towarde prynce Edward / came to the cytye of Towrs for fortyfye the sayde towne agayne the sayde prynce Edwarde. wherof herynge the prynce toke hys waye toward Poytyers. In holding of whyche way, as testyfyeth ỹ Frẽch boke, a parte of hys hoste mette with an hoste of Frenchmen, & gaue vnto them batayle, & at length chasyd the multytude of them, & slewe an hundreth sowdyours, & toke vpõ .lx. prysoners. Amonge the whych were taken the erle of Vaũcer, ỹ erle of Iuretygny, the lord Chastellleyn mayster of the kynges palayes, & a knyghte named syr Guyllyam de Daneham / the whyche prysoners were also sent vnto Burdeaux. And soone after prynce Edwarde lodged hym & hys

hoste nere vnto Poytyers. And shortely after that came the French kyng and lodged hym in a place called in Frenche Chamgny, nere also vnto Poytyers/so that the frōtes of bothe hoostes laye wythin a quarter of a myle. Than the cardynall of Pernygourt sent from pope Innocent the vi. rode bytwene the kynge and the prynce sondry tymes to haue agreed some treaty and peace bytwen them, yf it myght by hys labour haue ben opteyned. But whan he sawe hys labour myght not preuayle/ he departed to Poytiers, and taryed there the ende of the batayle. The whych was foughten vpon a mondaye the .xix. daye of Septēber, in the yere of our lorde .xiii. C. lvi, and begynnyng of the .vi. yere of the sayd kynge Johns reygne, as after shalbe shewed.

The Batayl of Poytiers.

THan as before is sayde, for so mych as the foresayde cardynall myght not purchase any treaty or meane of peace bytwene these two prynces/ prouysyō was made vpon bothe sydes to trye theyr mater by mortall batayle/so y about the houre of two at after noone of the foresayd mōdaye, y duke of Athenes or Athēs with such other nobles as were with hym in y French kynges vawarde set vppon the Englysshe hoste. The whyche was myghtely fensyd wyth wood and trees, in suche wyse that y French speres myght not wyn vnto them. And therwyth the shotte of the Englyshemen was so fyers & sharp, that it turned ouer horse and man. And whyle y sayde duke of Athenes, wyth syr Johñ de Cleremount than marshall of Fraūce wyth other, thus assayled the prynce & his people vpō one parte / the duke of Normandye kyng Johns eldest sonne, & the duke of Orleaūce the kynges brother, assayled hym vpon a nother part. The which two dukes were leders of two stroge hostes. But as sayth y Frēch cronycle, these thre batayls dyd lytle scathe vnto the Englysshemen. But by reason of theyr shotte they were so wounded and many slayne, y the residue fledde to the great dyscomfort of the French kynges people. Than kynge Johñ in all that he myght cōforted hys people/and wyth a freshe company set vpon the Englyshmen, that all wayes kept them hole togyder, and receyued the Frenchemen vpon theyr wepens poyntes, with so greate force y in the ende the Frenchmen gaue backe, and were vaynquished by the helpe of god and sayncte George/and slayne as wytnessyth y sayde Frenche cronycle to the nomber of .xvii. hūdreth men of armys, beside other meane sowdyours. Amōg the whych of noble men were slayne, the duke of Burbone, the duke of Athenes, syr Johñ de Cleremoūt marshal of Fraūce, syr Reynold Campan baneret, whyche that daye bare the oryflambe, a specyall relyke that the Frenche kynges vse to bere before them in all batayls, and the bysshop of Chalons, wyth dyuers other to y nomber of .liiii. banerettes, beside knyghtes & other. And of prysoners taken at y batayle, was Johñ kynge of Fraunce, Phylyp hys .iiii. sonne, syr Jaques de Burbon erle of Poytyau and brother vnto the duke of Burbon before slayne, syr Johñ of Artoys erle of Ewe, syr Charlys hys brother erle of Longeuyle, syr Guyfarde colyn germayn vnto the Frēch kynge, syr Johñ de Weleoun erle of Cancaruyle, syr Johñ his sonne and heyre, doctour wyllyam archbysshop of Sens, syr Symon Welon brother vnto the erle of Cancaruyle and erle of Vandature, the erles of Dāpmartyne, of Vendosme, of Salysbruche, of Woylon, the Marshall of Denchā, & many other, as banerettes, knyghtes,

knyghtes, and men of name, to the nombre as sayth the Frenshe cronycle of.xvi.hundreth & aboue. And frō thys batayll escaped by flyght, Charles eldest sonne of kynge Johñ and duke of Normādye, the duke of Orleaunce, & the duke of Antowe, wyth fewe other of great fame/the whyche rode strayght vnto Parys. where shortly after was called a greate coũ sayll, for maters whyche in the story of kynge Johanne shall after be shewed.

whan the feelde was thus fynyshed/prynce Edward after dewe thākes and louynges gyuen to god and saynt George for thys tryũphaũt vyctory/he with his sayd prysoners sped hym toward Burdeaux where ỳ sayd kyng was kept tyll Easter after.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.lvi.

Rychard Notynghñ.

Anno.xxi.

Henry Pychard.

Thomas Dosell.

IN thys.xxxi.yere, that is to say the.xvi. daye of the moneth of Aprill/ỳ noble prynce Edwarde thā vppon the age of.xxvii.yeres, toke shyppynge wyth hys prysoners at Burdeaux, and arryued in Englāde shortly after. And the.xxiiii.daye of Maye/he was with great honoure & gladnesse receyued of the cytezyns of London, and so conueyed vnto the kynges palays at westmynster. wher the kynge sytteynge in hys astate in westmynster hal, receyued hym with due honour/ and after conueyed to a lodgynge for hym prouyded, whete he laye a certayne season. And after was ỳ sayd French kyng had vnto a place called Sauoy/ whyche thanne was a pleasaunt palays & fayre lodgynge, belongynge that tyme vnto ỳ duke of Lancastre/and after brente & dystroyed by Jak Strawe and hys fawtours, in the.iiii.yere of Rychard the seconde nerte kyng of Englande, as in ỳ sayd yere after shalbe shewed In whyche place the sayde Frenche kynge laye longe after.

And in the wynter folowyng were royall iustes holden in smythfelde of Londō, and many goodly & knyghtly feates of armys doon, to the great honoure of the kyng & all his realm, and gladdyng of all beholdours. At the whych dysporte was present/ the kyng of Englande, the Frēch kyng, and ỳ kyng of Scottes/ wyth many noble astates of all the.iii.prouinces or kyngdomes/ wherof the more parte of the straungers were than prysoners.

Iustes holdē in Smythfelde.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lvi.

Stephyn Caundyssh.

Anno xxxii.

Johñ Stody.

Bartylmewe frostelynge.

IN thys.xxxii.yere/pope Innocent the syxte of that name, sent into Englande twoo cardynalles, to treat of a peace betwene ỳ two kyngs The whyche two cardinalles tarryed the more parte of a yere in London & other places of the lande, to bryngе theyr purpose to some effecte / but they sped lytell of theyr cause.

And in thys yere after moste wynters/Dauyd le Bruse kyng of Scottes was delyuered frome the castell

ss. ii. of

of Ordynh at hys lybertye, whan he had put kynge Edwarde in a surety

Anno dñi.xiii.C.lvii.

Johñ Lukyn.

Johñ Bernes.

Johñ Burys.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.lviii.

Anno.xxxiii.

IN thys.xxxiii. yere, as wytnesseth the Frenche cronycle/ syr Robert Knollys, syr James Pype, with other of theyr retynewe, warred in Bretayne. And as testifyeth the Frenche cronycle, in the moneth of Marche and. x. daye of the sayd moneth/ the sayde capytaynes wyth one whyche the Frenche boke nameth Thomlyn Fowke, came erely in the mornynge vnto a towne that was nere vnto Incerre called Regennes beynge in the rule of Englyshmen/ where the sayde capytaynes takyng wyth thé more strēgth, rode strayght vnto the forsayde towne of Incerre beyng wythin two Englyshe myles/ and scaled the walles wyth ladders, and quyt them so mānfully, that they had the rule of the town or the sonne rysynge. And in that castell was taken prysoner syr Guyllyam de Chalon the sonne of the erle of Incerre, hys wyfe, and many other.

Takyng of Incerre.

In takynge of whyche towne and castell fewe folkes were slayne/ how be it there were of armed men aboue two thousande, as sowdyours to defende the towne. Then the Englyshmen serched so nere, that as the comō fame wente, they fande iewellys as they hadde ben prouy to the hydyng of theym, and that of greate value. Amonge the which as sayth the sayd cronycle, they fande certayne shynnes, the whyche were valued at .v. thousande motons of golde. ye shall vnderstande that a moton is a coyne vsed in Fraunce and Bretayne, and is of value after the rate of sterlynge

A moton of golde.

money vppon. v.s. or there aboute.

whan the Englyshmen hadde pylled and spoyled the towne by the space of. viii. dayes, and raunsomed suche as were of any substaunce/ then they shewed vnto the rulers of the towne, that they wolde sette it vppon a fyne, excepte that they wold gyue vnto theym a certayne summe of money. For the whyche after longe treaty of thys mater/ the rulers of ꝑ towne to haue possessyon therof, and to haue it preserued frō fyre/ agreed to gyue vnto the Englyshe capytaynes. xl. thousande motons, and lx. perlys valued at. x. thousande motons/ whyche. l. thousande motons shulde amounte after the rate of sterlynge money to. xii. thousand and. v. hundreth pownde or nere aboute. So that what they fande wythin ꝑ towne of any value, they bare it with theym/ excepte the iewellys and ornamentes of the chyrch of sayne Germayne/ the whyche goodes and iewelles they toke for pledge of suche money as was vnpayde of the foresayd. xl. M. motons of golde, for the raūsome of the towne. For ꝑ whyche goodes/ the towne of Incerre was bounde vnto the hedes of the chyrch to pay for, or to redeme ꝑ sayd goodes by the feastes of mydsomer nexte folowynge/ or ellys to paye yerely in perpetuyte to ꝑ sayd chyrch in maner of quyte rent. iii. M. motōs/ wherof ꝑ value is shewed in the fyrst chappter of Philyp the. iiii. And ouer all thys the dwellers of the towne agreed, that ꝑ Englyshmen shuld brenne the

gates

gates of ꝑ towne / and in dyuers partes of the towne, throwe the walles to the grounde.

Uppon .iiii. dayes folowynge the ende of the sayd agremente / the forsayd syr James Pype, and syr Othā of Holande, & other to the nombre of .vi. or .vbiii. Englysshmen, entendyng to haue wonne some enterpryse, were layd for by the sowdyours of a place called the great Dempre / and by the taken & holden as prysoners.

And in the moneth of Aprill next ensuyng, a towne called in Frenche Dabygny sur le Metre, was by the Englysshemen gotten in lyke maner & fourme as was the forsayd towne of Incerre. And the .ii. daye of Maye was wonne by syr Robert Knolles & hys company, a towne called Chaste lepu sur Louyayn / and pylled it as they dyd the other. And after wyth theyr pyllage and prysoners, amōge the whyche were many women and chyldren of .iiii. & of fyue yeres of age / the sayd Englysshmē rode to the new castell vpon Loyre. And ye shall vnderstande, that the partye of the Englysshemen was greately strengthed by the helpe of the kyng of Nauerne, and of syr Phylyppe his brother and other / as more playnely shalbe shewed in the Frenche cronycle, or story of kynge Johan folowynge.

And thus the sayde syr Roberte Knolles, wyth ayde of the kynges men of Nauerne, dayly wanne many townes and stronge holdes in Bretayne.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lviii. Anno domini. M. CCC. lix.

Symonde wymondham.

Symonde Dolfelde. Anno. xxxiii.

Johñ Chychester.

IN thys .xxxiii. yere, or more verily in the moneth of Nouembre, & ende of the .xxxiii. yere of kynge Edwardes reygne / he wyth prynce Edward and the duke of Lancastre, wyth a puyssant armye landed at Caleys / and from thens passed by lande vnto Arroys, & by Uermendoys to ꝑ cytye of Reynes, and layde hys siege about that cytye / and beclyppyd it in suche wyse, that no man might entre or go out of the cytye without lycence of the Englysshemen.

Whan kynge Edwarde had lyen .xl. dayes at the siege of reynes, without great dere or hurt vnto it doyng / he remoued hys syege & passed by the countre of Champayne, tyll he came to a towne called Guylione / where ꝑ kynge rested hym a season. In which tyme came vnto hym certayne mē of the duchye of Burgoyne, as lorders of dyuers holdes and townes within that ducherye / & gaue vnto hym, to ꝑ entent he shuld nat molest or hurte ꝑ countre, .ii. C. M. florȳns of golde / whyche is to the value of sterlynge money of .xxv. M. li. And ouer that the sayd Burgonyons couenaunted wyth hym, that they wolde mynystre to hym and his hoste, all such vytayles as was in ꝑ countre plentuously for hys money. And that done he departed frome thens, & rode vnto Neuers / and passed there the ryuer of Dyon or Joñ, and rode to Colāges vpon Joñ. And from thens in the moneth of Marche and begynnynge of hys .xxxiiii. yere of his reygn, he rode by the countre of Gastenoys toward the cytye of Parys. And prynce Edwarde with hys company passed by Moyet, tyll he came to an hold which Englysshmē than kept called Tour-

nelles or Tournelles: before ꝑ which towne or holde lay at that season certayne Frenchmen in a stronge bastyle, & assayied the Englyshmen dayly/ and remoued nat thens, all be it they were monyshed of the ꝓynces commynge. They trusted so moche in the strength of theyr bastyle, whyche they disceyued/ for within .v. dayes of the ꝓynces commyng, theyr bastyle was goten, and many of them slayne, and to the nombre of .xlviii. persones of ꝑ company taken ꝓysoners. Amonge the whyche were .iiii. men of name/ ꝑ is to saye, the lorde of Bouyle or Bonile, the lorde of Dayngreuyle or of Aygreuyle, syr Johñ de Barres, and syr wyllyam de Plassyes.

Thus kynge Edwarde wyth hys people spedyng hys iourney toward Parys / vppon the tuysdaye beynge the laste daye of Marche in the weke before Easter, came vnto a place called the hostell of Chastelon, betwene Montleherry and Chastes / & lodged hym wyth a certayne of hys people there. And ꝑ ꝓynce with other lordes of hys hoste were lodged in the townes thereabout, from thens vnto the towne of Corueyll, & an other towne called longe Jumell.

Thanne Charles eldest sonne of kynge Johñ, and that day regent of Fraunce / made meanes of treaty. whyche was laboured by a freer called Symonde de Langres, ꝓouyncyal of the freers Jacobynes, & legat of the pope. By whose meanes a day of treaty was appoynted to be holde vppon good fryday, in the maledery of le longe Jumel. where at the same daye and place, apered for kynge Edwardes partye, the duke of Lancastre, the erles of warwyke & of Northãpton, wyth syr Johan de Chande, syr walteyr de Wanup, and syr wyllyam Cheyny knyghtes. And for the regẽt apered there, the lorde of Fewe than constable of Fraunce, the lorde Boucquant than marshall of Fraunce, the lord of Sarancyers, the lord of Tyyrnay of the coũtee of Vyenne, syr Symond Buey, & syr Guychard of Angiye knyghtes / whyche treaty came to none effecte.

wherfore kynge Edwarde vpon the tuysdaye folowynge Easter daye remoued frome the sayd hostell, and lodged hym nere vnto Parys at a place named Chastellone nere vnto Mountrouge. And the residue of his hoste was lodged at Vauuys, at Vaugerart, at Gẽtylly, and other townes there about. Thã vpõ frydaye folowynge, beynge the .x. daye of Apryl/ by meanes of ꝑ abbot of Clugny, which newly was sent from the pope Innocẽt the .vi. the forsayd lordes & knyghtes agayne assembled at a place called the Bãlyé, to treate of an accorde betwene the kynge & the regent. But theyr labour was spent in vayne, as it before had ben.

Vppon the sondaye nexte folowynge, a parte of ꝑ kynges hoste came before the towne of Parys, and enbatayled theym in a felde faste by saint Marcelles / and taryed there frome the mornynge tyll thre of the clocke at after noone, to abyde bataple of the Frenchemen. The whyche made none yssue oute of cytye / natwithstandynge that as testifyeth the Frenche boke, within Parys at that daye were greate plentye of Gowdyours, ouer and besyde the greate foyson of the enhabytaunces of the same.

whanne the Englyshemen perceyued that they shulde haue no batayll of the Parysyens / they aboute thre at after noone departed the feld, and toke theyr waye towarde Chartres and so vnto Bõneuale nere vnto Chateadon. Than kynge Edwarde was lodged at a place calle Bones.

To the

To the whych place came vnto hym out of Parys the bysshoppe of Beauuayes than chaunceliour of Normãdye with other/and so behaued them vnto the kynge, that a new daye of treaty was appoynted to be holden at Bretyngup, within a myle or lytell more of Chartres fore sayde, vppon the fyrste day of May next ensuyng.

AT whyche daye of apoyntemente/the foresayd duke of Lancaster, wyth the sayde erles of warwyke and Northampton, and other/at the sayde place apperyd for kynge Edwarde. And for the regent appered there the forenamed bysshop, wyth many other lordes and knyghtes and spyrytuall men, to the nomber of .xxii. persons, whose names I ouer passe for lengthynge of tyme. The whyche so dylygently behaued hym, that in the space of .viii. dayes they agreed vpon an vnyte & peace, the whyche was comprysed in .xli. artycles, as at length is rehersed in the Frenche cronycle, wherof the effecte is thys.

¶ Fyrste the kynge of England and hys heyres kynges, wyth all the landes as he than hadde in Gascoyne & Guyan/shulde haue to hym and hys heyres for euer/the cytye and castell of Poytyers wyth all the appertenaũces to that lordshyp belongyng. Also the cytye of Lymoges, wyth all the lãdes of Lymosyne and all other theyr appertenaũces. The cytye and castell of Perygorte, wyth all the landes and reuenues to that lordshyppe belongynge. The erledome of Bygorre, wyth all thynges to that lordshyppe belongyng. The erledome of Poytyau, wyth all the appertenaunces. The sygnorye of Belcupie. The lordshyp of Eranctys, Erauedoure, and Erancon. The cytye of Agen, the cytye of Agenoys, the cytye of Caours, and lordshyppe of Caoursyn. The cytye of Tarbe, the cytye and countre of Gaure, Ingouleme, of Rodes, and of Rouerti. The lordshyppe of Mostruell, wyth all reuenues therunto belongynge. The sygnorye of Caleys, of Marquell, of Sandgate, and Colyngti. The lordshyppe of Hammys, of walys, and of Dupe. And the erledome of Guynes, wyth all profytes therunto belongynge. All whyche lordshyppes, honours, castels, towres, cytyes, and townes/the kynge of Englaãge thã Edwarde the thyrde and hys heyres kynges of Englande, shulde haue & holde for euermore, in as ryall wyse and lyke maner as done the kynges of Fraunce, without doyng for them any homage feawty, or other ducty.

And kynge Edwarde after that daye for hym and his heyres kynges of Englande, shulde clerely renoũce and gyue ouer, all hys tytle, tyght, and interest, that he hadde vnto the crowne of Fraũce, and specyally the name of kynge of Fraunce.

Also all hys tyght and tytle that he hadde vnto the duchy of Normandye, of Thorayne, of Aniowe, of Bytayne, and of the souerayntye of the erledome of Flaunders/ and of all other lordshyppes, cytyes, castelles, honours, townes, towres, and manours, that any kynge of Englande before that daye had any tyght vnto wythin the realme of Fraunce/ and to holde hym cõtente wyth the aboue named lordshyppes, wythout any forther clayme. The forme of peace betwene Englande and Fraunce. ¶

Forthermore it was agreed, that the Frenche kynge shulde paye for hys raũsome thre millions of scutes of gold/whereof .xi. shuld alway make a noble Englysh. ye shall vnderstãd þ a million of scutes is .x. C. thousande of scutes/whych extende after þ value of sterlyng money, vnto the

ſumme of.ii.C.l.M.marke. And ſo thre millions amounte vnto.viii.hundreth .l.M.marke / whych maketh iuſte.v. hundreth thouſande pounde of ſterlynge money. Of the whych.iii millions of ſcutes .r.C.M. to be payd at Caleys by the fyrſte daye of Junye nexte folowynge the ſayd treaty / and an other.r.C. thouſande or millions to be payde at the ſayde towne of Caleys, within.viii.monethes after þ Frēche kynge was comiyn vnto Caleys / and the thyrde million to be payde at London in two yeres and an halfe. That is to ſaye at Wyghelmaſſe.xii. monethes after the agrement made. viii. C.thouſāde ſcutes, and at Wighelmas nexte after enſuyng.iiii.C.M.ſcutes / and at Eaſter than nexte folowynge ii.C.thouſande ſcutes, in full paymēt of the thre millions or.xxx.C. thouſād ſcutes.

And further it was agreed, that after the Frenche kynge was comen vnto Caleys / he ſhuld reſt hym there viii.monethes. wherof þ fyrſt moneth ſhuld be at þ charge of kyng Edward / and the other.iii.monethes to be at the coſte and charge of the ſayde Frēche kynge / and to paye for euerych of the ſayde thre monethes, yf he ſo longe tarved there for the perfourmaūce of the ſayde accorde .r.thouſande royalles of Fraūce / whyche at that tyme were in value after þ rate of ſterlyng money, euery royall .xxi. d. or. xiiii. ſous Parys / and ſo he ſhuld paye for a monethes charge eyghte hundreth lxxv.pounde.

And ouer that it was accorded, þ the Frēche kynge Johñ for þ tyme beynge, nor no kyng of Fraūce after hym, ſhuld ayde or aſſiſt the Scottes agayne kynge Edward, nor agayne hys heyres kynges of Englād. Nor kynge Edwarde nor hys heyres kynges, ſhall allye theym with the Flemynges, nor ayde nor aſſyſte theym agayne the ſayde kynge Johan, nor hys heyres kynges of Fraunce.

And for the tytle or eyghte of the duchye of Bryttayne, whyche was in queſtyō betwene the erles of Bloys and of Mountforde / it was accorded that bothe kynges beyng at Caleys, the ſayd partyes ſhulde be called before theym. And yf a peace betwene theym by the two kynges myght nat be ſet / thā the ſayd kynges to aſſigne certayne indyfferent perſons to agre the ſayd erles / and they to haue halfe a yere of reſpyte for to quyet the matter. And yf the ſayde perſones ſo by the kynges aſſygned, myght nat agree the ſayd erles by that terme / þ than eyther of the ſayd erles to make the beſte purueyaunce for hym ſelfe þ eyther of them coude make, wyth the helpe of hys frendes or otherwyſe, wherby they myght attayne to theyr eyght and clayme of the ſayd duchye. Prouyded alwaye that nother of the ſayd kynges nor any of theyr ſōnes, ſhulde ayde or aſſyſte any of þ ſayde erles / by reaſon wherof the peace betweene theym accorded, myght be lowſed or broken. Alſo prouyded, þ to whether of the ſayd two erles the ſayd duchy ſhuld falle by ſentence of man or other wyſe / that the homage for it ſhall alwaye be done to þ kynge of Fraunce.

All whyche ordenaunces and agrementes, wyth many mo, that wolde aſke longe leyſour to wryte, were ratyfyed and confermed by the inſtrumentes and ſeales of þ prynce of walys vpon the partye of kynge Edwarde for Englandes partye, and by Charles regent of Fraunce for that partie / as by theyr letters patentes than ſealed apered, berynge date that one at Louers in Normandye the.xvi.daye of May in the yere of grace.xiii.C.and ix, and that other at Parys the.x.daye of þ ſayde moneth and yere.

And

And ouer that eyther of the sayde ii. p;ynces, that is to saye Edwarde p;ynce of walys was swo;ne in p;esence of. vi. Frenche knyghtes, vpon the sacrament of the aulter after ỹ thy;de Agnus was sayd in tyme of a lowe masse, at the fo;esayd Louures sonne o; sayd, that he to ỹ vttermoste of hy power, shuld vpholde and kepe the fo;esayd peace in euery poynt, as ferre as in hym was. And in lyke maner was Charles thanne regente of Fraunce swo;ne, in p;esence of syre Englysshe knyghtes to perfourme the same.

After whych treaty thus fynysshed & ended/kyng Edward with hys sõnes & nobles of Englãde, toke shyppyng at Hũflete in No;mãdy vpõ the xx. day of May, & sayled into Englãd leuyng behynde hym the erle of Warwyke fo; to gyde the Englysshemen that remayned in Guyan & other places, & to se that the peace whyche thã was p;oclaymed thoro;ough Fraunce were kept & nat b;oké by thé/whyche endured nat lõge wythout vyolacyõ as sayth the Frenche boke.

Here I leue a parte the greate reioysyng and honourable resceyuyng of the kyng by the cyte;zyns of Lõdo, & other ceremonyes/ which at thys season I spare, to thentent I may the mo;e substancyally shewe vnto you the fynall ende of thys acco;de. Than trouth it is that in thys season of ỹ kynges beyng in Fraũce/ kyng Johñ fo; hys mo;e consolacyõ was remoued from Dauoy vnto the to;re of London/where after ỹ kynges ;retourne, he feasted the kynge & hys lo;des vpon the. xviii. day of the moneth of Junii. And the. viii. daye of the moneth of Julie nert ensuyng/ the Frenche kynge in the mo;nynge landed at Caleys, and was lodged in the castell, and there abode the comynge of kynge Edwarde.

Upon the xi. day of Octob;e/kyng Edwarde arryued at Caleys, & went streyght vnto the castell fo; to vysite kynge Johñ/ the whyche welcomed hym in a louynge and frendly conteynaunce. And whan the kynge shulde depart to hys lodgyng into ỹ towne/ the Frenche kynge requ;ed hym, ỹ he wyth hys sonnes shuld dyne with hym vpon the mo;owe folowynge/ whyche of the kynge was graunted to be vpon the monday folowynge, ỹ xii. daye of the moneth. At which day kynge Edwarde was fy;st set & kept the astate, & than secundaryly ỹ frech kynge. Thy;dly the p;ynce of walys, and fourthly the duke of Lancastre, without mo at ỹ table. In the tyme of whych dyner came to ỹ castell the erle of Flaunders/whome the Frech kyng welcomed in moste louyng maner. And whan the sayde dyner wyth all honour was ended. ii. of ỹ kynges sonnes of Englãde, & two of ỹ Frech kynges ;tokeleue of they; fathers & rode towarde Boleyñ, where at that tyme the regent of Fraũce was. The whyche mette theym in the myd way betwene Caleys and Boleyñ, & so cõueyed thenr vnto Boleyñ, and rested there wyth theym that nyghte/& vpõ the mo;owe lafte theym there and hym selfe came vnto Caleys, fy;st to hys father/ and after hys father and he came bothe to the kynges palays to dyner. whyche kynge Edwarde receyued wyth moche ioye & honoure, and made vnto theym a sumptuous feaste. Vppon the fourthtene daye of Octob;e the sayde regente departed frome Caleys, and retourned vnto Boleyñ/and the two sonnes of kyng Edwarde retourned frome Boleyne to Caleys.

And vppon a saterdaye the. xviii. daye of the moneth of Octob;e, both kyng; beyng in. ii. trauerys & in one chapell

chapell at Caleys, a masse was sayde before them/to the offeryng of which masse nother of theym came. But whan the par was borne fyrst to the French kynge, and eft to kynge Edwarde, & eyther refused to kysse it fyrste / the Frenche kynge rose vp & came towarde kyng Edwarde. wher of he beyng ware rose vp and mette wyth hym, & refused the par and kyssed eyther other. At the whyche masse eyther of them was solemply sworne to mayntayne the artycles of the sayd peace. And for more assurance of ꝑ same/many lordes vpon bothe partyes were also sworne, to mayntayne the same to theyr powere. ye shal also vnderstande that in thys season that the Frenche kynge sojourned thus at Caleys, bothe for the payment of hys raunsome & also for the deliuery of certayn holdes and townes which as yet were nat deliuered/he putte in such suerties as foloweth. The duke of Orliaunce, the duke of Burgoyn, the duke of Burbone, the erles of Angeou, of Poytcau, of Blops, of Alenson, of sayncte Poule, of Estamps, of Valentynoys, of Byame, of Ew, of Longeuyle, of Cătaruyle, of Ancetre of Dampmartyne, of Vendature, of Salysbyuge, and of Vendosme/ the vycountes of Baudemoût, of Beaumount, & of Ancuerre / the lordes of Craon of Deruall, of Dabyguy, of Cousy, of Fyers, of Byraur, of sayut Uenant, of Garancyers, of Aluerne, of Mountmorency, and of Ingest, & also the lord or wardeyne of the forestes / and knyghtes, syr wyllyam de Craon, syr Lowys de Harcourt, syr Johñ de Laguy, and syr Galtyer de Donchame. Of the whyche.xxxviii. persones, dyuers of theym as before is touched were take prysoners at ꝑ batayll of Poytyers. For the whyche it was agreed, that as many as had nat payde theyr fynaunce before the thyrde daye of Maye laste past shuld be acquited by the kynges fynaunce, wyth dyuers other condycyons which I passe ouer.

A peasyble kyssc.

Than vpõ the morowe folowyng of the takynge of the forsayde othe by the two kynges, that is to say son daye the.xxv. daye of Octobre / the Frenche kyng was freely delyuerd, the which the sayd day before noone, departed fromte Caleys and rode towarde Boleyn. whome kynge Edwarde conueyed a myle vppon hys waye. At whyche myles ende they departed with kyssynge and other louynge maner / and prynce Edwarde kept on hys waye with kyng Johñ, & so conueyed hym to Boleyn/where he tarryed that nyghte. And vpon the morowe the sayd prynce Edwarde, & Charles duke of Normandy, wyth ꝑ erle of Estamps and other noble mẽ there than beynge ꝑsent, were agayn sworne to mayntayne and holde the sayde peace, wythout fraude, colour, or dyssceyte. And that done the sayde prynce takynge hys leue retourned that nyghte vnto Caleys. And so yt now appereth vnto you, that kynge Johñ stode as prysoner by the space of.iiii. yeres, and asmoche as fromte the.xix. day of September vnto.xxv. daye of Octobre.

And whan kynge Edwarde had sped his nedes at Caleys/ he after as shalbe shewed in the yere folowynge sayled into Englande.

It is also to be noted, ꝑ thys yere whyle the kyng was occupyed in his warres in Fraunce as before is touched, the erle of Seynt poule wyth an army of Frenchemen sayled aboute the borders of Kent and Sussex and lãded in sundry places/as Rye, Wynchelsee, and Hastynges, and spoyled the townes and slew many of ꝑ men, and dyd moche harme to the poore fyshers.

Anno

Anno domini.M.CCC.lx. Anno domini.M.CCC.lx.

Johñ Wyth. Johñ Wenys. Anno.xxxb.

walter Bozney.

UPon the eupn of saynt Quyntyne, oz the xxx. daye of Nouembze, in the ende of the xxxiiii. yere of kyng Edwarde and begynnynge of thys mayzes yere / the kynge toke shyppynge at Caleys, and sayled towarde Englande / bzyngynge wyth hym certayne of hys hostages. That is to saye Lowys the secõde sonne of kynge Johan newely made duke of Anjou & of Mayn, which befoze was erle of Angeou / & Johñ hys bzother newely made duke of Aluerne and of Berry, which befoze was erle of Poytyers / whyche erledome nowe belonged to kynge Edwarde by reason of the foresayde treaty. He also hadde wyth hym syz Lowys duke of Bzabant, and the erles of Alenson and of Escampes, whyche were nere of the Frenche kynges blode / with eyghte other erles and lozdes named in the Frenche cronycle. with the which the kynge lãded at Douer shortly after, and so came to London the .ix. day of Nouembze.

And in thys .xxxb. yere, men and beastes were perysshed in Englande in dyuers places wyth thõdze & lyghtenynge / and the sende was sene in mannes lykenesse, & spake vnto men as they trauayled by the waye.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lx. Anno domini.M.CCC.lx.

wyllyam Holbech.

Johñ Pecche. Anno.xxxbi.

James Tame.

IN thys .xxxbi. yere / prynce Edwarde wedded the countesse of Kent, whyche befoze was wyfe vnto syz Thomas Holande / & befoze that, wyfe vnto the erle of Walesbury and deuozsed frõ hym and maryed vnto the sayde syz Thomas.

In thys yere also was great mozta litie of men in England / duryng the whyche the noble duke Henry of Lã castre dyed. Thys of wzyters is named the seconde mozta litie. Foz it was þ seconde that fylle in thys kynges dayes.

whan duke Henry was dede / syz Johan of Gaunt the kynges thyzde sonne, whyche had maryed the sayde dukes doughter, was made duke of that duchye.

In thys yere also were sene two castels in the ayze. whereof that one appered in the south east, and that other in the south west / out of þ which at sondzy tymes as it were about the noone tyde, issued of eyther of thẽ an hoste of armed men to mãnes syght. And that hoste whyche issued outt of the castell of the south easte appered whyte, and that other apered blacke. These two hostes apered as though they faught eche of them with other, and shewed as the whyte was fyrste victozyous, and lastly ouercomen, & so dysapered. ‡ The seõd mozta lyte.

In thys yere also a greate company of dyuers nacyons assembled theym in Bzye and Champayne, whereof the ledders oz capytaynes were Englysshemen / the whyche dyd moche harme in Fraunce.

But after the affyrmaunce of the Frenche cronycle / thys company whyche

whyche there is called the newe company, beganne theyr assembles in the forenamed countre of Bry, or kyng Johñ were delyuered frome Caleys. And whan they were ware of hys delyueraũce/they departed out of Bry and yode into Champayne, and toke there diuers holdes, and spoyled and robbed dyuers small townes, & raunsomed many mẽ. And in thys yere as sayth the frenche boke, they toke the brydge and towne of sayne Spyryes vpon the daye of the Innocentes or the.xxviii.day of Decembre. And as affermeth Policronycon, aboute the same tyme another company in lyke wyse assembled thẽ in Italye, whiche was called the whyte company / and molested that countre in lyke maner. And in the moneth of Apryll folowynge / kynge Johñ sente the erle of Cãcaruyle, the erles of Walesbrugh, of ỹ Marches, of Forestes & of Joyngy/the whyche erles with theyr retinue met wyth the sayd company at a place than named Bruke, nere vnto Lyõ sur Roone. At whych place was foughten a cruell fyghte. But in the ende the frenche men were ouerset & scomfyted / so that the sayde erle of Cancaruyle was take prysoner, and the two erles of Marches and Forestes slayne, wyth moche of the comõ people.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxi. Anno domini.M.CCC.lxii.

Johñ of sayne Albones.

Stephen Caundissh. Anno.xxxvii.

James Andrew.

IN thys.xxxvii.yere, vppon the daye of sayne Maurice, or the xv.daye of January / blewe so excedyng a wynde ỹ the lyke therof was nat sene many yeres passed. This began about euẽsongtyme in ỹ south/& cõtynued with such sternes ỹ it blew downe stronge & mighty buyldyngs, as towres, steples, houses, and chymneys/& cõtynued for the more parte in suche sternesse by the space of fyue dayes after. And in thys yere & xxiiii daye of the sayd moneth of January came Johñ kyng of Fraũce vnto Eltham besyde Grenewych/ and dyned there that daye wyth the kynge. And vpon that after noone, he was honorably conueyed thorough the cytie of London vnto Sanoye, as well by ỹ cytezyns as other, the whyche mette wyth hym vpõ Blakheth wel horsed in a lyuery of one colour. And whyle the sayd kynge Johñ laye at ỹ sayde place of Sauoy about ỹ begynnyng of March folowyng, a greuous syknesse toke hym/ of the whych he dyed the.viii.daye of Apryl folowynge, in the begynnynge of the yere of grace xiii.C.lxiiii/& after was caryed into Fraũce and buryed at sayne Denys, the.vii.daye of May folowynge.

And in thys yere kynge Edwarde created syr Leonel his sonne duke of Clarence, & syr Edmunde hys other sonne erle of Cambrygge. And in the ende of thys yere & xvii.day of September, began a great frost / ỹ whych endured to the begynnyng of the moneth of Apryl. By reasõ wherof moch harme grew & ensued of the same.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxii. Anno domini.M.CCC.lxiii.

Rycharde Croydon.

Johñ Notte. Anno.xxxviii.

Johñ Hyltofte.

And

AND that yere came .iii. kynges into Englād for to speke wyth kynge Edwarde. Fyrst ꝑ kyng of Fraunce, the kynge of Spayne, & the kynge of Scottes.

IN this .xxxviii. yere, prynce Edward sayled to Burdeaux and receyued the possessyon of Gupan, ꝑ kynge Edwarde had newely gyuen vnto hym. For the whyche he after dyd hys homage to hys father, in lykewyse and maner as his father & other kynges of England were wont to do for the sayde duchye vnto the kynges of Fraunce.

And vpon Wyghelmasse day benyge thā vppon a sonday, before the castell of Vanhoy fast by the cytye of Vaunes in Bzytayne, mette ꝑ hostes of syr Charles de Bloys and of syr Johñ de Mountfort / whyche longe before had stryué as before is shewed for the sayd duchy of Bzytayne / and there foughten a cruell batayll. But by the helpe of god & of the Englysh archers, the victorye fyll to syr Johñ Mountfort. And in that fyghte syr Charles de Bloys was slayne, and many Frenchemen & Bzytons that toke hys partye. After whyche victorye, natwythstandynge that the wyfe of the sayde syr Charles laye within that countre / there was agayne the sayde syr Johñ made no resystence, but that he enioyed that countre in peasyble wyse.

Thā Charles the .vi. of that name newly crowned kynge of Fraunce, in the tyght of the woman sente ꝑ archebysshop of Reynes & the Marshal of Fraunce into Bzytaygne for to sette an vnyte and restfull peace betwene the sayd syr Johñ, & the laste wyfe of syr Charles. The whyche endeuored them so well, that in the moneth of Apryll folowynge the sayde batayll, they agreed them / so that the enheritaunce of that duchye should remayne to the sayd syr Johñ & his heyres for euermore / & the wyfe of syr Charles should holde her contēted wyth ꝑ erledome of Penyture & the vycountye of Lymoges / the whyche of olde tyme belonged to her auncetours. ✠ The batayle of Dā hop.

And aboute thys tyme was an ordenaunce and statute made, that sergeauntes & prentyses of the lawe, shulde plede theyr plees in theyr mother tonge. But that stode but a shorte whyle.

Anno domini .M.CCC.lxiii. Anno domini .M.CCC.lxiiii.

Symonde Mordon.

Adam of Bury. Anno .xxxix.

Johñ of Wetforde.

IN thys .xxxix. yere after some writers / kynge Edwarde vpon saynt Stephans daye fynyshed hys warres. wherfore in the worshyp of god and saynt Stephan, he thys yere after the oppynyons of the sayde auctours, began ꝑ foūdacion of saint Stephans chapell at westmynster. The whyche was fynyshed by Rychard the .ii. and sonne of prynce Edwarde nert kyng of Englande, after thys thyrde Edwarde. Foūdacyō of saynt Stephans chapell at Westmynster.

Anno dñi .M.CCC.lxiiii. Anno dñi .M.CCC.lxv.

Johñ Brykyllworth.

Johñ Luskyn. Anno .xl.

Johñ Dzelande.

IN thys .xl. yere / and moneth of Februarye, was borne the fyrste sonne of prynce Edwarde, and was named Edwarde / the whyche dyed whan he was aboute the age of .vii. yeres. And in thys yere one named Barthram de Clayton a Normã, wyth an armye of Frenchemẽ entred the lande of Castyle, & warred vpon Peter than kynge of that lande / & so behaued hym, that in lesse than .iiii. monethes space, he chased the sayde Peter out of hys owne lande, & crowned hys brother named Henry kyng of Castyle, at a towne called Burges vpon Easter daye. wherefore the sayd Peter constrayned of necessyte, was compelled to come to the cytye of Burdeaux, for to haue & aske ayde of prynce Edward. Thys Peter was ryghtefull heyre vnto the crowne of of Castyle, and Henry hys brother after moste wrytters was bastarde. But thys Peter was so vyle of condycyons, that hys subgectes had to hym but lytell fauoure. And so the warre contynued a season betwene hys brother and hym, as after shall appere / in the whych prynce Edward wyth hys archers toke partye wyth thys Peter, and the Frenche kynge wyth hys speres tooke partye wyth Henry.

& Restraynt of peterpens

And in thys yere at the kynges cõmaundement, Adam Bury thanne mayre of London was dyscharged the xxviii. daye of January / and for hym elected and chosen mayre Johñ Louekyn grocer. And as wytnesseth Polycronicon & other / in thys yere was cõmaunded by the kynge, that Peterpens shulde no more be gadered in Englande, nor payde vnto Rome, as they of longe tyme had ben vsed and graũted, in the tyme of Juo or Jewe somtyme kynge of west Saxons, as before in hys story is shewed.

But howe so at that dayes it was than by the kynge forbodẽ / yet neuer theles at thys present tyme and season, they be gadered in sondry shyres of Englande.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxv.

Johñ Louekyn.

Anno vñi M.CCC.lxvi.

Johñ warde.

Anno .xli.

wyllyam Dykman.

Wyth of Richard the seconde.

IN thys .xli. yere, was borne the secõde sonñ of prynce Edward at Burdeaux named Rychard, in the moneth of Aprill and the thyrd daye of the sayd moneth. The sayd prynce Edward wyth the kyng of Nauerne and the forsayd Peter kynge of Castyle, mette wyth Henry Bastarde & vsurper of the sayde kyngdome, nere vnto a towne called Dompng / wher betwene them was a cruell and long fyght. Howe be it in the ende the victorye fyll vnto the Englysshemen, & Henry and hys men were chased.

In thys batayle was taken syr Barthram de Glaycon, & syr Arnold Dodenhamme thanne Marshall of Fraunce, wyth other aswell French as Bretaynes / and slayne vppon fyue thousande men vpon the partie of the sayde Henry, and vppon .xvi. hondreth vppon prynce Edwardes partye.

After whyche victory / the prynce wyth the sayde Peter spedde theym vnto the cytye of Burgys, whyche was yolden to thẽ shortly after theyr comynge / and after holpe the sayd Peter to wynne other cytyes and holdes, so that he taryed there tyll the moneth of August folowynge. At whych season as sayth the cronicle of

Fraunce,

Fraunce, he retourned vnto Burdeaux wythout payment of wages for hys sowdyours, that before was to hym by the sayde Peter promysed.

In thys season that prynce Edwarde was thus in Spayne / Henry Bastarde fledde wyth hys wyfe into Fraunce, & abode in a place or coũtre called Carcasson. But so soone as he was warned that prynce Edwarde was retourned vnto Burdeaux / he gadered to hym a new cõpany, & passed by the mouũtaynes of the forestes / & so entred the sayd lande of Castile, the.xxvii.daye of the moneth of September folowynge / & had the citte called Calahorre yolded vnto hym. wher vnto hym drewe moche people of the countre / so that hys strengthe encreased hougely. Than frõ thens he yode vnto the cytye of Burgys, where he was ioyously receyued / & behaued hym in suche wyse, ꝑ in shorte whyle after he had the hole rule of the lãde of Castyle / & hys brother was fayne to auoyde the lãde, and to seche ayde of the Sarazyns as affermeth ꝑ forsayde cronycle.

And in thys yere aboute the monethe of Juny / the company before mynded in the.xxvi. yere of thys kynge, entred the duchy of Guyan / and there helde them in doyng moch harme to that countre, lyke as they before hadde done in dyuers places of Fraunce by all that season of iiii. yeres passed. And in the moneth of December they departed from thens and yode into the coũtrees of Auerne and Berry. And in the moneth of February, they passed the ryuer of Loyre, and toke the waye towarde Marcyll / and after entred the countre of Burgoyne. And euer as they passed the countrees, they raunsomed men, and spoyled many townes as they wente.

And all be it that the French kyng appoynted dyuers of hys lordes and knyghtes to go agayne them / yet at suche seasõs as they drewe nere vnto them, they wolde suffre theym to departe wythout batayl. For they were so many that they were nombred at lx.M. But of theyr cayptaynes is none named. Howe be it there were Englysshmen, Gascoynes, Pycardes Frenchemen, men of Nauerne, and of many other nacyons, whych the cronycle rehersyth nat / & contynued in theyr force and strengthe longe after, to the greate dammage of the countrees whyche they passed thorough / as Normandy, Gascoygne, Guyan, Burgoyne and all the chyef countrees of Fraunce / and lyued by rauen and pyllage, to the great enpouerysshynge of the sayde countrees and townes, which they passed by or lodged in.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.lxvi.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.lxvii.

Johñ Torgolde.

James Andrewe.

Anno.xlii.

wyllyam Dykman.

IN thys.xlii. yere / and moneth of Marche, apered Stella cometa, that is a blasynge sterre.

And in the moneth of Aprill next ensuynge, that is to saye the fyrst day of the sayde moneth / Leoneil ꝑ sonne of thys kynge Edwarde entred the cytye of Parys, where he was of the dukes of Berry and Burgoyne honourably receyued / and so by theym cõueyed vnto theyr brother the kyng of Fraunce vnto Louure, where he at that seasõ was lodged. Of whome he was also ioyously receyued & log-

ged wythin the kynges palays, & dyned & ſouped wyth the kynge at hys owne table. And vppon the morowe folowynge he dyned wyth the quene at a place of the kynges nere to ſaint Poule, where the quene thā was lodged. And whan after dyner he had a whyle daunſed and paſſed the tyme wyth other dyſportes / he than wyth the ſayd .ii. dukes was agayne conueyed vnto the kynge, & ſouped with hym agayne that nyght. And vppon the morynynge beynge tuyſdaye, the ſayd dukes feſted the ſayde ſyr Leonell at a place of theyrs in Parys named Artoys.

& Marryage of Leonell.

And vpō the wedneſdaye he dyned & ſouped agayne wyth the quene. And vpon the thurſday & morowe folowynge, the ſayde ſyr Leonell toke hys leue of the kyng & quene / the whyche gaue vnto hym gyftes, & to ſuche as were in hys cōpany, to ỹ value of .xx. M. florynes & aboue / & was cōueyed wyth noble men, as the erle of Cancaruyle & other, tyll he was comen to Sens / & wyth knyghtes tyll he came to the borders of Fraūce / where he gaue vnto theym ryche gyftes wyth great thankes.

And after he contynued hys iourney tyll he came vnto ỹ cytie of Mylayne / where ſhortly after he maryed the doughter of Galyace duke of the ſayde cytye and coūtre, & had by her greate poſſeſſyons, by reaſon that her ſayde father dyed ſhortely after.

And in the ende of thys yere, the erles of Armenak, of Bȝet, and of Perygort, wyth dyuers other nobles of the duchye of Guyan, appeled the pȝynce of walys in the Frenche kynges courte, that he hadde broken the peace, and wronged theym contrary the peace ſtablyſſhed betwene Englande & Fraūce / & requyred the Frēch kyng ỹ the ſayd appeale myght haue due pȝoceſſe agayne the ſayd pȝynce. The whyche as ſayth the French cronicle kynge, Charles deferred, for certayne cauſes there towched, whyche were to longe to reherce.

Anno dñi. xiii. C. lxbii.

Adam wymbyngham.

Anno dñi. xiii. C. lxbiii.

Symon Mordon.

Anno. xlii.

Robert Gyrdeler.

In thys .xlii. yere, or more certaynly in the ende of the pȝecedynge yere / one walter Bernes mercer, was vpon the day of ỹ trāſlation of ſaynt Edwarde kyng and confeſſoure or the .xiii. daye of Octobre, choſen by the mayre & aldermen mayre of the cytye of London. But howe it was for lacke of ſubſtaunce, or by other impedymente, which is nat noted, the ſayd walter vpon the daye of Symonde & Jude folowynge, whā he ſhulde haue taken hys othe at Guylde halle apered nat. wherfore in hys rome by electyon of the forſayde mayre and aldermen, was admytted for that yere folowynge Symonde Mordon fyſſhmonger mayre of that cytye.

And in thys yere and moneth of Marche / Peter kynge of Caſtyle, whyche by the ayde of the Sarazyns dwellyng in the borders of Spayn, hadde wonne and recouered ſomme parte of the lande of Caſtyle / encountrede wyth hys baſtarde brother Henry beforeſayde, and gaue vnto hym batayll nere to a towne called Sybylle. where after longe fyght, the ſayde Peter was ſcomfyted and moche of hys people ſlayne, and hym ſelf dryuen vnto a caſtell / oute of the whyche

whyche he was shortly after by treason gotte, & presented vnto hys brother forenamed / by whose sentēce he was imedyatly byheded. After whose deth the sayd Henry enioyed the hole lande of Castyle. whych infortunytie & myschaūce fylle to thys Peter after dyuers wrpterts, for so moche as he cruelly slew hys owne wyfe ꝑ dought ter of the duke of Burboñ.

And in thys yere and moneth of May/ the kynge of Fraunce in hys hyghe court of parlyamente holdē at Parys, proceded in iugemente vpon the appellacyons before made by the erle of Armenak, the lorde of Bzet, and erle of Perogort, agayne prynce Edward, as before is towched in the precedynge pere. wherupon dyscorde and barpaunce began to take place betwene the.ii. kynges/ in so moche ꝑ by meane of the sayd.iii. lordes, natwythstandyng that they were before sworne to be to the kyng of Englāde trewe lyege men / dyuers townes of the countre of Poyteaw yelded them to the Frenche kynge, as Albeuyle, Rue, & the more parte of the sayde townes of the sayd countre. wherupō ambassades were sente vppon bothe partyes / & dyuers meanes of treaty were comoned, whyche conteyneth a longe werke, wyth resonynge made vpon the same. But in conclusyō all came to none effecte. So that brech of the peace whych before, betwene ꝑ ii. kynges was so substācially conclu ded was broke/ & eyther kyng for his partye made prouysiō for the warre. In so moch ꝑ kynge Charles spedde hym to Roan in Normandy / & there in ꝑ moneth of July rigged his naup to set theym forewarde for to warre vpon Englande.

In whyche tyme & season ꝑ kyng Charles was thus occupyed in Normādy/ the duke of Lācastre lāded at Caleys with a stroge company of archers & other warryours/ & frō thens passed to Thorouēne, & so to Ayre, in wastyng the countre with ire & fyre as he went. wherfore ꝑ French kyng in defence of those partyes, sente the duke of Burgoyne with a puyssaunt armye to withstāde the sayde duke of Lācastre. The whych duke of Burgoyne sped hym i such wyse, ꝑ about ꝑ .xxiiii. day of Auguste he lodged hys hoste vpon the mountayne of Turnehan nere vnto Arde. And the Englysh hoste was lodged betwene Gygowne & Arde/ so that ꝑ frountes of both hostes were within a myle. Betwene whome were dayly skyrmysshes and small bykerynges without any notatye batayll. And whā the sayd duke of Burgoyñ had thus kept the sayde mount frō the.xxiiii. day of Auguste vnto the.xii. day of Septēbre / he remoued hys hoste & rode vnto Hesdē. For the whych dede he was after blamed of kyng Charles hys brother. After whych departure of the frēche men/ the duke of Lancastre with hys hoste tooke ꝑ waye towarde Caus or Caur, & passed the ryuer of Symme/ & so rode toward Harkelew, entendynge as sayth the frēche boke to haue fyred the Frenche kynges nauy. But at theyr cōmyng thyder ꝑ towne was so strōgly māned, ꝑ they dyd there lytell scathe. wherfore the sayd duke departed shortly thens, and spedde hym into the countrye of Poyteau, and so came vnto the towne of Albeuyle. where wythout the Frenchemen encountred hym, and gaue vnto hym batayll. In the whych was taken syr Hugh Chasteloñ knyght with other knyghtes, esquyres, & burgeyses of the towne / and vpō.xvi. score Frēch men slayne. whyche sayde prysoners to the nombre of fyue & fourty were sent vnto Caleys, & ꝑ duke with hys company rode vnto Burdeaur, in spoylyng of the Frēchmē as he went.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xlviii. Anno dñi. xiii.C.liz.

Johñ Pyell.

Johñ Chychester. Anno.xliiii.

Hugh Holdyche.

IN thys.xliiii. yere and moneth of January, dyed the erle of warwyke at Calays, after he was retourned from the duke of Lancastre/ whyche was a man of great fame.

Deth of quene Phylyppe.

And in ꝑ moneth of August, dyed that noble woman quene Phylyppe ꝛ wyfe vnto Edwarde the thyrde. The whyche was a greate benefactoure vnto the chanõs of saynt Stephans chapell at westmynster.

And soon after dyed dame Blaũch somtyme the wyfe of Henry duke of Lancastre/ ꝛ was buryed at Poules vpon the northside of the hyghe aulter by her husbande. where she ordeyned for hym and her.iiii.chaũtres for euer, ꝛ an annyuersarye yerely to be kept. At the whych, ouer great thynges be set vnto the deane ꝛ chanons of the churche / she ordeyned that the mayre beynge present at the masse, shuld offre.i.d. and take vp.xx.s̄/ the shyrysses eyther of them a peny, and to receyue eyther of them a marke/ ꝑ chãberlayn of the cytie.x.s̄, the swordberer.vi.s̄.viii.d̄, and euery officer of the mayres there present.xii.d̄, and to euery officyer to the nombre of.viii eyther of theym.viii.d̄. admytted for the shyrysses. The whyche obyte at thys daye is holden. But by reason that the lande is decayed, these forenamed summes ben greately mynysshed / so that the mayre at thys daye hath but.vi.s̄.viii.d̄, bothe the shyrysses syre.s̄. eyghte.d̄, and other after that rate.

In thys yere also the kynge helde hys parlyament at westmynster. In the whych was graunted vnto hym iii. fyftenes to be payde in.iii. yeres folowynge. And by a conuocacyon of the clergye was also grauted vnto hym.iii. dysmes, to be payde in lyke maner.

And in thys yere was the.iii. mortalitie, wherof dyed moche people. And suche a mortayne fyll also amõg beastes, that the lyke therof was nat seen many yeres before. And vppon that ensued such erresliues of rayne, that corne was therwith drowned in the erthe/ and so bukked wyth water, that the yere ensuynge whete was at xl.d. a busshell.

And in ꝑ ende of ꝑ moneth of July/ syr Robert Knollys accõpanied with dyuers noble men ꝛ soudyours, entred saint Omers. And whã they had executed theyr pleasures there ꝛ in ꝑ countre enuyrõ/ they than rode vnto Arras, in wastynge ꝛ spoylyng ꝑ coũtre as they went. And whan they had brẽt the bulwerkes of the sayd town of Arras/ they passed by Noyõ ꝛ Vermendoys / ꝛ brente the houses of all such as wolde nat to them gyue due raunsome. And thus holdynge theyr waye/ they passed the ryuers of Oyse ꝛ of Syre/ ꝛ so came vnto the citie of Raynes, ꝛ passed there the ryuer/ and rode towarde Troyes, ꝛ passed ꝑ ryuers of Aube ꝛ of Sayne/ ꝛ so helde theyr waye to saynt Florentyne, and there passed the ryuer of Yon/ in holdyng theyr cours towarde Joyngny ꝛ so to Corbuell ꝛ Essonne or Essoyn. And vppon a mondaye beynge the xxii. day of September/ the sayd Englysshemen lodged theym vppon the mount of saynte Albone, and in the countre there about. And vpon wednysdaye folowyng, they embatayled them in a felde betwene the townes of Junye and Parys.

In

In all whyche ſeaſon they paſſed wythout batayll thoꝛough thoſe foꝛe ſayd countres, in ſpoylyng them and raunſomyng the inhabytaũtes therof wythout reſyſtens oꝛ impedymẽt. And all be it ꝑ in the cytye of Parys at that day were .xii. C. men of armes waged by the Frenche kynge, beſyde the ſowdyours and ſtrengthe of the cytezeyns of that cytye / yet the ſayde hoſte of Engliſſhemen lay as beꝛe is ſayd enbatayled, tyll it was paſte noone of the foꝛeſayd daye. At which tyme foꝛ ſo moche as they were credibly enfourmed that they ſhulde there haue no batayl, they bꝛake theyꝛ feld and ſped them to a place oꝛ towne called Antoygny, & there lodged ꝑ night and vpõ the moꝛowe toke theyꝛ iourney towarde Noꝛmandy.

But after .iiii. dayes labour, they tourned theyꝛ waye towarde Eſtampys oꝛ Eſcamps, by Beauſe in Gaſtenoys, in pyllynge and domagynge the coũtrees as they beꝛe had done / contynuynge theyꝛ iourney tyll they came into the eriedome of Angeau / where they wanne by ſtrengthe the townꝛ of Uaas & Ruylly, with other ſtronge holdes thereabout.

But than as ꝑ deuyll wold, which is tote of all enuy and dyſcoꝛde / the loꝛde Fytzwater and the loꝛd Graũtſon, fyll at variaũce wyth ſyꝛ Robert Knolles and hys companye / whyche gꝛewe to ſo great hatred and dyſpleaſure, that ſyꝛ Roberte Knolles wyth the flouꝛe of the archers and ſowdyours, departed from the ſayd two loꝛdes, leuynge theym in the foꝛſayd townes of Uaas & Ruylly / & he thã yode into Bꝛytayne.

Whereof whanne certayntye was bꝛoughte vnto the Frenche kynge / anone he cõmaunded ſyꝛ Berthꝛam de Glaycoſi newly made marſhall of Fraunce, wyth a ſtronge armye to entre the ſayde countye of Angeou, and to make ſharpe warre vppon the ſayde Engliſhmen. The whych vpõ the twelf daye of Octobꝛe folowyng, layde ſyege vnto the ſayde towne of Uaas / whereof iſſued oute the ſayde loꝛdes of Fytzwater and Graũtſon, and gaue vnto the Marſhall batayl. But in the ende the dyſcomfyture fyl vnto the Engliſſhemen / ſo that of theym was ſlayne .vi. hundꝛeth, and the reſte put vnto the flyght.

In the whyche was taken ꝑ ſayd loꝛde Grauntſon wyth other. And that done the ſayd ſyꝛ Barthꝛã yode vnto the towne of Uaas, and gat it by aſſawte. where alſo were ſlayne vpon thꝛe hundꝛeth of Engliſhemẽ, and the other put to flyght, & many taken pꝛyſoners. And after thys the ſayd Barthꝛam purſued the Engliſh men that were fledde, vnto a towne called Uerſure. where in aſſawtynge of the ſayd towne, he ſlewe and toke pꝛyſoners vpon .iiii. C. Engliſhmẽ. And thus by ſtryfe and dyſſencion amonge theym ſelfe / thoſe that beꝛe by amyte and good accoꝛde were victours, now by hatered and dyſcoꝛde were ſlayne and taken pꝛyſoners.

Stryfe and dyſcencyon cauſed confuſyon.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxix. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxx.

wyllyam walwoꝛth.

Johñ Bernes. Anno .xlv.

Robert Gaytoñ.

In thys .xlv. yere & begynnyng of the moneth of Marche / the archebyſſhoppe of wynchelter than beynge a cardynall, and pꝛeſente at Auynyon wyth pope Gregoꝛye the xi. of that name / was put in comtt. iiii. myſſion

mpssyon wyth the archebysshoppe of Beauuays to make or treate a peace and vnyty bytwene the two realmes of Englande and of Fraunce. whych sayd cardynall of wyncheſter after hys departynge from the pope, came downe toward Melcoune/where by the sayd archbysshop and also cardynall of Beauuays, he was honourably mette, and so conueyed vnto the cytye of Melcon. And whan he had restyd him there vpon. iiii. dayes/the two cardynalles ensemble sped them vnto Parys/where they wyth kyng Charlys had communycacyō towchynge the sayd peace. And after hys pleasure knowen/the sayde archbysshop and cardynall toke hys leue, & was cōueyed toward Caleys/ where he toke shyppynge, and so sayled in to Englande/ and shewed vnto the kynge the popes pleasure wyth the Frenche kynges answere.

* A mayres gyfte to the ease of the comōs.

And in thys yere folowynge the fomertyde in Guyā were made and foughten many and dyuers skyrmysshes/in the whyche for the more partye the Englysshemen were put vnto the worse/so that many of them were slayne and taken prysoners, and dyuers holdes and townes taken from them/and specyally in the countre of Lymosyne. For by the fyrste daye of the moneth of July, the cytye of Lymoges wyth all the coūtre of Lymosyne forsayde was vnder the obeysaunce of the Frenche kyng, as wytnessyth the Frenche Cronycle.

A taske reysynge.

wherof the occasyon was as afterneth the Englysshe boke, for so mych as prynce Edward had lately before arreryd of the inhabytauntes of that cytye and countre, a greate and greuous taske, to theyr great hurte and enpouerysshyng/by meanes wherof he loste the loue of the people.

whan the Frenche kynge hadde thus optayned the rule of the coūtre of Lymosyne / he immedyately after sente syr Barthram de Glaycon into the erledome of Poyteawe or Poytyers, and wāne there many townes and castels/& lastly layde hys syege vnto Rochell, as after in the folowynge yere shalbe shewed.

And to the ende that good and merytoryous dedes shuld be holden in memorye / here is to be noted that the mayre for thys yere beyng Johā Bernys mercer, gaue vnto the comynaltye of the cytye of London a chest wyth thre lockes & keyes, and therin a thousande marke of redy money/ wyllyng the keyes therof to be yerely in the keppyng of thre sundry persōs, that is to mene the mayster of ỳ felysshyp of the mercery to haue one, the mayster of the felysshyp of drapers the second, and thyrde to be in the keppynge of the chamberlayne of that cytye. And so therin the sayde thousande marke to be kept/to the entent that at all tymes when any cytesyne wolde borowe any money, that he shulde haue it there for the space of a yere/to laye for suche a summe as he wold haue plate or other iewellys to a sufficyente gayge, so that he exceded not the summe of an hundreth marke. And for the occuppenge therof yf he were lerned, to saye at hys pleasure De profundis for the soule of Johā Bernys and all chrysten soules, as often tymes as in hys summe were comprysed .x. markes. As he that borowed but .x. marke, shulde saye but ouer that prayer. And yf he had .xx. marke/then to saye it twyes, and so after the rate. And yf he were not lerned, then to saye so often hys Pater noster. But how so thys money was lent or gyded / at thys daye the cheste remayneth in the chamber of London, wythout money or pledges for the same.

Anno

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxx. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxi.

Robert Hatfelde.

Johñ Bernes. Anno.xlvi.

Robert Gaytoñ.

IN thys.xlvi. yere and moneth of Februarp, kynge Edwarde helde hys parlyamente at westmynster. In the whych he asked of the spirytualtye.l.M.li. & as moch of ꝑ laye fee. The whych by the temporal was graunted/but the clergye kepte them of wyth plesaunt answeres. So that the kyng and hys coũsayll was with them dyscontented / in so moche that to theyr dyspleasures, dyuers offycers, as the chaunceler, the prypupe seale, the tresourer, and other, were remoued beyng spyrytuall men/and in theyr offyces & places temporall men set in. And shortly after the forsayde cardynall of Beauuays came into Englande, to treate of the peace betwene the.ii. realmes. But he spedde nothyng to the effect therof.

wherfore in the moneth of July, ꝑ Frenche kyng sente into the countre of Poyteaw the forenamed syr Barthram de Clayconñ wyth a stronge armye / where he wan dyuers holdes & fortresses from the Englyshmen. In whyche season kynge Edwarde for strengthyng of the coũtre, & specially to defende ꝑ towne of Rochell, which as aboue in the other yere is shewed was at this yere besieged by the sayd syr Barthran / sente the erle of Penbroke wyth other noble men, to forty fye the sayde towne, and to remoue ꝑ syege. But or he myght wynne to the sayd towne/he was encountred with a flote of Spaynardes, the whyche kyng Henry of Castyle had sent into Fraunce to strength the French kynges partye. Of the whyche flote after longe and cruell fyght/the sayde erle was taken, wyth syr Guycharde de Ingle and other, to the nombre of.C and thre score prysoners / & the more partye of hys men slayne and drowned, wyth the losse of many good shyppes.

And in the begynnyng of the moneth of September folowyng a Gascoygne borne, a man of good fame, whome the kyng of England had admytted for hys lyeutenaunt & gouernoure of the countre of Poyteaw, named le Captall de Buesse / faughte wyth an armye of Frenchmen before a towne named Sonbyse / where in conclusyon hys men were slayne and chased, & he wyth.lxx. of hys partie taken prysoners. Than the dukes of Berry & of Burgoyne vppon the.vi. daye of September, came before Rochell/and had certayne communicaciõs with ꝑ rulers of the sayd towne, for the delyuery therof. In this passe tyme & season, kyng Edward herynge of the takyng of the erle of Pẽbroke, & of the losse that he dayly had of hys men in dyuers partyes of Fraunce, with also the iopardye that ꝑ towne of Rochell and other stode in / made hasty prouysyon, & entendyd to haue passed the see. But the wynde was cõtrarious, that he myght haue no passage/wherfore he retourned as sayth Policronicõ, agayne into the land.

Than vpon the.viii. daye of September beforesayd, the cappytayne of Rochell, haupnge no cõforte of short rescous / yelded vppon certayne appoyntementes the sayde towne vnto the forenamed dukes, vnto the Frẽch kynges vse. And shortely after were also yolden to theym, the townes of Ingolesme, of Crãctes, of sait Johñ de Angely, wyth dyuers other.

Anno

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxxi. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxii.

Johñ Pyell. Johñ Philpotte.

Anno.xlv.

Nycholas Brember.

IN thys.xlvii.yere / at a wrestelynge holden vpon blake Heth besyde London, was slayne a mercer of Londō named Johñ Northwode. For the whyche greate dyssencyon grewe amonge the felyshyppes of ỹ cytye, to the houge dystourbaunce of it/ and a good season after or the rancoure therof myghte be duely appeased.

In thys yere also the duke of Lācastre syr Johñ of Gaunt, & syr Edmūde his brother erle of Cambryged wedded the two doughters of Peter whyche was late kynge of Castyle, put to deth by Hēry hys bastarde brother/ as before I haue shewed in the xliii.yere of thys kyngs regne. Of ỹ whyche two doughters syr Johñ of Gaunt maryed the eldest named Cōstance, & hys brother the yonger named Isabell/ so that by these maryages these .ii. brethrne claymed to be enheryteurs of the kyngdome of Castyle or Spayne.

And in thys yere after the duke of Brytayne had receyued many crorta cyons & requestes frome the Frenche kyng, to haue hym vpon hys partye: he sente for certayne sowdyours of Englishmen, & strengthed with them some of thys castelles & holdes. wher of herynge kyng Charles/ sent thyder wyth a stronge power the forenamed syr Barthran de Claycon / warnyng theym to make warre vpon them as an enemye vnto the house of Fraūce. The whyche accordynge to theyr cōmission entred the lande of Brytayn, in wastyng it with yrne & fyre/ and in shorte processe had polden vnto hym the more partye of the chyef townes, excepte Brest, Iulroy, and Deruall. Than in the ende of Iuny the sayde syr Barthran layd syege vnto Brest/ & the lord of Craon wyth other laye before Daruall. In all whyche season the duke of Brytayne was in Englande. For so soone as he hadde as before is sayd, bestowed the foresayd Englyshe sowdyours/ he sayled into Englande to speke wyth kynge Edwarde.

In the moneth of July, the duke of Lācastre wyth syr Johñ de Mont forde duke of Brytayne & other, with a myghty puyssaunce landed at Caleys. And after they had rested them there a certayn days, they rode vnto Helden, and lodged them within the parke an other season. And after passed by Dourlōs, by Benquesne, and so vnto Corbye / where they passed ỹ ryuer of Some, and rode vnto Roy in Vermendoys / where they rested them by the space of.vii. dayes. At whych terme ende they set fyre vpon the towne, & toke theyr way towarde Laemoys, and burned & spoyled the countre as they wēt. And in processe of tyme passed the ryuers of Osne, Marne, and of Aube, & rode thorugh Chāpayne/ & by the erledome of Brame streyghte vnto Guy / & passed the ryuer of Seyn, & so towarde ỹ ryuer of Leyr, and vnto Marcyngup ỹ nōnery. And whan they were passed the sayd nonnery/ they kepte theyr waye towarde the ryuer of Ancherre, and so vnto Burdeaux. In all whyche tourney they passed wythout fyghte or batayll/ natwithstādyng the great hurte & domage they dyd vnto ỹ townes & cōtres as they passed. Excepte at a place or towne called Orchye, a knyght of Fraūce called syr Johñ de

Upenne

Uycenne encountred .l. speres and .xx. archers that were straped from theyr hoste/and set vppon theym, and slew some parte of theym, and toke the resydue of theym prysoners. So that the Frenche boke sayth, for so moche as for lacke of meate for theyr horses and other paynfull thynges that in that iourney to theym happened, that though that iournay were vnto the Englysshemen honorable to ryde so ferre in the kynges lãde vnfoughten wyth / yet it was to theym very paynfull, cõsyderyng the manyfolde chaunces fallynge to theym, as losse of horses and other thynges duryng that passage.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. lxxiii. Anno dñi. M. CCC. lxxiii.

Johñ Awbry.

Adam of Bury. Anno. xl viii.

Johñ Fysshyde.

IN thys .xl viii. yere, were sente fro the pope than beyng the .xi. Gregory, the archebysshop of Rauenne, and the bysshop of Carentras / for to treate of the peace, betwene the .ii. kynges of Englande and of Fraũce. The whyche assembled them at Bruges in Flaundres. whyther also for kynge Edwardes partye, came the duke of Lancastre, and the bysshope of Londõ, wyth other. And for Charles the Frenche kynge, appered there the duke of Burgoyne, & the bysshop of Amyens, and other. The whyche cõmyssioners, after they had spente a greate parte of the lente in disputacions of thys matter / the partyes for the Frenche kynge desyred a lycence of the legates, that they myghte ryde vnto Parys, and shewe vnto ꝑ kyng the offycers of the englysshe partye / and so to retourne with hys pleasur. wherupon it was agreed, that a certayne shulde ryde & to shew vnto the Frenche kynge, ꝑ the Englysshemen abode styffely vpon the soueraynte, that the kynge of Englande and hys heyres kynges, shal enioy all the former landes comprysed in the peace made betwene hym and Johñ than kyng of Fraũce / as before is shewed in the .xxxiiii. yere of thys kyng, wyth out homage or other dupte for them doynge. For thys matter as sayth ꝑ Frenche cronycle, kyng Charlys assembled at Parys a great parte of ꝑ nobles of hys realme, wyth many other wyse mẽ & doctours of dyuynite, to haue that case sufficiently argued and debated. In the whyche counsayl it was plenerly determyned, that the kyng myght nat gyue ouer the sayd soueraynte without great peryll of hys soule / as there was shewed by diuers reasons. whan thys report was brought vnto Bruges / ꝑ sayd treaty was dissolued wythoute any conclusyon takynge / excepte the peace was contynued tyll the feast of all sayntes next ensuynge.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxiii. Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxiiii.

Rycharde Lyons.

wyllyam walworth. Anno. xlix.

wyllyam wodhowce.

IN thys yere, that is to vnderstande in the begynnynge of thys mayres yere, and ende of the xl viii. yere of kyng Edwarde / a new assemble

wyse cõplayned vpon to the kyng, ꝑ he was throwen into prysion, where he lay many peres after.

Than kyng Edwarde created Rychard sonñ of prynce Edward prynce of walys/ & gaue vnto hym ꝑ erledomes of Chester and Cornewayll. And also for the kyng ware feble & sykely/ he than betoke the rule of the lande vnto syr Johñ of Gaunt duke of Lancastre / and ordeyned hym as gouernour of the lande. whyche so contynued durynge hys fathers lyfe.

In thys yere also the tenañtes or menyall seruañtes of the erle of war wyk, made a ryot vpon the monkes of Euyshñ / and slewe & hurte many of the abbottes tenauntes, & spoyled and brake hys closures and warynnes, and sewed theyr pondes and waters, and dyd vnto them many displesures/ to the vtter ruyne of that monastery, ne had the kyng ꝑsoner haue sente downe to the erle hys letters, chargynge hym to cease & withdraw hys men from that ryot. whych after warde was pacified, without any notary punysshement of suche persons as were begynners or executours of that ryot.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xcvi. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xcvii.

Andrewe Pykman.

Nycholas Bembre. Anno.lii.

Nycholas Twyforde.

IN thys.lii.yere and .xii. daye of the moneth of Apryl/ syr Johñ Wynsterworth knyght, for certayne treasons, of the whych he was conuict before the mayre and other iustyces of the kyng in the Guyld halle, was thys foresayd daye at tyborne put in execucion/ that is to meane, hanged, heded, and quartered/ & hys hed sette after vpõ Lõdon brydge. The cause of whose dethe was, for so moche as he beynge put in trust by the kyng, receyued greate summes of money to paye wyth the kynges sowdyours / the whyche he kepte vnto hys owne vse, and deceyued the kynge and hys sowdiours. And whan therof he was to the kyng accused/ he feryng punysshement fledde into Fraunce, & there conspyred newly agayne his naturall prynce/ & so lastly was taken and receyued hys merite.

The dethe of kynge Edwarde the thyrde.

A chysme.

In thys yere also began a wõderfull cysme in the churche of Rome. For after the deth of the pope the .xi. Gregory, was chosen.ii. popes. wher of the fyrst was named the.vi. Urbã, and that other the seuenth Clement/ the fyrste an Italyon borne, and that other a Frencheman. Of the whyche ensued suche dyscorde in electyon of the pope, that by the terme of .xxxix. peres after, there was euer.ii. popes in suche auctoryte, that harde and doughtefull it was to knowe/ whether was indubitat pope.

& And vpon the.xxii. daye of the moneth of Juny, dyed at hys manour of Shene now called Richmõñt, kyng Edward ꝑ thyrde of that name/ whã he had regned.li. peres and.v. monethes and odde dayes/ leuyng after hym.viii. sonnes, that is to saye Leonell duke of Clarence, Johñ of Gañt duke of Lancastre, Edmund of Lãgley duke of yorke, and Thomas of woodstok erle of Cambridge. Of the whyche sonnes wyth other nobles of hys realme, he was honourably cõueyed frõ his sayd manour of Shene vnto the monastery of westmynster, and there solempnely wythin the

chapell

chapell of saynt Edwarde vppon the south syde of the shrine, with thys Epytaphyor superscrypcion in a table hangyng vpon hys tombe.

Hic decus Anglorum, flos regum preteritorū,
Ferma futurorum, rex clemens, pax populorum,
Tercius Edwardus regni complens iubileum,
Inuictus pardus, pollens bellis Machabeus.

The whych is thus to be vnderstãde in our mother tũge as folowynge.

Of Englond the kynges, here lieth the beautemous flowre.
Of all before passed, & myrrour to them shall sue
A mercifull kynge, of peace conseruatour,
The.iij. Edwarde. The deth of whome maye me
All Englysshmẽ sore, for he by knyghtehode due,
Was syberde inuicte, and by feate Marciall
To worthy Machabe in vertu peregall.

PHylyp de Ualoys erle of Ualops, & sonne of Charles de Ualoys brother vnto ỳ.iiii. Philip was admitted for protectoure of the realme of Fraũce, in the begynnynge of the moneth of Februarp. And vpõ Trynite sondap next ensuyng, he with hys wyfe were crowned at Raynes, in ỳ yere of our lord god a .M.iii.C.xxviii, & the .ii. yere of kyng Edward the.iii. thã beynge in possessiõ of the crowne of Englande. Betwene thys Philip & the sayd Edward kyng of Englande, as some deale before in the storp, a.iiii. yere of Charles the .v. is towched / great disputacions & argumentes arose betwene theyr coũsayles, for the right & tytle to the crowne of Fraũce. For it was thought by the coũsayl of Englãde, for so moche as Edwarde was colyn to Philip le Beaw, & sonne of ỳ sayd Philippes doughter, which had no mo chylder but Edwardes mother / that he shuld rather be kyng of Fraũce than Philip de Ualoys, that was but colyn germayn to Philip le Beaw, & sonne of hys brother Charles. Of whych disputiõs & argumentes the fynall cõclusion was, ỳ for an olde decre & law by auctoritye of parlyament lõge before made was enacted, that no womã shuld enheryte the crowne of Fraũce / therfore ỳ tytle of Edward by myght of the Frẽchemen was put by, & thys Philip admytted to the gouernaũce of the same. After whych direccio thus takẽ, & specially by ỳ meanes of syr Robert erle of Artops / thys Philip anone was proclamed regẽt of Fraũce, vnto such tyme as the quene wyfe of Charles the .v. whych thã was with chylde were delyuered / & so receyued the rule of the lande as regẽt. In tyme whereof, Peter Remy principall treasorer of kyng Charles last dede / whyche Peter (syuyng the sayd Charles) was accused of myspẽdyng of ỳ kynges treasoure, & enrychyng of hym selfe cõtrary to right & reason, so ỳ his goodes shuld be estemed at.iiii.C. M.li. after Parys money, wherof ỳ value is set out in diuers places before in this werke was takẽ out of pryson & arreygned at Parys, & there conuict & adiuged / & vpõ the.xxiiii.day of Marche drawẽ thorugh the cytie, & hanged vpon the comõ gybet at Parys. And vpõ the fyrst day of Aprpll folowyng / the old quene & wyfe of Charles laste kyng, was lighted of chyld, & brought forth a doughter at Boys in Uincẽt, which after was named Blanche. wherfore where before the sayd Philip de Ualoys ruled before but as regẽt / nowe he was allowed & takẽ for kyng, and crowned as before is sayd at the Cite of Raynes, with ỳ quene his wyfe vpon Trinite sondap. And whã ỳ solempnyte of hys coronaciõ was ended / he then assembled before hym & hys coũ

Philyp de Ualoys crowned kyng of Fraunce.

sayll Lowys the erle of Flaūdzes, & receyued of hym homage for the sayd eriedom. And that done, he besought the kyng of ayde to oppresse certayn townes of hys coūtre whych rebelled agayne hym. wherunto ỹ kyng graūted/& by counsayll & eroytacion of syr Gautyer or walter de Creey than cōstable of Fraunce, the kyng sent oute hys commyssioners/ chargynge hys lordes with theyr assygnes & sowdyours, to mete with hym in dyssēyble arraye at the cytie of Arras, by mary Magdaleyne day next ensuyng.

At whyche day the kyng with his lordes and people there meting, toke forewarde vpon hys iourney, & sped hym toward Cassyle a town of Flaūdzes. where within lytell space of the towne he pyght hys pauylyons and tētes/& wasted and pylled the coūtre thereabout. But the Flemynges kepynge within the sayd towne, fered nothyng the French kyng/but in dyrision of hym and of hys lordes, they caused a red cok to be paynted vpō a whyte cloth, & wrote in greate letters in ỹ sayd clothe thys ryme folowynge, & hāged it out ouer the walles.

Quant ce quoc icy chantera,
Le roy trouc ca entrera.

Cwhych is thus to meane in our bulgare speche.

whan that thys cok lo here doth synge, than shall thys founde kynge hys hoste in bryngc.

When thys was redde of the Frēch men, and report made therof vnto the kynge / he was therwyth sore amoued / and specyally for that ỹ they named hym the foundē kyng. Therfore they assayled them strōgly vppon all partyes. But they of the towne defended theym manfully, so that theyr enemyes had of them none aduauntage. Than the kynge sente syr Robert de Flaundzes a knyghte of the erles, with a certayne sowdyours/commaundyng hym to assayle the Flemynges toward saint Omers And the erle he monyssched, ỹ he with hys people shuld assayle the towarde the ple. Than the comōs of Bruges, Ipre, of Tourney, of Fourneys, and of all Cassyle, assembled theym / and prouyded that a certayne of thē shuld kepe the mount of Cassyle, and another company shulde kepe the coūtre towarde Tourney, and the thyrde hoste shulde fortyfye the countre towarde the ple.

The whiche people ordered euery hoste hys lymit to hym assigned/and dayly skyrmyssched wyth the Frenchemen, so that betwene them men were slayne vpon bothe partyes. whan the kyng had thus lyen before the towne a certayn season/ the Flemynges nat fering theyr enemyes, issued oute of the towne, and pyght theyr tētes vpon the mounte of Cassyle, & shewed them boldly vnto theyr enemyes/thā kyng Philyp seynge the boldnesse of the Flemynges, and howe lytell they fered hym/toke coūsayll of hys lordes how he myght cause them to dyscēde the hylle/for so longe as they kepte ỹ hyll it was iuperdous & perylous to stye towarde theym. Lastly it was agreed by the kynge and hys lordes, that syr Robert de Flaundzes wyth other, shuld assayle an holde or town thereby called Terroner de Bergnet by meane wherof the kyng thoughte that they wolde discende the mount, to rescue the sayd towne. which accordyng to ỹ kynges mynde was done, and a bulwerke set vppon a fyre. But the kynge had neuer the rather hys entent. For they kepte them and theyr gates in so sure wyse, that the French kyng for al hys great power, myght to theym do no scathe. In so moche that the kynge consyderynge theyr

Discomfyte of the Flemynges.

theyr strength/was condyscended to famyshe them by hunger, that they myght nat wynne strength/& for that cause ꝑ lesse watche or regarde to hys people, but suffered them to play and dysport them out of theyr harneys, eche of the in others tente/ thynkyng hym sure of hys enemyes, for any assaute or warre by theym to be procured or attempted agayne hym or hys lordes.

But whether it were that hys enemyes of this were warned, or that of theyr owne courage and pryde they wolde assayle the frenche hoste/ vpon the xxiiii. daye of Auguste towarde ꝑ nyght, the sayde hoste of Flemynges assayled the mount in as secrete wyse as men of warre myght/& drewe the towarde the French men, whych tha were vnarmed and in theyr dysportes of dysynge and playeng at the chesse & other games.

Vppon whome the Flemynges came so sodaynly, ꝑ they slewe many of theyr enemyes, and forced many to flie towarde saynt Omers for theyr sauegarde. And so the Flemynges helde on theyr waye tyll they came nere vnto the kynges tens, which tha was also vnarmed. But by the noyse & crye he beynge warned, in all haste armed hym. In the whyche season as god wolde for the frenche hoste/ certayne Marshallys of the frenche hoste wyth a stronge company, retorned from ꝑ assaute of vn holde therby, and encountred the Flemynges/ and helde wyth them barayll, whyle the kynge and his lordes made them redy. So that in processe the Flemynges were closed wyth theyr enemyes and had a sharpe and cruell fyghte/ wherin they defended theym vyrgorously.

But in the ende the losse of ꝑ felde tourned vpon the Flemynges/ so ꝑ the capytayne named Zanekin was slayne, wyth many other to the nombre of. xviii. M. & aboue as wytnesseth the frenche boke, ouer many whyche were there taken prysoners of poore men and artyficers/ for the multitude of the gentylmē were vpō the erles partye.

After whyche victorye thus optey ned by the kynge/ anone he caused ꝑ sayde towne of Cassell to be set vpon a fyre/& after rode vnto Bruges and had it yolden vnto hym. And in lyke wyse was Ypre, Poperynge, Fournays, Tournaye, Terrouer, & many other good townes yolde vnto hym. Amonge the whyche Gaūt is nat named. wherfore it is to deme, that it was none of those townes ꝑ at thys season rebelled. Thā in shorte proces folowynge/ the kyng had the rule of the hole erledome of Flaunders, and delyuered the possessyon therof vnto Lowys the forsayde erle of that cōtre/ and after retourned into Fraūce wyth pompe, leuynge the erle in hys countye of Flaundres. The whyche dyd after so cruell iustyce vppon hys subiectes, that he put to deth by dyuerse tourmentes as rakkynge, heddynge, & hangynge, in sondry townes & places of hys lordshyppes, vpō the nōbre of. x. M: ouer & aboue many & dyuers whych were banysshed, some for fewe yeres, some for many, & some for euermore.

In the seconde yere of thys kyng Phylyp/ lyke as before is shewed in the thyrde yere of kynge Edwarde, the sayd Edwarde made hys homage vnto the sayde Phylyp in ꝑ towne of Amyas, for the duchy of Guyon & countye of Poytyers. And soone after thys Phylype sente into Flaundres dyuers bysshoppes and other noble men/ by whose meanes ꝑ gates of Brug, of Ypre, of Courtray and of other townes, were abated &

throwen downe, for fere lest the sayde townes wolde ofte rebell agayne hym or theyr erle.

In thys yere also syr Roberte de Artoys began hys plee in parlyamẽt agayne Johan countesse of Artoys for that erledome / in clayminge the ryght therof by certayne endentures of couenaũtes of marryage, betwene syr Philippe de Artoys hys father, & dame Blaūche of Bryttayne hys mother / whyche wrytynges had ben by longe tyme kept from hym and now newly founden. And for to haue the better expedicion in hys matter / he brought vnto the kynge, the erle of Alenson, the duke of Bryttayne, with dyuers nobles, the whyche made requeste for hym to the kyng ꝑ he might haue iustyce. And with the countesse came the duke of Burgoyne, Lowys erle of Flaundres, and dyuers other noble men, makynge lyke requeste for her and for her ryght. Than syr Robert shewed forth a wrytynge sealed wyth the seale of armys of the erle of Artoys, conteynynge that whan the marryage was solẽpnysed of syr Philyp de Artoys father to the sayd Robert, & of dame Blaunche doughter vnto the duke of Bryttayne and mother vnto the sayd Robert, it was accorded that the sayd syr Philyp hys father, gaue vnto ꝑ sayd dame Blaūche and to her heyres, the erledome of Artoys. whiche wrytynges at the instaunce & prayer of the countesse of Artoys, were than delyuered into ꝑ court to be kept / sayeng that the sayd wrytynges were vntrewe & coũterfeted. Upon the whych the sayde countesse brought sufficyent prouffe, that the sayd wrytynges were falsely made & sealed by a gentyl womã, doughter vnto the lorde of Wygnon of the castell of Bethune / ꝑ whyche was lerned in Astronamy ꝑ she toke vpon her to shew thynges to come, wherin somtyme she happed vpon the soth / but more oftener she fayled.

By meanes of whyche womã an olde chartre sealed wyth the seale of the forenamed syr Philip was fownd / the whych she craftely toke of, & set & vpon a new wrytyng made to ꝑ auaũtage of the sayd syr Robert of Artoys & after presented them vnto the sayd syr Robert, sayenge ꝑ she had founde thẽ in the town of Arras. The which he ioyfully receyued, and made hys tytle and clayme vpõ the same. This matter thus hãgyng before the kyng and hys lordes / in the .iii. yere of hys reygne in ꝑ cyte of Parys, after due prouffe made vpon the same, the sentence was gyuen agayne syr Robert of Artoys to hys great displeasure. In so moche that he sayd openly, by me he was made a kynge, and by me he shalbe dysmysed ꝑ I maye. And for he fered to be caste in pryson by ꝑ French kyng / he therefore conueyed hys horse and goodes secretely vnto Burdeaux vpon Geroñde, and there toke shyppyng and so passed into Englande hys sayd horses and treasour & hym selfe rode vnto hys cosyne the duke of Brabãt. with whome he bode a certayne of tyme / & after passed into Englãde and excyted kyng Edward bougely for to make warre vpon the Frenche kynge.

In the .iiii. yere of ꝑ reygne of this Philip / the sayd syr Robert was proclaymed open enemy to the crowne of Fraunce, and hys landes seased into the Frenche kynges handes / and he banysshed the lande for euer, excepte that he within a moneth after Easter next ensuyng, wolde come into ꝑ kynges court, & submyt hym holy vnto the kynges grace. whyche sentence passed agayne hym, for so moche as he apered nat.

In ꝑ .xi. yere of the reygne of this Philip / the wyfe of syr Robert of Artoys,

toys, ꝑ whych was syster vnto kyng Philip, was accused to be a great ocasioner of the offence of her husbād. For ꝑ which she with her childer was sent into Gastenoys & there holden in strayte prison.

In ꝑ. viii. yere of hys reygne, kyng Philip vysyted diuers parties of his realme/& in ꝑ doynge, vysyted many places of pylgrymages which before he had promysed to fecche, for the restitucio of helth to his eldest sonn Johā thā duke of Normādy, whych ꝑ yere before by meane of sekenes was in great ieopardy of lyfe/ & cōtynuynge the sayd iourney, rode vnto Aurgnō and vysyted there ꝑ pope than beyng Benet the. xii. of ꝑ name. And whā he had sped hys nedes wyth hym, he rode into the prouynce of Mercyle for to se there his nauy/and after retourned by Burgoyne, where of the duke he was royally receyued and feested. In which season of his there tariyng a cōplaynt was brought before hym by ꝑ sayd duke, agayne syr Johā de Chalon for clayme of certayn lādes within that duchy. The whych varyaunce to apese the kyng toke therein somme payne. But no direccion he myght set therein/ so ꝑ the sayd duke and syr Johā departed with wordes of displesure. And shortly after ꝑ sayd syr Johā accompanyed with diuers noble mē of Almayne, entred ꝑ duchy of Burgoyne, and therin dyd moche harme to the cōtre and people/ and gat certayns castelles and thē fortyfyed with Almaynes. Thā ꝑ duke lay lyng in his syde ꝑ kyng de Nauerne the duke of Normādy, with ꝑ erle of Eu & of Flaūdres, assieged ꝑ castel of Chauly, & at ꝑ ende of. vi. wekes wan ꝑ same/and after rode vnto the cytye of Besenson & layd syege to it also. But whā he had leyne there a lōge season, he was fayne to cōclude a trewes, his host was in such disease

of bytayll. By reason of whych peas or trewes ꝑ hostes were departed, & the ende of ꝑ warre vnparfyted. But in the ende folowynge, by meane of ꝑ Frēch kyng a dyssencio was take betwene the sayd ptyes. And thys yere kyng Philip sent certayne messāgers vnto kyng Edward, vpō certayn demaūdes for ꝑ castel of paūtes & other for ꝑ which cōtrauersie fyrst begā to kyndle betwene the sayde. ii. prynces as in ꝑ. x. yere of Edward is touched with the other yeres folowyng.

In the. ix. yere of this Philip, apered a blasyng sterre. After the whych ensued greate mortalytye within the realme of Fraūce, as wel of men as of beestes. And in this yere a nother mā of ꝑ prouynce of Lāgedok named Arnolde of Normādy, was heded & hanged vpō ꝑ cōmon gybet of Parys/ for almoch as by hys meanes it was prouyed, that the Englyshmē had wonne the castell of Paracoll. And in the. x. yere of kynge Philip/ kyng Edward of Englād sent syr Barnard de Bret into Flaūdres, for causes touched & shewed in the xii. yere of the sayd Edward. And in ꝑ. xi yere of this Philip kyng Edward sayled into Brabāt, & ayed hym wyth. xl. wys ꝑ Empour. And whyle the Frenche kyng taryed with hys hoste at saint Quyntyne in Vermandoys, kyng Edward entred into Fraunce, and spoyled and brent a parte of Trerelle, not without some note of Cowardyse arrected to the Frēch kyng and hys hoste, of hys owne subgectes. And in the same yere, began the towne of Gaūte to rebell wyth other townes of Flaūdres, by the mocion of Jaques de Arteuyle/ as in the xiiii. yere is shewed of kyng Edward the thyrde.

In the twelf yere of thys Philip whych ꝑ Frēch duke called the yere of contulyon, kynge Edwarde beynge retourned into Englande/ the

Frenche kynge assembled a myghty hoste to go agayne the Henaunders, Flemynges, & Brytons / & came with the sayde hoste vnto Arras / and sent from thens a part of hys people with hys sonne Johñ than duke of Normandy into Henaude, for to warre vppon the countrey there.

Whyche went streyght vnto Cambraye / & after layd siege to that castell called Esthandune. And wythin .xb. dayes folowynge the Frenche kynge hys father came vnto the sayd syege wyth innumerable people. The whiche castell at thende of a moneth after the kynges comynge was gyue vp by apoyntement. And that done ꝑ kynge remoued hys siege to a castell of the bysshoppe of Cambray named Thune, standynge vpon the ryuer of Lescaut. where the kynge laye longe tyme without harme doynge vnto ꝑ sayde castell. At lengthe the duke of Brabant with the erle of Gerle, with a stronge hoste of dyuers nacyons, came for to remoue that siege / so that the Frenche hoste lay vpon that one syde of the ryuer, & the Brabanders vpõ that other. But by meane of .iiii. brydges whych were made ouer that ryuer / bothe hostes at sondry tymes mette & faughte dyuers sharpe skyrmysshes to the losse of people vppon bothe partyes. But in the ende the castell was so betyn wyth gonnes, ꝑ the capytayne therof put all hys moueables in a shyp / and after wyth such soudyours as were lefte, entred the sayde shyp, & lette the castell vppon a lyght fyre, wherof whan the Frenche kynge was ware / in all haste he caused the walles to be scaled, and so entred & stanched the fyre. And the same nyght the hoste of Brabanders departed also.

Whan the kynge had thus wonne thys castell / he than sente the dukes of Normandy & of Burgoyn, vnto a towne named Quesnoy. And when ꝑ sayd dukes had brent a parte of that towne & other vyllages there about / they retourned agayne vnto ꝑ Frenche hoste. And shortly after the kynge retourned into Fraunce / & there made prouysyon to sende forthe hys nauy to mete wyth kyng Edwarde, whych were to the nombre of .iiii. hundreth or aboue / the whyche as in the .xb. yere of Edwarde the thyrde is before shewed, mette the Englysshe nauy, and there at a place called ꝑ Swyn were ouercommen.

After thys great victory thus optayned by the kynge of Englande / the Frenche kynge wyth a great hoste herynge comfortable tydynges of the discomfiture of hys gentyll herte de Artoys, before the towne of sayncte Omers, as before in the .xb. yere of kyng Edward is also shewed sped hym tyll he came to the pryory of sayncte Andrew. where he tarryenge wyth hys people, certayne letters were sent to hym by kynge Edwarde, wherof the tenour with the answere of the same, are set out in the forsayd .xb. yere, with other maters apparteynynge to the actes of bothe prynces. whan the peace was concluded betweene the sayde kynges, as in ꝑ sayd .xb. yere is declared / ꝑ kyng of Fraunce retourned to hys owne. And in ꝑ .xiii. yere of hys reygne, died Johñ duke of Bryttayne. After whose deth Charles de Blois & Johñ de Mountfort, claymed seuerally to be enherytours of that duchy. whyche Charles was sonne vnto the erle of Blois, & nexte vnto the Frenche kynge by reason ꝑ Margarete hys syster was mother vnto the sayde Charles. The whych Charles had maried the doughter of Guy de Bryttayne discount of Lymoges, secõde brother of the forenamed Johñ duke of Bryttayne. And ꝑ sayd

Johñ

Johñ de Moũtfoꝛte was the thyꝛde bꝛother vnto the foꝛsayd Johñ duke of Bꝛytayn now dede. Wo that thys queſtyon of thys clayme reſted vpon thys poynt, whether the doughter of the ſecõd bꝛother ſhuld enherytẽ ꝑ du chy oꝛ ꝑ yonger bꝛother, conſiderynge ꝑ Johñ the eldeſt bꝛother dyed without heyꝛe of hys body, and Guy the ſeconde bꝛother without heyꝛe male/ wherfoꝛe the thyꝛde bꝛother Johñ de Moũtfoꝛt claymed to be duke of Bꝛytayne. whiche caſe and queſtion was bꝛought befoꝛe ꝑ Frẽch kynge & hys loꝛdes, & there debated & argued by a longe ſeaſon. But in ꝑ ende ſentence palled agayn ſyꝛ Johñ de Moũtfoꝛt/ & Charles de Bloys was put in poſ-ſeſſion of ꝑ duchy by kyng Philip/ to whome the ſayd Charles dyd hys homage foꝛ the ſame.

Foꝛ thys ſentence aroſe moꝛtall warre betwene the ſayde ſyꝛ Charles & ſyꝛ Johñ. In the whych the.ii. kynges of Englande & Fraũce toke partye/ ſo that kyng Edwarde ayded ſyꝛ Johñ de Moũtfoꝛt / & kynge Philip hys neuew ſyꝛ Charles. Thanne ſyꝛ Johanne de Mountfoꝛte befoꝛe the ſentence gyuen, keryng the ſequell of the ſame/ departed frõ the court, and gat hym into a ſtrõge towne of Bꝛytayne & there held hym. wherof kyng Philip beynge aduertiſed / ſẽte ſyꝛ Johñ his ſonne duke of Noꝛmãdy, & hys bꝛother ſyꝛ Charles erle of Alençon, foꝛ to warre vpõ ꝑ ſayd ſyꝛ Johñ de Moũtfoꝛt. The which ſped theym with a nõbꝛe of people into Bꝛytayñ, & beſieged a ſtrõge caſtell ſtãdyng in an yle by ꝑ ryuer of Loyer. And after the wynning therof, they yode vnto ꝑ citie of Naũtes/ the which ꝑ cytezyns yelded vnto thẽ without ſtrooke. And ſoon after as teſtifieth ꝑ Frẽch ſtoꝛy, vpõ certayne cõdicions & couenãtes, ꝑ ſayd ſyꝛ Johñ de Moũtfoꝛt yelded hi vnto ꝑ duke of Noꝛmãdy / ꝑ whyche ſẽt hym vnto ꝑ kyng his father to Parys, where by the ſayd kynge he was impꝛyſoned in the caſtell of Louure. But how it was by fauour oꝛ otherwyſe, he eſcaped pꝛyſõ after .ii. yeres pꝛyſonemẽt. Oꝛ after ſome wꝛyters, he was after.ii.yeres deliuered vpon certayn cõdicions. wherof one was, ꝑ he ſhulde nat come in Bꝛytayne noꝛ any thynge medle oꝛ haue to do in ꝑ coũtre. But thys pꝛyſonemente of ſyꝛ Johñ de Moũtfoꝛt nat withſtãding/ the warre was mayntayned in Bꝛytayñ by ꝑ frẽdes of the ſayd ſyꝛ Johñ & many townes & caſtelles therof was holdẽ to the vſe of ꝑ ſayde ſyꝛ Johñ/ wherof to ſhew vnto you ꝑ circũſtaũce & pꝛoces it wolde aſke a lõge tyme. But ꝑ cõcluſion & fyne of this warre ſhalbe ſhewed in ꝑ ſtoꝛy of ꝑ.vi. Charles & ſonñ of kyng Johñ. In the.xv. yere of this Philip/ the erle of Salyſbury accõpanied with ſyꝛ Roberte of Artoys & other noble mẽ, entred Bꝛytayn, & ayded the frẽdes of ſyꝛ Johñ de moũtfoꝛt/ in doyng great domage to ꝑ coũtre, & bꝛẽt moche of ꝑ French kynges nauy. In aſſayeyng wherof, ſyꝛ Robert of Artoys was woũded in the thygh with a gunne, wherupõ he laye ſyke / & vpõ ꝑ enſued a flux, & ſo therof dyed, & after cõueyed into England, & there buryed. And ſoon after kyng Edward entred Fraũce wyth a ſtrõg army. But a peas was atwene hym & the Frẽche kyng condiſcended foꝛ a certayne terme by laboure of.ii. cardinales, as befoꝛe in ꝑ.xvi. yere of kyng Edward is declared, and in this yere kynge Philip aꝛered a taſſe of his people called a Gabell in Frẽche. This was pꝛouyded, ꝑ no ſubiect of ꝑ kynges noꝛ other within hys lãde, ſhuld bye any ſalt but of the kynge & at hys pꝛyce. And ouer that he aꝛered & ſowed the coynes & moneys of hys lande, to the greate auaũtage of hym ſelfe, and enpoueriſhyng of his ſayd ſubiectes

Deth of ſyꝛ Robert of Artoys.

subiectes by meane wherof he fyll in great hatered of hys people.

In the.xvi. yere of hys reygne, a great dyscencion grewe amonge the nobles of Normãdy, by reason of par tyes takyng, some wyth Johñ of Ha recourt, and other wyth syr Roberte Barthyan than Marshal of Fraũce, for couenaũtes of maryge apoynted betwene ꝑ sonne of the sayde syr Ro bert vpõ that one partye, & ꝑ dough ter of syr Roger Bacon / whose wyfe or maydes mother was than maryed vnto syr Godfrey de Harecourt, bro ther of that aboue sayd syr Johñ vp pon the other partye. For varyaũce wherof greate warre was lykely to haue ensued, yf the kynge the sooner had nat sent strayt commaũdement, that eyther partye shulde kepe hys peace, & to apere before hym and hys lordes at Parys, and there to haue theyr greuaũce by hym & hys lordes determyned.

At whyche day of apperaunce, the sayde syr Godfrey appered nat, nor none for hym / but cõtrary the kyngs commaũdement, assyeged syr wyllm Berthran byssshop of Bayñ and bro ther to the forsayd syr Roberte than beyng in a castell. And whan he sawe he myght nat preuayll agayne hym / he than drewe vnto the Englysshme and ayded them agaynst the Frenche kynge.

In thys yere also kynge Philippe entendynge to relcue the duchye of Burgoyn wyth whete whyche there than was scãt, ordeyned that certayn quarters of whete shulde be gadered in the countrees of Terroner, of Or leaunce & Gastenoys, & so sent into Burgoyn. But ꝑ studyaũtes of Orle aunce, with the burgeyses & comons of the cytie toke therwith such grete, that of one mynde they wente downe vnto the ryuer of Loyer, where at ꝑ season certayne shippes laye freyght wyth bytayll to be had vnto the sayd countre, & there set out the grayen, & spoyled it in suche wyse, that moche therof came neuer to good. And that done many of that company beynge nedy and poore / yode vnto vyllages there by, and robbed ꝑ people, & dyde moche harme. whã the prouost or ru ler of Orleaũce beheld thys rage & ryot of the people, and cõsydered the multytude of theym / he forbare for a tyme tyll they were somdele asswa ged. And than wyth suche company as he had of hys officers and other, he toke a certayne of theym, and put theym in sondrye prysons, tyll he knew farther of the kynges pleasur. But it was nat longe after that the other of that affynyte, herynge of the emprysonement of theyr felowes / assẽ bled theym of newe, and lyke woode men ranne vnto the prysons / & nat alonely delyuered theyr felowes, but also many other whych laye there for great causes & crymes / & some suche as were cõdempned to deth for theyr transgressyons. whan notyciõ of this great outrage and ryot came vnto ꝑ kyng / anone he sent thyder .ii. knyght tes of hys court with a puyssaunt ar my / chargyng them to take all suche as were occasyoners and begynners of thys Riot / and as many as were founde culpable to be put vnto deth. The whych knyghtes accordyng to theyr commyssion wyth ayde of ꝑ prouost of Orleaũce, toke suche as were dempte gylte of thys cryme, & hãged them vpon the common gybet or ga lous of the cytye, amonge the whych were dyuers clerkes, and one a deã ken & within orders. And in the same yere and moneth of Auguste, a noble knyght of Bretayne called syr Oly uer de Clycon, for treason ꝑ he hadde conspyred agayne kyng Philippe, or for he had fauoured kyng Edwards partye was taken by a trayne at a tu

stes

stes or tournamẽte holden for ꝑ same cause at Parys, and shortly after iudged to deth/as fyrst drawen through the cytye vnto the place of iugement, & theruppon a scaffold purposely ordeyned was byheded / and after hys body with chaynes hanged vpon the gybet, & hys hed standyng there ouer vpõ a stake, or after an other auctour had vnto ꝑ cytye of Nauntes in Bry tayne, & there pyght vpon a gate of ꝑ cytye. And in the same moneth syr Godfrey de Harcourte, whych as be fore is sayde, ayded hym with kynge Edwarde, and wolde nat apere after certayne sommons/ was now openly banysshed as traytour & enemy to ꝑ crowne of Fraunce. And in the same moneth was syr Johñ de Moũtforte delyuered out of pryson, vppon such condicions as before is rehersed in ꝑ xiii. yere of this kyng. And soon after were put vnto deth at Parys, syr Johan de Walestreet, syr Godfrey de Walestreet the father & the sonne, syr Johñ de Moũtalbone, syr wyllyam de Bruys, syr Johñ de Cablat, & syr Johñ de Plessys knyghtes/ & esquyres, Johñ de Walestrete neuew to ꝑ forsayd knyghtes, Guyllim de Bruse, Robert de Bruys, Johñ de Menne, and Daup de Menne. And shortely after at Parys were put in execucion thre Normans knyghtes, for affynyte or fauour, whych they had borne towarde syr Godfrey de Harecourt and theyr heddes sent vnto sayute Loup in Constantyne a cytye of Normãdy. whych sayd knyghtes were called sir wyllyam Bacon, syr Roulande de la Roche tessone, and syr Rycharde de Percy.

IN the .xvii. yere of thys Philip one mayster Henry de Walestrete clerke & deaꝉ, & brother to the aboue named syr Godfrey before put in execucion, whych sayd mayster Henry was mayster of the requestes with kyng Philip/ for so moch as he after ꝑ deth of hys sayd brother, rode vnto kyng Edward and coũsayled hym agayne kyng Philip, & after by assygnemẽt of kynge Edwarde was set in great auctorite wythin the towne of Uannys in Bretayne/ whych towne was after goten by the Frenchmẽ, & he therin as one of the chefe capytaynes of the same taken was imprysoned within the castell of Parys. Out of the whyche at thys season he was taken thens, and set in a tumbrell, & thereunto fastened wyth chaynes of yren/ and so cõueyed bareheded with dynne and crye thorugh ꝑ hygh stretes of Parys, tyll he came vnto ꝑ bysshoppes palays of Parys / and there deliuered vnto the bisshop. And soon after by vertue of a commissyõ purchased by kynge Philip of the pope, to haue the sayd mayster Henry dysgraded / he was depryued of all degrees and ordres of the churche, and thã deliuered vnto the executioners. The whyche by .iii. days cõtynuall a certayn season of ꝑ day, set hym vpõ a ladder in ꝑ syght of all people/ to ꝑ entẽt that euery man & chyld might throwe at hym all fyth & ordour of ꝑ strete/ the whiche was done without all compassion and pyte, in so cruell wyse, that by the thyrd dayes ende he was dede, and after buryed vnreuerently.

In the sayde .xvii. yere of kynge Philippe also, as before is shewed in the .xix. yere of kynge Edwarde the thyrde/ Jaques de Artyuele, whych was especiall promoter of the sayde kyng Edwardes causes, came vnto ꝑ towne of Gaunt/ and shewed vnto theym dyuers apoyntmentes to be holde betwene theym and other townes of Flaũdres. where vpon the .xv. day of July, by diuers cõspiratours of the sayd towne of Gaunte, he was pursued

Jaques de Artyuele murdred.

purſued from one houſe to an other, and laſtly ſlayne & mur dred by them to the kynges of Englande great diſ pleaſure & hurt. wherefore the ſayde kyng Edwarde was fayne to retourne into Englande wythoute ſpede of hys purpoſe, lyke as before in ꝑ ſayd xix. yere of his reygne is declared. In thys yere alſo and the moneth of December, dyed ſyr Johñ erle of Woſtfort, which as before is ſayd claymed the duchy of Bryttayn/and lefte after hym a ſonne named alſo ſyr Johñ & erle of Woſtfort, the whyche in lyke wyſe claymed the ſayd duchy of Bry tayn, & mayntayned the warre agayn ſyr Charles de Bloys, as hys father before had done. In the. xvii. yere of kyng Phylyp & fyrſte daye of July, at Parys was than putte to deth by cruel execuciõ, a cytezyn of Compeyñ named Symonde Poplet, a man of greate ryches. The whych for he had ſayd in open audience, that the ryght of the crowne of Fraunce belonged more ryghtfully vnto kyng Edward than to kynge Philip/ he was fyrſte hanged vpon a tree lyke as an ore is hãged in the bochery, & there diſmem bred, as fyrſt the armys, and after ꝑ legges cut from hys body, and laſtly hys hede ſtryken of, and the trunke of hys body hanged by chaynes vpõ the commõ gybet of Parys. And vp pon a ſaterdaye beynge the. xxvi. day of Auguſt in the foreſayde. xviii. yere of kynge Philippe, was foughten at Creſſy the batayll before expreſſed in the. xxi. yere of kynge Edwarde the thyrd/where the floure of the chyual ry of Fraũce was ſlayne & taken pry ſoners. Than ſoone after kyng Phi lippe for the defence of the charge of hys warres, aſked a ſubſidie of the monkes of ſaynt Denys. And amõg certayne iewelles of that place to be had / he demaũded the greate crucy fyx of golde ſtandynge ouer ꝑ hyghe aulter of that monaſtery. wherunto the monkes anſwered ꝑ they myghte nat departe with that crucifyxe / for Eugenius the thyrde of that name pope, accurſed al them that layd any hande vpon that crucifyxe, to the en tent to remoue it from that place, as it appereth by wrytynge ſet vnder ꝑ fote of the ſayd croſſe/by whyche an ſwere the kyng was pacifyed. And in the moneth of Decembre, ſyr Godfrey de Harecourte wyth a towell double folden about hys necke, came vnto ꝑ preſence of kyng Philip, and yelded hym holy to hys mercy and grace / the whyche graunted vnto hym hys pardon.

And in ſhorte whyle after, all the Lumbardes vſurers wythin ꝑ realm of Fraunce, were taken and ſente to dyuers prſons. And all ſuche per ſones as ſtode boũden vnto them, for any bargeyn or lone of money by way of vſury, it was ordeyned that ꝑ ſayd perſones beyng dettours to the ſayd vſurers, ſhulde paye the prncypall dette vnto the kynge at theyr dayes of payment/ & the reſydue whyche re mayneth to the vſurer for hys lucre of gayne for the lone of hys money, ſhulde be pardoned to the dettour. And after the ſayd Lumbardes vſu rers were delyuerred from prſon, by payenge of greate and greuous fy naunce.

In the. xix. yere of thys Philippe, for ſo moche as wytneſſeth the Frẽch cronycle, that ꝑ Flemynges by great manacis and perforce, had conſtray ned theyr erle to be aſſured by bonde of aſſurauce vnto the doughter of kyng Edward, contrary hys volũte and wyll/ the ſayde erle nat wyllyng to accomplyſſhe that marrage, in the Eaſter weke by a cautele depted out of Flaũdres, and came to ꝑ Frenche kyng to Parys/of whome he was ho nourably and ioyouſly receyued.

And

And in the same yere, one named Gawyn de Belemount an aduocate of the spirituall lawe, entendynge to betray ꝑ cytye of Laoñ / acquey̆nted hym with a pooze mā than dwellyng in that citie of Meaus named Colyn Comeiyn/ꝑ whych befoze tyme was fled the cytye of Laon, & was thā foz lacke of substaūce comyn to Meaus, & there mayntened a pooze lyfe / to ꝑ whyche thys Gawyn resoꝛted & relieued. And lastely whāne he thoughte he was somdele of hym assured, he bꝛake vnto hym hys mynde, & sayd if he wolde be ruled by hym, he wolde restoꝛe hym to hys foꝛmer pꝛosperite & weith/wherūto thys Colyner graū ted. Thā anone thys Gawyn shewed hym a lettre, & wylled hym to bere it vnto ꝑ kyng of Englād, with certayn rewarde to hym gyuyng / & also pꝛomysyng of moch moꝛe, with that ꝑ he retourned to hym shoꝛtly to ꝑ citie of Raynes with aūswere of ꝑ same. whā thys pooze and indygēt man had receiued this lettre/he cast many pelles in hys mynde. Howbeit fynally cōtrary his othe and pꝛomyse, he toke hys waye towarde the French kyng, and pꝛesented hym with ꝑ letter/in ꝑ whych was expꝛessed all the maner & oꝛdꝛe how the sayd citie of Laō should be betrayed. whan the kyng was aduertysed of all the circumstaunce of thys treason/he enfourmed this Colyner how he should behaue hym selfe in beryng of hys aūswere/and pꝛoupded hys tyme accoꝛdynge as though he had ben in Englād, & by conuenīēt day came vnto hym to Raynys accoꝛdyng to the foꝛmer appoyntmente.

In whych season the kynge had sent in secrete maner vnto the pꝛouoste of Raynes, that so soone as the sayd Colyner had shewed to the sayd Gawyn his aūswere, ꝑ the sayd Gawyn should be attached and had vnto pꝛyson/the whyche was accoꝛdyngly executed.

And in shoꝛt pꝛocesse folowynge, foꝛ so moch as he was within oꝛdꝛes/he was by the pꝛouost sent vnto ꝑ cytye of Laon, and there put to the bysshoppes pꝛyson. But whan ꝑ comōs of ꝑ sayd cytye harde of suche a mā there beyng pꝛysoner, that wolde haue betrayed theyꝛ cytie/they assembled thē in great multitude, & wold haue bꝛoken the pꝛysō to ꝑ ende to haue slayn hym. But they were so pacyently aūswered by the bysshoppes officers, ꝑ they retourned vnto theyꝛ houses.

Vpon the moꝛow folowyng, to ceasse ꝑ rumour of ꝑ peple/he was bꝛought vnto his iugement, & there condemned foꝛ his dyuerse vnto perpetual pꝛyson. And moꝛe thereunto was added, ꝑ foꝛ his moꝛe diffamy & shame, he shulde be sette in a tumbꝛel vpon hygh bareheded, that of all people he myght be seen/& so with moste shame full instrumentes lad thꝛoughe the hygh stretes of ꝑ cytye, and bꝛought agayn vnto ꝑ bysshopes pꝛyson, and there to remayne foꝛ terme of lyfe.

But he was nat fer in such maner cōueyed by ꝑ officers frō ꝑ Gaole, but the cōmons fyl vpon hym with crye, & castyng of myꝛe & stones/that oꝛ he were halfe way lad of hys cꝛuel pꝛogresse, he was stoned to deth/and after his body buryed within a maroys nere vnto the sayd cytye.

And shoꝛtely after at Parys was done to cruell deth a cytezyn of ꝑ sayd citie, which entended to haue betrayed the sayd cytye of Parys. Foꝛ ꝑ which treason he was fyꝛst dismēbꝛed of legges & armes, and after hāged by the nek vpon the gybet of Parys.

In the same yere aboute ꝑ feest of sayne Johñ Baptyst/ꝑ Englyshmen ꝑ had holdē the towne & castell called the roch of Ayran in Bꝛytayn, by the terme of two yeres passed, at this season they were besieged & fiercely assauted by syꝛ Charles de Blops and his

xx. frendes

frendes / in so furyous maner ꝑ they rent wyth great ordenaunce dyuers places of the castell walles / & in ꝓcesse threwe downe the rofe of a chãbre where the wyfe of the capytayne of the castell lay in her chyld bed, & so ferre put in fere, that the rulers of the towne and castell graũted to delyuer the towne & castell to ꝑ sayd syr Charles, wyth that they myghte departe with theyr lyues & goodes / ꝑ whyche offer to hys payne & charge he refused. For in shorte tyme after, syr Thomas of Agorñ an englysshe knyghte wyth a stroge company of archers & other sowdyours, rescowed the sayd towne & castell. And after lõge fyght and great daũger, as by lõge ꝓces is declared in the Frẽche story / ꝑ sayd syr Thomas toke the sayde Charles de Bloys ꝓysoner, and slewe many of hys lordes, as before is shortely touched in the ende of the.xxii. yere of kyng Edwarde. After whych victory thus opteyned, & hys ꝓysoners put in suer keppynge, he toke ꝑ ordenaũce of the duke left in ꝑ felde wyth other pyllage, & put it wythin the towne & castell aforesayd. And for ꝑ pyllages and mẽ of the coũtre there about, had ayde the duke agayne the towne and castel / therfore the sayd syr Thomas punysshed the sayd pyllages and ruralles by greuous fynes, & helde thẽ in great seruytude and daunger / and ouer ꝑ slewe many of theym, & many they helde as drudges & captyues. And thys done the Englysshmen repayred agayne the walles and suche other places as were before tyme beten downe by force of the sayd syege & strengthed it in theyr best maner.

IT was nat longe after ꝑ kyng Philippe at the requeste of the coũtre, sent thyder the lord of Caroli wyth a stronge army / to whome also great multytude of the people of that countre resorted. wyth whose ayde the sayd lorde assayled the sayd towne & castell by.ii. dayes contynuell. But the Englysshmẽ defended them selfe vyguously / and threwe vpõ theyr enmyes hote boylynge oyles and other gresys, with fyre coles & hote asshes, wherwith they greued theyr enemies paynfully.

Thus cõtynuyng the siege / meanes of treaty were offered and cõdyscended to yelde the towne, with condicyõ that they myght saufely depart with theyr lyues and goodes / but the Frẽchemen and Bryons wolde nat to it be agreable. Than the assaute began of new. And the lord of Caroñ to encourage hys sowdyours, henge a purse and therein.l. scutes of golde vpon a sperys ende / and cryed wyth lowde voyce, that who that fyrste entred the towne, shulde haue the sayde l. scutes of golde. whan the iannays or sowdyours of the cytye of Jeane and of the cytye of Italye, harde the ꝓmyse of theyr cheuytayne / a certayne of theym with longe ppcarses and sharpe approched theym vnto ꝑ wallys / and so demeaned them, that in lesse than.v. houres they myned so the wall, that there fyll thereof as tellyfyeth the sayde Frenche cronycle the lengthe of.l. fote. By reason wherof entred fyrste the Jannays / & after the hole hoste. The whych without compassyon or pyte slewe man, woman, & chylde that came in theyr wayes, nat sparynge the chylder that souked vpon the mothers brestes / & spoyled and robbed the towne, euery man gettynge what he myght to his owne aduauntage. And whanne the Frẽchmẽ and Bryons had thus myserably slayne many Englysshmẽ, & also Bryõs & other inhabytaũtes of the towne / they than assayled the castel to ꝑ which was fled vpõ.ii. Cs. of

Englysshmẽ

Englyshmē. After dyuers assautes it was offered by the sowdyours of the castell, ꝑ they wolde yelde the castell they? lyues and goodes saued. And fi nally it was agreed, they? bodies only to departe, & to be cōueyed .x. miles vpon they? waye towarde such place as they wolde appoynt. vpō ꝑ which appoyntement .ii. knyghtes Bry tons ꝑ is to saye sy? Syluester de la Fulle and sy? wyllm̄ de Stratton receyued them in they? cotes, and cōueyed thē with great payne & nat without losse of some. For they? enemies of ꝑ hoste caste stones at theym, and bete them so with they? staues, that dyuers of theym dyed / & the remenaunt were brought nere vnto a castell than in the power of Englysshemen, named Quyntyne.

But whan the commōs of ꝑ town there nere, harde of the cōmynge of suche Englysshmen vnder sauke con duyt, the whiche before in the batayl of the roche of Arian where sy? Char les de Bloys was taken, had slayne they? lord, that is to meane the lorde of Quyntyne / anone they issued oute of the towne / and for they fonde lytel resystence in they? guydes, they slew theym there except one, whych was capytayne of the Englysshmē / whych one of ꝑ sayd knyghtes caused to be set vpon hys horse, & so fledde frō the peryll. And whā the cruell Brytons had thus shamefully slayne the En glysshmen / they gadered ꝑ carions vp on an heye, & suffered theym there so to lye, to ꝑ ende that beastes & foules myght deuoure them. And in shorte tyme after, ꝑ erle of Flaūdres by mea nes of the Frēch kyng left the dough ter of kynge Edwarde, and was maryed vnto the doughter of ꝑ duke of Brabant.

In the .xx. yere of Phylyp / ꝑ town of Calays was goten, lyke as the cir cumstaūce therof is declared in the xxii. yere of kyng Edward the thyrd. And in the same yere the mortalite or sykenes, whych after reygned in En glande reygned nowe fercuntely in Fraunce, and moste specially in the cytye of Aupnyon / by force wherof ꝑ thyrde parte of the people of ꝑ cytye dyed. And frome thens it came vnto saint Denys, and so vnto Parys. In which cooste it was so fercunt, ꝑ there dyed in those .ii. townes ouer the nō bre of .lvi. M. within ꝑ space of .x. viii monethes.

And in thys yere the dolphyne of Vyen named sy? ymberte, solde hys dolphynage vnto the Frēch kyng / & became a freer at Lyon vpō the rosne of the order of the freer prechours or blacke freers.

In the .xxi. yere of thys Phylyp / Charles the fyrste begotten sonne of Johū duke of Normādy eldest sonne of thys Phylip, toke possession of the sayd dolphynage of Vyen. And in the moneth of August folowyng, dyed ꝑ ducheſſe of Normādy and mother of the sayd Charles. And in the moneth of December folowynge, dyed dame Jane quene of Fraūce & doughter of Robert duke of Burgoyn. And in thys yere was the treason wrought by sy? Godfrey de Charny, to haue a gayne wonne the towne of Calays / lyke as I to you before haue shewed in the .xxiii. yere of kyng Edward ꝑ iii. And in ꝑ moneth of Januaty next ensuynge .x. day of the same / kyng Phylyp spoused hys .ii. wyfe Blan che, somtyme ꝑ doughter of ꝑ quene of Nauerne lately dysceased, whyche was syster vnto the erle of Foyse. whyche espousayles were secretely done in the manour of Robert erle of Bray. And so the sayde kyng Philip was wydowe frome the .xii. daye of December to the nynthe daye of Ja nuary, whyche was by the space of .xxviii. dayes. And vpon the .x. day of

the moneth of Febꝛuary / Johñ duke of Noꝛmandy eldeſte ſonne of thys Philippe, ſpouſed hys ſeconde wyfe Johanne Countelle of Bolopgne, at a towne called Myriaux nere vnto Meulene. And ſo he moꝛned foꝛ hys wyfe whych was named ꝑ good Duchelle of Noꝛmandy, by the terme of vi. moneths & .ii. dayes lackynge.

In the .xxii. yere of kyng Philip & moneth of July / ſyꝛ Thomas de Agoꝛne befoꝛnamed, was by chaũce medly ſlayne of a Bꝛytõ knyght called ſyꝛ Rauſe de Cuours. And vpon the .xxiii. daye of Auguſt folowynge, dyed ſyꝛ Phylyp de Ualoys kyng of Fraũce / whã he had reygned ouer ꝑ Frẽchmen in great veracio & trouble by the ſpace of .xxii. yeres lackynge .v. monethes & odde dayes / and was after enterred at ſaynt Denis by his fyꝛſte wyfe / & left after hi Johñ duke of Noꝛmandy foꝛ hys heyꝛe.

Of kynge Johñ.

IOhñ the fyꝛſte of that name, & ſonne of Phylippe de Ualoys / began to raygne ouer the Frenchmẽ, in the moneth of Auguſt & yere of ouꝛ loꝛd .M. CCC. and .l. & .xxiiii. yere of Edwarde the .iii. than kyng of Englande / & was cꝛowned at Raynes the xxvi. day of Septembꝛe folowynge wyth dame Johanne hys wyfe. In tyme of the whych ſolempnite, kyng Johñ dubbed hys eldeſte ſonne Dolphyne of Uyen, and Lowys hys .ii. ſonne erle of Alẽſon, knyghtes, with other noble men.

And vpon the .xvi. daye of Nouẽbꝛe folowynge / ſyꝛ Rauffe erle of Ew and cõſtable of Guynes whã it was Frenche, the whych was newly commen out of Englande where he had ben longe pꝛyſoner / was accuſed of treaſon, and ſo commaũded vnto pꝛyſon at Parys. within whyche pꝛyſon he was ſhoꝛtly after byheded in ꝑ pꝛeſence of the duke of Burgoyne and other nobles.

In the thyꝛde yere of kyng Johñ & viii. day of January / Charles kyng of Nauerne cauſed to be ſlayne within the towne of Aygle in Noꝛmandy ſyꝛ Charles de Spayne cõſtable of Fraũce. Foꝛ the whych murdꝛe ſourdyd gꝛeat warre betwene kynge Johan & the ſayde kynge of Nauerne / whych contynued many yeres after, natwithſtãdyng that the ſayd kynge of Nauerne had maryed the doughter of ꝑ ſayd kyng Johñ. Thã by mo ditacio of frendes, a peas was dꝛyuẽ betwene theym / ſo that kyng Johan ſhuld gyue vnto ꝑ kyng of Nauerne, foꝛ contẽtacyon of certayne ſummes of money yet owynge vnto hym foꝛ the dower of hys wyfe, certayne landes within the duchy of Noꝛmandy / and ouer that the Frẽche kyng ſhuld pardone all ſuche perſones as were conſentynge to the deth of the conſtable befoꝛe murdꝛed. After whych treaty thus concluded / the kynge of Nauerne vnder aſſuraunce of hoſtage came vnto kyng Johñs pꝛeſence at Parys. And after he had taried there a ſeaſon / he departed with dyſſymulacion on eyther partye vſed, as after ſhall appere.

In the .iiii. yere of kyng Johñ / ſyꝛ Godfrey de Harecourt, whych wyth hys ſonne & other hadde ben conſentynge vnto the deth of the conſtable of Fraunce, were reconſpied agayne to the kynge. The whyche enſenſed hym agayne the kynge of Nauerne by meanes of theyꝛ ſiniſter repoꝛt / ſo that the peace betwene theym befoꝛe cõcluded, was dyſapoynted & bꝛoke. And ſoone vpon thys, ſyꝛ Robert de Loꝛꝛe that was chamberlayn vnto kynge Johñ, auoyded the courte foꝛ fere, leſte the ſayde ſyꝛ Godfrey hadde ſhewed of hym any thynge to the kynge / and ſo rode vnto the

kynge

kynge of Nauerne in Normandy. After whose commyng, the kynge of Nauerne departed shortly thens and sped hym towarde Iuynyon. It was nat longe after that the kyng of Nauerne was departed out of Normãdy but that kyng Johñ sped hym thider, & sealed all the landes that the kyng of Nauerne had wythin that duchy/ and putte officers and rulers in hys castelles & townes suche as hym lyked, and discharged the other / excepte. vi. castelles, that is to saye Eurour, le Pont Audemer, Chirebourt, Ganerap, Iuranches, & Wartaygn/ the whych were holden by the seruaũtes of the kynge of Nauerne, & men of Nauerne borne.

In the moneth of January folowynge/ syr Robert de Lorrye abouenamed, vnder safe conduyte came vnto kyng Johñ to Parys, and there was to hym in proces reconsyled. And in thys yere were the artycles of peace betwene the kynges of Englãde & of Fraũce prolonged, tyll the feaste of saynt Johñ Baptyst nert ensuynge/ as before in ỹ ende of the .xxviii. yere of kyng Edwarde is more at lengthe declared.

In thys. v. yere of kyng Johan & moneth of Apryl/ he sent syr Charles hys sonne dolphyne of Vyenne into Normandy, to aske ayde of the Normannes agaynst the kynge of Nauerne. The whyche graunted vnto hym iii. M. men at theyr charge for. iii. monethes. And in the moneth of August folowynge, the kynge of Nauerne accompanyed with .ii. M. sowdiours, came vnto the castell of Constãtyne, & there tarryed with the sayd people. wyth whose cõmynge the sowdiours of the forenamed. vi. castelles were so well comforted, that they robbed and pylled al ỹ coũtre about thẽ. And som of the sayde sowdiours came vnto a castell of ỹ Frẽch kynges named Cõbet, & wan it by strength, & after bytayled & mãned it in moste warly wyse/ & dyd many other thynges to ỹ Frẽche kyngs great displeasure. The whych warre thus cõtynuyng, by mediacio of frẽdes the kynge of Nauarr rode vnto ỹ dolphyn to a towne called the Vale de Ruepll/ where they metyng, and eyther to other shewyng louyng coũtenaunce, vpõ ỹ. xviii. day of Septẽbre they togyder toke theyr way toward Parys. where the kyng of Nauarne was brought vnto the Frenche kynges presence.. where he excused hym of all trespalles done agayn the kyng syne ỹ tyme of ỹ last accord/ besechyng ỹ kyng to be good and gracious lorde vnto hym, and he shulde be to hym as a sonne oughte to be vnto the fader, & as a trew man vnto hys souerayne lorde. And after thẽ kyng by ỹ meanes of ỹ duke of Athenelle, forgaue vnto hym hys offẽces, and promysed to stãde hys good and gracyous lord / and so eyther departed from other in louyng maner.

And soone after kyng Johñ gaue vnto ỹ dolphyn of Vyen syr Charles hys eldest sonñ ỹ duchy of Normãdy for ỹ whyche he dyd vnto hys father homage, in ỹ house of mayster Martyn Chanõ of Parys, in ỹ cloyster of the mynster called Notredame. And by auctoryte of a parlyamẽt holdẽ in the citie of Parys, was graũted vnto kyng Johñ of the thre astates of hys realme/ ỹ is to meane the spiritualte, the lorde and nobles, and ỹ hedes or rulers of cytyes and good townes of hys realme, that he shulde haue. xxx. M. mẽ waged for a yere, for to defẽde hys auncyent enemye the kynge of England. For purupaũce wherof certayne persones of the sayd. iii. astates assẽbled shortly after, to prouide for ỹ leuieng of that great sũme of money

After whyche prouysion or selling agreed or concluded by the sayde

xx. iii. persones

persones, and comyssyoners sente out to dyuers cooستes and good townes for the leuyeng of the sayde money/in the towne of Arras fyll a dissencyō betwene the ryche & the poore of that towne/ the poore sayeng that the ryche men had layde all the burthen vpon the poore men, & them selfe bare lyttell charge or none. For thys fyrst began great altercacion of wordes, & after enssuyed strokes & stripes, so that of the syders and chyef burgeses of the towne were .xvii. men slayne. And the day folowynge they slewe .iiii. mo / & banyssyed dyuers þ at that tyme were absent & out of the towne. And so the towne of Arras rested as than in the gydynge of the poore artyficers of that towne.

IN the .xi. yere of the reygne of kynge Johan and moneth of Marche, he beynge accōpanyed with a secret meny, before þ daye departed from the towne of Manuyle / & rode streyghte, he & hys lordes beyng armed, vnto the castell of Rouan/ & entred sodaynly into the same. where he fande in the chyefe hall of the castell, syr Charles hys eldest sonne duke of Normandy, Charles kynge of Nauerne, syr Johñ erle of Harecourt, þ lordes of Preaux and of Graunple, & the lorde of Clermoūt, syr Lowys & syr Guyllyam de Harecourt brethern of the forsayd erle, syr Fryquet de Fryquante, the lorde of Tournebu, syr Wanbuc de Wamesmares, with Colinet Doublet and Johñ de Pountalu esquyres.

The whych lordes and knyghtes the kyng toke at dyner within þ sayd halle/ & them toke sodaynly, & dyuers of them put vnder sure keppyng. And as soone as the kyng had there take a small and short repaste/ he with his sonnes & other nobles in hys cōpany toke theyr horsez rode into a felde vpon a backsyde of the castell/ whether shortly after were brought in bandes the forsayde erle of Harecourt, the lorde of Graunple, þ forsayd syr Wābue, and Colinet Doublet. whyche iiii. were there beheded/ and after the bodyes of them drawen to the gybet of Roan, & there hanged / and theyr heddes set ouer them vpon the same gybet. At the whyche tyme of the execucion of heddyng of the sayd .iiii. persones, the Frenche kyng as before is sayde was present in proper person. After the whyche execucion, þ kynge vpon the morowe folowynge delyuered many of the other prysoners/ so þ there remayned no mo as prysoners but .iii. that is the kyng of Nauerne, syr Fryquet de Fryquant, & Johñ de Pountalu/ the whych were sent vnto Paris. where the kynge was kepte in the castel of Louure, and the other ii. in the chastelet. In whiche tyme of hys imprysonemēt/ syr Phylype brother to the kynge, wyth syr Godfrey de Harecourt vncle to the erle lately heded, helde certayn castelles in Normandy/ and came with theyr powers into the countre of Constantyne, and helde it maugre the Frenche kynges wyll and pleasure.

In the moneth of Apryll, syr Arnolde de Denham than Marshall of Fraūce, rode by þ kynges sond vnto Arras/ & there without great dissour baunce of the towne, toke vpō an hūdreth of suche as before had made þ former rebellion within the same. And vpon the day folowyng/ he caused to be heded in the market place vpon .xx. of the same / & the remenaūt he sent vnto pryson there to abyde þ kynges pleasure.

In thys tyme and season was the noble prynce Edwarde at Burdeaux & warred vpon the Frenche kynges landes, lyke as it is before to you shewed in the .xii. yere of kyng Edward

the

the thyrde.

And in the.bii.yere of kyng Johñ, a begynnyng of the same, was the battayll of Poytyers. In ỹ whych kyng Johñ was taken prysoner of prynce Edwarde, & many of hys lordes take and slayne, as before in the.xxx. yere of the forsayd Edwarde is declared at lẽght. After the which scomfyture/ the duke of Normandy whyche hard ip escaped from the sayde batayl, entred the cytye of Parys the.xxix. daye of Septembre/ & called there a great coũsayll of ỹ thre astates of ỹ realme, and the.xv. daye of Octobre nexte ensuynge there to be assẽbled. At which daye the sayde duke wyth the sayd.iii. astates of the realme beyng in ỹ parlyament chambre/ Peter de la Forest archebysshop of Roan and chaũceler of Fraũce, declared there the greate myssortune that to the lande was lately falle, by the takyng of theyr hed and prynce/ and crowned theym by a lõge oracio to ayde & assiste euery mã after hys power, for the rebelluerp of theyr prynce agayne.

Whereunto it was answered for theyr clergy or spyrytual/ by the mouth of mayster Johñ de Carone thã archebysshop of Raynes/ and for the nobles of ỹ Chyualry of Fraũce, by the mouth of syr Phylype duke of Orleaunce and brother vnto kynge Johñ/ & for the commõs of the good townes of Fraũce, by the mouthe of Steppn Martell burgeys of Parys and prouost of the same, that eyther of them shulde helpe to the vttermost of theyr powers/ & prayed that they myght haue conuenient leyser to coũ sayll and commõ for prouysyõ of the the same/ the whyche to theym was graunted.

Than the sayde thre astates helde theyr coũsayll at the fryer mynours or gray fryers in Parys, by the space of.xv. dayes. In whyche season they appoynted amonge theym to the nõbre of .l. persones, to take a vyew and make serche of certayne thynges thã myslad and cupll gyded within the realme. The whyche.l. persones wh ã they had appoynted.vi. of them seite to go vnto the duke/ they in ỹ names of ỹ other made requeste vnto ỹ duke, that he wolde kepe secrete such thynges as they entended to shewe vnto hym. which requeste he graũted. & thã they shewed vnto the duke that the realme before tyme hadde ben myssegupded by offycers/ and except that remedye for it were shortly foũden, it shulde stãde in greate parell to be loste. wherfore they besought hym to dyscharge all suche as they wolde name vnto hym, & ouer ỹ to forfayte theyr goodes vnto the kynges vse.

And fyrst they named mayster Peter de la Forest archebisshop of Roan & chaũceler of Fraũce, syr Symõde de Bucy chyfe counceloure of the kyng and chyefe presydente of the parlyament, syr Roberte de Lorrys that before tyme was chaumberlayne vnto the kynge, syr Nycholas Brake knyghte and mayster of the kynges paleys, Engueram of the Celer Burtoys of Parys and vnder tresourer of Fraũce, Johñ Pyll burtoys, also sourtaygn mayster of the money and mayster of thaccomptys of the kyng, and Johñ Chãnean de Charters treasourer of the kynges warres. All whyche offycers the sayde persones wolde that they shuld be dyscharged of all royall offyces for euer. Also the sayd constytuted persones, wolde ỹ the kynge of Nauerne were delyuered free trõ pryson/ also that he hym selfe wolde be cõtented to be aduertysed and coũceyled by suche as they wolde appoynte vnto hym, that is to saye.iiii. prelates, xii. knyghtes, and xii. burtoys.

The whych .xxbiii. persons shuld xx. iiii. haue

Chro

shulde haue auctoryte to rule and ordeyne all thynges necessarye for the realme, and to set in and put oute all offycers apperteynyng to the realm / wyth dyuerse other requestes whych vnto the duke were nothyng agreable. Upon the whyche requestes, the duke gaue answere ꝑ he wolde gladly fele the opynyon of hys coũcyll, & vpon that shape vnto them some reasonable answere. But fyrste he desyred of them to knowe what ayde the iii. astates wolde gyue vnto hym, for the delyuery of hys father. wherunto it was answered, that the clergy had graũted a dyme & a halfe to be payed in a yere, wyth that that they maye haue licence of the pope/and ꝑ lordes asmoche to be leuyed of theyr lãdes / and ꝑ comõs the.x.peny of theyr moueable gooddes. Thã vpõ the morne folowynge within ꝑ palays of Louure, ꝑ duke assembled hys coũsayl/ & there shewed vnto them the desyre & requeste of the.iii. astates. wherupon were made many reasons/and many messages sent betwene the duke and them, to refourme some parte of the sayde artycles. But it was fermely answerred by theym, that excepte he wolde refourme the sayde defautes, & cõferme hym vnto theyr myndes for the comõ welth of all the lande / they wolde nat ayde hym with theyr goodes, lyke as they had to hym shewed. wherfore the duke by secrete meanes sent letters vnto his father, shewyng vnto hym the circumstaũce of all hys matter / the whyche wrote vnto hym agayne, that in no wyse he shulde be agreable vnto the sayde requestes.

Thã the duke to ꝑ ende that he wolde nat ꝑ these maters shuld be towched in the open parlyamẽt, sent for suche persones as were the chyefe rulers of the sayde.iii. astates / so that to hym came for the clergy the archebyshop pes of Raynes and of Lyõs, and the bisshop of Laõ/ & for the lordes came syr warayne de Lucebourgh, syr Johan de Comflãs Marshall of Champeyne, and syr Johñ de Pyguenp thã ruler or gouernoure of Artoys/ & for the comõs Stephan Marteil than prouost of the marchaũtes of Parys, Charles Culake, with other of other good townes.

Than the duke shewed vnto them of certayne newes that he had lately receyued from the kynge hys father/ and that done he asked theyr aduices whether it were beste ꝑ daye to shewe theyr requestes openly in the parliament chaumber, or elles to deferre it for that daye. And lastlye after many reasons made, it was agreed, that it shulde be deferred tyll the .iiii. daye after/at the whyche.iiii. daye ꝑ duke wyth the other assembled in the parlyament chambre. At whyche season the duke sayd that he myght nat entende that day to here and argue the sayd requestes, for certayn tydynges that he had lately receyued from his father, and from his vncle the Emperour of Almayne/of the which he thã shewed some openly, and after dyssolued for that daye the counsayll.

In the moneth of Octobre, ꝑ.iii. astates of the prouynce of Languedocke, by the auctoryte of the erle of Armenake thã lieutenaũt for ꝑ kyng assembled for to make an ayde for ꝑ kynges delyueraũce. And fyrste they agreed to puruey at theyr proprre costes.b.C.mẽ of armys, wyth a seruyture to euerych spere/ and ouer that a.M. sowdyours on horsebacke, and a.M. of arblasters, wyth.ii. M. of other called paũsyers in Frenche / all whiche to be waged for an hole yere. The speres to haue for them & theyr custrum euery daye halfe a floreyn, & euery sowdyour and arblaster. viii. floryns for a moneth, and ꝑ paũsiers after the same rate.

Also

Also it was to;ther o;deyned by the sayd thre estates of Lāguedocke, that no man shulde were any furrys of any greate p;yce/and that women shulde leue the ryche aty;e of they; heddys, and were neyther perle no; golde vppon them, no; sylver vppon ther gy;dels, so longe as the kynge remayned p;ysoner. Also that all ma ner of mynstrelys fo; ꝑ sealon shuld be put to sylence/ wyth dyuers other thynges fo; ꝑ weale of that p;ouince whyche wolde aske a longe leysoure to w;yte.

Upon all so wlyn daye o; the seconde daye of Nouember, the duke of No;mandye by the aduyce of hys councepll, dyssolupd the coūcepll of the thre estates assembled at Parys / and commaunded euery man to retourne vnto his own, with out effecte growynge of they; longe councepll o; assemble. wherwith ma ny of the sayd persons were greuous ly mysconten/sayeng amonge them selfe that they apercepued well, that thys was done by the duke, to the en tent that the requestes by them deuy sed shuld not take place/but that the olde mysgouernaunce shulde contynue, lyke as it beto;tymes had done. wherfo;e dyuers of them assembled after agayne at the grape freres, and there made out dyuers coppes of the sayde requestes / to the ende that ep ther of them myghte bere them into they; countreys, and there to shewe them vnto the good townes. And all be it that the duke after this coūcepll thus dyssolupd, asked ayde of ꝑ cyty of Parys and other good townes to mayntayne his warrys/he was play nely answered that they myghte not ayde hym without the sayd thre estates were agayne reassembled, & that the graunte of the ayde myghte passe by they; authority/wherunto ꝑ duke in no wyse wolde be agreable.

In the moneth of Nouember afo;e sayde/sy; Robert de Clermont than lyeutenaunt fo; the duke in No;mā dy, fought wyth sy; Philyp bro;ther vnto the kynge of Nauerne, and sy; Godfrey de Harcourt, the which then toke party agayne the Frenche kyng fo; the deth of his neuewe befo;e put to deth by kynge Johñ. The whych knyghtes wyth other helde the mo;e parte of the countre of Constantyne within No;mandye, maugre the dukes power. In this sayde fyghte the victo;y tourned vnto the Frenche partye/so that the sayde sy; Philyp was chasyd, and sy; Godfrey de Har court slayne, with .viii. hūdreth men of that party. And the fourth daye of December folowyng, was the castell de la Mount nere vnto Roan, which by a longe season had ben in the rule of the fo;enamed sy; Philyp, gyuen vp by appoyntement/the whyche by the dukes so wdyours had ben besye ged from the moneth of July to that daye/so that than the holders of the sayd Castell departed wyth all they; goodes, and .vi. thousande frankes fo; a;reward fo; the peldyng vp of ꝑ sayd castell. A franke is in value af ter sterlyng money .ii.s. o; therupon.

Upon ꝑ .x. day of December were p;oclaymed at Parys certayne coy nes and values of money newly o;dey ned by the duke, and his coūcepl. wyth the whyche p;oclamacyon the comons of the cyty were greuously amouyd. And fo; refo;macyon the p;ouoste of the marchauntes wyth other, pode vpon the seconde day fo lowynge vnto the castell o; palays of Louure, there to treat with sy; Le wys erle of Angeou bro;ther vnto the duke and his lyeutenaunt whyle the sayde duke was gone vnto the cyty of Meaus, there to speke wyth Char les de Bohemye o; of Beamme then

emperour

emperour of Almayne & vncle vnto the sayde duke. where the sayde prouoste wyth the other made requeste vnto the erle, that he wolde cease the vse of that money. And yf not / they wolde so demeane them that it shuld not be suffered to be put forth nor taken within ꝑ cytye. wherupon it was answered by the erle, that he wolde take aduyce of hys councell, & vpon the morowe gyue to thé an answere. Upon the daye folowynge/the sayde prouost wyth a greate company of ꝑ cytye retourned. At whyche season the erle in curteyse maner, desyred them to retourne that other daye, for as moche as yet he had not sufficyentely commonyd with his cõcell. Upon the morne the sayd prouost retourned wyth a moche greater company. where after longe debatynge of the mater, it was agreed by ꝑ sayd erle and prouost and hys company, that the money shuld be stopped and not to be put fourth, tyll they hadde further knowlege of the dukes pleasure / for knowlege whereof the erle sent forth mességers i all spedy wyse.

And in thys passetyme, Peter de la Forest archebysshop of Roan and chaunceller of Fraunce was made & publyshed a cardynal. And the xxiiii. daye of the moneth of January, the duke retourned vnto Parys wyth ꝑ sayd cardynall in hys company/the whych for reuerence of the cardynall, was fette into the cytye wyth processyon and other ceremonyes, as well of the clergy as of the cytesyns. The xxvi. daye of the moneth of January the prouoste of the marchauntes of Parys with other of the cyty, apered before the dukes councell at sayncte Germayns. where it was desyred of the sayd prouoste, that he shulde suffer the forsayde money to ronne and be curraunt thorough the cytye. The whyche the sayde prouoste wyth hys company vtterly denyed / and after many greate and bolde wordes, departed from the sayde councell in greate ire/ and after they retourne vnto the cytye, encensyd so the compynalty, that they set a parte all werkmanshyp and occupacyõ in shyttyng in theyr shoppes, and drewe vnto theym they armour and harnesse. whan the duke was enfourmed of thys murmour of the compynaltye of the cytye, he sent vnto the prouoste/ commaundyng hym strayghtly that the kynges peace were kepte wythin the cytye/and ouer that, that he with a certeyne of the cytesyns shulde apere before hym in the palayes of Louure vppon the morowe folowynge at an houre assygned. At which houre the sayde prouoste wyth hys company came vnto Louure, and so were conueyed into the parlyament chaumber, where the duke wyth hys councell was than present. Than ꝑ duke after certayne chalengys made vnto the prouoste for hys obstynacy in thys mater, and mysledyng of the compynaltye of the cytye/ sayde vnto hym, that all be it that the kynge by hys prerogatyue myght at hys pleasure and for his auauntage, make his moneys whan he wolde, & so to suffer them to be curraũt thorough his realme: yet for the weale and ease of hys subiectes, consyderynge theyr manyfolde and late charges/he was cõtent that at thys season thys newe money shulde be spared/and that the iii. estates shuld be agayn assembled/ & that they shulde depryue all suche persons than beryng offices, as they shulde thynke preiudycyall to the realme/ & ouer that to ordeyne suche money as myght be benefycyall for ꝑ land. Of all whiche graũtes, ꝑ prouost, to ꝑ entent that he myght of authorite shewe them vnto the compynaltye of the cytye desyred wrytyng.

The

The whyche the duke to appeale the people, though it were some deale cõtrary hys mynde and pleasure, graũted vnto hys request. For the whych graunt, dyuers of the sayd offycers, as the chaunceller or cardynall and other absentyd them selfe, and came not in Parys by a tracte of tyme after. The.xxv. daye of January ensuynge/the duke at the requeste of the sayde prouost, sent certeyne offycers vnto the house of syr Symonde de Bucy, and of syr Nycholas Braque, and of Enguerran of the Celer, and of Johñ Pyylle, whyche before wyth other were accusyd of mysgouernaunce of the realme / whose houses were by the sayd offycers kepte, and inuentuaryes made of suche goodes as than remayned wythin the sayde houses. And that done, the duke sent out commyssyons, that the thre estates shulde reassemble at Parys the xv. daye of Februarye next folowyng/ whyche was obserued and kepte.

Whan ỹ sayd.iii. estates were agayne assembled in the parliament chaumber at Parys, in the presence of the duke and hys brethern wyth dyuers other nobles of Fraũce/maysster Robert Coke bysshop of Laon, by the cõmaundement of the sayd duke, made a longe preposycyon of the mysgouernynge of the kynge and the lande by the meane of yll offycers/ as well by chaungynge of the moneys as other many vnlefull exchys and taskys, to the greate impouerysshynge of the comynalte of the reame, greate dysclaunder to the kynge, and to the synguler enrychynge and auauncement of the sayd offycers. Wherfore the.iii. estates prayen, and specyally the poore comons, that all such offycers may be remoued from theyr offyces/ and other that shall be thought more benefycyall for the kynge and hys realme, to be admitted. Of the whych the cardynall was noted for principall/and other to ỹ noumbre of .xvi. wherof some were tyghte nere vnto the duke.

After whyche preposicyon or oracyõ thus by the sayd bysshop ended / syr Johñ de Pyquigny in the name of the iii. estates, offered that the sayde.iii. estates shuld gyue vnto the kyng.xxx.M.mé for an holepere/ wyth ỹ that all thynges myght after that daye be ordered as the bysshop had before deuysed. All whyche artycles were vnto them by the duke graũted. And inconuenyently all such offycers as they before had named, were clerely auoyded/and other such as by ỹ sayd.iii. estates were thought moste necessary, were put and chosen to theyr roumes/excepte that some of the olde, as maisters of thaccomptes and some of the presydentes & maysters of the requestes, were holden in for a tyme, to practes & shewe vnto ỹ new how they shuld ordre and guyde the sayd offyces.

And the.xxvi. daye of the moneth of Marche was a newe money proclaymed thorough Parys, suche as the sayde.iii. estates had newly deuysed. Upon the.vi. day of Apryll was proclaymed in Parys, that ỹ people shulde nat paye suche subsydes as ỹ iii. estates had ordeyned for the wagynge of.xxx.M. men afore sayde or for the kynges kynaũce/and also that the sayde.iii. estates after that daye shulde no more assemble for eny causes or maters before touched, tyll they had farther knowlege of ỹ kynges pleasure. For the whych proclamacion the cytezyns of Parys were greuously amoued agayne the bysshop of Sẽs, the erle of Ewe cousyn Germayne to the kynge, and agayn the erle Cãcarnyle. By whose meanes they sayde thys proclamacyon was

was purchasyd. And treuth it is that the sayd archbysshop of Sens wyth the sayd.ii. erlys, were sent from the kynge from Burdeaux yet there beynge, to the entent that they shuld se the sayde proclamacyon put in vre. But so soone as the sayd proclamacyon was made /they herynge of the murmour of the people of the cytye, sped them thens shortely after. Then vpon this ꝑ comons wared so wyld, that they lefte theyr occupacyons & drewe them to cõuentyculys and cõpanyes, and hadde many vnsyttyng wordes by the kynge and hys counsayle. wherof in auoydynge of inconuenyency/the duke commaunded a watche to be kepte wythin the cytye bothe by daye and by nyght / and certayne gates of the cytye kept shytte, and the remenaunt watchyd wyth men of armes. Upon the eyght daye of Aprill then beynge Easter eupn, a nother proclamacyon was made all contrary to that other / by vertue wherof it was charged, that the forsayde subsydie shulde be leuyed, and that also the thre estates shulde reassemble at Parys the.xv. daye after Easter/and there to procede vpon all such maters as before were by them begonne. Upon the.vi. day of Aprill the Frenche kynge shypped at Burdeaux and so was conueyed into Englande, lyke as before is shewed in ꝑ xxvi. yere of kynge Edwarde. And aboute mydsomer folowyng, ꝑ duke of Lancaster, whyche by a longe season had lyen before a towne in Bretayne named Rosne, brake vp hys syege/takyng of them of that towne for a fynaũce.lx.M.scutys of golde. A scute is worth.xl.d.sterling. About the feste of Mary Magdalene in the moneth of July, controuersy and variaunce began to aryse amonge the parsõs assygned for the thre estates. wherof the cause was, for so myche as the sellyng which they had auowed & selled for the.xxx.M.men, wolde nat extende vnto the sũme by large & great sũmes. So ꝑ the clergy answered ꝑ they wolde paye no more than they were fyrst selled vnto. And in lyke maner answered such as were apoynted for the lordes & for the good townes. wherfore ꝑ archebysshop of Raynes, whych before was one of the chefe rulers of them, refused theyr partye and drewe hym all to the duke. By meanes of whyche controuersy many of theyr actes fayled/ & suche as before were put out of theyr offyces, were agayne restored. About the myddel of Auguste, the duke sent for the prouost & Charles Culsake, wyth Johñ de la Ile/ the which bare ꝑ pryncipal rule within the cytye, and also were great sayers & doers in the assembles of the iii. astates, & had take vpon thẽ moch rule in ꝑ busynes/ so that moche of ꝑ busynes was ruled by them & theyr meanes. To whome the duke gaue strayght commaũdemente, that they shuld cease of theyr auctorities, & nat to deale any more with the rule of the realme, but onely to the good rule & gouernaũce of the cytye of Parys. And that done the duke rode aboute vnto dyuers good townes, & made request vnto them for ayde/and also to haue the money to be currant amõg them, whych as before is shewed the.x. daye of Decembre was at Parys proclaymed. But he sped lytle of hys purpose.

In thys meane whyle, the cytezyns of Parys of one wyl & mynde, offered before saynt Kempge a taper of wax of wonderfull lengthe and greatenesse / the whyche they ordeyned to brenne day and nyght whyle it wold laste. And shortely after they sent vnto the duke so plesaunt message, ꝑ he retourned agayne vnto the cytye / whome they receyued with all honor

and

and reuerence. And vpon the morow after hys retourne/ the prouoſt wyth certayne other of the cytye, ſhewed vnto the duke that they wolde make a greate ſhyfte for hym towarde the mayntenaunce of hys warres. And to bryng that mater to good concluſyon/ they beſought hym ꝑ he wolde aſſemble at Parys ſhortly, a certayn perſones of .rr. or .rrr. good townes there nexte adioynaunt. The whych was vnto thē graunted/ ſo ꝑ ſhortely after there aſſembled at Parys, vpō .lrr. perſones / the whyche helde theyr counſayll to gyther by ſundry days. Howe be it in the ende they ſhewed vnto the duke, that nothynge they myght bryng to effecte, without aſſemble of the .iii. aſtates/ & beſoughte hym that they myght be efte reaſſembled/ truſtyng that by theyr preſence the dukes mynde ſhulde be contente and ſatyſfyed.

Upon whyche requeſte the duke ſent hys cōmyſſiōs, chargyng ꝑ ſayd iii. aſtates to apere before hym at Parys, the wednyſday nexte folowynge ꝑ day of al ſayntes. And full fayne he was to do all thyng that the citezyns of Parys hym requyred to do/ for as teſtyfyeth the Frenche Cronycle, he was ſo bare of money that he hadde nat ſuffycyente to defende hys cotydyan charge.

IN the .viii. yere of kynge Johñ and wednyſday after Alhalowen day / the .iii. aſtates reaſſembled at Parys, and helde theyr counſayll within the blacke freers. During whych coūſayll the kyng of Nauerñ that longe had ben holden in pryſon wythin the caſtell of Alleux, was delyuered by the meanes of syr Johanne Pyquygny, than gouernoure of the countrey of Artthoys / and after conueyed by the ſayd Johñ vnto ꝑ town of Impas. whan ꝑ kyng of Nauerne was thus ſet at large/ anon his ſyſter and other of hys frendes made meanes vnto the duke of Normandy, for an vnyte & a peace to be had betwene them/ and by them a meane was fōnden, that the kyng with ſuch as were in hys company, ſhulde come vnder ſaufe conduyt to Parys to common with the duke. whā dyuers of the .iii. aſtates, as ſuch as were of Chāpeyn and Burgoyn, knewe of the comyng of the kyng of Nauerne vnto Parys/ they without leue takyng departed. And vpon the euyn of ſaynt Andrew the ſayd kynge entred Parys wyth a greate companye of men of armes. Amonge the wyche was the byſſhop of Parys, with many other of ꝑ ſayd cytye. Upon the morowe folowynge the daye of ſaynt Andrew/ the kynge entēdynge to ſhewe hys mynde vnto the comynalte of the cytye, cauſed an hyghe ſcaffolde to be made by ꝑ wall of ſaynt Germayn where he was lodged. where moche people beynge aſſembled, he ſhewed vnto them a lōge proceſſe of hys wrongefull enpryſonemente, and of the myſgydynge of the lande by meanes of ille officers, wyth many couerte wordes to ꝑ dyſhonoure of the Frenche kynge, and iuſtyfycacion of hym ſelfe and excuſynge of hys owne dedes, and ſo retourned into hys lodgyng.

Upon the thyrde daye of Decembber / the prouoſte wyth other of the cytye yode vnto the duke / and in the names of the good townes or commynaltyes of the ſame, requyred of hym that he wolde do vnto the kynge of Nauerne reaſon and iuſtyce.

To whome it was anſwered by ꝑ byſſhop of Laon, that the duke ſhuld nat allonly ſhewe vnto the kyng reaſon & iuſtyce/ but he ſhuld alſo ſhewe vnto hym frendely brotherhode,

yy. wyth

with all grace & curteſy. And all be it that at that ſeaſon, many of ỹ dukes coũſayll were preſent, to whome the gruyng of that anſwere had more cõuentently apperteyned thã to ỹ ſayde biſſhop/yet they were at that tyme in ſuche fere, that they durſte nat moue any thynge that ſhuld ſoũde cõtrary the diſpleaſure of the kynge of Nauerne or of the prouoſte & other. Thã it was agreed that vpon ỹ ſaterdaye folowynge, the kynge and the duke whyche as yet had nat ſpoken togyther, ſhuld mete at the place of the ſyſter of the ſayd kyng. where they met with vnfrendely coũtenaũce/ & after they had communed there a lõge ſeaſon, departed with litle loue or charite. And vpon the mũday folowyng, were ſhewed vnto the duke & hys coũſayle, certayne requeſtes delyred by the kyng of Nauerne / the whych the duke was forſed to graunt. whereof the ſubſtaunce was, that the kynge ſhuld haue agayn and enioye al ſuch lãdes, caſtelles, and townes, with all mouables to them belõgynge, as he was in poſſeſſyõ of ỹ daye that kyng Johñ was taken within the caſtel of Roan/and ouer that he ſhuld be pardoned of all offences by hym done agayne the crowne of Fraunce before that daye, and all other hys adherentes, or ſuche as had taken hys partie before ỹ tyme. And ſoone vpon thys, was ordeyned that the erle of Harcourt and other, whyche kyng Johñ had cauſed to be beheded and after to be hãged vpon the commõ gybet of Roan, ſhuld be delyuered vnto theyr frendes, to be buryed at theyr pleaſures. After whych concluſions taken, and aſſuraunces made as farre as the dukes auctoryte wolde extende vnto/ſyr Almary knyghte, Menlene knyghte, wyth thre or foure men of honoure mo, were ſente into Normandye, to repoſſeſſe the kyng of Nauerne in all ſuch lãdes, caſtelles, and townes, as he before tyme was in poſſeſſiõ of, wyth all mouables vnto the ſayd landes apperteynynge. And than the ſayde kynge and duke helde ſamplyer company, and dyned and ſouped togyther often ſythes, at the manoir or lodgyng of quene Johan ſyſter vnto the ſayd kynge, and other places.

Alſo the ſayde kynge delyuered out of pryſone, all pryſoners as well ſpyrytuall as tẽporall, ſuche as were thought any thyng fauourable vnto hys cauſe. Amonge the whyche ſome there were, that for theyr demerites were adiuged to perpetuall pryſone.

In thys tyme & ſeaſon tydynges ſprange within the cytye of Parys, that the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce were agreed, and that kyng Johan ſhulde ſhortely returne into Fraunce. By reaſon of whyche tydynges, the kyng of Nauerne made the more haſte to dyſpache hym oute of Parys/ ſo ỹ he with hys company departed from Parys the .xx. daye of Decẽber, & rode toward the cytye of Maunte in Normãdy. Soone after the kyng was thus departed/dyuers enemyes to the noumbre of .x. or .xii. C. came within .iiii. or .v. myles of Parys/ whyche were demyd to be of the company of ſyr Phylip brother vnto the kyng of Nauerne. Theſe robbed and pylled the countrey thereabout/ in ſo moch that the people of the coũtrey of Preaux and Trappes, and other there aboute, were conſtrayned with theyr mouables to flee vnto Parys. wherfore the duke ſente out hys letters and cõmyſſyons, for to aſſemble hys knyghtes to withſtande the ſayd enemyes.

But the ſayde cyteſyns of Parys caſte an other way / and thought it to be done to the greuaunce or correction

correccion of them. For dowte wherof/the prouoſt with other that had ꝑ gouernaunce of the cytye, cauſed the gates to be kepte/and none ſhuld entre but ſuche as lyked them.

In thys paſſe tyme the kynge of Nauerne beyng in Normãdy, requyred delyuere of the caſtelles of Bretnell, of Eurour, and other/the which to hym by ꝑ capptaynes were denied. wherfore he thynkyng that the duke performed nat to hym hys promeſſe/ gathered vnto hym greate ſtrengthe to wynne by ſtrength that he myght nat haue hys former bãde & promes. Of thys was put in greate wyte the byſſhop of Laon, whych was ꝑ cheſe counceloure of the duke, & eſpecyall frende vnto the kynge / ſo that what thyng was ſpoken in the dukes cõſayll, was ſhortly after manifeſted by hym and hys meanes vnto the kyng of Nauerne. Thys alſo was one of ꝑ cheſe rulers of the aſſemble of the.iii. eſtates / and after lefte them and fell by hys greate doubleneſſe and dyſſymplacyon in the dukes fauoure, and ſo became cheſe of hys counſayll for the whyche of the comon people he was named ꝑ beſte with.ii.mouthes. Than the cytezyns of Parys heryng of the denayeng of the ſayd caſtelles vnto the kynge/knewe wel that mortall warre ſhuld growe betwene hym and ꝑ duke. And for they wolde haue the cytezyns knowẽ from other ſtraũgers/ therefore they ordeyned theym hodys parted of rede and blewe/that eyther man that he ſhulde nat paſſe hys lodgynge wythout ꝑ hood and conſaunce.

Upon the .viii. daye of January the kyng of Nauerne entred the cytie of Roan with a great company of mẽ of armes/ and drew vnto hym many engliſſhe men, and ſuche as were enemyes vnto the Frenche kynge. And vppon the.xii.daye of January the ſayde kyng aſſembled the people of that cytye, and made a lyke ſermõ vnto the as before he had done vnto the comynaltye of Parys/ and dyd a ſolempne obſequy to be done for the erle of Harcourt and the other wyth hym put to deth, as aboue is ſayd by kynge Johñ. in thys whyle the duke of Normandy that longe whyle had tarryed in Parys, in hope and ayde of the cytezyns / & was euer by the prouoſte and other dyuen of from daye to daye: It was aduyſed hym by his counſayll, that he ſhulde ſhewe hys mynde vnto the comynaltye of the cytye.

Wherof whan the byſſhop of Laon and ꝑ prouoſt were ware/anone they ſhewed vnto hym many doutes and impedymentes and alſo parelles, for to treate with a comynaltye. Nat withſtandynge he refuſed theyr counſayll, & cauſed the people to be aſſembled at theyr common hall. whyther he wyth a ſmall company came, the xi.daye of January aboute.ix. of the clocke in the mornyng/ where he ſhewed vnto the commons a longe and a pleſaunt oracyon. wherof the effect was, ꝑ he bare very faythfull mynde vnto the cytye/and for the weale therof he wolde put hys lyfe in ieopardy. And where as by hys euyll wylers he was reported, that he ſhulde gather men of armes to greue the citie/ he ſayd and ſwore it was neuer hys entencion, but onely to auoyde ſuche enemyes as dayly pylled and robbed theyr neyghbours and frendes. And where he alſo knewe well, that great ſummes of money were gathered of the people towarde the kynges fynaunce/ he lete theym vnderſtande ꝑ no peny therof was compn to hys handes.

But hys mynde was, that ſuche perſones as hadde receyued that money, ſhulde wyth theyr aſſyſtence be

pp. ii. called

called to a due accompte. whych oꝛacyon wyth many kynde and louynge woꝛdes ended / ꝑ people with it were very well contented / so that of theym he was wel commẽded and allowed. Upon the moꝛowe beyng fryday and xii. day of Januaꝛy / the pꝛouoſt and other of hys aſſynyte, herynge of the fauoure that many of the commons bare vnto the duke, and feryng leſte the duke ſhuld by hys meanes turne the comons vpon them / aſſembled a great parte of the cytye at a place called ſait James hoſpytall, & ſpecyally ſuche as they knewe well fauoured theyꝛ partye. whan ꝑ duke was ware of the aſſemble, anone he ſpedde hym thyther, haunyng wyth hym the byſſhop of Laon. where by the mouth of hys chaũceler, he cauſed to be ſhewed a parte of the matter whyche he hym ſelfe had ſhewed the day befoꝛe vnto the compnaltye / with moꝛe, ꝑ where as ſuch as ought vnto hym no good wylle, repoꝛted hym that he kept nat pꝛomyſe made with the kyng of Nauerne / he ſhewed there the contrary. And yf any thynge were nat to hym parfourmed, it was contrary to hys mynde & pleaſure / & that that in hys power lay nat to fulfyl. And ſo ſoone as ꝑ chaũceler had ended hys tale / Charles Culſake ſtode vp to the entent to haue ſhewed hys mynde. But there was ſuch a rumoure and noyſe amonge the people, that he myghte nat be harde / ſo that thanne the duke parted with ſuche companye as he bꝛought, excepte the byſſhop of Laõ, whych taryed there with the pꝛouoſt and other. And whan the duke was departed Charles Culſake began his tale, & ſpake boldely agayne the kynges offyceers / and by couerte woꝛdes ſomwhat agayne the duke. After whyche tale fynyſſhed one named Johñ de ſaynte Ounde, whyche by auctoꝛyte of ꝑ thꝛe aſtates was newlye made one of the generall gouernours of the ſubſydy / ſtoode vp and ſayde, that the pꝛouoſte noꝛ no other perſone of the thꝛe aſtates, hadde no peny of that ſubſydie in theyꝛ hãdes / the whiche ſayenge the pꝛouoſte alſo affermed.

Foꝛthermoꝛe ſhewed than there ꝑ ſayde Johñ, that certayne knyghtes whyche he there named ſent from the duke, had receyued of the ſayde ſubſydye to the ſumme of. l. oꝛ. lx. M. mo tons of golde, the whyche were employed to no good vſe. After whyche pꝛoceſſe ended by the ſayde Johan / Charles Culſake agayne beganne to ſpeke, and made a longe comendaciõ of the pꝛouydence and good dyſpoſycion of the pꝛouoſt, whyche had take vpon hym great payne and diſpleaſure, & ſpent largely of hys owne foꝛ ꝑ comõ welth of the cytye. wherefoꝛe yf he myghte knowe that the compnaltye wolde nat ayde and ſtande by hym foꝛ the furtheraũce of the ſame / he wolde be content to leue of, & gete hym there as he ſhulde be quyte of al trouble, and alſo out of the daunger of all hys enemyes. whereunto was anon made a greate exclamacyon by the people, ſayenge they wolde lyue and dye wyth hym in that quarell.

Upõ the. xiii. day of Januaꝛy / the duke ſent foꝛ dyuers perſones of the thꝛe aſtates, & eꝛoꝛted theym by goodlye and amyable woꝛdes, that they wolde demeane theym agayne hys father and hym, as faythefull and louynge ſubiectes / and he ſhulde ſo repoꝛte theym vnto the kynge, that they of hym ſhulde haue greate thankes.

And as touchynge hym ſelfe / he wolde be ſo good loꝛde vnto theym, that they ſhulde thynke theyꝛ kyndenes and fydelyte well beſtowed.

The

bestowed. The whyche graunted vn to hym theyr trothe and seruyce to ꝑ vttermoste of theyr powers / aduy-synge hym to take vpon hym the go-uernaunce of the realme / for they thought he taryed to long or he toke the rule therof. Than soone vppon thys, the sayd thre estates ordeyned a more feble money than they before had made, to the aduauntage of the duke / to the ende that he sholde wyth stand the enemyes forenamed, which as yet remayned in the cõtre about Parys, and pylled the vyllages and toke prysoners / the whych they con-ueyed vnto suche holdes as they thã helde in that countre. Thus duryng these manyfolde aduersytees amõge the Frenchmen / vpon the .xviii. daye of ꝑ sayd moneth of January, Johñ Baylet treasourer vnto ꝑ duke, was slayne at Parys of a yoman or Var-let of the chaunge called Peryne Marke. The whyche Peryne after that cursyd dede done, fledde vnto saynt Mary chyrche. But at nyghte the duke sent syr Johñ de Shalous hys marchall, wyth the prouost of ꝑ cytye named Guillyam Seayse and other / the whyche brake vp the chyr-che dores and toke the sayde Peryne out by force / and ladde hym vnto pri son called the Chastelet. Out of the whych vpon the morne he was takẽ, and hys handes smytten of / and so drawen vnto the gybet of Parys, & there hanged. But vpon the thyrde daye folowyng, by meanes of the byl shop of Parys he was taken downe and buryed wythin the sayd chyrche of our lady, wyth greate reuerence and solempnyte. At whyche obsequy was present the prouoste of the mar-chauntes, with many other burgeys of the cytye. The fyrste daye of the moneth of February / syr Johñ de Pyquyny came vnto Parys from ꝑ kyng of Nauerne, and made requeste vnto the duke, of dyuers couenaũtes by hym to be perfourmed towarde ꝑ kynge, whyche as yet were nat accõ-plyshed. whyche requeste the duke toke vnpacyẽtly / and gaue vnto the sayd syr Johñ many hygh and dispi-sait wordes. Howbeit in the ende ꝑ bisshop of Laon sayde, that the duke shuld be aduysed vpõ ꝑ answere of ꝑ kynges demaũde. Upon ꝑ .iii. daye of February, ꝑ prouost of the marchaũ tes, wyth certayn of ꝑ vnyuersyte of Parys & other burgeyses, yode vnto the duke vnto Louure. where it was requyred by the sayde persones, that he wolde fulfyll vnto the kyng of Na uerne, all suche couenaũtes as were lately made with hym / and specially that the castelles of Euroux & other before named, myghte be delyuered vnto hym accordyng to his apoynte mẽt. And farthermore it was shewed vnto the duke by a doctoure of diuy-nyte, that yf he or the kynge of Na-uerne wolde swarue from any poynt or artycle of the sayde former agre-mente / that the .iii. astates had vtter-lye determyned to ayde and assyste hym, that wolde kepe the sayd agre-ment, & to wythstãde the other that wolde nat obey or vpholde the sayde concorde & agrement. whereunto the duke was wel agreable / sayeng that he had perfourmed all his promesse, excepte the delyuere of certayne ca-stelles, whyche the capytaynes wyth helde contrary hys mynde and plea-sure / layenge for theyr excuses, that by the kynge hys father to theym they were delyuered, and to hym and none other they wyll delyuer thẽ agayne.

Upon the .xi. day of February, cer tayne of the .iii. astates beyng at coũ-sayll in theyr place accustomed / ꝑ pro uoste of ꝑ marchaũtes assembled theyr craftes of ꝑ citie at a place called sait Clowe or Cloy in harneste.

In whych tyme of hys with them there beyng/an aduocat of the parlia mẽt called mayster Reynolde Dacy, as he was goyng from the dukes pa lays toward his owne house, he was slayne by men of the towne.

And soone thereafter the sayd prou= uost with a great company of armed men entred the palays of Louure / & so with a certayne compiyces entred the dukes chaũbre, & there withoute salutyng of the duke sayd vnto hym: Syr dysmay you nothyng whatsoim euer ye se vs do, for we entende to your persone no harme. And or these wordes were fully ended/his cõpany fell vpon a knyght called syr Nycho las de Cõflans thã marshall of Thã payne, and vpõ syr Robert de Clere= mont lenyng vpon the dukes bedde, & slewe them out of hande. whan the duke behelde thys horryble dede, he was in meruelous fere of hys owne persone / & prayed the prouoste wyth hys cappe in hys hãde, that he wolde saufegarde hys persone/the whych ꝑ prouost graunted, with that he wold by hym be aduertysed.

Than the sayd .ii. dede corses were drawen downe the steyers withoute pytye/and layed in the court that all men myghte beholde that mysterable spectacle. And for the dukes saufe= garde, the prouost toke vnto hys par tye a hood of redde & blewe, ꝑ whiche he put vpon his hed/and the prouost receyued the dukes hood beynge of burnet & garnysshed with a frenge of golde / & so eyther ware others hode all that daye. And that done, the prou= uoste with hys company wente vnto theyr comon hall / where he shewed vnto the comynalty that the .ii. perso nes were especiall enemyes vnto the comon weale, and false traytours to god & to the crowne of Fraunce/ and that he and hys adherentes entẽded the preseruacion of the commõ weale of the realme, and the cytye / & wolde vnderstãde of theym, whether they wolde stande by hym in that doynge or nat. The whyche cryed wyth one voyce ouy, ouy/that is to saye ye, ye. And whan he had receyued this com forte of ꝑ people, he retourned agayn vnto the duke. Than he recomforted hym and sayd, that al that was done, was done by thassent of the people, & for to auoyd ꝑ greater inconuenięce. For these that were slayn were great enemyes vnto the common welthe, & traytours vnto the crowne. wherfore he wylled ꝑ duke to alowe that dede/ & yf any pardõ were requysyte for ꝑ dede or any other to be hadde, that he shulde lyberally graunt it. All which thynges the duke was fayne to saye ye vnto/ and prayed hym & the other than also of the cytezyns to be his frẽ des, & he wold in lyke wyse be theyrs. And after thys agremẽt/ the prouost sent for .ii. clothes one of redde/and ꝑ other of blewe / and wylled the duke to make hoodes of the same for al his seruaũtes. And so the duke and hys seruaũtes were clothed in the lyuery of the towne / the blewe set vpon the ryght syde. Than agayne nyght whã the sayd .ii. corpsys had lyen all daye vpon the stones of the palays/ ꝑ prou= uost commaũded them to be layed in a cart, and so without pryest or other reuerence to be cõueyed vnto a place of sait Katheryne there to be buryed. And whanne the sayde corpsys were thus brought vnto the sayde place/ ꝑ carter toke one of theyr garmentes for hys labour, & so departed.

It was nat longe after that a mes sanger came from the bysshop of Pa rys, whyche warned the brethern of that house to spare the burpenge of syr Robert de Clermont, for almoch as the bysshope noted hym, accursed for brekyng vp of sait Mary church, whan he by force fette oute Peryne

Marke

Marke, as before is shewed. But after they and also ꝑ aduocate mayster Reynolde Dacy were buryed secretelye. Uppon the morne folowynge the prouost assembled at the frere Augustynes a great company of the cytye, wyth all suche as then were there of the good townes by reason of ꝑ forsayde coũsayll. To whych assemble, by the mouth of mayster Roberte de Corby a mã of the cytye, was shewed a protestacio of all the circumstaũce of the forsayd matter, and howe that by the dukes coũsayll & also by ꝑ thre astates, many good thynges were cõcluded for the deliuery of the kynge, & shulde or that tyme haue comyn to good effecte, ne had ben the empechement of .iiii. persons, the whyche at ꝑ season were nat named.

Thys busynesse thus cõtynuyng, the kyng of Nauarne came vnto Paris the .xxvi. daye of February, wyth a good company of armed men, and was cõueyed by the cytezeyns vnto a place of the dukes called the Neell, & there lodged. To whome the prouost with his cõplyces made request, that he wolde make alyaũce with theym, and to supporte theym in that ꝑ they hadde done, the whyche by hym was graũted. Than the quene hys syster and other, made instante labour to agree hym and the duke. whych in cõclusyon toke such effect, ꝑ the kynge shulde haue in recompẽcement of his wrõges, the erledom of Bygorre and the vynery of Ramer, with ꝑ erledõ of Maston, and other landes to ꝑ extente of .x. M. li. of Parys money by yere. And ouer that hys syster called quene Blãche, shuld haue ꝑ lordshyp of Morette for her Dowry. After whyche accorde thus concluded, the kynge and the duke kepte together very frẽdely and louyng familyarite, dyned and souped eyther with other by many and sundry tymes, & eyther vnto other gaue ryche gyftes. Amõg the whyche one was, that the duke gaue vnto the kyng the sayd place of Neell whych he than lodged in.

Upon the .xii. daye of Marche, the duke of Normandye was proclamed regent of Fraunce thorough ꝑ cytye of Parys, and after thorough all Fraunce. And soone after he departed from Parys, and rode into ꝑ countre of Champayne, where he tarryed a season. And the kynge of Nauerne retourned to Maunt in Normandye. Than the regent shewe vnto hym the nobles of Champayne & of Prouynce, and began to manace the prouost and other of Parys, that before had put hym to dyshonoure, and slayne so vylaynously hys trewe counceyllours. And after promesse taken of the erle of Breue and other nobles of that countrey, ꝑ they shuld ayde hym agayne hys fathers rebelles and hys enemyes, he than rode vnto the abbey of Poniey in Monstruell, and after rode vnto a castell whych belonged vnto quene Blanche syster vnto ꝑ kynge of Nauerne, and wylyd the Cayptayne named Tanpyne to delyuer to hym that castell. The whyche after dyuers denayes, opened the gates and receyued in the regente, and lodged hym therin that nyght. Upon the whyche the regent caused the sayd Tanpyne to swere vnto hym, ꝑ he shulde kepe that castell to his vse, and after made hym styll wardeyne of the same, and so departed thens & rode to Meaux where hys wyfe laye.

In thys tyme and season the prouoste of the marchauntes of Parys, herynge of the regentes doynge, and of the affraye that he made with the of Champayne, fered the sequell ther of. wherfore by the aduyse of such as fauoured hys cause, he rode into the castell of Louure, and there toke out

yy. iiii. artylery

artylery, gunnys, and other abylymē tes of warre, and put them in ꝑ ſtoꝛe houſe of the cytye, to be redy whan tyme requered. The regent ſpedyng hys iournay returned agayne to Cō peygn. And where as beforē was ap poynted, that the.iii. eſtates ſhulde ꝑ fyꝛſte daye of May aſſemble at Pa rys/the regent thā ſent out hys com myſſiōs, and charged ꝑ ſayd.iii. eſta tes to aſſemble the thyꝛde daye of the ſayd moneth of May at Compeyng ne aforeſayde, wherewith the ſayde cytezyns of Parys were greatly amo ued. At thys aſſemble was graunted vnto the regent, a ſubſydy bothe of ꝑ Clergy and alſo of the laye fee/ ſo ꝑ the regent wared daply ſtrōger and ſtronger. wherof herynge the kyng of Hauerne/remoued from a towne cal led Merlo/ and with a ſtronge com pany came vnto a place oꝛ towne na med Domage, purpoſely foꝛ to treate wyth the regent foꝛ the cytezyns of Parys. where in the begynnynge of May ꝑ ſayd two pꝛynces met, eyther hauynge greate ſtrengthe of men of armys.

When the kynge of Hauerne had by.ii. dayes contynuall made te queſte vnto the regent foꝛ the cy tezyns of Parys, and myghte natte ſpede of his requeſte/he departed the thyꝛde daye and rode vnto Parys. where he was honoꝛably receyued & feſted by the ſpace of.x. oꝛ.xii. dayes. In whyche ſeaſon he warned theym of the great dyſpleaſure that ꝑ regēt bare towarde the cytye/and aduyſed them to make theym as ſtronge as they myght. In thys paſſe tyme the byſſhop of Laon beynge with the re gent at Cōpeyne, was lyke to haue ben vyolenced by ſome of the regētes counſayll. wherefoꝛe in ſecrete wyſe he departed vnto ſaynt Denyſe/and from thēs he was ſette by the kyngꝛ ſeruaūtes of Hauerne vnto Parys/ in whome was put great ſaute of all thys trouble.

About the myddell of May/ one named Guyllyam Calley gathered vnto hym a company in the pꝛouince of Beauayſyn, as of the townes of Cerreur, Noꝛeceil, Cramoyſye, and other there about. The which beyng ruyll dyſpoſed, ſlewe dyuers knyght tes and eſquyers of that coūtrey, and theyꝛ wyues and ſeruaūtes/and pyl led and ſpoyled the countrey as they went, and thꝛewe downe certayn pp les and other ſtrēgthes, and a parte of the caſtell of Beawmoūt/and foꝛ ced the ducheſſe of Oꝛleaunce to foꝛ ſake that caſtell, that than was there lodged/and foꝛ her ſaufegarde to go vnto Parys.

Uppon the.xxx. daye of May/ the pꝛouoſt and other gouernours of ꝑ cytye of Parys, cauſed Johū Paret, mayſter of the bꝛydge of Parys, and the mayſter carpenter of the kynges werkes, to be dꝛawen, hanged, heded and quartered. Foꝛ it was put vpon them, that they ſhuld haue bꝛoughte into the cytye a certayne noumbꝛe of of the regentes ſowdiours, and ſo to haue betrayed the cytye. And the foꝛe ſayde people of Beauuayſyne ga thered vnto theym daply moꝛe pepie, as labourers and vylaynes/ ꝑ which came into the countrey of Mountme rencie, & ſlewe and robbed there ꝑ gē tylmen of that countrey as they had done of other, and ſo paſſed the coun trey without reſyſtence. And ꝑ regēt in thys whyle came to the cytye of Sens in Languedocke, where he was honoꝛably receyued/ all be it ꝑ the comons of that cytye & gentyles of that coūtrey, were greatly lenyng vnto the cytezyns of Parys/ & there taryed a ſeaſon to expꝛeſſe to thē hys mynde. In whyche meane tyme a ſpy cer oꝛ grocer named Gylle of Parys,

wyth

wyth one Johñ Vayllaunt prouoste of ꝑ kynges money, with a company of .viii. C. men in harnesse rode vnto the cytye of Meaux/ wherof ꝑ mayre of that cytie they were ioyfully receyued, contrary hys promesse before made vnto the regent. where with all syssence of the sayde mayer & other of that cytye, they entended to haue taken the wyfe of the sayd regent, with other noble women thã there soiourning wyth hyr/ and so to haue conueyd them vnto Parys, there to haue kepte them tyll the cytezyns myghte purchase the fauour & grace of the regent.

But whã the erle of Foyse, whych thanne hadde the rule of the sayde gentylwomen, knewe theyr entente/ anone he gathered vnto hym hys cõpany/ and wyth assystẽce also of som of the sayd cytye, he made vppon .vi. or .vii. C. men in harnesse, and yssued boldly agayne the forsayde persons and skyrmyssched wyth theym. In which skyrmyssche in the ende, the mẽ of Parys were sconfited and chased, & the mayre of Meaus named Johñ Soulas taken with other/ which after for theyr rebellyõ were put in execucion. And after thys victory thus optayned/ & in reuẽgemẽt of the deth of a knyghte called syr Lewys de Chambly there slayn with other gentylmen/ & for the vntrouth of ꝑ cytie: the forsayd erle set fyre vpon a syde of the cytye, & brẽt a great parte therof, as well churches as other/ which fyre was scãtly stenched in .viii. days after.

In thys whyle the kynge of Nauerne herynge of the greate harme & distrucciõ that the company of Guyllyam Calley made of gentylmen in Woũtmerecy & other places, lyke as before is shewed, rode agayne hym/ & nere vnto a place called Clermoũt encountred hym and his people, and gaue vnto theym batayll, and slewe moch of his people/ and toke hym on lyue, & caused hys hede to be stryken of. And soone after, the cytezyns of Parys sente vnto hym / requyrynge hym to drawe towarde thẽ. At whose requeste he sped hym thytherwarde, and entred the cytye vpõ the .xv. daye of Juny/ and was cõueyed vnto sait Germayne in Pree & there lodged. And vpõ the morne he wẽte vnto the comon halle of the citie/ where the comõs beyng assembled, he made vnto them a lõge & plesaunt oraciõ, of the great kyndenesse that he had founde in many of ꝑ good townes of Fraũce & specially in the cytye of Parys. For the whych they had bounde hym to take theyr partye agayne all other, makyng none excepcyõ. After which tale by hym ended/ Charles Culake stode vp, & shewed vnto the people what ruynous poynt the lãde stode in for lacke of a wyse heedde & gouernoure. wherfore he exhorted ꝑ people to chose ꝑ kyng for theyr gouernour. whyche than was so done/ & he there toke vpon hym the rule, & promysed with them to lyue and dye. Upon the .xvii. day of the sayd moneth of Juny/ ꝑ kyng of Nauerne with a cõpany of .vi. M. speres of the cytye & other, departed from Parys, and rode vnto a towne called Gonnesse, where an other company of the cytye tarved for hym/ & from thens rode towarde Sẽlys. But whã the gentylmen of hys hoste vnderstode that he had take vpon hym to be capytayne of the comunaltye, where agayn the more partie of the nobles of Fraunce were of the contrary partye/ they left hym many of them, & specially suche as were of the duchye of Burgoyne/ and wyth congy of hym taken, resorted into theyr cõtreys. whã the regent had vysyted dyuers countreys, & wonne vnto hym the benuolence of ꝑ same,

and

& had also gathered vnto hym greate strength/he spedde hym towarde Parys/& lodged hym in the ende of the moneth of Juny, in a place called in Frenche le Pount de Charenton fast by Bopes in Vyncent. In whose cõpany were noumbred vpon .xxx. M. horsemen / so that the countre there about was pylled & wasted with that hoste.

Wherof herynge the kynge of Nauerne, retourned backe agayne, and came wyth hys hoste vnto sayntDenys wythin.ii.myles of Parys. And the cytye of Parys was kepte daye & nyght, that no man myghte entre or go out, wythout lycẽce of ỳ prouoste & other rulers therof. In this meane whyle that the sayde two princes lay thus with theyr two hostes about the cytye / quene Johan syster vnto the kynge, made an instaũt labour vnto the regent for grace for the cytezyns. By whose meanes a comunicatiõ was appoynted to be holdẽ betwene the kynge & the regente, the eyght day of July, at a place called ỳ wynde mylle faste by the house of sayntAnthony. At whyche metynge it was lastly accorded betwene ỳ sayd princes, that the kyng of Nauerne shulde do hys best to bryngethe cytezyns of Parys vnto due obedyence. And yf he sawe in theym suche obstynacy, that they wolde nat do theyr dutye, & to gyue for theyr rebellyon suche summes of money as by hym & the regent shuld be thought accordynge/that than the kynge shuld vtterly refuse theyr partye, and turne vnto the regẽt with all hys power.

And ouer that, the kyng for all demaundes that he coude aske of the regent for any cause, ouer the agremẽt betwene them laste made, shuld haue iiii.C.M.florynsof gold. wherof an C.M.to be payed that daye .xii. monethes, and yerely after, l.M. tyll the fulle were payed. And farther it was accorded, that the kynge after ỳ daye shuide take partye with the regente agayne all persones, excepte onely ỳ kynge of Fraunce/And to the ende ỳ thys accorde shulde be fermely holdẽ vppon bothe sydes/ the bysshoppe of Lyseur there beynge present, wyth many other lordes, sage there masse within the tente where thys accorde was concluded/and after agnus dei, sware the two princes vpon the sacrament, that withoute colluspon or fraude they shulde obserue and kepe euerych artycle of the sayde accord. After whyche conclusyon thus takẽ/ the regent repayred vnto hys hoste, & the kynge vnto sayntDenys. Than vppon the morowe the kynge entred Parys, and conueyed thyther wyth hym but a certayne/& so tarryed there all that daye, wythoute any reporte sendynge vnto the regent.

And the seconde daye for ỳ more strẽgthynge of the towne, he sent for certayne Englysshe sowdyours, as archers and other, and sette them in the towne wagys/& nother sente nor retourned vnto the regente with any answere. Than towarde the nyght, how it was assaut was made by som of the regentes people vppõ a parte of the town, so that dyuers men were slayne vpon bothe sydes/ but the more vppon the partye of the cytye.

Than the kynge of Nauerne vpõ the morowe retourned vnto sait Denys/leuynge within the cytye ỳ forsayde strẽgthe of Englysshmen wyth other. whan the regente was ware of the kynges beynge at sayntDenys / he sent vnto hym, and hym requyred of perfourmaũce of suche accorde as lately betwene theym was condiscended/& syns by hys meanes he myght nat enduce the cytezyns to due obedyence, that he wolde accordynge to hys promesse take partye with hym/

wherby they and other enemyes to ꝑ comon welth, myght be receyued. whereunto the kynge answered and sayd, that the regēt had broke ꝑ sayd accorde. For where he by hys dylygēce & labour, had brought the cytezyns to a nere poynt of reconciliacyon & submyssiō/the regent by the meane of that assaute whyche he made vnto the towne, caused the sayd cytezeyns to renoūce all theyr former graunt, & to bynde them vpō theyr former wylfulnesse. After whyche answere thus gyuen by the kyng / the regēt caused his people to passe ꝑ ryuer of Sayne by a brydge made of botes, and so to brenne the towne of Uyttry & diuers other townes, & robbed & pylled the coūtrey there about.

Upō the.xiiii. day of July, dyuers of the towne of Parys issued oute of the towne/& with the ayde of the Englyshmen endeuoured them to haue socoured the sayde towne of Uyttry/ with also to haue destroyed ꝑ brydg. At whych iournay they bare them so well, that with theyr shotte they woūded many of theyr enemies/and toke prysoner the regentes marshall named syr Reynolde de Fountaynes with dyuers other/ & after retourned vnto theyr cytye.

Upon the.xix. day of July, ꝑ quene Johā syster vnto ꝑ kyng of Nauerr, with the archebyshop of Lyons, the byshop of Parys, with certayne other tēporall persones of the cytye/ yode vnto a place assygned without the towne. where with them met the regent & certayne of hys coūsayll / & at lengthe cōcluded an vnyte and cōcorde betwene the sayd regent & cytezyns, without farther payne or exaccīō to be put vnto them/ excepte that the sayd cytezyns shuld humbly submytte thē vnto the regent, in aknowlegyng theyr offēce, & askyng of hym mercy & grace for the same/ & ouer ꝑ to be ordered forther as the kynge of Nauerne, the sayd quene Johā, with the duke of Orleaūce & the erle of Eſ cāps, wolde deme & adiuge/and that graunted, the regēt to oppn all ways & passages as well by lāde as by water, that al marchaūtes may passe as they before tymes vsed/& in lykewise they of the cytye to oppn the gates of the towne, and to receyue all straungers.

After whych agremente thus cōcluded & agreed, with all other before made betwene the kyng & the regent to be maynteyned & vpholden/the regēt sent from hym moch of hys people/& appoynted the sayd bil shoppes & the other for the towne, to mete with hym ꝑ .iiii. day folowynge at a place called Laigup syr Yarne. where he wolde haue also the kynge of Nauerne & the other, to perfyghte and clerely fynysh the sayd agremēt/ & vpō thys made proclamacions thorough the hoste, that a good and perfyght peace was agreed. wherefore many of the hoste for dyuers causes theym mouynge yode towarde the cytye, trustyng there gladly & louyngly to be receyued. But vpō ꝑ morne whan they came vnto the gates, they fande them watched with harnessed men, whyche wolde none suffre to entre but suche as them lyked/amōg the whyche one named Macequett a seruaunte of the regētes was myssle entreated. And nat withstādyng that accorde / yet the mouable goodes of suche as were with the regent & had houses within the cytie, where dispersed and stroyed.

Upon the.xxi. day of July & euyn of mary Magdaleyne, a stryfe began to kyndell within the cytye/ so that ꝑ cytezyns complayned them vpon the Englyshemen, surmysynge agayne the dyuers causes. By meane wherof the

of the comonte in a fury pode vnto the palaye of Neel, where at ꝑ tyme many of the capptaynes of the Englyſſhemen dyned wyth the kynge of Nauerne/ vpon whome they fell ſodeynly, and ſlewe of them vpō.xxiiii. & after in diuers places of ꝑcitie, toke the other deale to the noūbre of .iiii. C. or thereupon, and cloſed theym in dyuers pꝛyſons. with whych doyng, the kynge of Nauerne, with alſo the pꝛouoſte and other the gouernoures of the cytye were right ſore diſcontented. wherfore vpō the day folowyng, the kynge aſſembled the compnaltye at theyr comon halle/ entendynge by pleſaūt wordes to haue cauſed them to haue ben repētaunt of the murder of the forſayd capptaynes, & alſo to haue gotten the remenaunte oute of pꝛyſon.

But the more the kynge ſpake for the Englyſſhemen, the more woder were they dyſpoſed agayne theym/ ſayenge ꝑ thole whyche were within the cytye, ſhulde nat alonely be putte to deth, but alſo ſuche as were at ſait Denys, whyche there ſpoyled that towne & countrey enuyꝛon/ and had had ſuche wordes vnto the kynge, ꝑ in the ende he wyth the pꝛouoſt & the other gouernoures, were fayne to graunte vnto them, that they wolde go with theym for to helpe to dyſtres the ſayde Englyſſhemen. And ſo the ſame daye agayne nyght/ the comōs yſſued by the gate of ſaynt Honoure/ & the kynge of Nauerne with the pꝛouoſt & theyr company went out by ꝑ wyndemylle, ſo that in the ſayd aſſembles of the kynge & the comons were noumbred vppon.xvi.C. ſperes, and of foote men vpon.viii.M. whan the kynge with hys company was come vnto the feelde where the ſayd wyndemylle ſtādeth/ he houed there well vpon halfe an houre, to ſe what ꝑ other company wolde do. The whych ſent out.iii. ſperes to eſpye where the Engliſhmen were, and eſpyed of theym vpō.xl. or.l. that apered by a woddes ſyde nere vnto ſaynt Clow/ and wenynge that the ſayde Engliſſhemen there had be no mo, retourned & ſhewed what they had ſene. whereupon the ſayde comons in all haſte ſpedde theym thyther. And whā they were within the daunger of theyr ſhotte/ ꝑ Engliſſhmen iſſued oute of dyuerſe partties of the wode, and woūded and ſlewe many of them. wherwith the other beynge ſered fled incontinently/ whome the Engliſſhemen purſued ſo cruelly, that they ſlewe of the fote men vpon.vi.C. in all.

Whych ſeaſon the kyng of Nauerſh and alſo ꝑ pꝛouoſt with theyr peple, ſtode ſtyl & neuer moued towarde the for theyr defence or ayde. After thys ſcomfyture thus ſuſteyned by the ſayd cytyens/ the kyng lefte the cytye and rode vnto ſaynt Denys/ and the pꝛouoſte wyth hys company returned vnto Paris. where he was receyued wyth hydyous noyſe and crye, aſwel of wome as me, for ꝑ he ſo cowardly had ſuffered hys neyghbours to be woūded and ſlayne. By reaſō of this the murmure of the people encreaſed dayly more and more agayne the pꝛouoſt/ ſo that in maner a party was taken betwene the pꝛouoſte and the other gouernours of the cytye and the compnaltye. For the comons wolde haue put to deth many of the pꝛyſoners of the Engliſſhemen/ but ꝑ pꝛouoſt with hys aſſyſtence let them, and pꝛeſerued them from theyr fury and malyce.

And vpon the.xxvii. daye of July beynge frydaye/ the ſayd pꝛouoſt beyng encōpanyed wyth.viii. ſcore or ii.C. me in harneſſe, rode vnto Louure and other pꝛyſons and, toke out ꝑ ſayd Engliſſhemen, & conueyed the vnto the gate of ſaynt Honoure/ and

ſo ſent

so sent theym vnto theyr other felys-shyp than beyng at sayne Denys.

Of whome they were ioyously re-ceyued and welcomed/ & specyally of the kynge of Nauerne, at whose re-queste as the comō fame went, ꝑ pꝛo-uost wyth the other rulers of ꝑ town them delyuered. Thus moꝛe & moꝛe cyuyle dyscoꝛde began to encreace wythin the cytie/so that the rulers of ꝑ cytye were now in as greāt dought and feꝛe of theyr neyghbours, as be-foꝛe tyme they were of the regēt & his knyghtes.

So that vpō the tuysdaye folow-yng beyng the last daye of July / ꝑ pꝛouost wyth other of hys company beyng in harneste as daply they were vsed, went to dyner vnto the bastyle of sayne Denys. And there beyng at dyner/the pꝛouost cōmaūded to such as thā kept the keyes of that bastyle, that they shuld delyuer theym vnto Geffrey de Mastō than tresourer of the warres of the kyng of Nauerne. But the poꝛters denayed ꝑ commaū demēt/& sayde pꝛesysely ꝑ they wolde nat delyuer the keyes to hym noꝛ yet to any straūger. For the whyche an-swere many hawte woꝛdes were blo-wen on eyther partye / so that people gadered about them. wherof heryng one named Johñ Waylart, to whom belōged the watche of a quarter of ꝑ cytye / wherein & in whyche quarter the sayde bastyle stode, dꝛewe nere & gaue eye vnto the woꝛdes / & shoꝛtly after in bolde maner sayd vnto ꝑ pꝛo uost, that the keyes shulde remayne styll with the sayd keperꝭ, & nat to be take out of theyr possessiō. By meane of whych woꝛdes the pꝛouoste wyth hys company were encensed wyth moꝛe malyce / & vttered many hyghe and dysdaynous woꝛdes to feꝛe the sayd Johñ Waylart and the other. wherfoꝛe the sayde Johñ Waylart fe-ryng the pꝛouost, lest he shuld shoꝛtly call hys stregthe to hym, & by meane thereof put hym and other to an af-terdele/sodenlye gate hym on hoꝛse-backe/& berynge a baner of ꝑ Frenche kynges in hys hande, cryed wyth a lowde voyce, Mon ioye sayncte De-nys au Roy et a duke. whā the peo-ple sawe hym thus ryde aboute, and cryed ioye to the kynge & the duke/ anone moche people folowed hym, & cryed in the same wyse. And in lyke-wyse dyd the pꝛouost & his company, whyche toke the waye towarde the bastyle of sayncte Anthony. And the sayde Waylarte rode towarde the market place, & there houed wyth his company. In whyche tyme & season one called Peyn de Eslars, nat kno wynge of the feat of Johñ Waylart, in lyke maner gathym on hoꝛsbacke/ and berynge a baner of the armes of Fraūce, rode about cryeng ꝑ foꝛsayd crye, & so lastly came vnto the other. whyle the commōs were thus assem-bled in the market place/ the pꝛouost came vnto the foꝛsayd bastyle of sait Anthony/ where it was repoꝛted to ꝑ keperꝭ of that bastyle, that the pꝛo-uost hadde lately receyued letteꝛs frō the kynge of Nauerne whyche they desyꝛed to se/wherof the pꝛouoste de-nayed the syghte, & specyally one na-med Guyssarde. wherefoꝛe after som woꝛdes of dysplesure, one strake at the sayd Guyssarde, & thꝛoughe hys harneste woūded hym. where wyth ꝑ pꝛouost beyng amoued, made resystē ce agayn the sayd keperꝭ/so ꝑ eyther ranne at other wyth theyr weppyns. In whych stryfe the sayd Guyssarde was fyrst slayne/ & after the pꝛouoste wyth one of hys cōperes named Sy mōde Palmeyr. wherof heryng ꝑ foꝛe sayd Johñ Waylart & hys cōpany, in all haste sped thē thyder & pursued vpō other ꝑthā were fled foꝛ feꝛe/ & so streightly serched, ꝑ they fōde one cal led Johñ of ꝑ Ile, & Giles Marcell

33. clerke

vnder the prouoste of marchauntes, whych they also slewe without pytie. And after at ꝑ bastyle of sayne Martyne, they foũde one called Johñ Paret the pỹger, whome they slew also. And soone were they spoyled of all ꝑ they had, and layd naked in the open strete for all men to loke vpon. And whan they .vi. corpsys had so lyen by a certayne tyme / they were than put in a carte & drawen vnto a house of sayne Katheryne, and there buryed vnrecurently. And vpon the morowe folowyng, were taken Charles Cusake, & Josseron or Geffrey Waston, and put into the chastelet, and there kept in strayte pryson. And thus ceased thys ryot wythin the cytye of Parys, that had contynued for the moze partye by ꝑ space of a yere & .ix. monethes / as from the begynnynge of the moneth of Nouember in the .vii. yere of kyng Johñ, vnto thende of ꝑ moneth of July in the .viii. yere of thys sayd kyng / or from the takyng of the duke in hys chaũbze, to the deth of ꝑ prouost by the space of .vi. monethes. After whyche persones thus slayen / the sayd Johñ Maylart sent vnto ꝑ regent, requyrynge hym ꝑ he wolde spede hym vnto ꝑ citte / & in ꝑ meane whyle to sende some noble man to haue the rule of the same. And in that whyle the comõs made serche, & toke many of the former rulers, as Petyr Gylle grocer, which as before is said was capytayne vnto thẽ ꝑ were sent vnto Meaus. And wyth hym was taken syr Pyers Caylart knyght and wardeyne of the castell of Louure. Also one called Johñ Prenost, wyth Petyr Blount. Also a vocate named mayster Peter Pupsour / & a felowe of hys named mayster Johan Godarde. All which persones were shortly after put to deth by sundry tymes, & theyr bodyes cast in to a ryuer called Bone Uoycyne. And vppon the .xii. daye of Auguste, the regent was retreyued into Parys with all honour and gladnesse. whereof heryng the kynge of Nauerne, & of the puttyng to deth of Josseran hys tresourer / sente vnto the regẽt wordes of defyaũce / letting hym to vnderstande that he wolde be reuenged of that wronge and other.

Upon the .xiiii. day of Auguste, the regent caused to be assembled within the commõ hall of Paris the cytezyns / to whom he made a lõg declaracion of the treasons & ryottes done by these persones put to deth, & by the bysshop of Laon & other pretexte / whych entẽded as he sayde to haue made ꝑ kyng of Nauerne kyng of Fraũce, & to haue yelden the cytye of Parys into the power of Englysshemen. Thã the kynge of Nauerne with the Englysshmen yode vnto Meloon / where they by fauour & strẽgth occuppyed ꝑ ple, & all ꝑ coũtrey whych stretched toward Byer / & warred vpon the countrey toward Gastenoys & dyd therin moche harme aswell by fyre as otherwyse. And shortly after syr Johñ Pyquegny & syr Robert his brother, whych were capytaynes vnder the kyng of Nauerñ, made warre vpõ the towne of Turnay and other townes of Pycardy / and slewe many of the common people, and toke prysoners of the gentylmen of that countrey to the noumbre of an hundreth & aboue.

Amonge the whyche the bysshope of Noyen was take, and wyth the other ladde vnto a castell or towne called Creeyll, wherof the forsayde syr Robert was capytayne / and so contynued in doynge domage in dyuerse places, aswell nere vnto Parys as elles where. Durynge whyche warre thus made by the kynge of Nauerne and hys accellaries / in the moneth of

Septembre

Septembre and begynnynge of the xx. yere of kynge Johñ, the forsayde syr Johñ de Piquegny layd his siege vnto the cytye of Ampas, & wã within the bulwerkes of the same/ so that the cytye was lyke to haue ben yelde vnto hym, ne had ben the rescous of the erle of Saynt Poule, which drawe the sayd Johñ & hys people a backe. But the sayd syr Johñ wyth ayde of the Englysshemẽ quytte hym so mãfully, that he had the dompnyõ of all that coũtrey of beawuaysyne / so that wyne nor no marchaundyse myghte passe to Tournay nor other townes therabout, without hys saufe cõdupt or lycẽce. And in lyke maner syr Robert knolles capptayne of the Englysshemen in Brytayne, gatte there many holdes & townes, whyche I passe ouer.

Upon the.xxb.day of Octobre, dyuers of the burgeysys & rulers of the cytye of Parys, as Johñ Guyssarde, Nycholas Porret, & other to the noũbre of.xix. persones, by the cõmaundement of the regẽt were arested & sent vnto pryson/and so remayned by the space of.iiii. dayes. wherfore the frẽdes of the sayd prysoners yode vnto the prouoste of the marchaũtes than named Johñ Culdoe, and requyred hym to make labour with other vnto the regent than beyng at Louure, for the delyuery of theyr frẽdes, or at the lest to knowe the cause of theyr imprysonement/ whyche requeste ỹ prouost and other executed. It was answered to them by the regẽt, that vppon the morowe he wolde be at theyr commõ halle/ where before the compnaltye ỹ cause of theyr imprysonement shulde be shewed. And yf than the cytezyns thoughte good to haue them sette at large/ he wolde therwyth holde hym contented. At whyche houre apoynted, the regente came vnto the sayde halle/ and there shewed that one named Johñ Damyens, whyche hadde maryed the doughter of Johñ Restable one of the sayd prysoners, hadde causeed hys sayd father & the other, ỹ they had allyed theym with the kyng of Nauern cõtrary theyr allegeaũce/ wherfore he thought they had deserued to dye. But for the fauoure that he owed vnto the cytye & to them, for they were of good substaũce/ he wold nat do any thynge to theym tyll they were enquered of by theyr neyghbours. After the whyche declaracion thus made by the regẽt/ euery man fered to speke any more for theym, but suffered the lawe to haue hys course. Howe be it in the ende they were acquyted of that treason, and fynally delyuered by the ende of the nexte moneth.

Uppõ the thyrde daye of Decẽbre, entred into Parys the cardinalles of Pierregort & of Urgell, to treate a cõcorde and peace betwene the regente & the kyng of Nauerne. But in cõclusyon nothynge they sped of that they came for / wherefore they retourned vnto Aupnyon. In whyche retourne they were robbed of great substaũce/ wherof Englysshmen bare the disclaũder. And thus thys grudge hãgynge betwene the kyng & the regẽt / many robberyes & other harmes were done vnto dyuers townes in Fraũce, to ỹ greate enpouerysshynge of the peple of that lande, and to the greate enrychynge of suche Englysshemẽ as thã were there abydynge in dayely warres, bothe wyth the kynge of Nauerne & also in Brytayne.

For shortely after thys, the forsayde syr Roberte knolles and other Englysshemen wanne the towne of Ancer and other, lyke as in the thyrde and thyrty yere of kynge Edwarde is before more at lengthe declared.

In ỹ moneth of May & xix. day of

the same/ þ regẽt for tydynges which he had receyued from hys father out of England, by the reporte of þ archebysshop of Sẽs & other/ assẽbled many of þ good townes at Paris. But þ ways were so stopped by mẽ of warre he was fayne to tary tyll the.xxv. day of the sayd moneth folowynge. At whyche season was shewed to þ people there assembled, that the kyng of Englande to haue a fynall concorde with þ kyng of Fraunce, wolde haue ouer and aboue hys raunsome, þ duchy of Normandy, þ duchy of Guyẽ, the duchy of Erancetes, the cytye of Ageu, the cytye of Carbe, the cytye of Pierregort, the cytye of Lymoges, þ cytye of Caours, with all the dyoces of the sayde cytyes belõgyng/ the erledomes of Bygorre, of Poytyers, of Antowe, and of Payne, of Thorayn of Boulogne, of Guynys, of Poũtelles, or Pountyeu/ þ townes of Moũstruell, of Calays, & of Marquet/ with all appertenauntes to the sayde duchys, erledomes, cytyes, and townes belongynge/ them to enioye and holde wythout fealte or homage for them doynge, with many other thynges to the kyng of Englandes great aduauntage. whyche tydynges were ryght displeasaunt vnto all that cõpany/ in so moch that they answered that the sayd treaty was neyther honorable nor profytable. And rather thã the kyng shuld bynde hym & hys lande to suche inconuenience/ they wolde prepare to make sharpe warre a zayne Englande. wyth whyche answere the sayde assemble was dyssolued.

Upon the.xxviii. day of May, the regent reassembled the sayde people/ where it was condyscended that the nobles of the realme with a certayne persones euery man after hys astate, shuld serue the regent in hys warres by þ space of a moneth at theyr owne propre costes. And the cytye of Paris graũted to fynde to hym at theyr charge. vi. C. speres, iiii. C. archers, & a. M. of other sowdyours. And for so moche as þ other good townes wold nat graũt any subsydie tyll they had spoke with theyr cõpanyons/ therfore they were licẽced to depte home, and to bryng report agayn within xiiii. dayes. At whych season they shewed vnto þ regent, þ theyr countreys were so pylled & wasted by the kynge of Nauerne and Englyshemen, þ the people myght nothyng ayde hym as they thought to haue done. wherfore with moche payne they graũted to hi viii. M. mẽ for iii. moneths.

In the begynnyng of the moneth of Juny, þ regent with a stronge power sped hym towarde Melcõ where the kynge of Nauerne laye with hys people/ so that the kyng occupied the coũtrey toward Byeir, and þ regent þ coũtrey towarde Brye. where both hostes thus lyenge without notary feate of warre/ a treatye of accorde was yet agayne moued at lẽgthe, by agrement of þ Parlyens, accorded moche lyke vnto the former accorde concluded at Paris. So þ by media cyõ of certayn tẽporall lordes of both hostes, þ sayd princes agreed to mete at Melane/ and there to cõclude the sayd peace. where about the.xx. daye of August, wyth hostage delyuered vpon both partyes/ the sayd princes mette/ & after rode vnto Pountoyse, where they were both lodged within the castell/ where bothe theyr cõsayles were assygned to mete for the pertyghtyng of thys accorde. But so it was þ for suche lãdes as shuld be assygned vnto þ kyng, they cowde nat agre. wherfore þ regẽt in cõclusyõ sẽt vnto the erle of Stãps or Escamps, chargyng hi to say, þ he to þ entent to haue his good wyl, had offered vnto hym reasonable offers.

whyche

whyche yf he wolde accepte, he wolde be fayne therof/and yf nat, he let hym vnderstãde ỹ he shulde haue no peace wyth hym whyle he lyued. By reason of whyche message, ỹ coũsayles on bothe partyes concepued none other, but that this treaty shuld haue concluded no ampte nor peace. But howe it was, by counsayll or of hys owne lyberalyte, whan the kyng had degested this mater in his mynd by all that nyght folowynge/ he on ỹ morowe sent for the counsayll of the regent/ & wylled them to shewe vnto the regẽt, that he consydered well in hys mynde the great daunger & mysery whyche the realme of Fraunce stode in. wherfore he beyng of the naturall house of Fraũce, and one of ỹ Flouredelyce/ ought to se ỹ mayntenaunce of the honour of the same. And for that that no ruyne of the sayde realme shulde to hym (yf any fell) after be arected/ therfore he was cõtented to set a parte all suche great offers & promyses, as to hym before tyme had ben offered & promysed/ & to holde hym onely contented wyth hys owne right as he before tymes had enioyed. And to ỹ ende that thys hys wyll & pleasure myght to the people be knowen/ he wylled the regent that the people of that towne of Pontoyse shuld be assembled in the court of that castell, that he myght declare it to them in propre persone. The whych accordyng to his mynde was done. All whyche rehersall he made before the regẽt and compynalte of the towne/ promysyng there to delyuer out of hys possessiõ all suche townes, castelles, and holdys, as he had won syn he stode enemye to the crowne of Fraũce/ & to become true subiecte vnto the kyng, & louyng neuewe and frẽde vnto ỹ regẽt frome ỹ daye forewarde. wherof the regẽt & all the cõmons were very glad & ioyfull all be it that some trusted lytle to this accorde, nor yet to ỹ cõtinuaũce therof/ consyderynge the manyfolde accordes whych before tymes had ben betwene them cõcluded. After which accorde thus ended, the kynge wyth hys people retourned to Meliant, & ỹ regẽt to Paris/ appoyntyng betwene them to meate at Parys the fyrst day of September next folowyng.

ACcordyng to ỹ appoyntmẽte made at Pountoyse betwene the kyng and ỹ regẽt/ vpon the fyrste day of September & begynnyng of ỹ yere of kyng Johñ, the sayd kynge & regent met at Parys/ where atwen them was holden sumptuous cõpany, and great kyndenesse shewed vppon eyther partye. There also they counceyled how they shulde withstãde the kyng of Englande, whych entẽded to entre Fraunce shortely after wyth a stroñge power. And after many amptees and frendely dealynges betwen thẽ executed/ ỹ kyng rode to Meleũ to delyuer that towne and castel into the regentes possessyon as the story sheweth. But whã he was cõmyn thyther, were it with hys wyl or cõtrary/ the sowdyours toke greuouse tolles of all wynes and other marchaundyses that passed that waye/ whyche after was knowen to be for ỹ wages & sowde of the Nauarops and Englysshemen, whych helde the sayd towne and castell. And so ỹ Frenchmẽ were constrayned to paye the wages of theyr enemyes/ whyche greued them very sore, consyderynge that manyfolde harmes and pyllages of theym before were receyued. And after the kyng had auoyded the sayde sowdyours/ he departed & rode vnto Waũt leuyng Crepell in the possessiõ of Englysshmen & other. And ouer these manyfolde myseryes and myschyeues

thus fallyng in the realme of fraũce/ there fell so great habundaũce of water in the Herueſt ſeaſon, that ꝑ corne was loſte / ſo that it roſe to an hyghe ꝓyce to the greate damage of the comon people.

And in the moneth of Nouembre folowyng / the kynge of Englande, with ꝓynce Edwarde & other many lordes, with a ſtrõge power lãded at Calays/ & ſo perced Fraunce by Artoys in Pycardy & Vermendoys, & ſubdued the coũtrees before hym tyll he came to Reynes, lyke as before is ſhewed in the.xxxiiii.& xxxv. peres of kyng Edward/ where all thys mater wyth ꝑ tenoure of the peace betwene the ſayde kynges of Englande and of Fraunce is more at lengthe declared.

The laſte daye of the moneth of Decembre, one Marten of Pyſdo burgeyſe of Paris, was drawẽ vnto the place of iugemẽt / & there vpon a ſcaffolde had hyrſte hys armes cutte of, & after hys legges by the thyes, & laſtly hys hed / & than he was quartered, & hys.iiii.quarters ſette vppon iiii. ꝓyncyppall gates of the cytye, & hys hede ſette vpõ the pyllory. The cauſe of thys iugemente was, for ſo moche as one called Denyſot Palmier, to whome he had diſcouered his coũſayll, and cauſed hym to be as an acceſſary in all hys workes / had accuſed hym that the ſayd Marten had agreed & couenaunted with certayne officers & cappytaynes of the kyng of Nauerr, that they at a tyme appoynted ſhuld haue entred the cytye of Paris, & to haue ſlayne the regente & other, & to haue had the cytye at theyr rule and pleaſure. And ſo the ſeaſon thã of ꝑ.x.yere tyl ꝑ moneth of July, paſſed in the warres & treaty before touched/ ſo that the.viii.day of July, the Frenche kyng lãded at Calays, & there tarryed as ꝓyſoner tyl the .xxv. daye of Octobre folowynge, as before in ꝑ.xxxiiii.yere of kyng Edward is more playnly ſhewed.

Than vpon the.xxix. day of Octobre and begynnynge of hys.xi.yere/ kyng Johñ came to ſaynte Omers, where he tarryed tyll the fourth daye of Nouembre. And the.xi.day of December he came vnto ſaynte Denys/ where vnto hym vpõ ꝑ.xii. day came the kynge of Nauerne, whyche had nat ſene hym ſen he was delyuered from ꝓyſon/ & brought with hym certayne hoſtages whyche the Frenche kynge had ſente vnto hym for hys ſaufegarde / puttynge hym holy in ꝑ Frẽche kynges grace & mercy. And vpon the morowe folowyng, he was newly ſworne vnto the kynge to be hys trew & faythfull ſonne & ſubiect/ and the kyng agayn vnto hym, to be hys kynde father & good & gracyous ſoueraygne lorde. And forthe wyth were ſworne the duke of Normandy & Philip brother vnto the ſayd kyng of Nauerne, to mayntayne all couenauntes made & to be made betwene the ſayd.ii.kynges/ ſo that they were kyniſhed & cõcluded by the.xviii.day of January nexte folowyng. And ſoone after retourned the ſayd kyng of Nauerne vnto Maunt. And kyng Johñ vpon the.xiiii.daye of December wyth great trumphe was receyued into Paris.

And whanne he was comyn vnto hys palays, the ꝓuoſt of marchaũtes wyth certayne burgeyſes of the cytye, in the name of the compnaltye of the ſame, ꝓſented hym with a ꝓſent to the value of a.M.marke ſterlynge.

Upon a tuyſdaye beyng the fyrſte day of July, was foughten a batayll at Paris betwene two knyghtes/ wherof the appellaunte was named ſyr Foukes Dorciat, and the defendaũt ſyr Maugot Mawbert. whych

appellaunt

appellaũt was sore vered with a feuer quartayne/by reason wherof and of the great hete that ꝑ day appered, after longe fyght the sayd appellaũt lyght from hys horse for hys refresshemẽt/wherfore hys frendes of hym were in great doute. But his enemye was also so sore trauayled, ꝑ what for hete & labour he was also ouercome, & was lykely to haue fallen frõ hys horse/ and or he myght be taken downe he swowned & dyed.

Whan syr Fowkes was ware of ꝑ feblenesse of hys enemye anon as he might he dressed hym on fote toward hys aduersary, & fande hym starke dede / whyche by lycẽce of the kynge was after had out of the feelde, and secretly buryed/& the sayde syr Fowkes for feblenesse was by hys frẽdes ladde vnto hys lodgyng.

In the .xii. yere of kynge Johñ & xxi. day of Nouembre, Phylyp duke of Burgoyn, erle of Artoys, of Auuerne, and of Boloyngn, a chylde of the age of .xiiii. yeres or lesse, dyed at a town nere vnto Rome called Supõ By reason of whose deth kyng Johñ as nerte heyre had after possession of al the sayd lãdes, & toke possiõ therof shortly after.

In the .xiiii. yere of the reygne of kyng Johñ & thyrd day of Januarye/ he for specyall causes hym mouyng, as for the enlargyng of his sonne the duke of Orleaunce & other yet pledges for hys raũsome, toke shyppyng at Bolopne, & so sayled into Englãd, and arryued at Douer the .vi. day of the sayde moneth / and after rode to Eltham, and from thẽs was cõueyed vnto Lõdon, as before is shewed in the .xxxvii. yere of kyng Edward. In tyme of whose there beyng/ syr Barthã de Glaycon made warre vpõ the kynge of Nauerne, & wan from hym the towne of Waunt in Normandy. And by the duke of Normãdy soone after was wonne from the sayd kyng the towne of Méléce. within ꝑ which were taken dyuers Parysyens, that shortly after for theyr infidelite were put in execuciõ at Parys. And thus the warre betwene the kynges of Fraũce & Nauerne was newly begõ. Than kynge Johñ beyng as before is sayde in Englande/a greuous maladye toke hym in the begynnynge of Marche, of the whyche he dyed at London vpõ the .viii. daye of Apryll folowynge/& so wyth great honoure and solempnyte cõueyed to the sees syde, and there shypped, & thã in processe caryed into Fraunce.

Where vpon the .vii. day of May, and yere of our lorde god .M.CCC. lxiiii. he was solempnely enterred in the monastery of saynt Denys / whã he had reygned .xiii. yeres .vii. monethes and odde dayes / leuynge after hym thre sonnes, that is to say Charles, whych was kyng after hym, Lewys, and Phylyp.



Arolus or Charles ꝑ .vi. of that name or .v. after som writers, ꝑ eldest sonne of kyng Johñ/ beganne hys reygne ouer the realme of Fraũce, the .ix. day of Apryll, in the begynnynge of the yere of our lorde god .M.CCC.lxiiii and the .xxviii. yere of Edwarde the thyrd. than kynge of Englande/and was crowned with dame Jane hys wyfe at Raynes the .xix. day of May folowynge

In thys fyrste yere syr Barthzan de Glaycon lyeutenaunt of the sayde Charles in Normãdy, fought with a capptayne of the kynge of Nauerne named le Captall de Buesse, nere vnto a place called Cocherell, nere vnto the crosse of saynte Lyefroy/in

whiche fyght the ſayd Captall was ſcomfited and great noumbre of his people taken and ſlayne, hym ſelfe chaſed & taken / for whome the frenche kynge gaue after vnto the ſayde ſyr Barthā the Erledam of Longeuyle. And whā he had receyued him / he ſent him vnto a ſtrōge pryſon called the Werchy in Meaux.

At Wyghelmas folowynge / the duke of Bretayne ſyr Charlys de Bloyes, and ſyr Johñ de Woūtfort ſonne and heyre to the fore named ſir Johñ Wountfordе before dede, whiche by a longe ſeaſon bothe father & the ſonne had holden warre with the ſayd ſyr Charles, met in playne bataile / in ỳ which as before is ſhewed in the .xxxviii. yere of kyng Edwarde, the ſayde ſyr Charles was ſlayne & dyuers noble men of Fraunce with him. In the moneth of Juny and ſeconde yere of this Charlys, an other accorde was yet concluded atwene this Charles and the kynge of Nauerne. By reaſon of whiche accorde, the Captall of Bueſſe was clerely deliuered, and Maunt and Meulene agayne alſo to the kynge reſtored. And ouer that to the kynge of Nauerne was geuyn for a recompenſement, the Eriedome of Longeuyle, whiche as aboue is ſayd the frenche kyng had gyuen vnto ſyr Barthzan de Glaycon, for to haue the Captall to his priſoner. And alſo to the ſayde kynge of Nauerne was gyuen the lordſhyppe of Wountpyllier. And in the moneth of Febzuary began the warre in Spayne, where prince Edwarde ayded Peter kyng of ỳ lande, as before is ſhewed i the .xl. and .xlii. yeres of kynge Edwarde.

In the .iiii. yere, the peace atwene the kynges of Englande & of Fraūce began to breke, by meanes of the erle of Armenake & other, as in the .xlii. yere of kynge Edwarde is before ſhewed. And in the moneth of Decembre and the ſayd yere, the quene was lyghted of a man Chylde in the Hoſtell of ſaynt Paule / the whiche was after chriſtened with exceedynge ſolempnyte ouer other before paſſed, in the churche of ſaint Paule in Parys, the .vi. day of Decembre of the cardinal of Parys. To whome were godfathers the erles of Wountmerency and of Dampmartyn, & godmother Jane quene of Eurour / and bare the name of Charlys after the erle of Wountmerency. In the .v. yere of this Charlys, he called his counſell of parlyament at Parys. Durynge the whiche, the appellacyons of the erle of armenake and other purpoſed agayne prynce Edwarde, were publyſſhed and radde / & the anſweres of the ſaid prince vpon the ſayd appellacyons made, whiche ouerpaſſe for length of the mater. But the concluſyon was, that the prince had broken the peas and couenauntes of the ſame as they there demyd. wherfore all ſuche townes & holdes as the frenche kyng had gotten, he ſhulde them retayne / & make warre vpon the kynge of Englande for the recouery of the other. where vpon kynge Charles in the moneth of July folowyng, rode vnto Roan, and there rygged his naupe / entendynge as ſayth the frenche hiſtorye, to haue made warre vpon Englād / and to haue ſent thyther his yongeſt brother Philippe than duke of Burgoyne with a ſtronge armye. But whyle he was there beſyed about his purpoſe / the duke of Lancaſtre arryued with a ſtrong power at Caleys / and ſo paſſed to Tyrwyn, & ſo vnto Ayr. wherfore kynge Charlys then chaunged his purpoſe, and ſent his ſayde brother into thoſe ptyes. Then by that ſeaſon that ỳ ſayd duke was prepared with hys people / the engliſſhemen

glysshemen were comyn vnto Arde. And the frenche men spedde them in suche wyse, that they logged the the xviiii. day of Auguste vpon the mountayne of Tournehawe nere vnto Arde/so that both hoostes were lodgyd within an englysshe myle. Atwene whom were dayly bekeringes and small skyrmysshes. All whyche season the Frenche kyng tarved styll aboute Rowan.

Than the kyng of Nauerne, whiche by a longe season had dwellyd in Nauerne, came by shyppe into Constantyne /and sent vnto kynge Charlys ꝑ if he were so pleased, he wolde gladly come vnto hym for to shewe to him his mynde. wherfore the kyng sent vnto hym as hostagys, the erle of Salebyrge, the deane of Parys, with.ii. other noble men/the whyche the kynge of Nauerne wolde nat accepte. In the moneth of September and vpon the.xii. day/when the duke of Burgoyne had ryen as before is sayd nere vnto the englysshe hooste, he that day remoued his people, and so went vnto Helden. And the Englisshe hoost remoued to Caur & other places, as before I haue shewed to you in the.xliii. yere of kynge Edwarde, with other thynges appertenynge vnto the same mater. And in the sayd moneth of September, kynge Charles manned and vitayled certayne galeys & other shyppes/ and sent them into walys, and so to haue entred into Englãde. But they retourned with lytle worshippe/natwithstandynge that he had. ii. noble men of walys named Owan and James wynne, whiche made to him faste promesse of great thynges, by reason that they were enemyes vnto the kyng of Englande. For this and for other charges, the kynge called a conuocacyon of the temporalte and spiritualte at Parys. where to mayntayne hys warres, was graunted to hym of all thynge bought & solde excepte vitayle, the.iiii. peny/so that all thynge that was solde by retayle, the seller shuld pay the exaccion/and that whyche was solde by greate, the byer shulde paye the sayd exaccion. And the spiritualte graunted a dyme to be payed in. ii. halfe yeres. And the lordes and gentylmen were stynted at a certaintye, after the value of theyr landes. In the moneth of February, the kyng sent vnto the kynge of Nauerne than beynge at Chierbourgth certayne messyngers, to perfyght an ampyte atwene them, leste he toke party agayne hym with the Englysshemen. But thys treatye contynued a longe season/so that i the. vi. yere a moneth of June, the kynge of Nauerne hauyng sufficient hostages, came to the frenche kynge to Vernon. where in conclusion the kynge of Nauerne made his homage vnto the frenche kyng, and became there his feodary/wherof the Frenchemen made moche ioye. After whiche accorde / the sayde kynge of Nauerne the thirde day folowing toke his leaue of the kynge, and so rode vnto Eureux. All which season ꝑ warre was cõtynued by Englisshe men within the realme of Fraunce & prouince of Bretayne, as before is expressed in the. xliiii. xlv. xlvi. yeres of kynge Edwarde.

In the. vii. yere and moneth of Auguste / the duke of Braban with many nobles of Fraunce, mette in playne batayll with ꝑ duke of Juliers & the duke of Guelire. In which batayll after cruell fyght, the duke of Braban was chased/and vpõ his syde slayne the erle of sayne Poule, with many other noble men, whiche the story nameth nat. And vpon the other syde was also slayne the duke of Guelire, with many other vpon

that

that partye.

IN the.xi.yere of kyng Charles the monyth of Maye / he assembled his great coũsell of parlyament at Parys. where amonge many actes made for ỳ weale of his realme / he with assente of his lordes and cõmons there assembled, enacted for a lawe after that day to be contynued, that al heyres to ỳ crowne of Fraũce theyr fathers beynge dede, may be crowned as kynges of Fraunce so soone as they attayned vnto the age of.xiiii.yeres. And in this yere was the treatye of peace laboured by the two cardynalles sent from the pope, as before is shewed in the.xlix. yere of kynge Edwarde. After whyche treatye nat concluded / the kynge of Englande loste dayly of hys landes in Fraunce. For in the monyth of August folowyng, ỳ duke of Berry, the duke of Angeo, and many other lordes to them assygned in dyuers places, as in Guyan, Angeo, and Mayne / gate and wanne from the Englysshemen many coũtreys, townes, and castels / as Pierregorst, Rouerge, Caoursyn, Bigorre, Balyndas, Berregart, Daimet / with many other townes and holdes, whyche wolde aske a lõge leysour to reherce, to the noumbre of.vi.score and.xiiii. what of townes, castelles, and other holdes / whiche in shorte whyle were wonne frome the Englysshemen, in the parties of Fraunce and Bretayne.

Of what age the heyre to the crown of Fraũce shuld be crowned.

In the.xiii.yere of this Charles / the Emperour of Rome & Almayne named Charles the.iiii. of that name, came into Fraũce by Cambray, to do certayne pylgrymages at saint Denys and elles where / and so was conueyed with honorable men, as the lorde of Coucy and other, vnto sayne Quintyne / where he taryed Chrystmas daye. And after he was conueyed to a towne called En of Ewe / and from thẽce to Hopen, and than to Compeygne / where he was mette with the duke of Burbon and other nobles. Than he rode to Senlys / where he was mette with the dukes of Berry and of Burgoyne, bretherne of the Frenche kynge, and many other as bisshoppes and other lordes. And ye shall vnderstande that all suche as rode in the companyes of these forsayde dukes, except bysshops and prestes, rode in theyr iuerys. As the companye kyrte of the duke of Burbon brother vnto the quene, to the noumbre of. CCC. men, were all cladde in whyte and blewe. The company of the.ii.other dukes, the noumbre of.v.C. men, in blacke and russet / that is to meane the erles and other lordes in clothe of golde, the knyghtes in veluet, the gentylmen in damaske and sattyn, and the yemen in clothe. Thanne from Senlys he was brought vnto Louuris / where mette with hym the duke of Barre, with a companye of CC.horse, and his company cladde in grene and redde. And from thens he was had to sayute Denys vpon the thyrde day of January / whither the king sent to him a chayre rychely garnysshed, for so moche as he was vexed with the goute. And the quene sente to hym an horse lytter with.ii. whyte palfreys: where he was also mette with a great companye of bysshoppes and other spirituall men, as abbottes, priours, and other / and taryed there.ii.dayes.

Upon the.v.day of January beynge monday, he rode towarde Parys. But or he were halfe a myle frõ sayute Denys, he was mette with the prouoste of the marchauntes, with a cõpany of.xv.C.horse, ỳ cytezens being cladde in whyte and violette / and so rodde before hym tyll he

he came to Parys. whan the kynge was warned that he was nere the cytye, he lepte vpon a whyte palfrey/ and accompanied with many lordes and other to the noumbre of a. M. men, all his housholde seruauntes beyng cladde i one liuerey of browne blewe and darke tawny, and the seruauntes of the dolphyn of Vyen in blewe and cremesyne euery man after his degree / and so the kyng with his company mette with the emperour at the mylle without the towne called the wynde mylle. where after due salutes made eyther vnto other/ the frenche king put the Emperour vpon his ryght hande, and toke the kynge of Romaynes sonne vnto the emperour vpon his lyfte hande. And so the frenche kynge rydinge in the myddes, passed thorowghe the hygh stretes of Paris tyll they came to the kynges palays. where he was lodged with all honoure/ & after fested with the kinge and the quene by the space of.xvi.dayes. whiche terme endyd, like as with all honoure he was conueyed into the lande / so with great honour and ryche gyftes he was agayne conueyed out of the lande.

In the moneth of Februarye folowynge and the. vi. daye, dyed the quene of fraunce in the hostell of saynt Poule in Parys/and after buryed with great solempnyte and honoure in the monastery of saynt Denys. In the moneth of Marche the kynge receyued letters from certeyn lordes of hys lande/ in the whyche was conteygned that the kynge of Nauerne had imagened and conspired with one Jaquet de rue his chãberlayne, for to poyson hym/the whiche Jaquet was than comyn into fraunce to execute his cursed purpose. wherfore the frenche kynge layed suche wayte for hym, that he was taken/ and founden vpon hym a byll of certayne instruccions, howe he shulde behaue hym selfe in accomplysshyng his euyll purpose. Than he was brought vnto the kinges presence/to whome he confessed the circumstaunce of all his treason to be done at the commaundement & counsell of the kyng of Nauerne. Soone after the eldest sonne of the kynge of Nauerne, whiche was newely comyn into Normandy, sent vnto king Charles/shewynge to hym that if it were his pleasure, he wolde gladlye come vnto hys presence for to speke with hym/with that he myght haue a sure saferconduyt for hym, and all suche as he shulde brynge with him. The whiche to hym was graunted/ and vpõ the same came vnto Delys where the kynge than was. And after he had comoned a season with ỹ kynge / he made to hym requeste for the delyuere of the forsaid Jaket de Rue/layenge for hym sondrye excuses. But whanne the kynge hadde caused the sayd Jaket to be brought forthe before the sayde sonne of the kynge of Nauerne named syr Charlys/he auouched suche thynges before hym that he coude nat denaye, but that his father had commytted many and sondry treasons, aswell agayne kynge Johñ as nowe agayne kyng Charles hys sonne. wherfore after diuers assembles and counseils hadde vpon this matter / the kynge and the said sir Charles agreed, that all suche townes and holdes as the sayd kynge of Nauerne had within Normandy, shulde be delyuered vnto ỹ duke of Burgoyne to the frenche kynges vse. And for that pmesse shulde be truely parfourmed/ỹ king firste sware the said syr Charles/and after many of the capitaynes whiche had the rule of the sayd townes and castelles. And for so moche as the sayd syr Charles had there presente

with

with hym a capitayne named sir Fernande de Oyens, in whose guyding many of the sayde holdes than were, and suspected him that he wolde nat perfourme the sayd promesse / therfore he caused hym to be arested, and to be had vnto prison, tyll the holdes beynge vnder hys guydynge were clerely deliuered. Upon which agrement thus concluded and swozne / ꝑ duke of Burgoyne with the sayd sir Charles and the sayd syr Fernande as a prisoner was sent into Nozman dye, with a conuenyent army. where wyth awe and fauoure the duke in processe of tyme had to hym delyuered, all suche townes and holdes as the kynge of Nauerne there had / excepte the towne and castell of Chirebourgth. In whiche passe tyme and season was also taken in a towne called Bzetnell, a secretary to the kyng of Nauerne, with certayne wzytynges beynge in a coffer within the chambze. By reason of whiche wzytynges, and also by the confessyon of the partye / many mo thynges concernyng the confessyon of Jaket de Rue was than manifested and appzoued: which secretary was named maister Peter de Tertre a frenchman bozne. But he had serued the kynge of Nauerne by the moze terme of hys lyfe. Upon this confessyon made and wzyten by the sayde secretary / the kinge called his court of parlyament. Dutynge whiche, bothe the said maister Peter and also the sayd Jaket, were bzought befoze the lozdes and commons. where theyz confessyons were redde, & they examyned vpon euery artycle of the same, and affyzmed all theyz fozmer sayenges. wherefoze shoztely after by auctozyte of that court, they were demed to dye foz theyz treasons / and so were hangyd and hedyd, and theyz. viii. quarters hangyd at sondzy gates and places of Parys. And whan the kyng had recepued into his possession the fozesayde holdes belongynge vnto the kynge of Nauerne, the whiche so often had rebelled agayne his father & hym / he was counselled by his lozdes that he shulde thzowe to grounde diuers of the sayd castelles / lest ꝑ king of Nauerne them recouered agayne, and by meane of theyz fozces wozke vnto hym and his realme newe displeasures. By reason of which counsell, the kynge made euen with the grounde these foztresses folowynge. Fyzst the castell of Bzetnell, of Dozlet, of Beaumoût le Roger, of Pacy Dampet and clopsters of the same / the towze & castell of Nogent le roy, the castell of Eurour, the castell of Pount Audemer, the castell of Mozteygne, and of Ganraut oz Ganray, with other in the countrey of Constantyne. But the towne of Chirebourgth remayned styll in the possessyon of the Nauaroys / the whiche with ayde of Englysshe men was kept from the frenche kynge. And the fozenamed syr Farnande was contyzmaũded to pzison, foz so moch as he was captaine of ꝑ same towne / thinkynge in hym defaute that the sayd towne was nat delyuered with the other.

‡ A scysme begonne in the chyrche of Rome.

IN the. xiiii. yere of this Charles and moneth of August / tydinges came vnto him of the scisme whiche was begonne in the churche of Rome. Foz after the dethe of the xi. Gregozy whiche dyed in the moneth of Apzyll foze passed / by meane of the Frenche cardynalles whyche were. xi. in noumbze, after the other Italyen cardynalles wyth other of theyz affinite had elected and chosen a Napolytane and archebysshoppe of Barre, the frenche cardynalles with the election nat beynge contented,

ted, wyth such as fauoured they⁊ parte, denounced and publysshed one named Robert cardynall of Basyle, and named hym Clemēt ỹ. vii, where the fyrst was named Urban ỹ. vi. Of the maner of thys scysme some what I haue shewed to you in the. liii. yere of Edwarde the. iii. But to expresse ỹ certaynty of thys scysme/trouth it is that after ỹ deth of the forenamed. xi. Gregory, the cardynalles beyng in ỹ cōclaue or cōsayll chaumbre where the pope is accustomed to be chosen/ ỹ Romayns beyng in harnesse made suche exclamacions vpon the cardynalles beyng in ỹ cōclaue for to haue an Italiā pope, ỹ the cardynalles for fere to be slayn elected and chase one named Bartholmew a Napolytan ⁊ archebysshop of Barre, ⁊ named Urbā the. vi. But thys after he was admytted was so proude ⁊ so cōbrous, that he ruled all by wyll ⁊ nothynge by right or goodly ordre of reason or cōscyence. wherfore the cardynalles beyng repētaunt of ỹ they had done/ a certayne of them in the cytye of Fōdes, the. xx. day of Septembre elected ⁊ chase an other named Roberte cardynall of Basyle, and named hi Clement the. vii/ and by they⁊ auctorites publysshed hym for very pope, ⁊ dysalowed that other before chosē. But the Romaynes wolde nat thereunto be agreable/ but helde thē vnto they⁊ former pope. wyth whome also helde ỹ prouinces of Germany ⁊ Dānony, with ỹ more parte of Italy. And with the laste chosen pope, helde Fraunce, Spayne, Catelonye, ⁊ Englād. And thus began ỹ scysme, whyche contynued by the terme of. xxxix. yere after. In the. xv. yere of kynge Charles, he for so moche as syr Johū de Moūtforte duke of Brytayne, toke partye wyth the Englysshemē agayn hym, ⁊ wolde nat apere at such dayes as to hym were assygned / therfore ỹ sayde kyng Charles sent into the duchye of Brytayn to seasē ỹ lande into ỹ kynges hādes, the duke of Burbō, syr Lewys de Sācer marshall of Fraunce, syr Johanne de Vyenne admyrall of Fraūce, ⁊ syr Bertā de Ryuyer hys chāberleyne, wyth other mē of name, with a great cōpany of mē of armes/ the whych at they⁊ cōmyng into Brytayne fāde ỹ countrey all otherwyse dysposed thā they supposed. For where as they at they⁊ comyng thought to haue receyued ỹ possessiō of ỹ townes ⁊ castelles in peasyble wyse/ they were denayed ⁊ playnly answered, ỹ they were sworn to they⁊ duke to bere to hym trew fidelite ⁊ seruice/ which they entēded to obserue ⁊ kepe wyth whych answere ỹ sayde duke ⁊ hys company were fayne to returne vnto ỹ French kynge. The whyche shortly after sent thyder ỹ duke of Angeou with a strōge armye to warre vpon the cōtrey. In whych season syr Johū de Woūtfort herynge of ỹ frēch kynges entēt, arryued in Brytayne wyth a cōpany of Englysshe archers. To whome drewe such multitude of Brytons, ỹ the duke of Angeou was fayn to retourne into Fraunce without worshyp there thā wynnynge.

In the moneth of Octobre the Flemynge, of Gaūt ⁊ other, for greuous exactyon vpō thē set, rebelled agayn they⁊ erle/ ⁊ slew hys baylye ⁊ officer assigned by ỹ erle to gather his tolles ⁊ after besyeged other townes which toke party with ỹ erle agayne thē, as Audenarde, Terremonde ⁊ other. wherof herynge ỹ duke of Burgoyn, whose doughter the sayd duke hadde maryed/ assembled hys Burgonyōs ⁊ sped hym into the marchys of Flaūders, and so layed hys syege vnto Tourney. But the Flemynges defended the duke in suche wyse, that the duke was agreable to fal to a treaty. In the whyche it was fyrst accorded

ff. and

and agreed, that the erle at ꝑ requeſt of the duke, ſhulde pardō & forgyue clerely to hys ſubiectes, all offences by them to hym done before ꝑ day / & alſo ꝑ he ſhuld graunt vnto them all theyr former lyberties & ꝓpryuileges, in as ample & large wyſe as they had them graūted at hys fyrſte cōmynge in / & mayntayn & vpholde theyr auncyent cuſtomes, & to rule theym after the ſame. Secondarily, if any letters haue ben made & ſealed cōtrary theyr ꝓpryuileges ſen ꝑ tyme of thys rebellyon, that the erle ſhall reuoke theym & cancell them for euer. Thyrdely, ꝑ all ſuche capytaynes of Almayne as at thys tyme haue ben in ꝑ dukes or erles wagys agayn the Flemynges, ſhalbe ſolemply ſworne, that for any hurt or harme by them in thys warre receyued / they nor none of theyr nacion ae farre as they may lette it, ſhal nat hurt nor harme any man of ꝑ cōtrey of Flaunders at any tyme here after in reuengemēt of thys warre.

And ſo fourthly, that of .iiii. of ꝑ beſt townes of Flaūders, xxv. men to be choſen by the burgeys of the ſame, the whych ſhall haue correction of al defautes nat touchynge lyfe & dethe done by ꝑ Flemynges / & alſo to haue power to correcte all ſuch as be foūd culpable of the erles counſayll, in cō playntes or offences crymynall. Fyrſt ſy that the ſayde .xxv. perſones ſhall haue auctorryte and power, to make inquyſycyon from yere to yere of the gouernaunce of the lande / and what fawtes ben to them ꝓſented, as often as .xiii. of theym be ſyttynge togyther in one counſayll, they ſhal haue full power to gyue ſentēce vppon the ſame / & that ſētēce to be obeyed without interrupcīō. And what by theym is ſentēſed / the erle to vpholde and mayntayne wyth all hys myghte and power. Syrtely it was deſyred but nat concluded, that for ſo moch as ꝑ town of Audenarde & of Terremoūd toke party agayn theyr neyghbours, that the walles of theym in certayne places ſhuld be euened with ꝑ groūd, in tokē of theyr vnnaturall dealyng. And ſeuently & laſtly it was cōcluded that the ꝓuoſt of Brugys ſhuld after ꝑ daye be put out of the erles coūſayll / and nat after therunto to be admytted wythout cōſent of the forſayned .xxv. perſones. All whych artycles were agreed vnto by the erle, & paſſed & auctoryſed by hys lettre & ſeale / all be it thys accorde cōtynued no whyle, as here after ſhall apere.

In the .xvi. yere & moneth of Octobre the inhabytauntes of the cyty / or towne of Mountpyller, in the countrey of Languedoke, for an impoſicīō or ayde that was put to them by the duke of Angrou, aroſe by one accord agayne ꝑ mynyſters & counceyllours of the duke (whyche duke was lewtenaunt generall vnder hys brother the Frenche kyng) and wythout reaſon or diſcrecyō, in theyr furye and rage ſlewe syr Guyllyam Poncell knyght and chaunceller to the duke, syr Guy Deſſerpke ſtuarde of Rouerge, mayſter Arnolde gouernour of Mountpyller, mayſter James de Chainy ſecretary to the duke, & many other officers and ſeruauntes of the ſayde duke, to the noūbre of .lxxx. perſones. And whā they had them ſlayn, as tyrauntes natte beynge contente wyth that cruelneſſe, they threwe the dede bodyes into dyuerſe foule and ſtynkynge pyttes / nat ſufferynge thē to be buryed as cryſtē men ſhulde.

Wherof whā knowlege was brought vnto ꝑ duke, he was therwyth greuouſly amoued / and made hys othe that he ſhulde punyſſhe theym to the fere and example of all other / and therupō gathered hys people for to reuenge thys cruel dede. whan the rumour of thys myſcheuouſe dede

was

was some deale apeased, and ꝑ wyse men & auncyent of the towne had digested thys hasty and cruel dede, & loked vpon the ende therof / than they were appalled in theyr myndes, and were very repentaunt of the dede that they had done. And whan they had consydered all thynges, as the dede detestable of it selfe, the great myght of the duke, & ouer ꝑ the ayde whych shuld to hym be gyuen of the kynge/ they cõcepued well there was no remedy but to seche for meanes of mercye & grace. For optaynynge whereof they made dyuers ways to the duke/ but none wold be accepted Lastely in the moneth of January, whã ꝑ duke had prepayred all thynges necessary to the warre/ he toke hys iournay towarde the sayd towne of Mõtpyller, ledyng wyth hym a stronge hoste of men of armys / vtterly entẽdynge to subuerte that towne, & to dystroye ꝑ more parte of the people. whereof herynge the people of the towne, toke theyr aduyce & ordered them as folowyth. Fyrst they sent out agayn hym dyuers officers of the kynges suche as they knewe were in hys fauoure/ and ordeyned them to be in a place, & there knelynge to aske grace & mercy for the towne. Secondarily they sent the cardynall of Albany / & thyrdely all the collages and mẽ of religiõ as well nunnys as other/ and fourthly they sent the estudyaũtes of the lawe canon and cyuyle, and also of medycyne or physyke/ all beynge set vpon eyther syde of the waye where ꝑ duke shuld passe, & knelynge vppon theyr knees, shulde crye wythout ceasynge mercy gracyous prynce mercy. Thã after these were set the consuls or rulers of ꝑ towne, in gowns without theyr clokes vngyrde, euery mã with a corde aboute hys necke, hauynge wyth thẽ the keys of the cytie. And at the entre of ꝑ cytye, stode the women wyth ꝑ maydẽs of the same/ & all men chyldrene whych were vnder the age of .xiiii. yeres. And betwene that age & .vi. yeres, were set next after the studyaũtes forsayd. whan this innumerable people was thus ordered, and euery che taughte in what wyse they shuld behaue them/ vpõ the .xxv. day of January about the houre of .iii., ꝑ duke wyth his people approched the towne/ & beholdynge the multytude and the lamentable crye, was some what moued wyth compassyõ/ and so holdyng hys way, mette wyth ꝑ sayd cardynall. The whyche after conuenyent salutacyõ vnto hym made, shewed that as a legate & messynger he was sent vnto hym frõ the pope Clemẽt the .vii., requyrynge of hym pardõ for the towne and peple of Mõtpiller/ admonestynge hym farther in the sayd popes behalfe, that what so euer punysshemẽt he dyd vnto the towne, ꝑ he shuld absteyne hym from ꝑ shedynge of crystẽ blode, and specyally of suche as he myght knowe was innocẽt of ꝑ dede. To whyche message the duke gaue none answer/ but toke the cardynall vppon hys right hãde, and so rode forth togyder. where euer the people kneled on eyther syde of ꝑ way, and cryed lamẽtably, mercy gracious pryncemercy/ and so passed tyll he came where ꝑ cõsuls stode, whiche knelyng offered vnto hym the keyes of ꝑ towne. But he as though he regarded thẽ nat, cast hys loke frõ thẽ & cõmaũded ꝑ seneschal of Beaucayr to receyue ꝑ sayd keys/ & so passed on tyll he came vnto ꝑ cõpany of womẽ, whych reherced his stony hert to se the great lamẽtaciõ they made with theyr wofull crye. wherefore to be ryddc of thẽ, he called vpon his fore ryders to passe on more faster/ so that lastly he came to hys lodgynge.

When the duke was comen vnto his lodgynge / anon he com-

¶ A terrible iugement of papistimēt and execucyon.

maunded all the offycers of the town with the consulat or rulers of ꝑ same vnto a place called sayut Germayne, & the gates of that place he toke to be watched wyth men of armes, & vpon the morowe folowynge, commaũded all the armoure & artylery belõgyng vnto the towne, to be brought to a place by hym assygned, & there to be kept by hys offycers. Than the cardinall came agayn vnto the duke, and brought with hym dyuers doctours of diuinite & other, which made vnto hym assyduat labour for mercy to be shewed vnto the towne & to the inhabytauntes of the same. But all they coude get no graũt of hym, but ꝑ as vpon ꝑ morowe they shuld know the sentẽce that he wolde gyue vpon the towne and inhabitaũtes of the same. And for ꝑ sentẽce myght be well vnderstãden of the people, he cõmaũded ꝑ at after noone a scaffolde shulde be made in the cheke place or strete of the towne. wherupõ the morowe beynge the. xxvii. day of January, dyuers of the dukes coũsayll beyng vpõ ꝑ sayd scaffolde, & the people of the town beynge there present as well prysoners as other, after a longe oracion made by the dukes chaũceler of the greate & heynous dede lately there done by the inhabytaũtes of that towne, for ꝑ whych correccyon temporall myghte nat be to greuouse / all be it that the duke at the commaundemente of the pope, & requeste of hys legat & cardynall there present, had mytygate or lessed the punysshmẽt, as after shuld well apere by declaracyon of the sentence folowynge / after whych protestacion, the sentẽce was proclaymed as folowyth.

Fyrste the compnaltye of the town for theyr rebellyon & dysobedience agayne theyr prynce done, shuld paye vnto ꝑ kyng. vi. score. M. frankes, & a franke is worth. ii. s. sterl. And so ꝑ towne shulde be charged wyth. lx. li. ¶ And ouer that to paye all such costes & charges, as the duke had spent by occasyon of thys tournay. Secondarily. vi. hundreth persones of the towne such as myght be tryed moste culpable in thys offence, shuld suffre deth. That is to wytte. ii. C. to be hanged with chaynes. ii. C. to be beheded & theyr hedes to be sent vnto dyuers good townes of Fraũce / & the other ii. C. suche as of ꝑ. vi. C. shalbe found moste gylty of the begynnynge of that ryot, shuld be brẽt / & that they & also the other. ii. C. whyche shulde be hãged, shuld be caryed vnto dyuerse good townes of Fraunce, & there to haue theyr execuciõ, to the vtter fere and terrour of all other / and all theyr goodes to be forfayted to the kynge. Thyrdely two gates of ꝑ towne such as the duke wolde appoynt, with the walles & towres standynge betwene ꝑ sayd gates, to be made playne with the grounde / & the dyke of the towne to be be fylled wyth ꝑ same. Fourthly all maner of ordenaunce & abylymẽtes for warre belonging to the town, to be forfayted vnto ꝑ kyng. Fyftely, the compnalty of the cytye to buylde a chapell, and to endowe it wyth so moche lãde as myght fynde. vi. prestes there in to synge for euer, and to praye for the soules of the persones before slayne. And the bodyes whych they had throwẽ before into the foule and stynkyng pyttes / the counsayll and chefe rulers of the towne, shuld vppon theyr proper backes brynge theym vnto the sayde chappell, and there cause theym solemply to be enterred. Syxtly, that all such goodes as the sayde persones so slayne hadde wythin the town, or elles were spoyled by the sayde cytezeyns / that it shulde be restored vnto the wyues or nerre kynnesfolkes of theym so dede, whan the proclamacyon of this

sentence

sentence was ended, there was an exclamacyō & crye of mercy, & suche sorowe & lamētyng made of ỹ peple, that the noyse therof soūded to the heuens. But to bringe thys tragedy to conclusyon, fynally suche labour was made vnto the duke, aswell by exortacyō of sermons & other, that al thynges were pardoned, except the foūdacyon of the chapell, & execucyō of certayne persones, which were accused to be the occasyoners of thys myschiefe, and also the costes of that iournay, ỹ which were cessed at .xxiiii M. frākys or .xxiiii. C. li. sterlynges. After whych ende thus made, the cōsulatz of ỹ town were restored agayn to theyr habyte & rule, and to theym was admytted all former offices and rule of the towne, except the office of baylywyke.

In the moneth of July began the inhabytauntes of Gaūt in Flaūders to rebell agayne theyr erle of newe, ỹ cause wherof is nat shewed. But they wyth ayde, whych they had of Ipre, Courtray, and other townes, made a great hoste, & rode strayght vnto a towne in Flaūders called Dyrmew, entendyng to haue take it. But ỹ erle beyng warned therof, wyth ayde of Bruges & of Frāk and other, māned out a company agayn the other, and mette with them in playne feilde, and after a sharpe skyrmysshe, put theym of Gaūt to flyght, & slewe of them dyuers, & toke of them certayne prysoners, & pursued them vnto the town of Ipre, and layed syege to the same. whan the heddes of the towne knew that the erle was there in proprre parsone, vnder a certayne apoyntement they opened the gates, and receyued hym in. But many of hys enemyes were fled vnto Courtray. And whan the erle had rested hym in ỹ towne .ii. dayes, & done there some execucyō, he departed thēs and rode vnto Bruges and helde hym there. In whyche season the other whych as aboue is sayd were fled vnto Courtray, fell at varyaunce within theym selfe, & slewe theyr cayptayne, & after fled ỹ towne & shyfted euery man for hym selfe.

Than a knyght called syr Hoyer of Gaūt, came vnto the towne of Courtray, and so exorted the rulers of the towne, ỹ they promysed hym to take hys parte. wherupon he gate a baner of the erles armes in hys hande, and so rydynge aboute that towne cryed, who that wolde take the erles party & hys, lette hym folowe that baner, whome the people folowed in greate noumber. And whā ỹ erle was asserteyned of that dede, & howe the town of Courtray was tourned vnto hys party, anone he assembled of other townes, & also of that, and of Ipre, so moche that hys hoste was estemed at lx. M. mē. wyth the whiche he spedde hym vnto Gaunte, & layed a stronge syege there about. But by the deth of the French kyng whych dyed shortly after, the erle was fayne to chaunge hys mynde, & to remoue hys syege or elles, as some writers reporte, for strength of the sayde towne, whyche myght nat lyghtly begotte, for lacke of good vpon ỹ erles partye to mayntayne that syege. Thā in the moneth of Septembre and .xxvi. daye of the same, kynge Charles dyed at his manoyr called playsance sur Marne, & was buryed by his wyfe in the monastery of saynt Denys, whan he had reygned .xv. yeres and .vi. monethes wyth odde dayes, leuynge after hym iii. sonnes, Charles which was kyng after hym, and Lewys that he hadde made erle of Ualoys and after duke of Angeowe, and Phylyppe erle of Poytyers.

Deth of kyng Charles.

¶ Anglia.

Kk. iii. Kychard

RIchard the second of that name, and sonn of p;ynce Edwarde eldest sonn of Edwarde þ .iii, a chyld of þ age of a.xi.yeres, begãne hys reygne ouer þ realme of England, þ.xxii. day of Juny in the yere of our lo;de.M.CCC. lxxvii/ & the.xiii.yere of the.vi. Charles than kyng of Fraunce. This Rychardе was bo;ne at Burdeaux/ of whose by;the some w;yters tell wonders, the whyche I passe ouer.

And vpon the.xv.daye of July in the yere abouesayd he was crowned at westmynster beyng the daye of the translacyon of saynt Swythyn. In whyche tyme & season stoode May;e & sh;yues of the cyty of Lõdon these persones folowynge.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxvii. Grocer. Nycholas Bzembze.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxviii. Andzewe Pykman. Anno.i. Nycholas Twyfo;de.

The whyche contynued so in they; offyces, that is to saye þ sh;yues tyll Myghelmas, & þ may;e tyl the feest of Symon and Jude. At whyche season were chosen & admytted newe offycers.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxviii. Grocer. Johñ Phylpot.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxix. Johñ Bolcham. Anno.ii. Thomas Co;nwaleys.

IN the moneth of August & begynnynge of the secõde yere of kyng Rychard/ fo; warpaunce which was betwene the lo;de Latymer & sir Rafe Ferrers vpõ that one partye, & sy; Robert Hal & Shakerley esquyer vpon that other partye, fo; a p;yso-ner taken beyõde the see in Spayne, called the lo;de of Dene, whome the sayd esquyers helde in they; possessiõ contrary the wylles of the fo;esayde knyghtes / fo; the sayde cause þ sayd knyghtes entred the churche of saint Pety;, and there fyndyng þ sayd sy; Robert kneelynge at masse, wythoute reuerence of the sacrament o; place, slewe hym in the churche at þ hyghe masse seasõ/ & after that other named Shakerley was by they; meanes arested and had to the towy;e of London, where he was kepte as p;yso-ner longe after.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxix. Grocer. Johñ. Hadley.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxx. Johñ Heylysdone. Anno.iii. wyllyam Baret.

IN the moneth of May & the later ende of the seconde yere of kynge Rycharde / certayne Galeys and other shyppes sente by Charles the syxte than kynge of Fraunce, of the whych was chefe patron o; cappytayne a knyghte named sy; Oliuer de Clycon/ landed in dyuerse places of Englande and dyd moche harme, & lastly entred the ryuer of Thamis, and so

and so came to Graueslende where he spoyled the towne and brent a parte thereof and retourned into Fraunce with moche rychesse as affermeth the Frenche cronycle. In this yere also was holden a parlyamente at westmynster/in the which was graunted that all men & women beynge of the age of.xiiii.yeres and aboue, shulde paye vnto the kynge.iiii. d. By reason whereof great grudge and murmure grewe amonge the commons as after shall appere. Than with ꝑ money an armye was prepared/ and thereof was made chefe gouernoure syr Thomas of woodstoke erle of Cambrydge and vncle vnto ꝑ kyng. The whiche with a company of. vii. or. viii. M. as testifyeth the Frenche cronycle, passed ꝑ water of Summe, in the begynnynge of Auguste, and also begynnynge of the thyrde yere of kynge Rycharde / and so came to Boysons, and passed the ryuers of Oyse and of Marne and other / & so went before Troys and wanne it/ and after lodged them atwene newe towne and Sens. And euer as they passed the countreys, other they toke great fynaunces, or elles fyred the townes as they went. And all be it that the Frenche kynge hadde sente agayne them an armye of Frenchemen to withstande them, they letted them nothinge of theyr purpose/ but and they had any skyrmysshes with them, the Frenchemen were put vnto the worse/so that they bette them & toke of them dyuers prysoners, and raunsomed them at theyr pleasures. And thus holdynge theyr iourneye, they passed by the countrey of Gastinoys, and so into Bretayne / where they were ioyously receyued of syr Johñ de Mountforde duke of that prouince than newly comyn thyther.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxxx. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxxi.

Fyshemonger walter Doket.

wyllyam walworthe. Anno.iiii.

wyllyam Knyghthode.

IN this Mayres yere and ende of the thyrde yere of kyng Rycharde, towarde the somer season in dyuers places of the lande the commons arose sodainly, and ordeyned to them rulers and capytaynes/and specially in Kent & Essex. The whiche named their leders, Jacke straw wyllawe, watte Tyler, Jacke Shepherde, Tomme Myller, & Hobbe Carter. These vnruled companye gathered vnto them great multitude of the commons/& after spedde them towarde the cytie of London, and assembled them vpon Blacke hethe in Kent, within.iii.myles of Lódon. And vppon corpus Christi daye beynge thanne the.xi. daye of June, they entred the Towre of London/ and there the kynge beynge thanne lodged, toke frome thens parforce mayster Sudberye than archebysshoppe of Caunterbury, syr Robert Halys lorde or pryour of saynte Johannes, and a whyte frere cófessour vnto the kynge. whiche.iii.persones with houge noyse & crye they ladde vnto the Hylle of the sayde Towre and smote of theyr heddes. And whan they hadde so done, they returned into Suthewarke by botes and barges, & there slewe and robbed all straungers tha they myghte fynde. And that done they wente to westmynster, & toke with them all maner of Seynt warymen/& so came vnto ꝑ duke of Lácasters place standing without ꝑ Temple barre called Sauoye, & spoyled that was therin/ and after sette it vpon a fyre, and

brent it. And from thens they rode vnto ỹ hede place of sayne Johñs in Smythefelde, & dispoiled that place in lyke wyse. Than they entred the cytye, and serched the temple & other Innes of courte, and spoyled theyr places & brent theyr bokes of lawe/ and slewe as many men of lawe and questmongers as they myght fynde. And that done they went to sayne Martyns the Graunde, & toke with them all sayntwary men, and the prisoners of Newgate, Ludgate, & of bothe counters / and distroyed theyr registers and bokes/and in like maner they dyd with the prysoners of the Marshalsy and kinges benche in Southwerke.

whan Jacke Strawe had thus done all thyng at his wyll, & sawe ỹ no resistence was made agayne him/ he was smytten with so bouge a presumpcion, that he thought no man his pere. And so beynge enflamed with ỹ presumpcion & pryde/he rode vnto the Towre where ỹ kyng was, beynge smally accompanyed of hys lordes/& caused hym to ryde aboute some parte of the cytie, and so conueyed hym into Smythfelde. where in the kynges presence, he caused a proclamacyon to be made, and dyd full small reuerence vnto the kynge. which mysorde & presumpcyon whan wyllyam walworthe than Mayre of London behelde / of very pure dysdayne that he had of his pryde, ran to him sodainly with his swerde, and wounded hym to dethe/ & forthwith strake of his hede, and arreyd it vpō a speres poynte/and therewith cryed kynge Rycharde, kynge Rycharde. whan the rebelles beheld theyr cappytaynes hede/anone they fledde as shepe. Howe be it many were taken and many were slayne/ and the remenaunt chased, that the cytie and subarbes of ỹ same was clene voyded of them ỹ nyght, whiche was mondaye and the.xv.day of June.

Jacke Straw slayne

whan the kyng had beholden the great manhode of the Mayre, and assystence of his bretherne the Aldermen/anone in rewarde of that dede he dubbed the sayde wyllyam walworthe, Nycholas Brembre, Johñ Philpot, Nycholas Twyforde, Robert Launde, and Roberte Gayton, aldermen, knyghtes.

And in this season also called the hurlynge tyme/the cōmons of Norfolke and Suffolke came vnto the abbey of Burye, & there slewe one of the kynges Justyces called Johñ Caundysshe, and the pryour of the place with other/and after spoyled & bare awaye moche thyng out of that sayd place. But after this, aswell the one as the other of these rebelles were taken in dyuers and sondry places, and put in execucyon by.x.by.xii. by.xv.and.xx.so that one of them accused ỹ other, to the distruction of a great noumbre of them.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxi.

Johñ Northampton.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxii.

Johñ Rote.

Anno.v.

Johñ Hynde.

IN this Mayres yere and moneth of Aprell/landed in Kent dame Anne the doughter of Charles the.iiii.late Emperour of Almayne lately dede, and syster vnto wenslaus at that day Emperour/the whiche of the Mayre & cytezyns of London was honorably met vpō blacke hethe, and conueyed with great tryumphe vnto westmynster the.viii. day

day of the moneth of May/ & shorte ly after there solemply maryed vnto kyng Richarde. And about the same season, or after some wryters in the later ende of June, was an erthequaue in Englange, that the lyke therof was neuer sene in Englande before that day nor sen.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxxii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxxiii.

Adam Bame.

Johñ Northampton. Anno. vi.

Johñ Sely.

IN this yere mayster Henrye Spencer bisshope of Norwyche, with a great power of spirituall men and other, croysed by the commaundement of the pope than Clement the. vii. enduryng the scisme before touched in the laste chappter of Charles ỳ. vi. than kynge of Fraūce. This sayd pope gaue this auctorite to the sayd bysshoppe to make warre vpon the kynge of Spayne as some wryters haue/for so moche as he contrarye the sayde popes commaundement, withholde certayne possessions belongynge of ryght vnto the duke of Lancastre syr Johñ of Gaunte/ and specially vnto dame Constaūce his wyfe. In perfourmaunce of whiche acte, the said bysshoppe entryng the countrey of Flaunders, fande there ỳ flemynges with dyuers myscreauntes suche as the forsaid king of the countrey of Spayne had thyther sent, makyng resystence agayne hym. wherfore he made to thē sharpe warre, and wanne vpon them certayne townes, as Grauelyng, Burburgth, and Dunkyrke / and wanne great and ryche pyllage, so that he & his souldyours stuffed and freight with it as testifyeth Policronycon, xli. shyppes. But soone after the Flemynges assembled wyth suche strength, that about Dunkyrke they gaue vnto hym suche assaute, that he was constrayned to gyue backe. And for the said shippes and goodes shulde nat come vnto the possessyon of his enemyes/he sette them on fyre within the hauen, and so was wasted bothe shyppes and goodes. And all be it that after this mysse happe he recouered his strengthe, & layed syege vnto ỳ towne of Ypre, and wrought the flemynges moche care and trouble / shortely after suche sycknesses fell amonge his people, as the fyre and other, that his souldyours dyed of them great noumbre/ for the whiche he was compelled to leaue hys tourney and to retourne into Englāde. In this yere also was a batayle or feates of armes done in the kynges palays of westmynster, atwene one called Garton Appellaunt, and syr Johñ Ansley knyght defendaūt/ of whiche fyght at length the knight was victor, and caused his enemye to yelde hym. For the whiche the sayd Garton was from that place drawen vnto Tyburne, and there hanged for his false accusacyon and surmyse.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxxiii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxxiiii.

Grocer. Symonde wynchecombe.

Nycholas Brembre. Anno. vii.

Johñ more.

Anno.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxiiii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxv.

Nycholas Exton.

Nycholas Brembre. Anno.viii.

Johñ Frenshe.

THis yere kyng Rycharde holdynge his Christmas at Eltham / thyther came vnto hym the kynge of Ermony, whiche was chased out of his lande by the Infydels and Turkes / and required ayde of ꝑ kynge to be restored vnto his dominyon. The kynge feested and comforted him accordyng to his honour / & after counsell taken with hys lordes concerninge that mater, he gaue vnto him great sommes of money and other ryche gyftes, with the whiche after he had taryed in Englande vpō .ii. monethes, he departed with glad countenaunce.

And soone after Ester the kynge with a greate armye rode towarde Scotlāde. But whan he drewe nere vnto the borders / such meanes were sought by the Scottes, that a peace was concluded atwene bothe realmes for a certayne tyme. After whiche conclusion so taken / the kynge returned vnto yorke and there restyd hym a season. In which tyme barraunce fell atwene Johñ Holāde brother to the erle of Kent, and the erles sonne of Stafforde / by reason of whiche barraunce, in conclusion ꝑ sayd sonne of the erle was slayne of the hande of the same syr Johñ Holāde / for the whiche dede the kynge was greuously amoued, & departed shortely after with his company toward London.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxvi.

Grocer. Johñ Organ. Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxvi.

Nycholas Brembre.

Anno.ix.

Johñ Chyrcheman.

THis yere kynge Rycharde assembled at westmynster hys highe court of parliament. Duryng the whiche amonge other many actes in the same counsell concluded / he created .ii. dukes, a marques, and .v. erles. Of the whiche firste syr Edmonde of Langley the kynges vncle and erle of Cambrydge was created duke of yorke / syr Thomas of woodstoke his other vncle erle of Buckyngham was create duke of Glouceſter / syr Lyonell Uere ꝑ was erle of Orenforde was made marques of Deuelyn / sir Henry Bolingbrooke sonne and heyre of Johñ of Gaūt duke of Lancastre was made erle of Derby / syr Edwarde sonne & heyre vnto the duke of yorke was made erle of Rutlande / syr Johñ Holande brother to the erle of Kent was made erle of Huntyngdone / syr Thomas Mowbraye was made erle of Notyngham and Marshall of Englande / and syr Mychaell de la Poole was made erle of Suffolke & Chaūceller of Englāde. And by auctorite of the same parlyamente, syr Roger Mortymer erle of the Marche, and sonne and heyre vnto syr Edmonde Mortymer and of dame Philyppe eldest doughter and heyre vnto syr Lyonell ꝑ seconde sonne of Edward the thyrde, was soone after proclaymed heyre paraunt vnto the crowne of Englande. The whiche sir Roger

shortely

shortely after sayled into Irelande, there to pacifye hys lordeshyppe of Ulster, whiche he was lorde of by his forsayde mother. But whyle he was there occupyed about the same/the wylde Irysshe came vpon hym in noumbre, and slewe hym and moche of his company. This sir Roger hadde Issue Edmonde/and Roger, Anne, Alys, and Elynoure that was made a nunne. The.ii. forsaid sonnes died without issue, and Anne eldest doughter was maryed to Rycharde erle of Cambrydge, whiche Rycharde was sonne vnto syr Edmonde of Langley before named. The which Rycharde hadde issue by the sayde Anne Isabell ladye Bouchier, Rycharde that after was duke of yorke & father to kynge Edwarde the.iiii. whiche sayd Richarde erle of Cambridge was put to deth by Henry the.v. as after shall appere. In this yere also syr Hery Bolingbroke erle of Derby, maryed the Countesse doughter of Herforde/ by whome he was lorde of that countrey. And by her he had issue Henry that after him was kynge, Blaunche duches of Barre, and Philippe that was wedded to the kynge of Denmarke. Also Thomas duke of Clarence, Johñ duke of Bedforde, & Humfrey duke of Glouceſter.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxxvi. Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxxvii.

Goldesmythe. wyllyam Stondon.
Nycholas Exton. Anno.x.
wyllyam More.

In this.x. yere the erle of Arundell was sent into the duchye of Guyan, for to strengthe suche soudyours as the king at that tyme had in those parties / or after some wyttes to scoure the see of rouers & enemyes. The whiche erle in kepynge his course or passage, encountred a myghtye flote of Flemynges laden with Rochel wyne/ & set vpon them, and distressed them & theyr shyppes, and so broughte them vnto dyuers portes of Englãde. By reason wherof the sayde wyne was so plenteous in Englande, that a tonne therof was solde for a marke and.xx.s. the choyse. And amonge other in that flote was taken the Admyralle of Flaunders, whyche remayned here longe after as prysoner.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxxvii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxviii.

Goldesmythe. wyllyam Uenour.
Nycholas Exton. Anno.xi.
Hughe Fostalfe.

This xi. yere of kyng Rycharde/ syr Thomas of woodstocke duke of Glouceſter, the erle of Arundell, with the erles of warwyke, of Derby, and of Notyngham, conspyrynge howe the king and hys lande was myssladde by a fewe persones aboute the kynge, entendyng reformacion of the same/ assembled them to haue a counsell at Radecoke brydge, and after arrered great people, & so with a stronge power came to London, & there caused ỹ king to call a pliament. wherof

heringe

herynge maister Alexander Neuyle than archebysshop of yorke, sir Lyonell Vere marques of Dreuelyn, and syr Mychaell de la Poole Chauncellor and erle of Suffolke, fearyng punisshement fledde the lande, and so died in straunge countreys. Than the kynge by counsell of the other aboue named lordes, durynge the parlyament caused to be taken syr Roberte Treuylian chefe Justyce of Englande, syr Nycholas Brembre late mayre of the cytie of London, sir Johñ Salysbury knyghte of housholde, sir Johñ Beauchãp stewarde/ also of the kynges house, syr Symonde Burley knyghte, syr James Berues, and syr Robert Belknappe knyghtes, and a sergeaunt of armes called Johñ Vske / the whyche by auctorytie of the sayde parlyamente were conuycte of treason, and forthe same put to execucyon at Tybourne and at the Towre hyll. And Johñ Holt, Johñ Locton, Richarde Stury, willyam Burgh, and Roberte Fulthorpe iustyce, with the other forsayd lordes, whiche as before is said boyded the lande, were by auctorytie of the sayd court of parlyamente banysshed & exyled the lande for euer.

Anno domini .M.CCC.lxxxviii.

Goldesmythe.

Syr Nycholas Twyssorde.

Anno domini .M.CCC.lxxxix.

Thomas Iustcyne.

Anno.xii.

Adam Cathyll.

IN the.xii. yere and moneth of Nouembre yet durynge the parlyament, was executed in Smythefylde of London a marcyall Justes and tournement / where as all suche persones as came in vpon ꝑ kynges partye, theyr armour and apparayle was garnysshed with whyte hertes & crownes of golde about their neckes. And of that sorte were. xxiiii. with. xxiiii. ladyes also apparayled as aboue is sayd, ladde with. xxiiii. cheynes of golde the horses of them/ and so conueyed them thorowghe the cytie vnto Smythefelde frome the Towre of London. where the king, the quene, and many other great estates beynge present, after proclamacions by the herroddes made/ many goodly and marcyall actes of warre were there put in vre, to the great recreacion and comforte of the kynge and quene and all other beholders of the same. To this dysporte came many straungers. Amonge the whiche the erle of sayne Poule, the lorde Ostrenaunt sonne and heyre vnto ꝑ duke of Holãde, and a yonger sonne of the erle of Ostrythe, were greatly commended. And whan this Justes had contynued by sondrye tymes by the space of.xxiiii. dayes, to the great comforte and recreacyon of many yonge and lusty bachellers desyrous to wynne worshyppe, and to the kinges great honoure, that by all that season kepte open housholde for all honeste comers / it was fynysshed, & the straugers retourned to their countreys with many ryche gyftes.

Anno domini .M.CCC.lxxxi.

Grocer.

wyllyam Venour.

Anno domini .M.CCC.lxxxi.

Johñ walcot.

Anno.xiii.

Johñ Lowney.

In this

IN thys.xiii. yere of kynge Rychard/an esquier of ꝑ prouince of Nauerne by Fraunce, accused an Englysh esquyer called Johñ welshe of certayne poyntes of treason. For the tryall wherof a day of fyght was betwene them taken, to be foughten in the kynges palays at westmynster/ where eyther of theym kept hys daye & fought there a stronge fyght. But in the ende Johñ welshe was vyctoure / and constrayned that other to yelde hym. where after he was dyspoyled of hys armoure, and drawen to tyburne, and there hãged for hys vntrouthe.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xc. Johñ Fraunces. Adam Bamme. Thomas dyuent.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xci. Anno.xiiii.

IN thys.xiiii. yere of kyng Rychard/ syr Johñ of Gaũt duke of Lancastre, wyth a goodly cõpany of men of armes sayled into Spayn, to clayme suche landes as he there shulde haue in the ryght of dame Cõstaunce hys wyfe / whyche was the doughter of Peter ryghtfull kynge of Spayne, as in the.xl. yere of kyng Edward the thyrde is more playnly declared. whan the sayde duke was vpon that other syde of the see/ there came vnto hym the kynge of Portyngale wyth a stronge armye, and so entred the terrytory of Spayne. But whether it were of the Englishe men longe or of the Portyngaleys / moche harme was done to the Spanyardes, in robbynge and pyllyng of the countrey / whyche was cause of grudge betwene the kyng of Portyngale and the duke/ and caused many Spanyardes whyche ought to the good wyll to wythdrawe and depart from them. In reformacyõ of which ille, certayn persones aswel Englysh as Portyngaleys that were founde gylty of suche robbery, were putte vnto deth/ by meane whereof the other fered so, that where by that meane the kynge and the duke were before put to great affrayeale, by reasõ of reformacyon of that ille they gat dayly vppon theyr enemyes / so that in processe of tyme folowyng, ꝑ kyng of Spayne was dyspuen of necessyte to treate wyth the duke of a peace & concorde. Of the whyche peace as wytnesseth Polycronycon in hys last boke and.vii.chappter/ the condyciõ was, that fyrste for a fynall concorde the kynge of Spayne shuld marye ꝑ duke eldest doughter name Cõstaũce and that done he shulde gyue vnto ꝑ duke in recõpensacyon of hys costes, so many wedges of golde as shulde charge or lade.viii. charettes / and ouer that perely durynge the lyues of the sayde duke and hys wyfe, he shuld at hys propre coste and charge delyuer to the dukes assygneys .x. M. marke of golde wythin ꝑ towne of Bayon.

And after thys peace was stablysshed, and suerties taken for the performaunce of the same/ the duke departed wyth the kynge of Portyngale. To whome shortely after he maryed hys second doughter named dame Anne.

In thys yere also for cruel warre whyche the Turkes made agayne the Januays or men of Jeane / they requyred ayde of the kynges of Englande and Fraunce. For whyche cause oute of Englande was sente a noble warryour called erle of Alby wyth two thousande of archers/ and

Aa. oute

out of Fraunce the duke of Burbon and the erle of Ewe, wyth .xb. C. spe-res. The whych kept theyr iournay tyll they came vnto a cytye in Bar-bary named Thunys, a somtyme be-longynge to the sayde Januays. where the sayd Englyshe & Frenche-men bare them so manfully wyth the ayde of ꝑ Januayes, that in ꝓcess of tyme they wanne ꝑ sayde cytye frō the Turkes, and put ꝑ Januayes a-gayne in possessyon therof / & toke of theym many ꝓysoners, the whyche were exchaunged for chrysten ꝓyso-ners before taken / and ouer that for-ced the sayd Sarazyns to peide vnto the Januayes .x. M. ducates of gold, for confyrmacyon of a peace for a cer tayne tyme. But the French cronycle sayth, that for so moche as the duke of Burbon hadde vnderstandynge ꝑ the duke of Lancaster made warre vpon kyng Johñ of Spayn / he ther fore lefte thys iournay and ayded hi agayne the sayde duke of Lancaster to hys lytle honour.

But howe so euer it was / many of the Englyshmē were loste in those countreys by reason of the fluxe and other sykenesses. Also Antonius sayeth, that the Sarazyns at thys iourney were nat dyspossessed of the cytye of Thunys / but for a trewes to be hadde for two yeres, they graun-ted vnto the chrysten men a certayne summe of money, and restytucyon of many chrysten ꝓysoners.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xci.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xcii.

Johñ Chadworth.

Draper.

Johñ Heende.

Anno .xb.

Henry Vamere.

IN thys .xb. yere of kynge Rych-arde / he keppynge hys Crysten-mas at hys manour of woodstocke, the erle of Penbrooke beynge yonge of age was desirouse to lern to iuste / and requyred a knyghte named syr Johñ saynte Johan, to renne wyth hym certayne courses. At whose requeste the sayd knyght ranne with hym in woodstoke parke certayne courses. In the whyche were it wyth stroke or other myshap / the sayd erle receyued there hys dethes wounde & dyed shortly after.

In this yere also a moneth of Juny / a bakers man berynge a basket full of horsebrede to serue hys maysters customers in Fletestrete / whanne he came forea gayn the bysshop of Sa-lysburyes place standynge in Salys bury aley, a seruaunt of the bysshope-pes starte vnto the basket and toke oute one of the loues. And for the ba ker wolde agayne haue recouered hys horse lofe / ꝑ bysshoppes seruaūt wyth hys dagger brake the bakers hed. Than came the inhabytaūtes of the strete, & wolde haue brought the yoman vnto warde for brekynge of the kynges peace. But he was re-scowed by hys felowes / and so hadde vnto the bysshoppes palays, whyche that daye stoode trensourer of Eng-lande.

For this rescous the people beyng in a fury / in greate multytude gathe red aboute the palays, and wolde haye entred parforce to haue fet out the yoman.

Agayn whome the bysshoppes ser-uaūtes made resistēce / so ꝑ ꝑ rumour

grewe

grewe moze and moze. And the peple of the cytye, aswell suche as were of yll dysposcion as other, encreased into a greate noumbze. Fame of thys doyng thā spzāge to ꝑ mayer / which in all haste wyth dyuers aldermen & the shyzyues, sped hym thyther to se the peace kepte / & dyd that he cowde to withdzawe the people. But after ꝑ mayer & the offycers of the citie were comyn thyder / the cōmons out of all partyes of the cytye dzewe thyder, in moche moze multytude thanne they had befoze / so that ꝑ moze they were in noumbze, the wozse they were to rule. In so moche that they wold nat be satysfyed, but they myghte haue ꝑ yoman delyuered, whose name was walter Romayne. And foz to bzynge about theyz foly / they made many assautes at the gates of ꝑ sayd palays, the bysshop hym selfe beynge than at wyndesoze. Lastly after many showtes & lyftes at the gates made, by dyscrecio of the mayze & aldermen with other dyscrete comoners of the cytye, the people was mynysshed and sente agayne euery mā to hys dwellynge, & all was set in quyet & reste. whan wozde of this came vnto the bisshop, in moch wozse maner thā the thynge was in dede / he gyuing light credēce without examinacio made in the matter, assocyat vnto hym mayster Arundell than archebisshop of yozke and chaūceller of Englāde / & so greuously enfourmed the kyng, that he toke agayne the cytye ryght greuouse displeasure / so that in all hast the mayze was sent foz to the kynge. At whose commyng was layd vnto his charge great & heynous maters, that he non otherwyse ruled the cytye / but suffered the cytezyns to make suche assautes vppō the kynges hed offycers, to the kynges great dyshonour, & ieopardy of suche great treasoure as he than had of the kynges i his custody and kepynge. And after bzought vnto the kynges pzesence / of whome nat wythstādyng hys reasonable excuse befoze made, he was of the kyng ryght soze blamed & greuously sayde vnto. Thā was the mayze & the shezyues dyscharged of the rule of ꝑ cytie / & the liberties of the same seased into the kynges hādes / & a knyght of the court called syz Edward Daligzygge, a good man and fauourable to ꝑ cytezeyns, was made gouernoure of the cytye the .xxi. daye of June / & contynued in that offyce to the fyzste daye of July nert ensuyng. At whych day beynge in the begynnynge of ꝑ kynges .xbi. yere of hys reygne, he was discharged / & syz Baldewyn Radyngton knyght putte in hys rome / & so cōtynued tyll the feest of Symōde & Jude folowynge. And foz the moze dysplesure of the cytezyns / all pleeys & sutes kept befoze tyme in westmynster hall, were than remoued & holde at yozke, to the great noyaunce of all the lande / whyche so contynued tyll Crystmas. And in thys mayzes yere also, was a great trāslacio of bisshopes. Thys dysplesure thus hāgyng towarde the cytye / the cytezyns made contynuall labour vnto the kynges grace, by meanes of the quene and of doctour Gzaupsende than bysshope of London / whych ought theyz especiall fauoures vnto the cytye. By whose meanes the cytezeyns were restozed vnto theyz lybertyes, & hadde licence to chose of them selfe a mayze & two shyzyues / so that vppon sayne Mathewis daye folowynge, they chose foz shyzyues Gylberte Wanyfolde oz Wanfelde and Thomas Newyngton / and vppon sayne Edwardes daye kynge and confessoure, they chase foz theyz mayze wyllyam Standon Gzocer / whyche by the Lyeutenaunte of the towze were at that tyme admytted and swozne.

Aa. ii. But

But yet the kynges displeasure was natte reconcyled, nor the cytezyns admytted vnto hys grace and fauoure.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xciii.
Grocer.
wyllyam Stondon.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xciii.
Gylbert Mankeylde.
Anno.xvi.
Thomas Newyngbtyn.

IN thys mayres yere and.xvi. yere of kynge Rychardе / thys newe mayre wyth the worthyest men of the cytye, made assyduat & dayly meanes vnto the kynges grace, for to haue hys moste bounteouse pardō & hys especyall fauoure vnto ꝑ cytye. The whych at lengthe by meanes of such frēdes as they purchased about the kyng / & specyally by laboure of ꝑ good quene Anne, and the foresayd bysshop of London, they were put in good cōforte vpō theyr demeanour & submyssion at the kynges commyng to Londō. Upon whyche cōforte the cytyzyns made royall and costyous purueyaūce to receyue the kynge in theyr best maner / & haupynge monyssyon that the kyng entended to come vnto hys palays of westmynster, apparayled them in one lyuerey / & to ꝑ noumbre of .viii.C. horsemen well beseen, mette wyth hym vpon the heth on thys halfe hys manour of shene. where in moste lowlye wyse accordynge to theyr dutyes they submytted them vnto hys grace / beseechynge hym of hys specyall grace & pardon, in all suche thynges as they before tymes had offended agayne hys byghnesse. And to ꝑ entent that hys grace myght se the cōformyte of all hys other subiectes / the recorder made instaūce to hym, that he wolde of hys great bounte take so great peyne vpon hym, as to ryde thorough hys chaumber of London.

The whych requeste he graciously accepted / & so helde on hys tournay tyll he came at Londō brydge / where he was presēted wyth.ii. fayre stedes trapped in ryche cloth of golde partyd of redde and whyte. The whyche present he thākefull receyued / & after helde on hys way tyll he came at the standarde in chepe / the cytezyns of ꝑ cytye stādynge vpō eyther syde of the stretes in theyr lyuereys, and cryeng kyng Rychardе kyng Rychard / and at theyr backes, ꝑ wyndowys & walys hanged wyth all ryche tapettes & clothes of arasse in moste goodlye & shewyng wyse. And at the sayd standarde in chepe, was ordeyned a sumptuouse stage in the whych were sette diuers personages in ryche apparel. Amonge ꝑ whych an Iūgell was ordeyned / whyche set a ryche crowne of golde garnysshed wyth stone & perle vppon the kynges hede as he passed by. And that done he rode to Paulys, and there offered, and so rode vnto westmynster / where the mayre and hys company takyng theyr leue returned vnto London.

Upon the morowe whyche was the fyftene daye of the moneth of the sayde mayre and hys bretherne rode vnto westmynster, & presented there ꝑ kynge wyth two guylte basyns, and in theym two thousande nobles of golde / besechynge hym in moste humble wyse to be good and gracyouse lorde vnto the cytye. The whyche he accepted ryghte fauourably / and gaue vnto theym many comfortable wordes.

And the thyrde daye folowynge, they receyued a newe confyrmacion of all theyr olde Fraunchyses and lybertyes.

lybertyes. wherfore by counsayll of theyr frendes, they ordeyned an aulter table of syluer and ouer gylte/ & therein ymagery grauen & enameled moste curiously of the story of sayntе Edwarde, the whiche was valuyd at a.M.marke/ & presented that also, & gaue it vnto the kynge/ the which he shortely after offered to the shryne of sayntе Edwarde wythin the abbay, where yet it stādes at thys daye. And for the great zele & loue whych ỳ fore sayde bysshop of Londō ought vnto the cytye, & that by hys meanes theyr lybertyes were agayne restored/they therfore of theyr owne goodly dysposycion, after hys decease accustomed them, and yet at thys daye done/ to go prely vpō the feestfull dayes folowynge, ỳ is to say fyrst the morow after Symōde Jude whych daye the mayer taketh his charge at westmynster, to Paulys/ & there to saye in the west ende of ỳ churche where he lieth grauen (Deprofundis) for hys soule and all crysten/ & in lyke maner vpō Alhalowen daye, Crystmasse daye, & ti. the nexte days folowyng, Newe yeres daye, Twelf day, and Cādelmas day/ wyth also the morowe after Myghelmasse day, vpon the whyche the shyrfes perely take theyr charge at westmynster. All whych.ix.days, nat all onely the mayer & hys bretherne vse thys progresse and kepe thys obsequy / but also all the craftes of the cytye in theyr lyuerys vse the same perely.

And whan the kyng had wythdrawen as aboue is sayde, hys displeasure frō the cytye, thanne at Hyllarye terme folowyng ỳ feest of Cristmas, all the kynges courtes and pleys of the crowne wyth other retourned frō yorke to westmynster.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xciii.

Grocer.

Johñ Hadley.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xciiii.

Drewe Barentyne.

Anno.xvii.

Rycharde whytyngton.

IN thys mayers begynnyng & xvii.yere of kyng Rycharde, ỳ is to meane the moneth of Nouēbre/ certayn gentylmen of Scotlāde entendynge to wynne honoure, chalenged certayne poyntes of armes. As fyrste the lord Morpk chalenged the erle of Nothyngham & marshall of Englande/ syr wyllyā Darel knyght chaleged syr Peter Courtnay knyght & Cokborne esquyer, chalenged syr Nycholas Hawberke knyght. which feates of armes were done in Smythfelde of London. But Marle was so frendely vnto the Englyshmen, that the honoure of ỳ iournay went wyth them/ in so moche that the erle marshall ouer threwe hys appellaunte/ & so bruised hym, that in his returne toward Scotlande he dyed at yorke. And syr wyllyam Darell refused his appellāt or they had ronne theyr full courses. And the thyrde of them, that is to wyt Cockborne, was throwen at the secōd coppyng to groūd horse and man.

And vpon the.vii.day of Juny folowyng, dyed ỳ gracyouse woman quene Anne/ and lieth nowburyed at westmynster by hyr lorde kynge Rycharde, vpō ỳ southsyde of sayntе Edward shryne/ to whose soul & al crystē our lord be mercyfull. And thys yere in the moneth of Septembre as witnesseth the Frenche cronycle, by meanes of the erle of Derby and other, whych than were in Fraunce for the kynge of Englandes partye/ and the

Aa. iii. duke

dyke of Burbone & the erle of Ewe vpon the French partye wyth other/ a trewes was concluded at sayncte Omers for.iiii.yeres. But nat wythstandyng that peace, the Frenchmen and Englyshemen ranne togyther sundry tymes, whanne the one espyed to haue any auauntage vppon that other.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xciiii.

Mercer.
Johñ Frenshe.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xcv.

wyllyam Brampton.

Anno.xviii.

Thomas Knolles.

THys .xviii. yere of kynge Rycharde, he shortly after Crystmas wyth a strong armye sayled into Ireland. The whych iournay was more to hys charge than honoure. For the maner wherof, syn it soũded to no honoure of the prynce/ myne auctor therfore lyste nat in his boke to make any lõge procesle of ꝑ mater In this yere also or about this tyme, began the heresy of Johñ wyccliffe to sprynge in Englande/ the whyche was greatly auaunced by meane of the scysme in the churche hangynge at those dayes betwene two popes litynge at ones/ the whyche began as before is shewed in the.xruu. yere of Charles the.vi.thã kyng of Fraũce, Urban the.vi.and Clement the syxt/ & contynued vnder Bonyface the.ix. and Benet the.xiii. Of whyche erronyouse oponyons of the sayd heresy, who so is desyrouse to se the contentes of them/ let them serche cronica cronicarum, and there he shall se thẽ brefely set out.

In thys yere also was wonderful tẽpest of wynde, by the space of July, August, & specially Septẽbre/ by violence wherof in sundry places of this lande, greate and wonderfull hurte was done bothe of churches and houses. Thys yere dyed Constance secõd wyfe to Johñ duke of Lãcastre, and lyeth buryed at Leycester.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xcv.

Upntener.
wyllyam more.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxcvi.

Roger Elys.

Anno.xix.

wyllyam Sherpngham.

IN the begynnynge of thys mayres yere, and.xix. yere of kynge Rycharde, and.xviii. daye of Nouembre as affermeth ꝑ Frenche cronycle/ kyng Rycharde beynge thã at Calays, spowsed or toke to wyfe wythin the churche of sayncte Nycholas, Isabel the doughter of Charles the.vi.than kyng of Fraunce. whych lady Isabell as wytnesseth the sayde Frenche story, at the day of hyr martyage was wythin.viii. yeres of age. And as it is regestred in one of ꝑ bokes of guyldehalle of London/ the Frenche kynge in proper persone came downe wyth a goodly compãnye of lordes and knyghtes, vnto a towne called Arde, whyche standeth vppon the vtter border of Picardy/ where wythin hys owne dompnyon a ryche and sumptuouse pauylyon was pyght. And in lyke maner a litle beyonde Gupnys wythin the englysh pale, was another lyke pauylyon pyght for kynge Rycharde/ so that betwene the two sayde pauylyons,

was a

was a distaunce of.lxx.pace. And in the mydway atwene bothe, was ordained ꝑ thyrde pauylion/at ꝑ which bothe kinges cõming from eyther of theyr tentes sondry tymes there met, & had communicacion eyther with other/the wayes or distaunce atwene set with certayne persones apoynted standynge in armc.ii.and.ii/the one syde beynge set with Englysshemen, and that other with Frenche. And a certeyne distaũce from eyther of the ii.first sayde pauilyons, stode bothe hoostes of bothe prynces, or suche cõpanyes as before either of them was appointed to bryng. Here if I shuld bryngc in the dyuers metynges of ꝑ sayd prynces, and the curyous seruices that eyther caused other to be fed & serued within eyther of theyr tentes, or of theyr dalyaunce or pastymes continuynge the season of their metynges, and the dyuersyte of the manifolde spices and wynes whiche there was ministred at ꝑ said season, with all ꝑ ryche apparell of the sayde pauilyons & cupbordes garnysshed with plate & rich iewels/it wold aske a lõge tracte of tyme. But who ꝑ is desirous to knowe or here of the circumstaũce of all ꝑ premysses/let him rede ꝑ worke of maister Johñ Froyssarde made in Frenche/ and there he shall se euery thynge touched in an order. And here I shall shortly touch the giftes ꝑ were gyuen of eyther of ꝑ princes & of their lordes. And fyrst kyng Rychard gaue vnto ꝑ Frenche kynge, an hanap or basyn of golde with an ewer to ꝑ same. Thã againwarde ꝑ Frẽche kyng gaue vnto him iii.shãding cuppes of golde, with couers garnisshed with perle & stone/& a shippe of golde set vpon a bere richely garnysshed with perle & stone. Than at theyr seconde meting kyng Rychardc gaue vnto him an ouche set with so fyne stones, ꝑ it was valued at.v.C.marke sterlynge. where agayne the Frenche kyng gaue vnto him.ii.flaggons of golde/a tablet of golde, and therein an ymage of saint Mychaell rychely garnisshed. Also a tablet of gold with a crucifixe therin well and rychely dyght. Also a tablet of golde with an ymage of the Trynite, rychely set with perle and stone. Also a tablet of gold with an ymage of sayut George, in likewise set with perle and stone. whiche all were valued at the summe of.xv.C.marke. Than kyng Richarde seyng ꝑ boũte of the Frenche kinge/ gaue to hym a bauderyke or coler of golde set with greate dyamantes, rubyes, and balessys, beyng valued at.v.M.mark/ the whiche for the precyosyte thereof, that it was of such an excellency and fynesse of stuffe, the Frenche kynge therfore ware it aboute his necke as often as the king and he mette together. Than the Frenche kyng gaue vnto hym an ouche, a spyce plate of golde of great weyght, and valued at.ii.M.marke. Many were the ryche gyftes that were receyued of lordes and ladyes of bothe pryntes. Amonge the whiche specially are noted.iii.giftes, whiche kyng Richarde gaue vnto the duke of Orleañce/ for the which he receyued agayne of the duke trebyll the value. For where his were valued at a.M.marke/ the dukes were valued at thre thousãde marke. Finally whan ꝑ said princes hadde thus eyther solaced with other, & concluded all maters concernynge the abouesayde marryage/ the Frenche kyng delyuered vnto kyng Rycharde dame Isabell his doughter, sayenge these wordes folowynge.

Ryght dere beloued sonne, I delyuer here to you the creature ꝑ I most loue i this worlde next my wife & my sonne/beseechynge ꝑ father in heuen,

that it may be to his pleasure, and of the weale of you and youre realme / and that the amyte atwene the. ii. realmes in auoydyng of effusyon of chrysten mens blode, maye be kepte inuyolet for the terme atwene vs cõcluded / whiche terme was. xxx. wynter as expresseth the Frenche Cronycle. After whiche wordes with many thankes giuen vpon eyther parties / preparacyon was made of deptinge. And after kynge Rycharde had conueyed the Frenche kynge towarde Arde / he toke his leaue and returned vnto his wyfe. The which was immediatlye with great honoure conueyed vnto Caleys / and there after to the kyng spoused, as before to you I haue shewed. After the which solempnisacion with al honour ended / the kynge with his ponge wyfe toke shyppyng, and so within shorte whyle landed at Douer / and from thens sped hym towarde London. wherof the cytezens beynge warned / made out certayne horsemen well appointed in one lyuerye of coloure, with a conysaunce brodered vpon theyr sleues, whereby euery felyshyppe was knowen from other. The whyche with the Mayre and hys bretherne clothed in scarlet, met the kynge and the quene vpon the Blacke hethe / & after due salutacyon and reuerente welcomes vnto theim made by the mouthe of the recorder, the sayd cytezens conueyed the kynge vpon his wey tyll he came to Newyngton: where the kynge commaunded the Mayre with his company to returne to the cytie / for he with hys lordes & ladyes was appointed that nyght to lye at Kenyngton. It was nat longe after but that she was from Kenyngton brought with great pompe vnto the Towre of London. At whyche season was so exceding prece at London brydge, that by reason therof certayne persones were thruste to deth / amonge the whyche the prioure of Typtre a place i Esser was one. And vpon the morowe folowynge, she was conueyed throughe ỹ cytie with all honoure that myghte be deuysed vnto westmynster / & there crowned quene vpon the sonday beynge than the. viii. day of Januarp. In the somer folowynge the kynge by sinistre counseli delyuered vp by a poyntement the towne of Brest in Brytayne to the duke / whiche was occasyon of displeasure atwene the kyng and ỹ duke of Glouceftre hys vncle as in the pere folowyng shalbe more clerely shewed.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxxxvi. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxxvii.

Goldesmythe. Thomas wylforde.

Adam Bame. Anno. xx.

wyllyam Barker.

In this. xx. pere of kynge Rycharde and moneth of Febrya-ry / the kinge holdynge a sumptuous feest in westmynster halle, many of the soudyours whiche were newely comen from the towne of Brest foresayd, preced into the hall, and kepte a rome together. whiche companye whan the duke of Glouceftre hadde beholden / and fraped and knowen what men they were, and howe the sayde towne was gyuen vppe contrary his knowlege / was therwith in his mynde sore discomforted. In so moche that whan the kynge was entred hys chaumbre, and fewe nere vnto hym, he sayde vnto the kynge: Syr haue ye nat sene the felawes ỹ

satte

satte in so great noumbre to dare in your halle at suche a table. And the kynge answered yes, and axed of the duke what cõpany it was. To whom the duke answered & saide, Sir these ben youre souldyours comen from Breste/and as nowe haue nothynge to take to, nor knowe n at howe to shyfte for theyr lyuynge/and the rather for that as I am enfourmed, they haue benne before tyme euyll payed. Than said ꝑ king it is nat my will but ꝑ they shulde be well payed. And if any haue cause to cõplayne, let them shewe it vnto our tresourer, and they shalbe resonably answered. In resonynge of this mater farther/ the duke said vnto the kyng, Syr ye ought to put your body to payne for to wynne a stroge holde or towne by feate of warre, or ye take vpon you to sell or delyuer any towne or stroge holde gotten with great difficulte, by mãhode of your noble progenitours. To this ꝑ kyng with chaũged countenaũce answered & sayd, Uncle how say ye thoses wordes. Than ꝑ duke boldelye recyted ꝑ forsayd wordes. wherunto the king beynge more discontented said, wene ye ꝑ I be a mar chaũt or fole to sell my lãde/by sayne Johñ baptist nay. But trothe it is, ꝑ our cosyn the duke of Brytaine hath rendred vnto vs al such sũmes of money as our progenitours lente vnto him or his auncetours, vpon the said towne of Breste. For the whiche, reason & good conscience will ꝑ he haue his towne restored agayne. By meane of whiche wordes thus vttred by the duke/suche rancoure and malyce kyndelyd atwene the kinge & hym, ꝑ it ceased nat tyll the sayde duke was put to dethe by murdre vnlefully. Than the duke apperceyuynge the kinges misledynge by certayne persones about him, entendyng therof reformacion for ꝑ weale of the kinge and his realme / called vnto him the abbot of sayncte Albons, & the abbot & pryour of westmynster, and shewed to them his secrete mynde. By whose counselles he made assemble shortely after at Arundell / to which assemble came at the day appoynted, dyuers lordes bothe spirituall & temporall/ as him selfe, the erle of Arundell and other. Also thyther came the erle of Notyngham than marshall of Englande, the erle of warwyke / & of spirituall lordes, the archebisshoppe of Caunterbury, the abbottes of sayncte Albones and of westmynster with other.

After whyche assemble thus made, and euerych of theym to other swore within the castell of Arundel/the .viii. day of August they toke there theyr counsell, and condiscended ꝑ dyuers lordes about the king, as the duke of Lancastre, the duke of yorke and other, shulde be putte from suche auctorite and rule of the lande as they than bare / and other officers suche as were thought prejudicial vnto the weale of the lande, shulde be discharged and punisshed for theyr demeryte. whan this with many other thynges was amonge them concluded / euerych of theym departed tyll the tyme of an other metynge atwene theym appoynted. But the erle of Notyngham contrarye his othe and promyse fearing the sequell of the matter / rode shortely after vnto the kynge, and discouered vnto hym all the premisses. wherefore the kynge in all haste called a secrete counsell at London in the said erle of Notynghames place, or after some at the place of the erle of Huntyngdone.

where it was concludyd ꝑ the sayd erle of Huntyngdone & other, shulde by strengthe fetche vnto the king the erles of Arundell and of warwyke.

And

And in the meane whyle, the kynge in p̄ꝛopꝛe ꝑsone arested his vncle sꝛ Thomas of woodestoke at Plasshy in Esser as sayeth the Englysshe cronycle. All be it an other wꝛyter in latyne sayethe, that kyng Rycharde in p̄ꝛopꝛe persone rode vnto the Manoure of Grenewyche in the nyghte tyme, & there toke hym in his bedde, & commaũded hym vnto the Towꝛe of Lõdon/whiche shoꝛtely after was conueyed vnto Calays and there pꝛiuously murderyd. And soone after were the foꝛesayd erles of Arundell & warwyke bꝛought vnto the towꝛe of London, with also sꝛ Johñ Cobham & sꝛ Johñ Cheynye knightes. But the erle of Arundell was taken to bayle and wente at large vnder suertie, tyll the begynnynge of the parlyament. In whiche season dyuers other were bꝛought to sondꝛye pꝛysones. Than the kynge sente out his commissyoners vnto the lorꝺes of his realme, foꝛ to come vnto hys parliament/which began after vpon the.xvii.day of Septembꝛe, in the begynninge of the.xii.yere of ꝑ kynge, and later ende of thys mayꝛes yere.

Here it is to be noted, that Adam Bame mayꝛe dyed in the begynning of the moneth of June. Foꝛ whome was after chosen and admytted the viii.day of ꝑ sayd moneth foꝛ mayꝛe, Rycharde whytyngton, to occuppe the full of that yere/that is to meane tyll the feest of Symonde and Jude. But vpon saynt Edwardes day folowyng whan the newe mayꝛe is accustomed to be chosen / Than was he electe agayne foꝛ that yere folowynge. And so he stode in the offyce of mayꝛaltye an hoole yere/and. v.monethes. Than to returne to our fyꝛst mater, whan the kyng hadde assembled his lorꝺes/ ꝑ whiche came with so stronge and myghtie companyes, that the cytie suffysed nat to lodge the people, but were fayne to be lodgyd in small townes and vyllages nere vnto ꝑ same / within shoꝛt tyme after the sayde parlyamente was begonne, the erles of Arundell and of warwyke were bꝛoughte befoꝛe the lorꝺes of the parlyamente holden at westmynster, and there fynally iudged as folowyth / the erle of Arudell to be ladde on fote from westmynster and place of his iugement thoꝛoughe the highe stretes of the cytie vnto the towꝛe hylle, where hys hede to be stryken of / and the erle of warwyke was also iudged to dethe. But foꝛ his great age, by meane of hys frendes his iugemente was pardoned and altered to perpetuall pꝛison, where as the kyng wolde cõmaunde hym. whiche after was had vnto ꝑ Ile of Man in Lancasshyꝛe / where he consumed the resydue of hys olde dayes. And the erle of Arundelle accoꝛdinge to the sentence vpon him gyuen, vpon the mozowe folowyng the feest of saynte Mathewe beynge saterday, & the.xxii.day of Septembꝛe, was ladde on fote vnto ꝑ towꝛe hyll beyng accompanyed with great strengthe of men, foꝛ so moche as it was dempd ꝑ he shuld haue ben rescued by the waye/ how be it none suche was attempted / but peasably he was bꝛought vnto the sayde place of execucyon, and there pacientlye & meekely toke his dethe. whose body after was by the frerres Augustynes boꝛne vnto theyꝛ place within the warde of Bꝛadestrete of London, & there in the noꝛthe syde of the quyer solempnely buryed / and after vpon his graue a sumptuous toumbe of marble stone sette and edifyed. And by auctoꝛyte of the said parlyament, the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury was eryled the realme. And vpon the monday folowynge beynge the xviii.daye of Septembꝛe, sꝛ Johñ

lorde

lord Cobham, and sir Johñ Cheyny knyght, were iudged to be drawen, hanged and quarteryd. But by instaunce and labour of their frendes, that iugement was chaunged vnto perpetuall prison. And thys done / ỹ kynge ordayned a royall feeste, and helde open housholde for all honeste comers. For as affirmeth Peter Pyc taupence a wryter of historyes / this prynce kynge Rycharde passed all other of his progenytours in lyberalytie and bountie. The whiche feeste and also parlyament yet holdynge / the kynge created .v. dukes, a marques, and .v. eries. As fyrste the erle of Derby syr Hery of Bolyngbrooke, sone and heyre of Johñ of Gaunte duke of Lácastre, was created duke of Herforde. The seconde whiche was erle of Rutlande, was created duke of Anmerle. The thyrde beynge erle of Kent, was created duke of Surrey. The fourthe beynge erle of Notyngham, was created duke of Norfolke. And the fyfte was the erle of Huntyngedon, the whiche than was created duke of Exeter. Also of the erle of Somerset, was made a marques of Dorset. And for the eries / fyrste the lorde of westmerlande named Dane Rapy Neuyll, was made erle of westmerlande / the lorde Tresorer syr wyllyã Scrope, was made erle of wylshyre / and syr Johñ de Mountague was made erle of Salesbury. And whan this busines was fynysshed / the parlyament was remoued vnto Shrewysbury vnto Hylarye terme / where it was fynysshed to many mennes dyspleasures, & dysheryteynge of many trewe heyres.

Anno domini .M.CCC.lxxxvii. Anno dñi .M.CCC.lxxxviii.

Mercer. wyllyam Askeham.

Rycharde whyttyngton. Anno .xxi.

Johñ wodecoke.

IN this .xxi. yere of kynge Rycharde / the people of the lande murmured and grudged sore againe the kynge & his counsell / for so moche as the goodes belongynge vnto the crowne, were dispersbyd & gyuen to vnworthy persones / by occasyon whereof dyuers charges and exaccyons were put vpon the people. Also for that the chefe rulers aboute the prynce, were of lowe byrthe and of small reputacyon / and the men of honoure were kepte out of fauoure. Also for that the duke of Gloucester was secretely murdred without processe of the lawe / and many thynges elles myslordered by the laste parlyament, whereof the wyte and blame was layed vnto the kynge and other persones after named, as well for wrongefull dysheryteynge of sondrye persones at the sayde parlyamente, suche as were menyall seruauntes of the forsayde duke of Gloceter and of the eries of Arundell and of warwyke, contrarye hys owne proclamacyons made concernynge suche maters. Also that where dyuers patentes & grauntes passyd the kynges great seale, as well for pardons and other great maters / yet for the kynges singuler auauntage & suche fewe persones as bare the rule about hym, many of theym were called agayne. Also where for sherydes and other offycers of all shyres of Englande, were wonte to be named .iiii. by discrete psones as iuges & other, of ỹ whiche the kyng shulde assygne two for the yere folowynge / he of his owne wylle & pleasure wolde refuse them, & chose suche as hym lyked,

the

the which he knewe well wolde lene more to his weale, than to the cõmen weale of this lande or of his subiectes. Also that where before tymes þ kynges of Englande vsed to sende out commyssyons vnto burgeses of cyties & townes, to chose of theyr fre lybertie suche knyghtes of the shyre as they thought mooste wealefull for the comen weale of the sayde shyre & lande/nowe kyng Rycharde wolde appoynte the persones, and wylle them for to chose such as than he named/wherby his singuler causes were preferred, and the commen causes put by. Also kinge Rycharde thorough cuyll counsell, commaunded by his letters vnto the sheryffes of all shyres fewe excepted, that all persones of honoure within theyr countyes as well spirytuall as temporall, shulde make certayne othes in generall wordes, and ouer that to wryte and seale certayne bondes for perfourmaunce of the sayde othes / and also for blanke chartour, which many men of substaunce were constrayned to seale to theyr great charges. The people contynually murmured and grudged, for these iniuryes and many mo, whyche at the tyme of his deposynge were artycules agayne hym in.xxxviii.sondry artycles / with also the rumoure that came vpon hym, that he had letten to ferme the reuenews of þ crowne, to Busshey, Bagot, and Grene/whiche caused as well the noble men of the realme to grudge agayn hym as other of the comon people. Thus cõtynuynge this mysorder within the lande/dyed syr Johñ of Gaunt duke of Lancaster, at the bysshoppe of Elyes place in Holborne / and from thens was caried vnto saint Pouls, and there vppon the north syde of þ quyre honorably buryed. At whose enterrement all the chefe lordes of Englande were present. For whom after was foũdyd by dame Blanche hys wyfe an honorable anniuersary, as before I haue shewed in þ. xliiii. yere of Edwarde the thyrde, whiche of right ought to be set in this place.

This yere also aboute the feste of saynt Bartholomew, fell discencyon & discorde betwene þ duke of Herforde & the duke of Norfolke. wherfore the duke of Herforde accused þ other, that he hadde taken. iiii. thousande marke of the kynges, of suche money as he shulde therwith haue waged certeyne sowdyours at Caleys/whiche he lefte vndone, & toke the same money to hys owne vse. But an other wryter sayth, that as þ sayde two dukes rode vppon a tyme from the parlyament towarde theyr lodgynges/þ duke of Norfolke sayd vnto that other: Syr se you not how varyable the kyng is in his wordes, and how shamefully he putteth his lordes and kynesfolkes to deth, and other exileth and holdeth in pryson. wherfore full necessary it is to take kepe, and not for to truste myche in hys wordes. For without dowte in tyme to come, he wyll by suche lyke meanes bryngе vs vnto lyke deth & distruccyon. Of whiche wordes the sayde duke of Herforde accused that other vnto the kynge / wherfore eyther wagyd bataple with other before the kynge. To whom daye of metynge was gyuen to eyther vpon the.xi. daye of September, to fyghte within lystes at Couẽtre, where all thynge was ordeyned for. At whiche place at þ day assygned thyder came the sayde two dukes, and appered in the feilde before the kynges presence, redy to do theyr bataple. But þ kyng anone forbad that fyght / and forthwith exyled the duke of Herforde for x. yeres, and the duke of Norfolk for euer / whiche sentence was shortely after

after put in execucyon. Thanne the duke of Herforde sayled into Fraūce and there taryed a season. But for lacke of ayde and comforte he departed thens and came into Brytayne. And the duke of Norfolke passed by uers countreys/and lastely came vn to the cytie of Venyce, and there endyd his lyfe. And soone after thys was maister Roger walden a chapeleyne of the kynges,made archebysshoppe of Caunterbury/ the whyche was a spectall louer vnto the citie of London, and made great labour for them vnto the kynges grace, ꝑ greuously with them was of newe displeased, for so moche as he was enformed of them, ꝑ they shulde counsell with other shertffes to withstāde certayne actes made in the laste parlyament/for ꝑ which the compnaltie of the cytie was endyted with other shertffes. In rediste wherof/by coūsell of the sayd archebysshoppe, & of maister Robert Brayebroke than bisshoppe of Lōdon, the cytezens made a lamentable supplicacyon vnto the kinge. whiche by ayde & fauoure of the sayd two bysshoppes & other louers of ꝑ cytie/ꝑ kinges yre & indignacyon by meane of that lowly supplicacyon was some parte appeased & withdrawen. But yet to contente a pte of ꝑ kinges mynde,many blanke chartours were deuysed & broughte into the cytie/which many of ꝑ most substancyall men of the same were sayne to seale, to theyr payne and charge in conclusyon/ꝑ whiche shortely after was vsed thorought all countreys of Englande.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxxviii.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxix.

Goldesmythe Dzewe Barentyne.

Johñ wade.

Anno.xxii.

Johñ warner.

IN this.xxii.yere of kynge Richarde/ꝑ cōmon fame ranne,ꝑ the kyng had letton to ferme ꝑ realme of Englande vnto sir wyllyam Drope erle of wyltshyre & than treasourer of Englāde,to sir Johñ Bussshey,syr Johñ Bagot and syr Henry Grene knightes/ꝑ whyche returned shortly after to their great cōfusyōs. This yere also, Thomas ꝑ son and heyre of ꝑ erle of Arundell lately beheded/ꝑ whiche Thomas nat all to his pleasure was kepte in ꝑ house of the duke of Exceter, passed ꝑ see by ꝑ meanes of one wyllyā Scot merchāt/ & rode vnto his vncle ꝑ archebisshop of Caūterbury, & so contynued with him in the cytie of Colayne than beynge. In this passyne great purueyaunce was made for ꝑ kynges iourney into Irelāde/so ꝑ whan all thynges necessarye to the honoure & nede of the kynge & his people was redy, he set forthwarde vpon his iourney in the moneth of Aprylt/leauyng for his leutenaunt in Englange sir Edmonde of Langley his vncle & duke of yorke/and after toke shippyng at Bristowe, and sayled with a mighty & stronge hoste into Irelande.where he had so prosperous spede, that in processe of tyme with manhode and good polycie he subdued to him that coūtrey. In the whiche voyage, were it for acte that he dyd or of ꝑ kynges bounte/Henry sone and heyre of the duke of Herforde than exiled, was of ꝑ kyng made knyght. This Henry was after his father crowned kynge of Englande,& named Henry the.v.

Kynge Richarde thus beynge occupyed in Irelande,and receyuynge of the capytaynes of the wylde Irysshe into his subiectyon,and ordeynyng of that countrey to set in an order and rule/Henry of Bolyngbroke

duke of Herforde before cryed, with the archebyshoppe of Caunterbury and Thomas of Arundel and other, landed with a small company at Rauyns spore in the Northe countrey, in the moneth of August/and vnder colour of the clayme of his ryghtfull enherytaunce, cryed the people as he wente/to whome in shorte processe great multytude of the people drewe and gathered. Of this landyng king Rycharde beynge warned/for hasty spede of returnyng into Englande, left in Irelãde behynde hym moche ordenaũce/and landed at Mylforde hauen in the begynnyng of September, & begynnynge also of the. xviii. yere of his reygne/& so rode vnto the castell of Flynte in wales, and there rested him and his people/and entended there to gather vnto hym more strength. In the whiche meane tyme the forsayd Henry that than hadde proclaymed him selfe duke of Lancaster in the ryght of Johñ of Gaũte his father, was comyn to Bristowe/ and there without resystence toke sir wyllyam Scrope erle of wyltshyre & treasourer of Englande, syr Johñ Bussshey, and syr Henry Grene.

Also there was taken sir Johñ Bagot/but after he escaped and fledde into Irelande. Than were the other chyre there tuged & put in execucyon. And kinge Rycharde styll beynge at the castell of Flynte / herynge of the great strengthe þ was about þ duke, fearyd sore of hym selfe. And in lyke wyse so dyd all suche as were about hym. wherfore syr Thomas Percye erle of Worcetyr and than stewarde of the kynges houshoide, contrarye his allegeaunce, brake openly the whyte rodde in the hall, & commaundyd euery man to shifte for him selfe. By reason whereof the people vopded, and the kynge lefte without cõforte, so that he was shortly after taken and presented vnto the duke. The whyche put hym vnder safe kepynge/& shortly after spedde him toward Lõdon. And whã he came nere vnto þ cytie/he sente kyng Rycharde with a secret cõpany vnto þ Towre, there to be safely kepte tyll his commyng. wherof many cupll disposed persones of the cytie beyng warned/ assembled them in great noumbre, & entended to haue mette him without the towne, & there to haue taken him from such as ladde him, & so to haue slayne him for the great crueltie that he before tyme had vsed vnto the cytie. But as god wolde / the mayre & rulers of the cytie were enfourmed of theyr malycyous purpose, and gathered to theym the worshyppfull commoners and sadde men/by whose polycyes nat without great difficulte, they were reuoked frome theyr cupll purpose/all be it that lastynge that tumoure they rode vnto westmynster, and there toke mayster Johñ Blake deane of the kinges chapell/ and frome thens broughte him vnto Newgate, and there caste on hym pryons.

Shortly after/the duke came vnto London/& there by the consent of kyng Rycharde, a plyament was begone vpon the. xiii. day of þ moneth of September. Endurynge whiche plyament, many accusacyons & artycles of mystruynge of the lande were layed vnto the charge of thys noble prince kyng Rycharde, whiche be engrosed at length in xxx viii. artycles. For the which, volũtarely as it should seme by þ copy of an instrumẽt here after shewed / he shulde renounce & wylfullye be deposed from all kynglye mageste, the monday beynge the xxix. day of September, and the feest of sayne Wyghell the archaungell, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon after the accompte of the churche

of

of Englande, M. lxxxix. and the xviii. yere of the raygne of the sayde Rycharde. The coppe of whiche instrumente here vnder ensueth.

THis present instrumente made the mondaye the. xxii. daye of Septembre, and feeste of sayne Mychaell tharchaungell, in the yere of our lorde god M.CCC. lxxx. and xix. and in the. xviii. yere of kynge Rycharde the seconde/ wytnesseth, that where by the auctorite of the lordes spirytuall and temporall of this present parlyament and cõmons of the same, the ryghte honorable and discrete psons here vnder named, were by the sayde auctorite assygned to go vnto the towre of London, there to here and testifye suche questyons and answeres as than & there shude be by the said honorable and discrete persones harde: knowe all men to whome these presente letters shall come, that we sir Richarde Scroope archebysshoppe of yorke, Johñ bisshoppe of Herforde, Henrye erle of Northumberlande, Rafe erle of west merlande, Thomas lorde of Barkeley, wyllyam abbot of westmynster, Johñ pryour of Caunterbury, wyllyam Thyrnynge, and Hughe Burnell knyghtes, Johñ Markeham Justyce, Thomas Stowe, & Johñ Burbage doctours of the lawe Cyuyle, Thomas Feryby and Henrys Lopham notaryes publyke/ the day & yere aboue sayd atwene the houres of. viii. & xi. of ỹ cloche before noone, were present in the chyefe chaumber of the kynges lodgynge within the sayde place of the towre. where was reherced vnto the kynge by ỹ mouth of the forsayde erle of Northumberlande, that beforetyme at Conwey in Northwalys the kynge beynge there at hys pleasure and lyberte, promysed vnto the archebysshop of Caunterbury than Thomas of Arundell, and vnto the sayde erle of Northumberlande / that he for insufficyencey whyche he knewe hymselfe to be of, to occuppe so greate a charge as to gouerne thys realme of Englande/ he wolde gladly leue of and renoũce the ryght and tytle, aswell of that as of hys tytle to the crowne of Fraũce and hys mageste, vnto Henry duke of Herforde/ and that to do in suche conuenyente wyse, as by the lernyd men of hys lande it shulde moste sufficyently be by them deuysed and ordeyned. To the whyche rehersall the kynge in our sayde presences answered benygnly, and sayde that suche promyse he made/ and so to the same he was at that howre in full purpose to performe and fulfyll/ sauyng he desyred fyrst to haue personal speche wyth the sayde duke and wyth the archebysshoppe of Caunterbery hys cosyns. And furthermore he desyred to haue a byll drawen of the sayde resygnacyon, that he myghte be persyghte in the rehersall therof. After whyche copy to hym by me the sayde erle delyuered / we the sayde lordes and other departed. And vppon the same after noone the kynge desyrynge moche the commynge of the duke of Lancaster / at the laste the sayd duke wyth the archebysshoppe entred the forsayde chaumber/ bryngynge wyth them the lorde Roos, the lorde Burgeyny, and the lorde wylloughby, wyth dyuerse other. where after due obeysaunce done by them vnto the kynge/ he familyarly and wyth a gladde countenaunce to vs apeerynge, talked wyth the sayde archebysshop and duke a good season. And that communycacyon fynysshed/ the kynge wyth a gladde countenaunce in presence of vs and the other aboue rehersed, sayde openly that he was redy to renounce and

resygne all his kyngelye mageste, in maner and fourme as he before seasons had promised. And all thoughe he had and myght sufficyently, haue declared his renouncement by the reading of an other meane persone/ yet he for the more suretie of the mater, and for the sayd resygnacyon shulde haue hys full force and strengthe, he therfore redde the scrowle of resignacyon him selfe, in maner and fourme as followeth.

In the name of god Amen. I Richarde by the grace of god kynge of Englande and of Fraūce, and lorde of Irelande/ acquyte and assoyle all archebysshoppes, bysshoppes, and other prelates seculer or religyous, of what dygnite, degre, state, or condicyon that they be of/ and also all dukes, marques, erles, barons, lordes, and al myne other lyege men bothe spirituall and seculer, of what maner name or degre they be/ frome them or othe of feaute and homage, & all other dedes and priuileges made vnto me/ and from all maner bādes of allegeaunce and regalty or lordeshyppe. In the whiche they were, or be bounden to me, or in any other wyse constrayned/ and them and theyr heyres, and successours for euermore from the same bandes and othes, I release, deliuer, acquite, and let them for free, dyssolued, and acquyte, and to be harmeles, for so moche as longeth to my persone, by any maner waye or tytle of ryght y to me might folowe of the forsayd thynges or of any of them. And also I resygne all my kyngely dygnyte, mageste, and crowne/ with all the lordeshyppes, power, & priuyleges to the forsayd kyngely dygnite and crowne belongynge/ and all other lordeshyppes and possessyons to me in any maner of wyse pertaynynge, what name & condicyon they be of/ out take the landes and possessyons for me and myne obyte purchased and bought. And I renounce all ryghte and colour of ryght, and all maner tytle of possessyon and lordeshyppe, the whyche I euer hadde or haue, or by any maner of meane myght haue in the same lordeshyppes and possessyons or any of them or to them, with any maner ryghtes belongynge or appertaynyng vnto any parte of the.

And also the rule and gouernaūce of the same kyngedome and lordeshyppes, with all admynistracyons of the same/ and all thynges & euerythe of theym, that to the hole empyre and iurisdiccyon of the same belongeth of right, or in any wyse may belonge.

And also I renounce the name, worshyppe, and regalye, and kyngly hyghnesse, clerely, freely, synguleriy, and holy, in the mooste best maner and fourme that I may/ and with dede and worde I leaue of and resygne them and go frome theym for euermore/ saueyng alwaye to my successours kynges of Englāde, all the ryghtes, priuileges, & appurtenaunces to y said kyngdome & lordeships aboueslaid belongynge & appertayninge. For well I wote & knowlege, & deme, my selfe to be and haue ben vnsufficient & vnable, and also vnprofytable/ and for myne open desertes nat vnworthy to be put downe. And I swere vpon y holy Euāgelis here presently with my handes touched, y I shal neuer repugne to this resygnacyon, dimyssyon, or peldyng vp/ nor neuer impugne theym in any maner by worde or by dede, by my selfe nor by none other. Nor I shall nat suffre it to be impugned, as moche as in me is preuely nor apertly. But I shall haue, holde, & kepe thys renouncing, dimyssyon, & leuynge vp, for ferme and stable for euer more,

in all

in all and in euery parte thereof, so god me helpe and all sayntes, and by this holy euangelis by me bodely touched & kyssed. And for more record of the same, here openly I subscrybe and sygne this present resygnacyon with myne owne hande. And forthwith in our presences and other subscrybed the same, and after delyuered it vnto the archebyshope of Canterbury, sayeng that it were in his power or at his assignement, he wold that the duke of Lancaster there present, shulde be his successour & kyng after hym. And in token thereof he toke a ryng of golde from his fynger beyng his signet, and put it vpon the sayd dukes fynger, delyuering & requiryng ye archebyshop of yorke, to shewe and make reporte vnto the lordes of the parlyament of hys voluntary resygnacyon. And also of his entent and good mynde, that he bare towarde his cosyn the duke of Lancaster, to haue him his successour and kyng after him. And this done, euery man toke their leaue and returned to their owne.

Upon the morowe folowyng beyng tuysday and the laste day of September, all the lordes spirituall and temporall, with also the commons of the sayde parlyament, assembled at westminster: where in in the presence of them, the archebyshoppe of yorke accordinge vnto the kynges desyre shewed vnto them openly the voluntary renouncyng of the kynge, with also the fauoure the whiche he oughte vnto his cosyn ye duke of Lancaster for to haue hym hys successour. And dyuers yt shewed vnto them, the cedule or bylle of renouncemente signed with kynge Richardes hande. After whyche thynges in order by him fynished, the question was axed fyrste of the lordes, yf they wolde admytte and alowe the sayde renouncement. The whyche whan it was of the lordes graunted and confyrmed, the lyke question was axed of the commons, and of them in lyke maner affyrmed. After whiche admyssyon, it was than declared, that nat withstandyng the forsayd renouncyng so by the lordes and commons admytted, it were nedefull vnto the realme, in auoydyng of all suspeccyon and surmyses of yll disposed persones, to haue in wrytynge and registred, the manyfolde crymes and defaultes before done by the sayd Richarde late kynge of Englande, to the ende that they myghte fyrste be openly shewed vnto the people, and after to remayne of record amonge the kynges recordes. The whyche were drawen and compyled as before is sayde in .xxx. artycles, and there shewed redy to be radde. But for other causes than more nedefull to be preferred, the redyng of the said artycles at that season were differred and put of: whyche artycles for that that they wolde aske longe tyme to wryte, & also wolde to some eares be but small pleasure to rede, I haue therfore lefte them out here of this worke: which at lengthe are sette out in the boke of the Mayres, and yete of Drewe Barentyne than mayre of London.

Than for so moche as the lordes of the parlyamente hadde well consydered this voluntary renouncement of kynge Richarde, and that it was behouefull & necessary for the weale of the realme to proceede vnto the sentence of his deposayll: they were appoynted by auctorite of the estates of the sayde parlyament, the bishop of sayncte Asse, the abbotte of Glastenbury, the erle of Glouceste, the lorde of Barkely, wyllyam Thyrn

nynge iustyce, & Thomas Erpyngham and Thomas Grape knyghtes, that they shulde gyue and bere open sentence to the kynges deposicyon. wherupon the sayde commyssyoners leynge there their hedes together / by good delyberacion, good counsell, and auysement, and of one assent / agreed amonge them, that the bishop of saint Asse shulde publisshe the sentence for theym and in their names, as foloweth.

In the name of god Amen. we Johñ bysshope of sayne Asse or Assenence, Johñ abbot of Glastynbury, Rycharde the erle of Glocester, Thomas lorde of Berkeley, wyllyam Thyrnynge Justyce, Thomas Erpyngham and Thomas Grape knyghtes, chosen and deputed specyall commyssaryes by the thre estates of thys present parlyament, representynge the hole bodye of the realme, for all suche maters by the sayd astates to vs committed: we understandynge and considerynge the manyfolde crymes, hurtes, and harmes done by Rycharde king of Englãde, and mysgouernaunce of the same by a longe tyme, to the great decaye of the sayde lande, and vtter ruyne of the same shortly to haue ben, ne had the especiall grace of our lorde god there vnto put ꝑ soner remedy / & also furthermore auertysinge ꝑ the sayde kynge Rycharde knowyng his owne insufficiencie, hath of his owne mere volunte and fre wyll, renounced and gyuen vp the rule and gouernaunce of this lande, with all ryghtes and honoures vnto ꝑ same belongynge, and vtterly for his merytes, hath iuged hym selfe nat vnworthy to be deposed of all kyngely magestie & astate royall: we the prempsses well consyderynge by good and dilygente delyberacyon, by the power, name, and auctorite to vs as aboue is sayd committed / pronounce, discerne, and declare, the same kynge Rycharde before thys to haue be & to be vnprofytable, vnable, vnsufficyent, and vnworthy, to the rule and gouernaunce of the forsayde realmes and lordeshyppes, & all other thappurtenaunces to the same belongynge. And for the same causes, we prynue hym of all kyngely dygnyte and worshyppe, of any kynglye worshyppe in hym lefte. And we depose him by our sentence dyfynityfe / forbydynge expresselye to all archebysshoppes, bysshoppes, & all other prelates, dukes, marqueses, erles, barons, and knyghtes, & to all other men of the forsayd kynge dome and lordeshyppes, or of other places belongynge to the same realmes and lordeshippes subiectes and lyeges what so euer they be, ꝑ none of them from this tyme forthwarde, to the forsaid Rycharde as kynge & lorde of ꝑ forsayde realmes & lordeshyppes, be neyther obedyente nor attendaunt.

After whiche sentence thus openlye declared / the said astates admytted forthwith the same persones for theyr procuratours, to resygne and yelde vp vnto kynge Rycharde, all theyr homage & fealtie whyche they had made & oughte vnto hym before tymes / and for to shewe vnto hym if nede were, all thynges before done that concernyd his deposynge.

The whych resygnacyon at that tyme was spared, and put in respite tyll the morowe nexte folowynge. And anone as thys sentence was in thys wyse passyd, and that by reason therof the realme stode voyde without hede or gouernoure for the tyme / the said duke of Lancaster rysing frõ ꝑ place where he before sate, & standing where all myght beholde hym / he mekely makynge the sygne of the crosse vppon his forhede and

vpon

vpon hys breste, after ſylence by an officer was commaunded, ſayd vnto the people there beyng theſe wordes folowyng. In the name of the father & ſonne and holy ghoſte, I Henry of Lancaſtre clayme the realme of Englande and the crowne, with all the appurtenaunces, as I that am diſcended by ryght lyne of the bloode commynge from that good lorde kynge Henry the thyrde, & through ꝑ ryght that god of hys grace hath ſente to me, wyth helpe of my kynne & of my frendes to recouer the ſame, ꝑ which was in point to be vndone for defaut of good gouernaunce & due iuſtyce. After whyche wordes thus by hym vttered, he retourned & ſet him down in the place where he before had ſytten. Than the lordes appertenynge and herynge thys clayme thus made by thys noble man, eyther of theym frayned of other what he thoughte. And after a diſtaunce or pauſe of tyme, the archebyſhope of Caunterbury hauyng notycyon of the lordes myndes, ſtode vp & asked of the commons, yf they wolde aſſente to the lordes, whych in theyr myndes thoughte the clayme by the duke made to be ryghtefull and neceſſary, for the welthe of the realme & of them all. wherunto with one voyce they cried, ye, ye, ye. After whyche anſwere, the ſayde archebyſhop goynge vnto the duke, & ſettynge hym vpon hys kne, had vnto hym a fewe wordes. The whyche ended, he roſe, & takynge the duke by the ryght hande, ladde hym vnto the kynges ſete, & with greate reuerence ſette hym therein; after a certayne kneelynge and oryſon made by the ſayde duke, or he were therein ſette.

And whan the kynge was thus ſet in hys trone, to the greate reioyſynge of the people, the archebyſhoppe of Caunterbury began there an oracion or colacyon in maner as after folowyth.

Qui dominabitur in populo, primo Regũ capitulo. &c. Theſe ben the wordes of the hygh and mooſte myghty kynge, ſpekynge to Samuel hys prophett, techyng hym how he ſhuld chooſe and ordeyne a gouernoure of hys people of Iſrael, whan the ſayde people aſked of hym a kynge to rule theym. And nat wythout cauſe maye theſe wordes be ſayde here of oure lorde the kynge that is. For yf they be inwardely conceyued, they ſhall gyue to vs mater of conſolacion and comforte, whan it is ſayde that a mã ſhall haue lordeshyp and rule of the people & nat a chylde. For god threte neth nat vs as he ſometyme thret the people by Iſaye, ſayenge, Iſaie. 3.

Et dabo pueros principes eorum, & effeminati dominabuntur eis: I ſhall ſayeth our lorde gyue chyldren to be theyr rulers and prynces, and weke or feretfull ſhall haue dompnyon ouer them.

But of hys greate mercy he hath bylyted vs I truſte hys peculier people, and ſente vs a man to haue the rule of vs, and putte by chylderne ꝑ before tyme ruled thys lande after chyldyſhe condycyons, as by ꝑ werkes of theym it hath ryght lately appered, to the greate diſturbaunce of all thys realme, and for want or lacke of a man.

For as ſayeth the apoſtell Paule ad Corinthios primo. capitulo xiii, Cum eſſem paruulus, ſapiebam vt paruulus, & loquebar vt paruulus, &c. Quando autem factus ſum vir, euacuaui quæ erant paruuli. That is to meane, whanne I was a chylde, I ſauoured and ſpake as a chylde. But at the tyme whanne I came vnto the ſtate of a man, thanne I putte by all my chyldyſhe condycyons.

The apostell sayth he sauoured and spake as a chylde / in whome is no stedfastnesse or constancy. For a chylde wyll lyghtely promyse, and lyghtly he wyll breke hys promyse, & do all thynges that hys appetyte gyueth hym vnto, & forgeteth lyghtely what he hath done. By whych reason it foloweth, that nedely great inconuenyence muste fall to that people ꝑ a chylde is ruler and gouernour of. Nor it is nat possybie for that kynge dome to stande in felicite, where such condycyons reygne in the hede and ruler of the same. But now we ought all to reioyse, that all suche defautes ben expelled / and that a man and nat a chylde shall haue lordshyp ouer vs. To whome it belongeth to haue a sure rayne vpon hys tunge, that he maye be knowen from a chylde, or a man vsyng chyldyshe condycyons. Of whome I truste I may say as ꝑ wyse man sayeth in hys Prouerbys Prouerbiorum tercio capitulo. Beatus homo qui inuenit sapientiam, et qui affluit prudentia The whyche is to meane, Blessed be the man ꝑ hathe sappence or wysedome, and that habounded in prudence. For that man that is ruled by sapience, must nedes loue and drede our lorde god. And who so loueth and dredeth him / must consequentely folowe that he muste kepe hys commaundementes. By force whereof he shall mynyster trewe iustyce vnto his subiectes, and do no wronge nor iniury to any man / so that than shall folowe the wordes of the wyse man the whyche ben rehersed Prouerbiorum decimo. Benedictio domini super caput iusti, os autem impiorum operit iniquitatem which is to meane, The blessynge of oure lorde god shall alyght vpon the hede of our kyng, beyng a iuste and right-wyse man / for the tunge of hym worketh equyte & iustyce. But the tunge of wyched and of synners, coueteth iniquyte. And who that werketh or mynysreth iustyce in due wyse / he nat allonely sauegardeth hym selfe, but also holdeth ꝑ people in a surete of restfulnesse / of the whyche ensueth peace & plete. And therfore it is sayde of the wyse kyng Salomó Ecclesiastes decimo, Beata terra cuius rex nobilis est; & cuius principes vescuntur in tempore suo whyche is to be vnderstande, that blessed and happy is that lande of the whych the kynge or ruler is noble and wyse / & the peyples ben blessed that lyue in hys tyme.

Ye who wolde say, they may take exaumple of hym to rule & guyde theyr subiectes. For by the discressyon of a noble & wyse mã beyng in auctorite / many cuyllies be sequestred and put a parte, and all dyssymilers put vnto syence. For the wyse man cõsidereth & noteth well the great inconuenyences whyche dayly nowe growe of it / where the chylde or insyppyente dyspraiseth the swete & delycyous wordes vnauysydly, & perceyueth nat entorycacion whyche they ben inynged or myxte with, tyll he be inuyzoned and wrapped in al daunger / as lately the experyence therof hath ben apparent to all our syghtes & knowleges, and nat without the great daunger of all this realme. And all was for lacke of wysedome in the ruler whych demed & taught as a chylde, gruyng sentẽce of wylfulnes and nat of reason. So that whyle a chylde reygned, selfe wyll & iuste reygned / & reason wyth good conseyte were outlawed, with iustyce, stedfastnesse, & many other vertuys. But of thys parell & daunger we ben deliuered by the especyal helpe & grace of god, Qui in vii dominatur in populo / that is to meane, he that is nat a chylde but perfyght in reason. For he commeth nat to execute hys owne wyll / but hys wyll that sente hym,

hym, that is to wytte goddes wyl/as a man to whome god of hys habundaunte grace hath gyuen perfyghte reason and dyscrecyon, to dyscerne & deme as a perfyghte man. wherefore nat alonely of thys man we shall say that he shall dwell in wysedome/ but as a perfyghte man and nat a chylde, he shall thynke & deme / & haue suche a cyrcūspecte wyth hym, that he shall dylygently forelooke & se that goddes wyll be done and nat hys. And therefore nowe I truste the wordes of the wyse man Ecclesiastici decimo shalbe verifyed in our kynge / sayenge Judex sapiens iudicabit populum suum, & principatus sensati stabilis erit / that is as sayeth the wyse man, A wyse and dyscrete iuge shall now deme hys people/ & the dominyon or lordshyppe of a dyscrete wyse man, shall stande stedfast. wher upon shall than folowe the seconde verse of the same chappter / sayenge Secundum iudicem populi, sic & ministri eius, &c. that is, Lyke as the hede and souerayngne is replenysshed wyth all sapyence and vertue in guydynge of hys people, admynistrynge to theym lawe wyth due & conuenyent iustyce/ so shall the subiectes agaynwarde be garnysshed wyth awe and louynge dyrede/ & bere vnto hym nerte god all honoure, trouthe, & allegeaunce. So that than it maye be concluded wyth the resydue of the forsayde verses, Qualis rector est ciuitatis, tales & inhabitatores in ea. whyche is to meane, Suche as ꝑ ruler of the cytye is, suche than be the inhabytauntes of the same. So that consequentely it folowyth, a good mayster maketh a good dyscyple. And in lyke wyse / an euyll kynge or ruler shall lose hys people, and the cytyes of hys kyngedome shalbe left desolate and vnhabyted.

wherefore thus I make an ende, in stede of a chylde wylfully doynge hys luste and pleasure wythout reason / nowe shall a man be lorde and ruler, ꝑ is replenysshed wyth sapiēce and reason / and shall gouerne the people by skylfull domys, settynge a parte all wylfulnesse and pleasure of hym selfe. So that the worde that I beganne wyth, maye be verifyed of hym, Ecce quia vir dominabitur in populo. The whyche our lorde graunte/ and that he maye prosperously reygne to the pleasure of god and welthe of his realme Amen.

The whyche oracion beyng thus fynysshed, & the people answerynge wyth greate gladnesse, Amen: the kynge standyng vpon hys fete, sayd vnto the lordes & commons present. Syrs, I thanke you my lordes spyrytuall & temporal, and all the states of thys lande / and do you to vnderstāde, that it is nat my wyll, that any man thynke, that by the waye of conqueste I wolde dysheryte any man of hys herytage, fraunchyse, or other ryghtes that hym oughte to haue of ryghte / nor for to putte hym oute of that whyche he nowe enioyeth, and hath hadde before tyme by custome of good lawe of thys realme / excepte suche pryuate persones as haue ben agayne the good purpose and the cōmon profyte of the realme.

And thys speche thus fynysshed / all sherefes and other officers were put in theyr auctoryties, whiche sate for the tyme that the kynges see was voyde/ and after euery man departed.

And at after noone were proclamacions made in accustumat places of the cytye, in the name of kynge Henry the fourthe. And vppon the morowe folowynge beynge wednysdaye, and the fyrste daye of October / the procuratours aboue named yode vnto the towre of London & there certified hym of the admissiō

of kynge

of kyng Henry. And the forsayd iustyce wyllyam Thirnynge in ꝑ name of the other, & for all the states of the lande/gaue vppe vnto Rychard late kyng all homage & fealte to hym before time due, i lyke maner & fourme as before I haue shewed to you in ꝑ xii. yere of kynge Edwarde the. ii.

And thus was the noble prynce prynued of all kyngly dygnyte & honour, by reason of hys euyll counsayll, and suche vnlafull wayes & meanes as he by hys insolency in his realme suffered to be vsed, whan he had regned. xvii. yeres thre monethes & .viii. dayes.

¶ Charles the. vii.

Francia.



Arolus or Charles the .vii of ꝑ name, or the. vi. after that compte of ꝑ Frenche hystory, a chylde of xiii. yeres of age, & sonne vnto Charles the .vi / began hys regne ouer the Frenchemen in the moneth of September, & yere of our lorde .M.CCC.A. lxxx / and the thyrde yere of the seconde Rychard than kyng of Englande. Thys Charles was crowned kynge wythin the age of .xiiii. yeres, contrary a lawe made in the xi. yere of hys father.

And where by hym he was commytted vnto the rule of Lewys his vncle & duke of Angeou, to the tyme of the ful of. xiiii. yeres / yet after the deth of the father, suche vnkyndenesse begā to spryng betwene the lordes of the realme, that for the comon welthe of the same it was agreed by the more partye, that thys Charles shulde be crowned at Raynes i all hasty spede. The whyche was done in short seasō after / & so contynued nat wythoute dysturbaunce of malyce whych kynded betwene hys two vncles, and other inconuenyences, by the space of iii. yeres ensuyng. The. iiii. yere of hys regne / the cytesyns of Parys murmurynge and grudgynge for dyuerse impositions & taskes of them, leuyed sodenly arose in greate multytude, entendynge to haue dystressed some of the kynges housholde seruantes, & such as were men of ꝓsyte. But by medyacyon of one discrete parsone named Iohn Warlyle, with assystence of the prouost of the marchauntes, the rumoure was sondele appeased / in so myche that the greate multytude was wythdrawen and returned to theyr occupacyons. But some euyll disposed, whyche in suspycyous congregacyon ruet vse to erecte and stryre the people vnto robbynge and other vnlefull actes / trayt sedycate them, & sayde and cryed that they wolde haue the Iewys banysshed the cytye. To whom it was answered that the kynge shuld be enformed of theyr desyre / and that vppon it they shulde haue knowlege of the kynges pleasure. wherupō in a rage they ranne vnto the houses of the Iewes / and entred them by force, in robbynge and spoylynge them, and bare awaye what they myght carye / in slaynge suche of the Iewes as any resystence and defence made agayn them / & neuer after restored ꝑ sayd goodes, not wythstandynge that the kyng in that byhalfe gaue sore and strayte cō maundementes. It was not longe after that suche as were of ꝑ kynges secrete counsayle, consyderynge the great charges and nedes of ꝑ kyng, and the weykenesse of his treasoure / by authorite of the kynges cōmyssyons called before them the rulers of Parys, of Roan, and other good cytyes. The whyche beynge assembled, to them was shewed the many and importune charges whyche ꝑ kynge

dayly

dayly had for the defence of hys realme and subiectes. wherfore by all wyse & politike meanes that they myghte vse, they exorted the sayde commens to graūte vnto the kynge in wayde of subsydye. xvi. d. of the pounde of all wares at that dayes curraūt. To the whyche requeste in conclusyō after aduyse taken of theyr neyghbours/ it was answered that the people were so sore charged in tymes passed, that they myght nat sustayne or bere any more charges, tyll theyr necessytie were otherwyse relieued/ so that in cōclusyō at thys season the kynge and hys coūsayll were dyspoynted.

In the. vi. yere of thys Charles/ ꝑ Flemynges, whych by a certayne season had rested theym frome batayll/ were it for necessyte or synguler couetyse of Lewys theyr duke, he asked of them a greate ayde or taske. And for he knewe well that yf he myghte wynne the fauoure and graūt of the towne of Gaunt, he shulde the sooner haue hys pleasure of the residue/ therefore he fyrste began by meanes of fayrenesse. And after whā thereby he sawe he myght take none aduaūtage, he added therunto manasses & threatenynges/ the whyche nat withstandynge the Flemynges bode stedfast in one oppynyon, & denayed flatly theyr dukes requeste. whereuppon he lastly departyng from Gaunt, wyth great displeasure sayd, I shall shewe my selfe to be lorde & souerayne of thys towne & of the obstynat people of the same. And shortly after ꝑ duke made sharpe warre vpō thē of Gaūt/ & they in lykewyse defended them vigurously, so that theyr enemyes wā of them lytle aduaūtage. And after thys warre hadde bē a season contynued, nat wythoute losse of many men vpon bothe partyes/ the Gaunteners remembrynge the obedyence and feaute whyche they shulde bere to theyr souerayne lorde & duke, made meanes that they myghte be harde. After graunte whereof, they sente vnto hym certayne oratours whyche hadde vnto hym the wordes in sentence folowynge. Moost souerayne verte god, we deny nat but we accepte the for our prynce and leder/ & to the as thyne it becommeth vs to obey wyth all reason.

And thou agayne arte bounde to defende vs. If we any thyng by our ouersyght & necligence haue agayn the trespassed/ we meekely beseche the of forgyuenesse. And furthermore beseechynge the, that suche fraunchyses & lybertyes to vs by thy noble progenytours before graūted, thou wylt nat from vs withdrawe nor abrydge/ by reason wherof thy people of Gaūt maye nat to any tarte contrary theyr volunte be cōstrayned. But & to thy nede of warres thou haue necessytye of ayde of thy commons, they of free wyll all cōstraynte sette a parte, are redy to ayde and helpe the, as fre & as lyberall as thy trewe subiectes. By reason of whyche wordes ꝑ duke was of hys ire towarde theym somewhat apeased. But after theyr departyng from the duke or erles presence/ such ponge knyghtes as were of the erles house, hadde vnto theym many byght & dysdaynous wordes/ sayeng that they were thrall vnto theyr erle, and that theyr obstynacye shulde be to the vttermoste of theyr reproche & correccyon, and they by coaccion and constraynt forced to do theyr dutye. By occasyō of whyche wordes/ the Gaūteners retournyng to theyr former wylfulnesse, kepte styl theyr former oppynyō, & defended the erle & his people as they before hadde done. wherfore the erle seynge he myghte nat by strēghte preuayle agayne hys enemyes/ studied the wayes & meanes to famyshe theym by hunger/

so that

so that by that meane he might draw the towne to hys subiection. And that to bryng to effecte he gyde ꝑ towne about wyth a stronge syege. Than the Gauteners supplyed wyth more obduracion of herte agayne theyr prynce / made them a capytayne named Philippe Artyuele, the sonne of Jakes de Artyuele before slayne of ꝑ Flemynges / lyke as to you I haue before shewed in the .xvii. yere of Philippe de Valoys late kyng of Fraūce The whyche furnysshynge hys people wyth all habylymentes of warre / made out of the towne a ꝑpyghte hys feelde in a playne iopynge vnto it / where the erles people & they fought a sharpe fyght & longe. But in ꝑ ende fortune was vnto the erle or duke so frowarde that wyth losse of .v.M. of hys soudyours he was forced to take Bruges for hys suerte.

By reason of thys vyctory thys Artyuele beynge nat a lytle supprysed wyth pryde / exalted in such wyse the dwellers wythin the towne of Gaunte, and all suche as were nere neyghbours vnto them, to set a parte all occupacyon aswell husbandry as other, & gyue theyr hole study vnto actes and feates of warre. The erle thus beynge wythin ꝑ town of Bruges / a daye of greate solempnytie perelye holden by them of Bruges approched, whyche they worshypped in the honoure of our lordes bloode. To thys daye of solemptye vsed perely to come, all the inhabytauntes of the vyllages & countrey there aboute. whyche daye of feast Philyp de Artiuele callynge to mynde / appoynted vnto hi.M. of his soudyours / & warned them wyth armoure beynge clad vnder theyr clothes, to ascende by .ii. by thre, by foure, & lyke small companyes vnto thys feestfull solempnyte / & at such tyme as he gaue warnyng, euery man to be redy wyth swerde in hande, to make some amōgst ꝑ preese to the ende that they myght take the erle than of helpe destytute. whyche cautele thus prepared for / at the daye comyn of thys sayde feeste, the towne beynge replenysshed with people / the sayde Artyuele vnsuspect of any persone, with hys company in maner aboue sayde entred the towne of Bruges. And whā he sawe his best tyme / he sodeynly cryed, alarme, alarme. wyth whyche sodeyn crye the erle beynge assonyed / manfully for a whyle wythstode hys enemyes, and encouraged the people agayne them. But for that the Gaunteners were in armoure and the other vnarmed / they of the erles party fled soone. That seynge the erle, wyth great difficulte fledde / & so leppyng iospardously into the house of an olde woman, escaped & went vnto Sclusse, & there a whyle helde hym.

Than thys Artyuele sayeng that by the ayde of theym of Bruges he was disposyted of the erles takyng / felle vpon the inhabytauntes of the towne, and slewe of theym a certayn / and after wyth greate pompe & pylage retourned vnto Gaunt.

In the .viii. yere of this Charles / by procuryng of hys vncle Lewys duke of Angeou, a tare was exacted of the comons of Fraunce. The whych to bryng to effecte many frendes & promoters were made, aswell of cytezyns as other. But anone as ꝑ commons of Parys vnderstode of this / they became wylde, & assembled in thyche companies / nat regardyng the reasonable allegations to theym layed and shewed by Peter Dyet & Johñ Mayll, though in them they had great affeccion & truste / but toke them to theyr affeccion & mynde, and made amonge them certayn capytaynes & rulers / and kept the watche by nyght

nyght as enemyes had lyen about ꝓ cytye. whyche insurrectyon & rebellyon thus begon wythin the cytye of Parys / the cytye of Roan takynge therof exaumple, arered a lyke murmure/and fensyb the cytye of Roane wyth lyke prouysyon / & made theym a maner of a fatte / and vnwelby as a bylayne of the cytye carped hym about the towne in a carre, & named hym in dyspyb of theyr prince theyr kynge/& ceased nat to fall into many inconuenyences, as robbyng of holy places and other, nat wythoute shedynge of bloode, wherof the circumstaunce were longe to telle. But as all operacio of mā hath ende, so thys folp and rebellyon of Frenchemen was ceased / & many for the trespasse therof caste in harde & darke pryson. Of the whyche the kynge entended to haue taken cruell correccyon; me hadde ben the great instaunt labour made by the rulers of the vnyuersyte of Parys, and other suche as were nere aboute the kynge. By whose meanes the multytude was pardoned/and a fewe suche as were the begynners were put in execucyon. And than as testyfyeth myn auctour mayster Robert Gagwyne, for to appeale the kynges hyghe displeasure, to hi was graūted an hūdreth thousande frankes, whyche after sterlynge money amounteth the summe of.x. thousande li.

We haue before harde howe ꝓ erle of Flaūders wyth great ieopardy escaped the hādes of Philyp de Artyuele capytayne of Gaūte/ & howe he came to Melnise, and there safegarded hym selfe. where wyth all dylygence he gathered vnto hym hys people, & made a new reyse vpō the sayd Artyuele. The whyche to hym hadde assocyat as affermeth my sayd auctour M. Fabyan / so that betwene the erle & hym was foughte a cruell fyghte, wherof in ꝓ ende Artuele was agayn vyctour, & cōstrayned the erle to forsake the feelde wyth losse of.x. M. of hys knyghtes/ & he hym self escaped wyth great daūger vnto the ylande of [illegible]/and dyuers of hys people as Fleshmē and other, in a good nōmbre fledde vnto a towne called Andwerpe/where a season they defended them agayne the malyce of theyr enemyes. In whyche passe tyme this Artyuele cōtectuyng in hys mynde that the Frenche kynge wolde take the erles partye / sente vnto hym an ambassade or message wyth letters / besechynge hym nat to entremedle of thys waute betwene the erle and the Gaūteners / whyche warre the erle had commensed onely of tyranny and nat of iustyce, entendyng vtterly to destroy the auncyēte lybertye & fraunchyse. Wherwyng also further, that yf he wolde nat as they cōtemplacyon & prayer forbere to ayde theyr sayde erle/that thā to defende theyr lybertye & ryght, they wolde seke ayde of the kynge of Englāde. To the whych requeste none answere was made, neyther by the kynge nor by hys counsayll wherfore thys Artyuele made grōge prouysyon to wythstande ꝓ Frēche kynge/and sette a certayne of hys soudyours for to kepe the syege before Andwerpe, whyle he made prouysyon for other neded.

In thys meane whyle the erle went vnto the duke of Burgoyn/ & they togyther rode after vnto kynge Charles/shewyng to hym lamētably what wrōges ꝓ erle had sustayned of ꝓ obstynat Gaūteners/besechyng hym of ayde to rebuke ꝓ sayd wrōges. which cōplaynt the kyng graciously herde/ and benygnly graūted to them theyr petycyon. And natwythstandynge that ꝓ dede of wynter was cōmyng, he in all haste assembled hys knyghtes/& takynge wyth hym, the Dyc-

Cc. lambe,

flambe, wyth a mighty stronge hoste perced the countrey of Flaunders towarde Marquet in the ende of ꝑ moneth of Octobre. wherof herynge Artyucle made prouysyon to stoppe the ways, by breakyng of bryages and other meanes, wherby the Frenche hoste was greatly empeched & let, so that wyth great difficultye & daunger, they passed ꝑ ryuer of Lyeat a bryge longe defended by the inhabytaunces of the countrey, wyth ayde of theyr capytayne named Peter wood, whiche there was slayne wyth .iii. M. of hys adherents. After wynnyng of whiche bryage, the Frenche hoste passed the ryuer, & spoyled the countrey before them, whyche vnto them was moche auayleable, for that cyrcuite was inhabyted with many ryche clothmakers. Than the kyng with hys hoste made towarde the mount of Ipre. wherof the dwellers of Ipre beyng ware, sent out two freers of ꝑ ordre of preachers, to beseche the kynge to accepte that towne and dwellers vnto hys mercy, the whych retourned wyth comfortable answere. wherfore forthwyth rode forthe .xii. of the notablest of ꝑ towne, & offered the towne and dwellers to be in the kynges power. The whyche offer the kyng accepted, and after entred the towne. Of whome ꝑ kynge receyued .xl. M. frankes, or .iiii. M. li. sterlynge toward the wagyng of hys knyghtes. And shortly after all the vyllages there toward the see submytted them vnto the kyng, bryngyng vnto hym certayn capytaynes whyche belonged vnto Philyppe de Artyucle, wyth also fourthy thousand frankes towarde theyr costes, which capytaynes the kynge commaunded to be fourthe wyth beheded.

¶ The batayle of Courtray.

Whanne kynge Charles hadde taryed fyue dayes at Ipre, worde was broughte to hym that Philype Artyucle was comynge towarde hym wyth .xl. thousand m. wherfore the kyng set forwarde hys hoste, & so lowed after as fast as he myght somdele to hys payne, by reaso of rayne & fowle ways that he passed, so that fynally he approched wythin .iii. myles of his enmyes. Upo the mornynge beynge the .xi. daye of the moneth of Decembre, & yere of our lordes incarnacion .M.CCC.xxxii. & bii. and begynnyng of the .bii. yere of thys Charles, in a playne nere vnto ꝑ towne of Courtray was fought ten a cruell batayll, whereof in the begynnyng the Flemynges had the better & forced the Frenche hoste to lose place. But in the ende by sperayll cal lynge of the Frenche knyghtes vnto our Ladye & other sayntes, halfe by myracle as wytnesseth myne auctor, the Frenchmen optayned victory, and put the Flemynges to flyght, & them chased in so cruell wyse, that by deth in the feelde, & drownyng in mareys and other waters, there was of them slayne at that fyghte vppon .xl. M.

Than narowe serche was made for the capytayn Philyppe de Artyucle. And lastly a Flemynge beyng a capytayne of hys foye wounded, sayde that he sawe hym fall in the feelde, whereupon serche beyng made, hys carye was founden oppressed of hys owne people as they fledde. Anone as tydynges came vnto the Flemynges, ꝑ laye about Andwerpe of the losynge of the felde, they in all haste leuynge theyr ordenaunce behynde the, fledde frō the syege. That perceyuyng theyr enemyes, issued oute of the towne, and slewe of them many, & many were drowned in fennys and marreys.

Whanne the Frenche kynge had optayned thus this glorious victory he than entred the town of Courtray, where he solempnyge hym, & other lords

were sent to hym from the towne of Bruges, whyche than hadde newely taken party with Artuele/ & with ꝑ payemente of an .C.xx.M. frankes & .xii. M.li. sterlynge money, there made a peace for the sayde towne of Bruges.

And whan the kyng shuld depart from Courtray/ he commaunded his knyghtes to bete downe the gates of the same, without harme doynge vnto the people. But the Frenchmen beryng in mynde the rebukes and harmes, whyche they before of thys towne had sustened / bete downe great parte of the walles, robbed and slewe moche of the people, & sette fyre vpon the towne whā they had done. In robbynge of thys towne of Courtray, dyuers letters were founde of ꝑ towne or cytye of Parys, whych contened the rebellyō of the Parysyences before declared, with comforte to them for ayde if they neded. Whyche letters whā they came vnto the kynges syght, he was with them of Parys greuously displeased/ and for the same, them by fyre greuously after punysshed. At such tyme as the kyng hadde thus repossessed the erle of the lordshyp of Flaunders/ Gaunt yet remaynyng in they? fyrst errour, held they? towne so strōgely, that nother kynge nor erle myght wynne within them. All be it that after the French kynge was returned into Fraunce/ they sent certayn oratours vnto hym, the whyche he in no wyse wolde suffer to come in hys syght.

In these passed yeres many skyrmyshes and fyghtes were done betwene the Frenchemen & Englyshmē, whyche some deale are touched in the begynnynge of Kychardes regne. But nothynge to the honoure of the Frenchemen, as they in they? trompettes boste & auaunce them selfe. Many mo rebellyōs & insurrectyōs of thys people myght I here bynge in. But for dyuers consyderations whyche to wyse men maye appere, I thynke it better to spare/ & also there be skylfull of them wolde asse a longe tracte of tyme, wherefore I passe ouer.

After the appeasynge of these extraordynate insurrectyōs and murmures, ꝑ that the lāde was some deale serre in a quyetnes, kyng Charles in the begynnynge of the.xx. yere of hys regne, maryed Isabell the doughter of the duke of Bauary. In thys yere also dyed Charles ꝑ kynge of Nauerne a man of great age/ and by a wonderfull happe as reherseth myne auctour. For so it was, that for hys febilnesse or debylyte of age/ he by counsayll of physytyens was sowed in a shete wellyed with aqua vite & to the ende to cause hys olde body to cache natural hete. But howe it was, as thys shete was tacked about hys bodye/ the sclwer takynge hys candell to burne of ꝑ ende of the tyde, or he were ware the fyre fastened in the shete / & so brente hys fleshy or it myght be lowsed frō hym, that he caught therof surche dyssease, that he dyed the.iii. daye folowyng. Whyche myshappe fell to hym after ꝑ opynyon of myne auctour by ꝑ wyll of god, as condygne meryte for his vnstedfastnesse & vntroth by hym before vsed, as in sundry places before in the storyes of kyng Johñ & Charles hys sonn are manyfestly shewed. In thys yere also a batayll was done at Parys betwene .ii. knyghtes of the duke of Bretayn, whereof the cause ensueth. Thys sayd duke had in hys court two knyghtes/ whereof that one was named Johñ Carongs or Carongyon, and that other Jaquet Gyslee, whyche were bothe in good fauoure of they? mayster.

Death of Charles kynge of Nauerne.

Thys Caforigon, were it for delyte to se straunge countreys, or cause of other auenture as pilgrymage or other, departed out of Fraūce, leuyng hys wyfe in a castel or forteresse of his owne, whyche wyfe was goodly and fayer.

After whose departynge, were it for beauty of the womā or for rupll wyl that he bare towarde hys frowe, this Jaquet Gryse entryd the castel, berynge hys wyfe on hande, that he was comyn to se that house, whyche shewed so fayre outwarde. The woman castynge no parell, acceptynge hym for her husbādes frende & hys shewed to him the circuite of ꝑ place. But he in contrary awaytynge hys, prape, whan he sawe the womā farre from company, forsed hyr in suche maner, that contrary hyr wyll he cōmysed wythyher auoutry. At whose departyng she gaue vnto hym many rebukeful wordes, sayenge playnlye that yf hyr husbāde euer retourned, she wolde of that velany be reuēged. Thys dede was kepte secrete tyll the retourne of hyr husbande. At whose home commyng, she wyth lamētable countenaunce shewed tyll hyr husbande all the demeanure of the sayd Jaquet.

After whyche complaynte by hyr husbande well vnderstanden, he yode streyght vnto the duke of Alenson/requyryng hym to do correccion vpō the auoutrer, or els ꝑ he myght trye it with hym in ꝑ fride by fortune of batayll/ wherof nother the duke wolde graunt, but brought the quarell before the kyng. By whose agrement and commaundemente a daye by the kynge was sette to fyghte at Parys. whā the daye of batayll was comen/Carogon brought hys wyfe vnto the place, to tullyfye hyr former sayenge. After affyrmacyon whereof/ eyther fyrste ranne at other wyth sharpe speres. At whyche couse Jaquet wounded hys enemie in the thyghe wyth hys spere. But Carongon beynge wyth it nothynge dysmayed/lyghte from hys horse, and bare hym so manfully, that he ouercame hys aduersarye, & caused hym to confesse hys offence/ for the whyche he was streyght drawen vnto the gybet of Parys, and there hāged. And to the sayd Carongon the kyng gaue in rewarde a thousande frākes or a hundreth pounde sterlynge money/ & ouer that he gaue vnto hym as an annuall fee or rent two hūdreth frankes, whyche is in value of xx. pounde sterlynge money.

In these dayes as wytnesseth Gagwynus/ an auncyent storyen in hys hande a rede crosse, a man to lowe to of goostlye conuersacyon, came vnto the Frenche kynges court. The which by the housholde seruaūtes or famylyers of the court, was lōge kept frō hys presence/all be it that last erye he was brought vnto hym. To whome he shewed that he was deuynely monyshed, that he shulde charge hym to absteyne from hys customable vse in leuynge so often taskes & subsydyes/ & yf he dyd nat, he shulde well understande, that the wrath of god was nere to hym to punyshe hym, yf he refused hys commaūdement. The whyche message the kynge toke as small regarde. But shortly after the quene was delyuered of a doughter that dyed soone after. wherefore the kynge callynge to mynde the ankers wordes/ for fere of other punyshement refrayned a season frome leuynge of tributes and taskes.

But by the exortacion of hys two vnkyndes, he in shorte season after tourned to hys former custome. kynge Charles thus passynge hys tyme wyth greate murmure of hys commons, & rebellyon of the duke of

Bryttayn,

Bytayn, wyth many other aduersy-
tees whych were longe to wryte/ last
ly in the xiiii. yere of hys reygne or
nere about, he made warre vpon the
people of west Fraunce called in late
Cenomanni.

Whan Charles was entred thys
countrey, whyche was in the domy-
nyon of the duke of Bytayn/ ꝑ duke
sent vnto hym messengers, sayenge
to hym that he shulde not nede to in-
uade hys countrey wyth so great stre-
ngthe/ for he and his shuld be boxly at
hys commaundement. But of thys
message ꝑ king toke no regard/ for as
sayth myne auctour, he was not moste
wyse prynce, but was ruled by hys
housholde seruauntes, and helped
euery lyght tale that was ꝺrought to
hym/ and ouer that he was so lyberal
that it was of wyse men accompted
more prodygalyte than lyberalyte.
As Charles nat wythstandyng this
message of ꝑ duke held on his iourney/ commynge nere vnto a woode, he was sodenly mette of a man lyke vnto a begger whyche sayde vnto hi wh̄ther goest thou syr kyng/ beware thou go no farther for thou arte betrayed/ and into the handes of thyne enemyes thyne owne weyny shall de lyuer the. wyth thys monycion of thys poore mā/ the kynge was astonyed, & stoode styl, and bega to muse. In whyche study he so beyng/ one of hys folowers whyche after hym bare his spere, sleped vpō his horse backe/ & in hys so sleppyng let hys spere fall vpon the helmet of hys felowe, wyth whych stroke the kyng was sodenly fered, thynkynge hys enemyes had comenen vnwarely vpō hym, wherefore he in a gere drewe hys swerde & layed about hym at the geynest, and slewe .viii. of his knyghtes or he were restrayned/ and tolde therewyth suche an endelys tale, that he fell ther wyth dystraught.

Wherefore he was to a place there by brought, & lay there in poynte of deth a longe season after, in so moch that the fame ranne that he was ded. But by prayers & other greate dedes of charyte done for hym/ last ly he re couered and retourned vnto Paryse. And for he was nat yet retourned to hys perfyghte helthe/ his two vncles than beynge that one duke of Berry, & that other duke of Burgone, toke vpon them by auctoryte of the estates of the lande, to rule the realme for that season/ in whyche season diuers officers were altered & chaūged. The kyng thus contynuyng his sykenes/ many enterludes and games were deuyced for the kynges recreacyon & comforte.

And vppō a season he beynge lod ged in the quenes lodgynge in the Isabetes of layne Marcell/ dyuers noble men of the courte made a dysguysynge, and appareyled them in lynnen clothes glewed vnto theyr na ked bodyes wyth pytche/ & florysshed them wyth dyuerse colours & oyles so that they were couered all excepte the faces/ and thus apparayled with torche lyghte entred the Chaumbre where as the kyng was, and there in goodly maner he sed theyr disport/ so that the kynge was therewith wel contented.

But were it of recheslesnesse or of some sugi suspected person/ fyre was put to the vesture of the disguysers/ the whyche anone was vppon suche a flame, that no man there coulde quenche it, wherfore the sayd disguysers beynge by reason of pytche and oyles greuously enuenemed, ranne into pyttes and waters wherby they myghte soner atteyne vnto, and so wyth greate difficulte saued theyr selfe.

In meane tyme whyle that the kyng wyth the same tyred,

Cc, iii. greue

grewe in so greate a flame, that in shorte whyle the more parte of that lodgynge was consumed/ to ꝑ great fere of ꝑ kynge and other astates thã there beynge ꝓsente, and augmentynge agayne of his former sykenes/ so that certayne appoyntementes to be holde betwene hym and Rychard kynge of Englande, were for that tyme put of.

In the .xbi. yere of thys Charles / the mariage of peace betwene bothe realmes was concluded and fynysshed at Calays / as before I haue shewed to you in the .xii. yere of kyng Rycharde. And that triumphe fynysshed/ Charles at the cõtemplacyon and prayer of the kynge of Hungry, sent vnto hym Philipp erle of Artoys, with dyuers other knyghtes in good noumber, to ayde ꝑ sayd kynge agayne the Turkys. The whyche after that they hadde there a season warred/ the capytaynes & the more party of the Frenchemen, of the Turkys were dystressed & slayne/ & many taken prysoners to theyr great charge.

Thys Charles thus contynuyng hys sykenesse / two freres of sayncte Augustynes order beynge desyrous of money, toke vppon theym to cure the kyng. And after they had shauen hys hede and anoynted hym medicynes/ the kynge dayly fedde in suche wyse ꝑ he was nye dede. For whyche dysperacyon/ they stamped by phylosophers and doctours of physyke & founden vnreasonynge, were degraded of theyr prelshode, & after beheded. To thys folye were these freres brought, by the exceptynge of the duke of Burgoyne as the common fame went.

In the .xii. yere of thys Charles the lande of Fraunce was greuously vexed wyth the plage of ypydymye/ of whyche sykenesse a greate multytude of people dyed. And that yere was there also sene a blasynge starre of wonderfull bygnes, wyth stremes apperynge to mẽnes syght of moste feruent brennynge. In thys yere also Charles herynge of ꝑ subduyng of kynge Rycharde, sente into Englande two of hys houshold knyghtes / requyrynge kynge Henry the fourth than newelye made kynge, to sende home hys doughter Isabell latelye maryed vnto kyng Rychard, wyth suche dowar as wyth hyr was ꝓmysed.

In doynge of whyche message kynge Henry toke such displeasure, that as sayeth Gagwinus myne auctour, he threwe the sayde twoo knightes in prysone/ where through one of theym named Blanchet dyed in Englande, and that other called Henry after greate sykenesse returned into Fraunce. And shortely after kynge Henry sente the sayde dame Isabell vnto Calays / where she was ioyously receyued of the Frenchemen, and so conueyed vnto hyr sayde father, whyche as yet was nat of hys sykenesse cured. By reason whereof among the lordes of Fraũce, eueryche of them coueytyng to haue rule, great dyssencion & malyce begã to kendle / and specyallye betwene the dukes of Orleaunce, of Burgoyne, and of Berry. Than the duke of Orleaunce entendyng to promote hys cause / vnknowyng the other lordes, allyed hym wyth ꝑ duke of Gelde, & strengthed hym wyth .v. C. men of hys, & so entred the ferides of Patys. And in lyke maner ꝑ duke of Burgoyne wyth a stronge cõpany kept an other coste of ꝑ countrey.

Notwythstandyng by meanes of other lordes these two dukes were kept a sunder, & at lenghte ꝑ duke of Orleyaunce by the kynges remaun

demente

dement that somewhat was than amended, was ordayned regente of the realme. The whiche anone as he was sette in auctorite / fell to all rapine, and oppressed the people with corpdyan talkes and tallages / and the spirituall men with dymes & other exactyons. wherfore by reason of the studentes of Paris, he was at length discharged of that dignyte, and the duke of Burgoyne for hym put in auctorite. Than the duke of Orleyaunce beynge discontented, rode vnto Lucedourgth a towne in highe Almayne, & sought agayne ayde of the duke of Gelder for Englad. But by his frendes he was so aduertysed, that with his owne folkes he returned into Fraunce. But yet the malyce and stryfe atwene hym and the duke of Burgoyne ceased nat.

About this season or soone after, dyed the duke of Britayne. And as affermeth the auctour afore named / kyng Henry the.iiii. maryed his wyfe. wherof hering the duke of Burgoyne, with a company of.vi.M. knyghtes entred Britayne / & there by strength toke from her, her.ii. sonnes named Johñ, Richard & Arthure / & presented them vnto kynge Charles. In the xxii. yere of this Charles, was borne of Isabell hys wyfe a mail chylde, which also was named Charles / the which after the deth of his father vnto the great aduersyte of all the realme of Fraūce, was king of that realme / a contrary the appointment taken atwene Henry the.v. after kynge of Englande, and thys Charles the father nowe of Fraunce kynge / as after shall more appere in the story of the sayde kynge Henry the fyfte.

In this yere also was dame Isabell somtyme wyfe of Richarde late tryne kynge of Englande, maryed vnto Charles eldeste sonne of the duke of Orleyaunce. And Johñ the duke of the.iii. forenamed sonnes of the duke of Britayne lately dede / toke to wyfe Margarete the doughter of kynge Charles. And Phylyppe duke of Burgoyne dyed soone after / leavynge an heyre after hym named Johñ. The whyche after he was gyrde with the swerde of the duchye of Burgoyne / he anone by cupll entysynge and counseil, arered warre agayne the duke of Orleyaunce, to the great dysauantage of all the realme. For the sayde duke of Orleyaunce was a prynce of a wonder full hyghe courage, and desyrous of great honoure / and after the sayenge of Gagwynus coueyted to be kynge of Fraunce. The whyche went to Auygnyon / where as than sate the.xiii. Benet thā pope duryng the scisme, and admynysted by some of the Cardynalles after the dethe of Clement the.vii. To whiche Benet the said duke made great labour, to depryue the Vniuersite of Paris from the great auctorite that it at those dayes rode in / whiche was of meruelous auctorite than as sayeth the forenamed auctour. In thys whyle thus endurynge the lande full of mysceyes & aduentures / the quene which the moche fauoured the dukes partie accompanyed with the sayd duke rode to take her dysporte of huntynge in to the countrey of Weldon. To whi the place she sente letters vnto the Dolphyn by the duke of Bauary her brother, that he with hys wyfe whiche was doughter vnto the duke of Burgoyne, shulde come for to dysporte them. whereof Johñ thanne duke of Burgoyne beynge warned / suspected the quene, that she with ayde of the duke wolde conueye the Dolphyn into Germanye, and there to holde hym at their pleasures. And to empeche that purpose / he all hastely sped hym towarde the Dolphyn /

and contrary the mynde of the duke of Bauarye whiche than was vpon his waye with the sayd Dauiphyne towarde the quene, retourned hym and lodged him in a stronge castell called Lupar. whereof herynge the duke of Orleyaunce / assembled to hym a cõpany of vi. thousande knyghtes & came agayne towarde Parys, where as that tyme the duke of Burgoyne was. And he herynge of ꝑ dukes cõmyng, made him stronge to receyue hym. To whome the cytezens of Parys were fauourable & aydynge, for the cupill wyll that they before bare vnto the duke of Orleyaunce / & also for they hoped by hym to be defended from taskes and tallages. Thus contynuynge the prouiſion vpon bothe partyes to mete shortely in playne batayle / suche polytike meanes was fonde by a noble man called Mountague, that a concorde and vnyte was for that tyme by hym sette atwene the sayd dukes. And for that newe occasyon shulde nat by preſence kyndle atwene them / therfore ꝑ duke of Orleyaunce with hys compauy was sent into Guyan, to warre vpon the englyſshemen / & that other vnto Calays to lay syege vnto that towne. The which before had prepared a wonderfull engyne sette vpon wheles / by the strength wherof he thoughte to wyrke greate dyſturbaunce vnto the sayd towne / & as sayth myne auctour Enguyne, was in great hoope to recouer it agayne to the subiection of the houſe of Fraũce. But that hope was soone dyſpayred / for it was nat longe after or the sayd duke by the kynge was countermaunded and returned. And the duke of Orleyaunce, after he knewe that rescous were commyng frõ Burdeaux / he remoued his syege layde by hym to Burgus a towne of Guyan / & so returned into Fraunce, to his ordynaunce as after shall appere.

IN the.xv. yere of this Charles / the former malyce and enuye contynuyng in the breſtes of the sayd dukes of Orleyaunce and of Burgoyne / as the sayd duke of Orleyaunce was goynge towarde hys lodgynge in the nyght of the. x. daye of Decembre, fell vpon him certayne knyghtes, of the whiche one named Rafe Tuctoupie was leder / & slewe hym nere vnto a gate of the cytie of Parys named Barbet gate.

After whyche murder fynyſshed / ꝑ sayde sir Rafe with hys adherentes fledde vnto the place of the exile of Artoys, where the duke of Burgoyne vsed accuſtomably to reſorte. And ꝑ dede corps was soone after by suche as came to ꝑ exclamacyõ, with also a seruaũt of his with him slaine / borne into ꝑ next houses. whan the rumour of this murder was blowen about ꝑ cytie / amonge Lewys bocle vnto the kynge and than kynge of Secyle, the dukes of Berry and of Burbon with other, drewe thyder / and there with lamentacyon beholdynge the corps, commaunded prouiſyon to be made for the buryenge of it within the vnnaſtery of Celeſtynes / where vpon the seconde day folowynge, he was buryed with great pompe. whome amõge other lordes folowed to his buryenge the duke of Burgoyne, nat without great ſuſpicyon of the sayd murder. And that enterrement with due obſeruaunce fynyſshed / auctorite was gyuen vnto. ii. knyghtes named Roberte Tuyllet & Peter Orpheuer, to make enquery for the murder of this prince. whereof the duke of Burgoyne beynge aſcertayned, voyded the cytie, & brake the bridge of Iaynte Maxence after hym, that ſuſpite after hym ſhulde nat be made / and so haſtely ſpedde hym,

hym, that that nyght fole wynge he came to Andwarpe, whiche is vpon an Empyle from Parys, whan Charles the kyng harde of the eleape of ꝑ sayd duke, fering leste he wolde accuse hym to be consentyng vnto that cupidede, sent vnto hym comfortable messages / so that the sayde duke without warre retyrd all that wynter, sometyme in Arthoys, and an other whyle in Flaunders at his pleasure. In the whiche passynge he lente into dyuers places of Fraunce sondry accusacyons of the duke before sayne, that he entended to depose the kyng, and to take vpon hym the rule & gouernaunce of the realme, and to haue poysoned the sayd kyng, as by dyuers tokens by hym affermed for perfourmaūce of the same. And also that the said duke of Orleyaūce was cause of tyrynge of ꝑ dugupers garmentes before shewed, to the ende to dryuge the kyng in more daunger of sykenes or els to be consumed with the same tyre / with sondry other defamacyons, as leuynge of taxes and impositions of the people, to his singuler auauntage and bougely tury chynge, whereby he myght the sonre attayn vnto his said purpose. Thus contynuyng this great vnkyndenes atwene the duke of Burgoyne, and the sonne and other of his blode of ꝑ duke of Orleyaunce / the said duke a gayne the begynnynge of the pere, herynge that the king and the quene were departed from Parys to Chartres, assembled to hym a stroge power of Holanders & other, and came vnto Parys, in which cytie he mych trusted / to the ende to cause the kynge, ꝑ quene, and the Dolphyn, to whome he hadde maryed his doughter, for to retourne vnto Parys. And to strengthe his partye, he brought with hym wyllyam erle of Hanaū / which wyllyam was a man of great strengthe and allyaunce, and hadde maryed his syster vnto the duke of Burgoyne for esayde / and his doughter and heyre vnto one of kynge Charles sonnes / and was gostyppe vnto the quene. For whyche sayde, consyderacyons, the sayde erle entendynge the weale of that realme of Fraunce, laboured suche wayes and meanes, that by hym for that tyme a concorde and vnyte was dryuen, and made atwene the two dukes of Orleyaunce and Burgoyne, wyth assured othes and necessary actes to that concorde belongynge / and the kyng with his retynewe was agayne retourned vnto Parys. Thes dukes thus appeased, and the duke of Burgoyne agayne reborned to the gouernaunce of the realme / allocate vnto hym the kynge of Hauerne, whyche varyed nat from his fathers louable condycyons / so that by hym newe occasyons of stryfe and varyaunce were moued atwene the sayde dukes and theyr allyes. For fyrste they soughte occasyon agayne the forenamed Mountague, a man of great wysedome and honoure in the kynges courte, and especyall frende vnto the duke of Orleyaunce / and by theyr malyce and vntrewe surmyses fynally putte to dethe. And one named Peter Essayer or Sayer the gouuerneour of the cytie of Parys or gouernoure, they admytted to the rule of the kynges treasoury / and other dyuers offyces suche as were anythynge fauoured of the duke of Orleaūce, they clerely discharged. The whyche for theyr relefe and comforte resorted vnto the sayde duke, shewynge to hym all ꝑ demeanure of their aduersaryes / addynge therunto, ꝑ all suche conuencyons concernynge the amyte atwene hym and the duke of Burgoyne before swore & enacted, were clerely annulled & broken.

with

with these tydynges the duke beyng fyred with newe malyce, accompanyed to hym the dukes of Berry, of Burbon, and of Alenson, the erles of Rychemounte, of Alybert, and of Armenake, with other nobles nat a fewe / by whose counseils he determyned to be auenged vpon the duke of Burgoyne & other his fautours. wherof the sayde duke beyng monished, drewe him towarde Paris, and strengthed the fortresses as he yode. To this duke of Burgoyne was brother the duke of Brabande named Antony, a man of great polycye and wysedome / the whych forecastynge the great shedynge of christen mannes blode, with many other inconuenyences lykely to haue ensued of this varyaunce atwene these two dukes, made suche affectuous labour, that with great difficulte he pacifyed them agayne for that tyme / and brought them to personall communycacyon, and lastely to amyable and frendely departynge. After whiche concorde and ampte thus agayn concluded / the duke of Burgoyne departed into Pycardy, leauynge behynde him the fore named Peter Essay to rule the cyte of Paris. The whiche shortely after drewe to hym suche persones, as before tyme had bered and assysted ꝑ duke of Orlepaunce frendes & seruauntes within that cytie. By whose meanes the sayd Peter sought fyrste occasyon agayne a knight named Henry Thorney / and by false suggestyon smote fyrste of his hede, and after dyd hys body to be hanged vpon the cõmon gybet of Paris, in dyspyte of ꝑ sayd duke as testifyeth myne Auctoure. wherwith ꝑ duke beyng wonderly amoued / resembled his knyghtes, & spedde hym towarde a towne named And for to strengthe another towne named he sente a certayne nombre of his knyghtes / charyeng them with the dwellers to withstande the force of his enemies. Of this hearynge the duke of Burgoyne / assone gathered vnto him the nombre of xvi. M. flemynges and Pycardes / and sped hym vnto the sayde towne of And so with his instrumentes of warre assayled the gate of the sayde towne, whyche leadeth towarde saynt Quintyne, ꝑ in shorte space the sayde Flemynges wan the entre of the towne. In whyche meane season the dwellers wyth the other soudyours by a backe way or water, wherof the maner by thys auctoure is nat expressyd / lefte the towne, rode vnto the duke of Orlepaunce beynge as yet at the forsayde towne of whan the Flemynges were entered the towne, & fonde it deserte of people and pillage / were it for that they lacked theyr praye, or for other cause here nat shewed / they toke suche vnkyndenes agayne the duke, that for prayer nor yet for manalles they wolde nat with hym any lenger tary / but returned them home in all hastely spede towarde theyr owne countrey. So that the duke was fayne to withdrawe / and for the more surete, to aske ayde and helpe of Englysshemen / and so was holpen by the ꝑynces comforte Henrye sonne of Henry the.iiii, as after shall be touched in the.xii. yere of the.iiii. Henry.

IN the.xxi. yere of thys kynge Charles, whiche was the. xii. yere of the.iiii. Henry than kynge of Englande / the duke of Orlepaunce seynge his enemye was turned from Paris, caused suche Bridges as before by his said enemye were broken to be redyfyed. By the whyche he passed the ryuer tyll he came to saint Denys / where as than he fande a ca

pytayne

capytayne & noble man named syr John Capylon of the dukes of Burgoyne, there lefte by hym to strength the towne. The whiche syr John, cõsyderyng ỹ wekenes of ỹ said towne. with also his lacke of strength/ yelded hym ẏ towne vnto the duke/ swerynge to hym by solempne othe, that after ỹ daye he shulde neuer bere armes agayne hym. In this passyme an other capytayne of the Burgonyons, called Gancourt, secretely by night wan vpon the frenche men the bryge of sayncte Clodalde. But nat longe after the duke of Orleaunce sent thyther certayne Bretons / the whiche agayne recouered the sayde bryge, & helde it vnto ỹ sayd dukes vse, In whyche tyme and season the duke of Burgoyne recouerynge hys strength, passed the bryge of Melent, & so came vnto the cytie of Parys / and the daye folowynge wyth helpe of the cytesyns recouered the abouesayd bryge of sayncte Clodald, and dystressed vpon a .M. Bretons, whyche had the warde of the same. Then the duke of Orleaunce made out of sayncte Denys ouer Sayne bryge towarde Parys. wherof that other duke beynge warned, refused the cytie / and with the kynge than there beynge present, remouyd wyth the Dolphyne to the towne called Stamps/ and sent ỹ erle of Marche named Jamys, wyth a certeyne knyghtes to a towne named to strength it agayne the duke of Orleaunce. The whyche of the sayde dukes knyghtes was encountred with and taken, and so sent to pryson. wherof herynge the duke of Burgoyne, in shorte processe after retourned vnto Parys wyth the kyng and dolphyne/ and the duke of Orleãce rode to a towne called Meyntelowe.

And in the .xxii. yere of thys sayd kynge Charles, by counceyll of the duke of Berry and other, seyng that the sayde cytye of Parys was so set agayne hym wyth all the kynge & the dolphyne sent a noble man of his hoste named Alberte vnto Henry the .viii. yet kynge of Englande, to requyre hym of ayde to withstande the tyrannye of the duke of Burgoyne, that wyth hys complyces entendyd to subuerte the realme of Fraunce. To this requeste kynge Henry gaue good eare, and lykely graunted to hys petycyon/ & sente thyder as sayth the frenche cronycle, Thomas hys sonne duke of Clarence/ also ỹ duke of yorke, wyth Jaquette of Cornewayle, accompanyed wyth .viii. knyghtes and .xl. vpponers, & a thousande archers. The whych company when they were landed in Fraunce, & herde ỹ the Frenche lordes were in treaty of peace, & no man to the gaue wages as they tofore were pmyed/ fell vpon a towne called and vtryed/ & therin tone as pysoners the abbot of that monastery wyth other, and cõueyed the to Burdeaux, and after into Englande/ where for they fynaunce & other money due of olde by the Frenche kynge, as afftermeth Gagwyne, they remayned many yeres after. And that the Englysh men were thus departed, albeit that in the Englysshe cronycle and .viii. yere of the forenamed kynge Henry, of them is other report made/ the lordes of Fraunce retourned to theyr olde dyssencyon & contynued in longe stryfe/ wherof the circũstaunce were longe and tedyouse to tell, & to shewe the vnstablynesse of them how some whyle the duke of Orleaunce was fauoured of the kynge and the dolphyne, and there agayne the duke of Burgoyne cleyne out of concepte. The which cõtencyõ thus endurynge kyng Henry ỹ .viii. oped / and Henry his sonne ỹ .v. Henry, was admitted for kynge

kyng of Englande after hym / that shortly after sent his ambassadours vnto the Frenche kynge, atryage of him his doughter Kat̄eryne in ma-ryage as affirmeth the frenche boke. But dyuers other writers shewe, ꝑ he asked the hoole landes due to him within the realme of Fraūce, by rea-son of the composicion made in tyme passed, at wene his progenytour Ed-warde the thyrde, & Johñ than kyng of Fraunce. And for he was dyspey-riously answered / he therfore made vpō them sharpe warre, as in the.iii. yere of ꝑ sayd Hery after some deale dothe appere. By reason of whyche warre, the cyuyle batayle or stryfe ꝑ longe whyle had cōtynued amonge the frenche men, than dyd alwaye. For in the.iii.yere of this Henry, whi-che was the.xxxb.yere of this Char-les / the said Henry inuaded ꝑ realme of Fraunce, & had at Egyncourte a tryumphant victory / as in the sayde thyrde yere of Hery the.v. is more at lengthe declared. Than it folowe-th in the story, after many townes and stronge holdes by the engylsshe men in sondry places of Fraūce optey-ned / in ꝑ.xxx.& viii.yere of this Charles, a frenche man named ꝑ lorde of the Ile of Adam & Johñ Vyllers in pro-per name, gathering to hym a com-pany of tyrauntes to the nombre of. CCC. or mo / wherof many were old seruaūtes of the kynges housholde, & than put out by ꝑ Dolphyn & other that than had the rule of the kynge / by treason of a clerke opteyned the keyes of one of the Gates of Parys, and so entred the cytie by nyght / & by a watche wor̄de amonge them deuy-sed, allocyate to them many Burgo-nyons / and so beynge stronge, yode where the kyng was, and gate ꝑ rule of his plone. And that done, all suche as they myght fynde that than bare any rule, they slewe by one meane & other / so that vpon ꝑ day folowyng, was nombred of dede corses wythin the cytie vpon.iiii.M. Amonge the whiche, of noble men was Henry de Marle than Chauncellet of Fraūce, & Grauntpre with many other. And for to haue the more assystence of the cōmon people / the sayd Vyllers let ꝑ kyng vpon an horse, and ladde hym about the cytie, as he that had small reason to gyde hym selfe / & so ruled all thyng as he & his cōpany wolde. wherfore the Dolphyn fering to fall in the daunger of so wylde a cōpany, rode to Meldune or / and there called to hym suche as then were lefte on lyue to withstāde these tyrauntes, and ꝑ duke of Burgoyne than beynge within the cytie, & com-peller of all thys mychefe as some construed and demed. After whyche company to hym gathered he retur-ned to the cytie of Parys, and assay-led one of the gates. But whanne he sawe ꝑ cytezens toke partye agayne hym, he thoughte his trauayle loste. wherfore without great assaute ma-kyng, he called thence his knightes, and so departed agayne to the place whiche he came fro / and from thens vnto Thuron, in appeasynge the countreys & townes as he went, whi-che at those dayes were farre out of raine. And than in the xxxix.yere of the sayd Charles / king Henry the.v. landed with a stroge power at a pla-ce called Touke in Normandy / and after layde syege to manye stronge holdes and townes & them wanne, as Cane, Phaleys, Roan, and other / as in the.vi.yere of the sayd Henrye folowynge is more at lengthe decla-red. In tyme of whyche warre thus made by kynge Henry / the Dolphyn and the duke of Burgoyne, eyther of them prouyded to defende the ma lyce of the other / in so moche that as tellyfyeth the frenche cronycle,

the

the duke was aduysed to haue taken partie with the Englisshemen. This sayeng as wytnesseth an auctour named Floure of hystoryes, which toucheth in laten many gestes & dedes done by kynges of Englãde/ sayeth that the Frenche men bryng in that, for to excuse theyr infortune & cowerdyse/ by reason whereof they loste nat all onely theyr lande, but also the honoure & name of the same. Than lastely the duke beynge of mynde by exortacyon of Philyppe Iolsayne and Johñ de Tolongñ, with also a lady called the countesse of Grat/ the duke was reconsyled vnto the Dolphyne/ and a day of metynge apoynted at Monstruell, where eyther of them shulde be accõpanyed with .x. lordes onely without mo. At whyche day the sayd prynces with theyr assygned lordes beynge assembled/ many reasons and argumẽtes were layde and replyed vpon bothe sydes. By occasyon wherof one of the Dolphyns company sodainly drewe hys knyfe and strake the duke vnto the harte, so that he dyed soone after. whyche murder was supposed to be done by a knyght called Tanguyde de Chastell/ whyche oftyme passed had ben kamplyer seruaunt with the duke of Orleaũce before slayne, by meanes of the sayde duke of Burgoyne.

After whiche murder thus commytted/ the lande of Fraunce was brought in moche more strife & varyaunce/ in so moche that Philyppe the sonne of the sayde Johñ duke of Burgoyne beynge than in Parys, & haupnge the rule of ỳ kynge and the cytie, toke partie with the Englysshemen agayne ỳ Dolphyn. By reason wherof as sondry wryters agre, kyng Henrys ptie was greatly augmented & holpen/ so that fynally kynge Henry optayned moche of his wyll/ & shortly after maryed dame Katheryne doughter of Charles kynge in the .xli. yere of his reygne, with assurraunce & promyse of the inheritaũce of the realme of Fraunce to him and his heyres after the dethe of the said Charles/ as to you more plainly shal be shewed in the .viii. yere of the said Henry the fyfte. After whyche maryage concluded and fynyshed/ yet ỳ Dolphyn ceased nat to make newe mocyons & sterynges. Durynge the whiche, kynge Charles dyed in Octobre/ and was buryed at sayne Denys, whan he had reygned in greate trouble vpõ the poynt of .xlii. yeres/ leauyng after hym as is affirmed by the forenamed auctour Gaguyne, a sonne & Dolphyn of Vyenne called Charles, whiche after was kyng of Frenchemen, and was named Charlys the .vii. or the .viii. after some wryters.

Henry the .iiii.
Anglia.



Henry the .iiii. of that name, and sonne of Johñ of Gaunte late duke of Lãcaster/ toke possessyon of the dompnion of ỳ realme of Englande as before in the ende of the story of the seconde Rycharde is shewed, vpon the laste daye of September in the yere of our lorde a. M. CCC. lxxxix/ and in the .xix. yere of Charles ỳ .vii. than kyng of Fraũce. After whyche possessyon so by hym taken, anone he made newe officers. As the erle of Northumberlande he made Constable of Englande, the erle of westmerlãde was made Marshall, syr Johñ Scrie Chaunceller, Johñ Newberry esquyer tresorer, and syr Rycharde Clyfforde knyght

keper of ꝑ priuey signet. And ꝑ done, prouysyon was made for hys coronacyon agayne the day of translacyō of sayne Edwarde the confessour nexte than commyng. And the parlyament was prolonged tyll the tuysdaye folowynge the sayd daye of coronacyō. Than vpō the euyn of the sayd daye of coronacyon, the kynge wythin the towre of Londō made .xlii. knyghtes of the bate wherof .iii. were hys owne sonnes, .iii. erles, .v. lordes. And vpon mondaye beynge the sayd daye of sayne Edwarde & the .xiii. daye of October / he was crowned at westmynster of the archebysshop of Cāuterbury. After whych solempnyte fynysshed an honorable feest was holden wythin the greate halle of westmynster. where the kyng beyng set in the mydde see of the table / the archebisshop of Cāuterbury with .iii. other prelates were set at the same table vpon the ryght hāde of the kyng / & the archebysshoppe of yorke wyth other iiii. prelates was set vpō that other hāde of the kyng / & Henry the kynges eldest sonne stoode vppō the ryghte hande wyth a poyntlesse swerde holdyng vp ryght / & the erle of Northumberlāde newely made constable, stode vpō the left hāde wyth a sharpe swerd holdē vp ryght. And by eyther of those swerdes, stode .ii. other lordes holding .ii. scepters. And before ꝑ kyng stode all the dyner whyle the dukes of Amnarle of Surrey & of Exceter, wyth other .ii. lordes. And ꝑ erle of westmerlāde thā newly made Marshal, rode about the halle with many typped staues aboute hym, to se the roume of ꝑ halle kepte, that officers myghte wyth ease serue the tables.

Coronacio of Henry ꝑ fourth.

Of the whych tables the chyefe vpō the ryghte syde of the halle was begunne wyth the Barons of the fyue portes, & at the table nexte the cupborde vppō the lefte hande, sate the mayre and hys bretherne the aldermē of Londō. whych mayre than beynge Drewe Barentyne goldsmyth, for seruice there by hym that daye done, as other mayres at euery kynges & quenes coronacion vse for to do / had there a stādyng cuppe of golde. Thā after the seconde courte was serued / syr Thomas Dymmoke knyght beynge armed at all peaces, & syttynge vpō a good stede, rode to the hygher parte of the halle / & there before the kynge caused an herowde to make proclamacyon, that what mā wolde saye that kynge Henry was nat ryght full enherytoure of the crowne of England, & ryghtfully crowned / he was there redy to wage wyth hym batayl than, or suche tyme as it shuld please the kynge to assygne. whyche proclamacyon he caused to be made after in iii. sundry places of the halle in Englyshe & in Frenche, wyth many mo obseruaunces at hys solempnyte exercysed & done, whyche were longe to reherse.

Than thys feest wyth all honour ended / vpon the morne beyng tuysday, the parliamēt was agayne begunne. And vpon wednysdaye syr Johanne Cheyny that before that tyme had occupped as speker of that parlyamēt, by hys owne labour for cause of such infyrmytyes as he than hadde, was dyscharged / and a squyer named wyllyam Durwarde was electe to that roume for hym.

And thanne was the parlyament and the actes thereof laste called by kynge Rycharde adnulled, and sette at nought / and the parlyamente holden in the .xi. yere of hys reygne holden for ferme and stable. And the same daye Henry the kynges eldeste sonne was chosen & admytted prynce of walys, and duke of Cornewalle, and erle of Chester, and heyre apparaunte to the crowne. Vppon

the

the thurſdaye folowynge was putte into the comon houſe a bylle, deuyſed by ſyr Johñ Bagot than pryſonere in the Towre. whereof the effecte was, that the ſaid ſir Johñ confeſſed that he harde kynge Rycharde ſaye dyuers tymes and at ſondry parlyamentes in hys tyme holden, that he wolde haue hys entente and pleaſure concernynge hys owne maters, what ſo euer betyde of the reſydue. And yf any withſtode hys wylle or mynde / he wolde by one meane or other bryngе hym out of lyfe.

Alſo he ſhewed farther, that kyng Rycharde ſhulde ſhewe and ſaye to hym at Lycheſelde, in the .xii. yere of hys reygne, that he deſyred no lenger to lyue, than to ſee hys lordes & commons to haue hym in as great awe and dreede, as euer they had of any of hys progenytours / ſo that it myghte be cronycled of hym, ỹ none paſſed hym of honour and dygnite / with condycyon that he were depoſed and put from his ſayde dygnytie the morowe after. And yf euer it came ſo to, that he ſhulde reſygne hys kyngelye mageſtye / he ſayde his mynde was to reſygne to the duke of Herforde, as to hym that was moſte ableſte to occuppe that honoure. But one thynge he feared, leſte he wolde do tyrannye agayne the churche. More ouer he ſhewed by ỹ ſaid bylle, that as the ſayde ſyr Johñ Bagot rode behynde the duke of Norfolke towarde weſtmynſter / the ſayd duke layed to hys charge, that he with other of ỹ kynges counſeill had murdred ỹ duke of Glocetyr / ỹ which at ỹ tyme to the ſaid duke he denyed, & ſayd at ỹ day he was on lyue. But within .iii. wekes after, the ſayde ſyr Johñ by ỹ kynges cõmaundemente was ſent with other pſones vnto Calays / where for fere of his owne lyfe, he ſawe ỹ ſaid murdre put in execucion. And farthermore he ſhewed, ỹ there was no man of honour at that dayes more in fauour with kyng Rycharde, thã was ỹ duke of Aumarle / & that by his coũſeill he toke ỹ lordes, & wrought many other thinges after ỹ ſaid dukes aduyce. Alſo he ſhewed, ỹ he harde the kynge beynge than at Chyltrynlangley ſwere many great othes, ỹ the duke of Herforde nowe kyng, ſhulde neuer returne into Englande / and rather than he ſhulde agayne enheryte hys fathers landes, he wolde gyue them vnto the heyres of the duke of Glocetyr, and of the eries of Arundell, and of warwyke, at the laſte parliament adiuged. And farther he ſhewed, that of all theſe matters he ſent the ſaid duke knowlege into Fraunce, by one named Roger Mmerte / admonaſtynge hym to prouyde by his wyſedome to wythſtande the kynges malyce, whyche ſhewed hym to be hys mortall enemye. And laſtelye he ſhewed in the ſayde bylle, that he harde the duke of Aumarle ſay vnto ſir Johñ Buſſhey and to ſyr Henry Grene / I had leuer than xx. thouſande pound, that thys man were dede. And whan they had ared of him whyche man / he ſaid the duke of Herforde / nat for drede that I haue of hys perſone, but for ſorowe and rumours that he is lykely to make within this realme. whiche bylle was than borne vnto the kynges parlyamente chaumbre, & there radde. After redynge whereof / the ſayd duke of Aumarle ſtode vp, and ſayd as touchynge ſuche artycles as in that bylle were putte agaynſt hym, they were falſe and vntrewe, & that he wolde proue vpon hys body, or otherwyſe as the kynge wolde commaunde hym. Vpon frydaye the ſaid ſyr Johñ Bagot was brought into the ſayd parlyament Chambre, and examyned vpon euery artycle of his

byll all the whych he there affermed Than it was axed of hym what he coulde saye ꝑ duke of Exceter. where unto he answered and sayed, that he coulde saye nothyng to hys charge. But there is he sayd a yomā in Newgate called Halle, ꝑ can say somwhat of you. Than sayd the duke, what so euer he or ye can or lyste to say of me/ thys is trouthe that I shall here expresse. Trouth it is that the last tyme that the kyng was at woodstoke, the duke of Northfolke sye haue hadde me to you unto the chapel, and closed the doze vpon vs. And there ye made me to swere vpō the sacrament there present, to kepe suche counsayll as there ye shuld than shewe vnto me. where after ye shewed to me, that ye coulde neuer bryngе your purpose about, whyle syr Johñ of Gaunt late duke of Lācastre lyued. wherfoze ye were aduysed foz to haue shortely after a cousayll at Aychefelde / by the whyche ye cōdiscended ꝑ the sayd syr Johñ shuld be arested, in such maner that he shuld haue occasyō to disobey ꝑ areste/ by reason wherof by chaūce medley he shuld be there slayn. whereunto my cousayl thā was, ꝑ the kyng shuld calle hys secrete cousayll/ & yf they agreed thereunto, I foz my part wolde agree vnto ꝑ same. To which sayeng syr Johñ Bagot gaue none answere. And vpō saterday, the sayd Bagot & Halle were bothe brought into the parlyament chaubze, & there examined/ and after committmaunded to prysone. And as soone as they were departed / the lozde Fitz water stoode vp and sayde. Moste redoughted souerayne lozde, where as ꝑ duke of Amnarle hath befoze tymes and nowe lattely accused hym of the deth of the duke of Gloucester/ I saye and wyll iustifye it, that he was cause of hys deth and that I shall prone vpō hys body yf your grace be so contented. To the cōtrary whereof the duke wyth sharpe wozdes answered / so that gaugys of batayll were offered of bothe partyes, and sealed and deliuered vnto the lozde Marshall. Than partyes begamme to be taken amonge the lozdes / in so moche that the duke of Surrey toke partye with the duke of Amnarle/ and sayde that all that by hym was done, was done by constraynte of Kychарde thanne kynge / and he hym selfe and other consented parforze to the same. where agayne the sayde lozde Fytz water and other replyed. wherfoze syence was commaūded / and forthwyth the foze named Halle for that he hadde confessed befoze the lozdes, that he was one of theym that putte to deth the duke of Gloucetyr at Calays / he therefoze was iuged to be drawen frome the towze of London vnto tybourne / and there to be hanged and quartered.

The whyche execucion was done vppon the mondays folowynge. Thus wyth these causes and many other thys parlyamente continued, tyll a newe mayre named Thomas Knolles grocer was admytted and swozne, vppon the daye folowynge the feaste of Symonde and Jude.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xcix.

Grocer. wyllyam walderne.

Thomas Knolles. Anno. i.

wyllyam Hyde.

In this

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.

IN this fyrst yere of kyng Henry the.iiii. yet lastinge the forsayd parlyament/vpon the wednysday nexte folowyng the feest of Symonde and Jude, the lorde Morley appealed the erle of Salesburye of treason/& caste his hoode for a gage to trye with him by batayle. The whiche sayenge he replyed/and caste from him his gloues for a gauge, to proue his sayeng false and vntrewe/ whiche were there sealed and delyuered vnto ꝑ lorde Marshall. And vpon the monday passed an act, that no lorde nor other persone of no degre, shulde after that day laye for his excuse any constraynte or coartynge of hys prynce, in executynge of any wronge iugemente or other trympnous and vnlefull dedes, sayenge ꝑ for feare they durste none otherwyse do/ for suche excuse after that daye shall stande hym in none effecte. And also that all sherysses may yelde accompte in the eschekker vppon theyr othes/ and that they be chaunged in all shyres yerely. And also that no lorde nor other man of myght, gyue any gownes or lyuereys to any of theyr tenauntes or other persones, excepte onely theyr housholde & meyny all seruauntes. And also than was enacted, that all reppers and other fysshers from Rye and wynchylsee & other coostes of the sees syde, shulde sell it them selfe in Cornehyll & chepe and other stretes of London, to all men that wolde of theym bye it/ excepte fysshemongers and other that wolde bye the sayde fysshe, to make sale of it agayne.

And vpon the wednysday folowynge/ was enacted that Kycharde late kynge of Englande, shulde for hys myn gouernaunce of the realme be holdyn in suche prysone as the kynge wolde assygne, duryng hys naturall lyfe. And than the kynge graunted to all persones generall pardones/so that they were lette out of the Chauncerye by Alhalowne-tyde nexte folowynge/ excepte suche persones as were present at the murder of the duke of Glouceſter. And in thys whyle was the archebyshop of Caunterbury restored to his chyrche of Caunterburye/ and doctour Roger, whyche there was sette by kynge Kycharde, was remoued and sette in the see of London/ with the whyche he was tyghte well contented. And thanne was the erle of Arundelles sonne restored to all hys fathers landes, with dyuers other before by kynge Kycharde dyspeyred. And shortely after was the sayd parlyamente dyssolued/ and euerye man had leyence to departe to hys owne. And than was Kycharde late kynge hadde into the castell of Ledes in Kente, and there kepte. And prouysyon was made at wyndesore for the kynge to kepe there hys Chrystmas. In whiche passyme the dukes of Amnate, of Surrey, and of Exetyr, with the erles of Salesburye and of Glocester, with other of theyr assygnyr/made prouysyon for a dysguysynge or a mummynge to be shewed to the kyng vpon Twelf the nyght/ and the tyme was nere at hande and all thynge redy for the same. Vpon the sayde.xii. daye came secretelye vnto the kynge the duke of Amnarle/and shewed to hym that he with the other lordes afore named, were appoynted to slee hym in the tyme of the forsayd dysguysynge shewynge/wherfore he aduysed hym to prouyde for hys owne suretye. At whose warnynge the kynge secretelye departed fromne wyndesore/ and came the same tyghte to London. where the sayd lordes beynge ware, and that theyr counsell was bewrayed/ fledde in all haste west-

warde. But the kynge caused hastly pursute to be made after thē / so that shortely after the duke of Surrey & the erle of Salysbury were taken at Syrcetyr / where they were streyght behedyd, and theyr heddes sent at London and sette vpon the brydge. And at Oxenforde were taken syr Thomas Blont and sir Benet Selp knyghtes, and Thomas wyntercell esquyre/the whych were there hedyd and quarteryd, and theyr hedes sent to London brydge. And at Bytwell in Esser was taken syr Johñ Holland duke of Exetyr/& after brought to Plashy a place faste by, where he was behedyd / and after hys hedde was sent to London and sette there wyth the other vppon the brydge pyght vpon a stake. And here about the same tyme at Bristowe was taken the lorde Spencer than erle of Glouceter and there behedyd, and hys hede sent vnto London brydge. And in the same yere, sr Barnarde Brokeys, syr Johñ Selp, syr Johñ Maundeley, and syr Johñ Ferepy knyghtes and clerkes, were taken as prysoners in the towre of Londō/ and soone after forjudged, hanged and hedyd/and theyr heddes also set vppon London brydge. In whyche season, Rycharde late kyng was remoued frome the castell of Ledys in Kent, and sent vnto Pountfreyt castell.

In this yere also as before is towched in the .xix. yere of the .viii. Charles/ kynge Henry sent vnto Cassys Isabell late quene of England, and wyfe vnto Rycharde lately kynge/ and wyth hyr greate treasour and many ryche Jewellys, as testifyeth the Englysshe cronycle/and there receyued by the Frenchmen vnder safe conduyte passynge, and by them conueyed vnto hyr father into Fraūce/ and after maryed vnto Charlys sonne and heyre to the duke of Orleaunce, as before I haue shewed in the .xxii. yere of hyr sayde fathers reygne.

Than it followeth in the story of kynge Henry/whan he hadde fermely conspydered the greate conspyracy agayne hym by the forenamed lordes and other persons entendyd and imagyned to hys distruccyon / and releuynge of Rycharde late kynge he in auoydynge of lyke daunger, prouyded to put the sayde Rycharde out of thys present lyfe / and shortely after the opynyon of moste wyters he sente a knyghte named syr Pyers of Exton vnto Pountfreyte castell/where he wyth .viii. other in hys companye, fell vppon the sayde Rycharde late kynge, and hym myserably in hys chaumber slewe / but not wythout reuengemente of hys dethe. For or he were felled to the grounde/he slewe of the sayde .viii. foure men, with an axe of theyr own. But lastely he was wounded to deth by the hande of the sayde syr Pyers of Exton, and so dyed.

After execucyon of whyche dedely dede, the sayde syr Pyers toke great repentaunce, in so myche that lamentably he sayde, alas what haue we done/we haue now put to deth hym that hath ben our souerayne & drad lorde, by the space of .xxii. yeres / by reason wherof I shall be reproched of all honoure where so I after thys daye become / and all men shall redounde thys dede to myn dyshonour and shame. Other opynyons of the dethe of thys noble prynce are lefte by wyters, as by waye of sampyne and other. But thys of moste wyters is testifyed and alleged.

Whan the deth of this prynce was publyshed abrode / he was after opē bylaged layed in ꝑ mynster of Pōtfrayt, so ꝑ all men myght know and se that he was dede. And the .xxi. daye of March

of Watche folowynge/ he was wyth great solempnyte brought thorough the cyte of London to Paules/ and there layed open vysaged agayne, to the ende that hys deth myght be manyfestly knowen. whyche was doutfull to many one/ a specyally to suche as ought to hym fauoure. And than after a fewe days the sayd corps was caryed vnto the freers of Langley, & there entred. But after he was remoued by kynge Hery the. v. in the fyrst yere of hys reygne/ & wyth great honoure and solempnyte cõueyed vnto the monastery of westmynster / and there wythin the chapell of saynt Edwarde honourably buryed vppõ the south syde of sayne Edwardes Shryne, wyth hys epytaphy vppon hys toumbe as folowyth.

Prudens & mundus Richardus iure secundus,
Per fatum vitius, iacet hic sub marmore pitius.
Verax sermone fuit, & plenus ratione.
Corpore procerus, animo prudens vt omerus.
Ecclesiam fouit, elatos suspectit amit.
Quemuis prostrauit regalia qui violauit.

¶ whyche verses are thus to be vnderstande in our bulgare & Englysh tonge as folowyth.

Perfyght and prudent Richarde by ryghte the secunde,
Vnryghtfully by fortune lyeth here vnder graues in stone/
Trewe of hys worde, & therto well resonable/

whanne thys mortall prynce was thus dede & grauen/ kyng Hery was inquyet possessyon of the realme/ and fande great ryches þ̃ before tyme to kynge Richarde belonged. For as wytnesseth Polycronycon, he fande in kyng Richardes tresoury .iii. hundreth thousande li. of redy coyne/ besyde tewelles and other ryche vessels whyche were as moche in value or more. And ouer that he espyed in the keppyng of the tresoureys hãdes, an C. and. l. M. nobles / and iewels and other stuffe that cõteruayled the sayd value. And so it shulde seme þ̃ kynge Richarde was ryche, whan hys money & iewelles amũted to. vii. C. M. li. And in the moneth of October and ende of thys mayers yere/ was brent in smythfelde of Londõ a preest named syr wyllyam Sawtry, for certayne poynts of heresy.

Anno vñi. M. CCCC.

Goldsmyth.

Johñ Fraunces.

Anno vñi. M. CCCC. i.

Johñ wakele.

Anno. ii.

wyllyam Ebot.

IN thys seconde yere of kynge Henry and moneth of Frebruary/ were drawen and hanged for treason a knyghte named syr Roger Claryngeton at tybourne wyth two of hys seruauntes, the pryour of Lãde, and eyghte freres mynours of gray freres / of the whyche some were bacheliers of dyuynyte.

And in thys yere began a greate dyscrencion in walys, betwene þ̃ lorde Gray Ruthyn, & a welsheman named

Howen of Glendoze. whyche Howen gathered to hym greate ſtrenghte of welſhemen, and dyd moche harme to that coũtrey / nat ſparynge the kynges lozdſhyppes noz hys people/and laſtlye toke the ſayd lozde Gray pzyſoner, & helde hym pzyſoner, tyll contrarye hys wyll he hadde maryed the ſayde Howés doughter. After which matrymony fynyſhed, he helde the ſayde lozde ſtyl in walys tyll he died, to the kynges great dyſpleaſure.

wherfoze the kynge wyth a ſtrõge army ſpedde hym into walys, foz to ſubdue the ſayde Howell & hys adherentes. But whan the kyng wyth his power was entred ꝑ coũtre / he with hys fawtours fledde in to the mountaynes & helde hym there/ſo that the kyng nyght nat wynne to hym without dyſtruccion of hys hoſte. wherefoze fynally by the aduyce of hys lozdes, he retourned into Englande foz that ſeaſon.

In thys yere alſo whete & other graynes beganne to fayle / ſo that a quarter of whete was ſolde at London foz. xvi. s̄ / & derer ſhuld haue be, had nat ben the pzouyſion of marchaũtes that brought rye & rye floure out of Spruce, wherwyth thys lãde was greatly ſuſteyned and eaſed.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. i. Anno dñi. M. CCCC. ii.

wyllyam Venour.

Johñ Shadworth. Anno. iii.

Johñ Frempnghm.

IN thys yere / the cõdupte ſtandyng vpon cornhylle in London, was begon to be made. And in the ſomer folowynge / ſyr Thomas Percy erle of worceter, and ſyr Henry Percy ſonne & heyre vnto the erle of Northumberlande, gadered a greate power / and vppõ the daye of ſaynte Swarede the byſſhop of the. xvi. daye of July, mette wyth the kynge nere vnto Shrowſbury, and there gaue vnto hi a cruell batayll / but to theyr owne confuſion. Foz in that fyght ꝑ ſayd ſyr Thomas Percy was taken, and hys neuew the foreſayde ſyr Henry wyth many a ſtronge man vppon theyr partye was there ſlayne. And vpõ ꝑ kynges partie, the pzynce was woũded in the hed / & the erle of Staf foꝛde wyth many other ſlayne. And the. xxv. daye of July folowynge at Shrowſbury, the ſayd ſyr Thomas Percy was beheded / and after hys hed caried to London, & there ſet vpõ the bzydge.

The Batayle of Shrowſbury.

In thys batayl was many a noble man ſlayne vpõ eyther partye. And it was the moze to be noted dengtable/foz there the father was ſlayn of the ſonne, & the ſon of the father, and brother of brother, & neuewe of neuewe. And in the moneth of Auguſt folowynge, the ducheſſe of Bzytayne landed at Fulmouth in the pzouince of Cornwayll, & from thẽs was conueyed to wynchester. where in ſhorte tyme after, kyng Henry maryed her in the cathedzall churche of the ſayde cytye. And ſoone vpõ was the eldeſt doughter of kyng Henry named dame Blãche maryed at Colayn to the dukes ſonne of Bayer.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. iii. Anno dñi. M. CCCC. iiii.

Rycharde Merlewe.

Johñ walcot Draper. Anno. iiii.

Robert Chichele.

In this

In this yere the xiiij. day of the
monyth of September, was
forsayd duchesse of Bretayne and
wyfe of Kyng Rycharde receyued with great
honour into the cyte of London / and
so by the mayre and the cytezens con-
ueyed vnto westmynster. where vpon
the morowe folowyng she was crow-
ned quene of Englande, with greate
honoure and solempnite / the cyrcum-
staunce whereof I passe ouer.

In this yere also, Rupertus which
after the depesynge of wellensians,
was by the electours of the empyre,
and by auctoryte of Bonyface thanne
than pope, admytted for Emperoure
of Rome, and came into Englande
with a goodly companye, onely to se
the countre and commodytes of the
same. The whyche of the kynge
was honourably receyued and fes-
ted / and lastely conueyed by the
kynge towarde the see syde, where
eyther departed from other with ex-
chaunge of ryche and precious gyfte.
For this Rupertus was named of
wyttes a man of excellente bounte
and largesse. And he gaue more ly be-
rally / for so muche as all the cyte of
hys kynge in Englande, he laye here
at the kynges costes. And whyle he
was at London he was lodged at the
house of sayncte Johannis in smyth-
felde.

This yere also vpon sayncte Laurence
euyn of the x. day of August / a lorde
of Bretayne named the lorde of Ca-
stylon Frenche, laded within a myle
of Plymmouth with a great compayny
of Normans and Bretons / and came
vnto the sayd towne, and lodged there
all nyght and spoyled and robbed the
sayd towne. And vpon the day folow-
ynge whan they had done what they
wolde / they retourned agayne to
they shyppes, with plente of pyllage
and prysoners suche as they fande.

Anno domini M.CCCC.iii. Anno domini M.CCCC.iiij.

Thomas Fauconer.

Wyllyam Isham. Anno. v.

Thomas Ipoll.

In this yere soone after Candel
masse, the forsayd lorde of Ca-
stylon trustynge to wynne a lyke enter
pryse, as in the yere passed he hadde
done / he beynge accompanyed with
a stronge nauy of Frenche men & Bre-
tons, was retourned with the En-
glysshe fleet within .ii. myles of Dart
mouth at a place called Blake pooll.
where after longe and cruell fyghte the
sayd lorde was slayne, with the more
partye of the people, and dyuers of
hys shyppes take / as wytnesseth the
Englysshe cronycle with dyuers o-
ther Englysshe auctours. But the
Frenche boke reherseth thys scomfy-
ture of Frenchmen, and sayeth that by
treason of a Gascoyne named Perys
of Pecot de Languyle, whyche shew-
ed vnto the sayd lorde Castylon that
he had espyed certayne Englysshe
shyppes in a Creke lyghtly without
resystence to be take / caused the sayd
lorde to make sayle towarde the sayd
towne of Dartmouthe. where after
he had contynued a certayne tyme
hys course, he espyed the holdefore of
Englysshe men whyche made towarde
hym / and so at the sayde Blake pool
encountred and faught, and lykewy
escaped the daunger of hys enemyes
as testifyeth the sayde Frenche cro-
nycle, but sore wounded / for he was
so wounded in thys fyght that he dyed
shortly after.

And thenneth of Aprill folow-
ynge,

ynge, the duke of Clarence wyth the erle of Kēt & many other lo3des, toke shyppynge at Weregate, & so sayled vnto Scluce in Flaūders. And after the sayde duke had there refresshed hym & hys company, he toke shyppynge agayne / and holdynge hys course towarde Dwysse, he was encoūtred wyth .iiii. greate carykes of Jeane / the whyche he assayled, and after longe bekerynge them toke beynge laden wyth marchaūdyse / & so wyth that pray retourned to Cambze before wynchelsee / in the whyche hauen the sayd goodes were cāted and shared. But how it was, by varyaūce amonge them selfe o3 other wyse / one of the sayde carykes was sodeynly fyred & so cōsumed. For restytucyon of whyche goodes & shyppes, ꝑ marchaūtes Januēce made after great & longe sute to the kyng & his coūsayl / in whyche passetyme they bo3owed cloth, wolle & other marchaundyses, amountyng vnto great and notable sommes of dyuers marchauntes of Englande. And whanne they sawe that they myghte haue none hope of recouery of they3 losse / they sodeynly auoyded the lāde, and lafte ꝑ fo3esayde notable summes vnpayde, to the great hynderaunce and vtter vndoynge of many Englysshe marchauntes.

In thys yere a yoman named wyllyam Serle, sometyme yomā of kyng Rychardes Kobys, was take in the marches of Scotlāde and b3ought vnto Londō / & there in the guildhall araygned fo3 the murder of the duke of Gloucester at Calays. Upō which murder he was attaynt & conuycte / & vppō the .xx. daye of Octob3e he was d3awē from the to3re vnto tybo3ne, and there hāged and quartred / & hys hed was after set vpō Londō b3ydge, & hys .iiii. quarters were sent to .iiii. sondry good townes.

Anno domini .M.CCCC.iiii. Anno domini .M.CCCC.v.

wyllyam Lowfe.

Johñ Hyende Draper. Anno .vi.

Stephen Spylman.

¶ A Bysshop beheded.

In thys yere and moneth of January, were certayne courses of warre ron in smythfelde, betwene sy3 Edmūde erle of Kent, & the lo3de Mo3ys a Barō of Scotlāde, vppō ꝑ chalēge of the sayd scottysshe lo3de. But the erle of Kēt bare hym so valyauntly, that to hym was gyuē ꝑ price of that tourney to hys great honour. And in the same yere, sy3 Rychard Scrope than archebysshop of yo3ke, and ꝑ lo3de Mowbray thā marshal of Englād, with other to them allied / fo3 grudge that they bare agayn the kynge, gadered vnto theym greate strēgth, entendyng to haue put downe the kynge as the same than wente. wherof the kyng beyng enfourmed / in all haste sped to warde theym, and met wyth them on thys syde yo3ke. where after a skyrmysshe by the sayd lo3des made / they were thā take and after presented vnto ꝑ king at yo3ke / where they were bothe demed to suffre deth fo3 they3 rebellyō. ¶ Than whan the bysshoppe came vnto the place of execution / he prayed ꝑ bowcher to gyue to hym .v. strokes in the wo3shyp of cristes fyue woundes, & fo3 hys more penaūce. At euerpche of whyche .v. strokes / kynge Henry beynge in hys lodgyng, had a stroke in hys necke / in so moch that he demed that some persone there beynge with hym present hadde stryken him. And forthwyth he was stryken wyth the plage

plage of leppr/so that than he knewe it was the hande of god, and repented hym of that hasty iugement without auctorpte of the churche. And soone after god shewed many myracles for the sayde bysshop / whyche called the kynge vnto the more repentaunce.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.b. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.bi.

Henry Barton.
Johñ woodcok Mercer. Anno.bii.
wyllyam Crowner.

IN thys yere, dame Lucye the duke of Mylanys syster came into Englande / and was maryed vnto syr Edmunde Holande erle of Kent, in the churche of sayncte Mary ouerey in Southwarke vppon the xriiii. daye of January / where the kyng was present and gaue her that daye vnto the preest. And after the solempnyzacion of the maryage was fynysshed / she was wyth greate honour conueyed vnto the bysshoppe of wynchesters palays there fast by / where that daye for her was holden a sumptuous and pumpous feaste. And in the same yere and moneth of May, dame Dhylyppe the yongeste doughter of kynge Henry, accompanyed wyth dyuers lozdes spyrytuall and tempozall, was shypped in the Nozthe, and so conueyed into Denmarke / where in a towne oz cytye called London she was maryed vnto ꝑ kynge of the sayde countre.

In thys yere also syr Thomas Ramston than constable of ꝑ towze, by ouersyghte of hys botemen as he wold haue passed the bzydge toward the sayde towze, was dzowned. And in the same yere, for the greuous cõplayntes that before tyme hadde ben shewed and euydently prooued before the kynges counsayl, and also before the mayze and hys bzetherne, of the great dystruccion of frye and ponge fysshe by reason of werys standynge in dyuers places of the ryuer of Thames, wherby the fysshe of the sayde ryuer was greately mynysshed and wasted / and that also yf the sayd werys so contynued, the sayde ryuer shuld in shozte proceste be dystroyed: wherfoze the mayze & hys bzetherne the aldermen as conseruatours of ꝑ ryuer, made suche laboure vnto the kynge and hys counsayll, that they optayned commyssyon to pull vp all the werys that stode betwene Londõ and .bii. myles beyõde Kynston / and in lyke wyse for suche other as stode betwene London and Gzauysende, aswell creekes oz seuerall groundes and other / the whyche commyssyon by the sayde mayze and hys officers was thys yere putte in execucyon. And in thys yere syr Robert Knolles knyght, the whyche in Fraunce and Bzytayne hadde before tyme done so many victozious actes, as in ꝑ .xriii. yere of Edward the thyzde and other yeres of hys regne is somdele towched / made an ende of hys werke at Rochester bzydge and chapell at the sayde bzydge fote / and dyed shozte ly after, whanne he hadde newe reedyfyed the body of the whyte fryers churche standynge in Fletestrete, & done to that house many notable benefytes / where after he was buryed in the body of the sayde churche. whyche churche and place was fyrste founded, by the auncetoures of the lozde Gzay Cotnozе.

Anno

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.vi. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.vii.

Nycholas wotton.

Rycharde whytyngtō Mercer. Anno.viii.

Godfrey Brook.

IN thys yere & moneth of Nouembre, one named the walche clerke, apeched a knyghte called syr Percyuall Sowdan of treason / for tryall wherof daye was gyuen to thē to fyght in smythfylde the day aboue sayde. At whych daye eyther apered, and there faught a season. But in the ende the clerke was recreaūt. wherefore immedyately he was spoyled of hys armour, & layde vpō an hardyl, and so drawen to tyborne, and there hanged.

And in thys yere also, syr Henry erle of Northumberlande & the lorde Bardolf, commyng out of Scotlāde wyth a stronge company, to the dyspleasure & hurt of the kynge as they entended / were met and encountred wyth the gentylmen and comons of the northe, and foughten wyth and dystressed / and after strake of theyr heddes, and sente theym to London / whyche thanne were pyghte vppon the brydge amonge many other.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.vii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.viii.

Henry Ponfreyt.

wyllyam Stondon Grocer. Anno.ix.

Henry Halton.

IN thys yere and moneth of Decembre, begā a frost / the which contynued by the space of.xv. wekes after or therupō / so that byrdes were wōderly kampshed and dystressed by violence of the same.

And in the same yere / syr Edmōde of Holande erle of Kente, was by the kynge made admyrall of the see. The which scowred & skymmed ꝑ see tyght well and manfully / & lastly landed in the coost of Bretayne, & besieged there a castell named Bretah, and wan it by strength. But in the wynnyng therof he was so dedely wounded wyth an arowe in the hede, that he dyed shortly after. And than hys corps was brought agayn into Englāde / & buryed amōge his aūcetours. And in the begynnyng of thys yere, was slayne & murdered the duke of Orleaūce in Parys / lyke as before it is more at lēgthe shewed in ꝑ .xxviii. yere of Charles ꝑ.vii.kyng of fraūce.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.viii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.ix.

Thomas Duke.

Drewe Barentyne Goldsmyth. Anno.x.

wyllyam Norton.

IN thys yere the seneschal of Henaude came into thys lande wyth a goodly companye of Henauders & other straungers / for to do & parfourme certayne laytes of armes agayne dyuers nobles & gentylmen of thys lāde. And fyrste the sayd Seneschall chalenged the erle of Somerset / and other of hys company other gētylmen of thys lāde, as after shall apere. For executyng of whyche dyspoyte / the place of smythfelde by the

kynge

kynge was appoynted, and barred & fenſed for the ſame entent / and daye ſet for euery mã to be redy by the .xi. daye of .At whych daye the ſeneſhall as chalenger entred ỹ felde pompouſly. And after with a goodly company of men of honour, was the erle of Somerſet brought into the ſame/where they ranne togyder certayne courſes and executed other fayres of armys/ wherof the pryſe & honour was gyuen by the herawdes vnto the erle, ſo that he wanne that day great honour.

Than the ſeconde daye came in a knyght Henauder as Chalengeroure. To whome as defendaunt came ſyr Rychard de of Arundell knyghte / the whyche ranne certayne courſes on horſebak, & after went togyder with axes on fote where ſyr Rychard was putte to the worſe, for the Henauder brought hym vpõ hys kne.

Than the thyrde daye came in an other knyght of Henaude Chaleger. To whome as defendaunte came in ſyr Johñ Cornewayl knyght/and ſo well bare hym, that he put the ſtraunger to the worſe. Upon the .iiii. daye came into the felde an eſquyre Henauder. Agayne whome ranne the ſonne of ſyr Johan Cheyny. The whych at the ſeconde courſe ſette hys ſtroke ſo egerly, that he ouer threw the Henauder horſe and mã / for whyche dede ỹ kyng dubbed hym forthwith knight. Upon the .v. day. played togyder an Henauder and a ſquyre called Johñ Stewarde/whyche daye alſo the Engliſhman wan the worſhyp. Upon the .vi. daye ſkyrmyſhed there togyder an Henauder and an Engliſhe eſquyer named wyllm Porter / the whyche gatte ſuche worſhype of the ſame Henauder, that the kynge for hys guerdon made hym ſtreyghte knyght. Upon the .vii. daye in lykewyſe played inſemble an Henauder and one Johñ Stãdyſhe eſquyer/ỹ whyche ſemblably for hys proweſſe & manly dealyng, was alſo of ỹ kyng dubbed knyght. And a Gaſcoyñ that the ſame day wan ỹ pryce of an other ſtraunger, was immedyatly made knyghte of ỹ kyng. And vpõ the .viii. daye or laſte day of thys chalenger, came into the felde .ii. Henauders. Unto whome came .ii. bretherne beyng ſowdiours of Calays/ỹ whyche bekered togyder a lõge ſeaſõ, ſo ỹ eyther ptye receyued plenty of good ſtrokes, tyll peas by ỹ kyng was cõmaũded. And ſo thys chalẽge was fynyſhed, to ỹ great honour of ỹ kyng the whych after feaſted theſe ſtraungers, & wyth ryche gyftes ſente and retourned theym agayne to theyr countrees.

Anno dñi .M.CCCC.ix. Anno dñi .M.iiii.C.x.

Johñ Lawe.

Rychard Warlowe Irenmonger. Anno.xi.

wyllyam Chycheley.

IN thys yere & moneth of Marche/ a taylour of London named Johan Badby, was brente in Smythfelde for hereſy: all be it that by meanes of the prynce & one mayſter Courtnay thanne Chaunceller of Oxenforde, he was for a whyle reconcyled, and promyſed to leue that erroure. But whan the ſacramente of ỹ aulter was brought tofore hym/ he dyſpyſed it, and wolde in no wyſe therein byleue / wherefore he hadde as he deſerued. Of whom a verſifier in reproche of hys errour, made theſe .ii. verſes folowynge.

Hereticus credat, vt perfidus ab orbe recedat,
Ne fidē ledat, sathan huic baratro sibi predat.

The whych verses are thus moch to meane in englysshe.

The perverse heretyke, though that he do brenne,
And from this worlde be rased vtterly/
No force, syn that he syth nat kenne
Our sacred sayth/but it right perverse.y
Lyst of his wyll erronously to reply,
What force thought satā with his eternall payne
Do hym rewarde, syn he wyll nat refrayne.

IN thys yere also a moneth of Apryll, wythin the lystes of Smythfeld was foughte a sore fight betwene an esquyre named Gloucester Appellaūt, & an other esquyre called Arthur Defendaūt. The whyche acquyted them eyther partye so mānfully, that the kynge of hys especyall grace seyng they were bothe so well fyghtyng men, toke the quarell into hys handes, & pardoned the offece to eyther partye.

And thys yere the market howse called the Stokes, stādynge by the churche of sayne Mary wolchurch of London, was begō to be edyfyed. In thys yere also the kyng helde his parlyamēt at westmynster. Durynge the whych the cōmons of thys lāde put vp a byll to the kynge, to take the temporall landes out frō spyrytuall mēnes handes or possessiō. The effect of whych byll was, that the temporalites dysordinatly wasted by mē of the church, myght suffyce to fynde to the kynge .xv. erles, xv.C. knyghtes, vi.M. & ii.C. esquiers & an.C. houses of almes to the relefe of poore people mo thā at that dayes were wythin Englād. And ouer all these forsayd charges, the kyng myght put yerely in hys cofers .xx. M.li. Prouyded that euery erle shuld haue of yerely rēt .iii.M. marke/euery knight an.C marke & .iiii. plough lande/ euery esquyre .xl. marke by yere & .ii. plough lāde/ & euery house of almesse an.C. marke, with ouersyght of .ii. trew seculers vnto euery house. And also wyth prouisiō that euery townesshyppe shuld kepe all poore people of theyr owne dwellers whych myght nat labour for theyr lyuyng. with cōdicion that if mo fell in a towne thā the towne might mayntayn, thā the sayd almes houses to releue such townesshyppes. And for to beare these charges they alledged by theyr sayd byll, that the temporalties beyng in the possessiō of spyrytuall mē, amounted to .iii.C. & .xxii. M. marke by yere. wherof they affermed to be i the see of Cāūterbury, with the abbays of cristes church, of sayne Augustyns, Shrowsbury, Coggeshale, & sayne Osyps/xx.M. marke by yere. In the see of Durhm & other abbeys there, xx.M. marke. In the see of yorke & abbays there, xx M. marke. In the see of wynchester and abbays there, xx.M. marke. In the see of Lōdon wyth abbays and other houses there, xx.M. marke. In the see of Lyncolne, wyth the abbays of Peterbourth, Ramsay, and other, xx.M. mark. In the see of Norwych, wyth the abbeys of Bury and other, xx.M. marke. In the see of Hely, wyth the abbays of Hely, Spaldig & other, xx.M. mark. In the see of Bathe, wyth the abbay of Okynborne & other. xx.M. marke. In the see of worceter, with the abbays of Euesham, Abyngdon & other, xx.M marke. In the see of Chester with the cinct of the same, with the sees of sait Dauid of Salysbury, and Exceter wyth theyr precinctes, xx.M. marke. The abbays of Rauens or Reuans, of fountaynes, of Geruons, and dyuers other to the nombre .v. mo. xx. thousand marke. The abbays of Lyceter, waltham, Gysbourne, Bertō Circestre, Osney and other, to the nombre of .vi.mo, twenty thousande marke. The abbays of Douers,

Batell,

A byll put vppe in the parlyamēt

Batell, Lewis, Cowentre, Dauētre, and Tourney, rr. M. marke. The abbays of Northamptoñ, Thorntone, Bystow, Keipngworth, wynchecōb, Hayles, Parchyllor, Fredyslwyde, Notley, and Grymmysby, rr. M. marke.

The whych forsayd sūmes amoūt to the full of.iii.C.M. marke. And for the odde.xxii.M. marke/ they appoynted Herdforde, Rochester, Huntyngdoñ, Swynelhede, Crowlande, Walmelbury, Burtoñ, Tewkisbury Dūstable, Shirborñ, Tauntoñ, and Bylande.

And ouer thys they alledged by the sayde bill, that ouer and aboue ꝑ sayd sūme of.iii.C.ꝛ.xxii.M. marke/ dyuers houses of relygion in Englande, possessed as many temporalties as myght suffice to fynde yerely xb.M. prestes and clerkes / euery prest to be allowed for hys stypende bii. marke by yere.

To ꝑ which bylnone answere was made, but that the kyng of thys mater wolde take deliberacīō ꝛ aduysemente / and wyth that answere ended, so that no ferther labour was made.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.rr. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.ꝛ.

Johñ Penne.

Thomas Knolles Grocer. Anno.xii.

Thomas Pyke.

IN thys yere, a squyer of walys named Ryse ap dee, the whych hadi ōg tyme rebelled agayn ꝑ kyng and trotyslyed the partye of Howan of Glendore/ was take and brought to London / and there vppon the.rr. daye of Decembre, drawen, hanged, and quartered/ and hys hed set vpon the bydge amōge the other. In this yere also was the guylde halle of Lō don begonne to be newe edyfyed and of an olde ꝛ lytell cotage, made into a fayre and goodly house as it nowe appereth.

Anno domini.M.CCCC.ꝛ. Anno domini.M.CCCC.xi.

Johñ Raynewell.

Robert Chychely Grocer. Anno.xiii.

wyllyam Cottoñ.

IN thys yere and vpon the.xii. day of Octobre, were thre flodes in thamys / whyche thynge no man than lyuynge cowde remembre that lyke to be sene.

And in thys yere was the lorde Thomas sonne to the kynge, created duke of Clarence. And in thys yere, the kynge at the requeste of the duke of Orleaunce, sente ouer the forsayd duke his sonne to ayde the sayd duke of Orleaūce agayn the duke of Burgoyne. Of whose actes and hys company / I haue before made report in the story of Charles the.vii. kynge of Fraunce.

And in thys yere, the kyng caused a newe coyne of nobles to be made, whyche were of lesse value than the olde noble by.iiii.ō. in a noble.

In thys yere also the kynge created Johñ hys son duke of Bedforde. And hys other sonne Humfrey duke of Glouncester. He made also syr Thomas Beaufort erle of Dorset/ and the duke of Anmarle he created duke of yorke.

Anno domini M.CCCC.xi. Anno domini M.CCCC.xii.

Rauffe Leuenhin.

wyllyam waldzeſi Mercer. Anno.xiiii.

wyllyam Deuenok.

IN thys yere and xx. daye of the moneth of Nouembze, was a great counſayll holden at the whyte freers of London. By the whyche it was amonge other thynges concluded, that foz the kynges greate tournay that he entended to take in vyſytyng of the holy ſepulcre of our lozd/ certayne Galeys of warre ſhulde be made, and other purueaunce concernynge the ſame tournay. whereupon all haſty & poſſyble ſpede was made. But after the feaſte of Cryſtemaſſe, whyle he was makynge hys p̄payers at ſaynte Edwardes ſhzyne to take there hys leue, and ſo to ſpede hym vpō hys tournay/he became ſo ſyke, that ſuche as were aboute hym fered that he wolde haue dyed ryght there. wherfoze they foz hys comfoz te bare hym into the abbottes place, and lod ged hym in a chambze/and there vpō a payiet layde hym befoze the fyze, where he laye in greate agony a certayne of tyme. At length whā he was commyn to hym ſelfe nat knowynge where he was/he freyned of ſuche as than were aboute hym what place ꝑ was. The whych ſhewed to hym that it belonged vnto the abbot of weſtmynſter, and foz he ſeite hym ſelfe ſo ſyke/he commaunded to aſke yꝑ that chābze had any ſpeciall name. where vnto it was anſwered, that it was named Hieruſalem. Than ſayd ꝑ kyng, Louyng be to the father of heuē. Foz nowe I knowe I ſhall dye in thys chambze, accozdynge to ꝑ pzophecye of me befozeſayd, that I ſhuld dye in Hieruſalē. And ſo after he made hym ſelfe redy/& dyed ſhozdy after vppō ꝑ daye of ſaynt Cuthbert oz the.xx. day of Marche/whā he had reygned.xiii. yeres, v. monethes, & xxi. dayes / leapynge after hym.iiii. ſonnes/ that is to meane Hēry that was kyng, Thomas ꝑ was duke of Clarence, Johñ duke of Bedfozde, and Hūfrey duke of Glouceter/and ii. doughters, that one beyng quene of Denmarke, and that other ducheſſe of Barre, as befoze is ſhewed.

Dethe of kyng Henry the.iiii.

whan kynge Henry was deed/ he was conueyed by water vnto Feuerſham, and from thens by lande vnto Caunterbury/and there entered by ꝑ ſhzyne of ſaynt Thomas.

Anglia.

Henrici quinti.

HEnry the.v. of ꝑ name, and ſonn of Henry the.iiii begā his rzygne ouer this realm of England, the xxi. day of ꝑ moneth of Marche In the yere of our lozde & ende of the ſame.xiiii.C.& xii. And in the.xxxii. yere of Charles the.vii. pet kynge of Fraūce. And the.ix. daye of Apzyll folowynge, whych was that yere palſiō ſondaye, beyng a day of exceedyng rayne, he was crowned at weſtmynſter. Thys man befoze the deth of hys father, applyed hym vnto all vyce & inſolency / & dzewe vnto hym all riottours & wyldly diſpoſed ploones. But after he was admytted to ꝑ rule of the lande/anon & ſodaynly he became a new mā, & tourned all that rage & wyldnes into ſobernes & wyſe ſadnes, & the vyce into cōſtāt vertue. And foz he wolde cōtinewe ꝑ vertue,

and nat

and nat to be reduced thereunto by the kamylyarytye of hys olde nyse company/he therfore after rewardes to them gyuen, charged them vpon payne of theyr lyues, that none of thé were so hardy to come wythin.x. myle of such place as he were lodged, after a daye by hym assygned.

In thys begynnyng of thys kyng Henry / the olde mayre and shyrues continued theyr offices to the termes accustomed.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xi. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xii.

Rauffe Leuyngham.

wyllyam waldern Mercer. Anno.i.

wyllyam Seuenok.

A None as kynge Henry was crowned, and the solempnyte of the feest of Sester was passed / he sent vnto the fryers of Lãgley where the corps of kynge Rycharde was buryed/and caused it to be take oute of the erth, & so wyth reuerence and solempnyte to be cõueyed vn to westmynster/ & vppon the southe syde of saynt Edwardes shryne there honourably to be buryed by quene Anne his wyfe, whyche there before tyme was enterred. And after a solempne interment there holden / he prouyded that.viii.tapers shulde brene day and nyght about hys graue, whyle the world endureth/ and one daye in the weke a solempne Dirige, and vpon the morowe a masse of Requiem by note / after whyche masse ended, to be gyuen weekely vnto poore people.xx.s.viii.d.in pens. And vpon the daye of hys annyuersary after ỹ sayd masse of Requiem is songe, to be perely destrybuted for his soule.xx.li.in ñ. And about Hereest tyme, was syr Johñ Oldcastell knyghte appeched for an heretyke & cõmitted to prysone. But howe it was he escaped for that tyme out of the towre of Londõ/ and so yode into walys, where he lyued ouer.iiii.peres after.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xiii. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xiiii.

Johñ Suttoñ.

wyllm Crowmer Draper. Anno.ii.

Johñ Mycoll.

IN thys yere and moneth of January/ certayne adherentes of the forenamed syr Johñ Oldcastell, entendynge the dystruccion of thys lande & subuersiõ of the same/assembled them in a felde nere vnto saynte Gyles in great nombre. wherof the kynge beyng enformed toke ỹ felde before theym, & so toke a certayne of them. Amonge the whyche was syr Roger Actoñ knyghte, syr Johñ Beuerley preest, and a squyer called syr Johñ Browne. The whyche wyth xxvi.mo in nombre were after conuycte of hereesy and treason / and for the same hanged and brent wythin ỹ sayd felde of saynt Gyles.

And in the same yere, Johñ Claydon skynner & Rycharde Turmyne baker, were for heresy brente in Smythfelde.

And thys yere the kyng helde his parlyamente at Leyceter. where amonge other thynges, the forsayd bylle putte vp by the commons of the lande, for the temporalityes bynge in ỹ churche, as it is before touched i the.xi.yere of ỹ. iiii. Hery, was

Ee, iii, agayne

agayne mynded. In fere wherof, lest the kyng wolde thereunto gyue any cõfortable audyence as testifye some wrytters, certayne bysshoppes and other hede men of the churche, putte ꝑ kyng in mynde to clayme his right in Fraunce. And for the exployte thereof, they offrede vnto hym great and notable summes. By reason whereof the sayde byll was agayne put by, and the kynge set hys mynde for the recouery of the same / so that soone after he sente hys letters vnto the Frenche kynge, concernyng that mater/and receyued frome hym answere of diuision as affermeth the Englysshe boke.

And Gagaynus sayeth in hys Frenche cronycle, that kynge Henry sente hys oratours vnto Charles the vii. thanne kynge of Fraunce, for to haue dame Katheryne hys doughter in mariage/with other requestes touchynge hys ryght and enheryptaunce. whereunto it was answered by the counsayll of Fraunce, that the kyng hadde no leyser to entende suche idelnesse. wherupon kynge Henry made quycke prouision for to warre vpon the Frenche kynge, as after appereth.

In thys yere also, by procurement of Sigismunde thanne Emperour/ a greate counsayll or synod of bysshoppes were assembled at a cytye in hygh Almayne called constaunce, for the vnion of the churche. And for to auoyde the Scisme, whyche began in the.xiiii. yere of Charles the.vi, as before in the sayde .xiiii. yere is touched. In the sayd synode or generall counsayll, was the.xviii. Johñ than pope put downe or resygned by hys volunte. And by auctorite of ꝑ same cõsayll/the oppynyons and heresy of wyklyf were vtterly anulled & dampned / and two of hys disciples there presente named Johñ Hus or Husse and Jerom the heryke, were there brente

And many notable actes for the wele of ꝑ church there were enacted. And fynally whan the sayde cõsayl had endured nere vpon the terme of iiii. yeres / they there by an hole assent chase a newe pope, and named hym the.v. Martyne. whyche occupyed Peters chayre.xiiii. yeres and odde monethes, as mdubitat pope, and so other after hym.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xiiii.

Johñ Mychell.

Thomas Fawcomer Mercer.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xv.

Anno.iii.

Thomas Aleyn.

IN thys yere after the kynge had made sufficient prouision for all thynges cõcernyng his warre to be made vpon the Frenche kyng/ he wyth hys lordes honourably accõpanyed, rode thorugh London vpon the.xviii. daye of Juny, towarde the porte of Southamton/where he had appoynted hys hoste to mete wyth hym. And whyle the kyng there was shyppynge of hys people / dyuers of hys lordes, that is to say syr Richard erle of Cambrydge and brother vnto ꝑ duke of yorke/whyche syr Richard beryng the name of Langley, hadde wedded dame Anne the doughter of syr Roger Mortymer erle of March and wolster/ by whome he had yssue Isabell, whyche after was maryed vnto the lorde Boucher erle of Esser, & Richarde whyche after was duke of yorke & father to kynge Edward ꝑ iiii. To whome also was assistyng syr Richarde Scrop than treasourer of

Englande,

Englande, and syr Thomas Graye knyght, were there arrestyd for treason, and arreygned, and so crampned vppon the same, that the .xxix. day of July folowynge they were all thre behedyd. After whyche execucyon so done/the kynge vpon the morowe or shortely after, wyth hys lordes toke shyppynge there, & landed at a place called Rydcaus in Normandy. And the .xvi. daye of Auguste / he layde syege vnto the towne of Harflew, & assayled them by land and by water/ and contynued so hys syege vnto the xxii. daye of September. At whyche daye as sayth the French Gaguin⁹, it was delyuered by Albert thã there capytayne / vppon condycyon that kynge Henry myghte sauely wynne or passe to Calayes, and so he beyng there, the towne to be yolden vnto hym. But the Frenche wryter Gaguinus vpholdeth the honour of the Frenchemen in all that he maye/and borowyth of hys conscyence for sparynge the trouth in reporte of many thynges. For after moste wryters, ỹ sayde towne after sondry appoyntementes of rescouse / was delyuered vnto the kynge wythout any condycyon the daye aboue sayde. where after the kynge had ordeyned syr Thomas Beaufort hys vncle and erle of Dorset capytayne of that towne/ he spedde hym towarde Calays.

Than the dolphyn with other lordes of Fraunce, whyche at that tyme hadde the realme of Fraunce in gouernaunce, for so moche as the Frenche kynge was vysyted wyth suche malady as before I haue shewed/brake the brydge to let ỹ kynge of his passage ouer ỹ water of Sum. wherfore he was cõstrayned to drawe towarde Pycardy/& so passe by ỹ cyuer of Peron. wherfore the Frẽchmẽ beynge ware/assembled and lodged thẽ at certayne townes named Agincourt, Rolandcourt, and Blangy, wyth all the power of Fraunce.

And whan kyng Henry sawe that he was so besette wyth hys enemies/ he in the name of god & sayntGeorge pyght hys felde in a playne betwene the sayd townes of Agyncourte and Blãgy/hauyng in hys companye of hoole men that myght fyght, nat passyng the nombre of .vii.M. But at those dayes the yomen hadde theyr Lymmes at lybertye/for theyr horsyn were than fastened wyth one poynt/ and theyr tackes were lõge & easy to shote in, so that they myghte drawe bowes of great strength, & shote arowes of a yerde longe, besyde the heedde.

Than the kyng consyderynge the great nombre of hys enemyes, & that the acte of Frenchmẽ standeth moch in ouer rydyng of theyr aduersaryes by force of speremẽ / he therfore charged euery bowman to ordeyne hym a sharpe stake, & to pytche it a slope before hym/and whã ỹ sperys came, sombeale to drawe bak, & so to shote at the horsemen. And at the proper requeste of the duke of yorke, he ordeyned hym to haue ỹ vawewarde of ỹ felde. And whã kyng Hery had thus prouydently ordered for hys batayll ouer night/ vpon the morowe beyng the .xv. daye of October, and ỹ daye of the holy martyrs Crysyne & Crysptinian/the kyng caused dyuers masses to be songen. And where that myghte before, the Englysshe hoste was occupyed in prayer and confessyon / he thanne caused the bysshoppes and other spyrytuall men, to gyue vnto theym generall absolucyon.

And that done/wyth a comfortable chere ordered hys people as they shuld fyght, hauyng vnto thẽ good & comfortable wordes / & so abode ỹ commynge of theyr enemyes, whych

of dyuers wryters were and are remembred to be about .xl. thousande fyghtynge men.

The whyche aboute .ix. of ỹ clokein the mornynge, wyth greate pryde set vppon the Englysshe hoste/thynkynge to haue ouer ryden them shortly. But the archers, lyke as before they were taught pyght theyr sharpe stakes before them. And whan they sawe the French galantes approche, they a lytell yode backe & receyued them as here after ensueth.

The batayll of Agyncourt.

That is to meane, they shotte at theym so feruently, ỹ what wyth the shotte, and goryng of theyr horses wyth the sharpe stakes, they tumbeled one vpon an other/so that he or they which ranne formest, were the confusyon of hym or them that followed/so ỹ in a shorte whyle a great multytude of horse & men were layd vpon the grounde. And after theyr shotte spent/they layde aboute them with theyr glayues and axes, that by the greate grace of god and comfortable ayde of the kynge, the victory fell that daye to the Englysshemen/and with lytell losse of theyr cõpany. For after the oppynyon of sondry wryters/were slayne ỹ daye of Englisshe men, the dukes of yorke and of Suffolke/& not ouer .xxvi. parsons moo. But of Frenchmen were slayne that daye after Englysshe wryters, ouer the nombre of .x. thousande. Albeit ỹ French Gaguinus sayth, that of the Englysshe hoste were slayne the duke of yorke, and with hym .iiii. hundreth men/and of the French hoste .iiii. M. men of name besyde other/whiche he numbreth not.

Also he affirmeth to be horsmen at that felde vppon the Frenche partye .v. thousande ouer and besyde the fotemen/and that the Englysshemen were nombred at .xv. C. spere men, & xviii. M. of yomen and archers.

It thys sayde batayle was taken prysoners, the duke of Orleaũce, the duke of Burboñ, ỹ erle of Vẽdosme, of Ewe, of Rychemount, and Bursigaunt thanne marshall of Fraunce/wyth many other knyghtes & esquyres, whych were redyous to name, to the nõbre of. xviiii. hũdreth & aboue, as wytnesseth the boke of mayres.

And in thys batayle were slayne of the nobles of Fraunce, the dukes of Barre, of Alanson, and of Brabã, viii. erles, and barons aboue .lxxx. wyth other gentylmen in cote armours to the nombre of .iii. thousãde and aboue. By reason of whyche ppl lage the Englysshemen were greatly auaunced. For the Frenchmen were so assuryd of victory by reason of theyr great nõbre, that they brought the more plenty of ryches wyth thẽ, to the ende to bye prysoners eyther of other/and also after the victory by them opteyned, to shewe vnto Englysshemen theyr pryde & pompous araye. But god whyche knewe the presumpcion and pompe tourned all thynge contrary to theyr myndes & ententes.

whan the kynge by grace and power of god, more thã by force of man hadde thus gotten this tryumphaũt victory, and retourned hys people frome the chase of theyr enemyes: tydynges were brought vnto hym, that a newe hoste of Frẽchmen were comynge to warde hym. wherfore he anone commaunded his people to be enbatayled/and that done made proclamacions thorough the hoste, that euery man shulde slee hys prysoner. By reason of whych proclamacyon, the duke of Orleaunce and the other lordes of Fraunce were in such fere, that they anone by lycence of ỹ kyng

sent

sent such worde vnto the sayd hoste, that they wythdrewe them. And the kynge wyth hys prysoners vpon the morow folowyng toke hys waye toward his towne of Caleys/where he rested hi durying this mayres tyme.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.v. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.vi.

wyllyam Cambrydge.

Nycholas wotton Draper. Anno.iii.

Ileyn Euerarde.

THys yere and.xxix.daye of Nouember,as the mayre rode towarde westmynster for to take hys charge/a pursyuaũt of ꝑ kynges came wyth letters vnto the mayre, gyuyng to hym knowlege of the kynges good spede.wherfore the byshop of wynchester than chaũceller of England haupnge lyke wyttynge,came that daye to Poulys,and there caused Te deum to be songē wyth great solempnyte. And in lyke wyse was lyke obseruaunce done in ꝑ parysshe chyrches and other relygyous houses thorough the cytye of London.

And at Poulys,by the sayd chaũceller standyng vpon the steppes at the quyer dore,were the sayd tydynges denounced vnto the people.And vpon the morow folowynge, ꝑ sayd chaunceller wyth other byssshoppes and tẽporall lordes, wyth a generall procession of the mayre and compnalte of the cytye rode from Poulys to westmynster on fote, and offered at saynt Edwardes shryne,& so retourned to theyr owne houses. Thanne kyng Hẽry wyth hys prysoners shypped at Calays,and so landed at Douer.And after he had ben at Caunterbury,and there made hys offerynge vnto saynt Thomas/he than spedde hym on hys iournay tyll he came vnto Eltham,where he rested hym a season.

Vpon the.xviii.day of Nouembre he was met with the mayre & hys bretherne vpõ the Blak heth / & so conueyed wyth all honour thorough the cytye vnto westmynster.wherein dyuers places of the sayd cytye, as the brydge & crosse in chepe, were ordeyned certayn pagentes to the kynges great comforte. The maner wherof, with all processyons and other seremonies I passe ouer for letthyng of the tyme.

In thys yere also Sigismunde Emperour of Almayn came into England. And in the moneth of May, by the kynges cõmaundement a.viii. daye of the sayd moneth, the mayre and bretherne mette hym vpõ Blakheth.And at saynt Georges met hym the kyng and hys lordes in great nõbre/and so conueyed hym vnto westmynster with great honour,& lodged hym in hys owen palays.And shortly after was the feast of sayncte George holden at wyndesore/ whyche before was deferred for hys cõmyng. In tyme of whyche solempnyte durynge ꝑ dyuyne seruyce/the kynge kepte the astate. But in syttyng at the feest,the Emperour kept ꝑ astate. The seruice & sotyltees of whiche feeste,with syttynge of ꝑ lordes after theyr degrees I passe ouer. And shortly after came the duke of Holande into this lande, for certayne causes concernynge the Emperour. whome the kynge honourably receyued/ and lodged hym in the bisshoppes palays of Ely in Holbourne. And so the kynge entreated and chered these straungers that for the season that they tarryed in Englande, they laye here at the kynges coste and charge.

And

And ꝑ emperoure and he were made knyghtes of the garter / and also a greate duke of ꝑ emperours named duke of Bzyga. And whan the emperour hadde taryed vpō. vii. wekes and odde dayes in Englande / which after some wzyters was to thentent to set an vnyte and reste bytwene the Frenche kynge and kynge Henry: he after toke mynde to retourne into Almayne. whom the kynge foz hys comfozte and nedes that he had to do at Caleys, accompanyed hym thyder / where eyther wyth gyftes & thankes departed from other. And the duke of Hollande went wyth the emperour into Hollande and other countrees.

whyle the kynge was thus at Calys / to hym came thyder vnder saufe condupt the duke of Burgoyne, and hadde wyth the kynge dyuers communycacyons / and after retourned to hys owne. And soone after ꝑ kyng retourned into Englande / and came to westmynster vpon saynte Lukes euyn oz the. xviii. daye of October.

Thys yere and season whyle the kynge was at Calayes, ꝑ is to mene vppon the daye of Assumpcyon of our blessed lady / the duke of Bedfozde accompanyed wyth the erle of Marche and other lozdes, hadde a greate conflycte and batayle wyth dyuers carikkes of Jeane and other shyppes. where after longe and sozе fyght, ꝑ honour fyll to hym and hys Englysshemen / to the greate losse of the straungers bothe of theyz men, and also of theyz shyppes / as some dzowned, & iii. of the grettest of theyz carykkes taken.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. vi. Anno dñi. M. CCCC. vii.

Roberte wodtyngton.

Henry Barton Skynner. Anno. v.

Johñ Couentre.

Thys yere the kynge holdynge hys parlyamēt at westmynster / to hym was graunted by auctoryt of the same a Fyftene. And by a conuocacyon of the clergy was graūted to hym a dyme, foz the mayntenaunce of hys warrys. wheruppon newe pzouysyon was made foz hys seconde vyage into Fraunce.

By authozyte of this parlyament also, Rycharde whyche was sonne & heyze of ꝑ erle of Cambzydge, which erle was put to deth at Southampton, was created duke of yozke / whiche after was maryed vnto Cecyle ꝑ doughter of Neraby erle of westmerlande, by reason that he bzought his wardshyp of the kynge. By the whiche lady Cecyle he hadde Henry that dyed yonge, Edward that after was kynge, Edmunde erle of Rutlande, Anne duchesse of Exceter, Elyzabeth duchesse of Suffolke, Geozge duke of Clarence, Rycharde duke of Glouceter and after kynge, and Margaret duchesse of Burgoyne. And whā all thynge was redy foz the kynges vyage / he ozdeyned Johñ duke of Bedfozde hys bzother pzotectour of thys land in the tyme of his absence. And that done / he wyth hys lozdes aboute wytsontyde toke hys shyppyng at Southamptō, and so sayled into Nozmandye / and landed vpon Lāmas daye at a place called Toke oz Towke. And after he was wyth hys hoste there landed, foz so moche as he was warned of certayne shyppes of warre ꝑ entendyd to do some harme in Englande bzynge than vpon the see: he therfoze to wythstāde theyz malycyouse purpose, sent the erle

erle of Warche, the erle of Huntyngdon, wyth other, to scowre the see. The whyche encountred the sayde enemyes/and after a lõge and cruell fyght them vẽquysshed & ouercame. whyche fyght was vpon the daye of saynt Romayne or the.xx.day of Auguste, as hath the Frenche cronycle. And of the French nauy, was chyefe capptayne the vycount of Narbon/ whych in that fyght was taken with great pitty of treasour. For as sayth Gaguinus, he with one Wountney an other capptayne, to whom þ sowdyours wages was cõmytted/of one assent of theyr synguler lucre wythheilde the sayde wages. By reason wherof whan they shuld ioyne in batayll, many of them wyth theyr shyppes withdrew, & laft theyr capitayns in the daũger of theyr enemyes. But this is lyke to be a fayned excuse of þ sayd Gagwyne, to saue the honoure of the Frẽchmen/as he many tymes semblably dothe in many places of hys boke.

Then to retourne vnto kyng Henry/whan he was thus landed, he sent vnto þ rulers of the town of Towke and had it vnto hym delyuered. But the castell was defended agayn hym tyll saynt Laurence daye folowyng/ the whyche he gaue after vnto hys brother the duke of Clarẽce, wyth all the sygnory therunto belongynge.

And thys done, the kynge spedde hym toward Cane, & layde his syege therunto vpon þ.xvii.day of the fore sayd moneth of August. The whych contynued tyll the feest of the Natyuyte of our lady/& than won vpon þ pty þ the duke of Clarẽce assawted. But the castel helde by apoyntemẽt, yf no reskouse were had tyll the.xiii. day folowyng. At whych day þ sayd castel was delyuered with other.xiii. stroge holdes, which had before take þ same apoyntmẽt. Than the kynge made the forsayd duke of Clarence capptayne of the sayd town & castell. And in this passetyme were dyuers other townes & stroge holdes goten, by dyuers of þ kynges retynew/as þ erle Marshall, the erle of warwyke & other/þ which wan Louers, Faloys, Newelyn, Cherburgth, Argẽtyne, & Bayons the cirye, with many other stroge abbays & ptys. Thã the kyng helde there saynt Georges feest, and dubbyd there.xv.knyghtes of þ Bath/ & after cõtynued his warres duryng this mayres yere, in wynnyng vpon the Frẽchmen by apoyntements and otherwyse/wherof the circumstaũce were very longe to declare in order.

In this yere also, & vpõ the feestfull day of Ester, fyll a chaunce in Lõdõ/ which to þ fere of all good crystẽ men is necessary to be noted. For vpõ the hygh & solẽpne day, by exceptyng of þ deuyll & yll disposycõ of.ii.women, that is to mene the wyfe of the lorde Straũge, & þ wyfe of syr Johñ Trussell knyght/such vnkyndnes fyll betwene theyr two husbãdes, þ eyther wold haue slayne other within þ parysh chyrch of saynt Dũstanes in the Eest. In pryng of which persons dyuers men were hurt & sore woũded/& one named Thoñ Petwardẽ slayne out of hand, which was a freeman & fysshemõger of the cyty. Than lastly both frayers were take & brought vn to the Coũtour in þ Poultry. And for the sayd lorde Straũge was demed culpable of þ beginyng of this fray/ he therfore vpõ the sõday folowyng, & for suspendyng of the chyrche, was denoũced acursyd at Poulys crosse & in all parysshe chyrches of Londõ. And fynally he was demed to open penaunce & dyd it/ and made greate amendes vnto the wyfe of the sayde Thomas for the deth of her husbãd.

A frayr on Esser day

And in the ende of thys yere, whete at Lõdõ was sold for.v.s. a busshell.

Anno

Anno domini.M.CCCC.xvii. Anno domini.M.CCCC.xviii.

Henry Rede.

Rycharde Merlowe.Iremonger. Anno.vi.

Johñ Gedney.

Syr Johñ Oldcastell lorde Cobham put to dethe.

IN thys yere syr Johñ Oldcastell lorde Cobhñ/ the whyche as before is shewed in the ende of the fyfte yere of thys kynge,escaped out of the Towre of London/was in the moneth of sent vnto London by the lorde Powys out of walys. The whyche syr Johñ for hereſye & treason was conuycte in the moneth of folowynge / and for the same drawen vnto saynt Gyles feld/ where he was hanged vppon a newe peyre of galowes wyth chaynes,and after consumed wyth fyre.

And about that season,the person of wortham in Norfolke, whyche longe tyme had haunted Newmarket heth, and there robbed & spoyled many of the kynges subgettes / was nowe with his concubyne brought vnto Newgate where he lastly dyed.

And kynge Henry beynge styll in Normandy / deuyded hys people in thre partes. wherof one he reserued vnto hym selfe/the seconde he committed to the rule of the duke of Clarence/and the thyrde vnto the erle of warwyke. whyche sayde duke & erle employed theyr armes so well and valyauntly,that eyther of theym encroched sore vppon the Frenchmen, and wanne from them many stronge holdes and pyles.And the kynge after longe syeges by hym contynued aboute Argentyne, Cresly, saynte Launde,and other/he then in ꝑ ende of thys yere, that is to saye vppon ꝑ daye of the translacyon of saynt Edwarde or the.xiii. daye of October/ layde hys syege vnto the cyrye of Roan/ and contynued the same tyll the.xii.daye of January folowynge.

In the whych passetyme the olde mayre was chaunged to a new as followeth.Upon the.ix.day of October dyed Johñ Bryan sherryfe / and for hym was chosen to that offyce Johñ Parnes Draper.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xviii. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xix.

Johñ Bryan.

wyllyam Sevenoke Grocer. Rauffe Barton. Anno.vii.

Johñ Parnelle.

THys yere the forsayde syege aboute the cyrye of Roan cõtynuynge/ vpon the.xii. daye of January forsayde, the Frenchmen offeryd to treate, whych treaty ꝑ kyng admytted vnto the erlys of warwike and Salysbury wyth other. And for the frenche party, was appoynted the cappytayne of the cyrye named syr Guy de Bocper & other. By reason of whyche treaty it was agreed,that ꝑ sayd capitayne vpon the.xix.day of the sayd present moneth of January, at such an houre as it shuld please ꝑ kynge to assygne/shulde delyuer vnto suche persons as the kynge wolde appoynte the cyrye & castell of Roan in all peasyble wyse/excepte the sayd cyrye and castell be reskowyd by the dolphyne of Fraunce before the sayd xix.daye.

And the.xxii.daye of the sayd moneth,the inhabytauntes of the sayde cyrye to paye vnto the kynge.xv. C. scutes of golde / wherof two shulde alwaye be worth an englysshe noble.

And

And other .rb. hūdred of lyke scutes, they shulde pape vpon the .xxiii. daye of February next folowynge. whiche couenauntes with many and diuers other cōprysed to .xxb. artycles, were by the assuraunce of both partyes surely ratifyed and assured. And for no releasse by the sayde dolphyn or any other Frenchman, was made by the daye aboue lympted/therfore ỳ said capytayne accordynge to hys bonde and promysse, delyuered the sayd cytye and castell, vppon the .xix. day of January afore sayde beyng the daye of saynt wolstan.

The wynnynge of thys cytye of Roan ascrybeth Gaguinus, vnto ỳ ciuyle dyscord that was bytweue the cytesyns and theyr fyrste capytayne named erle of Danmale/ whom they expulsyd ỳ cyty with a strong power of Normans. But yet as he affermeth, the cytesyns helde the cyty tyll they were cōstrayned for lacke of vytayll to eate horses, dogges, cattes, ratttes, and other vermyn.

whan kynge Henry had set ỳ cyty of Roan in an order/ he then passed ỳ countrees towarde Fraunce/ so that he subdued the cytyes and townes as he rode. And the .xx. daye of Maye he came to Troys in Chāpayne, where he was honourably receyued.

In whyche passetyme, Johñ duke of Burgoyne that before tyme had ben the occasyon of the murder of the duke of Orleaunce, was now slayne in the presence of the dolphyn / lyke as before I haue shewed to you in ỳ xxxix. yere of Charles the .vii. wherfore Phylyppe hys sonne and duke after hym, refused the dolphyns partye and drewe hym vnto kynge Henry/ and delyuered to hym the possessyon of Charlys the Frenche kynge and dame Katheryne hys doughter, as affermyth Gaguinus.

Then were meanes of concorde and vnyte sought and laboured by the Frenchemen, in so effectuall maner, that shortely after for a fynall peas to be hadde bytwene both realmes/ kynge Henry at Troys in Chāpayne forsayde by the meanes of the sayde Phylyppe duke of Burgoyn, maryed the forenamed Katheryne, vppon Trynite sondaye than beyng the .iii. daye of Juny.

Before solempnysacyon of which maryage a treaty and conclusyon of a peas conteynyng .xxxvii. artycles bytwene bothe kynges was concluded. wherof ỳ effecte was, that kyng Henry shulde be admytted and named regent of Fraunce/ and ỳ Charles shulde be kynge for terme of hys lyfe, and receyue the issues and profytes of the same/ and quene Isabell hys wyfe to enioye her dower for terme of her lyfe to quenes of Fraūce due and accustomed. And quene Katheryne kynge Henrys wyfe, to haue her dower in Englande to the value of .xl. thousande scutes/ whyche shulde be in value tenne thousande marke Englysshe. And yf she ouerlyued kynge Henry / then she to haue dower of the realme of Fraunce, to ỳ value .xx. thousande frankes yerely to be leuyed of suche lordshyppes as Blaunche somtyme wyfe to Phylyppe le Beaw helde. And after the dethe and tyme of the forsayde Charlys, the crowne wyth all ryghtes belongynge to the same of the realme of Fraunce, to remayne vnto kynge Henry and to hys heyres kynges. And for the sayde Charlys was dysyred wyth sykenesse / the kynge as regent shulde haue the hole gouernaunce of the sayde realme and defence of the same/ & specyally agayne the dolphyne, whyche entended and dyd hys vttermost power to disturbe the sayde peas. And that the lordes and nobles of Fraunce as well

ſpyrytuall as tempozall ſhall make othe vnto kynge Henry, to be obedyent vnto his lefull commaundmentes concernynge the fozeſayd gouernaunce and defence/ and they with ꝑ hedes and rulers of cytyes, caſtelles, and townes, to mayntayne & vpholde the ſayde peas to the vttermoſt of theyr powers / and after the dethe of ꝑ ſayd Charles, to become his trewe ſubiectes and lyege men. And that al ſuche lozdſhyppes as after that daye ſhulde be be conquered oz wonne fro the Dolphyn and other dyſobedyentes, that they ſhulde remayne to the vſe of the ſayd Charles durynge his naturall lyfe. Prouyded that yf any were wonne within ꝑ duchy of Nozmandy / that they ſhulde incontynently remayne to kynge Henryes vſe. And that after the dyſceaſe of the ſayde Charles, the duchy of Nozmãdy & all other lozdſhyppes therunto belongynge, to be as one monarchye vnder the crowne of Fraũce. And alſo that durynge the lyfe of the ſayde Charles / kynge Henry ſhulde nat vſurpe oz wryte hym ſelfe kynge of Fraunce. And that the ſayd Charles ſhulde in all his wrytynges name kynge Henry his mooſt dereſt ſonne Henry kynge of Englande and enheritour of the crowne of Fraũce. And that none impoſycyon oz taſke ſhuld be put vpon the comons of Fraunce, but to the neceſſary defence & weale of the realme. And that by the aduyce of bothe coũſayles of the realmes of Englaude and of Fraunce, ſuche ſtabliſſhed ozdynaũces myght be deuyſed, that when the ſayde realme of Fraunce ſhulde fall to the poſſeſſyon of kynge Henry oz his heyres, that it myght with ſuche vnyte ioyne vnto the realme of Englãde, ꝑ one kynge myght rule both kyngdomes as one monarchye / reſerued alwayes to eyther ꝑyncypate oz realme, all ryghtes, lybertyes, frãchyſes, and lawes / ſo that nother realme ſhulde be ſubiecte vnto other. And that perpetuall amyte and frendſhyp with all famylyer conuerſacion, aſwell by byenge, ſellynge, and all other lefull, to be cõtynued atwene bothe ſubiectes foz euer / all cuſtomes and pryuyleges to eyther realme to be payde and obeyed. And that kynge Charles noz Phylyp duke of Burgoyne, ſhulde make any concozde oz peas with the Dolphyn of Vyen, without the aſſent & agrement of kynge Henry. Noz he in lykewyſe without the conſent of the ſayde Charles and Phylyp. And the ſayd Charles duryng his lyfe, ſhulde honozably be founde aud entreated / and to haue in his houſholde and aboute hym noble men of his owne nacyon, with all other thynges concernynge his eſtate / and to be lodged in notable places of his realme, wher the people to hym ſhulde be moſte obedyent.

After whiche artycles by the conſentes of bothe prynces well and nobly ratyfyed and confermed, and ſolempnyzacion of the fozeſayd maryage ended / kyng Henry with his people ſped hym towarde Parys, where he was honozably receyued. And whan he had with his newe wyfe reſted hym there a ſeaſon / he than with the duke of Burgoyne and dyuers other lozdes of Fraunce, layde ſyege vnto dyuers townes whiche helde vpon the Dolphyns partye, & them wanne by ſtrengthe oz by appoyntment / and laſtly layde ſyege and bis ozdenaunce aboute a ſtronge towne named Meldune oz Melcon, whereof was capytayne a noble warryour named Barbaſan, the whiche defended that towne manfully. Than the kynge ſeynge the fozeſayde ſterneſſe of ꝑ capitayne / becrypped that towne with a ſtronge ſyege / lyenge hymſelfe on

selfe on that syde towarde the wood, and the duke of Burgoyne vpon the other syde agayne the temple or mo nastery of sayne Peter/whiche syege so contynued durynge this mayres yere.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xix. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xx.

Robert whytyngham.

Richarde whytyngham Mercer. Anno.viii.

Johan Butler.

THis yere continued styll the former syege aboute Meleon tyll aboute the myddle of Nouembre. At whiche tyme the forenamed capytayne forkampsshed, sought meanes of treaty. By meane wherof it was agreed, that he with all other shulde sauely auoyde by a daye lympted/excepte all suche persones as before tyme had ben consentynge vnto the dethe of Johñ lateli duke of Burgoyne. For the whiche tryme the forenamed capytayne named Barbasan was after accused with many other/ and sent vnto Parys, and there holden in pryson. And that done kynge Henry layde his syege vnto a towne called Melden. The whiche fynally was also gyuen vp by a lyke apoyntment. wherin were founden certayne persones detected of ꝑ forsayde murther/for the whiche after due cramynacyon made, they were hanged vpon an elmen tree standynge by ꝑ way ledynge vnto Parys. whan kynge Henry had thus wrouhte moche of his wyll in Fraunce/ he toke leue of his father the Frenche kynge/& with the quene his wyfe sayled into Englande, & landed at Douer vpon Candelmas day/leuynge in Fraunce for his deputye his brother the duke of Clarence. Than the kynge sped hym on his tournay towarde London/ & came thyder on the.xiiii. daye of Februarye. And the quene came thyder vpon the.xvi. day of ꝑ same moneth. But here for lengthe of tyme I wyl passe ouer the great and curyous ordynaunce prouyded by the cytezyns for the receyuynge of the kynge and quene, aswell of theyr ordinate metynge wyth theym vpon horsebacke, as the sumptuous and honourable dyuyses prepayred wythin the cytye to the kynges and quenes greate rejoysynge. And forthe I wyll procede to shewe vnto you some parte of the greate honour, that was vsed and exercysed vppon the daye of the sayde quenes coronacyon/whyche was after solempnysed in sayne Peters churche of westmynster, vppon the daye of sayne Mathy the apostle or the foure & twenty day of Februarye. After whyche solempnysacyō in that chyrche endyd/ she was conueyed into the greate halle of westmynster, and there set to dyner. Upon whose ryghte hande satte at the ende of the same table the archebysshop of Cantorbury, and Henry surnamed the ryche cardynall of wynchester. And vppon the lefte hande of the quene satte the kynge of Scottes in hys astate/the whyche was serued wyth couerd messe lyke vnto the forenamed bysshoppes, but after them. And vppon the same hande and syde nere to the bordes ende, satte the duchesse of yorke, and the countesse of Huntyngdon. The erle of ꝑ Marche holdynge a septre in hys hande, kneyld vppon the ryght syde. The erle marshall in lyke maner kneyled vppon the left hande of the quene. The cōtesse of Kente satte vnder the table at the ryght foote/ and the countesse

Marshall at the left foote. The duke of Glouceter syr Humfrey was that daye ouerloker/ and stode before the quene bare heded. Syr Rychard Neupil was that day carucr to ꝑ quene/ ꝑ erles brother of Suffolk cupberer/ syr Johñ Steward Sewar/the lord Clyfford panterer in stede of the erle of warwyk/the lord wyllughby botelier in stede of the erle of Arundell. The lord Gray Ruthyn or Ryffyn naperer The lord of Awdeley amner in stede of the erle of Cambrydge. The erle of worcester was that daye erle Marshall in absence of the erle Marshall, the whyche rode about the hall vpon a great courser, wyth a multytude of typped staues about hym to kepe the roume in the hall. Of the which hall, the barons of the.v. portes begā the table vpon the ryght hande towarde saynt Stephēs chapell/ & beneth thē at the table sat the bowchyers of the chauncery. And vpon the lefte hande nert vnto the cupborde, sat the mayre and hys bretherne aldermē of Lōdō. The bysshops began the table foreagayne the barons of the.v. portes/ & the ladies the table agayn the mayre. Of whyche.ii. tables, for the bysshoppes began ꝑ bysshop of London and the bysshop of Durham / and for the ladyes, the countesse of Stafforde/ & the cōtesse of Warche. And ye shall vnderstande, that thys feast was all of fysshe. And for the ordering of the seruice therof were diuers lordes appoynted for heed officers / as stewarde, controller, surueyour, and other honourable offyces. For the whyche were appoynted the erles of Northumberlande, of westmerland, the lorde Fitz Hughe, the lorde Furneuall, the lorde Gray of wylton, the lorde Ferers of Groby, the lord Bonynges, the lorde Haryngton, ꝑ lord Darcy, the lorde Dacre, and the lord Delawarre.

The whyche wyth other orderyd the seruyce of the feest as foloweth/ & thus for the fyrst course.

Brawne and mustarde.
Dedellys in Burneur
Frument wyth Balien
Pyke in Erbage
Lampray powderyd
Trought
Codyng
Playes fryed
Warlyng fryed
Crabbys
Leche lumbarde flowrysshed
Tartys.

And a sotyltye called a Pellycane sittyng on hys nest with her brydes/ and an image of saynte Katheryne holdyng a boke and dysputyng with the doctours / holdynge a reason in her ryghte hande, sayinge *Madame se Royne*, and ꝑ Pellycan as an answere *Ce est la signe, et du roy, pur tenir roy, et a tout sa gent, elle mete sa entent.*

The seconde course.

Gely coloured wyth columbyne floures
whyte potage or creme of almandes
Breme of the see
Counger
Dolys
Cheuen
Barbyll wyth Roche
Fresshe Samon
Halybut
Gurnarde
Rochet broyled
Smelth fryed
Creups or lobster
Leche Damask wyth the kynges worde or prouerbe flourysshed, *Une sanz plus.*
Lampray fressh baken
Flampeyne flourisshed wyth a scochon royall/and therin.iii. crownes of golde plantyd with floure delyce and floures of camemyll wrought of confections.

And a

And a ſotyltye named a Panter wyth an image of ſaynte Katheryne wyth a whele in her hande / & a rolle wyth a reaſon in that other hande, ſayeng, La Royne ma file, in ceſte ile, per bon reſon, auci rengne.

The thyrde courſe.

Dates in compoſt
Creme motle.
Carpe deoze.
Turbut.
Tenche.
Perche wyth goion.
Fyſſhe ſturgeon wyth welkes
Poꝛperies roſted.
Wennes fryed.
Creuys de eawe douce.
Pꝛanps.
Elys roſted wyth lampꝛey.
A leche called the whyte leche flouryſſhed wyth hawthoꝛne leuys and redde hawys.
A marth payne garnyſſhed wyth dyuers fygurs of angelys / amonge the whych was ſet an image of ſaynt Katheryne holdynge thys reaſon, Il eſt eſcrit, par vou et eit, per mariage pure ceſt guerre ne dure. And laſtely a ſotyltye named a Tigre lokynge in a myꝛrour / and a man ſyttynge on hoꝛſe backe clene armed holdyng in hys armes a Tyger whelpe wyth thys reaſon, Par force ſanz reſon ie ay pryſe ceſte beſte. And wyth hys one hande makynge a cõtenaunce of thꝛo wynge of myꝛrours at the great Tygre. The whych held thys reaſon, Gile the mirrour ma ſerte diſſeur.

And thus wyth all honour was fynyſſhed thys ſolempne coꝛonacyõ. After the whyche / the quene ſoiourned in the palays of weſtmynſter tyll Palme ſondaye folowynge. And vpon the moꝛne ſhe toke her iournaye towarde wyndeſoꝛe, where the kyng and ſhe helde theyr Eeſter. And after that hygh feeſt paſſed / ꝑ kynge made pꝛouyſyon foꝛ hys warre in Fraũce, durynge the terme of thys mayꝛes yere.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xx. Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xxi.

Johñ Boteler.

wyllyam Cambꝛyge Gꝛocer. Anno. ir.

wyllyam weſton.

THis yere vppon Eeſter euyn, beynge than the. xxii. daye of Apꝛyll, the duke of Clarence bꝛother vnto the king, whõ at his departyng out of Fraũce he hadde laft there foꝛ his deputye / was at a place called in French Baugy oꝛ Bauge, ouerſet & ſlayne, by a Frẽch capptayne named ſyꝛ Johñ de la Croyſe. And the erlys of Huntyngdon & of Somerſet with many mo gentylmẽ of England and Gaſcoyne take pꝛyſoners, to ꝑ kynges great diſpleaſure. Than ſhoꝛtly after ꝑ king held his pliamẽt at weſtmynſter. By autoꝛyte wherof & of a cõuocacyõ of ꝑ clergy holden at Poulys, was graũted to hym a fyfteene & dyme. And foꝛ ꝑ money therof ſhuld not be haſtely called on of ꝑ comõs / the byſhop of wynchester of his owne fre mynde, lent to the kyng. xx. M. li.

And about Pentecoſte folowynge kyng Henry ſhypped at Douer, & ſayled to Calays / & from thens yode the thyrde tyme into Fraunce, where he warred duryng thys mayꝛes yere.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxi. Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxii.

Rycharde Goſſelyn.

Robert Chychcley Gꝛocer. Anno. i.

wyllyam weſton.

IN the begynnyng of thys mayres yere and .vi. daye of Decembre/ was kyng Henry the .vi. borne at wyndesore. And in ỳ .xv. day of ỳ sayd moneth began a parlyament at Poulys. By the whych was graunted to the kyng a fyftene and a deme of the clergy. And for the corne of golde at those dayes was greatly mynysshed wyth clyppyng & wasshyng, to great hurte of the commynaltye / therefore at thys parlyament it was enacted & agreed, that in the paymente of thys ayde to the kyng graunted/ hys officers shulde receyue all lyght coynes of golde, so that they wanted nat in weyghte ouer the rate of .xii. ỏ. in the noble. And yf any noble wãted more than .x. i. ỏ, or any other pese of golde after the rate/ thã the owner to make vp the value to .vi. s. viii. d. By reasõ of thys also, syluer, as grotes & pens were geson/ for all men put forth the golde and made store of syluer. This yere also after Easter, the quene toke shyppyng at Southampton, & sayled to the kynge into Fraũce / where she was honourably receyued of her father and mother, & of the cytyes & good townes. And in the cytye of Paris vpon whytsondaye, the kyng and she sat crowne at Dyner, whych had nat before tyme ben sene of any kyng of Englande.

Wythe of Henry the fyfte.

In thys mayres yere also, but the .x. yere of the kyng and .x. daye of August/ a new wedyrcok was sette vpõ the crosse of sayncte Paulys steple of London. Thã kyng Henry beyng styll occupyed in hys warres in Fraunce, & dayly wynnyng vpon the Frenchmẽ in thys sayd moneth of Auguste and .x. yere of hys regne / he wared syke at Boys in Vincente, and dyed there lyke a good cristen man vpõ the last daye of August, whan he had reygned .xi. yeres. .v. monethes and .x. dayes/ leuyng after hym hys onely yonge son Henry of the age of .viii. monethes & odde dayes. And than hys body was enbawmed and cerid, and after brought vnto westmynster/ as in the begynnynge of the xxvi. mayres yere shalbe shewed. And in the moneth of October folowyng, dyed the French kyng father vnto the quene, as in his story before is declared.

Who that wolde take vppon hym to reherce all the conquestes and triũphaunt victoryes optayned by thys moste victorious prynce, wyth other laudable dedes/ he shulde to reherce thẽ cerpously make a great volume. But where to fore I haue shewed to you breuely some part of the famous dedes of thys excellente prynce, touchynge the actuel dedys of his body/ nowe I wyl breuely touche the actes done by hym for the meryte of hys soule. And fyrste for asmõche as he knewe well that hys father hadde laboured the meanes to depose ỳ noble prynce Rychard the second, & after was cõsentyng to his deth/ for ỳ which offence hys sayde father had sente to Rome, of that great crime to be assoyled/ and was by the pope enioyned, ỳ lyke as he had beraft hym of hys natural and bodely lyfe for euer in this world, that so by contynuall prayer and suffragyes of ỳ churche, he shuld cause hys soule to lyue perpetually in the celestyall worlde / whyche penaũce for that hys father by lyfe dyd nat perfourme, thys goostly knyght in most habũdaũt maner pfourmed it. For fyrst he buylded .iii. houses of relygyon/ as the Charterhous of mõkes called Shene, the house of close nonnes called Syon, and the thyrde was an house of obseruauntes buylded vpon that other syde of thamys, and after let fall by hym for the skyll that folowyth as testifyeth the boke of Regyster of mayres.

Where it is reported that after this noble

noble prynce had thus founded these sayd.iii.houses, and endowed theym wyth cõpetent landes/ he of a goostly dysposicion wyth a secrete cõpany for to vysyt them and to se how they kepte theyr dyuyne seruyce/ wolde dyuers tymes go fro hys manour of Shene nowe called Rychemounte vnto the sayde thre places, for ỳ causes aboueseyde. At whyche tymes and seasons he euer founde the twoo houses of monkes and nonnes occupyed as theyr statutes requyred. But the thyrde hous whyche was of Frenche freers, he fande sondry tymes negligente and slacke in doyng of theyr duety. wherefore he called before hym ỳ father wyth some other of that place, and reasoned wyth thẽ sharply, why none otherwyse they entended theyr diuyne seruyce, & prayed more specyally for hym as they were bounde of duety. whereunto it was after pardon requyred lastely by the sayde father answered, that in conuenyent wyse they naturally might nat praye for hym and hys good spede, consyderynge that he dayely warred vpon theyr fathers and kynnesmen, and slewe of theym and spoyled thẽ dayly/ and empouerysshed that lãde, whyche they of very kynde ought to loue and praye for. After whyche answere thus by them made/ the kynge auoyded the hous of them, and turned the lande thereof to suche vse as hym best lyked, and suffred the hous to fall in ruyne. And ouer thys great acte of foũdyng of these ii. religious houses/ he ordeyned at westmynster to brenne perpetually wythoute extinccion, iiii. tapers of waxe vppon the sepulture of kyng Rychard/ and ouer that he ordeyned therto/ to be continued for euer, one day in ỳ weke a solempne Dirige to be songe, & vpon the morowe a masse/ after which masse ended, certayn money to be gyuẽ, as before is expressed with other thynges in ỳ begynnyng of this kynges regne. And ouer thys his great besynesse in warre nat withstãdyng/ this most cristẽ prince by his lyfe chase hys place of sepulture within the fore sayd monastery/ & there ordeyned for hym to be songe.iii.masses euery day in the weke whyle the world lasteth, in maner and forme as by these verses folowyng doth appere.

Henrici missæ quinti, sunt hic tabulatæ.
Quæ succedunt sunt per monachos celebratæ.

¶ Prima fit Assumptæ de festo virginis almæ. Dominica ¶ Missa Assumptionis Mariæ.
Posci potremam Christus de morte resurgens. Missa dieæ resurrectionis. i
¶ Prima salutate de festo virginis extat. ¶ Missa salutationis Mariæ.
Nunciat angelicus laudem postrema choreis. Lune Missa annũciatiõis Mariæ. ii
¶ Esse deum natum de virgine prima fatetur. ¶ Missa natiuitatis Christi.
Commemora natam, sic vltima missa Mariam. Martis Missa natiuitatis Mariæ. iii
¶ Prima celebretur, ad honorem nesmatis aluei. ¶ Missa sancti spiritus.
Vltima conceptam denunciat esse Mariam. Mercurij Missa conceptionis. iiii
¶ Semper prima coli, debet de corpore Christi. ¶ Missa corporis Christi.
Vltima sit sata, de virgine purificata. Iouis Missa purificationis. v
¶ Concedet vt prima, celebretur de cruce sancta. ¶ Missa sanctæ crucis.
Astra salutate fiet postrema Mariæ Veneris Missa salutationis Mariæ. vi
¶ Omnes ad sanctos, est prima colenda supernos. ¶ Missa omnium sanctorum.
Vltima de requie, pro defunctis petit esse. Sabati Missa de requie. vii
¶ Semper erit mesta, de proprietate dei. Omni die ¶ Missa diei quotidie.

¶ whyche verses may thus to vnlettered be englysshed.

Loo here is noted and put in memory,
That ouer these actes noble and Marcyall/
Thys excellent prynce, thys fyrste kyng Henry,
Hys soule to endowe he was memorypall.
For wyth suffrages whyche euer laste shall,
Of masses thre that folowe ceryously,
At westmynster he ordeyned to be sayde dayly.

Sonday. Upon sondaye the fyrste masse to begynne,
Deuoutly to be sayd, of the Assumpcion
Of our blessed Lady/ and nat thercafter blynne,
But than the latter of the resurreccion.
Monday. And on the mondaye, of the Visitacion
The fyrste masse after ordeyned is.
Of the Annunciacion the latter masse sayd is.

Tuysday. Upon the tuysday, to kepe the ordre iust,
The fyrste to be sayd of crystes Natiuite.
Than of our Lady byrth the latter folow muste.
wednysdaye. On wednysdaye, the holy ghost halowed to be.
And of the Concepcion the thyrd wylled he.
Thursdaye. The thursday to synge the fyrste of Corpus xpi/
Of the Purificacion the laste of our Lady.

Frydaye. Upon the frydaye, a masse of crystes crosse/
And of the Salutacion the latter for to synge.
Saterdaye. And for of daye or tyme shuld be no losse
Upon saterdaye, the fyrste of that morynge
A masse of all sayntes to pray for the kynge.
Than masse of Requiem to be laste of all.
Quotidie. And euery day, the day masse ampd these masses (to fall.

Enuoy.

¶ O mercifull god, what a prynce was this,
whiche his short lyfe in marciall actes spent
In honour of conqueste/ that wonder to me it is,
Howe he myght compasse suche dedys excellent/
And yet for that his mynde nothynge detent,
All ghostly helthe for his soule to prouide,
Out of this world or he fatally shulde slyde

So that though I had Tullyes eloquence,
Or of Seneck the great moralyte,
Or of Salomon the perfyght sapience,
Or the swete dytes of dame Caliope:
yet might I nat in prose or other dytte,
Accordyngly auaunce this princes fame,
And with due honour to enhaunce the same.

Considerynge his actes, whereof perceyll appere
In this rude werke/ with many mo left out/
The tyme also, whiche was lesse than ten yere,
That he so shortly brought all thynge about/
By diuine grace forthe fyl without doute,
That myghtfull lorde he halpe his ghostly knyght
With grace & honour to passe thys worldes fyght.

And to haue rewarde dowble & condigne.
And fyrst for marciall actes by hym doone,

To be

To be auaunced amonge the worthyi Nyne
And for his vertues vsed by hym efte soone,
With many good deles which he in erth had done
Above the Hierarches he is I trust now stalled,
That was in erth/kyng of kynges called.

Anglia.

Henry the syxte.

HEnry the.vi. of ꝑ name, and onely sonne of Henry the.v. & of quene Kathryn doughter of Charles ꝑ seuenth kyng of Fraunce/began hys reygne ouer the realme of Englande, the fyrst day of September, in the yere of our lorde. M.iiii.C.& xxii. and in the ende of the laste yere of the reygne of the forelayde. vii. Charles than kyng of Fraunce.

Thys Henry for the insufficience of hys age, whyche as before ys shewed was but of.viii. monethes and odde days/was commytted vnto the rule of hys vncles, the dukes of Bedforde and of Gloucester. The whyche durynge hys none age ruled the realmes of Englande & of Fraunce honourably/as the duke of Gloucester protectour of Englande, and duke of Bedforde regent of Fraunce. Than vpon the.xxi. day of October durynge thys mayres yere Robert Chycesey/ dyed at Parys the aboue named vii. Charles kynge of Fraunce. By reason of whose deth, by force of appoyntemẽt before made betwene Henry the.v. and hym, as before is towched in the seuenth yere of the sayde Henry/the realme of Fraunce & right thereof fylle vnto the ponge kynge Henry. To whose vse the nobles of Fraunce, excepte a fewe of suche as helde wyth the Dolphyne, delyuered the possession therof vnto the duke of Bedforde, as regent therof durynge that nonage of thys kynge.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxii.

wyllyam Estkeyde.

wyllyam walderne.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxiii.

Anno primo.

Robert Tatersale.

IN the begynnyng of thys mayres yere, and fyrste yere of the kyng/that is to say the.vii. daye of ꝑ moneth of Nouembre, the corps of ꝑ excellent prynce kyng Henry the fyft was wyth great solempnyte and honour brought vnto the monastery of westmynster/ and there at the fete of saynt Edward wyth due reuerẽce enterred/ to whose soule Jesus be mercyfull. And vpon the.xx. day of ꝑ sayd moneth, was a parlyament called at westmynster. By reason whereof, the kynges gouernaunce durynge hys nonage was prouyded for/ wyth all the rule of bothe realmes of Englãd and of Fraunce. And by auctorite of the same, the duke of Gloucester syr Humfrey, was ordeyned protectoure of England/ and duke Johñ of Bedforde regent of Fraunce. And durynge the parlyament/ was graũted vnto ꝑ kyng for a subsydie for.iii. yeres, v. nobles of euery sacke of wolle that shulde passe out of the lande. And the fyrste daye of Marche after, was of hys preestehode degraded an heretyke named wyllyam Taylour, and brẽt to asshes in smythfeld. whose opynyons for the herynge of them shulde be tedious and vnfructefull/ I therfore wyll nat wyth theym blot my boke. In thys moneth of Marche also was the town of Pount

Mclanc

Melanc delyuered by apoyntmente vnto the regent of Fraunce. Of the whych apoyntemẽt one artycle was, that all hoꝛſes, abylmẽtes of warre, harneys, and other, ſhulde be lefte withyn the ſayd place/and alſo golde and ſylucr and other ieweiles there to remayne hooly. And yf that any perſone were within ỹ holde founde, whiche beforꝛe tyme had ben gylty oꝛ conſentynge to the dethe of the duke of Burgoyne/that he ſhulde be delyuered to the regent/and not to take any benefyte oꝛ pꝛyuylege by that apoyntment.

And this yere the weſt gate of the cytye called Newgate, was newly buylded and repayꝛed by the executours of Rychaꝛde whytyngton late mayꝛe of Londõ. And this yere after mydſomer fyll great water oꝛ rayne/ ſo that foꝛ the moꝛe party euery daye atwene the begynnynge of July and ende of Septembꝛe, it rayned lytell oꝛ moche/and yet that not withſtandynge, that yere was cõuenyent plenty of al grayne, ſo that where paſſed not eyght ſhyllynges at Lõdon, and malte fyue ſhyllynges.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxiii.

Nycholas James.

wyllyam Crowmer dꝛaper.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxiiii.

Anno.ii.

Thomas wadeforde.

THis yere, that is to meane in the begynnge of this mayꝛes yere and.xiii.day of Nouembꝛe/the kynge and the quene his mother remoued from wyndeſoꝛe towarde Lõdon, and came that nyght vnto Stanys/and on the moꝛowe bepnge ſonday whan he was boꝛne towarde his mothers chare, he ſhyꝛled and cryed ſo feruently, that the noꝛyce with her bꝛeſtes noꝛ nothynge elles that the quene coude deuyſe myght contente hym. wherfoꝛe the quene beyng fered that he had ben dyſeaſed, retourned agayne to her chambꝛe/where anone he was in good reſt and quyet. This of ſome wꝛyters is noted foꝛ a dyuyne monycyon, ỹ he wolde not trauayle vpon the ſonday. But howſoeuer it was, the quene taryed with hym ther that nyght/& on the moꝛowe he was boꝛne to ỹ chare with glad ſemblant & mery chere, and ſo came to Kyngeſton that nyght/and vpon ỹ moꝛow vnto his manour of Kyngeſton. Upon wednyſdaye, the quene ſyttynge in her chare and he vpon her lappe, paſſed with great tryumphe thoꝛughe the cytye/and ſo vnto weſtmynſter, where than was holden his parlyament/& there ſet in his kyngly mageſte withyn the parlyamẽt chambꝛe amonge all his loꝛdes. where the ſpeker of the parlyament made a famous pꝛepoſicion/wherof the effecte was, of the grace ỹ god had endewed the realme with, foꝛ the pꝛeſence of ſo towarde a pꝛynce and ſoueraygne gouernour as he was, with many other woꝛdes of commendacyon, which I paſſe ouer. The.xxvi.day of the ſame moneth of Nouembꝛe/the kynge with ỹ quene remoued from weſtmynſter vnto waltham holy croſſe. And after he had there a ſeaſon ſoiourned/he remoued vnto Hertfoꝛd, where he held his Cryſtmaſſe, and ỹ kyng of Scottes with hym. And ỹ foꝛeſayd parlyamẽt was tourned vnto ỹ.xx.daye of Cryſtmas. In ỹ whiche parlyament amonge other actes, was ordeyned ỹ what pꝛyſoner ỹ foꝛ graũd oꝛ petye treaſon was cõmytted to warde, & after wylfully bꝛake the ſame, it ſhulde

be demed

be demed pety treason / and that the goodes of hym so escappynge, shulde be forfeyted to the lorde of that soyle that they were founde in. In the moneth of Februari, syr James stewarde kynge of Scottes maried in the face of the churche of saynt mary Overeys in Southwerke, dame Johane ꝑ ducheſſe doughter of Clarence / whiche was doughter vnto the erle of Somerset fyrſte husbande vnto the sayde ducheſſe. And the feeſt was holden in the byſſhop of wynchesters place by. And soone after vpon the xiii. day of February, the forsayde parlyament beynge agayne holden at weſtmynſter / for brekynge of the forsayde acte of brekynge of prysons, syr Johan Mortymer was accuſed by a yoman named wyllyam Kynge and ſeruaunt vnto syr Robert Scot knyght and keper of ꝑ towre of London, of dyuers poyntes of treason as folowen. Fyrſt he coũſeyled with the sayd wyllyam kynge to the ende, to breke out of prysons / and promyſed to hym for the same, the yerely value of xl.li. lande, & in proceſſe an erledome. Also the sayd Mortymer shulde saye that he wolde go into wales vnto the erle of the Marches / and there he wolde rayſe. xl. M. men, and with that power he wolde entre this lande, and stryke of the heddes of the lorde protectour and of the byſſhop of wynchester, to the entent that he myght tell or play with some of his money.

And ferthermore he accuſed hym, that the sayde Mortymer shulde say, that the erle of Marche shulde be kynge by ryght enherytaunce / & that he hymſelf was nexte ryghtfull heyre to the sayd crowne after the sayd erle of Marche. wherfore yf the sayde erle wold not take vpon hym ꝑ crowne & rule of ꝑ lande, he sayde that he elles wolde. And ouer this the sayd wyllyam alledged to the sayde syr Johan Mortymer, that he shulde say that yf he kayled of his purpoſe, and myght not wyne vnto the erle of Marches, that than he wolde sayle vnto ꝑ Dolphyn and ayde and take his partye / where he wyſt well he shuld be accepted, and haue good ayde of hym to bringe aboute his purpoſe. All whiche maters were duely approued by the sayde wyllyam agayne the sayde syr Johan, before the lordes and comons of the sayde parlyament / for ꝑ whiche treasons he was after drawen and hanged.

In this yere also the duke of Bedforde beynge in Fraunce as regent, warred strongly vpon ꝑ Dolphyn, & wanne from hym many stronge holdes and townes / as Crotey, Baſyde, Ryol, Rulay, Gyrouñde, Baſyle, Mermouñde, Mylham, Femel, Seintace, Jenſak, Mauron, Duras, Mountſuer, La venak, Palageeu, Cerneys, Noelam, Cuſak, and Doual with dyuers other / and so contynued tyll he came vnto Vernevll in Perche. The whiche he helde so streyght, that laſtly Gyrande the captayne therof agreed to delyuer it by a certayne day, excepte he were reſcowed. After whiche appoyntment so taken / the sayde Gyrande as wytneſſeth Gaguinus, ſent worde to Charles the. viii. of ꝑ name or ꝑ. viii. after dyuers writers, which of his fautoures was than accõpted for kyng of Fraũce. And he in all poſsyble haſt, ſent thyder ꝑ duke of Alanson, ꝑ erle of Turoñ or of Douglas, of Bowgham or Boucam, of Daumayll, & ꝑ vicoũt of Nerboñ, with a ſtrõg power of Armenakkes, scottes, & Frẽchemẽ / ꝑ which hoſt or it myght approch to ꝑ sayd towne to make reſcouſe, ꝑ day expired, & it vnto ꝑ duke delyuered. whã ꝑ duke of Alãſõ was aſſerteyned of ꝑ delyuere of ꝑ towne, he toke his aduiſe of ꝑ other capitaynes, whether it wasbetter to retourn

conſyderynge

consyderyng the towne was polden, or to gyue batayll vnto the Englishe men. But fynally for no reproche shuld be to them arected as they had fled for fere / they kept on theyr tour nay, & pyght theyr felde in a playne nere vnto the sayd town of Vernoyl. where they beynge strongely enbataylled, vpon the .viii. day of the moneth of August, the duke of Bedford wyth hys retynue gaue to the sharpe and cruell batayll / the whyche endured longe wythoute knowlege of victory.

But fynally by goddes ordenaūce and power, the victory fyl to the Englysshe partye, to the greate losse of theyr enemyes. For in the fyghte was slayne / as testifyeth the French Gagayne, the erles of Turon, and Boucam, of Daumayle, wyth the Vycounte of Narbon, and dyuers other men of name. And of the commons were slayne to the nombre of fyue thousande. And there was taken the duke of Alanson, the Marshall of Fraunce, and other. But ỹ englysshe writers affermeth .x. M. to be slayne and mo.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxiiii.

Symonde Seman.

Johñ Mychell.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxv.

Anno R. iii

Johñ Bywater

This yere after Easter, ỹ kynge helde hys parlyamente at westmynster / the whych began vpō the daye of Estkenwalde or the laste daye of Aprill, And .ii. dayes before, the kynge wyth the quene his moder came thorugh the cytye from wyndesore. And whan he came at the west dore of Poulys / the lorde protectour toke him out of the chare, and so was ladde vpon hys fete betwene ỹ sayde lorde Protectour and the duke of Exceter, vnto the steppes goyng into ỹ quyer. Fro whēs he was borne vnto the hygh aulter / and there kneled in a trauers purueyed for hym. And whan he had be there, he rode to the rode of ỹ north dore and there made hys offerynges. And thenne was he borne into the churche yerde, & there set vpon a fayre courser, and so conueyed thorugh chepe, and the other stretes of the cytye vnto saynt Georges barre / and so helde hys tournay to hys Manour of Kenyngton. And contynuyng the foresayd parlyamēt / the kyng was sondry tymes coueyed to westmynster / and wythin the parlyament chāber kept there his royall astate. By auctorite whereof, to hym was graunted a subsidye of .xii. d. in the .li. of all maner marchaundyse cōmyng in or passing out of this realm and .iii. s. of a tunne of wyne for ỹ terme of .iii. yeres to be holden. And ferthermore it was enacted, that all marchaunt straungers shuld be set to an Englysshe hoste wythin .xl. dayes of theyr commyng to theyr porte sale, & to make no sale of any marchaundyse or they were so lodged / & theym wythin .xl. dayes folowynge to make sale of all that they brought. And yf any remayned vnsolde at the sayde xl. dayes ende / that than all such marchaundyse beyng than vnsolde, to be forfayted vnto the kyng. Also that all straungers that caryed any wolles out of thys lande, shuld pay .xliii. s. .iiii. d. for a sakke custome, where ỹ Englysshe marchaunte and denyzen payde but .v. nobles / wyth many other condycyons and penaltyes as well for Englysh as the other marchauntes,

chauntes, whyche wolde are longe leysour to shewe, enacted and passed durynge thys sayde parlyamente.

And the seconde daye of the moneth of Auguste, was yolden vnto the erle of Walysbury appoynted wyth other by the regent, the cytie of Mans, vnder appoyntemente comprysed in. xi. articles. wherof one specyall was, that yf any persones were founde wythin the cytye whyche had ben consentyng vnto the dukes deth Johan late duke of Burgoyne, that they shulde stande at the grace of the sayde regent.

Also thys yere the duke of Glouceter lorde protectour, whiche lately before hadde maryed the duchesse of Holande a woman a greate possessiō/ for cause of rule wherof, to haue dominyō of the same, he wyth the sayd duchesse sayled towarde that coūtre, and thereof her subgectes was pesably and wyth honour receyued. But fynally he had suche chere, ꝑ he was gladde to retourne into Englande, leuynge hys wyfe therein a towne of her owne named Mounse But after hys departynge, the duke of Burgoyne so demeaned hym to the rulers of that towne, were it by batayll or otherwyse, that they deliuered her to the sayde duke / and he forthwyth sente her vnto Gaunte, there to be kepte as prysoner. But by the frendshyppe of one named syr Jaques de la Graylli a Burgonyon knyghte, & her owne polecy / she escaped thens in a mannes clothynge, and came to a towne in zelande named zyrpre / and frome thens to an other towne in zelande called Ghwode or Ghowde, where she wythstode the dukes power.

Than the duke of Glouceter herynge of the escape of his wyfe, and of the malyce of the duke forsayde / in all haste prouyded a stronge company of soudyours and archers, and cōmytted them vnto that rule of ꝑ lord Fitzwalter. The whych in processe of tyme landed wyth them at a place in zelande called Brewers haue / where of theyr enemyes they were encountred and dryue backe, & so retourned into Englande wythoute any greate fete doynge, leuynge the duchesse behynde them for that season.

Thys yere about Wyghelmasse ꝑ prynce of Portyngale came into Englande / & was honourable receyued and fested of the kynges vncles / and taryed here the tyme of thys mayres yere. This yere also began a grudge to kyndle betwene the lorde protectour and hys halfe brother the bysshoppe of wynchester / the whyche after grewe to a greate dystourbaunce of the cytie of London, as in the next mayres yere shalbe shewed. And in the ende of thys yere, were many honeste men of the cytye apeched of treason, by a false and malycyous persone belongynge vnto the sayde bysshoppe / and putte theym vnto greate vexacyon and trouble. whych was done by the procurement of the sayde bysshoppe as the comon fame than wente. And nat alonely men of the cytie were thus vexed, but also other burgeyses of dyuers good townes, as Leycester, Cāterbury, Northampton, and other.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxv.

Johñ Couentre Mercer.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxvi.

Wyllyam Wyrrede.

Johñ Brykle.

Anno. liii.

IN thys yere the .xxix. daye of Octobre, and selfe same daye that the mayre for the yere folowyng yerely at westmynster taketh hys charge/at suche tyme as he was holdynge hys great dyner, he was by ꝑ lorde protectour sent for in spedy maner. And whan he was comyn to hys presence/ he gaue to hym a streyghte commaundemente, that he shulde se that the cytye were surely watched in that nyght folowyng, and so it was. Than vpon the morowe folowynge about .ix. of the clok/ certayne seruaũtes of the forenamed bysshope wolde haue entred by the brydge gate. But the rulers therof wolde nat suffre thẽ in so great nombre/ but kepte theym out by force, lyke as before they were commaunded. wherwyth they beyng greuously dyscontented/ gaderyd to them a more nombre of archers and men of armys, and assauted the gate wyth shot & other meanes of warre. In so moche that the commõs of the cytye herynge thereof, shytte in theyr shoppes & sped them thyder in great nombre. And lykely it was to haue ensued great effusyõ of blode shortly therupon, ne had ben the discrecion of ꝑ mayre and hys brethern, that exorted ꝑ people by all polytyke meane to kepe the kynges peas. And in this passe tyme, the archebysshop of Cantorbury, wyth the prynce of Portyngale and other, toke greate laboure vpon them to pacyfye thys varyaũce betwene the lorde protectour and the bysshope/ in so moche that they rode betwene theym .viii. tymes or they might bryng them to any resonable conformyte. Than lastly they agreed to stãde to the rule of the regẽt, or of suche as he wolde assygne. wher upõ ꝑ cytye was set in a more quiete. Thã the bisshop of wynchester wrote a letter vnto ꝑ duke of Bedforde or lorde regẽt, wherof ꝑ tenure ensueth.

RIght hyghe and myghty prince & ryght noble, and after one leest erthly lorde/ I recommaunde me vnto your grace wyth all myne hert. And as ye desyre the welfare of the kyng our soueraygne lorde, & of hys realmes of Englande & of Fraunce, & your owne weale wyth all yours/ haste you hyder, for by my trouthe & ye tary longe, we shall put thys lãde in iopardy wyth a felde/ such a brother ye haue here god make hym a good man. For your wysdome knoweth well, that the prosperite of Fraũce standeth in the welfare of England. Ryght hygh & myghty prynce, I beseche you holde mayster Johan Estcourt your coũcellour excused of hys tarying/ for it is moche agayne hys wyll. But the counsayll here hath made hym do cõtrary hys mynde. And that it may lyke you to gyue credẽce vnto your chamberlayne syr Robert Botelet. And the blessed Trinite kepe you. wryten in great haste at Lõdon the laste day of Octobre.

Upõ the .i. day of Januarye nexte ensuynge, ꝑ ryde duke of Bedforde wyth hys wyfe came vnto London. And with thẽ came also the sayd bysshop of wynchester. And the mayre & the cytezyns receyued hym at Werton, & cõueyed hym thorugh ꝑ cytye vnto westmynster/ where he was lodged in ꝑ kyng ; palays/ & the bysshop of wynchester was lodged wythin ꝑ abbottes lodgynge.

Than vpõ the morow folowynge or ꝑ .xi. day of January/ ꝑ mayre presented the regẽt wyth a payere of basyns of syluer & ouer gylte, & in them a .M. marke of golde. But the bisshop had so incensed hym agayn the cytye, that they receyued but a small thãke for all theyr labour and coste. Upon ꝑ .xxi. day of Februarye, thã began a great coũsayl at Saint Albonys/ and after it was adiourned vnto

Northampton.

Northampton. But for due conclusyons myght nat be dyuen by the sayde counsayll / therfore vppon the xv. daye of Marche ensuynge, was called a parlyament at Lycester / the whyche endured tyll the xv. daye of Juny folowynge. Thys was cleped of the comon people the parlyament of battes. The cause was, for prouisiacyons were made, that men shuld leue theyr swerdes & other weppyns in theyr innys, the people toke great battes & staues in theyr neckes / and so folowed theyr lordes & maysters vnto the parlyament. And whan þ weppyn was inhybyted them / thanne they toke stones & plūmettes of lede, and trussed them secretly in theyr sleues & bosomys. Durynge the parliament / amōge other notable thynges for the weale of the realme, the varyaunce that was betwene the forsayd lordes was herin debated & argued. In so moche that the duke of Gloucester put in a byll of cōplaynt, agayn the byssshop contaynyng. vi. artycles. wherof the fyrst was, that where the lorde protectour wolde haue had his lodgynge wythin the towre of London / he was by the comforte & ayde defended & let of the byssshop, and of Richard wydeuile esquyer thā being Lyeutenaunt of the same. The secōd was, for that that the byssshop wolde haue remoued þ kyng from Elthā / & haue sette hym at hys gouernaūce, without the aduyce and counsayle of the lorde protectour. The thyrde was, that whan the duke was enformed of the byssshoppes entent / and he entendynge accordynge to his offyce and duetie, in peasyble wyse to haue ryden to þ kyng to haue gyuē vpō him attendaunce: þ byssshop entendynge þ distruccīō of þ duke, assēbled a great multytude of men of armes and archers in Southwarke / & ther dyrewe the cheyne at the brydge fote, and set vp pypes & other engynes to stoppe the kynges hye way / & ordeyned mē to stande in chambres and soilers to throwe stones / and by theyr ordenaūces and pollycy, to haue destroyed þ duke and his company. The. iiii. artycle was, that kynge Henry the fyrst shulde by his lyfe tyme shewe vnto þ sayde duke, that by the openynge of a spaynell, a man was taken behynd a tapet in one of the kynges chābres. The whiche man after crampned by the erle of Arundel / confessed that he was sent thyther by þ sayde byssshop, to the ende to murther kynge Henry the forth. After whiche cōfessyon / the sayd erle let sadde that man, and so cast hym into the Thamys. The fyrst was, that the sayd Henry the fyrst begynge pryncē and heyre parant to the crowne / the sayd byssshop shuld come vnto hym and say, that for somoche as his father was vexed with greuous sekenes, & was not apte to come in conuersacion of the people, nor myght not conuenyently gyde the realme / that he therfore shulde take vpon hym the rule and gouernaunce of the same, and put his father from all kyngly power. The. vi. and last artycle was, that sedicyously the sayd byssshop hadde by his letters sent lately vnto the duke of Bedforde / wrongfully accused hym, in that he shulde areyse the kynges people, and iupar de this lande by a felde / contrary to the kynges peas and comon wele of this lande.

All which artycles were by þ byssshop wele and sufficyently answered and replyed / so þ he layde from hym the blame. And fynally by the prouydent counsayle of the lorde regent / al the sayd artycles and matters of varyaunce atwene the sayd two lordes hangynge, were put to the crampnacyon and iudgmente with the assystence of þ lordes of the parliamēt, of

Henry the archebyſſhop of Caunterbury, of Thomas duke of Exceter, of Johñ duke of Northfolk / Thomas byſſhop of Durhm̃, of Phylype byſſhop of worceter, of Johñ byſſhop of Bathe, of Humfrey thã erle of Stafforde, of Rauffe lorde Cornewell, & of mayſter wyllyam Alnewyke than keper of the pryeuy ſeale. The whych lordes wyth aſſyſtence of the other lordes of the parlyament, made a decre and awarde/ſo that eyther party toke other by the hande, wyth trédly & louyng wordes/none haupng amẽdes of other, except the byſſhope had wordes of ſubmyſſyõ vnto the duke, in requyryng hym of hys fauoure & good lordſhyp. And ꝑ accorde thus fynyſſhed, the parlyament was adiourned tyll after Eaſter. Vppon whytſondaye folowynge, was a ſolempne feeſt holden at Leyceter forſayde / where the regente dubbyd kynge Henry knyghte. And than forthwyth the kynge dubbyd Rycharde duke of yorke, that after was father to kynge Edwarde. Alſo he dubbyd knyghtes, the ſonne and heyre of the duke Johan, duke of Northfolke, and the erles of Orenforde and weſtmerlande, wyth other lordes and gentylmen to the noumbre of.xxxiiii.

And after that feeſte wyth all honour was endyd/the kynge wyth the regente and other of hys lordes drew towarde London. And ſo the regente contynued wyth the kynge in Englande, by the full terme of thys mayres yere.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.vi. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.vii.

Johñ Arnolde.

Johñ Kaywell Fyſſhmonger. Anno.v.

Johñ Hygthñ.

IN thys.v. yere and moneth of Febryary/the regent with hys wyfe & houſholde meyny paſſed the ſee vnto Calays, and ſo thorugh Picardy into Fraunce. But or he departed thens, that is to meane vpon the daye of annuncyacion of our Ladye/ the byſſhop of wynchester within the churche of our Ladye of Calays was created cardynall, by auctorytye of ꝑ bulles of pope Martyne the.v. of ꝑ name. And after that ſolẽpnyte don/ the regente toke hym on hys ryghte hande, & ſo conueyed hym vnto hys lodgynge.

Thys yere was vnreſonable of wederyng/for it reyned moſte part contynually frome Eaſter to Myghelmaſſe, where thorugh hay and corne was greatly hyndered.

And in thys yere the duke of Alẽſon, that before was taken pryſoner at the batayll of Vernell in Perche, was delyuered for a raunſon of.ii.C M.ſcutes of golde as reſkyeth Saguinus, whyche is fyfty.M.marke ſterlyng money.

In thys yere alſo the erle of Salyſbury, whych of dyuers wryters is named the good erle / accompanyed wyth the erle of Suffolke, the lorde Talbot, and other, layde a ſtronge ſyege vnto the cytye of Orleaunce, & helde the cyteyns very ſtreyght/and maugre the duke of Orleaunce and the Marſhal of Fraunce thanne named Boullaak, the Engliſſhemen wanne from theym dyuers ſtronge holdes adioynynge to the cytye/ and forced them to brenne a greate parte of the ſubbarbes of the cytye.

But ſorowe it is to tell and doolfull to wryte, whyle one day the ſayd good erle ſyr Thomas Mountagu,

reſted

ersted hym at a bay wyndow, and be helde the compas of the cytie, and talked with his familiers/a goune was leueyled out of the cytie from a place vnknowen, whyche brake the tymbre or stone of the wyndowe with suche vyolence, that the peces therof all to quasshed the face of the nobie erle/in suche wyse that he dyed within thre dayes folowyng. Upon whose soule ꝙ all crysten Jhesu haue mercy Amē.

This after dyuers wryters was initium malorum. For after this mysl happe, the Englysshmen losse rather ther than wanne/so that lytell and lytell they losse all theyr possessyon in Fraūce. And all be it that somewhat they gate after/yet for one that they wanne they losse thre, as after shall appere.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. xxvii. Anno dñi. M. iiii. xxviii.

Henry Frowyk.

Johan Gedney draper. Anno. vi.

Robert Otley.

IN this. vi. yere ꝙ begynnynge of the same/the kyng helde his parlyament at westmynster. By auctorite wherof was graunted to hym a subsydye in maner as foloweth. Fyrst of euery tonne of wyne ꝑ came into this lande, from ꝑ feest of saynt Ambrose or the fourth day of Apryll tyll the ende of that yere, the kynge shulde haue. iii. s̄. belongynge to a denyzyn or the kynges lyege man. Also of all marchaundyse passynge or cōmynge into this lāde, shypped by denyzon/the kynge to haue of euery. xx. s̄.. xii. d̄. except woll, fell, ꝙ clothe.

Also to hym was graunted, that of all parysshens thoroughout his realme beynge the benefyce of the valewe of. x. marke, that. x. of the sayde parysshons shulde paye of theyr moeables syxe shyllynges ꝙ eyght pēs, after ꝑ rate of eyght pens euery mā. And of all benefyces that were of. x. li. x. parysshons to paye. xiii. s̄. and iiii. d. all cytyes and borowes to be excepted. And so rate rate lyke from the lowest benefyce to the hyghest. And for the inhabytauntes of cyties, boroughes it was enacted that euery man beynge in valewe of. xx. s̄. aboue his stuffe of household ꝙ his apparayl and his wyfes, shulne paye. iiii. d. ꝙ so after the rate vnto the rychest.

In this yere also and day of saynt Gyles or the fyrste day of Septēbre/the cardynall of wynchester was met by the mayre and his brethern and certayne cytezyns on horse backe without the cytie, and so broughte vnto his palays in southwerke.

Aboute the same tyme, a Bryton that a good wydow and honeste woman hadde cherysshed and brought vp of almes, dwellynge in whyte chapell parysshe without Algate/murdred the sayde woman in a nyght slepynge in her bedde/and after conueyed suche iewelles and stuffe as he myght carye. But he was so pursued vpon, ꝑ for fere he toke a churche in Essex, ꝙ there forswore ꝑ kynges lande. And ꝑ constables caused hym be brought to London, and so entended to haue cōueyed hym westward. But so soone as he was commen in to the parysshe where before he had committed the murther/the wyfes caste vpon hym so moche fylthe and ordure of the strete, ꝑ not withstandynge the resystence made by the cōstables, they slewe hym there out of hande.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxviii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxix.

Thomas Dushous.

Henry Barton skynner. Anno.vii.

Rafe Holande.

THis yere vpon the. viii. daye of Nouembre / the duke of Norfolke accompanyed with many gentylmen, toke his barge at saynt mary Ouereys / entendynge to haue passed thorough the brydge, and so vnto Grenewytche. But by the myssgydynge of the sterysman, he was set vpon the pyles of the brydge, and ꝑ barge whelmed / so ꝑ all were drowned, except the duke and a fewe persones that lepte vpon the pyles, whiche after were drawen vp with ropes and so saued. And in the moneth of Iuny folowynge, the cardynall of wynchester with a warly company passed the see / entendynge to haue made warre vpon the heretykes or lollers inhabyted in the countre of Prage. But how it was for nede of men that the regēt hadde in Fraūce / the cardynall chaūged his purpose, and taryed there a season with the sayde regent.

After some wryters it was for to strengthe and replenysshe certayne holdes, that weked by reason of a cō-

flycte that the Englysshemen hadde with the Frenchemen. At the whiche the lorde Talbot was taken prysoner / and the lorde Scalys with many other to the nombre of.iii.M. Englysshemen were slayne and taken. But after the oppynyon of the Frēche cronycle / this vyctorye shulde be opteyned by Jane or Johan called in Frenche la puzele de dieu, in the.xi. yere of this kynge.

Of ꝑ forsayd heretykes of Prage speketh somdeale the auctour of Cronica Cronicarum / and sheweth that the chyef capytaynes of theym were named Procaptius, Saplicius, and Lupus a preest, with other bothe lerned and vnlerned. And Policronicō sheweth in ꝑ.xix. chappter of his laste boke, that in the twelfe yere of kynge Henry, the forsayd thre capytaynes were slayne / with one mayster Peter clerke beynge an Englysheman taken on lyue with dyuers other / and of ꝑ sayd heretykes slayne at.ii. tournayes ouer two and twenty thousandes.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxix. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxx.

wyllyam Rufke.

wyllyam Estfelde mercer. Anno.viii.

Rafe Holande.

IN this eyght yere vpon ꝑ day of saynt Leonarde the. vi. day of Nouembre / kynge Henry beynge vpon the age of nyne yeres, was solemply crowned i saint Peters churche of westmynster. At whose coronacyon were made syre ꝑ thyrty knyghtes of the bathe. And after that solempnyzacyon in the sayde churche fynysshed / an honorable feest in the great hal of westmynster was kepte / where ꝑ kynge syttyng in his astate, was serued with.iii. courses as here vnder ensueth.

Kyng Henry the. vi. crowned.

Frument wyth benyson
Vyand royall planted lofynges of golde
Boze hedes in castelles of golde and enamed

Beke

Bekewyth motten boyled
Capon stewyd
Pygnet rosted
Heyron rosted
Great pyke or luce
A rede leche wyth lyons corayn therein
Custarde royall, wyth a lyoparde of golde syttyng therin, and holdyng a floure delyce
Fryttour of sunne facyon, wyth a floure delyce therein.

A sotyltye of sayne Edwarde and sayne Loups armyd, & vppon eyther hys cote armoure/ holdyng betwene them a fygure lyke vnto kyng Herry standynge also in hys cote armoure/ and a scrypture pallyng from theym both, sayeng beholde.ii. parfight kynges vnder one cote armour. And vnder the fete of the sayde sayntes was wrytten thys balade.

Holy sayntes, Edwarde and saint Lowice,
Conserue this braunche borne of your blessed blode
Lyne amonge crystien moste soueraygne of price,
Enheritour of the floure delice so gode/
This sort Henry, to reygne and to be wyse,
God graunt he may to be your mode/
And that he may resemble your knyghtehode and vertue,
Pray ye bertely vnto our lord Jesu.

Uiand blank barred wyth golde
Selp party wrytten & noted wyth Te deum laudamus.
Pygge endored
Crane rosted
Byttore
Conyes
Chekyns
Partryche
Pecok enbakyll
Great Breme

A whyte leche planted wyth a rede antelop, wyth a crowne aboute hys necke wyth a chayne of golde.

Flampayne powdered wyth leopardes & floure delyce of golde.
A frytoure garnysshed wyth a leopardes hede & .ii. Estryth feders.

A sotyltie, an emperour & a kynge arayed in mātelles of garters/ which fygured Sigismūde ꝑ emperour and Herry the.v. And a fygure lyke vnto kyng Herry ꝑ.vi, knelyng tofore them wyth this balade takkyd by hym.

Agayne mischeuātes the emperour Sigismūde
Hath shewed his myght, which is imperiall.
And Henry the.v. a noble knyght was founde
For Christes cause in actes marciall/
Cherysshed the churche, to lollers gaue a fall,
Gyuyng example to kynges that succede,
And to theyr braunche here in especiall,
whyle he doth reygne to loue god & drede.

Quynces in compost
Blaūd sure powderyd wyth quarter losyes gylt.
Uenyson
Egrettes
Curlew
Cok and partryche
Plouer
Quayles
Snytes
Great byrdes
Larkys
Carpe
Crabbe
Leche of .iii. colours
A bake meate lyke shylde quartered red & whyte, set wyth losynges gylt & floures of borage. A fryttour enclosed.

A sotyltie of oure Lady syttynge wyth her chylde in her lappe/ and she holding a crowne in her hāde. Saint George & sayne Denys knelynge on eyther syde, presented to her kyng Henryes fygure beryng in hāde thys balade as foloweth.

O Bleſſed lady Chriſtes mother dere,
And thou ſaynt George that called art her knight
Holy ſaint Denyt o marter moſte entere/
The ſeet Henry here preſent in your ſyght,
Beſeeth of your grace on hym your heuēly lighte/
His tender youth with vertue doth auaunce,
Borne by diſcent & by title of right,
Juſtly to reygne in Englande & in Fraunce.

THis ſolēpne coronacyon with all honour and ioye fynyſſhed prouyſyon was made for the kynges iournay into Fraunce. In whyche paſſetyme, that is to meane vpon ꝑ xviii. daye of Januarye, an heretyke was brent in Smythfelde.

And vpon the morowe next folowynge, was in that felde foughten a ſtronge fyght/betwene Johñ Uptoñ Appellant, & Johñ Downe Defendant. But for they quyt theym bothe ſo manfully/the kynge at length releſed theyr quarell, and pardoned thē of theyr treſpas.

Than vppon ſaynt Georges day folowyng, or the. xviii. day of Apryll/ the kynge toke ſhyppynge at Douer and landed the ſame daye at Calays/ haurnge in hys company. ii. dukes, of yorke and Northfolke, thre byſſhoppes, of Bathe, Ely, and Rocheſter, eyght erles, that is to meane, of Huntyngdon, Staffordе, warwyke, Orenforde, Deuynſhyre, Worteyne, of Ewe, and of Uxmund/and. xi. barons, that is to ſaye, lord Bowchier, Beawmounde, Typtoft, Fytzwater, Roos, Arundell, Awdeley, Fawconbrydge, Gray, Codnoor, the lorde Scroope, and the lorde wellys.

In thys tyme and ſeaſon that the kynge laye thus at Calays / many ſkyrmyſſhes were foughten betwene the Engliſſhemen and the Frenchemen in dyuers partyes of Fraunce. And greately the Frenchemen preuayled by ꝑ helpe of a woman/which they as before is touched named the Mayden of god. So that laſtly she wyth her company came to a towne called Compeyne, to the entent to remoue the ſyege layde thereunto by ꝑ duke of Burgoyne and other of the Engliſſhe capytaynes. And therupon the. xviii. daye of May, ſhe gaue batayll vnto Engliſſhmen and Burgonyons / and faughte wyth theym longe tyme. But in the ende, by the manhode of a Burgonyon knyghte named ſyr Johñ Luxemburghe, ſhe was taken on lyue, and her company diſtreſſed, and ſhe caryed to the citie of Roan/ and there kept a ſeaſon, for ſo moch as ſhe feyned her with child. But whanne the contrary of it was knowen / ſhe was there forfuged and brente.

Of thys woman Gaguynus maketh a great proceſſe, of her parenty, and of her fyrſte takynge vppon her/ whereof a parte I entende to ſhewe after in the. vi. yere of Charles nexte folowynge kynge of Fraunce.

And in thys tyme and ſeaſon, one Rychard Hounden wolle packer of London, was convycte of hereſy and brent at towre Hylle. Than kyng Herry thus lodgynge at Calays, was aſſertayned of the takyng of the forſayd woman, by the letters of ꝑ duke of Burgoyne. And after he toke hys ſmall iournayes tyll he came into Fraunce, and ſo vnto Parys. Of whoſe cytezyns he was honourably receyued, & taken for ſoueraygne & kynge/and there ſo tarryed all thys mayres yere. In whych ſeaſō as wyt neſſeth Gaguynus/the Frenchemen wan dyuers holdes of Engliſſhemen and Burgonyōs in the countrey of Brye. And a capytayne named Barbaſan ſcomfited. viii. M. Engliſſhmē and Burgonyōs, at a place called in latyne Cathalamencis, as affermeth the forſayd auctour.

Anno

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxx. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxxi.

water Chertſey.

Nycholas wotton. Anno.ix.

Robert Large.

THys.ix.yere aboute mydlent/ a prieſt named ſyr Thomas Bagley and vycar of a vyllage in Eſſex called Wanueden a lyteil fromе walden, was detect of hereſy. Vppon the whych he was degrated, and thã brent in the place of Smythfelde. And ſoone vpon Eaſter folowynge/ the lorde protectour was warnyd of an aſſemble of heretykes at Abyndõ. wherfore he ſent thyder certayn perſones, or rode thyder hym ſelf as ſom wryters afferme / & there arreſted the bayly of that town named wyllyam Waundeuyle a weuer, the whyche was appoynted for a capytayne of ꝑ ſayd heretykes. And for to drawe the people vnto hym / he chaunged hys name & called hym ſelf Jak Sharpe of wygmorys lande in walys. But after he was exampned, he confeſſed to haue wroughte moch ſorow agayne prieſtes / ſo that he wolde haue made theyr heddes as chepe as ſhepe heddes, ſo that he wolde haue ſolde.iii. for a peny or .x. after ſome wryters. And the ſame ſeaſon were take many of hys complyces, which were ſent vnto dyuers pryſons. And the ſayd Jak Sharpe was for his offence, drawen, hanged, and hedyd at the forenamed towne of Abyndon, vpon the tuyſday in whytſon weke / and hys hede was ſent to London, & there pyght vppon the brydge. And the other of hys fawtours were put in execucyon in dyuers places and countrees, to the terrour of other.

And vppon the .xviii. daye of July, that yere was one named Rychard Ruſſell a wolle man, drawen, hanged, and quartered at tybourne for treaſon.

And thys yere the kynge beynge ſtyll in Fraunce/ the erle of Arundell accõpanyed wyth.ii.M. of Engliſhe ſowdyours, ſente a certayne of hys companye vnto a towne called Beale Mount, to prouoke the Frenchemen to iſſue out of the towne. whyche ſmal company whan Boſſycant and Seyntrayles thã cappytaynes behelde/ anone they wyth theyr ſowdyoures of that towne ſpedde theym forthe to take the ſayde Engliſſhemen. The whyche lytell and lyteil gaue bake, tyll they had tolled the Frenchemen a good ſpace from the towne/ and thã ſette vppon theym wyth a ſterne courage, and helde theym on hande tyll the ſayde erle wyth hys company relcowed theym. Than betwene theym was a cruell fyghte. But in the ende the Frenchemen were chaſed / and ꝑ ſayde Seyntrayle wyth many foote men of the ſayde towne were ſlayne at that iournay. And ſhortly after the duke of Burgoyne wyth ayde of the Engliſſhemen, at a place called Barre, ſcomfyted a greate company of Frenchemen/ and toke.ii. cappytaynes belongyng to the duke of Barre the whyche were named Renat and Barbazan / for whoſe raunſome the duke had peided to hym the Vale of Caſſyle in Flaundres.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xxxi. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xxxii.

Johñ Idylee.

Johñ welly Grocer. Anno.x.

Stephyn Browne.

In this

Kyng Henry the .vi. crowned in Parys.

IN thys .x. yere and .vii. day of December/kynge Henry the .vi. was crowned in Parys of the cardynall of wynchester. At the whych coronacyon was present the lorde Regent, the duke of Burgoyne, and dyuers other nobles of Fraūce / whose names Gaguinus putteth not in his boke, for reproche of the Frenchmen. And after the solempnyte of this feste was ended, wherof the cyrcūstaunce to shewe in order wolde aske a longe leysour / the kynge departed frome Parys, and so came to Roan, where he helde his Crystmas / & that done he sped hym to Caleys.

And whan he had soiourned there a season/he toke shyppynge and returned into Englande, and landed at Douer the .xi. daye of Februarv. Than he was mette vppon Barram Downe or Barram Howth, that ys betwene Douer and Cauntorbury, wyth a greate company of gentyls & comoners of Kent all cladde wyth rede hodes. The whyche accompanyed him tyll he came to Blak Heth/ where he was mette with the mayre and the cytesyns of London vpon a thursdaye beynge the .xxi. day of Februarv/the cytesyns beynge cladde in whyte, wyth dyuers werkes or conysaunces browderyd vppon theyr sleues after the faculrye of theyr mysteryes or craftes. And ꝑ mayre and hys brethern were all clothed in scarlet. And after due obeysaunce and salutynge of the kynge / they rode on before hym towarde the cytye. whan the kynge was comen to the brydge/ there was deuysed a myghty Gyaūt standynge wyth a swerde drawyn, hauyng thys speche wryten by hym.

All tho that ben enemyes to the kyng/
I shall them clothe with confusion/
Make hym myghty by vertuous lyuyng,
His mortall foon to oppresse & bere downe.

And hym to encrease as Christes champion,
All mischeues from hym to abridge,
With grace of god at the entry of this bridge.

AND whan the kynge was passed the fyrste gate, and was comen to ꝑ drawe brydge, there was ordeyned a goodly towre hāged and apparayled with sylke and clothes of aras in moste ryche wyse. Out of whiche sodaynly appered. iii. ladyes rychely cladde in golde & sylke, with coronettes vpon theyr heddes. whereof ꝑ fyrst was named dame Nature, the seconde dame Grace, & the thyrde dame Fortune / the whiche vnto the kynge had this speche.

We ladies thre all by one consent,
Thre goodly gyftes benynly & dyuyne,
To the sir kynge, as now we do present.
And to thyne hyghnes here we do this tyme,
Vtterly shewe & them determyne.
As I Grace, fyrst at thy comynge,
Endowe the with scyence and connynge.

And I Nature, with strengthe and fayrnesse,
For to be loued and dred of euery wyght.
And I Fortune, prosperyte and rychesse,
The to defende and to gyue the myght,
Longe to enioye and to holde thy trewe ryght,
In vertuous lyfe with honour to procede,
That thy two ceptours thou may well possede.

There was also in the sayd towre .viiii. dyrgyns all clothed in whyte. wherof .vii. stode vpon ꝑ ryght hāde of ꝑ sayd .iii. ladyes, & .vii. vpon ꝑ left hande. The .vii. vpon ꝑ ryght hande, had bawderykes of saphyr colour or blewe. And ꝑ other .vii. had theyr garmētes powdred with sterres of gold. Thā the fyrst .vii. presented ꝑ kynge with the .vii. gyftes of ꝑ holy ghost/ as sapyence, intellygence, good counsayll, strengthe, cunnynge, pyte, and drede of god. And the other .vii. gaue vnto hym the .vii. gyftes of grace in maner as foloweth.

God

God the endowe with crowne of glory,
And with the ceptre of clennesse and pytye,
And with a swerde of myghte and victorye,
And with a mantell of prudence clad thou be,
A shylde of fayth for to defende the,
An helme of helthe wrought to thyne encreace,
Gyrte with a gyrdyll of love and parfyte peace.

And after they had thus saluted the kynge/anone they beganne thys roundell wyth an heuenly melodye and songe, as foloweth.

Soueraygne lorde, welcome to your cytye/
Welcome our ioye, and our hartes pleasaunce/
Welcome our gladnesse, welcome our suffysaunce,
Welcome welcome, rygbte welcome must ye be/
Syngynge before thy royall mageste,
We saye with harte withouten varyaunce
Soueraygne lorde, new welcome out of Fraunce.

The mayre and cytesyns with all the comynalty
Reioyse your comynge newly out of Fraunce/
Wherby this cytie and they relewyd be,
Of all theyr sorow and former greuaunce.
Wherfore they saye and synge without greuance,
Welcome welcome, welcome our hartes ioye,
Welcome you be vnto your owne newe Troye.

Than the kyng rode forth a softe pase tyll he came at the entre of Cornhylle. where vpon ꝑ hylle was ordeyned a tabernacle of curyous worke/ in the which stode dame Sapyence, and about her the. vii. artes or scyences lyberall/as fyrst gramer, logike, rhetorike, musyke, arithmetyke, geometry, and astronomye/euerych of them exercysynge theyr connynge & facultye, and the lady her selfe hadde thys speche to the kynge.

Lo I chyefe prynceſſe, dame Sapience,
Shewe vnto you this sentence of scripture/
Kynges that ben most of excellence,
By me they reygne, and moste joye endure.
For through my helpe and my besy cure,
To encrease theyr glory and theyr hygh renowne/
They shall of wysdome haue full possession.

Than the kynge passed on tyll he came to the conduyte in Cornehylle. where was set a pageāt made cercle wyse/& in the sommet or toppe therof was set a chyld of wonderfull beaute, apparayled lyke a kyng. Upō whose ryght hand satte lady Mercy, & vpon the lefte hande lady Trouth/ and ouer them stode dame Clennesse embrasyng the kynges trone. Then before the kynge stode two iudges & viii. sergeauntes of the coyfe. And dame Clennesse had thys speche to ꝑ vi. Henry the kynge.

Lo by the sentence of prudent Salomon,
Mercy and ryght preseruyn euery kynge.
And I Clennesse obserued by reason,
Kepe his trone from myschyefe and fallynge,
And maketh it stronge with longe abydynge.
So I conclude that we ladyes thre,
A kynge preserue in longe prosperite.

And Dauyd sayd, the psalme beryth wytnesse/
Lorde god thy dome thou to the kynge/
And gyue to hym thy trouth and ryghtwysnesse,
The kynges sonne here on erth synynge.
And thus declared he by his wrytynge
That kynges and prynces should about thē drawe,
Folke that ben trewe and well lerned in lawe.

After hys speche thus declared/ ꝑ kynge rode forth a quycker pase tyll he came vnto the conduyt in Chepe. where were ordeyned dyuers welles as ꝑ welle of mercy, ꝑ welle of grace, and the welle of ppte. And at euery welle a lady standynge, that mynystred the water of euery welle to such as wold aske it/and that water was turned into good wyne.

About these welles were sette dyuers trees wyth flourysshynge leues and fruytes, as orenges, almandes pomegarnardes, olyues, lymones, dates, pepys, quynces, blaūdereles, peches, & other more comon fruytes, as costardes, wardēs pomewardōs,

tycar-

rycardōs, dampſyns, and plūmes, wyth other fruytes longe to reherſe/ ꝑ which were ſo cūnyngly wrought, that to many they appered naturall trees growynge.

In the bordour of thys delicious place whych was named Paradyſe, ſtode two forgrowen faders, reſembiynge Enocke and Helyas/the whych hadde thys ſayenge to the kynge.

Enoch ſyrſte with a benygne chere,
Prayed god to vpholde his proſperite/
And that none enemyes haue of the power/
Nor that no chylde of falſe iniquyte,
Haue power to pertube thy ſeiyeyte.
Thus olde Enoch to proceſſe can well tell,
Prayed for the kynge as he ſtode by the welle.

After Helias with his lokkys hore,
Sayde well deuoutely lokynge on the kynge/
God conſerue the and kepe euermore,
And make the bleſſed here on erth lywynge
And preſerue the in all maner thynge,
And ſpecyall amonge kynges all,
In enemyes handes that thou neuer fall.

And that ſpeche fynyſhed/ ꝑ kyng rode forthe a lytell forther. And there was ordeyned a tower garnyſhed wyth the armys of Englande and of Fraunce. Thys tower was wonderfull to beholde/for there was ſhewed in order the tytle whyche the kynge hadde vnto the crowne of Fraunce. And vpryght by thys tower ſtode.ii. grene trees artifycyally wyth grene leuys garnyſhed and wrought/that one berynge the genelogy of ſaynte Edward, and that other of ſaynt Lewys/and garnyſhed with leopardes and flourdelyces. And ouer theſe.ii. foreſayde trees was ordeyned the thyrde/whyche was made the forthe ſpryng of Jeſſe/ wherin was ſhewed the genelogy of our bleſſed lady ſette out in moſte curyous wyſe. And vpō the front of thys tower were wrytten theſe verſes folowynge.

By theſe.ii. trees whiche here grewe vpright,
From ſayne Edwarde & alſo ſent Lowys/
The rote I take palpable to eche ſyght,
Conueyed by lyne from kynges of great pryce,
Whiche ſome bare Leopardes, & ſom flourdelyce/
Armys excellent of honour haue no lacke,
Which the.vi. Herry may now bere on his backe,

As in degre of iuſt ſucceſſyowne,
As olde cronicles truely determine/
Vnto this kyng is now diſcended downe,
From eyther partye right as any lyne.
Vpon whoſe hede now freſhely doth ſhyne,
Two ryche crownes moche ſouerayne & pleſaūce
To bringe in peas betwene Englande & Fraūce.

Than from thys the kyng paſſed on tyll he came at the cōduyt at Paulys gate/ where was pyght a celeſtyall trone/ and therein was ſette a perſonage of the Trinyte, wyth a multytude of aungels playenge and ſyngynge vpon all inſtrumentes of muſyk. And vpon the front of ꝑ ſayd trone, was wrytten theſe verſes or balades folowynge/the whych were ſpoken by the father vnto the kyng.

To you my aungels this precept ye aſſure,
This prince that is ſo yonge & tender of age,
That ye entende & do your beſy cure,
To kepe & ſaue hym from all maner damage,
In hys lyfe here duryng all his age,
That his renowne may ſprede & ſhyne ferre,
And of his two realmes to ceaſe the mortal warre.

And I will ferther as I ſhewe to hym here,
Fulfyll hym with ioye & worldly habundaunce/
And with lengthe of many a holſome yere,
I ſhall comfort & helpe with all pleſaunce/
And of his lieges to haue faythfull obeyſſaunce/
And alſo multiply & encreaſe his lyne,
And cauſe his nobles thorugh the worlde ſhyne.

And thys done he entred the churcheyarde/ where he was mette wyth proceſſyon of the deane & the chanōs of Paulys. wyth whome alſo

Hen 6

also in pontificalibus came the archbysshop of Cauntorbury and thaūcellor of Englande, with the bysshop of Lyncolne, of Bathe, of Salysbury, of Norwyche, of Ely, & of Rochestre/ the whiche so conueyed hym into the churche, and there made his oblacyons. And that done he toke agayne his stede at the west dore of Paules, and so rode forth vnto westmynster/ where agayne he was of the abbot & couent receyued with processyon and by them cōueyed vnto saynt Edwardes shrine, and there taryed a whyle Te deum was songe in the Quyer. And that fynysshed/ he was of his lordes conueyed vnto his palays. And than the mayre with his cytezyns returned ioyously to London.

Than vpon the saterday folowynge beynge the.xxiii.day of Februarii/ the mayre and aldermen rode vnto the kyng, and presented hym with an hamper of golde, & therin a thousande poūde of fayre nobles / for the whiche the kynge yelded vnto them louynge thankes.

This yere also by reason of ỳ sowdyours of Calays, a restraynte was made there of the wolles / for they were nat cōtēt of theyr wages. wherfore the regent of Fraūce beynge thā Capytayne of Calays, came downe thyder in the easter weke. At whiche tyme beynge the wednesdaye in the sayde weke, many sowdyours were arested and put in warde. And whan he had so done, he rode to Tyrewyn/ & there by the meanes of the bysshop of Tyrewyn, he maried ỳ erle of saint Paules doughter / and shortly after returned to Calays, and caused the sayde sowdyours to be enquyred of/ and fynally .iiii. of them were demed to dye. whiche .iiii. ỳ is to say Johan Waddely, Johan Lundaye, Thomas Palmer, and Thomas Talbot, were beheded at Calays the.xi.day of Juny. And an hundreth and.x. sowdyours were banysshed the towne/ ouer syx score banysshed before that tyme. And vpon mydsomer euen folowynge, the sayd lorde regent with his newe spouse came vnto London/ and so taryed in Englande tyll the later ende of August.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxxii.

Johan Olney.

Johan Parneys Fysshmonger.

Johan Pachdysley.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxxiii.

Anno.xi.

IN this.xi.yere after some wryters / was by the auctorite of pope Martyn the.v. of that name, ỳ cōsayl of Basyle gadered. During the whiche, the heretykes of Prage otherwyse called of Bohemy or Beme were somoned thyder. The whiche vnder a suerte or sauf cōduyte, sent thyder for thē with other, an Englysshe Clerke named mayster Peter a renegate. The whiche defended so stysly theyr erronyous opynyons, that they returned without reconsylyacyon. Thus hāgynge this cōsayll, pope Martyn dyed / & for hym was chosen Eugeny the fourth. The whi che beyng admytted, demeaned hym so nycely in the begynnynge, that he was put out of Rome/ & dyuers pryn tes toke partye agayne hym, in suche wyse that he was lykely to be deposed. But after he bare hym so sadly, ỳ he recouered such as he had loste, & contynued the see by the space of.xvi. yeres / and ruled so, that of some wryters he is called Eugeny glorioſus. And that is of relygyous men / for vnto theym he hadde a specyall yele

Eugeny ỳ pope.

2 Counsyle of Basyle.

and fauoure. And vpon the eyghte day of July / kynge Henry this yere beganne his parlyament at weſtmynſter, and ſo contynued it tyll it was Lammas/and than it was aiourned vnto ſaynt Edwardes daye.

And this yere in the ſouthe weſte appered a ſterre whiche was lyke to a blasynge ſterre/and of ſome it is ſo named. The erle of Huntyngdon alſo this yere was ſente into Fraunce with a warly company/and dyd ther great feates as ſaythe the Engliſſh cronycle. But of ꝑ is nothynge towched in the Frenche boke.

Anno dñi. M.iii.C.xxxiii. Anno dñi. M.iii.C.xxxiiii.

Thomas Chaltoñ.

1333 Johan Byſhley draper. Anno.xii.

Johan Lynge.

IN this .xii. yere and .ix. daye of Nouembre/the terment of the erle of ſayne Pawle father vnto the ducheſſe of Bedforde was ſolemply holde in Pawles churche of Londõ/ where the more parte of eſtates of this realme were preſent. And the .ix. day of Marche folowynge/ the lorde Talbot with a goodly company paſſed thorough the cyte of London towarde the ſee into Fraunce/ where he wrought moche wo vnto ꝑ Frẽch men, wherof the partyculers be not towched. Contynuynge the forelayd warre in Fraũce / the towne of ſaynt Denys which is within .ii. Engliſſh myles of Parys, was goten by treaſon or practyſe of one named Johan Notyce a knyght of Orleaũce, from Mathew Gough and Thomas Kyryell capytayns/and ſlewe there many Engliſſhemen and many they toke pryſoners. But ſoone after the ſayde capytaynes with ſtrengthe taken to theym of the Paryſyens and other, layde ſuche a ſtronge ſyege rounde aboute the ſayde towne of ſaynt Denys, that fynally they agreed to redelyuer ꝑ towne, ꝑt they were not reſcowed of the Frenche kynge within fyftene dayes/ ſo that ꝑ ſayde dayes expyred, it was retourned to the Engliſſhemẽ. But this not withſtandynge the Frenchemen wanne dayly vpon the Engliſſhe men, both in thoſe partyes and alſo in Normãdy. Amõg whiche gaynes, ꝑ Frẽche Gaguyne bragyeth in a matyer of game, as he reherſeth to ꝑ mockage of Engliſſhemen/and ſaythe that in this yere and feeſt of Mygchelmas at a place called Fewgeri in Gupan, a ſtronge fyghte was foughten by twene the Engliſſhmen and the Frẽchemen. Durynge the whiche / one named Booſaprzeſt a Frẽch knyght, for fere fledde frome that fyghte and hydde hym in a couerte of buſſhes/ and there ſtoode ſtyll tyll the fyghte was ended, and the Engliſſhemen ſcomfyted and ſcared. Of the whiche two of aduenture to ſauegarde them ſelfe fledde to the ſayd thycke buſſhe, where the cowarde Frenche knyghte ſtode. The whiche whan he hadde eſpyed and lerned of theym, that the Frenche partye hadde wonne the felde/ he became ſo corragyous, that he forced the ſayde two Engliſſhemen to become his pryſoners/and ſo with theym entredde the hoſte of the Frenchemẽ, and bare a countenaũce as he hadde wonne theym in the fore ſayd fyght. But at lengthe whan all his demeanoure was knowen / he was for his feate hadde in great deryſyon, and by his cheke capytayne named

Hen. 6.

named Guyllā de Saynt Albyne pryued of his prysones.

And in this season also the erle of Arundell, whiche in Normandy had many borne hym / herynge that one Hyrus a Frenche capytayne hadde fortyfyed a stroge castell named Gerborym before distroyed of Englysshe men, toke with hym a certayn of sowdyoures, and gyrde the castell with a stronge syege / and assawted it by sondry tymes mānfully, as sayth the Frēche cronycle. But Gagwyne in his cronycle sayth, that or the syege were fully layde or the castell were fully repayred / the sayd Hyrus with his company yssued out of the castell, & gaue vnto ꝑ sayd erle a cruell skyrmysshe, in the whiche the sayde erle receyued a deedly wounde, and dyed shortly after. And that dyctory so by ꝑ Frēchemen optayned / that castell was to ꝑ hurte of the Englysshemen reedyfyed / and a place called Dyepp̄ with other also wonne from them.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxxiiii. Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxxv.

Thomas Barnwell,

Robertr Otley grocer. Anno. xiii.

Symonde Eyre. Hyr

IN this. xiii. yere and euen of saint Katheryne / began a frost that endured vnto the feast of saynt Scolastica, or the. v. daye of February / the whiche frase the Thamys so feruently, that shyp nor bote myght come with vytayle to London. wher fore suche shyppes as came this yere to Thamys mouthe from Burdeux were dyscharged there, and the wyne and other marchaundyse by theym brought, carryed by lāde to the cytie. And in the latter ende of Decembre this yere ended the parlyamente holden at westmynster, begon at Wyghtsimas terme before passed.

This yere also by meanes of the pope than Eugeny the. iiii, at Aras in Pycardy was holden a great coūsayle, for to conclude an vnyon and peas atwene the two realmes of Englande and Fraunce. To the whiche coūsayle, by the sayd popes cōmaūdment came as a persone indyfferent, Nicholas cardynall of ꝑ holy crosse, with syre Romayne bysshoppes to hym assygned. And for the kynge of Englandes partye was there assygned the cardynall of wynchester, the archebysshop of yorke, the erles of Huntyngdon and of Suffolke, with dyuers other. And for the Frenche kynge, was there the duke of Burboñ, the erle of Rychemount, ꝑ archebysshop of Raynys chaunceler than of Fraūce, the deane of Patys, with many other whiche I passe ouer. There were also as forberers of the matyer, the cardynal of Cyprys. And for the duke of Burgoyñ, was there the bysshop of Cambray, and Nycholas Raulyn the sayd dukes chaunceler, with dyuers erles and barons of that duchy. And for the duke of Bryttayne, were ther the erles of Alenson and of Barre with other / ouer and aboue dyuers oratoures appoynted for the countye of Flaundres. At whiche assemble and counsayll thus holden as testifieth dyuers writers / many great offers by meane of ꝑ aboue named cardynal of holy crosse or saie crosse, to the Englysshe lordes were offered. But as sayth Gagunus the Englysshemē were so obstinately set on warre / ꝑ reason myght not cōtēte. By reason of whiche obstinacy / ꝑ coūsayll was deferred tyll an other day.

At whiche day the Englysshemen entendynge the cõtinuaunce of warre, absentyd theym selfe. wherwith the sayd cardynall beynge dyscontented, made meanes of an entreaty of peas atwene Charles, that toke vpon hym as Frenche kynge, and Phylyp duke of Burgoyn. wherof the sayd Charles was so fayne, ỳ for stablysshynge of the peas, and to satysfye hym for ỳ murther of his father / he gaue vnto hym all the vtter boundes of Champeyn marching vpon Burgoin, with dyuers cyties, as seynt Quyntyne, Corbie, Peron, Abbeuyle, and other, with the countie of Poytyaw & lordshyp of Macon. And as wytnesseth ỳ forsayde Gagwyne/many mo thynges were vnto the duke by the sayde Charles ymysed, whiche after they? bothe dethes were broken and stode for nought. After whiche peas thus atwene them confermed and proclaymed/the sayd duke became vtter enmye to the kynge of Englande, as after shall appere. And soone after the sayd duke began his ordre of the lyle and the golden flese, and ordeyned certayne knyghtes of that ordre/and made therunto many statutes and ordenaunces, wherof dyuers were lyke vnto the statutes of the garter. And in the ende of this yere and. xiiii. day of September/ at Roan in Normandye died the noble prynce Johñ duke of Bedforde and regent of Fraunce/ and was after with great solempnytie buryed within the churche of notir Dame of the same cytie, where for hym are founded wonderfull thynges after some mẽes reporte. But for I fynde therof in wrytynge no thynge, I passe it ouer.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. xxxb.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. xxxbi.

2 Thomas Catworth.

1435 Henry Frowyk mercer.

Anno. xiiii.

1 Robert Cloptoñ.

IN the xiiii. yere & begynnynge of the same/the duke of Barre accompanyed with Burgonyõs and Frenchemen, wanne ỳ towne of Harflewe with dyuers other byllages. And in Aprylll folowynge / the sayde duke accompanyed with ỳ lorde Terruan and the mayster of the kynges chyualry, toke the towne of saynt Denys, and slewe therin aboue. iiii. C. Englysshemen/& toke prysoner Thomas Beleamounde they? capytayne with many other. And than ỳ Frenchemen assawted a towre therby called Vincen, and toke it by appoyntment.

Thã one named Notyce a knyght of Orleance, with a stregth of knyghtes drewe hym nere the cytie of Paris/and there at a house of relygyon of ỳ charterhouse ordre, lodged hym beyonde saynt Denys ouer the water of Sayn/and cõfedered with certayne cytezen of the cytie named Mychaell Laylery, Johan Frountayne, Thomas Pygacen, Johan de saynt Benoit, Nicholas Lorueyn, and Jaques Bergery, for to betraye the cytie, & to brynge it out of ỳ Englysshe possessyon. The whiche persones beynge hedes of the cytie cõuered they? purpose in suche wyse, that they turned the cõmons of the cytie vpon the Englysshe men / and sodeynly arose agayne them, and by force slewe of them a great nombre, and there they dyd take many prysoners. And as the Englysshemen fledde or saughte by the stretes, the women and other feble

Hen. 6.

feble persones cast vpon them stones and hote lycoures to theyr great confusyon/so ꝑ the Englysshe men were in passynge mysery and desolacyon. In this tyme of persecucion, the bysshop of Yorke, whiche than was named chaunceler of Englysshe men in those partyes with other/hardly escaped and toke the towre of saynt Denys, whiche as yet rested in the Englysshe possessyon.

Than the other hoste of Frenchemen herynge of this rumour in the cytie / anone drewe nere, & entred by saynt James gate without moche resystence / and so entoyed the cytye at theyr pleasure.

Than the Englysshemen beynge in the towre of saynt Denys, seynge that they myght not longe holde the sayd place agayne theyr enemies/ fyl to a treaty, and cõdyscended to passe fre with theyr lyues. The which whã they shuld passe vpon theyr iournay were divided and scorned of ꝑ Frẽche nacyon out of all mesure. And whan the cytye of Parys was thus subdued to the Frenche dominion/anone ꝑ Englysshe people that there abode vnder tyne and raunsom, were sworne to Charles the seuenth than takynge vpon hym as Frenche kynge. And anone after were wonne from ꝑ Englysshe power, the holdes named Creoll and saynt Germayne. In whiche passe tyme and season, for to strẽgthe and haue the gydynge of Normãdy/ the duke of yorke encompaned with the erle of Salysbury, and the lorde of Fawcoũbrydg sailed into Fraũce. And the erle of Yorteyñ beynge thã at Calays, made a vyage into Flaundres, and skyrmysshed with them ꝑ bordred vpon Picardy, and slewe of them ouer. CCCC, and gate a great droue of beestes, and brought them vnto Calays. And for that certaynte was had that Philyp duke of Burgoyn entẽded to lay his syege aboute Calays/therfore London and all the good townes of Englãde were charged to sende thyder certayne men wel and sufficyently for the warre apparayled. wherof London sente at theyr charge men.

Than vpon the.xv. daye of Juyll/ the duke of Burgoyn with a great multytude of Burgonyons and Flemynges appered before Calays, and there pyght his pauylyons and tentes/so that euery towne of Flaũdres had theyr tentes by themselfe. At whyche season was Lyeutenaunt of Calays syr Johñ Ratclyf knyght, & of the castell was lieutenaunte the baron of Dudley. And so that syege endured vpon.iii. wekes. In whiche season many knyghtly actes were done and exercysed vpon bothe partyes, whiche for lengthynge of the tyme I passe. Than vpon the seconde day of August, the duke of Glouceter & protectour of Englãde with a company of.v.C. sayles as some writers haue, landed at Calays/ and entended vpon the thyrde day folowynge to haue yssued out of the towne, and to haue gyuen batayll to ꝑ Flemynges. But as testifyeth all Englysshe writers/ so soone as ꝑ duke of Burgoyn was ware of the great power of the lorde protectour, he toke with hym of his ordenaũce that he myght lyghtly carry/and the other that were heuy and combrous, he lefte behynde hym. Amonge the whiche one was lefte before Guynes a great gunne of brasse named Dygon, ouer dyuers serpentynes and other great gunnes. And the Flemynges lefte behynde them a great quantyte of bere, besyde wyne and floure and other vytayle.

Caleys besyeged.

But of this vyage writeth otherwyse Gaguyne / & sayth that ꝑ duke well and manfully, as a valyaunte knyght this actes, cõtinued his syge

before Calays ouer two monethes/ And there dyd many noble actes in assaylyng of his enemyes. And after ꝑ Flemynges by reason of theyr mutmure and rebellion had refused hym, and in maner lafte hym almoſt with out company / yet not withſtãdynge he dayly aſſayled his enemyes / and after with ſuche ſmall company as was laft hym, whã he ſawe he myght not preuayle he returned into his cõtre. And ſo thus alway in all the ſayd Gagwynus boke, he wyppeth from ꝑ Englyſſhemen in all that he may the honoure/and excuſeth theyr enemyes to his power. whan the duke with his hoſt was thus fledde / the lorde protectoure with his people folowed hym into the countre by the ſpace of. xi. dayes. In whiche ſeaſon he brent but two townes / whiche were named and yet be, Poperynge and Bell/and returned to Calays & after into Englande.

And this yere was the caſtell or towne of Rokkeſborouth in Scotlande beſyeged of the kynge of Scottes. But ſo ſoone as he had wytyng that ſyr Rauffe Gray knyght was comynge with a competent nombre for to remoue that ſiege/anone he departed, leuynge ſome parte of his ordenaunce behynde hym / to his great dyſhonoure.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxxvi. Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxxvii.

Thomas Worſteti.

1436 Johñ Wychell.

Anno. xv.

wyllyam Gregory.

In this. xv. yere & thyrde daye of Januarii/quene Katheryne mother vnto Henry the fyrſte, wyfe of Henry the fyfte, dyed at Barmundiſſey in ſouthwarke / & after with due ſolempnyte brought thorughe the cyte, and ſo conueyed to weſtmynſter/ and there buryed in ꝑ myddes of our lady chapel vnder a tõbe of marbell. But whan our ſoueraygne lorde Hẽry the. vii. than beynge kyng, cauſed the chapell to be taken downe & buyldyd a newe, without the lyke ther vn to as now to men dothe appere/than the corps of ꝑ excellent prynces was taken vp, and ſet by the tombe of her lorde and huſbande durynge ꝑ tyme of the buyldynge of the ſayde newe chapell/and after buryed by her ſayd lorde within the ſayde chapell. And ꝑ xiiii. day of ꝑ ſayd monethe fyll downe ſodeynly the furtheſt gate towarde Southwarke with ꝑ towre therupon, and. xi. of the furtheſt arches of ꝑ ſayd brydge, but as god wold no creature was therwith perylſhed, that is to meane of humayne perſones.

And the. xxi. day of this ſame moneth of Januarii/ the kyng beganne his parlyament at weſtmynſter, whiche before was purpoſed to haue ben holden at Cambrydge. To this parlyament came ꝑ byſſhop of Turuyn/ and the counſayle of the erle of Armynak, wherof I fynde not ꝑ cauſe expreſſed. And after eaſter was a day of dyot holde betwene Grauenynge and Calays, for maters touchynge ꝑ kynge and the duke of Burgoyne/ where for the kynge apperyd the cardynall of Englande, ꝑ duke of Norfolke, and the erle of Stafforde, with dyuers other. And for the dukes partye, appered there the ducheſſe his wyfe, with dyuers other of the ſayde dukes counſayle. where by meanes of the ſayde perſones, an abſtynence of warre was taken for a certayne tyme in the ducheſſe name. For the kynge wolde take none appoynt̃me with

Hen. 6.

with the duke/for somoche as he had gone from his truthe & allegeaunce, that before tyme he had made with ꝑ kynge. And vpon the seconde daye of July this yere dyed quene Jane, the whiche somtyme had ben the wyfe of kynge Henry the.iiii, and before that the wyfe of the duke of Bryttayne/& was carryed from Barmundesley to Cauntorbury, and there buryed by her husbãde Henry the. viii. And this yere fell a chaunce that had not ben sene many yeres before. For al ipons dyed in the towne/the whiche had cõtynued there a longe season.

In this yere also ꝑ kyng of Scottes was trayterously murthered by seruauntes of his owne. Of the whiche traytours the cayptayne of them was named Robert Grame/ꝑ which after was with other of his company taken and put vnto moost paynfull dethe. This sayd kynge of Scottes had ben pryſoner fyftene yeres in Englande. Kynge of Scottes murdred.

Ann o dñi.M.iiii.C.xxxvii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxxviii.

wyllyam Chapman.

437 wyllyam Eliſelde Mercer. Anno.xvi.

wyllyam Halys

IN this.xvi.yere and moneth of Nouembre/kynge Henry caused to be kepte a solempne obyt or terment within the churche of Paules, for Sygysmonde the emperour and knyght of ꝑ garter. This was a man of merueylous great & worthy fame, as by the auctour of Cronica Cronicarum is expressed. After whose dethe the gydynge of ꝑ empyre fyll to Albert that had maryed the onely doughter of ꝑ sayd Sygysmonde.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.xxxviii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxxix.

2 Hugh Dyke.

438 Stephen Browne Grocer. Anno.xvii.

, Nycholas poo.

IN this yere, vpon newe yeres daye in the after noone, a stake of woode fyll downe sodaynly at Baynardes castell vpon Thamys syde, and slewe.iii. men and hurte dyuers other. And at Bedford this yere at the kepynge of a shyre day, by the fallynge of a sterer were.xviii. murthered & slayne/ beside many other sore hurte and maymed. And the last day of Aprill, dyed in Roan syr Rycharde Beauchamp called of comon fame ꝑ good erle of warwyke. This was lyeutenaunt of ꝑ kynge in Normandy, and demened hym there full well and manfully/whose body was after brought vnto warwyke, & there in a newe chapell buylded vpon the southe syde of the quyer, buryed full honorably.

This yere also was great derthe of corne in Englãd & also in Fraũce/ in somoche ꝑ a busshell was solde at Lõdon for.iii.s.&.iii.s.&.iiii.d. And in Fraũce i Parys, it was at lyke value. And there also they dyed sore of the sekenesse of Epidimie. For this scarcyte of whete in Englande in many places the people made them breed of fetches, pesyn, and benes. And after some wryters for lacke of these forsayd graynes, some poore people made them breed of Fernerotes. But yet by the prouydence of Stephen Hh. iiii. Browne. H derthe.

Hen 6

Browne this yere Wayte/many shippes were freyghte with rye out of Prusse, and discharged at London, that eased the people nere to the cytie greatly. This of many writers is named the seconde dere yere.

In this yere ended the counsayle or synode holde at Basyle, begon as before is sayde in the.xi.yere of this kynge. By auctorite of whiche cou-
Pope Eugeny depo sed. sayle Eugeny the.iiii. was deposed/ & Amedeus a duke and prynce of Sauoy, was chosen for pope in the place of the forenamed Eugeny. But yet he had suche ayde, that he contynued in Rome as pope all his lyues tyme. And that other whiche was named of his ayders Felix the.v, contynued his dygnyte in other places / so that thã arose a great scisme in ỹ churche, whether of these.ii. was indubitat pope. For some countrees vpheldeỹ one and some that other/ so that ther were alowed none of them both/ and that was called ỹ neutralytie. This scysme contynued vpon.ix.peres, the terme whyle Eugeny lyued. After whose dethe was chosen a cardynall named Thomas Sarazan / and after was named Nycholas the.v. To whome the sayde Felix after that he was admitted for Peters successour, of his owne good mynde renounced his dygnyte of papacy/ and submytted hym to the rule and obedyence of thẽ sayd.v. Nycholas thã beynge indubitat pope. And thus ceased ỹ scysme in the churche, whiche had contynued by the terme aboue specyfyed. This Felix was a deuoute prynce & sawe the sones of his sones / and after lyued a deuoute and holi lyfe, and lastly was chosen pope as before is shewed/ for the which he is of dyuers writers accompted for happy. But and he hadde not medled with the tytle of the churche, and therwith blotted his olde age/ he had after the opynyon of other writers, be named or alowed moche more blessed & happy. And this yere in the moneth of August in London, were two bawdes punyshed with wetynge of ray hodes/ & after.xl. dayes emprysonment, they were banyshed the towne and dryuen out with moste shame.

In this yere also the conduyte in Fletestrete was begonne by syr wyllyam Eliseide knyghte and late mayre/ and so fynyshed of his good dispocicion without cost or charge to the cytie. And he with syr Lewes and Joban of Elster were made knyghtes of the Bathe in the same yere.

And in this yere dyed Robert Chicheley grocer & twyes mayre of London / the whiche wylled in his testament, that vpon his mynde daye a good and competent dyner shulde be ordeyned for.xxiiii.C. poore mẽ / and that of housholders of the cytye yt they myght be foũde. And ouer that was.xx.li. destrybuted amõge them/ whiche was to euery man two pens.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxxix.

1439 Robert Large mercer.

2 Robert Marchall.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xl.

Anno.xviii.

1 Phylpp Malpas.

THis.xviii. yere vpon the daye of Saynt Botolph or.xvii. day of Juny/ a preste after he was degraded of his prestly dygnyte named syr Rychard was brent for heresye at ỹ towre hyll/ how wel in his latter day he toke great repentaunce, and dyed goddes man and in the fayth of the churche. This for wordes spoken by his lyfe that the posterne of ỹ towre shulde

shulde synke as after it dyd, & other fantastycall dedes or wordes / he of many lewde folkes was accompted for an holy man. wherfore after his dethe they came to his place of execucyon, and there made theyr oblacyons and prayers, and areted a great hepe of stones, and pyght there a crosse by nyght / so that bi this meanes a great dyscladder ran vpon the churche, & specially vpon suche as had put hym to dethe. But to cease that rumoure / cõmaundment was sent from ỹ kynge to punysshe all suche as thyder went on pylgrymage. By vertue wherof ỹ mayre and shyrefes dyd suche dylygẽce that shortly after all ỹ seking and offeryng was forclonc and layde aparte.

This yere also ỹ shyrefes of London fette out of saynt Martynes le graunt. v. persones beynge there in sayntwary / and ladde theym to the countre in bred strete, where they remayned certayne dayes. But those dates expired / they were by ỹ kynges Justyces restored vnto saynt wary. In this passetyme the warre atwene Englande & Fraũce endurynge / in a wynter season whan the grounde was couered with a myghty snowe, and therwith all a great frost hadde bat dened the pondes and dyches / the Englysshmẽ whiche laye in a stroge holde nyghe vnto a towne called Pountlarge, arayed them in whyte clothes ouer theyr harneys / and so in great nombre approched the dykes, and passed vpon the yse to ỹ walles and them scaled / and the watche of ỹ towne slepynge, toke the towne and distressed therin myche people. From the whiche daunger escaped ryghte hardly .ii. capytaynes of that townẽ named Johan de Vyllers and Naraboñ a knyghte Burgoynon. The countre about Parys was also sore vexed with ỹ rauyne of wolues, that proclamacyon was made, that euery grene or newe clayn skynne of a wolfe that was brought vnto Parys, ỹ prouost shulde gyue to the brynger .xx. shelynges or .xx. sous of that countre money / whiche amounteth to .ii. li. vi. d. sterlynge. It was not longe after, or Charles the Frenche kynge layde vnto ỹ forsayd towne a strõg siege. But it by ỹ duke of yorke & the lorde Talbot was well and knyghtly defended / in somoche ỹ one tyme they put the Frenchemen to rebuke, and were lykely to haue take theyr kyng, ne had be the soner relcous. Lastly ỹ duke of yorke and the sayd lord Talbot, for vrgent causes departed thys to Roan / and betoke the towne to ỹ rule of syr Gerueys of Clifto knyght and other, hauynge with them to the nombre of a thoulande sowdyours, But the thyrde daye after the dukes departynge / the Frenche kynge so fyersly assayled the towne, that in the ende he wanne it by strengthe, and slewe therin many an Englysh mã, & toke many pryloners. And soone after was the townes of Melcon, of Corbeyll, and of the Ebrcoule, lost from the Englysshmen. For ye shall vnderstande that sondry and many tymes ỹ townes & holdes in Fraũce were lost and ete wonne. But euer ỹ more losse turned to the Englysshe partye, tyll all Normandy were lost, and all other landes of Fraunce apartaynynge to the kynge of Englande.

Dyscryp of wolfe

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. xl. Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. xli

Johan Sutton.

Johan Paddysley goldsmythe. Anno. xlj.

William Wetenhale.

This

This.xii. yere began murmure & grudge to bꝛeke at large, that befoꝛe had ben kepte in mewe, atwene pſones nere aboute ꝑ kyng, and his vncle the famous Humfrey duke of Gloceter and pꝛotectour of the lande. Agayne whome dyuers cõtectures were attempted a farre/whi che after were ſette nere to hym, ſo ꝑ they lefte not tyll they had bꝛought hym vnto his confuſyon.

And fyꝛſte this yere dame Eleanoure Cobham, whom he was famꝛiliar with oꝛ ſhe were to hym maꝛyed, was arreſted of certayne poyntes of treaſon/and therupon by examynacion conuict, and laſtly demed to dwell as an outlawe in the yle of Man, vnder the warde of ſyꝛ Thomas Stanleye knyghte. And ſoone after were arreſted as ayders and councelers of the foꝛeſayd ducheſſe, mayſter Thomas Southwell a Chanon of ſaynt Stephyns chapell at weſtmynſter, mayſter Johan Hum a chaplayne of the ſayde ducheſſe, and mayſter Roger Bolyngbꝛoke a man exꝑte in nygromancy, & a womã called Margery Jourdemayne ſurnamed the wytch of Eye beſyde wynchester. To whoſe charge it was layde that theſe iiii. perſones ſhulde at the requeſt of the duches, deuyſe an ymage of waxe lyke vnto ꝑ kyng/the whiche ymage they delte ſoo with, that by thꝛy deuyſyſſhe incantacyons and ſoꝛcery, they entended to bꝛynge out of lyfe lytell and lytell the kynges perſon, as they lytell and lytell conſumed ꝑ ymage. Foꝛ the whiche treaſon and other fynally they were cõuycte and adiuged to dye. But mayſter Thomas Southewell dyed in the towꝛe of London, the nyght befoꝛe he ſhuld haue ben iudged on the moꝛne/as in the nexte yere folowynge ſhalbe declared.

ye haue in ꝑ pꝛeceding yere herde, how the towne of Pountlarge was wonne by Charles ꝑ toke vpon hym as kyng/wher as many Engliſſhmẽ were taken pꝛyſoners and ſente to a caſtell named Coꝛuyle. where they ſo beynge in pꝛyſon, laboured vnto the ruler of that holde, that one of them myght be ſette at large to laboure to theyꝛ frẽdes foꝛ theyꝛ raunſom. The whiche perſone whan he was at his lybertye/went vnto a ſtrength there by, wherof an aragon knyght was a Capptayne vnder the duke of poꝛke, and ſhewed to hym that the caſtell of Coꝛuyle was but ſklenderly mãned, and that it myght be wonne by polycy and ſtrengthe. wherupon the ſayd capptayne named Fraunceys in the nyght folowynge, ſette a buſſhmente nere vnto the ſayd caſtell / and in the daunynge of the moꝛnynge arayed iiii. of his ſowdyoures in huſbandmẽnes aray, and ſent them with ſakkes fylled with dyuers fruytes to offer to ſell to the ocꝛuppers of the caſtell. The whiche whan they were comyn to the gate, & by theyꝛ langage taken foꝛ Frencheinen/ anone without ſuſpicion were taken in / and ſeyng that fewe folkes were ſtyꝛyng, held ꝑ poꝛter muet whyle one gaue the foꝛeſayde buſſhmente knowlege/ ſo that ſhoꝛtly they entred and toke the capptayne in his bedde, and after ſpoyled the caſtell, and delyuered the Engliſſhe pꝛyſoners, and cõueyed the Frẽchemẽ with all the goodes ꝑ they myght cary out of the caſtell vnto Roan.

Upon the day of the tranſlacyon of ſaynt Edward oꝛ the twelfte day of Octobꝛe / vpon whyche daye the mayꝛe is named by the mayꝛe and his bꝛetherne foꝛ ꝑ yere folowynge/ that day whan the comons of the cyte after theyꝛ auncyẽt cuſtome had choſen two alderme ſuche as befoꝛe had ben ſhyꝛeffes of London and of

Myddel-

mpddelsex, that is to wete Roberte Clopton Draper and Rauffe Holād taylloure, and them presented by name vnto the mayre and hys brother than syttynge in the vtter chambre where the mayres courtes ben kepte, to the entent that the sayde mayre & hys brother myghte chose one of the sayde two suche as they thoughte moste necessary and worshypfull for the rome: the sayde mayre and hys brethern chase there Roberte Clopto and broughte hym after downe vpon hys ryght hande towarde ꝑ hall, whereof whanne certayne tayllours there beynge were ware, and sawe that Rauffe Holāde was nat chosen/ anone they cryed, naye naye nat this but Rauffe Holande. wherewyth the olde mayre beynge astonyed, stode styll vpon the stayer, and commaunded them to kepe silence/ & after helde on his waye to the eest ende of ꝑ hall,

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.xii. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.xiii.

wyllyam Cumbys.

Robert Clopton. Mayr Anno.xx.

Rychard Ryche.

IN this.xx. yere/ and in the moneth of folowyng/ the partyes before in that other yere arrested for treasō, were brought vnto the guyldhall of London, and there arreygned of such poyntes as before hen rehersed/ and for ꝑ same tymally mayster Johñ Hum and mayster Roger Bolyngbroke were iudged to be drawen, hanged, & quartered, & the wytche to be brent. But mayster Thomas Southwell dyed in the towre ꝑ nyght before ꝑ he shuld haue be iudged. Thā according to the sentence of the courte before passed/ mayster Roger was drawen to tyborne, and there hanged & quartered/ the which at ꝑ season toke vpon hys deth, that he was nat gylty of ꝑ treason that he was put to & iuged for. And the nexte day folowyng was the wytch brente in Smythfelde/ and mayster Johan Hum was pardoned & sued oute hys charter.

This yere also ꝑ lord Talbot lord sreye before an hauen towne in Normandy named Depe, & set hys ordynaunce vpō an hylle called Polret/ where amonge other engynes and instrumentes of warre he hadde deuysed a myghty towre of tymbre, out of the whyche he shotte hys gunnes and other ordynaunce, and therewyth brosyd and crasyd the walles, and wrought therby greate displeasure vnto the towne of Depe.

In this towne was capytayne Charlys Mareys a Frenche knyght

the

knyght/the whyche manfully defended the towne, tyll vnto hym wyth rescous came Johñ Notice of Dileaunce knyght wyth a cõpany of.M. sowdyours. And there after came to the rescous of the sayde towne.ii.other knyghtes named Arthur de Lõgeuyle and syr Thomas Dioynon, wyth.vi.C.mẽ. And after thys Charles whyche named hym selfe Frẽche kyng/sent thyder the thyrde rescous of.v.C.men of armys and a.M.of other sowdyours, vnder.ii.leders called Theodalde/& Guylyam Rychaupll knyghtes. The whyche rescous nat wythstandynge/the sayde lorde Talbot well & mãfully cõtynued hys syege, & assawted the towne in eyght cruell maner, so that they were fayne to call for more ayde. wherof the lord Talbot beyng ware, thynkynge that shortly the Frenchmen shuld be constrayned to gyue ouer the towne/left the gydyng of the syege vnto syr wyllyam Poyton & syr Johñ Kyppelãd or Tryppelande knyght, & after departyd. After whose departyng with in short whyle, ỹ Dolphyn of Vyẽne Lowys by name, and sonne vnto the forenamed Charles Frenche kynge/accompanyed wyth the erle of Sayncte Paule & other to the nombre of.xvi.C.knyghtes, came vnto the rescous of the sayd towne. And after he had a day rested hym and hys sowdiours he sente the forenamed Theodalde wyth a strength of.iiii.C. men for to assayle the forsayde towre of tymbre/but lytell hurt dyd they therunto. Than the sayd Dolphyn sente an other strength of.vi.C. men to assayle it/but the Englyshemen quyt theym so manfully that they slew.viii.score Frenchmen, & wounded ouer.iii.C. wherwyth the Dolphyn beynge grenously amoued/assembled the vttermost strength he myght make, aswel of the towne and other, and set vpon the Englyshe men, whiche were sore brused with dayly fyght and fewe in nombre/and fynally discomfited them, and slewe of theym vpon.CCC.and toke ỹ resi prysoners. Amonge ỹ whyche the forsayd two Englyshe captaynes were taken/and a kynnesmã of the lorde Talbotts or more derely one of his baste sones. And thus was Depe rescowed, & the Englyshmen dyscomfyted/after they had mãfully mayntayned that syege by the space of.xx. weekes and odde dayes.

¶ A fray in Fletestrete

Also this yere in ỹ moneth of August was a great affray in Fletestrete, atwene the getters of the ynnes of courte and the inhabytaunters of the same strete. whiche affray began in ỹ nyght/and so contynued with aslawtes and small bykerynges tyll ỹ next day. In whiche season moche people of the cyttie thyder was gadered/and dyuers men of bothe partyes were slayne and many hurte. But lastly by the presence & dyscretyon of ỹ mayer and shyrefes this affraye was appesed. Of the whiche was chyefe occasyoner a man of Clyfforde ynne named Herbotell.

In this yere also, by certayne ambassadours ỹ were sente out of Englãd into Gyron/a maryage was cõcluded in the begynnynge of the yere following, atwene the kynge and ỹ erles doughter of Armenak. whiche conclusion was after dyssalowed and put by, by the meanes of the erle of Suffolke. whiche kyndled a newe brande of brunynge enuy atwene ỹ lorde protectour and hym/and toke fyre in suche wyse that it lefte not tyll bothe partyes with many other were consumed and slayne, wherof ensued moche myschefe within the realme, and losse of all Normandy/as after to you shall appere.

Anno

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xliii.

Thomas Beaumount.

Joñ Athyrley Ironmonger. Anno.xxi.

Rycharde Norton.

IN thys.xxi.yere / the forsayde erle of Suffolke, whych as before is touched had forbon the cõclusyon of the mariage take by the ambassadours, betwene the kyng and ỹ erle of Armenakes doughter, went ouer hym selfe wyth other vnto hym assygned / & there in Fraũce concluded a mariage betwene the kyng and dame Margarete the kynges doughter of Cecyle and of Hierusalem as sayth the Englyshe cronycle. And for that mariage to bryng about / to the sayd kyng of Cecyle was deliuered ỹ duchye of Angeou and erledome of Mayne, whych are called the kepes of Normandy.

But the Frenche writer Gagwyne sayth in hys latyne cronycle, ỹ about thys tyme the erle of Suffolke came vnto Charles the Frenche kyng to a towne in Lorayn named Nauncy or Naũt, & ared of hym his doughter to be quene of England / but he gyueth to her no name. The whyche requeste of the sayd Charles to the sayde erle was graũted. Also he affermeth lytel to fore that season, a peace betwene bothe realmes was concluded for the terme of.xxii.moneths / whych peace endured but a whyle after.

And thys yere vpon Candelmas euyn, the steple of sait Poules church in Londõ was set on fyre by tempest of lyghtnynge / and lastly quẽched by greate dylygence and labour of many persones. But of all that there laboured, the morowe masse preeste of Bowe church in cheape was moste commended and noted.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xliii. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xliiii.

Nycholas wyfford.

Thomas Catworthe Grocer. Anno.xxii.

Johñ Norman.

THys.xxii.yere / ỹ erle of Stafford was made or created duke of Bukkyngham, the erle of warwyke, duke of warwyke, the erle of Dorset marques of Dorset, and the erle of Suffolke marquys of Suffolke. The whyche marquys of Suffolke soone after wyth hys wyfe and other honourable personages aswell of men as of women, with great apparayl of charyes and other costyous ordenaunce for to conuey the forenamed lady Margarete into England, sayled into Fraũce / where they were honourably receyued, and so taryed there all thys mayrs yere.

In thys yere was also an acte made by auctoryte of the comon coũsayll of London, that vppon the sondaye shuld no maner of thynge with in the fraunchyse of ỹ citie be bought or solde, nother vytayll nor other thynge / nor none artyficer shulde bryng hys ware to any man to be worne or occupyed that daye, as tayllours garmentes or corderwaners shoys / and so in lyke wyse of all other occupacyons. The whyche ordenaunce helde but a whyle.

Jt. Anno

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xliiii. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xlv.

Stephyn Foster.

Henry Frowyke Mercer. Anno.xliii.

Hughe wyche.

THys.xliii.yere and moneth of the forsayd lady Margarete came ouer into Englād/ and in the moneth folowynge she was maryed vnto kyng Hēry at a towne called Dowthwyke in the countre of Hamshyre. And frō thens she was honourably conueyed by the lordes and estates of thys lād, whyche mette wyth her in sondry places wyth greate retynewe of men in sondry lyueryes, wyth theyr sleues browdered and som betyn wyth gold smythes werkes in moste costly maner. And specyally the duke of Glouceter mette wyth her wyth fyue hundreth men in one lyuerey. And so she was conueyed vnto Blacke heth / where vppon the .xviii. day of May she was mette with the mayre, aldermen, and sherykes of the cytye, and the craftes of the same, in browne blewe wyth brawderyd sleues. That is to meane euery mystery or crafte wyth conysaunce of hys mystery, and red hoodes vppon eyther of theyr heddes/and so the same daye brought her vnto London, where for her were ordeyned sumptuous and costly pagētes and resemblaūce of dyuerse olde hystoryes, to ꝑ great comforte of her and suche as came wyth her, ꝑ maner wherof I passe ouer for lengthynge of the tyme. And so wyth great tryūphe she was brought vnto westmynster / where vppon the.xxx. daye of the moneth of May, that was the sondaye after Trynyte sondaye, she was solemply crowned.

After whyche feste, iustes were there holden by thre dayes continual within the seyntwary before ꝑ abbey. Of thys maryage are of dyuers wryters lefte dyuers remembraunces / sayenge that thys maryage was vnpryfytable for the realme dyuerse wayes. For fyrste was gyuen vp for her oute of the kynges possession the duchye of Angeou and the erledome of Mayne. And for the costes of her conueynge into thys lande, was ared in playne parlyamente a fyftene and an halfe by the marquys of Suffolke. By reason wherof he grewe in such hatered of the people/ that fynally it coste hym hys lyfe. And ouer that it appered that god was nat pleased wyth that mariage. For after thys day the fortune of the worlde beganne to fal from ꝑ kyng, so that he loste hys frendes in Englande and hys reuenewes in Fraūce. For shortly after all was ruled by the quene and her counsayl/ to the great dyspryfyte of the kyng & hys realme/ and to the greate maugre and obloquy of the quene.

The whych as syn that tyme hath ben well pryuyd, had many a wrong and false reporte made of her, whych were to longe to reherse. All whyche mystery fyll, for brekynge of the promyse made by the kyng vnto the erle of Armenakkys doughter/ as before in the.xx. yere of the kyng is touched as agreeth moste wryters. whyche mystery in thys story shall somdeale appere, as fyrst by the losyng of Normādy, the deuisiō of the lordes within thys realme, the rebelliō of ꝑ comnaltye agayne theyr prynce & souerayne, & fynally the kynge deposed, and the quene wyth the pryncē fayne to fle the lande, & loste the rule thereof for euer.

Anno

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlvii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlviii.

Robert Horne.

Johñ Olney Mercer Anno.xxv.

Godfrey Boloyne.

THys.xxv.yere, was a parl parlyament holde at Saynt Edmondes Bury in Suffolke. To ꝑ whiche towne all the cõmons of that coũtre were warned to come in theyr moste delectable aray, to gyue attendaunce vpõ the kyng. And so soone as thys parlyamẽt was begõ, and the lordes assembled/ſyr Humfrey duke of Glouceter and vncle vnto ꝑ kyng, ſhortly after was arreſted by the vycounte Beawmõde thã hygh cõſtable of Englande/whome accompanied ꝑ duke of Buckyngham & other. And after this areſt was executed/all his owne ſeruaũtes were put from him/& .xxxii. of the ꝓyncypall of theym were alſo put vnder areſt, & ſente vnto dyuers ꝓyſons/wherof aroſe a great murmour amonge the people.

Than thus cõtynuyng thys parlyament, wythin.vi. dayes after the duke was arreſted, he was founde dede in hys bedde beynge the .xxiii. daye of Febꝛuary. Of whoſe murdꝛe dyuers repoꝛtes ar made, whyche I paſſe ouer.

Than hys coꝛps was layd oppn ꝑ all mẽ myght ſe hym, but no woyde was founde on hym. Of the honourable fame of thys man, a longe ſtyle I myght make, of ꝑ good rule that he kepte thys lande in, durynge the none age of the kynge/and of hys honourable houſholde & libertye which paſſed all other befoꝛe hys tyme/and trewe of hys allegeaunce that no mã coude with ryght accuſe hi, but malycyous perſones whych hys gloꝛious honour & fame lafte nat to malygne agayne hym, tyll he were put fꝛome all woꝛdly rule/ and ſpecyally foꝛ it was thought, that durynge hys lyfe he wolde withſtãde the deſpuery of Angeou & Mayne befoꝛe ꝓpmyſed. Thys foꝛ hys honourable and lyberall demeanure was ſurnamed the good duke of Glouceter. Than after he had lyen oppn a ſeaſon ꝑ all men myght be aſſured of hys dethe/ the coꝛps was honourably ꝓouided foꝛ and ſo cõueyed vnto Saynt Albonys, & there buryed were vnto the ſhꝛyne of Saynt Albone/ to whoſe ſoule god be mercyfull Amen.

And whan this noble ꝓynce was thus enteryd/ fyue perſones of hys houſholde, that is to ſaye, ſyr Roger Chamberlayne knyght, Myddelton Herbarde, & Arthur eſquyers, & one Richarde Medã yeman, were ſente vnto Londõ/& there arayned and iuged to be dꝛawẽ, hãged, and quartered. Of the whych ſentẽce dꝛawyng & hãgynge were put in execucio. But whã they were cut downe to be quartered/ ꝑ Marquys of Suffolke there beyng ꝓſẽt, ſhewed ꝑ kynges chatour foꝛ thẽ/& ſo were deliuered to the great reioyſyng of ꝑ multytude of ꝑ people there beyng ꝓſent. But foꝛ thys the grudge & murmour of ꝑ people ceaſed nat agayne the Marquys of Suffolke, foꝛ the deth of the good duke of Glouceter/ of whoſe murdꝛe he was ſpecyally ſuſpected.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlviii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlviii.

wyllyam Abꝛaham.

Johñ Gedney Dꝛaper. Anno.xxvi

Thomas Scot.

IN thys.xxbi.yere after concor-daūce of moste wryters or mere there about/ỹ.xxiii.scisme of ỹ church ceased, that before had cōtynued betwene Eugeny the.iiii.& Felix the.v. vpon.xvi.yeres.

Thys scisme as before is touched, began by reason of the deposycyō of the sayde Eugeny at the coūsayll of Basile, for that that he wolde nat observe the decrees before made in the coūsayll of Cōstaūce, & other causes to hym layde. But yet that deposyng natwythstandynge/ therfore he cōtynued pope by the terme of.xiiii.yeres after. And the sayde Felix at the sayd coūsayll admitted in lyke maner, cōtynued as pope by all that sayde season/ lyke as before to you I haue shewed in the.xvii.yere of thys kynge.

And as now by exortacyon of cryſten prynces, as the kynge of England, whose messangers in ỹ behalfe were the bysshoppe of Norwyche, and the lord of saint Johns, & other prynces/ the sayd pope Felix to sette a perfyte vnyon in the churche, in thys yere of hys owne voluntē resigned hys auctoryte of papacy, and submytted hym vnto the obedience of Nicholas the.v. of that name/ nat wythstandynge that the sayde Felix was a man of great byrthe, & allied to the more parte of all cryſten prynces. And thys Nycholas a mā of lowe byrthe, & of vnknowē kynred wythin the cyte of Jeane.

Than was Felix made legate of Fraunce & cardynal of Sauoye/ and lyued after a blessed & holy lyfe & so ended. And as some wryters testifye, god for hym hath shewed dyuers myracles syns he dyed. And for thys scysme thus graciously was ended/ a verysyfyer made thys verse following.

¶ Lux fuit mundo, cessit Felix Nicholao.

The whych verse is thus to meane in Englysshe.

¶ Lyght into the worlde now dothe sprynge and shyne.

¶ For Felix vnto Nicholas all freely doth resyne.

Also as testifieth Gaguyne & also some englysshe wryters, ỹ treuys betwene Englād & Fraūce cōtynuyng/ a knyght of ỹ Englysh partie named syr Fraūceys Arrogonoyse, toke a town vpō the borders of Normādy belōgyng vnto ỹ duke of Bryttayne. For ỹ which he cōplayned hym vnto Charles the Frēch kyng/ & he at the sayd dukes request sent vnto ỹ kyng of Englād Johñ Hanart & Guyllim Cōsynot knyghtes, to are restitucyō of ỹ harme. The whych were answered of ỹ kynges coūsayll, ỹ the dede was ryght displeasaūt vnto ỹ kyng/ & that ỹ sayd syr Fraūceys had enterprysed ỹ fayt of his owne presūpcion & nothyng wyth the kyng; mynde or pleasure. Thā after this answere thus made/ it was agreed by the duke of Somerset thā lieutenaūt vnder the kyng in Normādy, ỹ a comynycacyō for thys matyer shulde be hadde at a towne named Louers. To the which place at the day assygned apperyd & came certayne persones for both partyes/ where they so beyng occupyed, a trayne was cōpassed by the Frenchmē to take frō ỹ Englysshmen a strōg town or hold named Pout all Arche, wherof the maner was thys.

A Frenche man or Norman beynge a carter, whyche dayly vsed to entre thys towne wyth vytayll and other lodynge of hys carte/ sensyng the negligence of the Englysshemen, howe lyttell hede they toke vnto the watche of the towne, warned a Frenche capytayne named Floquet/ annd sayde that wyth lytell helpe that town wolde be goten. For expedycyō wherof, thys Floquet

wyth

wyth other couenaunted wyth the sayd carter to bryng about theyr purpose/ & ordeyned vnto hym .ii. hardy lowdyours of Frenchemē, whyche bare in theyr neckes .ii. carpēter axes to shewe that they were carpenters. And after agremēt made among thē, how they shuld entre into the towne, & where they shulde mete the carter, whych after hys olde custome entred the gates wythout suspycyon / and soone after wyth his axe in his necke came by one lowdyour, & in a whyle after that other/ & so wyth lytell questyonyng to them made, passed ỳ gates/ and so lastly vnto the house of ỳ carter before appoynted, & there kept them secrete tyll nyght was comyn knowynge well that the hoste of the hous was enemy to Englysshemen, for an iniury to hym of an Englysshe man before done, & shewed to hym all theyr counsayll. The whyche promysed to them all the assystence & ayde that he myght make. In thys nyghtes passe tyme for the furtheraunce of thys purpose/ the lord of Bressy with a chosen company of knyghtes lodged hym in a bullhemēt nere vnto ỳ towne towarde the gate of saint Andrewe/ & the forenamed Floquet lodged hym wyth an other chosen company vnder the parte of the towne whych is toward Louers, beig with hym sir Iamys deClermont and other men of name. These ordenaunces & prouysyons thus ordeyned for/ the forenamed carter with his .ii. lowdyours forenamed in the syrynge of the mornynge, as in the moneth of Octobre, came erely vnto ỳ gate with hys carte, & called the porter by name in fayre maner to oppn ỳ gate, & promysed to hym a rewarde for hys labour. The porter knowyng well the carter, & takyng lytell regarde to the other .ii. whyche came with hym/ opened the gate, and sent an other fel ow of hys to oppn the former gate. whan the fyrste was opened / the carter set hys carte in the selfe gate, & drewe to hys purs to gyue to the porter hys reward before ymysed. And as he tolde the money into hys hād/ of a falshode he let part of the money fall vpon the grounde. The whych whyle the porter stouped to take vp / the carter wyth his dagger or other weppn gaue such a stroke vnto ỳ porter, ỳ he ne spake nor cryed after. And so soone as this myschyefe was don/ so soon was the other porter slayn of ỳ .ii. lowdours. And ỳ done, one of the cā forth of ỳ gates & gaue a sygne vnto the lorde of Bressy/ whyche forthwith entred the towne, & toke & slewe all suche as to them made resystēce/ & wāne in shorte whyle ỳ castell as the towne, & slewe therin moche people, and toke many prysoners. Amonge the whyche as sayeth Gagwyne, the lorde Faconbrydge as rayptayne of that towne was there taken prysoner. whan this towne was thus won by the cautele of the Frenchemē, & the terme of the trewis was nat yet expyred/ thā was labour made vnto the French kynge for restytucyon of thys towne and other wronges done in wynnyng of ỳ same. To the whyche it was answered, that yf the Englysshemen wolde restore the towne of Fogyers wyth other harmys there done / that than the Frenchemen shulde restore thys towne wyth the other harmys. For treaty wherof a daye of metyng was apoynted at a place called Bon port/ where the tyme was spente in vayne of bothe partyes/ so that of ỳ metyng came none effecte.

Of the takynge of thys sayde towne of Fogyers ensuyed moche harme to the Englysshmen/ for this was the occasyon, by the whyche the Frenchemen after gatte all Normandy.

Ji. iii. Anno

IN thys.xxbi. yere after concoꝛ-daūce of moste wꝛyters oꝛ mere there about/ þ. xxiii. scisme of þ church ceased, that bekoꝛe had cõtynued be-twene Eugeny the.iiii. & Felix the. v. vpon. xbi. yeres.

Thys scisme as bekoꝛe is touched, began by reason of the depoſycyõ of the sayde Eugeny at the coũsayll of Basile, foꝛ that that he wolde nat ob serue the decrees bekoꝛe made in the coũsayll of Cõstaũce, & other cauſes to hym layde. But yet that depoſyng natwythstandynge/ perfoꝛce he cõtyn-ued pope by the terme of. xiiii. yeres after. And the sayde Felix at the sayd coũsayll admitted in lyke maner, cõ-tynued as pope by all that sayde sea-son/ lyke as bekoꝛe to you Jhaue she-wed in the. xbii. yere of thys kynge. And as now by exoꝛtacyon of cryſten pꝛynces, as the kynge of England, whoſe meſſangers in þ behalfe were the byſſhoppe of Noꝛwyche, and the loꝛd of saint Johns, & other pꝛinces/ the sayd pope Felix to sette a perſyte vnyon in the churche, in thys yere of hys owne volũte reſigned hys aucto-rytte of papacy, and ſubmytted hym vnto the obediẽce of Nicholas the. v. of that name/ nat wythſtandynge that the sayde Felix was a man of great byꝛthe, & allied to the moꝛe par-te of all cryſten pꝛynces. And thys Nycholas a mã of lowe byꝛthe, & of vnknowē kynred wythin the cyte of Jeane.

Than was Felix made legate of Fraunce & cardynal of Sauoye/ and lyued after a bleſſed & holy lyfe & so ended. And as some wꝛyters teſtifye, god foꝛ hym hath shewed dyuers mi-racles syns he dyed. And foꝛ thys ſcysme thus gracyouſly was ended/ a verſyfyer made thys verſe folo-wynge.

The whych verſe is thus to mea-ne in Engliſſhe.

CLyght into the woꝛlde now bothe ſpꝛynge and shyne.

CFoꝛ Felix vnto Nicholas all frely doth reſyne.

Also as teſtifieth Gaguyne & also some engliſſhe wꝛyters, þ treẅys be-twene Englãd & Fraũce cõtynuyng/ a knyght of þ Engliſh partie named ſyꝛ Fraũceys Arrogonoyſe, toke a towne vpõ the boꝛders of Noꝛmãdy beloꝛgyng vnto þ duke of Bꝛytayne. Foꝛ þ which he cõplayned hym vnto Charles the Frẽch kyng/ & he at the sayd dukes requeſt sent vnto þ kyng of Englãd Johñ Hanart & Guyllm Cõſynot knyghtes, to are reſtitucyõ of þ harme. The whych were anſwe-red of þ kynges coũsayll, þ the dede was cyght diſpleasaũt vnto þ kyng/ & that þ sayd ſyꝛ Fraũceys had enter pꝛyſed þ layt of his owne pꝛeſũpcion & nothyng wyth the kyng; mynde oꝛ pleſure. Thã after this anſwere thus made/ it was agreed by the duke of Somerſet thã lieutenaũt vnder the kyng in Noꝛmãdy, þ a compnycacyõ foꝛ thys matyer ſhulde be hadde at a towne named Louers. To the which place at the day aſſygned apperyd & came certayne perſones foꝛ both par tyes/ where they so beyng occupyed, a trayne was cõpaſſed by the French mẽ to take frõ þ Engliſhmen a ſtrõg town oꝛ hold named Doũt all Arche, wherof the maner was thys.

A Frenche man oꝛ Noꝛman be-yng a carter, whyche dayly vſed to entre thys towne wyth bytayll and other lodynge of hys carte/ ſeynge the negligence of the Eng-gliſſhemen, howe ylttell hede they toke vnto the watche of the towne, warned a Frenche capytayne named Floquet/ annd sayde that wyth ly-tell helpe that town wolde be goten. Foꝛ expedycyõ wherof, thys Floquet

wyth

¶ Lux fuſit mundo, ceſſit Felix Nicholao.

wyth other couenaunted wyth the sayd carter to bryng about theyr purpose/& ordeyned vnto hym.ii. hardy lowdpours of Frenchemē, whyche bare in theyr neckes.ii.carpēter axes to shewe that they were carpenters. And after agreemēt made among thē, how they shuld entre into the towne, & where they shulde mete the carter, whych after hys olde custome entred the gates wythout suspycyon/ and soone after wyth his axe in his necke came by one lowdpour, & in a whyle after that other/& so wyth lytell questyonyng to them made, passed ꝑ gates/and so lastly vnto the house of ꝑ carter before appoynted, & there kept them secrete tyll nyght was comyn knowynge well that the hoste of the hous was enemy to Englysshemen, for an iniury to hym of an Englysshe man before done, & shewed to hym all theyr counsayll. The whyche promysed to them all the allyaunce & ayde that he myght make. In thys nyghtes passe tyme for the furtherance of thys purpose/the lord of Bretty with a chosen company of knyghtes lodged hym in a bullhemēt nere vnto ꝑ towne towarde the gate of saint Andrewe/ & the forenamed Floquet lodged hym wyth an other chosen company vnder the parte of the towne whych is toward Auuers, brig with hym syr Iamys deClermont and other men of name. These ordenaunces & prouysyons thus ordeyned for/ the forenamed carter with his.ii.lowdpours forenamed in the sprynge of the mornynge, as in the moneth of October, came erely vnto ꝑ gate with hys carte, & called the porter by name in fayre maner to oppn ꝑ gate, & promysed to hym a reward for hys labour. The porter knowyng well the carter, & takyng lytell regarde to the other.ii. whyche came with hym/opened the gate, and sent an other felow of hys to oppn the former gate. whan the tyrlle was opened / the carter set hys carte in the selfe gate, & drewe to hys purs to gyue to the porter hys reward before promysed. And as he tolde the money into hys hād/ of a fallshode he let part of the money fall vpon the grounde. The whych whyle the porter stouped to take vp / the carter wyth his dagger or other weppn gaue such a stroke vnto ꝑ porter, ꝑ he ne spake nor eryed after. And so soone as this myschyefe was don/ so soon was the other porter slayn of ꝑ.ii. lowdpours. And ꝑ done, one of the ca toyth of ꝑ gates & gaue a sygne vnto the lorde of Bretty/ whyche forthwith entred the towne, & toke & slewe all suche as to them made resystēce/ & wāne in short whyle ꝑ castell as the towne, & slewe therin moche people, and toke many prysoners. Amonge the whyche as sayeth Gagwyne, the lorde Facounbrydge as capytayne of that towne was there taken prysoner. whan this towne was thus won by the cautele of the Frenchemē, & the terme of the trewis was nat yet expyred/ thā was labour made vnto the French kynge for restytucyon of thys towne and other wronges done in wynnyng of ꝑ same. To the whyche it was answered, that yf the Englysshemen wolde restore the towne of Fogyers wyth other harmys there done / that than the Frenchemen shulde restore thys towne wyth the other harmys. For treaty wherof a daye of metyng was apoynted at a place called Boū port/ where the tyme was spente in bayne of bothe partyes/so that of ꝑ metyng came none effecte.

Of the takynge of thys sayde towne of Fogyers ensuyed moche harme to the Englysshmen/for this was the occasyon, by the whyche the Frenchemen after gatte all Normandy.

Ii. iii. Anno

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlviii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlix.

wyllyam Cantlow.

Stephyn Browne Grocer. Anno.xxbii.

wyllyam Warowe.

IN thys.xxbii.yere as wytneſſeth the Engliſſhe cronycle, a knyghte of Fraunce called ſyr Lowys de Bueyll, chaléged an eſquyer of Englande named Raulfe Chalõs of certayne feetes of warre. The whych to approue, a daye to theym was gyuen to mete at a towne in Fraunce named Maunt or Maunce where the French kynge at that day was preſent. But fortune to Chalõs was ſo frendely, that he ranne the Frenche knyghte thorugh wyth hys ſpere/ whereof the ſayde ſyr Lowys ſhortly after dyed. Than this Chalons lyke a charytable cryſten man, mourned for hys enemy, and kepte for hym hys obſequy as he had ben hys carnall brother. For the whych dede of ꝑ Frech kyng he was greatly allowed/all be it he was bounde ſo to do by the lawe of armys.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.xlix. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.l.

wyllyam Hulyn.

Thomas Chalton. Anno.xxbiii.

Thomas Canynges.

IN thys.xxbiii.yere / the kynge callyd a parlyaments at weſtmynſter, the whyche was adiourned to the blacke freers at London / and after Cryſtmas to London agayne. In whyche paſſetyme, a ſhyp man of the weſt countre named Roberte of Cane, wyth a fewe ſhyppes of warre toke an hole flete of marchaũtes cõmynge from the Baye beynge ladyn wyth ſalte/the which were of Prucc, Holande, and zeland, & other parties of Flaunders/and ſo brought them to Hamptoñ, and there made hys porte ſale. For the whyche pryſe the marchauntes goodes of Englãd were arreſted in dyuers places of Flaũders/as Bruges, Ypre, & other good townes / and myght nat haue the ſayd goodes deliuered, tyll they had take appoyntemẽt for to paye for the ſayd pryſe & theyr hurtes & damages.

And contynuyng the forſayd parlyamẽte/ the duke of Suffolke was areſted, & ſent as pryſoner to content ſome myndes vnto the towre/ where he was kept at hys pleſure a moneth & after delyuered at large/ the which dyſcontented many mẽnes myndes. For to hym was layde the charge of the delyuery of Angeou & Mayne, & the deth of that noble pryncc Humfrey duke of Gloucetcr. Than of thys grudge enſued rebellyon of the cõmons, in ſo moche that they aſſembled theym in ſondry places, & made of them ſelfe capptaynes, and named them Blewe berde and other counterfayte names / and ſo entẽded to haue gadered more company. But anone as the kynges counſayll was thereof warnyd, they were layde for, and taken, and putte to dethe.

Thanne the forſayde parlyamente was adiourned vnto Leyceter / whether came the kynge and wyth hym the duke of Suffolke. Than the commons of the common hous made requeſte to the kyng, that all ſuche perſones as were conſentynge and labourcd for the gpuynge ouer the duchye of Angeou and cri-

dome

dome of Mayll, myght be punisshed. Of whiche offēce to be gyltie/they accused the forsayd duke of Suffolke, the lorde Sey, the bysshop of Salysbury, and one Danyell a gentylman, with Treuylyan & other. Than to appease the cōmon hous/the duke was exyled for .v. yeres, and the lord Sey as treasorer of Englande/and ỳ other were put a parte for a whyle, & were promysed to be sent vnto the kynges gayoll or warde.

Than the duke in obeynge ỳ sentence forsayde, sped hym towarde ỳ sees syde in the moneth of Apryl, and toke his shyppynge in Northfolke, entēding to haue sayled into Fraūce. In kepyng of whiche course/he was mette with a shyppe of warre named Nicholas of the Tower, the whiche toke his shyp. And whā ỳ capptayne was ware of the duke/anone he toke hym into his owne shyp, and so kept his course towarde Douer. And whā he was comen vnto the rode / anone he caused hym to be confessed of his owne chaplayne/ and that done shyp mē put hym in a shyppbote, and there vpon the syde of the bote, one strake of his hed. whiche hed with the body was soone after conueyed to the lāde of Douer, and there lefte vpon ỳ sandes/and the sayd shypmen returned to the see agayne. And thus one myschefe ensued vpon an other, to the dystruccyon of the nobles of this lāde. And so vpon the fyrst daye of May, was this deed corps foūde vpon Douer sandes, and after conueyed to his restynge place to This yere also beynge the yere of our lordes incarnacyon .xiiii.C. and .l. was the Jubile or the plenary pardon at Rome, whiche of Englysshmen is called the yere of grace.

And this yere a towne in Normā dy named Vernoyll, was taken by ỳ treason of a Frenche baker / the maner wherof were lōge to wryte. But fynally it came to ỳ possessyon of Floquet before rehersed, to the great dystruccyon of Englysshmen. For now was ỳ trewes ended, & mortal warre was executed vpon both ỳ tyes/ & the Englysshmē vnto ỳ Frēche wrought moche myschyef dyuers wayes, whiche were lōge to wryte. But as touchyng I haue shewed to you sondry tymes/ the most losse turned euer last warde vpon ỳ Englysshe ptie. For this seasō also were ỳ townes of Nogēt & pount Indenere wonne by the erle of sayntPaule & other. And in ỳ moneth of Jusurrec-
cis in Kent
Juny this yere, ỳ cōmons of Kent assembled thē in great multitude, & chase to them a capitayne, and named hym Mortymer and cosyn of the duke of yorke/but of most he was named Jak Cade. This kept ỳ people wonderously togyder/& made suche ordenaūces amonge thē, ỳ he brought a great nōbre of people of thē vnto ỳ Blakhethe. where he deuysed a bylle of petitiōs to ỳ kyng & ỳ coūsayll/& shewed therin what iniuryes & oppressiōs the poore cōmōs suffred, by suche as were aboute ỳ kynge a fewe persones in nōbre, & all vnder coloure to come to his aboue. The kynges coūsayll seynge this bylle, dysalowed it, & coūsayled the kynge, whiche by the. vii. day of Juny had gathered to hi a strōge hoste of people, to go agayne his rebelles, & to gyue vnto them batayll. Than the kynge, after the sayd rebelles had holdē they? felde vpon blakhethe. vii. dayes/ made towarde thē. wherof heryng the capptayne, dyde we backe with his people to a village called Seuenok, & there enbatayled thē. Thā it was agreed by ỳ kynges counsayll, that syr Humfrey Stafforde knyght, with wyllyam his brother, and other certayne gentylmen, shulde folowe the chase / and the kyng with his lordes shuld retourne

vnto Grenewyche, wenynge to them that the rebelles were fledde & gone. But as before I haue shewed, whan syr Humfray with his cõpany drewe nere vnto Seuenok/ he was warned of ꝑ capptayne that there abode with his people. And whan he had counsayledde with the other gentylmen/ lyke a manfull knyghte set vpon the rebelles, and fought with them lõge. But in the ende the capptayne slewe hym & his brother with many other, and caused the rest to gyue backe. At whiche season the kynges hoste laye styll vpon Blakhethe, beyng amõge them sondry opinions / so that some and many fauoured the capptayne. But fynally whan worde came of ꝑ ouerthrowe of the Stafforddes / they sayd playnly and boldly, that except the lorde Saye and other before rehersed were cõmytted to warde, they wolde take the capptaynes partye. For the appeasynge of the whiche rumour, the lorde Saye was put into ꝑ tower / but that other as thã were not at hande. Thanne the kynge hauynge knowlege of the scomfyture of his men, and also of the rumour of his ostynge people / remoued frome Grenewyche to London / and there with his hoste rested hym a whyle.

And so soone as Jak Cade hadde thus ouercomen the Stafforde / he anone apparayled hi with ꝑ knyghtes apparayll, and dyd on hym his brygander set with gylte naple and his salet and gylte spores. And after he had refreshed his people, he returned agayne to Blakhethe/ and there pyght agayne his feld as here tofore he had done / and laye there from the nyne & twenty daye of Juny beynge saynte Peters daye, tyll the fyrste day of July. In whiche season came vnto hym the archebyshop of Cantorbury and the duke of Bukkyngham/ with whome they had longe cõmynycacyon, and fonde hym ryghte discrete in his answeres. How be it they coude not cause hi to lay downe his people, and to submyt hym vnto the kynges grace.

In this whyle the kynge and the quene herynge of the encreasynge of his rebelles, and also the lordes fetynge theyr owne seruaũtes lest they wolde take the capptaynes partie, remoued frome London to Kyllyngworth/ leuynge ꝑ cyte without ayde, except onely the lorde Scales/ whiche was lefte to kepe the tower, and with hym a manly & warly man named Mathewe Gowch. Than the capptayne of Kente thus houynge at Blakhethe/ to the ende to blynde the more the people, and so brynge hym in fame that he kepte good iustyce, beheded there a pety capptayne of his named Parys/ for so moch as he had offended agayne suche ordynaũce as he had stablysshed in his hoste / & herynge ꝑ the kynge and all his lordes were thus departed, drewe hym nere vnto ꝑ cytie. So that vpon the fyrste day of July, he entred the bourgh of Southwarke, beynge than wednesday / & lodged hym there that nyght, for he myght not be suffered to entre the cytie.

And vpon the same day, the commõs of Kent in great nombre pyght theym a felde vpon the playne at myles ende. And vpon the seconde daye of the sayd moneth, the mayre called a comon counsayle at the Gyldhall, for to purueye the withstandynge of these rebelles and other matyers. In whiche assemble were dyuers opinions/ so that some thought good that the sayde rebelles shulde be receyued into the cytie, and some otherwyse. Amonge the whiche, Roberte Horne stokfyshmonger than beynge an alderman, spake sore agayne them that wolde haue them entre. For ꝑ whiche

sayenges

sayenges, the cõmons were so amoued agayn hym, that they ceased not tyll they had hym cõmytte to warde.

And the same after noone aboute .v. of the clok, the capytayne with his people entred by ꝑ bryge. And whã he came vpon the drawe bryge/he hewe the ropes ꝑ drewe the bryge in sondre with his swerde, and so passed into ꝑ cytie / and made in sondry places therof proclamacyons in the kynges name, that no man in peyne of dethe shulde robbe or take ony thyng parforce without payeng therfore. By reason wherof he wanne many hertes of the cõmons of the cytie/ but all was done to begyle with the people, as after shall euydently appere. For he rode thorough dyuers stretes of the cytie/and as he came by London stone, he strake it with his swerde, and sayd now is Mortymer lorde of this cytie. And whan he had thus shewed hymselfe in dyuers places of the cytie, & shewed his mynde to ꝑ mayre for ꝑ ordrynge of his people / he returned into Southwarke, and there abode as he before hadde done, his people cõmynge & goynge at lawfull houres whan they wolde. Than vpon the morne beynge the thyrde daye of July and frydaye/the sayd capytayne entred agayne the cytie, and caused the lorde Wey to be set frome the towr and ladde vnto the Guyldhall / where he was areygned before the mayre & other of ꝑ kynges iustyce. In whiche passe tyme he entended to haue brought before ꝑ sayd iustyces the forsayd Robert Horne. But his wyfe and frendes made to hym suche instaũt labour, that fynally for .v.C. marke he was set at his lyberte. Than the lorde Wey beynge as before is sayde at Guyldhall, desyred ꝑ he myght be iudged by his peers. wherof herynge the capytayne, sent a company of his vnto the hall/ the whiche parforce toke hym from the officers, and so brought hym vnto the standarde in the Chepe/ where or he were halfe shryuen they strake of his hed/& ꝑ done pyght it on a log pole, & so bare it aboute with them.

In this tyme and season had the capytayne caused a gentyman to be taken named Croumer, whiche before had ben shyrefe of Kent, and vsed as they sayde some extorcyons. For which cause, or for he had fauoured the lorde Wey, by reason that he had maried his doughter/he was hayed to Wyles ende, and there in ꝑ capitaynes presence byheded. And ꝑ same tyme was ther also byheded a man called Bayly/ꝑ cause of whose dethe was this as I haue herd some men reporte. This Bayly was of ꝑ famylyer and olde acquayntaunce of Jak Cade. wherfore so soone as he espyed hym cõmynge to hym warde, he cast in his mynde that he wolde discouer his lyuyng & olde maners, and shewe of his vyle kynne and lynage. wherfore knowynge ꝑ the sayd Bayly vsed to bere scrowes and prophecyes aboute hym, shewyng to his cõpany ꝑ he was an enchaunter and of yll dysposcion, and ꝑ they shulde well knowe by such bokes as he bare vpon hym/and bad them serche, and yf they founde not as he sayde, ꝑ thã they shuld put hym to dethe/ whiche all was doone accordynge to his cõmaundment. whan they had thus beheded these .ii. men/they toke the hede of Croumer & pyght it vpon a pole/ and so entred the cytie with the hedes of the lorde Wey and of Croumer. And as they passed the stretes/ they ioyned the poles togyder, & caused eyther dede mouthe to kysse other dyuers and many tymes.

And the capytayne the selfe same daye wente vnto the house of Philyppe Malpas draper and

and alderman/and robbed and spoyled his house, and toke thens a great substaunce. But he was before warned, and therby conueyed moche of his money and plate, or elles he had ben vndone. At whiche spoylynge were present many poore men of the cytie, whiche at suche tymes ben euer redy in all places to do harme, where suche rootes ben doone.

Thā towarde nyght, he returned into Southwarke/& vpon ỹ morne recentred ỹ cytie, and dyned that daye at a place i saynt Margaret Patyns parysshe called Ghestlys hous. And whan he had dyned/lyke an vncurteyse geest he robbed hym as the daye before he had Walpas. For which. ii. robberyes all be it that the poraylle & nedy people drewe vnto hym, & were partyners of that yll/the honest and thryfty comoners cast in theyr myndes the sequele of this matyer, and fered leste they shulde be delte with in lyke maner/by meane wherof he lost the peoples fauour and hertes. For it was to be thought, yf he had not executed that robbery, he myghte haue gone ferre, and brought his purpose to good effecte, yf he hadde entended well. But it is to deme and presuppose, that the entent of hym was not good/wherfore it myght not come to ony good conclusyon. Than ỹ mayre and aldermen with assystence of the worshypfull comeners, seynge this mysdeamour of ỹ capytayne/in sauegardynge of themselfe and of the cytye, toke theyr counsayles how they myght dryue the capytayne and his adherētes from ỹ cytie. wherin theyr feare was the more, for so moche as the kynge and his lordes with theyr powers were farre from theym. But yet in aduoydynge of apparēt peryl/they condyscended, that they wolde withstande his any more entre into the cytie. For the performaūce wher of, ỹ mayre sent vnto the lorde Scales and Mathewe Gowgth than hauynge the towre in gydynge/& had of them assent to perfourme ỹ same.

Than vpon the. v. day of July ỹ capytayne beynge in Southwarke, caused a mā to be heded, for cause of his displeasure to hym doone as the fame went/& so kepte hym in Southwarke all ỹ day. How be it he myght haue entred the cytie yf he had wold.

And whan nyght was comynge/the mayre and cytezyns with Mathewe Gowth lyke to theyr former appoynmtent kepte the passage of ỹ brydge beynge sonday, and defended the Kentyshe mē whiche made great force to reenter the cytie. Than the capytayne seynge this bykerynge begon/rode to harneys, and called his people aboute hym/and set so fyersly vpon the cytezyns, that he draue thē backe from ỹ stulpes i Southwarke or brydge fote vnto ỹ drawe bryge. In defendynge wherof, many a man was drowned and slayne. Amonge ỹ whiche, of men of name was Johan Sutton alderma, Mathewe South gentylman, and Roger Heylande cytezyn. And thus contynued this skyrmyshe all nyght tyll. ix. of the clocke vpon the morne/so that somtyme the cytezyns had the better/& thus soone the Kentyshmen were vpon the better syde. But euer they kepte them vpon the brydge/so that the cytezyns passed neuer moche the bulwarke at the bryge fote, nor ỹ Kentyshmē moche ferther thā the drawe bryge. Thus cōtynuyng the cruel fyght to the dystruccyon of moche people on bothe sydes/lastly after the Kentyshmen were put to the worse, a treawe was agreed for certayne houres. Duryng the whiche trewe, the archebyshop of Cantorbury than chaunceler of Englande, sent a generall pardon to the capytayne for hymselfe, and an other

other of hys peple. By reason wherof he & hys company departed the same nyght out of Southwarke/ & so retourned euery man to hys owne.

¶ But it was nat longe after that the capytayne wyth hys cõpany was thus departed, that proclamacyons were made in dyuers places of Kent, of Southsex, and Sowtherey, that who myghte take the forsayde Jak Cade other on lyue or dede, shulde haue a.M. marke for hys trauayle. After whych proclamacion thus publisshed/ a gétylmã of Kẽt named Alexander Idẽn, awayted so hys tyme that he toke hym in a gardyn in Susser. where in the takyng of hym the sayd Jak was slayne/ & so beynge dede, was brought into Southwarke the daye of the moneth of & there left in the kynges benche for that nyght. And vpon ỹ morowe the dede corps was drawen thorugh the hyghe stretes of the cytye vnto Newgate, & there heded and quartered. whose hede was than sent to Londõ bridge/ & his.iiii. quarters were sent to.iiii. sondry townes of Kent. & Thende of Jacke Cade.

And thys done/ the kyng sent hys commissions into Kent, & rode after hym selfe/ and caused enquery to be made of thys riot in Caunterbury/ where for the same.viii.men were iuged & put to deth. And in other good townes of Kent & Southsex, dyuers other were put in execucyon for the same cryot.

In thys yere also, in the west coũtree was slayne the bisshop of Salysbury by the commons of that coũtre. wherfore after the kyng had sped his besynesse in Kent & Susser, he rode thyder to se also those malefactours punysshed. Bysshop of Salysbury slayne.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.l.

Johñ Myddylton.

Nycholas wysshorde Grocer.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.li.

Anno.xxix.

wyllyam Dere.

IN thys.xxix. yere vpõ sait Leonardes daye or the.vi. daye of Nouembre, began the parlyamente at westmynster. And the fyrste day of Decẽbre folowyng/ the duke of Somerset whyche newly was commyn out of Normandy, was putte vnder aresh/ and his goodes by the cõmons were forwly dysporyled & borne awaye out of the blak freyers. For at this season was moche people in the cytie by reason of the parlyament/ & specially of lordes seruauntes, whyche were awaytynge vppon theyr lordes and maysters in great multytude. For ye shall vnderstande, ỹ temporall lordes in those dayes kepte other maner of housholdes & other maner of retenydour of housholde seruauntes and other nombre, ferre exceedynge that the lordes at these dayes done. where fore at parlyament tymes and other great counsayles/ the cytyes or townes where they assembled, were hougely stuffed wyth people. Than after thys cryot thys commytted/ vpon the morowe folowynge proclamacyon was made thorugh the cytye, that no man shulde spoyle or robbe vppon payne of dethe. And the same day at the stãdarde in Chepe, was a mã beheded for brekyng of the sayd proclamacyõ. And thus begõ rumour & malyce to spryng betwene ỹ lordes of the lãde. And specially ỹ duke of Somerset & other of ỹ quenes coũsayll were had in great hatered, for ỹ losse of Normãdy/ wherof ỹ chief cytie of Rouã was lost or gyuẽ vp by apointemẽt ỹ yere precedyng, as witnesseth Gaguynus

vpon

vpon cõdycyon that the duke of Somerset with his wyfe and Englysshe sowpours, shulde with suche goodes as they myghte carye, departe freely from ỹ cytie. For whiche fre passage he shulde pay vnto ỹ Frenche kynge lvi. M. scutes which amoũte to. xliii. M. marke sterlyng. And also he was bounde to delyuer into the Frenche kynges possession, all townes and castelles that at that daye were in the possessyon of Englysshemen within the duchy of Normandy. For performaunce of whiche couenauntes, the lorde Talbot was set for one of the pledges / and so by one Floquet before named all the sayd townes and castelles were by hym to the Frenche kynges vse receyued / Harflete onely excepted. wherof ỹ capytayne named Cyrson or Curson denyed the delyuery / with assystence of one named syr Thomas Iuryngham. The whiche in despyte of all the Frenche kynges power layde bothe by see and lande, held it from the begynnynge of December tyll the moneth of Januarye / and than for lacke of rescouse gaue it vp by appoynment in ỹ begynnynge of this mayres yere. For this relynge vp of Normandy, moche displeasure grewe vnto the quene and her counceyll / in so moche ỹ the duke of yorke father vnto kyng Edwarde the. iiii. with many lordes with hym allyed, toke partye agayne hyr and her counsayll / so that mortall warre therof ensued as here after in this story wall appere.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. li. Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lii.

Mathewe Phylyp.

wyllyam Gregory skynner. Anno. xxx.

Chrystofer warton.

IN this. xxx. yere ỹ. xvi. daye of Februarye / the kynge beyng accompanied with the duke of Somersette and many other lordes, toke theyr iournay towarde the marchys of walys / for so moche as he was credibly assertayned, ỹ the duke of yorke assysted with dyuers other lordes ỹ me of name, had in those partyes gathered great strengthe of people, and with them was entrynge the lande / and so helde on his iourney towarde hym. But whan ỹ duke had wytyng of the kynges great power / he swaued the way from the kynges hoste, and toke the way towarde London. And for he had receyued knowlege from the cytie, ỹ he myght not there be receyued to refresshe hym and his people / he therwith went ouer kyngstone bryge and so into Kente / and there vpon an hethe called Blente heth, he pyght his felde. wherof the kynge houynge knowlege, sped hym after / and lastly came vnto Blacke hethe & there pyght his felde. where bothe hostes beynge thus embatayled / mediacõ was made of peace by twene both hostes, For furtheraunce wherof / to the duke were sente ỹ bysshoppes of wynchester and of Ely, with the erles of Salysbury and of warwyke. To whome it was answered by the sayd duke, ỹ he nor none of the company entended none hurte vnto the kynges persone, nor to any of his counsayll beynge louers of ỹ cõmon weale and of hym and of his lande / but his entẽt & purpose was, to remoue from hym a fewe euyll disposed persones, by whose meanes ỹ cõmon people was greuously oppressed, and the comynaltye greatly enpouerysshed. Of ỹ whiche he named

for

for principall the duke of Somerset. Of whome it was fynally agreed by the kyng, that he shulde be cõmytted to warde, there to abyde & answere vnto suche artycles as the duke of yorke wolde lay agayne hym. Upon whych promesse so made by the kyng the fyrst day of Marche beyng thurs daye, the duke brake vp hys feide, & so came vnto ꝑ kynges tente / where cõtrary the former promyse made, he fãde the duke of Somerset as cheke awayter & nere vnto the kyng. And thã was ꝑ duke of yorke sente before to Londõ, & was holden somedeale in maner as prisoner/ & more streyghter shuld haue ben kepte, ne had ben tydynges whych dayely spradge, that syr Edwarde hys sonne thã erle of ꝑ March, was comynge toward London wyth a stronge power of welche men & March mẽ/ whych fered so the quene and hyr counsayl, that ꝑ duke was lyberted to go where he wolde. And so after he departed vnto hys owne countrey/ and peace was dyssymuled wyth feyned loue for a whyle.

Ann odñi. M. iiii. C. lii.

Godfrey Feyldynge.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. liii.

Rychard Lee.

Anno. xxxi.

Rycharde Alley.

IN thys. xxxi. yere/ ꝑ kyng helde a solempne feest at westmyster vpon the. xii. day of Cristmas/ where he created .ii. erles the whyche were hys brytherne vpõ the mothers syde quene Katheryne, that after the deth of kynge Henry the. v. was maryed vnto a knyghte of walys named Owayne, the whych begate vpõ hyr these forsayd. ii. sonnes. wherof that one thys sayd daye was created erle of Rychemoũt, which was named sir Edmonde/ & the põger called syr Jasper was creat the erle Penbroke. The whych lastly was created duke of Bedforde by our souerayne lorde kyng Hẽry the. vii. & so dyed. And in Marche folowyng as witnesseth Gaguyne, was the towne of Hertfleewe wonne by the Frenchmen. And soone after the cytye of Bayons was gyuẽ vp by appoyntment/ so that the souldyours shuld leue theyr armoure behynde them. And for euery woman there beyng was graũted an horse to ryde vpon/ & to euery horse mã. x. scutes to pay for theyr costes/ & to euery fote man. v. wythout more by theym to be taken. And thys yere the kynge laye longe syke at Claryngdowne/ & was in great ieopardye of hys lyfe. And in ꝑ ende of thys mayres yere & begynnynge of the .xxxii. yere of the kyng, that is to meane vpon the day of trãslacyon of saynt Edwarde or ꝑ xiii. day of Octobre/ ꝑ quene at westmynster was delyuered of a fayre prynce.

For the whyche greate reioysyng and gladnesse was made in sundry places of Englande, and specyallye wythin the cytye of London / where of the expressemente of the circumstaunce wolde are longe leysoure to vtter. Thys prynce beynge wyth all honour and reuerence sacred and crystened, was named Edwarde / and grew after to perfight and goodlye personage/ and lastly of Edward the fourthe was slayne at Tewkysburye feelde, as after to you shall be shewed.

whose noble mother sustayned nat a lytle dysclaunder & obloquy of the cõmon people/ sayeng that he was nat the naturall sonne of kynge Henry,

but chaunged in the cradell, to hyr greate dyshonour & heuynesse, which I ouer passe.

Thys yere also whyche was the yere of grace. M.iiii C.liii. Mahumet thā prynce of Turkes, in the moneth of Juny and .iiii. daye of the sayde moneth beynge the thyrde yere of hys empyre or reygne/after .l. dayes of cōtynuall assaute by his innumerable multytude of Turkes to the cytye of Constātyne the noble with excedyng force and crueltye made and exercysed, wan and optayned the dompynō and rule of the same / to the greate hynderaūce and shame of all crystendome, and enhaūcynge of the power and myghte of the sayd Turkes. Of the excedynge noumber of men, women, and chyldren that in that cytye at that daye were slayne/ I wyll not speke of, for the great dyuersyte that I haue seen of wryters. Amonge the whyche the emperour named Paleogolus with many other nobles of the cytye beynge taken on lyue, were thā beheedyd/and many a prestе and relygyous man put vnto deth by sundry cruell turmentes. After whych great crueltye, wyth many other longe to reherce put in execucyon/a commaūdement passed from the sayde emperoure of Turkes, that all chyldren beynge aboue the age of .vi. yeres as well men as women kynde, shulde be streyght put vnto deth / the whyche after some wryters excedyd the nomber of .iiii. M. Here for tydeousnesse and lamentable processe, whyche I myghte shewe in the reherssall of the abompnacyon of the moste dampnable and accursyd Turkys, by the done vnto the crucyfyxe and other images of the chyrches and temples wythin the cytye, I cease. For payne full it were to rede, & more paynefull and sorowfull to here, that the fayth of Chryst shulde in so vyle maner be dysprysed.

Constanty noble conquered of Turkes.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.liii. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.liiii.

Draper. Johñ walden.

Johñ Norman. Anno .rrrii.

Thomas Cooke.

IN thys .rrrii. yere, Johñ Norman forsayd vpō the morowe of Symonde and Judys day, the accustomyd day whan the newe mayre vsyd yerely to ryde wyth greate pōpe vnto westminster to take his charge/ this mayre fyrste of all mayres brake that auncyent and olde cōtynued custome, and was rowed thyther by water/for the whiche ꝑ watermen made of hym a roundell or songe to hys great prayse, ꝑ whiche began, Rowe ꝑ bote Norman rowe to thy lemmā, and so forth wyth a longe processe.

ye haue in your remēbraunce, how I before in the .rrr. yere of thys kyng shewed to you of the apoyntement taken bytwene the sayd kyng & ꝑ duke of yorke at Brent heth/which apoyntement as before is sayde, was soone broken and set at nought. By reason wherof greate enuye and dyscencyon grewe bytwene ꝑ kynge and dyuers of hys lordes/and most specyally bytwene the quenes counseyll and the duke of yorke and hys blode. For all contrary ꝑ kynges prompse, by meanes of the quene, whiche than bare ꝑ cure and charge of the land/the duke of Somerset was sette at large and made capptayne of Caleys, and had as greate rule about the kynge as he before dayes hadde. wherwyth not onely some of the nobles of the land grudged

grudgyd, but also the comons/whyche by hys counsayll and other thanruiers as the fame went, sustenued many greuous imposycyons & charges. Thys tyze, rancour, and enuye by ꝑ space of.xvii.oz.xviii. monethes smokynge and bzennynge vnder couert dyssymulacyon/now at this day bzake out in greate and hote flamys of open warre and wzath/in so mych that the duke of yozke beynge in the Marches of walys, called to hym ꝑ erlys of warwyke & of Salysbury wyth other many honozable knyghtes and esquyzes, & gathered a stroge hoste of people/ and than in the moneth of Apzyll toke his iourney towarde London, the kynge there thā beynge wyth a greate retynewe of lozdes. wherof when the quene and the lozdes were aduertysed, that the duke was compynge with so greate power/anone they cast in theyz mynds that it was to none of theyz pzofytes. And foz ꝑ in all possyble haste as they myght/ they gathered by the authozyte of the kynges cōmyssyons such strength as they coulde haue/& entended to haue conueyed the kyng westwarde, and not to haue encountred the duke of yozke. And foz the execucyon of this purpose/ the kynge accōpanyed with hym the dukes of Somerset & of Buckyngham, ꝑ erlys of Staffozde & of Nozthumberlande, with the lozde Clyffozde, and other many noble men of the realme, departed vpon the.xx. daye of Maye from westmynster/ and so helde hys iourney towarde saynte Albonys.

Then the duke of yozke hauynge knowlege of the kynges departynge from London, costed the countrees/ and came vnto the ende of saynt Albons vppon the.xxiii. daye of Maye forelayde, then beynge the thursday before whytsondaye. where whyle meanes of treaty and peace were comonyd vppon that one party/ ꝑ erle of warwyke wyth hys Marche men entryd the towne vppon that other ende, & foughte egerly agayne ꝑ kynges people/ & so contynued the fyght a longe season. But in conclusyon ꝑ victozy fell to the duke of yozke and his party/in so myche that there was slayne the duke of Somerset, the erle of Nozthumberlande, and the lozde Clyffozde, wyth many other honorable men of knyghtes & esquyers, whose names were tedious to wzite. After whyche victozy thus opteyned by the duke/he with honour and reuerence vpon the mozne folowynge conueyed the kynge agayne to London, and there lodged hym in the bysshoppe of Londons palays. And soone thereupon was called a parlyament and holden at westmynster/ by authozyte wherof ꝑ duke of yozke was made pzotectour of Englande, the erle of Salesbury chauncellour, and the erle of warwyke capytayne of Caleys. And all suche persons as befoze were in authozyte and nere aboute the kynge, were clerely amoued and putte by/and the quene and hyz counsayle that befoze dayes ruled, all vtterly sette a parte concernynge the rule of the kynge and of ꝑ lande. whych contynued foz a whyle, as after shall apere.

In this yere also as affermeth the Frenche cronycle, this mysery and vnkyndnesse thus regnynge in Englande/the lozd Talbot than beyng in Nozmandy, and in defendynge of the kynges Garysōs was beset with Frenchmen at a place named Castillyon, and there strongely assayled. where after longe and cruell fyghte, he with hys sonne and to the nomber of.xl. men of name and.viii. hūdzeth of other Englysshe soudyours, were myserably slayne/ and many mo taken pzysoners.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.liiii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lv.

Johñ Felde.

Stephan Foxster. Anno.xxviii.

wyllyam Taylour.

IN thys.xxviii. yere of Henry ỹ vi.certayne euyll dyspoſed per ſones beyng ſentuary men within ſaynt Martens the graunde, iſſued out of ỹ ſayde place and fraped with ſome cyteſyns, and of them hurt and mayned/and that done/reentred the ſeintuary. wherewyth the commons beyng amoued, with certeyne rulers of the cytie entred the ſayd ſayntwary by force, and pulled out the occaſyoners of the ſayde fraye, and commytted them to pryſone. Of this mater by the deane of ſaynte Martens and ſuche as fauoured hym, was a greuous complaynt made vnto the kynge and hys counſayle of ỹ mayre and the cyteſyns. For dyſcharge wherof the recorder of the citie wyth certeyne aldermen to hym aſſygned, were ſente vnto the kyng then lyeng at ỹ caſtell of Egle in Herford ſhyre/ where after the mater duly debated before ỹ kynges counſayll, they were with letter of commendacyon retourned vnto the mayre, wyllynge hym to kepe the ſayde perſons ſauely tyll the kynges comynge to London/ at whyche ſeaſon he entended to haue ỹ mater more clerely examyned.

Anno domin.M.iiii.C.lv. Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lvi.

Grocer. Johñ ponge.

wyllyam Marowe. Anno. xxviiii.

Thomas Owlgraue.

IN this yere a moneth of May/ an Italyans ſeruaunt walked thorough Chepe wyth a dagger hanging at hys gyrdell. wherof a mercers ſeruaunt that before tyme had ben in Italy, and there chalengyd or punyſſhed for werynge of a lyke wepen, chalenged the ſtraunger, & queſtioned with him how he was ſo bold to bere ſuch a warrely weppyn, conſyderynge he was a ſtraunger and out of his natyue countrey, & alſo knowynge that in his countre no ſtraunger ſhuld be ſuffered to bere any lyke weppyn. To whyche queſtyon ſuche anſwere was made by the Italyan, that the mercer toke his dagger frō hym, and brake it vppon his hede. The ſtraūger thus beyng delte with complayned hym vnto the mayre/ ỹ whyche vpon the morowe folowyng keppynge a court at the Guyldhall, ſent for the ponge man/and after his anſwere made vnto this complaynt, by agrement of a full courte of aldermen, ſent the ſayde mercer vnto pryſon. And after thys court was fynyſſhed/for rumour that he harde of, to be amonge the ſeruauntes of ỹ mercery, he with the two ſherymes toke his way homeward thorough chepe. But whan he was nere vnto thende of ſaint Lawrēce lane toward chepe/ he was met wyth ſuche a multytude of mercers ſeruaūtes and other, that he coulde not paſſe for ought that he myghte do or ſpeke, tyll he hadde cōtrarye hys wylle and mynde, delyuered the ponge man, that before was commytted by hym and his brethern to warde/ and ſo was he forthwith delyuered. Thys thus done/rumour ſprange therof lyghtely aboute the town/in ſo mych that amonge many

cyteſyns

cytesyns, it was construed that thys was done by the assent of the maysters and housholders of the mercery, to ꝑ entẽt to haue the straungers punysshed, for so myche as they toke from them greate spoynge by reason of theyr vttraunce of cloth of golde and sylkes to the estates and lordes of the realme. But how so it was vn to men of honeste/to vacabõdes and other that loked for pyllery and pyllynge, it was a great occasyon and stryrynge. And that appered well/for the same afternone, sodeynly was assembled a multytude of rascall and poore people of the cytye/ whyche wythout hede or gyde rayne vnto certayne Italyans places, and specyally vnto the Florentynes, Lukesys, and Venycyans, and toke and spoyled what they in theyr places myghte fynde, and dyd greate hurte in sundry places, but moste in. iiii. houses stãdyng in Bredstrete ward/ wherof thre stode in sayne Bartholomewys parysshe the lytle, and one in sayne Benettes parysshe, and moch more wolde haue done, had not bene the spedy ayde of the mayre and aldermen and worshypfull comoners of the cytye/ whyche wyth all dylygence resysted them, and of thẽ toke dyuers that robbed, and sent theym to Newgate. And fynally not wyth out shedyng of blode and maymyng of dyuers cytesyns, the rumour and people were appeasyd. whan the yonge man begynner of all thys busyneste sawe this inconuenyence ensue of hys wantonesse/were it by counsayll or otherwyse ferynge the sequell of the mater, yode streyght vnto west mynster/and there taried as a sayntwary man, tyll all the mater were endyd. It was not longe after or the duke of Buckyngham with iustyces and other noble men, was sent down from the kynge into the cytye/ ꝫ charged the mayre by vertue of a commyssyõ, ꝑ an enquery shulde be made of this ryot. And so by vertue of the sayde cõmyssyon called an Oyer determyner, a day was kepte at Guyld hall vpon the day of the moneth of /where the sayde daye sat for iudges ꝑ mayre as the kynges lyeutenaũt, ꝑ duke of Buckyngham vpõ his ryght hande, ꝑ chefe iustyce vpon ꝑ lefte hande, wyth many other men of name whyche I passe ouer. whyle the mayre and the sayd lordes were callyng of the panels of the enquestes at ꝑ Guyldhall/the other comoners of the cytie not beyng cõtent with the order, many of the secretely armed them in theyr houses/ and entẽded as the comon fame after went to haue rũge Bow bell, ꝫ so to haue reysed ꝫ gathered ꝑ compnalty of the cytye/and by force to haue delyuered such persons as before for ꝑ robbery were commytted to warde. But thys mater was so discretely handeled, by the coũsayll and labour of some dyscrete comoners, whyche appeased theyr neyghbours in such wyse, that all this fyry haste was quenchyd, ꝫ came to none effecte/ sauyng ꝑ word was brought vnto the duke of Buckyngham, that the compnalty of the cytye were in harnysse, ꝫ yf he tarryed longe there, he with the other lordes shuld be in great ieopardy. with whyche vntrew tidinges he beyng fered/ hastely toke leue of ꝑ mayre, ꝫ so depted vnto hys lodgyng, and so ceasyd ꝑ enquery for ꝑ day. Vpõ the morow, for so mych as ꝑ mayre had vnderstãdynge of ꝑ secrete murmur / he commaũded the comõ counsayle with all wardeyns of feryshyppys to apere vpõ the morow at Guyldhall. where by the recorder in the kinges name, ꝫ the mayers as hys lyeutenaunt, was cõmaũded to euerych wardeins, that in that after none folowynge eyther

of them shuld assemble hys hoole fe-lisshyp at theyr proper hallys/& there to gyue every cytezyn strevght com-maundemente, that every man see & entende to see the kynges peace with-in the cytye. And yf they fynde any person that maketh any reasonynge, wherby they myght cõceyue or esspye that he fauoured any gatherynge of companyes, or the delyuerey of suche persones as were in warde / that the sayd wardeyns shuld with kayre wor-des erorte hym to the beste/and with-out sygne or token therof shewynge, secretly co bryng the name or names of hym or them vnto the mayre. By meane of whych polycy & good order the cytezyns were brought in suche a quyetnes, that after that day the fore sayd enquery was duely pursued / & iii. persones for the sayde cryot put in execucyon and hanged at tybourne.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lvi.

Grocer. Johñ Stewarde.

Thomas Canynges.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lvii.

Inno. xxxb.

Raufe Verney.

IN thys yere and begynnynge of the same / the quene suspec-tynge the cytye of London, & demyd it to be more fauourable vnto ỹ duke of yorkes partye than hyrs/ caused ỹ kynge to remoue from Lõdon vnto Couentre, and there helde hym a lõg season. In whyche tyme the duke of yorke was sent for thyther by pryuey seale, with also the erle of Salesbury & the erle of warwyke / where by co-uyne of the quene they were all. iii. in great daunger. Howe be it by monyr shemẽt of theyr frendes they escaped. And soone after the sayd duke or erle went into the Northe/ and the erle of warwyke wyth a goodly companye sayled vnto Calays. And shortly af-ter were taken at Erpth wythin. xii. myles of London. iiii. wõderfull fyr-shys/ whereof one was called Mors Maryne, the secõde a Sword fysshe, & the other. ii. were whalys / whyche after some expositours were prono-stycacyons of warre & trouble to en-sue soon after. In this yere also was a great frap in the Northe countrey, betwene the lord Egremõde and the sonnes of the erle of Salysbury/ and diuers mẽ maymed & slayen betwene them. But in the ende the lord Egre-monde was taken/ & howe it was by the dome of the kynges counsayll or otherwyse, the sayd lorde Egremõde was founden in suche defaute, that fynally he was condempned in great summes of money to be payed vnto the sayd erle of Salysbury. For lack of payment whereof, or of puttynge suertye for the same / the sayde lorde

Egremonde

Egremonde was cõmytted to Newgate. where after he had contynued a certayne of tyme, he brake the pryſone and eſcapyd with thre other pryſoners, to the greate charge of the ſheryffes.

It was not longe after that dyſcencyon & vnkyndneſſe fell bytwene the ponge duke of Somerſet and ſyr Johñ Neuyll ſonne vnto the erle of Salyſbury, beynge than bothe lodged wythin the cytye. wherof the mayre beyng warned ordeyned ſuch watches and prouyſyõs, that yf they had any thynge ſtyred, he was able to haue ſubdued bothe partyes, and to haue put thẽ in warde tyll he had knowẽ the kynges farther pleaſure. wherof the frendes of bothe partyes beynge ware/laboured ſuch meanes that they agreed them for that tyme.

In thys alſo as teſtyfye the Engliſhe cronycle and alſo the French/ a nauye or flote of Frenchemen landyd at Sandwyche, and ſpoyled and robbed the towne, & exercyſed there greate cruelty. Of whych flote was cayptayne a Frenche knyght named after the French boke ſyr Guyllyam de Pomyers. And thys yere after the oppynyon of dyuers wryters/ began in a cytye of Almayne named Magounce, the craft of emprentynge of bokes / whyche ſen that tyme hath had wonderfull encreace, as experyence at thys daye prouyth. In this yere alſo the pryſoners of Newgate by negligence of theyr keperis brake out of theyr wardes, and toke the leedys of the towre, and it defendyd a longe whyle agayne the ſheryffes & all theyr officers / in ſo myche that they were forced to call more ayde of the cyteſyns of the cytye / by whoſe ayde they laſtly ſubdued them, and put ỳ ſayd pryſoners in more ſtreyght kepyng. Cronica cronicarũ ſayth that about thys tyme was ſuche an erthquake in ỳ prouynce of Napies, that byfore there were peryſhed ouer. xl. M. cryſten ſoulys. Of the aboueſayde ſpoylynge of Sandwyche ſpeketh Polycronycon / and ſayeth that ſyr Peers de Bregy ſeneſchall of Normandy, wyth the cayptayne of Depe and many other cayptaynes of Fraunce, came wyth a greate & ſtronge nauy into the Downys by nyght/ and vpon the morowe came certeyne of them vnto Sandwych, and there ſpoyled and robbed the towne, and toke with them great prayes and many tyche pryſoners/ wherby or by whych ſayenge appeteth ſome dyuerſyte bytwene the Engliſſhe wryters and the Frenche.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lvii. Mercer. Godfrey Bolepn.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lviii. wyllyam Edwarde. Anno. xxi. bi. Thomas Kepnet.

IN thys yere & the thyrde daye of December, Reynolde Pecoke than beynge byſſhoppe of Chycheſter/ at Lambyth by the archebyſſhop and by a Cot of dluyns, was adiured for an heretyke and hys bokes after brent at Poulys croſſe / a hym ſelfe kepte in mewe euer whyle he lyued after. And ſoone after, for to appeaſe thys rancoure and malyce bytwene the quene and the tother lorder/ a daye of metynge was appoynted by the kyng at London, whyther the duke of yorke wyth the other lordes were commaunded to come by a certayne daye. In obeynge of which commaundement, the duke of yorke came vnto London the. xxi. daye of

January, and was lodged at Baynardes castell. And before hym the xv. day of January came the erle of Salysbury to Londō, & was lodged at hys place called the Erber. And soone after came vnto Lōdon the dukes of Somerset & of Exetyr/& were lodged bothe without temple Barre. And in lyke wyse the erle of Northūberlande, the lorde Egremonde, & the yōge lorde Clyfford, came vnto the cytye, and were lodged in the subbarbes of the same. And the. xiiii. daye of Februarye came the erle of warwyke from Calays, wyth a great bande of men all arayed in rede iakettes with whyte ragged staues vpon theym/& was lodged at þ gray freres. And lastly, that is to saye the. xvii. daye of Marche/the kyng & the quene wyth a great retynewe came vnto Londō/ and were lodged in the bysshoppe of Londōs palays. And ye shall vnderstāde that wyth these forsayd lordes came greate companyes of me, in so moche that som had .vj. C. some. v. C & the leest. iiii. C. wherfore the mayre, for so longe as the kyng & the lordes lay thus in the citie, had dayly in harnesse. v. M. cytezyns/and rode dayly about the citie & subbarbes of þ same to se the kynges peace were kept. And nyghtly prouyded for. ii. M. me in harnesse, to gyue attendaūce vpon iii. aldermen/and they to kepe the nyghte watche tyll. vii. of the clocke vppon the morowe, tyll the day watche were assembled. By reason whereof, good order and rule was kepte, and no man so hardy ones to attempte the brekynge of the kynges peace. Durynge thys watche, a great counsayl was holde by þ kyng and hys lordes.

A good policy.

By reason wherof, a dyssymuled vnyte and concorde betwene them was concluded. In token and for ioy wherof, the king, the quene, and all þ sayd lordes, vpon our Lady day annunciacion in lent at Poulys wente solemply in procession/and soone after euery lorde departed where hys pleasure was. And in the moneth of

Folowynge, was a greate fray in flete strete, betwene the me of courte and the inhabytauntes of the sayd strete/in whyche fray a gentylman beyng þ quenes attourney was slayne.

Upon the thursdaye in whytsonweke, the duke of Somerset with Antony Rywers and other. iiii, kepte iustes of peace before the quene within the towre of London, agayne thre esquyers of the quenes/and in lyke maner at Grenewych the sondaye folowynge. And vpon Trynyty sondaye or the monday folowynge, certayne shyppes apperteynyng vnto the erle of warwyke mette wyth a floote of Spanyardes/and after long & cruel fyghte, toke. vi. of theym laden wyth iron and other marchaundyse/and drowned and chased to the noumber of. xxvi, nat without shedyng of blod on bothe partyes/for of the Englysshmen were slayne an. C. and many mo wounded and sore hurt.

In thys yere after some auctours, a marchaunte of Brysslowe named Sturmyn, whyche wyth hys shyppe had trauayled in dyuers partyes of Leuaunte and other partyes of the Est, for so moche as the same ranne vpon hym that he had gotten grene pepyr and other specys to haue sette and sowen in Englande as the same wente/therefore the Januayes wayted hym vppon the see, and spoyled hys shyppe and other.

But this is full lyke to be vntrew that the Januayes shulde spoyle hym for any suche cause/for there is no nacyon in Englande that delyth so lytle wyth spyces. But were it for thys cause or other,

trouth

trouth it is that by that nacyō an of fice was done/for the whyche all the marchauntes Januayes in London were arested and cōmytted to ỳ flete, tyll they had founden suffycyent suer tye to answere to the prymysses. And fynally for the harmys whyche theyr nacyon had done to the sayde Sturmyn & to thys realme/ vi.M. marke was sette to theyr payne to pape. But howe it was payed no mencyon I fynde.

In thys yere also was made an ordynaunce by auctoryte of ỳ kynge and hys counsayll, for the orderynge of the seynt wary men wythin saynte Martyns the graunde. whereof the artycles are at length sette oute in ỳ boke of.k. wythin the chaumbre of guylde hall in the leeke .CC. rrir. wherof the execucyon of obseruynge were necessary to be vsed / but more pyte it is, fewe poynters of it ben exercysed.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lviii.

Draper.

Thomas Scotte.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lix.

Rafe Josselyn.

Anno.rrrvii.

Rycharde Nedeham.

THys yere aboute the feeste of Candelmasse, the forsayd dissymulyd loueday hāgyng by a small threde, betwene the quene and ỳ fore named lordes, expressed in the prycedynge yere/the kynge and many lordes thanne beynge at westmynster, a frap happened to fall betwene a seruaunt of the kynges & a seruaunt of the erles of warwyke/the which hurt the kynges seruaunt & after escaped. wherefore the kynges other mepnial seruauntes seynge they myghte nat be auenged vpō the partye that thus had hurt theyr felowe / as the sayde erle of warwyke was commynge frō the coūsayll, & was goynge towarde hys barge, the kynges seruaūtes came vnwarely vppon hym, so rabbysshely that the cookys with theyr sppttys & other offycers wyth other weppns, came runnyng as madde men, entendynge to haue slayne hym, so ỳ he escaped wyth greate daunger & to ke hys barge / & so in all haste rowed to London, nat wythout great maymys & hurtys receyued by many of hys seruauntes. For thys the old rācour & malyce whyche neuer was clerely cured, anon begā to bycke oute/ in so moche that the quenes coūsayll wolde haue had the sayd erle arested and committed vnto the towre. wher fore he shortly after departed toward warwyke / and by polycy purchased soone after a commyssiō of the kyng, and so yode or sayled vnto Calays. Thanne encreased thys olde malyce more & more/ in so moche that where the quene and hyr coūsayll sawe that they myght nat be auenged vppō the erle, that so vnto Calays was departed/than they malygned agayne hys father the erle of Salysbury, & imagened how he myght be brought out of lyfe. And in procesle of tyme after, as he was rydynge towarde Salysbury, or after som from hys lodgyng towarde London/the lorde Audeley wyth a strōg company was assygned to mete wyth hym, & as prysoner to bryng hym vnto Londō. whereof the sayde erle beynge warned, gathered vnto hym the mo men/& kepyng hys tourney, mette wyth the sayd lord Audeley at a place called Blore heth / where both companyes ran together & had there a stroge bykeryng. wherof in the ende the erle was byctoure, and slewe there the lorde Audeley & many

many of hys retynew. At thys skyr-mysshe were the.ii.sonnes of the sayd erle sore woũded, named sir Thomas and syr Johñ/ the whyche shortly after as they were goynge homeward, were by some of the quenys party taken, & as prysoners sente vnto Chesshyr. whan thys was knowen vnto ꝑ duke of yorke and to the other lordes of hys party / they knewe & vnderstode that yf they ꝑuyded nat shortly for remedy for them selfe, they shulde all be destroyed. And for that they by one assent gathered to them a strõge hoste of men, as of Marche men and other / & in the moneth of Octobre, ꝑ was in the begynnyng of the .xxxvii. yere of the reygne of kynge Henry, & the later ende of thys mayres yere, they drewe them towarde the kynge/ to the entent to remoue frõ hym such persones as they thought were enemyes vnto the commõ weale of Englande. But the quene and hyr counsayll heryng of the entent & strength of these lordes, caused the kyng in all haste to sende for the cõmyssyons to gather the people / so that in shorte whyle the kyng was strongely accõpanyed, & so spedde hym vppon hys iourney towarde the duke of yorke & hys company. wherof heryng ꝑ sayd duke, thã beyng wyth hys peple nere vnto the towne of Ludlowe/ pyghte there a sure & strõge feelde, that none of hys foes myght vppon any parte entre. where he so lyeng, came to him frome Calays the erle of warwyke wyth a stronge bande of mẽ/ amonge the whyche was Andrewe Trollop and many other of ꝑ best souldiours of Calays. The duke thus keppynge hys feelde vpon that one party, and the kyng wyth hys people vpon that other/ vpon the nyght precedyng the daye that bothe hostes shulde haue met / the forenamed Andrewe Trolloppe wyth all the cheke soudyours of Calays, secretly departed frome ꝑ dukes hoste, and wente vnto the kynges, where they were ioyously receyued. whã thys tynge to the duke and the other lordes was asserteyned they were therewyth sore dysmayed/ and sperially for the sayd lordes had to the sayd Andrew shewed the hoole of theyr ententes, whych thanne they knewe well shuld be clerely dyscouered vnto theyr enemyes. wherfore after coũsayll for a remedye taken/ they concluded to flee, & to leue the feelde standyng as they had ben presente and styll abydyng. And so incontynently the sayd duke wyth hys twoo sonnes & a few other persones fledde towarde walys/ and from thens passed sauely into Irelande.

And the erles of Walysbury, of Marche, & of warwyke, and other, wyth a secrete company also departed and toke the waye into Deuonshyre/ where a squyer named Johan Dynham (whyche after was a lorde and hyghe tresourer of Englande, & so lastlye in Henry the.viii.dayes and xvi. yere of hys reygne dyed) bought a shyp for a.C.& l. markes or a leuen score nobles/ and in the same shyppe the sayd lordes went, & so sayled into Gernesey. And whã they had a seasõ there sojourned and refressshed them selfe/ they departed thens, as in the begynnyng of the nexte mayres yere shalbe clerely shewed. Uppon the morowe whan all thys coupne was knowen to the kynge and the lordes vpon hys party/ there was sendynge and rũnynge wyth all spede towarde euery coaste to take these lordes/ but none myght be foũde. And forth with the kyng rode vnto Ludlowe, & dyspopled the towne and castell, & sente the duchesse of yorke wyth hyr chyldren vnto the duchesse of Buckynghã hyr syster/ where she rested lõge after.

Anno

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.lix. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.lx.

Fyshemonger. Hohñ Plummer.

wyllyam Hulyn. Anno.xxxviii.

Johñ Stocker.

Thys yere that is to meane vpon the fryday next ensuyng Allhalowen day, after the sayde erles of Salysbury, of Warche, & of warwyke had as before is sayd refreshed them in the ile of Gerneseye/they vpō the fryday foresayd lāded at Calays/ and there were at a posterne by theyr frēdes iopously receyued. Thā anon vpon this these foresayd lordes were proclaymed rebellys & traytours/& the ponge duke of Somerset was made capitayne of Calays. wherfore in all haste he made purueyaunce & sayled thyther to take possessyon of ꝑ town. But he fayled of hys purpose/ for the foresayde erles there beynge, kept so ꝑ towne, that there he myght haue no rule/natwythstandyng that he shewed the kynges letter patētys, wyth many other straycht commaūdementes of the kynge. For whyche cause the sayd duke yode vnto Guynys, and there helde hym for a sealō. And anone as the sayd duke was lāded/some of the shyppmen, which had brought hym thyther, for good will that they owed vnto the erle of warwyke cōueyed theyr shippes streyght into Calays hauen, & brought wyth them certayne persones named Genyn Fenbyll, Johñ Felowe, Kayles and Purser, whyche were enemyes vnto the sayde erle of warwyke/the whyche were presented vnto the lordes, and soone after wythin the sayd towne of Calays they were beheded. Thys rumoure thus contynuynge/ dayly came vnto these lordes greate socoure out of Englāde. And vppon that other partye the duke as before is sayd lyeng in the castel of Guynes gate vnto hym ayde and strengthe of souldyours, & made out and skyrmyssshed wyth them of Calays many and sundry tymes. In whych assautes many mē were slayen & hurte vpon both partyes/but moste wekyd the dukes partye. For all be that the lordes lost many men/yet they dayly came so thycke to them out of dyuers partyes of Englāde, that theyr losse was nat espyed/so that they wantyd no mē, but money to mayntayn theyr dayly charge with. For remedy wher of they shyfted wyth the staple of Calays for.xviii.M.li. whyche summes of money whan they had receyued, ꝑ sayd lordes of one assent made ouer ꝑ forenamed mayster Johñ Dynham wyth a stronge company/& sent hym vnto Sandwyche to wynne ꝑ kyngs naupe than there lyenge, and other thynges for theyr nedes necessary. The whyche sped hym in suche wyse, that he toke the lord Ryuers in hys bedde, & wanne the town, & toke the lord Scalys sonne vnto the sayd lord Riuers, with other ryche prayes and after tooke of the kynges naup what shyppes them lyked, and after retourned vnto Calays/nat without consent & agremēt of many of ꝑ marryners, whych owyd theyr synguler fauours vnto the erle of warwyke. In thys iourney was the sayde Johan Dynham sore hurt, that he was mayned vpon the legge, & haltyd whyle he lyued after. Than after this iourney thus acheuyd/the sayd lordes dyd tayled and mānyd the sayd shyppes/ & sent wyth them as cheke capytayne the erle of warwyke into Irelande, to speke wyth the duke of yorke, and to haue hys counsayll for maters cōcerning theyr charge, as reentre into

this

this lande and other. where whā he had happelye ſped hys nedys, he returned towarde Calays, bryngyng wyth hym hys mother the cōtelle of Salyſbury/ & alſo kepte hys courſe tyll he came into the weſt cōtrey. where at that tyme was the duke of Exetyr as admyrall of the ſee, wyth a competēt noūber of ſhyppes well mā ned/in ſo moche that the erle of warwyke prouyded to haue gyuen batayll vnto the ſayd duke, yf he hadde made any cōtenaunce toward him. But the duke harde ſuche murmure & ſpeche amōge hys owne company, whych ſoūded vnto the erle of warwykes fauoure, that he thoughte it was more vnto hys profyte to ſuffre hym to paſſe than to fight with him. But were it for thys cauſe or for other which ꝑ commō fame rūneth vp pō which were lōge to wryte/certayn & trouth it is that the ſayd erle paſſed wythout fyghte, & came in ſauete to Calays. In thys paſſe tyme a parliament or great coūſayll was holdē at Couentre. By auctoryte whereof the duke of yorke and all the other forſayde lordes wyth many other were attaynted, and theyr lādes & goodes ſeaſed to the kynges vſe. And for the more ſurer defēce that they ſhuld nat efte lande in Kēt, prouiſiō was made to defende the haués & portys vppon the ſees ſyde. And at Sandwyche was ordeyned a new ſtrēgthe wyth a capitayn named ſyr Symōde Worū ford. And ouer thys prouiſion was ordeyned, that no marchaūt paſſyng into the coſtys of Flaūders, ſhulde paſſe or go by Calays, for fere that any ſhuld come to ꝑ ayde of the ſayd lordes. But thys prouyſyon nat wythſtandyng/comforte to them ꝑas ſent dayly out of Englād.

Northāpton felde, &

Than theſe lordes herynge of all thys prouyſyon made vppō the ſees ſyde to wythſtāde theyr lādynge, ſent out an other company vnto Sandwyche/the whych there ſkyrmyſſhed wyth the ſayd ſyr Symōde Wountford, & in the ende toke hym & broughte hym vnto Ryſe Banke, & there ſmote of hys hede. The forſayd lordes than cōſyderynge the ſtrengthe, whych they had wyth them, and manyfolde frendes & partys, which they had in ſundry places of Englād/ condyſcēded for to ſayle into Englande, & ſo to bryng about theyr entēt & purpoſe. whych was as the cōmon fame went, to put a parte frome the kynge all ſuche perſones as were enemyes to the cōmon weale of the lāde. And thys to bryng aboute, after they had ſet the towne of Calays in an order & ſure keppyng/they toke ſhyppynge, & ſo ſayled into Englāde, & landed at Douer/and from thēs hēde on theyr iourney thoroughe Kente, ſo that they came to Londō the .xi. daye of July. And after they had there refreſſhed theym and theyr people/they departed thēnce, & ſped theym towarde the kynge, which at ꝑ ſame tyme of theyr lādynge was at Couentry, and there gathered his people/ & ſo came vnto & Northampton where he pyght hys feilde. wherof the ſayd lordes beynge enfourmed, ſped them thyther ward/ ſo that vpō the .xi. day of July, bothe hoſtys there mette & foughte there a cruell batayll. But after long fyght, the victory fell vnto the erle of Salyſbury and the other lordes vpō his partye/ & the kynges hoſte was ſparcled & chaſed, & many of hys noble men ſlayen. Amōge the whyche was the duke of Buckynghan, the erle of Shrowſbury, ꝑ vycoūt Beaumoūd, the lorde Egremōde, wyth many other knyghtes and eſquyers/and the kyng taken in the feilde. After whych victory thus by theſe lordes optey-ned/they in goodly haſte after retourned vnto Loudō, and broughte wyth

theym

them the kynge keppyng hys eſtate, & lodged hym in the byſſhop of Loudõ palays. And after ſpedye knowelege ſent of all the p;emyſſes vnto ꝑ duke of yo;ke yet beyng in Ireláde/a parlyamẽt in the name of the kyng was than called & holden at weſtmynſter. Durynge whych parlyament ꝑ duke of yo;ke came vnto weſtmynſter vpõ the frydaye befo;e ſaynte Edwardes day o; the.x. day of October, and lodged hym in the kynges palays. wher of anone aroſe a noyſe thro;ugh the cytye, that kynge Henry ſhuld be depoſed, & the duke of yo;ke ſhulde be kynge. Vppõ thys this parlyamente thus contynuynge, the duke came one daye into the parlyament chaumber/& there boldely beyng the lo;des p;eſent, ſette hym downe in the kynges ſete/ & ſo there ſittynge, made a p;etence and clayme vnto the crown, affermyng it to be hys ryghtfull enheryta;ce/ & had there certayn bolde wo;des in ſuſtynence of the ſame/ where wyth all the lo;des p;eſente were greatly dyſmayed. Fo; thys, great & many oppnions were moued among the lo;des. Howe be it a ſwell dyuers of hys frendes as other, were of the mynde that he ſhuld nat be admytted fo; kynge, durynge the lyfe of kyng Henry. Fo; appeaſynge wherof many great coũſayles were kepte a ſwell at the blacke freres as at weſtmynſter.

In all whych tyme and ſeaſon the quene wyth ſuche lo;des as were of hy; affynyte, helde them in the no;th coũtrey/ & aſſembled to theym greate ſtrengthe in the kynges name, to the ende to ſubdue as ſhe ſayde the kynges rebelles and enemyes. Thus contynuynge thys vnkyndeneſſe betwene the kynge and the duke/ all be it that at that ſeaſon bothe the kynge and he were bothe lodged within the palays of weſtmynſter / yet wolde he natte fo; p;ayer no; inſtaunce ones byſyde the kynge, no; ſee hym, tyll the counſayll were concluded vppon ſome fynall ende concernyng thys greate matter / the whyche ſo continued the full terme of this mayres yere.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lx. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxi.

Gro;cer. Rychard Flemynge.

Rychard Lee. Anno.xxxix.

Johñ Lambarde.

Thys yere whyche was in the begynnynge of the.xxxix. yere of kyng Henrꝑes regne, that is to meane vpõ the eu;n of all ſayntes o; the laſte day of October/ it was condyſcended by the lo;des ſpy;ytuall & tempo;all, & by the hole auctho;yte of the ſayd parliament, that kyng Hery ſhuld cõtynue & regne as kynge during hys naturall lyfe / & after hys deth hys ſonne p;ynce Edwarde to be ſette a parte, & the duke of yo;ke & hys he;es to be kynges/ & incontynentely the duke to be admytted as p;otectour and regẽt of the lãde. And yf at any tyme after the kynge of hys owne free wyll and mynde were diſpoſed to reſygne & gyue vp the rule of the lãde, that thã he ſhulde reſigne vnto the duke yf he than lyued, and to none other / & to hys he;es after hys dayes / wyth many other maters and cõuencyõs whyche were tedious to wryte. All whyche concluſyons as than by mannes wytte myght be aſſuryd fo; the parfourmaunce of theym whanne tyme requy;ed parfyghted/ the kynge wyth the duke &

many other lo;des thã there p;esent, came that nyght to Poulys, & there harde euynsong/& vppon the mo;ow came thyther agayn to masse, where the kyng rode in p;occession crowned wyth great royalte/ & so lay styll in ꝑ hysshoppes palays a seasons after.

And vppon the saterdaye folowynge beyng the.xx.daye of Nouember/ the duke was p;oclaymed th;oughe the cytye hey;e paraunt vnto the crowne of Englãde, & all hys p;ogeny after hym. Than fo; as moche as quene Margarete accompanyed with p;ice Edwarde hy; sonn, the dukes of Somerset & of Excety;, and diuers other lo;des, helde hy; in the no;the as aboue is sayd, and wolde nat come at the kynges sendyng fo; / therefo;e it was agreed by the lo;des thã at London p;esente, that the duke of yo;ke shulde take wyth hym the erle of Salysbury wyth a certayne people, to fetche in the sayde quene & lo;des aboue sayde. The whyche duke & erle departed from Londõ with they; people vpon the secõde daye of December/ & so spedde theym no;thwarde. wherof the quene with hy; lo;des beynge ware, and hauyng wyth theym a greate strength of No;thernemen/ mette wyth the duke of yo;ke vppon the.xxx.daye of december nere vnto a to;wne in the no;the called wakefeld were betwene them was foughten a sharpe fyght. In the whych the duke of yo;ke was slayne wyth hys sonne called erle of Rutlande, and sy; Thomas Neuyll, sonne vnto the erle of Salysbury, wyth many other / and the erle of Salysbury was there taken on lyue wyth dyuerse other.

The fight at wakefelde.

& The beheadyng of sayncte Albones

whanne the lo;des vppon the quenes partye had gotten thys victo;y/ anone they sente they; p;yseners vnto Pountfreyte, the whyche were after there behedyd/that is to meane the erle of Salysbury, a man of London named Johñ Harowe, and another capytayne named Hãson/whose heddes were sente vnto yo;ke / and there sette vppon the gates.

And whan the quene hadde optey nyd thys victo;y/ she wyth her retynewe dre we to ward London / where at that tyme duryng this troublous season, greate watchys were kepte dayely and nyghtely / and dyuerse opynions were amonge the citesyns. Fo; the may;e and many of the chefe comoners helde vppon the queues partye/but the comynaltie was with the duke of yo;ke & hys affynyte. whanne tydynges were b;oughte vnto the cytye of the comynge of the quene wyth so greate an hoste of No;thernemen/anone suche as were of the contrary partye b;oughte vp a noyse tho;oughe the cytye, that she b;ought those No;thernemen to the entente to ryfle and spoyle the citye, where tho;oughe she was encreasyd of enemyes. But what so hy; entente was/she wyth hy; people helde on hy; waye tyll she came to sayncte Albons.

In the whyche meane tyme the erle of warwyke and the duke of No;thfolke, whyche by the duke of yo;ke were assygned to gyue attendaunce vppon the kynge/by consent of the kynge, gathered vnto theym strengthe of knyghtes, and mette wyth the quenes hoste at sayncte Albons fo;esayde/where betwene them a strõge fyght was foughten vppon shroue tuysday in the mo;nyng. At ꝑ whych the duke of No;thfolke & the sayd erle in the ende were chased/and kyng Henry takẽ efte vpõ the fride & b;ought vnto the queue. And ꝑ same after noone after soune wyters, he made his sonn p;ice Edward knyght whych than was of the age of.vii.yeres/wyth other to the noumbe; of.xxx. persones.

whan

whan quene Margaret was thus comyen agayne to hyr aboue/ anon she sente vnto the mayre of London, wyllyng & commaundynge hym in ꝑ kynges name that he shuld in all spe dy wyse sende to sayne Albonys certayne cartes wyth lentyn stuffe for ꝑ vytaylyng of her hoste. whyche commaundement the mayre obeyed/ and wyth great dylygence made prouysyon for the sayd vytayll / and sent it in cartys towarde Creppigate for to haue passed to the quene. where whā it was cōmyn / the commons many there beynge, whych had harde other tydynges of the erle of Marche as af ter shalbe shewed/ of one mynde with stode the passage of the sayd cartes, & sayde it was nat behouefull to fede they⁹ enemyes, whyche entended the robbyng of the cytye. And nat wythstandynge that the mayre wyth hys bretherne crayed the people in they⁹ best maner, shewyng to theym many great daungers whyche was lyke to ensue to the cytye yf the sayd vytayll went nat forthe / yet myghte he nat tourne them from they⁹ obstynat entent/ but for a cōclusyon was sayne to apoynt the reregarder & wyth hym a certayne of aldermē to ryde vnto the kynges counsayll to Barnet, and to make requeste vnto theym that the Northē me myght be returned home for fere of robbynge of the cytye/ and ouer thys other secrete frendes were made vnto the quenes grace, to be good & gracyous vnto the cytye.

During whych treaty/ bysshops cytesyns auoyded the cytye and lande. Amōge the whych Philip Malpas, whych as before is shewed in the xx. and viii. yere of thys kynge, was robbed of Jacke Cade/ whyche Malpas & other was mette vpō the see wyth a Frēchman named Columpne, and of hym takē prysoner/ & after payed. xii M. marke for hys raunsome. Thus passyng the tyme / ꝑ tydynges which before were secrete, now were blowē abrode/ and openly was tolde that ꝑ erles of Marche & of warwyke, were mette at Cottyswolde, and had gathered vnto thē great strength of Marchemen, & were wel spedde vpō they⁹ waye towarde London. For knowelege whereof, the kynge and ꝑ quene wyth they⁹ hoste were returned Northwarde. But or they departyd from saint Albons/ there was beheded the lord Bonuyle & syr Thomas Tryll knyghet, whyche were taken in the forenamed felde. Thā the duchesse of yorke beyng at Lōdon, herynge the losse of thys felde/ sent hyr two yonger sonnes, that is to meane George whyche after was duke of Clarence, and Rychard that after was duke of Glouceter, into Utrych in Almayne / where they remayned a whyle.

Thā the forsayd erles of March and of warwyke sped them towarde Londō, in suche wyse that they came thyder vpon the thursday in the fyrst weke of lent. To whome resorted all the gētylmen for the more partye of the south & est partye of Englād. And in thys whyle that they thus rested at London/ a great counsayl was called of all lordes spyrytuall & temporall that than were there aboute. By the whyche fynally after many argumentes made, for so mothe as kynge Henry contrary hys honoure and promyse at the last parlyament made and assured, and also for that ꝑ he was reputed vnable and insuffycyent to rule the realme/ was than by they⁹ assentes deposed and dyscharged of all kyngely honoure and regalty. And incontinently by auctorite of the sayde counsayll and agrement of the commons there present/ Edwarde the eldeste sonne vnto the duke of yorke, thā was there elected

and then chosen for kynge of Englande. After whyche electyon and admyssyon / the sayde erle of Marche gyuyng lawde and prayse vnto god, vpō the.iiii. day of Marche accompanyed wyth all the forsayde lordes & multytude of comons, was cōueyed vnto westminster / and there toke possessyon of the realme of Englāde. And syttynge in hys astate royall in the great halle of the same wyth hys sceptre in hand / a question was axed of the people than presente, yf they wolde admytte hym for theyr kynge & soueraygne lord / the whyche wyth one voyce cryed, ye ye. And thā after ꝑ accustumed vse to kynges to swere and after the othe take / he went into the abbey, where he was of the abbot & munkys mette wyth processyon, & conueyed vnto saint Edwardes shryne, and there offered as kyng / & that done receyued homage & feaute of all suche lordes as there than were present. And vpō ꝑ morowe folowynge, were proclamacyōs made in accustomat places of the cytye, in the name of Edwarde the.iiii. thanne kynge of Englande. Upō whych day the kyng came vnto the palays at Poulys, & there dyned / and there restyd hym a season, in makynge prouysyon to go Northwarde for to subdue hys enemyes. Than vpon the saterdaye folowynge beyng the daye of Marche / the erle of warwyke with a great pussaunce of people departed oute of London northwarde. And vppon wednysdaye folowynge the kynges fotemen wente towarde the same iourney.

And vppon frydaye nexte folowynge, the kynge tooke hys voyage through the cytye wyth a great bāde of men / and so rode forth at Bysshop sesgate. In whych selfe same day, whyche was the.xii. daye of Marche / a grocer of London namyd walter walker, for offence by hym done agayne the kynge, was beheded in Smythfelde. But hys wyfe, whyche after was maryed to Johñ Norlāde grocer & lastely alderman / had suche frendes aboute the kynge, that hyr goodes were nat forfayted to ꝑ kynges vse. The kyng than so holdyng his iourney, mette wyth his enemies at a vyllage.xi. myles on thys halfe yorke called Towtō or Shyreborn / and vpon Palme sonday gaue vnto theym batayll. The whyche was so cruell, ꝑ in the felde and chace were slayne vppō.xxx. thousande mē ouer the men of name / of the whyche here after some ensue. That is to saye the erle of Northumberlande, the erle of westmerlande, the lorde Clyfforde, ꝑ lorde Eyromonde, syr Johñ syr Andrewe Trollop, and other to the noumber of.xi. or mo. And among other at the same felde was taken the erle of Deuonshyre, & after the erle of wylshyre / whych said erle of Deuonshyre was sente vnto yorke, and there after beheded. Hēry than whyche lately was kynge, with the quene & theyr sonne syr Edward, the duke of Somerset, the lord Rose and other, beynge than at yorke / hetynge of the ouerthrowe of theyr people, and greate losse of theyr men, in all haste fledde towarde Scotlande. And vppon the morowe folowynge, the kynge wyth moche of hys people entred into yorke, and there held hys Easter tyde. And vpon Easter euyn, tydynges were brought vnto London of the wynnynge of thys felde. wherfore at Poulys Te deum was songē wyth greate solempnyte, & so thorugh the cytye in all parysh churches. And thus thys goodly man kynge Hēry lost all, whā he had reygned ful.xxxviii. yeres. vi. monethes & odde days. And ꝑ noble & moste bōureous princesse quene Margarete

of

of whome many an vntrew surmyse was imagened & tolde/was layne to hys comfortelle, and lost all that she had in Englãde for euer. whan that kyng Edwarde with greate solempnyte had holden the feest of Easter at yorke/he than remoued to Durham. And after hys busynelle there fynysshed, he retourned agayne Southwárde/& lefte in those partyes ỳ erle of warwyke to se the rule & guydyng of that countrey.

Than the kyng coosted and vysyted the cõtreys Southwarde & Eest warde/that about the begynnyng of the moneth of Juny he came vnto hys manour of shene now called Rychemõut. In all whych passyme pur ueyãce was made for the kynges coronacyõ. In accõplyssshyng whereof the kyng vpõ the.xxvii.day of Juny beyng fryday, departed from ỳ layde manour & rode vnto the towre of Lõdon. Upõ whome gaue attẽdaunce ỳ mayre & hys bretherne all cladde in scarlet, and to the noumbre of.iiii.C. cõmoners well horsed & cladde all in grene. And vpon the morne beynge saterday/he made there.xxviii.knightes of the bath, & after that.iiii. moo. And the same after noone he was wyth all honour cõueyed to westminster/the sayd.xxxii.knyghtes rydyng before hym in blewe gownes & hoodes vpon theyr shulders lyke to prestes, with many other goodly and honourable ceremonyes ỳ whych were longe to reherse in due order. ‡ And vpon the morne beyng sondaye & sait Peters day/he was wyth great tryũphe of the archebysshop of Cauterbury crowned & enoynted before the hygh aulter of saynt Peters churche of westmynster. And after thys solempnysacyon of the crownyng of ỳ kyng wyth also the sumptuous & honorable feest holde in westmester hall was fynysshed/the kynge soone after created George hys brother duke of Clarence.

And in the moneth of July folowynge at the stãdarde in chepe, ỳ hãde of a seruaunte of the kynges called Johñ Dauy was stryken of/for that he had stryken a man wythin the palays of westmynster.

Francia.

¶ Carolus.viii



Carolus or Charles the.viii.of ỳ name after the accompte of this boke, or the vii.after the Frẽch hystory, sonne of Charlys the.vii. or.vi, beganne hys reygne ouer the Frenchmẽ in the moneth of October in the yere of oure lorde.M.iiii.C.&.xxii/ and in the begynnyng of Henry the.vi.than kyng of Englãde. Of thys Charlys sundry wrpters sunderly wryte / in so moche as some afferme hym to be the naturall sonne of Charles the.vii/ some afferme hym to be the sonne of the duke of Orleaunce & borne of the quene/and some there ben that name hym the sonñ of Charles fore named gotten in baste, vppon hys mooste beauteous paramour named Agnes/ the whych as telly|eth Gaguynus, excelled all other women in feture & beaute, and for the same to be surnamed the fayer Agnes. Thys in hyr myddell age dyed / & was so ryche ỳ hyr testamẽt amoũted to.ix.M. scutes in golde, the whyche in sterlynge money amoũteth to the summe of.x. M.li. Thã to retourne to thys Charlys/lykely it is that he was nat ỳ naturall sonne of the forenamed Charlys, for as moche as hys sayd father ordeyned and wylled the realme of Fraũce vnto Katheryne hys dough-

‡ Coronacyon of Edwarde the fourth.

ter and wyfe vnto kynge Hēry the.v/ and agreed wyth the consente of the more parte of ꝑ lordes of hys realme bothe spyrituall & temporall, that du ryng hys lyfe the sayd kynge Henry shuld be regēt of Fraūce, & after hys deth to be kyng of the sayd regyō, as more at lengthe before I haue shewed vnto you in the.vii.yere of the sayd Henry the.v. But whether he be hys legyttymat sonne or nat, where uppō I purpose no lēger to stande/ trouth it is that he was by his father admitted & made dolphyne of Vyen/ by reason wherof he was in a greate auctorite, & wan to hym fauoure of som lordes of Fraūce, whych stōgly mayntayned hys partye durynge the lyfe of kyng Hēry the.v, & after all ꝑ season whyle the duke of Bedforde occupyed there as regent of that regyō, & was of some parties of Fraūce reputed for kyng. Howe be it he was neuer crowned, so lōge as the sayde duke of Bedforde lyued. Neuertheless he by meane of polycy & hys frēdes so defended hym selfe, that lytle by the Englyshemē was wonne vpō hym, of suche lādes as he fyrste was in possessyon of. But polytykely he defended theym, & lytle and lytle so preuayled agayne them, that in the ende he all onely wanne nat to hym the possessiō of that prouince ꝑ which is named Fraūce, but also he wanne to hym in the ende the kynge of Englandes olde enherytaunce, that is Normandy, wyth all dompnyons to the same appertaynynge.

La pucelle de dieu. ✠

The maner of wynnynge of them I will nat in thys story speke of, for so moche as in the former yeres of kynge Henry the.vi. I haue there reherced the maner of somme parte therof. But that I shall speke of thē, shalbe of thynges done betwene hym & other prynces. And for that I before in the.viii. yere of Hēry the vi, promysed in the.vi.yere of thys Charles to shewe vnto you somwhat of the mayde or pucel, which ꝑ Frēch men named ✠ la pucelle de dieu, & her for a messenger from god to be sente reputed/ I shall here folow ꝑ sayeng of Gaguyne, whyche sayeth as folowyth. In the.vi.yere or there aboute, to rekyn from the deth of thys Charles father/ a wēche or mayden beyng bred in a strete or vyllage called in latyne Valli color, & in thys tyme beynge spōge to the age of.xx. yeres or there about, hauing to father a poore man named Jakes Delarch and hyr mother Isabell, she also berynge the name of Jane or Johan/ required by dyuers & sundry tymes an vncle of hyrs beyng prefecte of the forsayde vyllage, that he wolde presente hyr vnto the Frēche kynge for thynges cōcernyng greatly the weale of hym & of hys realme. whyche sayd prefect after many delayes, for so moche as in hyr wordes he had lytle trust/ yet at lēgthe hyr sayd vncle beynge named Robert Baudrycourt, sent hyr wyth a cōuenyent company vnto the kyng, wyth letters certyfyenge hym of all the maner of thys mayde. wher of the sayd Charles beynge aslertened/ thought he wold vse som meane to knowe the vertue of thys wenche. And for he had perfyghte experyence that before tymes thys woman had neuer sene hys persone/ he thoughte he wolde chaunge hys rome and habyte, to se whether she by hyr herine coulde knowe hym frome other/ and that done, he standynge amonge other of his familiers as one of them/ she was called into the chaumber, & demaunded yf euer before tyme she had sene the kynge. And after she hadde answered nay/ she was bydde to espye oute the kynge, whych there stode amonge that companye.

The whyche anone wythout dyffi

culte

culte him fande and saluted as king, And all be it that he refused hyr reuerence, & sayd ꝑ she erred in hyr chopse / yet she parseuered kneling at his fete and sayde that by goddes puruey-aũce she was taught that he was hyr very soueraygn prince & none other. wherfore the kynge & all hys lordes had in hyr the more affyaũce, that by hyr the lãde shulde be releuyd, whych at that daye was in passyng mysery. Than after dyuers questyõs to hyr made, what was the cause of hyr thyder commynge/she answered & sayd that she was sent frome god, to stablisshe the kynge in hys realme/ and that by hyr she beynge leder & cappytayne of hys people, by dyuine grace onely the kynge shulde shortely subdue hys enemyes. By reasõ of which wordes, the kyng wyth hys lordes were somedeale comforted.

Upon thys, armour & swerd was sought for this maydẽ/the whych as sayeth my sayd auctour, was foũden myraculously/wherof the processe to me appereth so darke & cãtastycall, ꝑ therewith me list nat to blot my boke but suffre it to passe by. Than thys wèche being purueyed of all thinges necessary to the warre/ a company of knyghtes & soudyours to hyr by the kynge was assygned. And so she rydynge as a man & in mãnes habyte/ contynued by the space of .ii. yeres & more, and dyd many wonderful feates/and gat from the Englysshemen many stroge townes and holdes. wherefore amonge Frenchemen she was worshypped for an aũgell or a messynger sent frome god, to releue theyr great mysery. And as aftermeth the sayd auctour/she by hyr prouydence caused the sayd Charles as kynge of Fraunce to be crowned at Raynes, in the yere of oure lord. M. foure hundreth and .xxix.

All be it nouther the Frenche cronycle nor other, whyche I haue sene testyfyeth that/ but affermyn that he was nat crowned duryng the lyfe of the duke of Bedforde. But almyghty god whyche for a season sufferyth suche sorcery and deuelysh ways to prospere & reygne, to the correccyon of synners / lastely to shewe hys power, and that good men shuld nat fall into any errour, he sheweth the clerenesse of suche mystycall thynges/and so he dyd in thys. For lastely she by a knyghte Burgonyon was taken, & after sent to Roan, and there dyẽt for her demeryres, as in the. vitt yere of Henry the. vi. is more at lẽgth shewed. Thã the tyme forth passyng, and cõtynuall warre betwene Englande & Fraũce contynuyng/ among many trybulacions by thys Charles sustayned, one that was hys owne sonn named Lewys, comforted and assysted by the dukes of Burbõ and Alẽson wyth other mẽ of name, rebelled agayne hys father, and warred vppon hym / and by strengthe wan frome hym certeyne townes & strong holdes. For remedy whereof / the sayde Charles made warre vppon the forenamed duke of Burbon/and wasted wyth iron and fyre the countreyes of the sayde duke of Burbon. By meane whereof, after thys vnkyndely warre hadde duryd by the space of fyre monethes or more / a peace and vnyte betwene the father & sonne was treated/ & by meanes of the erle of Ewe, a cõcorde & vnite betwene them was fynally cõcluded/ & he ꝑ sayd Lewys & all suche as wyth hym were reteyned or allied, were for thys offẽce by ꝑ sayd Charles clerely pardoned/one persone all only excepted named Jaket or Jakis, by whose treason the castell of Warente was loste and taken / for whyche offence he was after drawen, hanged, & also quartered.

Than ¶ Hende la pucelle de dieu.

Thā in p̄ocesse of tyme folowyng the flemynges of Gaūte rebelled agayne they̅ duke o̅ erle named Philyp. The cause of whyche rebellyon was, fo̅ that he areryd a greuouse taske vpō saite/ & put the people ther by to greuouse charge. where vppon dedely warre betwene the duke and hys subiectys arose, to the dystrucciō of moche people vpō bothe partyes, wherof the cyrcumstaūce were lōg to wryte. Howe be it in the ende p̄ duke o̅ erle by ayde of the Frēche kynge was victour/ & helde them of Gaūte so streyghte, that they were compelled by force to bye they̅ peace wyth great summes of money, & to they̅ other manyfolde domages.

About the.xrrr.yere of thys sayde Charles/ came vnto hym from pope Nycholas the. v. of that name an ambassade, fo̅ to requyre ayde agayne the Turkys, fo̅ the defēce of Cōstantyne the noble, whyche the Turkys purposed sho̅rtly after to assayle. To whyche ambassade by the sayd Charlys it was answeryd, that to hym it was right greuouse to here of the intollerable persecucyō, whych p̄ cristē dayly sustenyed of the Turkys. But he was of p̄ Englysh nacyō so vexed and warred, that he myghte nat leue hys lāde wythout an hedde, to the cō forte of other, & to lose hys owne. But to the entent that he before tymes myght haue warred vppon the sayd Turkys/ he fo̅ that cause onely had offered vnto the kynge of Englande many reasonable offers. And yf of the Englysshe party any lyke offers myghte be to hym p̄ofered / he wolde gladly theym accepte, & turne hys spere incōtynētly agayn the fore named Turkes. And ouer that he wolde fo̅ the furtheraūce of the matter, sende wyth them vnto the kynge of Englāde certayne ambassadours, to se yf that as yet any reasonable peace myght be betwene them cōcluded. Fo̅ accomplysshemēt wherof as testyfyeth myne auctour Gagaynus he sente the archebysshop of Raynes wyth other honorable personnes. The whych whan they to kyng Henry and hys counsayll hadde shewyd they̅ legacyō/ it was to them shortly answered, that at suche season as the Englysshemē hadde wonne agayne so moche lāde as the Frenchemen by cawteys had wōne from theym/ thā were it good tyme & season to treate of accorde, & nat before. By reason of whiche answere/ the popes ambassade retourned to Rome wythoute ayde o̅ comforte. And thus p̄ Frēche wryters lay euer the charge frō they̅ p̄ynce, & put it vnto other. But of thys ambassade o̅ answere, fynde I no memory of any Englysshe wryters.

Aboute the.xrrriii. yere of p̄ reygn of thys Charlys / Lewys hys sonne before named beynge a mā of greate lyberalitye and largesse, thought his father departed nat wyth hym of his mouables & possessyōs as he hadde cause to do. Fo̅ the whych by cōfort of pōge persones as he had aboute hym, he rebelled thys seconde tyme agayne hys sayde father/ & by reason of hys largesse & lyberalyte, drewe vnto hym moche vāton & wylde people / & wyth they̅ assystence warred vpp̄ō hys fathers frēdes, & entendyd to depryue hys father of all gouernaūce of the realme. wherof herynge hys father / in all possyble haste gathered to hym greate strengthe, and spedde hym towarde hys sayd sonne. But whā Lewys was warned of the cōmyng of hys father wyth so great an hoste, & consydered hys quarell & wekenesse / he wyth a fewe persones fledde towarde Burgoyne. whereof herynge the father sente in all haste people to kepe the passages / and dyd that

that he myghte to haue stopped hym of hys waye. But that prouysyon notwythstandynge/the sayd Lewys escaped, and came sauely vnto the presence of Phylyppe then duke of Burgoyne/the whyche hym receyued wyth gladde chere, and entreatyd hym accordyng to his estate, and so kepte hym durynge his fathers lyfe. Howbeit he made for hym great sute and labour, to wynne him to his fathers grace. But all was in vayne. For what by obstynacy of the same ꝑ he wolde not submytte hym to his father, and comme vnto hys presence when he was sente for, & for the great stomacke of the father, that he wold not be condyscyoned with of the son/ thys varyaunce contynued bytwene them as aboue is sayd ꝑ terme of his fathers lyfe. In the whyche passe tyme thys Charlys concluded a marryage bytwene hys doughter called Magdaleyne, and Ladyslaus kyng of Beme, Hungary, and of Polayne. But whyle the bryde wyth great apparayle and pompe was conueyed to warde her husbande to be maryed/ her sayde husbande was taken sodenly with sykenesse, and dyed within. xxiiii. houres after that he fyrste cõplayned hym/whych was by force of poysone as most wryters agreen. Of whych tydynges when Charlys was assertayned / he therwyth toke such a pẽsyfenesse, that he dyed shortely after, whan he had ruled a parte and the hole realme, to reken from ꝑ deth of hys father. xxxvi. yeres. Howbe it of Frenche wryters no certeyne terme of hys regne to hym is assygned/for so myche as kyng Henry the vi. longe after the deth of hys father, was alowyd in Parys and many other Cytyes of Fraũce for souerayne and kynge of that regyon. Thys Charlys thus beynge dede, lefte after hym two sonnes/ that is to saye Lewys that after hym was kynge, and a yonger named Charlys, wyth ꝑ forenamed doughter named Magdaleyne, or after some Margarete. And after wyth greate pompe hys corps was conueyed vnto saynt Denys, and there buryed.

Francia.

Lewys the.xi.

LEwys the.xi. of ꝑ name after the accompte of thys boke, and.x. after the Frenche accompte, whereof ꝑ cause is before shewed, sonne to Charles last dede / begaune his dominyon ouer the realme of Fraunce, in the moneth of October, in the yere of grace. M.iiii. hundreth and. lviii. and the. xxxvi. yere of Henry the. vi. than kynge of Englande. This of Saguinus is called the sturdy or fel Lewys. The whiche at the tyme of his fathers deth, beyng, as aboue is sayd vnreconsyled in the prouynce of Burgoyne, & herynge of the deth of his father/wyth ayde of the forsayd duke Phylyp shortly entred ꝑ realm of Fraunce, & toke vpon hym ꝑ rule in euery good cytie & town as he passyd as kyng of ꝑ same/so ꝑ many lordes & hed officers drewe vnto hym. By meane wherof he was stronge/& put such vnto sylence, as after ꝑ wyll & purpose of his father wolde haue preferred his yõger son named Charlys. Than this Lewys by strengthe of his frendes was shortely after at Raynes crowned kynge of Fraunce. After whyche solempnyte fynysshed, he repayred vnto Parys / and there by consent of hys councyll made a law, ꝑ no man of what degre that he were, shuld vse hũtyng or hawkynge without special lycence/& specially for chasynge

chaſynge or huntyng of wolues/nor to kepe wyth hym any houndes or other inſtrumētes wherby the game myghte be deſtroyed. And that done, Philyp forſayd duke of Burgoyne after counſayll to hym gyuen that he ſhulde forgette and forgyue all diſpleaſurs to hym tofore done by any of hys lordes, and them to honoure and cheryſſhe/ & ſpecyally his yonge brother Charlys to noryſſhe and to departe wyth hym louyngly of hys fathers poſſeſſions/toke leue of hym and departed. After whoſe departure/ he contrary the forſayde counſayll, refuſed the company of hys lordes & alſo theyr counſayll/and drewe vnto hym as his chyefe counſaylours dyſlaynes and men of lowe byrth. Of ỹ whyche, the.iiii. pryncypall were named as folowth, Johñ de Lude, Johñ Balna, Oliuer Deuyll, whō for the odyouſneſſe of the name the kynge cauſed it to be chaunged and to be named Dāman/and the fourth was named Stephan and vſſher of the kynges chaumbet dore/ the whiche he promoted to greate honour & dygnytees. Amonge whome Balna beynge a preſte, was by hys meanes at length made a cardynall of Rome.

Thus the diſpyte the counſayle of theſe perſons / murmur and grudge began to ſpryngе bytwene hym and hys lordes/ in ſo myche that fyrſt the duke of Bryttayne began to eſtraūge hym from the kynge, and refuſed to come vnto hys preſence whā he was ſente for. wherof herynge the erle of Ewe wyth other, drewe them vnto ỹ duke. To the whyche party ſoone after, ỹ kynges brother Charlys, with alſo the duke of Burbon whych had maried the kynges ſyſter, with many other noble men of the realme, reſorted. whan the kynge was ware that hys lordes conſpyred agayne hym/ herynge the rebellyon of hys comōs, ſent in ſpedy maner vnto Parys the forenamed Johñ Balna wyth other certeyne perſons, to kepe that cytye in due obeyſaūce toward hym/ thynkynge that the other cytyes & good townes of hys regyon, wolde take enſample therof, and demeane them as that cytye dyd. After whoſe commynge/ the rulers of Parys by the amonyſtement of the ſayd Johñ, ordeyned good and ſure watche/and ſo by that meane kept the cytye in good order. And in the meane ſeaſon, the kynge gathered to hym great foyſon of knyghtes and ſoudyours, that his hoſte was nombred at.xxx. thouſand men. And in lyke wyſe the other partye hadde aſſembled as many or mo. And not wythſtandyng the aſſyduat laboure and meanes made by ỹ duke of Burgoyne, and Carlota wyfe to ỹ duke of Burbon & ſyſter to the kynges is aboue ſayde, to make an vnyte and peace bytwene Lewys and hys lordes / yet fynally the kynge & they mette in playne batayll at a place called Chartres, where bytwene theym was a longe and cruell batayll, to ỹ loſſe of moche people on bothe partyes. And all be it that the kynge in the begynnynge hadde the better of hys enemyes/yet in the ende he was ouercomen, his men chaced, and he forced to flye, & to take for hys ſauegarde a caſtell named Mountclere. From the whyche he ſhortely departyd, and rode to an other caſtell called Corboyll, and from thens laſtly vnto Parys / where he entendyd to haue gathered newe people, and to haue reuenged hym of hys enemyes. But by the wyſe and good exortacyō of the byſſhoppe of Parys, the kyng chaunged hys purpoſe/ and all was ſet in a quyetneſſe for that tyme. But how or in what maner, or what the condycyons of ỹ accorde were/myne authour dothe not expreſſe. The

whych

whyche accorde thus concluded/ the kynge contynued hys olde maners, and delyted hym more to companye with symple and inferiorent parsons to eate and drynke wyth them, to the ende that he myghte talke of rybaudry and vayne and vycyous fables/ than to accompany him with hys lordes, where he myghte haue wonne hym myche honour. Thys Lewys also was of so dyuers and wanton condycyon, that he wolde go more lyker a yoman or a seruyng man, than lyke a prynce. The whyche was for no regardshyp nor sparyng of good/ for as before I haue shewed, & also after shall appere, he was a prynce of moste lyberalyte, and therwith an oppressour of hys subiectes.

LEwis thus passing his time/ was dryuen of necessyte for lacke of money, to a preste of the cytesyns of Parys. The whyche after many excusys by them layd to put it by, and myghte not be alowed / they lastly denayed the kynges pleasure. where wythall he beynge greuously dyscontentyd, remoued diuerse from they r offyces/and other whych were of the rychest and hed men of ỹ cyte, he soughte agayne theym surmysed causes/& without prouys or iustyce, put many of them to deth. For these forsayde causes & many other whyche tedyouse were to expresse, the fore sayd lordes agayne assembled they r people/entendyng to subdue ỹ kynge, and to set hys brother in hys place/ or to cause hym otherwyse to rule ỹ comon weale. And to strength the barons party/ Johñ sonne vnto ỹ duke of Calabre approched to them, wyth a good bande of men. And to them came also the sonne of the duke of Burgoyne named Charlys. All whiche barons of one assent mette at a towne called Stampys / where they cõtynued they r counsayle by the space of .xv. dayes/ and after that counsayle fynyshed, toke they r tournaye towarde Parys. In whych passe tyme a spye of the duke of Brytaynes, called Peter Gerold was taken in Parys, and drawen, hanged, and quartered / and dyuers men and women ỹ were suspected to owe fauour vnto the lordes, were sacked and caste in to the water of Seyn. Then for to strength and gyrde the cytye of Parys, the kynge sent thyder the erle of Donoyse / by whose prouysyon all warly ordenaunce for to defende they r enemyes was there preparyd. In the which tyme & season, ỹ lordes in .iii. partes enbatayled, approched the cytye. wherof ỹ fyrste hoste ladde Charlys brother vnto the kynge/ the seconde the duke of Brytayne / & the thyrd Charlys the sonne to the duke of Burgoyne. Prouyded that Charlys fyrste named ladde the myddle ward. whã the sayd erle of Donoyse hadde well consydered the strength of the lordes / he sente vnto theym a messanger, sayeng that in his mynde he maruayled to see so greate a multytude of people assembled agayne the cytye and comon weale of ỹ land/ consyderyng that he was sette there by the kynge as a medyatour and a meane, rather to make peace than warre, yf they were contentyd that by hym any medyacyon myghte be laboured and hadde. But thys came to none effecte, so that small assautes and skyrmyshes ensued, to the lytell domage of bothe partes. In whyche passe tyme the kynge sent by secrete meanes vnto the forenamed Johñ sonne vnto the duke of Calabre/ and hym by many meanes instaunted, to leue the company of the lordes. But all his offers auayled ryght nought. Thenne the forsayde lordes thus lyenge before the cytye of Parys, in the playne

the playne where standeth the mona
stery of saynt Antony / Charlys bro-
ther to the kynge caused. iiii. letters
to be deuysed. wherof one he sent to
the bysshoppes and spyrytuall men
within the cytye / the seconde to the
consulles or hed men/the thyrde to ꝑ
scolers of the vnyuersyte/ and ꝑ .iiii.
vnto the compnaltye. Of whyche let
ters the entent ensueth / that he nor
none of hys company was comen
thyder as an enemye to the cytye, or
to make warre agayne it or the co-
mon weale of the land/but for the en
creace and augmentacyon therof, to
the vttermost of theyr powers. After
receyte of whyche letters, and the ma
ter in them conteyned well vnderstā-
den and debatyd/certeyne oratours
for the sayde .iiii. partyes were assyg-
ned/ as thre for the spyrytuall men,
thre for the consuls, thre for the vny-
uersyte, & thre for compnaltye/whose
names I ouer passe. The whyche
wyth the bysshop of Paris were sent
vnto the barons / & after longe com-
munycacyon wyth them hadde, re-
tourned to the cytie with such report
as foloweth.

Fyrste the lordes wolde that the
inhabytauntes of the cytye shulde cō
syder the condycyons of the kynge, ꝑ
whyche perely oppressyth his subiec-
tes with taskes and other greuouse
seruagys. Secondarply how he de-
spyseth ꝑ noble blode of hys realme,
and draweth to hym vylaynes and
men of no reputacyon/by whose cou
sayls onely all the comon weale of ꝑ
land is ruled and guyded. Thyrdly
how he ruleth hys subiectes by force
and wyll, wythout mynystracyon of
tustyce/and hym selfe in all coūsayls
and parlyaments is iudge in all cau
ses, and callyth hys selfe counsayls
and parlyamentes, more for hys syn
guler weale than for the comō weale
of his realme. Fourthely how he en-
haunsyth men of lowe byrthe vnto
greate honours and causyth noble
men to be obedyent vnto them/entēn
dynge to brynge the same ignoble
men, for to be egall wyth the pryn̄ces
of the lande. Fyftely how the lawes
be delayed and bolstred by suche as
stande in his fauour/ where thorugh
as thys daye lawe is wyll and wyll
is lawe/ and no man almoste in any
suerty of lyfe or goodes/ in so moche
that dayly many ben banysshed and
put to deth for vnlefull causes / and
also to any noble man at this daye
no power or rome of honour belon-
geth / so that to wylde bestes in the
forestes appertayneth more lybertye
and suertye, than the more partye of
the kynges subgettes. Syrtly the
greate taskes and summes of money
whych dayly be leuyed of the comōs
ben not spent in the kynges honou-
rable nedes and for the comon weale
of the realme/ but are spent nyscly &
ryottously, and brybed out of ꝑ kyn-
ges coffers. For whyche enormytees
& mysgouernaūce with many other/
the sayde lordes were thyder comen
in defensyble araye, for ꝑ sauegarde
of theyr owne persons/as to the hed
and pryncypall cytie of the realme,
for to haue ayde and counsayle to re-
fourme the forsayd euyls / not with
standynge any harme vnto the kyn-
ges persone, or yet to remoue hym
from his regally or kyngly maiestie/
but to enduce hym & aduertyse hym
to that that shuld be his honour and
the weale of hys realme, and to lyue
in welthe and honour as hys noble
pgenitours haue lyued before hym.
For the whyche causes and consyde-
racyons wyth many other whych I
passe ouer/the sayde lordes as ꝑ kyn
ges trewe subiettes and frendes vn-
to the comon weale of the lande and
of that cytye, desyre to entre/there to
refresshe them and theyr people, and

to paye

to pay truely for all thynge that they shulde take, & wythout doyng harme or vyolence to any persone. All whyche requestes and maters of the lordes shewed vnto the inhabytauntes of the cytye, by fauour of some frendes that they there had, it was with the more partye well acceptyd, and thought conuenyent that they sayde nobles shuld be receyued into the cytye. How be it that after longe debatynge of thys matter, by meane of the forenamed erle of Monoyse, a spatynge of thys receyte of the lordes shuld be, tyll they had further knowlege of the kynges pleasure. whyche prouysyon the sayd erle fande, for so mych as he was secretely warned of the kynges thyder comynge. And vpon thys agremẽt the cytye rested. For sucrtye wherof, suche as were within the cytye of the kynges seruauntes and frendes, rode dayly & nyghtly about ỹ cyty wyth a stronge company in harneys, to se the people kepte in due order. Than vppon the daye folowynge came vnto Paris a capytayne of ỹ kynges named Mou talbone, and wyth hym a good bend of men/the whyche shewyd vnto the cytesyns that the kyng was comyng out of Normandye with a great host of .The lordes beynge warned/enbatayled them in the fore sayde playne of sayncte Antoyn, to shewe the strength of theyr hoste vnto the cytye, or suche as were therin as theyr enemyes. where they so lyenge/certayne knyghtes of the kynges party, diuerse and sondry tymes brake out by sodeyne resys, and skyrmyssched wyth the lordes people, to the ipteil hurte of bothe partyes.

In the whych passe tyme kynge Lewys comynge out of Normandye, was receyued into the cytye. where after hys comynge he put in execucyon .v. persons, named Johñ worster, Eustace and Arnolde worster, Johñ Coart, and Fraunceys Hasle. The whyche persons were accusyd to hym to be chyefe occasyoners of the legacyon made vnto the lordes. Of whyche sayde .v. persons / thre, as Johñ Coart, Fraunceys Hasle, & Arnolde worster, were messengers assygned in the sayde legacyon for the consuls of Paris / and the forenamed Eustace worster, was one of the thre assygned for the clergye.

The kynge thus beynge in possessyõ of the cytye/many and dyuers assautes and skyrmyssches betwene hys knyghtes and the lordes were made/but no notary bataple, for the kynge was ferre weker. And ouer that in thys tyme & season, the sayde lordes gat vnto them sondry castels and stronge holdes. Than at length meanes of a peace was offeryd by ỹ kynge. For concludyng wherof/ for the kynge was admytted the erle of Mans, with certayne other persons. And for the barons, was assygned Johñ sonne vnto the duke of Calabre, Lewys erle of sayncte Poule and other/the whyche assembled and cõmoued togyder by sondry tymes. xv. dayes. In whyche season came vnto the kynge a new strength of soudyours out of Normandye / the whych the kyng appoynted to kepe the subarbes of sayncte Marcell. Thys treaty thus hangyng wythout concluſyõ or ende takynge/vppon the .xiiii. day of October in the .vii. yere of ỹ reygn of thys Lewys, was proclaymed thorough the cytye and also the hoste a day of lenger treuce/so that thanne the lordes wythdrewe theym vnto theyr stronge holdes and castels, hol dynge wyth them many soudyours whyche fyll to robbynge and other vnlefull actes, to the greate daunger and hurte of the lande. And at suche seasons as the arbytrours met

Nym. to fy-

to fynysshe this great matter/among other thynges offeryd by the kynge, he graunted to gyue vnto hys brother Charlys for hys porcyon, all Champayne wyth the lordshyppe of Bry/ the cytyes of Melde, Monstruell, and Meldune therof to be excepted. And vnto Charlys sonne of the duke of Burgoyne, he was contented to gyue so myche money as he hadde spent in that iournay. But all was refused. And fynally for obstynacy of bothe partyes/ the daye of erpyracyon of the treuwe approchyd, wythout hope of accord cōcludyng. wherfore prouysyon for warre vpon bothe partyes was deuysed. Than begā grudge and murmure betwen the cytesyns and the kynges sowdyours/ wherthorough many of the comons hertes turned to the lordes/ so that for fere the surer and stronger watches were kepte to the kynges great charge. Shortely after tydynges were brought vnto the kynge ꝑ the castell of Gysons was of the lordes besyeged/ and that also the prefecte of the kynges paleys in Roan, was taken of the cytesyns and holden in prysone. And the daye folowynge came an other messengare, shewynge vnto the kynge that the duke of Burbone was by the posterne receyued into the castell of Roan / and was lykely to haue shortely the rule of the cytye / whyche came to effecte in shorte whyle after. whan the lordes hadde gotten the castell and cyty of Roan, whyche is hed cytye of Normandy as Parys is hed of Fraunce/ than in maner of derysyon they sent vnto ꝑ kynge, sayenge that nother with Champayne nor with Bry hys brother Charlys wold be contented, but scantely wyth the hole duchy of Normandy. Than kynge Lewys cō syderyng the great auauntage, which ꝑ lordes had of him, both by strength and fauour of hys comons whyche dayly drewe vnto them by sondry cō panyes/ in auoydyng of more daunger, concludyd a peas. For perfourmaūce wherof, he graūted vnto Charlys his brother ꝑ hole duchy of Normandy/ takyng to hym in exchaūge the county of Berry. And to Charlis sonne to the duke of Burgoyne, Peroñ, Ropa, & a cytye or towne called in latyne Mondidertū/ and therwith he ioyned Gwynary and ꝑ erledome of Boloyne/ which lordshyps ꝑ sayd kynge Lewys hadde before tymes bought of duke Philyp his father. To Johñ of Calabre he graūted all such sūmes of money as he demaundyd, to wage with soudiours to ayde his father agayne Fardynande then kyng of Aragon. And to Johñ duke of Burbon, ꝑ which as before is said had maryed his syster/ he graūted all such dowar as to hym was ꝓmysed at ꝑ tyme of maryage/ & all such pencyon as he was wont yerely to take, of the graunte of Charlys last kyng within the realme of Fraūce. To the duke of Bretayne was restord the erledome of Moūtferard, with great sūmes of money which the kyng had receyued of the sayd county. And to ꝑ erle of Wampmartyne was restored all suche landes as before by acte of parlyamēt were forfayted to ꝑ kyng. To the erle of sayne Poule was restored the offyce of the constablerye of Fraūce/ & to other mē of name other notable thynges which I passe ouer. All whyche grauntes fermely and fastely assuryd/ proclamacyons were made of thys pease thorowghe the realme of Fraunce. And after thys pease was thus concluded/ the kyng and hys lordes mette. To whome he shewed greate semblaunt of kyndnesse / and specyally vnto hys brother. wherin appered great dyssymulacyon, as here after shall appere.

For

For thys Lewys was of suche condycion, that what he myght not ouercome wyth strength, he wold wynne wyth dyssymulacyon and trechery. After whyche peace thus concluded, and the lordes departed / the kynge fesyd the rulers and consuls of the cytye of Parys / and gaue vnto them due thankes, for the greate trouth & fydelyte, whyche they bare towarde hym durynge that troubelous season and graunted vnto them suche thynges, as then they wolde aske for the weale of that cytye.

It was not longe after, that dyssymulacyon fell bytwene Charlys duke of Normandye, and Johñ forsayde sonne vnto the duke of Calabre and the erle of Dampmartyne. wherof a parte of the cause was, that the sayde Charlys after theyr thynkyng, hadde not so bounteously rewarded them as they had deserued. Of whyche dyscorde kyng Lewys was sayne / and in spedy maner rode vnto a towne called Argentyne / and there wyth the sayd Johñ than beynge duke of Calabre, by reason of hys fathers deth, helde wyth hym longe and great counsayll, to ỹ entent to dyspossesse hys brother of the duchy of Normandye. By reason of whych dyscorde bytwene the sayd two dukes / kynge Lewys as ayder of the duke of Calabre, made warre in the partyes of Normandye / and in processe wanne therin dyuers castels and other stronge holdes, and compelled hys brother to holde the cytye of Roan for hys refuge. where he so beynge / the kyng wanne dayly vppon hym / in so myche that dyuers townes and stronge holdes submytted them to his grace. wherof hering the cytesyns of Roan, made an ambassade vnto the kynge, for purchace of grace for theyr duke and for them selfe. The whych when the duke vnderstode, feryng leste his owne cytesyns wolde betraye hym, fled thens / and so yode to Hunflewe, and from thens to Cadomy. In whyche passe tyme ỹ kynge was wyth due honour receyued into ỹ cytie of Roan / where he remoued many from theyr offices, and of his seruauntes or such as lyked hym put in theyr places / & moch of the ordynaunce and of abylymentes of warre belongynge to ỹ towne he sent vnto Parys / and the prouost of Roan named Gayne Manuell he put to deth / & after hys body was cast into the ryuer, and his hed sette vppon a pole / & dyuers of the colege wyth the deane of ỹ same place were put vnto deth. And all whych tyrannye by the kynge executyd, and the towne put in suertye by strength of soudyours / he after spedde hym vnto Orleaunce, where as sayth myne authour he purueyed an honorable ambassade, and sent it vnto Edward the. iiii. then kynge of Englande.

In the. ix. yere of ỹ regne of thys Lewys was so greate a mortalyte of men in Fraunce, that in Parys dyed that yere ouer. xl. M. people. And in thys yere began a grudge to growe bytwene this Lewys and Phylyppe duke of Burgoyne. But it was kept vnkyndely dutyng ỹ lyfe of ỹ duke, which dyed shortely after. To whom succedyd Charlys his sonne before named, which in processe of tyme maryed dame Margarete syster vnto kynge Edward ỹ. iiii. as after shalbe shewyd. It was not longe after that thys Lewys assembled a great hoste of people to make warre vppon Charlys duke of Burgoyne. Of whyche people he had cõmytted the rule and charge vnto Johñ Balna, whych at that daye was preste and cardynall / and he as a tẽporall capytayne, toke of them the musthyrs & other ordres. where at the tẽporall lordes dyspay-

Hym. ii. nynge /

nynge/the erle of Dãpmartyne ſayd in the names of them vnto the kyng. Moſte redouted ſouerayne lo;de, it hath pleaſed your hyghneſſe to commytte vnto a ſpy;ytuall mã ꝑ charge of your puyſſaunt hoſte/& he not fe=rynge god, hath taken vpon hym the cure and charge of them, to the effuſyon of cryſtẽ mẽcs blode. wherfo;e it may lyke your moſt noble grace, to ſende me a tempo;all man to vyſyte his dyoceſe, and to take the charge of his flocke/ whyche is as ſyttynge fo; me, as that other dede is fo; him. At this ſayeng the kyng hadde good game/but fo; all ꝑ he dyd as to hym ſemyd beſt. Of this warre bytwene ꝑ kyng & duke Charlys of Burgoyne I entende not to ſpeke/fo; the mater of it is ſomdele long and tedyous to w;yte. But in this whyle that Lewys was occuppyed in thys warre/ꝑ Bry=tons with an excedynge power aſſay=led ꝑ partyes of No;ue hauyng Charlis b;oder vnto Lewis to they; ieder, whych to the duke of Bry;tayn was fled fo; ayde & ſocoure. wherof herynge kyng Lewys/all ſuch hoſte of ſowdyours as he hadde purpoſed other wayes, he than ladde agayne hys b;other. In whych hoſte as after myth myne authour, were an. C. M. men, ouer ſuch as had the guydyng of the o;denaũce. whã Charlys was aduertyſed of the greate ſtrength of hys b;other/by polyrke meanes he ſoughte fo; a peace. And after many delato;y communycacyõs and other delayous meanes w;oughte vppon bothe partyes/laſtely the kynge ſent vnto hys b;other Johñ Balna car=dynall wyth other, to ſhewe vnto hym hys mynde and pleaſure. wher=of whan Charlys was ſuffycyently inſtructed/ he gaue fo; an anſwere, that yf a perfyghte conco;de ſhulde be ſtablyſſhed bytwene hys b;other and hym, that it ſhuld be autho;yſed by the hole concent and counſayle of the barony of the realme. with which anſwere the kyng beyng contentyd/ at Turon in the moneth of Ap;yll & y. yere of hys reygne, aſſembled a greate counſayle of hys lo;des ſpy;y tuall and tempo;all/in the whyche ꝑ demaũdys of the ſayde Charlys and offers of the kyng were ſhewed. And after the ſayd coũſayle had at length reaſoned the ſayde demaundes and offers/it was fynally determyned, ꝑ the duchy of No;mandye was ſo ap=p;ouyd vnto the kynge of Fraunce and to hys he;es kynges, that in no wyſe it myghte be dyſſeuerd from ꝑ crowne. But to the entent that a per fyghte vnyte myghte be had bytwene the kynge and hys b;other/the kyng ſhall be inſtaũted to gyue perely vn=to hys ſayd b;other in recõpenſemẽt of ꝑ ſayd duchy. xii. thouſand poũde of Turõ money/wyth alſo a certeyn of lande to hym to be aſſygned wyth the name of a duke / and ouer that ꝑ kynge to be inſtanted to gyue vnto hym durynge hys naturall lyfe, fo; ſuche po;cyõ as he claymed to be his ryghte wythin the realme. xl. M. fl. of annuell rente perely to hym to be payed of the fo;eſayd Turõ money. To all whyche grauntes the kynge was agreed/& ouer that to pardon ꝑ duke of Bry;tayne all offences nowe newly done agayne hys mateſte, and contrary the dukes faythe and alle=gaunce/and all ſuch lo;dſhyppes as the kynge hadde wonne wythin Bry;=tayne, to reſto;e vnto the duke & hys aſſygnes. All ꝑ whych offers myght not ſatyſfye the coũſayle of the ſayd Charlys/but clerely was ſet aparte and refuſed.

After the fo;eſayd offers were by Charles refuſed/the kyng in ſpedy wyſe vppon the refuſayll ſent a ſtronge hoſte into Bry;tayne, vnder the guydynge of a knyghte

called

called Arnolde. And in the meane seas son the kyng vysytyng the boydours of hys realme/ put in execucyon dyuerse parsones, suche as were accused to offende agayne hym. Dallynge whych season, were it for the greuys whyche the forsayd hoste wroughte wythin the coūtrey of Brytayne, or for other skyll/ the forsayd Charlys & the duke of Brytayne made newe meanes for a peace vnto the kynge/ & offered to be contentyd, wyth that they myght stande in hys fauoure & grace, wyth suche proffers as the coū sayll of the realme was before tyme agreed and cōdyssended vpon. where unto a sophystycall answere was made by the kyng/ so that the sayd Charles at that tyme myght nat be asserteyned of peace or of warre. Howbeit in the yere folowyng by instaūt labour of the fore named Johñ Balna cardynall, the kynge agreed to gyue vnto hys brother Charlys the duchy of Guyan onely. wherewyth he helde hym cōtēted/ & so ceased of his warre in Normādy.

It was nat lōge after that thys sayde Johñ Balna forgetynge ỳ manyfolde great benefytes shewed to hi by the kynge/ cōspyred agayne hym, & deuysed certayne letters/ the which he sent vnto Charlys duke of Burgoyne. wherin was cōteyned that he shulde beware and haue hym selfe in good gayte/ for the vnyte and peace whyche lately was stablysshed betwene the kynge & Charlys hys brother, was principally to dere & warre vppon hym, & to bryngе hym in subiection. wherfore in auoydynge that daūger/ he aduysed hym in all possyble haste to assemble hys knyghtys, that he were nat také vnpurueyed. The whyche letters were it by reasō of the bearer or otherwyse, came to ỳ kynges presence. After receyt of whyche letters, & knowlege of the cōtent of them/ anone the kynge caused the sayde Johñ Balna to be taken, & to be caste in stronge prysone. And that done he rode vnto Thuron/ whyther to hym came hys brother Charles, and to hym dyd homage, & sware vnto him feauty for the duchy of Guyan. And for to knytte the duke of Brytayne more fastly to hym/ he sente to hym a sceptre wyth a chayne of golde/ the whyche the duke refused to take, wherewyth Lewys was greuously dyscōtēted. The cause of whyche refusall was, for the sayde duke of Brytayne had lately before that allyed hym wyth Charlys duke of Burgoyne, & had receyued hys liuerey of golden flees. And soone after, whyche was the. xi. yere of thys Lewys/ Carlota hys wyfe was lyght ted of a sonñ, & after named Charles by Charlys hys brother/ whych after hys father was kynge of Fraūce. And shortly after by meanes of Charlys duke of Guyan, & of the duke of Burbon & other/ the duke of Brytayn was recoūcyled vnto the kyngs fauoure. And in ỳ. xii. yere of ỳ reygn of thys Lewys, dyed by force of veni the aboue named Charlys duke of Guyan. But by whose meanes myne auctour myndeth nat.

Than cōtynuynge the warre betwene thys Lewys & thys duke of Burgoyne/ a marchaunt of Guyan named Itery, which after the deth of the sayd duke of Guyan was fledde vnto the duke of Burgoyne, & wyth hym a seasō remayned/ shewed vnto hym many tedyous tales of ỳ kyng. wherfore the duke apperceyuynge ỳ he owed to the Frenche kynge no fauoure/ exorted hym to poyson ỳ sayd kynge. And yf he myght bryngе to effecte hys purpose/ he shuld therefore haue. l. M. florynes of golde. A florayne is in value of sterlynge money .iii. s. After whyche prompse and

Wm. iii. assuraunce

assuraunce thus made by the duke/ thys Itery to bryngе hys cuyll purpose about, made hys seruaunt named Johñ de Boldy of coũsayll/and promysed to hym greate thynges, yf he wolde take vpon hym that acte. And after graunt hadde of the sayde Johñ/the sayd Itery prouided ꝑ poyson, & delyuered it vnto hys sayd seruaũt. The whych incontynẽtly sped hym vnto Imbalye, where the Frẽch kyng than laye/where thys Johñ de Boldy beynge of kamplyet acqueyntaunce wyth one named Poppyn, to ꝑ entent to bryngе hys entent ꝑ better to effecte, after assuraũce of othe to hi made to kepe hys counsayll / shewyd vnto hym all hys mynde, & promised to hym .xx. M. florynes yf he wolde helpe to bryngе to concluſyon hys purpose. The whyche Poppyn made vnto hym assured promyse/& sayde ꝑ to bryngе thys mater aboute, it was very expedyent to haue of counsayll the kynges mayster cooke named Colynet/whome he knewe well to wyn, for the great fauoure that eyther of them owed vnto other. And after cõmunycacyon had wyth the sayd Colynet/the sayd poyſone to hym was delyuered. wherwyth the sayd Colynet & Poppyn hys felowe went a conuenyent tyme after vnto the kynge, & shewyd to hym the compaſſe of all ꝑ mater. where after anone the sayde Johñ de Boldy was taken, & confeſſed the circumstaũce of all the hoole treaſon / for the whyche at Parys he was after drawen, hanged, and quartered. Soone vpõ thys, Frederyke ꝑ iii. of ꝑ name than emperoure of Almayne, sente vnto thys Lewys / wylyng & requyryng hym that he wolde nat endeuer hym to any peace or accorde with ꝑ duke of Burgoyne. For he entẽded in ſuche wyſe to ayde hys partye, ꝑ he truſted in god to bryngе the sayde duke to hys due, & conuenyent obeyſaũce & ſubiecciõ. But the kyng regarded nothynge the emperours requeſt/but cõcluded a trewys wyth the duke for a yere folowynge, by auctoryte of a great counsayll or parlyament. At the whyche the duke of Alẽson was iuged to loſe hys hed, & hys heredytamentes to be forfayted vnto the kynge.

Than it foloweth in the storye / of thys forsayde trewys betwene the kynge & Charles the duke were fully erpryed/ ꝑ sayd Charles made warre vpon the sayd Lewys, and procured kynge Edwarde of Englande, whoſe ſyſter he had maryed, to make alſo warre vpon hym. For erpedycyon wherof/the sayd kyng Edwarde landed at Calays shortly after, wyth a competente noumbet of ſoudyours, as after in the .xiiii. yere of the reygne of the sayd Edwarde the .iiii. it shalbe to you more clerely shewed, wyth cõcluſyon of a peace & other thynges.

After ꝑ which peas betwene the sayd ii. kynges agreed / a vnyte and concorde was alſo ſtablyſſhed betwene thys Lewys & the duke of Burgoyn for .ix. yeres.

About the .xvii. yere of thys Lewys / ꝑ steward of Normãdy named Lewys Bursey, ꝑ which had maryed the nece of kyng Lewys/beyng warned of ꝑ wãton rule of his wyfe, & of her auoũtry wyth one named Johñ Louyr/vpõ a day to proue his sayde wyfe, wẽt on hũting/& at his retourñ feyned hym wery & kepyt for labour, & wẽt to his bedde. And the anone demyng her huſbãd to be at his naturall reſt/yode streyght vnto ꝑ chãber of ꝑ sayd Johñ Louyr. wherof ꝑ huſbãd beyng warned/wyth hys ſwerde in hãde ſped hym vnto ꝑ sayd chãber & after ꝑ doore broke vp by violẽce, & fyndyng thẽ in bedde or other ſuſpecioũſe maner, with his sayde ſwerde ſlewe firſt ꝑ sayde Johñ / & after nat

wythſtan-

wythstādyng her miserable & lametable crytg, & al kynge forgyuenes vpō her knees, he also shewher/ after fled tyll he had made hys peace wyth the kyng.

Lōge it were & also tedyouse to folowe myne auctour, in declaryng of euery particuler dede done by this Lewys. wherfore to shorte this story/ trouth it is ꝑ after thys Lewys had by lōg tyme exercised him in warres, he lastly fell in a greuouse sykenesse. The whych cōtinued & so encreased vpō hym/ ꝑ he knewe well he shulde nat lōg endure. wherfore he disposed there after/ & caused many dedes of almesse to be done for hym. Amōge ꝑ whych within Sait Johns church the Baptist within Parys, he foūded certeyn prestes to syng for hym in perpetuyte. For sustētacion of whome, he gaue of yerely rēte a. M.li. of Parys money. And so lāguysshyng by ꝑ space of. iii. yeres more before he died passed hys tyme wyth great tribulacyon. In the whyche passe tyme ora-tours were sent from the Flemynges for to conclude a mariage betwene Charles hys eldest sonne, & Margarete than doughter of Maxymylian sonne of Frederyke the emperoure/ which Maximiliā before those days had maryed Mary the doughter of Charles duke of Burgoyne. After whych cōclusyon ended & fynysshed/ the kyng gaue vnto the sayd orators xxx. M. scutes of golde, whych amounteth to. v. M. li. sterlyng money. And ouer that gaue to them in plate purposely made, to the value of. v C. li. sterlynge. And in the. xxv. yere of the reygne of the sayd Lewys / the forenamed Margarete a chyld of tender age, wyth great & sumptuouse pōpe was broughte vnto Parys. And frō thens she was conueyed vnto Ambaspe/ and there in the moneth of July, cowpeled by mariage vnto the forenamed Charles sonn vnto the kyng. After whyche solempnyte fynysshed/ the sayd Lewys feleyng hys sykenesse more and more encreasyng/ vppon a season called hys sayd sonn Charles before hym, and exorted hym in thys wyse as after foloweth. My moost derest chylde, I feele & knowe well ꝑ I shall nat tary longe in thys countrey/ for I am more nerer myne ende than thou knowest. For I am so contynually greuyd wyth sykenesse, that no medecyne may or can releue me. And thou art he that muste rule this lāde after me. wherfore to the it is specyally behouefull & necessary, to haue trewe seruaūtes. Amonge many ꝑ I haue proued in my dayes/ ii. there ben, the whych I specyally cōmende vnto the / that is to meane Olyuer Damman, and Johñ Doyacos. whose seruyces I haue in suche wyse vsed, that by theyr meanes and counsayll I thynke my lyfe hath ben longe preserued. And therefore specially these. ii. kepe nere about ꝑ; nothynge mynysshyng to them of theyr offices or possessyons, that I before tymes to them haue gyuen. And after these ii/ take to the forthy counsaylours, Guyot & Bochage / & for to guyde ꝑ warres, Philyp Deschuyer/ ꝑ whych in featys of warre as I haue well proued, hath passyng experiēce. And other which I haue auaūced to offyces within thys realme/ lette them so remayne. And the commons of the lande, the whych by occasyō of warres I haue greuously tarid & greatly weked & enpouerysshed/ socoure and fauour to thy power. To the Burgonyōs me thought euer good to shew fauoure/ or elles me thought it shuld haue sounded to my dyshonour. So I thynke it shalbe good that thou so do. After that kyng Lewys had thus exorted and counsayled hys sonn/ he than retourned vnto Turon.

The wordes of kyng Lewys dyenge to his sonne.

Wm. iiii. where

where for the mytygacyon of thys paynfull syckenesse, whyche of myne auctour is called in latyne Morbus Elephantie / he commaunded to be brought before hym all the cunnyng maysters of musyke wythin hys realme, that by the melodyous sounde of theyr instrumentes, he myght be eased of his peyne. But whan he had assembled of the best an .C. and .xx. in nounber / a fewe shepardes pypes were to hym more solace, than all the other or any parte of them / ꝑ whych he helde styll in hys court, & commaū ded that euery day the sayd shepherdes shulde play a certeyn dystaunce from the place where he laye. And ouer thys he sent for all ankers and other relygyous men that were famed for holy & parfight men / and for them ordeyned places within Turō, that by the meane of theyr prayers he myght be released of hys contynuall payues. And to haue lenger contynaunce of lyfe / myne auctour sayeth ꝑ thys Lewys had so greate a desyre to haue lengthe of lyfe / for so moche as he knewe well that the realme of Fraunce shulde be in great trouble & veracyon shortly after. But nat wythstandynge all these prouysyons and ordenaunces, wyth many moo whyche longe were to wryte / fynally thys Lewys dyed, whā he hadde ben kyng of Fraūce by the terme of .xxvi. yeres or there vppō / and after was buryed in the churche of our Lady of Raynes, where before tyme he prouyded hys sepulture, & in tyme of hys syckenesse lape in it a certayne season, whyle that certeyne orysons were ouer hym sayde.

Anglie.

¶ Edwarde the .iiii.

EDwarde the .iiii. of that name, sonne of Rycharde duke of yorke as before is touched / began hys regne ouer ꝑ realme of Englād the .iiii. daye of Marche in the ende of the yere of grace, to reken after the churche of Englande. M.iiii.C.& .lx / and the .ii. yere of Lewys the .xii. thāne kynge of Fraunce. The whych Edwarde after hys possessyon takynge at westmynster & gettyng of the fealde at Toutō by yorke, was crowned & anoynted for kynge at westmynster forsayde, the .xxix. daye of Juny, as before is shewyd in the ende of the laste yere of Henry the .vi. After whyche solempnyte fynysshed / the kynge in August after rode to Caunterbury / & frome thēs he rode to Sandewyche / and from thens a longe by the sees syde to Southamptō / & so into the march of walys / & retourned by Brystowe, where he was wyth all honour receyued / and after visited sundry parties of hys realme. In whych season or soone after, the tyme of Rychard Lee mayre of Lōdon erryued / and Hughe wyche mercer was admytted for the yere folowynge.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxi.

Hughe wyche.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxii.

Johñ Looke.

Anno .i.

George Irelande.

THis yere beyng the later ende of the fyfte yere of Edwarde the .iiii., and the begynnynge of thys mayres yere, that is to say the fourth daye of September / a parlyamente was begonne at Westmynster. And

vpon

vpon ꝑ morow folowyng vyed Johñ duke of Northfolke/ the whyche had ben a speciall ayder of the kyng. And vpō Allhalowen daye before passed/ꝑ kyng created Rychard hys ponger brother duke of Glouceter, the lorde Bowchyer erle of Eller, & the lorde Fawcumbrydge erle of Kent/& vpon the.xii. day of February, was the erle of Otenforde, wyth the lorde Audrey hys elder sonne, syr Thomas Todenham, willyā Tyrell, & other, brought vnto the towre of Lōdon. And vpon the.xx. day of the sayd moneth, ꝑ sayd lorde Awdrey was drawen from westmynster vnto the towre hylle, & there beheded. And vpon the.xxiii. daye of the same moneth/syr Thomas Todenham, wyliyā Tyrell, and Johñ Mōgomory, were also there beheded. And vpon the frydaye next ensuynge, or the.xxvi. daye of the sayd moneth/ the erle of Otenforde was ladde frō westmynster vpon hys feete to ꝑ sayd place of & there also beheded. whose corps was after borne vnto ꝑ freere Augustynes / and there buryed wythin the quyer for that tyme. And in the later ende of the moneth of July/was the castell of Iwnewyche yelden vnto the lorde Hastynges by appoyntement.

Whan kynge Edwarde was thus stablysshed in this realme/great sute and labour was made to hym for the repayment of the forsayd .xviii.M. li. to hym and other delyuered by the stapelers, as before in ꝑ.xxxviii. yere of Henry the.vi. to you I haue before shewed. wherof was laborer, were it by the agrement of the sayd stapelers or otherwyse, one named Rychard Heyron a marchaunt, of pregnaunte wyt and of good maner and spethe. To whome at length was answered by the kynges counsayll, that ꝑ sayd xviii.M. pounde wyth moch more, the whyche was couertly kept frome the kynges knowiege, belonged of ryght vnto ꝑ erle of wylshyre/ whiche at the tyme of delyuery of the sayde goodes, was hyghe tresourer of Englande/and after for treason by hym done agayne the kyng, the sayd erles landes and goodes were forfayted vnto the kynge. wherfore the kynge retryned the sayde.xviii.M. li. as parcell of hys forfayture, & wolde reteyne as hys owne. Upon whych answere/ thys heyron seynge that of the kyng he myght haue no remedy, and for so moche as moch of the sayd good belonged to hys charge, he thā resorted vnto the stapelers for contē tacyon of the sayd money. But howe it was that there he tāde no comfort/ he fynally sued the mayer of the stapie and hys company, and put them vnto greate vexacyon and trouble. And in the ende fande suche fauoure in the courte of Rome/ that he denoūced all the marchauntes stapelers accursed. Howe be it that soone after they purchased an absolucyon. And he in conclusyon after longe beyng i westmynster as a seyntwary man / wythoute recouery of hys costes or dutye, dyed there, beynge greatly endetted vnto many persones.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxii.

Thomas Cooke.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxiii.

wyllyam Hampton.

Anno.ii.

Barth Jamys.

This yere and begynnyng of ꝑ moneth of November/ Margaret late quene of Englād came out of Fraūce into Scotlād & frō thēs into

Englande

Englande, wyth a strength of Frēch men & Scottes. wherfore the kynge sped hym into the north wyth a strōg hoste. wherof herynge the quene/ brake hyr araye and fled / and toke a carvyle, & therein entended to haue sayled into Fraūce. But suche tempest fell vpon the see, that she was cō strayned to take a fysshers bote / and by meane therof landed at Warwyke, & so drewe hyr vnto the Scottysshe kynge. And shortly after her lādyng tydynges came to her, that her sayde carvyll was drowned, wythin the whyche she had greate treasoure and other rychelle.

And the same daye vpon .iiii. C. of the Frenchemen were dryuen vppon lande nere vnto Bambourth. where they for so moche as they myght nat haue away theyr shyppes, they fyred thē/ & after for theyr sauegarde tooke an ilande wythin Northumberland. where they were assayled of one called Maners wyth other in hys company/ & of them slayne & taken prisoners as many as there were. whan þ kynge was ware of the quenes thus anoydynge/ he entēded to haue followed, & to haue made warre vpon the Scottes. But he was than vysyted with the syckenes of pockes, þ he was forced to leue that iourney. In the weke of Crystemas folowynge / the Scottes wyth a strōge power perred the lande, entendynge to haue restowed certayne castelles in the north. But they retourned shortly wythout harme doynge.

And shortly after the duke of Somerset and syr Raulfe Percy, submitted them to the kynges grace.

Whanne the kynge was cured & retourned southwarde/ the Scottes aboute the tyme of lent entred agayn into Englande & layde a syege vnto Bambourth castell and wanne it, wherfore the kynge in the moneth of Auguste folowynge, rode agayne northewarde wyth hys power / and ouer that dytayled certayne shyppes in the west countre, & manned them, & sent them thyder to make warre vpon the see coost.

And in the latter ende of this mayres yere / the duke of Somerset herynge that kynge Henry was comynge into the lande wyth a newe strength, departed secretly/ & wente agayne to hym.

In no. dñi. M. iiii. C. lxiii.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxiiii.

Robert Basset.

Wat hewe Phylyp Goldsmyth.

Anno. iii.

Thomas Muschampe.

IN this yere & moneth of May, whyche was in the begynnyng of the .iiii. yere of kyng Edwarde/ the lorde Johñ of Mountagu haynge than the rule in the northe partyes, herynge warned of the commynge of Henry late kynge wyth a greate power out of Scotlande, assembled the Northymmen, and mette wyth hym about Erhm, and there skyrmysshed wyth þ Scottes, & at length wan þ victory of hys enemyes / and chased Henry so nere, that he wan from hym certayne of hys folowers trapped wyth blewe velurt, and hys bycoket garnysshed wyth two crownes of golde and fret wyth perle and tyche stone.

He also toke at the sayd iourney þ duke of Somerset, the lorde Hunger forde, & the lorde Roos. whych sayde duke was shortly after put to deth at the sayd towne of Erhm / & the other ii. lordes were soon after beheded at new

new castell. And other whyche were after that fyghe taken in a wood fast by, as syr Phylipp wetwoxth, syr Edmond Fitz knyghtes, Blacke Jaquis Johñ Bryce, & Thomas Hunt/were also put to deth at Exhñ forsayd or Wyddelham after some wrpters/& syr Thomas Huley knyght was beheded at yorke. And in the moneth of July next folowyng, the sayde lorde Mountagu wyth ayde of hys brother erle of warwyke, wan by strēgth the forenamed castel of Bamburgth/ wherin as one of the said capitaynes was taken wyth other, syr Raulfe Gray/ whyche shortly after at yorke was drawen hanged & quartered.

In such passe tyme in moste secret maner vpon the fyrste daye of May, kynge Edwarde spoused Elizabeth late the wyfe of syr Johan Graye knyghte/ whyche before tyme was slayne at Towerton or yorke felde. whych spousayles were solempnised erely in the morynge at a towne named Graston nere vnto Stonyngestratforde. At whyche maryage was no persones present, but the spouse, the spousesse, the duches of Bedford her mother, the preste, two gentylwomen, & a yong mā to helpe the prieste synge. After whyche spousayles ended/he wēt to bedde, & so taried there vpon.iii.or.iiii.houres/ and after departed and rode agayne to Stonyng stratforde, and came in maner as though he had ben on huntyng, and there went to bedde agayne. And wythin a daye or.ii.after, he sente to Graston to the lorde Ryuers father vnto hys wyfe, shewyng to hym, that he wolde come and lodge wyth hym a certayne season/ where he was receyued wyth all honoure, & so taryed there by the space of foure dayes. In whyche season he nyghtely to hys bedde was brought, in so secrete maner that almooste none but her mother was of counsayll. And so thys maryage was a season kepte secrete after, tyll nedely it muste be dyscouered & dysclosed, by meane of other whyche were offered vnto the kyng, as the quene of Scottes & other. what oblyquy ran after of thys maryage, howe the kyng was enchaunted by the duchesse of Bedforde, and howe after he wolde haue refused her wyth many other thynges concernynge thys matter/ I here passe it ouer.

And thys yere was kynge Henry taken in a wood in the north countre by one named Cantlowe, and presented to the kynge/ and after sente to the towre, where he remayned longe after.

Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxiiii. Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxv.

Johñ Tate.

Raulfe Josselyne Draper. Anno.iiii.

Johñ Stone.

In this yere was a new coyne ordeyned by ꝑ kyng, ꝑ whyche was named ꝑ Royall/ & was & yet is in value of.x.s̄.the halfe royal.v.s̄/& the ferthyng.ii.s̄.vi.d. And ouer ꝑ he ordeyned ꝑ seuēth coyne of golde & named it ꝑ angel, which was & yet is in value of.vi.s̄.viii.d̄/& the half angel iii.s̄.iiii.d̄. He ordeyned also a newe coyne of grotes, halfe grotes, & pens whych were of lasse weyght than the olde grote was by.viii.dr.in an vnce. And thā was fyne golde auaūsed frō s̄.to.xi.s̄ an vnce/ & other baser goldes after ꝑ rate. And syluer that before was at.viii.grotes and .xxx.d̄.

an

an vnce, was hyghed to.xl.d. an vnce and.iii.s.ii.d.

And in thys mayres yere and begynnyng of the.v.yere, that is to say the.xxvi.day of May that yere whyt sonday/quene Elizabeth was crowned at westmynster wyth great solempnytie. At the whyche season at the towre/the nyghte before the coronacyon/amonge many knyghtes of the bathe there made, was as of that cõpany syr Thomas Cooke, syr Mathewe Phylpp, syr Rauffe Josselyne, and syr Henry wauyr cytezyns of Lõdon thanne and there made knyghtes.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxv. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxvi.

Syr Henry wauyr.

Rauffe Verney Mercer. Anno.v.

wyllyam Constantyne.

IN thys yere, that is to saye the xi.daye of the moneth of Februarye/was Elizabeth pryncesse and fyrste chylde of kyng Edward borne at westmynster. whose crystenynge was done in the abbaye wyth moche solempnyte. And the more, bycause the kynge was assured of hys physycyons that the quene was conceyued wyth a prynce/and specyally of one named mayster Dominyk, by whose counsayll greate prouysyon was ordeyned for crystenynge of the sayde prynce. wherfore it was after tolde, that thys mayster Dompnyk to the entente to haue greate thanke and reward of the kynge/he stode in the second chamber where the quene trauayled, that he myghte be the fyrste that shulde bryngе tydynges to the kynge of the byrth of the prynce. And lastly whan he harde the chyld crye/he knocked or called secretly at ꝑ chãber dore, and frayned what the quene had. To whome it was answered by one of the ladyes, what so euer ꝑ quenes grace hathe here wythin/suer it is that a fole standeth there wythout. And so confused wyth hys answere/he departed wythoute sayenge of the kynge for that tyme.

Anno domini. M.iiii.C.lxvi. Anno domini. M.iiii.C.lxvii.

Johñ Browne.

Syr Johñ yonge Grocer. Henry Bryce. Anno.vi.

Johñ Stokton.

IN thys yere and moneth of ,dyed the forenamed Henry Bryce/and for hym was chosen immedyatly a sheryfe for thys yere Johñ Stokton. And in the moneth of Juny folowynge, were certayne actes and feates of warre doone in Smythfeld, betwene syr Antony wydeuyle called lorde Scalys vpõ that one partye, and the bastarde of Burgoyne chalengour on that one partye. Of whych the lord Scalys wan the honour/for the sayd bastard was at the fyrste course rennynge wyth a sharpe sperys ouerthrowen horse & man. whyche was by the rage of the horse of the sayd bastarde, and nat by violence of the stroke of hys enemy/& by a pyke of iron standyng vppon forepartе of the sadell of ꝑ lord Scalys. wherwyth the horse beyng blynd of the bastarde was stryken into the nose thyrlles, and for payne thereof mounted so hyghe vpon the hynder

fete,

fete, that he fyll bakwarde. Upon the seconde daye they met there agayne vpon fote, and faughte wyth theyr ares a fewe strokes. But whan the kynge sawe that the lorde Scalys had auauntage of the bastarde, as ꝑ poynt of hys are in the vysour of his enemyes helmet, and by force therof was lykely to haue borne hym ouer: the kyng in hast cryed to such as had the rule of the felde, that they shulde departe them / and for more spede of the same, caste downe a warderer whych he than helde in hys hande/ & so were they departed to the honour of the lorde Scalys for bothe dayes. Upon the morow folowynge & the other dayes, were certayne actes of warre done betwene dyuers gentylmen of thys lande, and certayne of the sayd bastardes seruauntes. Of the whyche also the Englyshmen wan the honour. In thys yere also one named Johñ Derby alderman, for so moche as he refused to cary or to pape for the carpage awaye of a dede dogge lyenge at hys dore, & for vnsittynge langage whyche he gaue vnto the mayre/he was by a court of aldermen demed to a fyne of.l.poũde whyche he payde euery peny.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxvii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxviii.

Humfrey Heyforde.

Thomas Owlegraue. Anno.viii.

Thomas Stalbroke.

IN thys yere of the mayre, and in the begynnynge of the.viii. yere of thys kyng Edwarde, that is to meane vpon saterday next ensuig the feest of corpus christi/dame Margarete syster vnto the kyng, rode thorugh London towarde the sees syde to passe into Flaunders, there to be maryed to Charlys duke of Burgoyne before named in the story of ꝑ ri.Lowys kyng of Fraũce. After whose departure, syr Thomas Cook late mayre, which before was perched of treason by a seruaũt of the lordes wenlokkes called Hawkyns, and at the request of the sayd lady Margarete vppon suertie suffered to go at large/than was arrested & sent vnto the towre, & his goodes sealed by the lorde Ryuerse than tresourer of Englande/and hys wyfe put oute of hys house, and comptted to the charge of the mayer / in whose place she laye a season after. And after the sayde syr Thomas had lyen a tyme in ꝑ towre he was brought vnto the Guyldhall, and there areygned of the sayde treason and quyt by sondry enquestes / & after that commytted vnto the countour in Bradstrete, and frome thens to the kynges bẽche in Southwark. where he laye wythin the sayd prysõ tyll hys freendes agreed wyth syr Johñ Brandon than kepar of ꝑ sayd prysõ, to take hym home to hys place where to hys great charge he remayned as prysoner longe after. In whych tyme and season he lost moch good / for bothe hys places in the countre and also in London were vnder the gydynge of the sayde lordes Ryuers seruauntes, and of the seruauntes of syr Johñ Fogge than vndertresourer/the whych spoyled & dystroyed moche thynge.

And ouer that moche of hys iewelles and plate wyth great substaunce of the marchaundyse, as cloth of sylkes and clothes of aras, were dyscouered by suche persones as he hadde betaken the sayd goodes to kepe / & came to ꝑ treasourers handes, whych

to the sayd syr Thomas was a great enemye. And fynally after many persecucyons and losses / was compelled as for a fyne sette vppon hym for offence of myspryson, to paye, vnto the kynge. viii. thousand pound. And after he hadde thus agreed, and was at large for the kynges interest / he was thanne in newe trouble agayne the quene.

The whyche demaunded of hym as hys ryght, for euery thousande. li. payde vnto the kyng by way of fyne, an hundreth marke. For the whiche he had after longe sute and greate charge / and in conclusion was fayne to agre, and to gyue to her a greate pleasure / beside many good gyftes that he gaue vnto her counsayll.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxviii.

wyllyam Taylour Grocer.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxix.

Symonde Smyth.

Anno. viii.

wyllyam Harpot.

THys yere and. xxi. day of Nouembre / a seruaunt of the dukes of Exceter named Rychard Sterys, after hys iugement was drawen thorugh the citie vnto the towre hyl, and there parted in two pesys / that is the hede from the body. And vpon the daye folowynge / two persones beyng named the one Poynys & that other Alforde, were drawē west ward to tyborne / and there whā they shuld haue ben hanged, there chartours were shewed and so preserued.

And about thys season or soon after / was the erle of Orenford, which before tyme was taken by a surmyse in telosy of treason awayted for and after deliuered. In the latter ende of this mayres yere, a. ix. yere of ꝑ king / the marchauntes eesterlynges were condempned vnto the marchauntes auenturers Englysshe, after longe & sumptuous erspences in the lawe & before the kynges counsayll / in. xiii. M. v. C. and. xx. li. whereof the payment was kept secret frome wryters.

In thys yere the dyssymuled fauoure, whiche betwene the kyng and the erle of warwyke had styll contynued syne the maryage of the quene, beganne to appere / in so moche that the erle withdrewe hym frome the kynge, and confedered vnto hym the duke of Clarence that before hadde maryed hys doughter.

whereupon the commons of the north beganne to rebell, and chase theym a capytayne, whome they had named Robyn of Ryddysdale. The whyche dyd many feates / and lastly bare hym so wysely, that he & hys cōpany were pardoned of the kyng. In the which rumour and styrryng / the lord Ryuers, and syr Johñ hys sonn, that before had maryed the old duchesse of Northfolke, lyenge at a place by Charynge crosse called the Muys, were taken by Lyncolnshyre men and brought vnto Northamtō, and there beheded.

Anno domini. M. iiii. C. lxix.

Rychard Lee Grocer.

Anno domini. M. iiii. C. lxx.

Rychard Gardyner.

Anno. ix.

Robert Drope.

Thys

THys yere soone after Alhalowen tyde, proclamacios were made thorugh the cytye of London, that the kynge hadde pardoned the Northymmé of theyr tyot / & aswell for the deth of the lorde Ryuers, as all displeasures by them before that tyme done. And soone vppon thys, a new ryzyng begá in Lyncolnshyre wherof the occasyoner was the lorde wellys, as the same than went. For whome the kynge sent by fayre meanes, promysyng hym to go safe and come safe as it was sayd. But trouth it is after hys comming to the kyng had he before suche promyse or nat, he was shortly after beheded.

Than in Februarye folowyng / by medyacyon of lordes a treatye of vnytie and concorde was laboured betwene the kyng & hys brother and the erle of warwyke. For whyche cause the sayd erle came thanne vnto London. And shortly after came the sayd duke, as vpon shrouesonday folowyng. And vpon the thursday folowyng, the kynge & the sayde duke mette at Baynardes castell, where ꝑ duchesse of yorke theyr mother than laye. In the whyche palleyme ꝑ erle of warwyke was retourned to warwyke / and there gadered to him such strẽgth as he myght make, as it was reported.

And in Lyncolnshyre / syr Robert wellys sonne vnto the lorde wellys before put to deth, in thys whyle had also assembled a greate bend of men, & purposed to gyue the kyng a felde. Of all whyche tydynges whãne the kynge was assertayned / he wyth his sayd brother the duke spedyhim northwarde / and in that whyle sente to the sayd syr Robert wellys, wyllyng him to sende home hys people, & come to hym, and he shulde haue hys grace. But that other answered that by like promyse hys father was dysceyued / and that shulde be hys example. But in conclusyon whan the kynge wyth hys power drewe nere vnto hi, he toke suche fere that he fledde / and soone after was taken, and with him syr Thomas Dymmok knyght and other, the whyche were shortly after put to deth.

In thys season was the duke of Clarence departed frome the kynge / and was gone vnto the erle of warwyke to take hys parte. To whome the kynge in lykewyse sente, ꝑ they shuld come to hys presence wythout fere / where vnto they made a fayned answere. And than consyderynge theyr lacke of power agayne ꝑ kyng / departed and wente to the see syde, & so sayled into Fraunce / and requyred the.ri. Lowys than kyng of that regyon, that he wolde ayde and assyste them to restore kynge Henry to hys rightfull enheritaunce. wherof the sayd Lowys beyng gladde, graũted vnto them theyr requeste / & helde thẽ there, whyle they wyth the counsayll of quene Margarete prouyded for theyr retourne into Englande.

whan the sayde lordes were thus departed the lande / the kyng cõmaũded them to be proclaymed as rebelles and traytours thorugh oute hys realm. And in the Easter weke folowynge / syr Geffrey Gate & one named Claphã, whyche entended at Southampton to haue taken shyppynge & to haue sayled to the sayde lordes, were there taken by the lorde Hawarde and sente vnto warde. whych sayde Clapham was beheded soone after / and the sayde syr Geffrey Gate fande suche frendshyp, that lastly he escaped or was deliuered / so that he yode after to seyntwary.

Thanne was the lorde of sayncte Johns arrested. But at instaunce of the archebyshop of Caunterbury, he went a season at large vnder suerty,

and was fynally commytted to the towre. In whych passetyme the erle of Orenforde gat ouer vnto the fore sayd lordes. Thus endurynge thys trouble/a stirrynge was made in the north partyes by the lord Fitz Hugh wherfore the kyng sped hym thyderwarde. But so soone as the sayd lord knewe of the kynges cõmyng/anone he lefte hys people & fledde into Scotlande. And the kyng whych thã was commyn to yorke, rested hym a season there and there about.

In the moneth of September the.x. yere of the kyng/the forsayd duke of Clarence accõpanyed wyth the erles of warwyke of Penbroke & of Orenforde & other many gentylmen, landed at Dartmouth in Deuynshyre/& there made theyr proclamacyons in the name of kyng Henry the.vi/and so drewe ferther into the lãde. wherof herynge the commons of that coũtre & other/ drewe vnto theym by greate companyes.

Than the Kentyshemen beganne to were wylde/& assembled theym in great companyes, and so came vnto the out partyes of the cytye of London, Radclyffe, saynte Katherynes, and other places, & robbed and spoyled the Flemynges and all the bere houses there as they came.

Thã the forsayde lordes holding on theyr tournaye/ drewe towarde ỹ kynge beyng in the northe as aboue is sayde. wherof he beyng warned, and haupng wyth hym as than but small strength wherof some to hym were nat verp trusty/he wyth a secret company toke the nert waye toward the wash in Lyncolneshyre/and there passed ouer wyth great daunger, nat wythout losse of dyuers of hys company/and so passed the coũtrees into Flaunders, and stynted nat tyll he came to Charles hys brother thanne duke of Burgoyne/wyth whome he rested a season. whã the quene which than was in the towre harde of the kynges auoydynge/anone she departed frome thens and yode vnto westmynster, and there regystred her selfe for a seyntwary woman/ and in lyke wyse dyd many of kynge Edwardes frendes.

And than about the begynnynge of Octobre/syr Geffrey Gate that till that tyme had holden the sayde seyntwary and other wyth hym, wente vnto the prysons aboute London/ & all suche as they had fauoure vnto, toke them out and sette them at lyberte. And than shypmen & other cupll dysposed persones as than drewe to the sayd Geffrey Gate/robbed agayn the berehouses, & set some of them in fyre/ and after resorted vnto the gates of the cytye, & there wolde haue entred by force. But the cytezeyns wythstode theym wyth suche force, that they were compelled to departe thens.

Upon the.xii. day of October, the towre was gyuẽ vp by appoyntmẽt/ & kyng Henry was takẽ from the lodgyng where he before laye, and was than lodged in the kynges lodgyng wythin the sayde towre. In whyche passetyme the duke & the forsayd lordes drewe nere vnto the cytye.

And vpon saterday than nerte folowyng/the sayd duke accompanied wyth ỹ erles of warwyke & of Shrewsbury and the lord Stanley, rode vnto the towre/ and there wyth all honour and reuerence set out kynge Henry, & conueyed hym to Poulys/& there lodged hym in the bysshoppes palays/ & so was thã admytted & taken for kyng thorugh all the lande.

Readoptio Henrici. vi.

HEnri ỹ.vi. of that name before by Edwarde ỹ.iiii. put down, was

was agayne reſtored to the crowne of Englande, the. daye of Octobre, in the yere of grace .M.iiii. C.lxix/ and the.x. yere of Edwarde ỹ iiii/ & the.xii. yere of the.xii. Lowys than kynge of Fraunce.

In whoſe begynnyng of readoption, the erle of worceter whych for hys cruelneſſe was called the bochier of England/was taken and putte in ſtreyght pryſon. And vppon the xv.daye of October, was the ſayde erle aregned at weſtmynſter in the whyte hall, and there endyted of treaſon/and vpon the mõdaye folowyng adiuged that he ſhulde go frome the ſame place vnto the towre hylle, and there to haue hys hede ſmytten of. But as he was commynge from the ſayde place of iugemente toward his execucyon/the people preſyd ſo inportunately vpon hym for to ſe & beholde hym, that the ſherefes were fayne to tourne into the Flete, and there to bowe gayoll for hym for that nyght. And vpon the morowe after at after noone beynge ſaynt Lukys day and xviii.daye of Octobre/ he was ladde to the towre hylle/ where he toke his deth full pacyently. whoſe corps was after borne wyth the hedde vnto the blacke freres, and there honourably burged in a chapell ſtandynge in the body of the churche whych he before tyme had founded. And than was daply awaytynge vpon the ſee ſyde, for the landyng of quene Margaret and prynce Edwarde her ſonne/ and alſo prouyſyon made for the defence of landynge of kynge Edwarde and hys company.

Anno domini .M.iiii.C.lxx.

Johñ Croſby.

Johñ Stoktoñ.mercer.

Johñ warde.

Anno domini. M.iiii. C.lxxi.

Anno Henrici.vi.primo.

Anno Edwardi.iiii.r.

IN thys yere, whyche was in ỹ ende of the.x.yere of kyng Edwarde, and beginnyng of the readoption of kyng Henry, that is to meane the thyrde daye of Nouembre/quene Elizabeth beynge as before is ſayde in weſtmynſter leyntwary, was lyght of a fayre prynce. And wythin the ſayd place the ſayd chylde wythout pope was after cryſtened. whoſe godfathers were the abbot & pryour of the ſayd place, & the lady Scrope godmother. And the.xxvi.daye of the ſayd moneth folowyng, began a parlyament/ & frome thens proroged to Paulys, where it cõtynued tyll Criſtmas. In the parlyamente ſyr Thomas Cooke before trowbeled as I haue ſhewed in the.vii.yere of kynge Edwarde, put in a byll into the common houſe, to be reſtored of the lorde Ryuers landes & other occaſyoners of hys trowble, to the ſumme of.xii. M.marke. Of the whyche he hadde good comforte to haue ben allowed of kynge Henry, if he had proſpered/ and the rather, for that that he was of the commõ houſe, and therwyth a man of great boldneſſe in ſpeche and well ſpoken, & ſyngulerly wytted & well reaſoned.

Than durynge thys parlyament/ kyng Edward was proclaymed diuerter of the crowne, and the duke of Glouceter hys ponger brother traytour/ & both attaynted by auctorytie of the ſayd parlyament.

And vppon the.xiiii.daye of Febryary came the duke of Exceter to London. And the.xxvii. daye of ỹ ſayde moneth, rode the erle of warwyke thorugh ỹ citie toward Douer

for to haue receyued quene Margarete/but he was dyspoynted. For the wynde was to her contrary, that she laye at the see syde tarying for a conuenyent wynde, from Nouember tyl Apryll. And so the sayde erle after he had longe taryed for her at the see syde/ was fayne to retourne without spede of hys purpose.

Thus duryng thys queysy season/ the mayre ferynge the retourne of kynge Edwarde fayned hym syke/ & so kepte hys house a great season. All whych tyme syr Thomas Cooke whyche than was admytted to hys former rome, was sette in his place, and allowed for hys deputye/whych tourned after to hys greate trowble and sorowe.

Than fynally in the begynnynge of the moneth of Apryll/ kynge Edwarde landed in the north at a place called Rauynspore wyth a small cõpany of Flemynges and other, so þ all hys company excede nat the nõber of .M. persones/ & so drewe hym towarde yorke, makyng hys proclamacyons as he wente in the name of kyng Henry/ and shewed to the people, that he came for none entent but onely to clayme hys enherytaunce þ dukedome of yorke/ & so passed the countres tyll he came to the cytye of yorke, where the cytezyns helde hym oute tyll they knew hys entent. And whan he had shewed vnto theym as he before had done vnto other, & confermed it by an othe/he was there receyued and refresshed for a certayne tyme, & so departed & helde his waye towarde London/ and passed by fauoure & fayer wordes the daũger of the lorde Marquys Mountagu, whyche in that costes laye than in awayte for hym purposely to stoppe hys way, & had people dowble of nõbre that kyng Edwarde had of fyghtynge men. whã kyng Edwarde was thus passed the sayd Marquys, and sawe that hys strength was greatly amended, & that also dayly the people drewe to hym/ he than made proclamacyons in hys owne name as kyng of Englande/ & so helde on hys iournay tyll he came vnto London. In whyche passetyme, that is to meane vpon sherethursdaye/ the archebysshoppe of yorke beynge than at London wyth kyng Henry, to the entent to moue the peoples hertes towarde þ kyng/ rode about the towne wyth hi, and shewed hym to the people/ the whyche rather withdrewe mẽnes hertes than other wyse. And in thys season also syr Thomas Cooke before-named auoyded the lande/ entendyng to haue sayled into Fraunce. But he was taken of a shyp of Flaunders, & hys sonne & heyre wyth hym/ and so sette there in prysson many dayes/ & lastly was delyuered vnto kyng Edwarde.

Than vpon sherethursdaye at after noone, kynge Edwarde was receyued into the cytye/ and so rode to Poulys, and there offered at þ roode of the north doore/and that done rode incontynently into the bysshoppes palays, where he fande kynge Henry almoste alone. For all such lordes and other as in the mornynge were about hym, whan they harde of kyng Edwardes commynge, anone they fledde, and euery man was fayne & gladde to saue hym selfe. Than kyng Edwarde lodged hym/ where kynge Henry laye, & put hym vnder safe kepynge/ and soo rested hym there tyll Easter euyn. Vpon the whyche euyn, herynge of hys brothers cõmynge & þ other lordes wyth hym wyth a strõg hoste vnto saynt Albons/ sped hym thyderward, & lay that nyght at Barnet. In whyche season the duke of Clarence contrary hys othe and promyse made vnto the Frenche

kynge,

kynge refused the tytle of kyng Henry/and sodaynly wyth the strengthe that he hadde, rode streyghte vnto hys brother kynge Edwarde/ wherwith the other lordes were somdeale abasshed. The whyche not wythstandynge/the sayd lordes, by the spery all comforte and exortacyon of the erle of Orenford as it was sayde, helde on theyr iournay toward Bernet, the sayd erle of Orenford beyng in the vawarde / and so came vnto ꝑ playne without Bernet, and there pyght theyr felde. Then vpon ꝑ morowe beynge Easter daye a the. xiiii. daye of Apryll very erly, both hostes mette. wherupō that one party were two knyges present, as Hery the. vi. whych kynge Edward had brought thyder with hym, and kyng Edward the. iiii. And vpon that other partye was the duke of Exceter, the lorde Marquys Mountagu, and the two erlys of warwyke and of Orenford, wyth many other men of name.

There the sayd erle of Orenforde and his company quyt them so manfully, that he bare ouer that parte of the feeld whyche he sette vppon / so forthwyth ꝑ tydynges came to London, that kynge Edwarde had losse the felde. And yf hys men had kepte theyr araye a not fallen to pyllyng/ lykely it hadde bene as it was after tolde, that the victory hadde fallen to that partye. But after longe and cruell fyght, in conclusyon kyng Edwarde optayned the vpper hande, a slewe of hys ennemyes the marques Mountagu and the erle of warwyk hys brother, wyth many other. And vppon the kynges party was slayne the lorde Barnes. And of the comōs vppon bothe partyes were slayne vpon. xv. C. men and mo.

Of the mystes and other impedymentes whyche fyll vpon the lordes party by reason of the incantacyons wrought by freyer Būgey as ꝑ fame wēt, me lyst not to wryte. But trouth it is that after thys victory thus wonne by kynge Edwarde/ he sente the dede corps of the sayd Marquys and erle of warwyke vnto Poulys chyrche / where they laye two dayes after naked in .ii. coffyns that euery man myghte beholde and se theym. And the same after none came kyng Edwarde agayn vnto London, and offered at ꝑ roode of the North dore at Poulys/ and after rode vnto west mynster and there lodged hym. And soone after that the kynge was thus passed thorough the cyty, was kyng Henry brought rydynge in a longe gowne of blewe veluet / and so conueyed thoroughe Chepe vnto westmynster, and frome thens vnto the Towre/ where he remayned as prysoner all hys lyues tyme after.

The repossessyon of Edwarde the. iiii.

EDward the. iiii. before named began agayne his domynyon ouer the realme of England, the. xiiii. daye of Apryll, in ꝑ begynnyng of the yere of our lord. M. iiii. C. lxxi/ a the .xii. yere of Lewys the Frenche kynge / and repossessed all thynges as he before hadde done. And when the sayde two corps hadde lyen in Poules openly from the Mondaye tyll the Tuysdaye / they were hadde from thens a buryed where ꝑ kynge wolde assygne them.

The kynge then beynge in authoryte/made prouysyon for the defence of the landynge of quene Margaret and hyr sonne / the whyche all thys whyle laye at the see syde tarynge the wynde / and so lastely landed at , and came with a strength of Frenchmē a other, as farre within

the lande as to a vyllage in called Tewkysbury. where the kyng mette wyth her and hyr dystressyd, & chasyd her company and slewe many of them. In the whyche batayle she was taken, & syr Edward her sonne/ and so brought vnto the kynge. But after the kynge had questyoned with the sayd syr Edwarde, and he hadde answered vnto hym cõtrary his pleasure/ he thenne strake hym wyth hys gaunteiet vpon the face. After whiche stroke so by hym receyued/ he was by the kynges seruauntes incõtynently slayne vpon the. iiii. daye of the moneth of May.

whan kynge Edwarde had thus subdued hys enemyes/ anone he sent quene Margarete vnto London, where she restyd a season/ and fynally she was sent home into her countre. And the goodes of syr Thomas Cook were agayne ceasyd/ and hys wyfe put forth, and commaunded to be kepte at the mayers.

Uppon the. xiiii. daye of May folowynge/ the bastarde of Fawconbrydge, that vnto hym had gadered a rybaudous and cuyll dysposyd companye of shypmen and other, wyth also the assystence of ỳ comons both of Essex and of Kent/ came in greate multytude vnto the cyty of London. And after that the sayd cõpany was denyed passage thorough the cytye/ they set vpõ dyuers partyes therof, as Bysshoppes gate, Algate, Londõ brydge, and alonge the waters syde, and shotte gonnes and arowes, and fyred the gates wyth cruell malyce, as Bysshops gate and Algate/ and caught so fyersly that they wanne ỳ dulwerkes at Algate, and entred a certayne wythin the gate. But the cytesyns wyth comfort and ayde of Robert Basset alderman assygned to the gate/ wythstode the sayd rebelles so manfully, that they slewe all such as entred the gate/ and compellyd ỳ other to drawe a backe and forsoke the gate. Uppon whom the cytesyns pursued/ and chased theym vnto the forther Stratforde, and slewe & toke many of them prysoners.

wherof herynge the other whyche assayled the other partes of the cytie, fledde in lyke wyse. whom the other cytesyns pursued as farre as Depforde, in sleynge and takyng of them prysoners in great nomber, and after them raunsomed as they hadde ben Frenchemen. And the bastarde with hys shyppmẽ were chasyd vnto theyr shyppes lyeynge at Blackwall/ and there in the chase many slayne. And the sayde bastarde the nyghte folowynge stale out hys shyppes out of ỳ ryuer/ and so departed and escaped for the tyme.

Than vpon Assencyon euyn next ensuynge, the corps of Henry the. vi. late kynge was brought vnreuerently from the tower thorough the high stretes of the cyty vnto Poulys chyrche, and there lefte that nyght/ and vppon the morowe conueyed wyth gleyues and other wepens as he before thyder was brought vnto Chertsey, and there was buryed.

Of the deth of this prince dyuers tales were tolde. But the moste comon fame went, that he was stycked wyth a dagger by the handes of the duke of Gloucester/ whyche after Edwarde the. iiii. vsurped the crowne, and was kyng as after shall appere.

Than kyng Edwarde after thys victory thus hadde at Tewkesbury, retourned vnto London/ and vpon the mondaye folowynge Assencyon daye, he toke hys iournay into Kent, hauyng with hym a strength of people/ and there sette hys iustyces, and made inquysycyons of the ryot before done by the bastarde and hys adherentes. For the whyche at Cauntorbury

terbury and other good townes in Kent, dyuers were put in execucyon. Of whom the hedes were sent vnto London, and set vpon the brydge. And in lyke maner inquysycion were made in Eſſex/and some also of them put in execucyon. Of whyche a cappytayne named Sppsynge was hanged, and hys hede set vpon Algate. And many of the ryche commons of Kent were set at greuous fynes, both for them selfe and for theyr seruauntes. And when the kyng hadde thus spedde his iournaye/ he retourned & came to Londō vpon whytson euyn. And that done, soone after was bysshop Neuyll archebysshop of yorke sent vnto Guynes, and there kepte as prysoner longe after. Thys was brother to the lorde marquys Wōtagu and to the erle of warwycke.

Also in the ende of thys mayers yere, was the forenamed bastarde of Fawconbrydge taken about Southamton, and there put to execucyō. whose hed was sent to London, and pyght vpon London brydge among other.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxxi. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxxii.

Johñ Aleyn.

wyllyam Edwarde Grocer. Anno.xi.

Johñ Chelley.

IN thys yere the erle of Orenforde, whych syn the season of Barnet felde hadde holden saynte Mygheliys mounte / was by an appoyntement taken thens, and shortely after sente to the castell of Guynes. where he remayned prysoner tyl the last yere of Rycharde the thyrde, whyche was vppon.xiii.yeres. In all whyche season my lady hys wyfe myghte neuer be suffered to come to hym/nor hadde any thynge to lyue vpon, but as the people of theyr charytees wold gyue to her, or what she myghte get wyth her nedell or other suche connyng as she exercysed.

Anno domini. M.iiii.C.lxxii. Anno domini. M.iiii.C.lxxiii.

Johñ Browne.

wyllyam Hampton Fyshemonger. Anno.xii.

Thomas Bledlow.

IN thys yere vpon the fyrst day of October, beganne a parlyament at westmynster. By authorite wherof an ayde was graūted to the kynge, towarde the greate charge of hys warres/the whyche was leuyed of mennes landes, as well of lordes as other.

This mayre aboue all other, corrected sore bawdes & strumpettes/& caused theym to be ladde aboute the towne with raye hoddes vpon theyr heddes dyuers & many / and spared none for mede nor for fauour þ were by the lawe attayned / not withstandyng that he myghte haue taken. xl. li. of redy money to hym offered, for to haue spared one from ȳ iugemēt.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxxiii. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxxiiii.

wyllyam Stocker.

Johñ Tate Mercer. Anno.xiii.

Robert Byllysdon.

In thys

IN thys yere was the duke of Exceter founden deed in the see betwene Douer & Calays / but how he was drowned the certaynte is not knowen.

In thys mayers yere also was one wyllyam Oldhall condempned, vnto a draper of Londō called Chrystofer Colyns. For the whych condempnacyon he remayned as prysoner in Ludgate. wherupō a season he went at large wyth a keper / he brake from hym, and so escaped / and after was taken and broughte agayne to the sayd prysone. But that not wythstandynge the sayde Chrystofer sued the sheryffes, and caused them to spende great money in defendyng of hys accyon / and fynally were fayne by way of compremyse to gyue vnto hym an hundreth marke for hys duprye of lxxx.li. and odde.

And in thys yere was one Johñ Goos a loller brent at ỳ Tower hyll for heresye / the whyche before dyner was delyuered to Robert Billydon one of the sheryffes to put in execucyon that same after none. wherfore he lyke a charytable man hadde hym home to his house, and there exorted hym that he shulde dye a crystenman and renye his fals errours. But that other after longe exortacyon herde, requyred the sheryffe that he myghte haue mete / for he sayde that he was sore hungred. Then the sheryffe commaunded hym mete / wherof he toke as he had ayled nothynge / and sayd to suche as stode about hym: I eate now a good and competent dyner / for I shall passe a lytle sharp shower or I go to souper. And when he had dyned he requyred that he myghte shortely be ladde to hys execucyon.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxxiiii.

Robert Drop Draper

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxxv.

Edmonde Shaa.

Anno. xiiii.

Thomas Hylle.

THys yere the kynge entendyng to make a vyage ouer see into Fraunce called before hym his lordes seuerally bothe spyrytuall & temporall, to know theyr good myndes, what of theyr free wylles they wolde ayde and depart wyth hym to warde the sayd vyage. And after he hadde so knowen theyr good dyspocyon to hym warde / he then sent for the mayre of London and hys brotherne the aldermen, and them seuerally examyned and exorted to ayde & assyst hym toward the sayd iournay. Of whyche the mayre for hys parte graunted. xxx. li / and of the aldermen some. xx. marke / and the leest. x. li.

And that done he sent for all the trusty comoners wythin the sayde cytye / and them exorted in lyke maner. whyche for the more party graūted to hym the wages of halfe a man for a yere. The whyche amounted to iiii. M. xl. li. iiii. c. And after ỳ he rode about the more parte of the lande, & vsed the people in such fayre maner, that he reysed therby notable sumes of money. The whyche waye of the leuyeng of thys money was after named a benyuolence.

Then the kyng thus hauyng this greate substaunce of goodes, made puruyaunce for the sayd iournaye. And vppon the. iiii. daye of July folowyng, in the. xb. yere of his reygne rode with a goodly cōpany thorugh the cytye towarde the see syde / and so spedde hym to Caleys, and frome thens into Fraunce. wherof herynge Lewys the French kynge / assembled hys

hys people in greate nomber, and so spedde hym toward the kynge. But when bothe hostes were met/ within shorte space suche offers of a peas were proferyd by the Frenche kyng, that fynally bothe prynces agreed vpon a pease to be had for the terme of both theyr lyues, and a yere after, as some wryters haue. For the perfourmaunce of whyche sayde pease/ bothe prynces after met vpon ỹ day of the Decollacyon of sayntę Johñ the baptyste or the. xxix. daye of Auguste, at a place named in Frenche Pynpak/ and the. iiii. daye of Nouẽber as affermeth Gaguinus. But ỹ can not stande wyth/ for kynge Edwarde was receyued agayn into Lõdon after his retourne out of Fraũce the. xxviii. daye of September. At thys place was a ryuer/ vppon the whych a brydge was made such wyse, that bothe prynces theron myght mete, wyth suche company as eyther for them had appoynted. There also was ordeyned a place with a partycyon betwene both prynces, ỹ nother of them myghte entre vnto other/ but made wyth a lowpe, that eyther myghte se other & take eyther other by the hande.

Where at the daye lympted, eyther mette wyth other hostes standynge a certayne distaunce from the ryuers syde in conuenyent araye. Then the sayde kynges there after salutacyon due made, eyther to other had longe cõmunycacyon. In conclusyon wher of, as sayth Gaguyne, a peas was cõfyrmed betwene bothe realmes for vii. yeres. For perfourmaũce wherof as affermeth the sayde authour/ the Frenche kynge gaue vnto kyng Edward incõtinently. lxxv. M. crownes of golde/ and yerely after durynge ỹ sayde. vii. yeres. l. M. crownes. And so he receyued in hande accomptyng euery crowne at. iiii. s. ỹ. M. li. and yerely after. x. M. li/ whych sayde. x. M. li. the sayd Frẽche kyng borowed of his cytesyns of Parys. After thys treuce and peas thus concluded betwene these two prynces/ anone after theyr sonderyng, proclamaciõs were made therof thorough bothe hostes/ and commaundement gyuen to the capptayns, that they shulde prouyde for theyr retourne homewarde. And soone vppon the French kynge sent vnto the dukes of Clarence and of Glouceter with other lordes such as were in kynge Edwardes fauour, greate and costyous gyftes. Of the nyse and wanton dysgysed apparell that kyng Lewys ware vppon hym at that tyme of his metyng I myght make a longe reherssall. But for it shulde sownde more to dyshonour of suche a noble man, that was apparayled more lyker a mynstrell thã a prynce royall/ therfore I passe it ouer. For all be it ỹ he was so newfangyll in his clothynge/ yet had he many vertues. wherof largesse was one/ as it appered by sondy gyftes, which he gaue vnto sõdry straũgers, which in his story somdeale I haue towchyd. And also his bounty appered by a gyfte ỹ he gaue vnto ỹ lorde Hastynges than lord chãberlayn/ as xviii. dosen of bollys, wherof halfe were gylt & half whyte/ which weyed vpõ. xvii. nobles euery cup or more.

Thẽ to retourne vnto kynge Edward/ trouth it is ỹ after ỹ cõformacyon of ỹ forsayde peas, kynge Edward returned to Calys & there shypped/ & so sped hym ỹ vpon the. xxviii. day of Septẽber folowynge, he was with great tryumphe receyued of the mayre & cytesyns of Londõ at Blakheth, & with all honour by them conueyed thorough the cytye vnto westmynster/ the mayre and aldermen beynge cladde in scarlet, and the comoners to ỹ nomber of. v. C. in murrey.

Anno

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxv. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxvi.

Hugh Bryce.

Robert Ballet Salter Anno.xv.

Robet Colwych

THys yere this mayre dyd sharp correccyon vppon bakers for makynge of lyght brede / in so moch that he set dyuers vpon ỹ pyllory. Amonge the whyche in the moneth of Johñ Mondue baker was there punysshed. And in the moneth of one named wyllyã Hubbard was also there shrynked for lyke offence. And a woman named Agnes Deynty was also there punisshed for selling false myngyd butter.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxxvi. Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxxvii.

Rychard Rawlon.

Rauffe Josselyn Draper. Anno.xvi.

wyllyam Horne.

IN this yere the mayre hauyng a great mynde to haue the walles of the cytye repayred/by a cõsente of the benche and of the comyn coũsayle, caused the Moore felde to be serched, and there prouyded for bryk & lyme. Is fyrste caused the erthe to be dyggyd and tempred, and then sette men on werke to moolde/and thenne sent into the west countre and there purueyed wode for to bren it. And that done sente into Kent, and there purueyed chalke, that shortely was brought into the sayde Moore felde. And ryght there in a kylle whych he in that season hadde prouyded, was brent and made lyme of a great fortheraunce of that werke.

The mayre then beynge purueyed of bryk and also of lyme, the whyche was brent within the sayd moore/ caused by consent of a comen counsayle to be graunted, that in euery paryshe chyrche euery Sondaye, euery paryshon shulde pay toward the charge .b.d. And for an ensample to other felyshyppes / he caused his owne company to make as myche of the walle as strechyth frome the chyrche of Alhalowen wythin the sayde walle vnto Byshoppes gate. whyche prelydent caused other worshyppfull felyshyppes to make the other parter as now appereth newe made/and the more part therof done in thys yere by hys procurynge and callynge vppon of hym. whych was wonderfull that so myche shulde be spedde in one yere, consyderynge the purpaunce of the stuffe, whych had ben suffycyent for some man to haue purueyed for in an hole yere.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxvii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxviii.

Henry Colet.

Humfrey Heyforde Goldsmyth. Anno.xvii.

Johñ Stocker.

IN thys yere that is to meane the.xvii.daye of Februarye, the duke of Clarence and seconde brother to the kynge thanne beynge prysoner in the towre, was secretely put to deth and drowned in a barell of malueyse wythin the sayde towre. And thys mayre thys yere pursued

also

also the reparacyon of the wallys/ but not so dylygently as hys predecessour dyd/ wherfore it was not sped as it myghte haue bene. And also he was a syke and feble man, and had not so sharpe and quycke mynde as that other had. And one other cause was whych ensueth of a generalyte, that for the more partye one mayre wyll not fynysshe that thynge whych that other begynneth. For then they thynke be the dede neuer so good and profytable, that the honoure therof shalbe ascrybed to the begynner and not to the fynyssher. whyche lacke of charyte and desyre of veyn glory, causeth many good actes and dedes to dye and growe out of mynde, to ỹ greate decaye of the comon weale of the cytye.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxxviii. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxxix.

Robert Hardynge.

Rycharde Gardyner Mercer. Anno.xviii.

Robert Bykelde.

IN thys yere was great mortalyte and deth in London and many other partyes of thys realme/ the whyche began in the latter ende of Septembre in the precedynge yere/ and contynued in thys yere tyll the begynnynge of Nouember. In the whyche passe tyme dyed innumerable people in the sayde cytye, & many places ellys where.

In this yere also the mayre beyng at Poules knelyng in hys deuocyons at saynt Erkenwaldys shryne/ Robert Bykelde one of the shyrryffes vnaufsedly knelyd downe nyghe vnto the mayre. wherof the mayre after resonyd hym, & layde it to hys charge. But that other beynge somdele rude for lacke of connynge/ answered the mayre stubbernly, and wolde not be aknowe of hys offence. wherfore the mayre shewed hys behauour both of worde and dede vnto the benche/ by authorite wherof after ỹ mater had ben there at length debated, the sayd Robert was fyned at.l.pounde, to be payed towarde the reparacion of the conduytes.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxxix. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxxx.

Thomas Jlam.

Bartylmewe Jamys Draper. Anno.xix

Johñ warde.

IN this yere one called Robert Deynys, for that that he presumed to mary an Orphan wythout lycence of ỹ mayre and aldermen, was for that offence demyd to paye to the chamber as a fyne.xx.li.

And in the yere and moneth of /were. iiii. felowes hanged at the Towre hylle / and incontynently theyr bodyes wyth the gybbet brent vnto asshes. whych execucyon was, for that they robbed a chyrche, and entreated the sacramẽt of the aulter inreuerently.

Anno domini. M.iiii.C.lxxx. Anno domini. M.iiii.C.lxxxi.

wyllyam Danyell.

Johñ Browne. Anno.xx.

wyllyam Bacon.

Do. Thys

THys yere kynge Edwarde requyred great sūmes of money to hym to be lent of ꝑ cytesyns of London. To whom after dyuers assembles/they graūted to lende vnto hym .v. thousaude marke. For the leuyenge wherof, a man was chosen of euery ward/that is to weane. xxb. men. The whych. xxb. persons assembled in the Guyldhalle, sessyd all the cyty ouer wyth two persons of euery paryssh̄e to them assygned / whyche sayd .v. thousand marke was repayed in the yere folowynge.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxxvi.

wyllyam Haryat Draper.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxxvii.

Robert Cate.
wyllyam wykyng.
Rychard Chawry.

Anno. xxi.

THys yere in the moneth of February or ende of January, dyed wyllyam wykynge one of the sherryffes/for whom was imedyately chosen Rychard Chawry. And in the moneth July folowynge, ꝑ kyng rode on huntynge in to the forest of waltham/ where he commaūded the mayre wyth a certayne of hys brotherne to come, & to gyue attendaūce vppon hym wyth certayne comeners of the cytye. where when they were comyn/ the kynge caused the game to be brought before them/ so ꝑ they sawe course after course, and many a dere bothe rede & falowe to be slayne before them. And after that goodly dysporte was passyd/ the kynge commaunded hys officers to bringe the mayre and hys company vnto a pleasaūt lodge made all of grene bowys and garnysshed wyth tables & other thynges necessary/ where they were set at dyner, and serued wyth many deynty dysshes and of dyuers wynes good pleynty, as whyte rede and claret/and caused them to be set to dyner or he were serued of hys owne/ & ouer that caused the lorde chamberlayn wyth other lordes to hym assygned, to chere the sayde mayre and his company sondry tymes whyle they were at dyner/ & at they departynge gaue vnto them of venyson greate pleynty. And in ꝑ moneth of August folowynge, the kynge of hys greate bounte sente vnto the mayralle and her systers aldermennes wyfes two hartes and .vi. buckes, wyth a tonne of wyne to drynke wyth the sayd venyson. The whyche venyson & wyne was hadde vnto the drapers halle/ to whych place at a day assygned the mayre desyred the aldermē and theyr wyfes wyth sondry comoners / and there the venyson wyth many other good dysshes were eten, and the sayd wyne merely dronken. The cause of whyche bounty thus shewed by the kynge, was as moste men toke it, for that that the mayre was a marchaūt of wonderous auentures into many and sondry countrees. By reason wherof, the kynge had yerely of hym notable summes of money for hys customes, besyde other pleasures ꝑ he hadde shewed to the kynge before tymes.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxxviii.

Edmonde Shaa Goldsmyth.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxxviii.

wyllyam whyte.

Anno. xxii.

Johñ Mathewe.

Thys

THis yere, that is to meane of ꝑ mayre and begynnynge of the xxiii. yere of the kynge / at weſt mynſter vppon the. ix. daye of Apryll dyed the noble prynce Edwarde the iiii. late kynge of Englande. whoſe corps was after conueyed wyth due ſolemnyte vnto wyndſore, and there honourably buryed / when he hadde reygned to reken hys begynnynge out of the lande with all other tyme full. xxii. yeres, and as moch as from the. iiii. daye of Marche vnto the. ix. daye of Apryll / leuynge after hym. ii. ſonnes, that is to ſay prynce Edward hys eldeſt ſonne, and Rychарde duke of yorke / and. iii. doughters, as Elyſabeth that after was quene, Cecyle, and Katheryne.

Edwarde the. v.

EDward the. v. of that name & ſonn vnto Edwarde ꝑ iiii / beganne hys reygne ouer the realm of Engländ ꝑ. xi. day of Apryl in the begynnyng of the yere of our lord god. M. iiii. C. lxxxiii / and the. xviii. yere of the. xi. Lewys than kynge of Fraunce.

Anone as kynge Edward the. iiii. was dede / grudge and vnkyndneſſe beganne to take place betwene the kynges and the quenes allye. For ꝑ lorde marquys of Dorſet brother vnto the quene and other of hys affynytye, hadde then the rule & keppyng of thys yonge kynge, whyche at the tyme of hys fathers deth was of the age of. xi. yere or there about / and ſo beyng in hys guydyng in ꝑ Marche of walys, cõueyed hym toward London, and there to make prouyſyõ for hys coronacyon and for other neceſſary thynges for hys weale. But the duke of Glouceter brother vnto Edward the. iiii. entendynge otherwyſe as after ſhall appere / wyth a competent nõber of gentylmẽ of the North all clad in blacke, met with ꝑ kynge at Stonyngſtratforde / & there after dyſſymuled countenaunce made betwene hym & the forſayd Marquys, diſchargyd him of the rule of ꝑ king, and toke vpon hym the rule / & ſo trõthens beynge accompanyed with the duke of Buckyngham, broughte the kynge with all honour toward Lon dõ. wherof herynge quene Elyſabeth moder vnto the kyng / keryng the ſequele of thys beſynelle, went or toke ſentwary within weſtmynſter wyth her yonger ſonne Rychарde the duke of yorke. And the kynge drawynge nere vnto the cytie / vpon the. iiii. day of May, was of the mayre and hys cyteſyns mette at Harneſey parke / ꝑ mayre and hys bretherne beynge clothed in ſcarlet, & the cyteſyns in vyolet to the nõber of. v. hondred horſes / and than from thens conueyed vnto the cytye / the kynge beynge in blewe veluet, and all hys lordes and ſeruaũtes in blacke clothe / and ſo after cõueyed vnto the byſhoppes palays of London and there lodgyd. And ſhortely after the ſayd duke of Glouceter inuicyed ſo the archbiſſhop of Caũterbury named Bowchyer / that he went wyth hym to the quene Elyſabeth, and there made ſuche aſſured promyſe to the ſayde quene, that ſhe vppon the ſayd archbyſhoppes promyſe delyuered vnto them her yonger ſonne duke of yorke. And than the ſayde duke cauſed the kynge to be remoued vnto the towre, and hys brother with hym. But the quene for all fayre promyſes to her made / kept her and her doughters wythin the forſayde ſeyntwary / and the duke lodged hym ſelfe in Croſbyes place in Byſſhoppeſgate ſtrete.

Than prouision was made for the kynges coronacyō. In whyche passe tyme the duke beynge admytted for lorde protectour / caused syr Antony wydeuyle called lorde Scalys & bro ther vnto ỹ quene a vertuous knighte wyth the lorde Rychardе the quenes sonne, syr Rychardе Hawte, and syr Thomas Vaghan knyghtes, to be beheded at Pountfreyt more of wyll than of iustyce. Than the lorde Protectour in furtheryng of his purpose and cuyll entent / sente for the more partie of the nobles of the lāde / and behaued hym so couertly in all hys matyers, that fewe vnderstode hys wykked purpose. And so dayely kepynge & holdynge the lordes in counsayll and feynge theyr myndes / so daynly vppō the .xiii. daye of Junye beynge wythin the towre in the counsayll chambre wyth dyuerse lordes wyth hym, as the duke of Bukkyngham, the erle of Derby, the lord Hastynges thā lord Chāberlayne, wyth dyuerse other, an owte crye by hys assent of treason was made in the vtter chambre. wherwyth the sayd lorde Protectour beyng warned / roose vp and yode hym selfe to the chaumber dore, and there receyued in such persones as he before had appoynted to execute hys malycious purpose. The whych incontynently set hande vpon the forenamed lord Chamberlayne and other. In the whyche styrynge the erle of Derby was hurt in the face and kept a whyle vnder the holde. Than by cōmaundemente of the sayd lorde Protectour / the sayde lord Chamberlayne in all haste was ladde in the court or playn where the chapell of the towre stādeth / & there wythout ingemēt or lōge tyme of cōfessyon or repentaūce, vpō an ende of a lōge & great tymber logge whyche there laye wyth other for the repayrynge of the sayd towre, caused hys hedde to be smyten of / and all for he knewe well that he wolde nat assente vnto hys wycked entent. whose body wyth the hed was after caryed vnto wyndesore, and there buryed by the tombe of kyng Edwarde.

After whyche crueite thus done / he shortely after set in sure keppynge suche persones as he suspected to be agayne hym. wherof the bysshoppes of yorke & of Ely were .ii. as it is said And the erle of Derby for fere of hys sonne the lord Strange, lest he shuld haue attered Chesshyre & Lancastershyre agayne hym, was set at large.

Than began the lōge couert dyssymulacion, whyche of the lord Protectour had ben so craftly shadowed, to breke out at large / in so moche that vppō the sondaye folowyng at Poules crosse, hym selfe wyth the duke of Bukkyngham & other lordes beyng present, by the mouth of doctor Rafe Shaa in the tyme of hys sermon, was there shewed openly that ỹ chyldrne of kynge Edward the .iiii. were nat legytymat, nor ryghtfull enheritours of the crowne / wyth many dyuerse launderous wordes in preferryng of the tytle of the sayd lord Protectour and in dysanullynge of the other / to the greate abucion of all the audiēce, except suche as fauoured the matter whyche were fewe in noumbre, yf the trouth or playnelle myghte haue ben shewed.

Of the whyche declaracyon as the fame wente after / the sayde doctour Shaa toke suche repentaunce, that he lyued in lyttell prosperytie after. And the more he was wondered of, that he wolde take vppon hym suche a besynesse, consyderynge that he was so famous a man bothe of hys lernynge and also of naturall wytte. Than vppon the tuysdaye folowynge, an assemble of the cōmons of the cytye was appoynted at the Guyldhalle.

Guyldhalle. where beynge present the duke of Buckynghā wyth other lordes sente downe frome the sayde lorde protectour/and there in the pre sence of the mayre and comynaltye, rehersed the ryght and tytle that the lorde Protectour hadde to be prefer red before hys of hys brother kynge Edwarde, to the ryght of the crowne of Englande. The whyche proceſſe was in ſo eloquent wyſe shewed and vttred wythout any impedyment of ſpyttynge or other countenaunce, and that of a longe whyle, wyth ſo great ſugred wordes of exhortacyon and accordynge ſentence, that many a wyſe man that day merueyled and commended hym for the good orderynge of hys wordes, but not for the entent and purpoſe the whyche theruppon enſued.

Vppon the Thurſdaye than next enſuynge beynge the.xx. daye of Juny / the ſayde Protectoure takynge then vppon hym as kynge and gouernour of the realme / went wyth great pompe vnto weſtmynſter, and there toke poſſeſſyon of the ſame. where he beynge ſette in the greate halle in the See royall, wyth ỹ duke of Norffolke before called the lorde Hawarde vppon the ryght hande, & the duke of Suffolke vppon the left hande/after the royall othe there taken, called before hym the iudges of the lawe/gyuynge vnto them a long exhortacyon and ſtreyght cōmaundemēt, for ỹ mynyſtryng of hys lawes, and to execute iuſtyce, and that without delaye. After whyche poſſeſſyon takynge, and other ceremonies there done/he was conueyed vnto the kynges palays wythin weſtmynſter and there lodgyd.

In whyche paſſe tyme, the prynce or of ryght kynge Edwarde the. v. wyth hys brother the duke of yorke, were put vnder ſuer keppynge wythin the towre/in ſuche wyſe that they neuer came abrode after.

And thus ended the reygne of Edwarde the. v/when he had borne the name of a kynge by the ſpace of two monethes and.xi.dayes. And vppon the Frydaye beynge the.xxii. daye of Juny was the ſayd lord Protectour proclaymed thorough the cyty kyng of England, by the name of Rychard the thyrde.

Then ſoone after for fere of the quenes blode and other whyche he had in ielouſy/he ſent for a ſtrength of men out of the North. The which came ſhortely to London a lytell before hys coronacyon/and muſtred in the More feldes well vppon.iiii.M. men in theyr beſte iackes and ruſty ſalattes, wyth a fewe in whyte harneys not burnyſſhed to the ſale/ and ſhortely after hys coronacyon were countermaunded home wyth ſuffycyent rewardes for theyr trauayll.

In whyche forſayd paſſe tyme/ỹ Marquys of Dorſet brother vnto quene Elyſabeth ỹ before was fled, eſcaped many wonderfull daungers bothe/about London, Ely and other places/wherof, to wryte the maner & circumſtaunce wolde aſke a longe and great leyſour.

Rycharde the thyrde.

RIcharde ỹ thyrde of that name, ſon to Rycharde late duke of yorke, & yongeſte brother vnto Edwarde ỹ iiii. late kynge/began his dompynō ouer the realme of Englande the. xx. day of mydſomer moneth, in the yere of our lorde god. M.CCCC. lxxxiii. & the.xxb. yere of the.xi. Lewys than kynge of Fraūce. Of whom tedyous

it is to me to wryte the tragedyous hystory/excepte that I remēber that good it is to wryte and put in remēbraūce the punyshement of synners, to the ende that other may eschew to fall in lyke daunger.

Than it folowyth, anone as thys man had taken vpon hym / he fyll in great hatred of the more party of the nobles of hys realm/in so mych that suche as before loued and praysed hym, and wolde haue iceparted lyke and good wyth hym yf he hadde remayned styll as protectour, now murmured and grudged agayne hym/in suche wyse that fewe or none fauoured his partye, except it were for drede or for the great gyftes that they receyued of hym. By meane wherof he wanne dyuers to folow hys mynde/ the whiche after deceyued hym.

And after his coronacyon solēpnysed, whyche was holden at westmynster the. vi. daye of July, where also ỹ same daye was crowned dame Anne hys wyfe/he then in shorte processe folowynge rode Northward to pacyfye that countre, and to redresse certayne ryottes there lately done. In the passe tyme of which iournay/ he beynge at yorke created hys legyt tymat sonne prynce of walys/ & ouer that made hys bastarde sonne cappytayne of Caleys, whyche encreaced more grudge to hym warde as after shall appere.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxxiii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxxiiii.

Thomas Norland.

Rober Billysdon Haberdasher. Anno.ii.

wyllyam Martyn.

IN this yere ỹ forsayd grudge encreasynge, and the more for as myche as the comon fame wente, that kynge Richarde hadde within the tower put vnto secret deth ỹ two sonnes of hys brother Edwarde the iiii. For the whych and other causes hadde within the breste of the duke of Buckyngham/ the sayde duke in secrete maner conspyred agayn hym, and allyed hym with dyuers gentylmen, to the ende to brynge hys purpose about.

But how it was his entente was espyed and shewed vnto the kynge/ and the kynge in all haste sent for to take hym, he then beynge small accōpanyed at hys manour of Brekenok in the Marche of walys. wherof the sayd duke beynge ware, in all hast he fled frō hys sayd manour of Brekenok vnto the house of a seruaunt of hys owne called Banaster / and that in so secret maner, that fewe or none of his housholde seruauntes knewe where he was become.

In the whyche passe tyme/kynge Richarde thynkynge that the duke wolde haue assembled his people, & so to haue gyuen to hym batayle, gathered to hym great strength/and after toke his iournaye westwarde, to haue mette wyth the sayd duke. But whan the kyng was informed that he was fledde/anone he made proclamacyons, that who that myght take the sayd duke, shulde haue for a reward. M.li. of money / and the value of an hundreth pounde in lande by yere to hym and to hys heyres for euer more. wherof herynge the foresayd Banaster, were it for mede of ỹ sayd reward, or for the fere of losyng of hys lyke and good/dyscouered the duke vnto the shertyffe of the shyre/ and caused hym to be taken, and so brought vnto Salysbury, where the kynge than lay.

And

And all be it that that the sayde duke made inportune labour to haue commyn to the kynges presence / yet that natwythstandynge, he was behe ded vpon the. daye of the moneth of wythout speche or syght of the kynge. Than all suche gentylmen as had apoynted to mete wyth ꝑ said duke, were so dysmayde, that they knewe nat what for to do / but they that myghte fled the lande, and some toke seyntwary places as they myghte wynne vnto theym. But the kyng to the ende to let them of theyr purpose, sente to the see costes and stopped theyr waye in that he myght. And he wyth a certeyne strength rode vnto Exceter / where about that season was take syr Thomas Delenger knyght, and .ii. gentylmen that one beyng named Thomas Ramme and that other

The whyche iii. persones were there shortly after behe ded

And soone after in Kent were take syr George Browne knyghte, & Robert Clyfforde esquyer / and brought vnto the towre of London. And vpon the. daye of Octobre, the sayd syr George and Roberte were drawen from westmynster vnto the towre hyll and there behe ded.

And the same daye were .iiii. persones lately pomen of the crowne wyth kynge Edwarde the .iiii., drawē out of Southwarke thorugh ꝑ cytie vnto tyborne, and there hanged. And whan the kynge had sped hys tournay in the west coūtre / he hasted him towarde London. whereof the mayre & the cytezyns haupnge knowlege, made prouysyō to receyue him / and vpon that made purupaunce for horse with violet clothyng and other necessaryes.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxxxiiii.

Rychard Chester.
Thomas Bretayne.
Raffe Astry.

Thomas Hylle.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxxxv. Anno. iii.

IN the begynnyng of thys mayres yere and seconde yere of kyng Rychardе / that is to meane vpon the .ix. daye of the moneth of Nouembre, the mayer and hys brethern beyng cladde in scarlet, & the cytezyns to the nombre of .v. C. or mo in vyolet / met the kynge beyonde Kenyngston in Sutherey / & so brought hym thorugh the cytye to the warde robe besyde the blacke fryers, where for that tyme he was lodged. And in shorte tyme after was syr Roger Clyfforde knyght taken aboute Southampton / and from thens sente to the towre of Londō, and after areygned & iuged at westmynster / & frō thens vpon the. daye of drawē vnto the towre hylle. But whan he came fore agayne saynt Martyns le Graūt / by the helpe of a fryer whiche was hys cōfessour, & one of theym ꝑ was nere about him, his cordes were so lowsed or cut, that he put hym in deuoyr to haue entred ꝑ seyntwary. And lykely it had ben ꝑhe shuld haue so done / had nat ben the quycke helpe & rescous of the sheryffes and theyr offycers.

The whyche constrayned hym to lye downe vppon the hardyll / and newly band hym, and so harped hym to the sayde place of execution, where he was deuyded in two pecys / and after hys body wyth the hede was conueyed to the fryeres Augustynes, and there be buryed before sayncte Katherynes auter.

Do. iiii. And

And in the moneth of Febꝛuary folowynge / dyed Rycharde Chester one of the sheryfes. Foꝛ whome was immedyatly chosen Raffe Astry, to contynue foꝛ that yere folowynge. Kynge Rycharde than ledynge hys lyfe in great agony and doubte/ trustynge fewe of suche as were aboute hym, spared nat to spende the greate treasour whych befoꝛe kyng Edward the.iiii. hadde gadered, in guynge of great & large gyftes. By meane wherof he alonly wasted nat ꝑ great treasour of his sayd bꝛother, but also he was in suche daunger, that he boꝛowed many notable summes of money of ryche men of thys realme, and specyally of the cytezyns of London/ wherof the leest summe was. xl.li. foꝛ suertye wherof he delyuered to them good & suffycyent pledges.

In the whyche passetyme many & sondꝛy gentylmen and diuers sheryfes, departed ouer the see into Fraũce and there allyed them wyth that vertuous pꝛynce Henry sonne vnto the erle of Rychemonde, dyscended lyneally from Henry the.iiii. lately kynge of thys realme / and conuenaunted with hym, that if he wolde mary Elizabeth ꝑ eldest doughter of Edwarde the.iiii, they wolde with goddes help strength hym to be kyng of England & ayde hym in suche maner, that he and also she were oꝛ myght be possessed of theyꝛ ryghtfull enherytaunce. Amonge the whyche gentylmen / syꝛ Iamys Blount than keper of the castell of Guynys was one/ which with hym conueyed the erle of Oxenfoꝛd, that longe tofoꝛe had ben pꝛysoner wythin the sayd castell.

Upon whiche agrement thus concluded/ pꝛouysion by them and theyꝛ frendes was made, to sayle into England. And after all thynges pꝛepared/ the sayd pꝛynce wyth a small cõpany of Englysshe, Frenche, & Bꝛytons, take shyppynge in Fraunce oꝛ Bꝛytayne/ and so landed lastly in the poꝛte of Wylbourne in the moneth of Auguste. Foꝛ whose defence of landynge kynge Rycyarde foꝛ so moche as he fered him lytell, made but smal pꝛouysion.

whyle these foꝛesayde gentylmen of dyuers cooستes of Englande escaped as is abouesayde ouer the see/ of that affynite was one named Wyllyã Colyngbourne taken. And after he had ben holden a season in pꝛyson/ he wyth another gentylmã named Turbyruple were bꝛought vnto Guylde hall, and there aꝛeygned. But ꝑ sayd Turbyꝛuple was teꝛꝛyed to pꝛyson/ and that other was caste foꝛ sondꝛy treasons / & foꝛ a ryme, whyche was layde to hys charge that he shulde make in derysyõ of the kyng and his counsayll as folowyth.

¶ The catte, the ratte, and louell our dogge.
Ruleth all England vnder a hogge.

The whych was ment that Catesby, Ratclyffe, and the lorde Louell, ruled the land vnder ꝑ kyng whych bare the whyte boꝛe foꝛ his cognysaunce. Foꝛ the whyche and other vppon the . day of he was put to ꝑ most cruell deth at the towꝛe hyll, where foꝛ him were made a new payer of Galowes / vpon the whych after he had hanged a shoꝛte season, he was cutte downe beynge a lyue, and hys bowellys ryped out of hys bely & cast into the fyꝛe there by hym, and lyued tyll the boucher put hys hand into the bulke of his body/ in so moche that the sayd in the same instãt O lorde Jesu yet moꝛe trouble/ & so dyed to the great compassyon of moche people.

Than to retourne vnto the noble pꝛynce

prynce and hys company, whanne he was commyn vnto the lande/ he incõtynently kneled downe vpon ꝑ erth/ & wyth meke countenaunce & pure deuocyon began thys psalme: *Iudica me deus, & discerne causam meam. &c.* The whyche whan he had fynysshed to ꝑ ende, and kyssed the grounde mekely, and reuerently made the signe of the crosse vppon hym/ he commaunded suche as were aboute hym, boldly in the name of god & sayncte George to set forewarde.

Whan the landyng of thys prynce was blowen about the lande/ many was the man that drewe vnto hym, aswell suche as were in sondry seyntwarpes as other that were abrode/ so that hys strẽgth encreased shortly. Than the kyng gadered hys power in all haste/ and spedde hym in suche wyse, that vpon the.xxiii. daye of August & begynnyng of the thyrde yere of hys regne/ he mette wyth the said prynce nere vnto a vyllage in Leycestershyre named Boswoyth, nere vnto Leycester. where betwene theym was foughten a sharpe batayll/ & sharper shulde haue ben, if the kynges partie had ben fast to hym. But many towarde the felde refusyd hym, & yode vnto that other partye. And some stode houynge a ferre of, tyll they saw to the whyche partye the victory fyll.

In conclusyon kynge Rychard was slayne/ and vppon hys partye ꝑ duke of Northfolke before tyme named lorde Hawarde, wyth Brakyng bury Lieutenaunt of the towre, and many other. And amonge other was there taken on lyue the erle of Surrey sonne to the foresayde duke of Northfolke, & sent vnto the towre of London/ where he remayned as prysoner longe tyme after.

Than was the corps of Rychard late kyng spoyled, & naked as he was borne caste behynde a man/ and so caryed vnreuerently ouerthwarte ꝑ horse backe vnto the fryers at Leycester. where after a season that he had lyen that all men myght beholde him he was there wyth lytell reuerence buryed. And thus with misery ended thys prynce/ whych ruled most what by rygour and tyrannye, whan he in great trouble & agony had regned or vsurped by the space of.ii. yeres.ii. monethes and.ii. dayes.

And than was the noble prynce Henry admytted for kynge, and so proclaymed kyng by the name of Hẽry the.vii. The whych sped hi shortly to London/ so that vpon the.xxviii. daye of the sayd moneth of Auguste, he was by the mayre and the cytesyns met in good araye/ as the mayre and aldermen in scarlet, and the cytesyns in vyolet, at harneseye parke/ & frome thens conueyed thorugh the cytye vnto the bysshop of Londõs palays, and there for that tyme lodged.

And vpon the.xi. day of Octobre nexte folowyng, than beyng the swetynge sykenesse of newe begon/ dyed the sayd Thomas Hylethan of London mayre. And for hym was chosen as mayre syr wyllyam Stokker knyght & Draper, whyche dyed also of the sayd sykenesse shortly after. And than Johñ warde Grocer was chosen mayre/ whyche so contynued tyll the feest of Symonde and Jude folowynge.

Francis.

Charles the.ix.

KArolus or Charles ꝑ.ix.or.viii. of ꝑname, sonn vnto the.xi. Lowys/ begã his regn ouer ꝑ realm of Fraũce the fourth daye of Septẽbre

Septembre in the yere of oure lorde god.M.iiii.C.lxxxiiii/and the secõde yere of Rycharde the thyrd at ỹ tyme kyng of Englande.

Thys Charles was noble of wytte and meke of condycyõ/the which his father wolde nat set to lernyng of letters in hys youth, leste that by suche study he shulde at hys lawfull age haue therby the more restrayned hym from knyghtly and martyall actes. But whan he came to mannes estate he than was ryghte sorry, and wolde saye full often to hys kamplyers, A prynce is greatly blemysshed, whan he lakketh connynge of lecture. He was also in hys youth so weke & impotẽt, that he lakked natural strẽgth as was accordynge to hys age, in so moche that he myght nat go. And whan he shuld ryde, he had alway on eyther syde of the horse.ii.men to stay hym, and to gyue on hym lyke attendaunce. Than after solempnytie of hys coronacyon ended at the cytye of Raynes, whyche there was solempnised wyth great pompe vpõ ỹ sondaynexte ensuyng the feast of sayne Denys/commissions were sent out into all coostes of hys dompnyon, for to enquere of all superfluous giftes gyuen before tyme by hys father/the whyche shortly after were resumed into the kynges handes. And in that season, Olyuer Damman whome Lowys had in many greate romes & offyces set, and by hys dayes hadde hym in synguler loue and fauoure, in so moche as before I haue shewed in the ende of the story of the sayd Lowys, he made a specyall requeste vnto thys Charles hys sonn that he shuld specyally cherysshe thys sayd Damman/now was appeched of treason wyth one Danyell a Flemynge. The whyche after inquisycyon of theym made/bothe after the lawe of that lande were iuged to deth/and so put in execucyon of hangynge. whose deth of the nobles and astates of the realme was ryght ruyd/consyderyng the rome that he bare by kynge Lowys dayes, and the ignobilitie of his byrth, as an handcratty mã and barbour. After whose deth a metrycyan compyled these verses folowyng.

Sunt tua criminibus vitã tẽpora tõsor
Currere, quæ subito gaudia parca vetat
Hoc poteras olim sõ ge prenoscere damma, (tat
Vt saltem horrores tollere crede pios.
Te natura humilem cum mater Flandra tulisset,
Arte vna noras radere Cesariem.
Hunc talem & seruum te sæpe Lutetia vidit,
Tutus ab hac poteras discere sorte dies.
Raptus ad excelsam, Lodowici principis aulam,
Mox heredi fur furias, meritus ante venis,
Et caput huic tendens/dũ fulgere sceptra, sicut
Pre ducibus regi, regulus alter eras.
Quis tibi non licuit, soboles tam dira Neronis,
Nemo non vicit, te reuerente reus,
Nemo delicta censuram, nemo gerebat,
Gaudia, qui tenuit premere dona tibi
Protenus exilium, vel mors vel mulcta negantem
Pressit, eras Judex lictor & exicium.
Regnasti, satis est, surgunt noua fœdera mundo,
Tuba cœlestorum, territa luce fugit.
Agnosce o tonsor, quo te sors extulit atrox,
Et te præcipitem depulit in laqueos.
Te Daniel, te dira cohors, te meminisse odit,
Et scelerum auctorem, clamnatet insequitur.
Nescio quis de te superi vel fata deponent,
Seu lictore cades, seu cruce liber eas.
Vna tamen vulgi constans sententia, sortes
Expedit, vt faciet, te perimente odium
Interea vinctus, culpas abluere gemendo,
Peccasti, mortis est nunc redimenda salus.

The whyche metyr or verses to theym that haue none vnderstandyng in latyne, maye be expounded in maner as folowyth.

The

The laughynge tymes wyth theyr crymes spent,
Thou barboure are ronne / the whyche by sodayne fate
Are nowe forboden. wherof the clere entent
Thou myght haue knowen Damma ryght well the state,
whan thou by meanes whyche were inordynat,
Put vnto deth many an innocent man,
By cruell malyce/and well remembred than.

That of lowe byrth Flaundres thy mother the fledde,
And taught the a crafte, the here well to shaue
Lutecia that cytye where thou thy lyfe ledde,
wytnesseth the a seruaunt therin thy lyuynge to craue,
And for thy dayes an honest lyfe to haue/
But whan thou were in Lowys court vp brought,
Than had thou no mynde that thou were come of nought.

But lyke the helle hounde thou wared full furyous,
Exyellynge thy malyce whan thou to honour styed/
Thynkynge for so moche as that prynce bounteuous,
Hys hed and berde to the he nought denyed,
And wyth all worldly pleasure he also the allyed,
The before hys prynces makynge hys gouernour/
Thy selfe thou blyndest, wyth wordly vayne honour.

whyche made the so proude, thou sonne of harde Neron,
That none myght lyue that thou accused of crime,
No man was cursed nor none had punysshon,
That wolde thy hande wyth golde of gyftes lyme/
And who that nat hys gyfte offred in tyme,
Other deth or exyle to hym was soone applyed/
For as iuge and hangman thou all thynge exercysed.

Thou reygned longe ynough/but nowe are sprongē newe
Sterrys to the worlde/and fled is nowe clerely
The scelerat flokke. wherfore thou barbour yet rewe,
Thyne odyous actes whyche haue the sodaynly,
Cast downe from welth in snares bytterly.
For also Daniell thy moste odyous fere
Dampneth the of cryme whyche wyth the dyeth here.

I knowe nat what of the the vpper bodyes aboue
Haue defyned, whether by swerde or by gybet
Thou shuld ende the lyfe. But one thynge I approue,
The sentence hooly of the people is sette,
That on a galowe thou shuld paye deth hys dette.
Inwardly therfore bewayll so thyne offence,
That by thys deth, to god thou mayste make recompence.

Thys

THus execucyon of thys Damman & hys felowe ended and fynyshed, to the lyteil compassion of the people / wythin fewe dayes after another of the affeccionat seruaūtes of kyng Lowys named Johñ Doyacon, for trespasse and hatered by hys occasyon and deserte vnto the common people, was wyth all shame brought vnto ꝑ market place of ꝑys, & there beraft of bothe hys erys. After whych vyony to hym done, he was there tyght banysshed the court for euer.

And thus two of the moste special and derest beloued seruauntes and counsayllours of kyng Lowys, were shortly after hys deth brought vnto confusyon. By reason wherof as affermeth myne auctoure Gaguyne, arose a prouerbe among the Frenche men/sayeng, Principibus obsequi hereditarium non esse. The whyche is to meane, the seruyce of princes is nat hereditable. Thys tyme thus passed wyth many other matyers, whych I ouer passe / the season approched that variaunce and envy began to moue amōg some nobles of the lāde/in so moche that ꝑ duke of Orleaunce dysdayned, that Anne syster to the kynge wyth suche as she wolde call to counsayll, hadde all the rule about the kyng. wherfore he entendyng to haue the sayde rule, for so moche as he had maryed that other doughter of Lowys / gadered vnto hym strength of knyghtes, purposelp to remoue from the kyng such as he lyked/ and to sette aboute hym suche persones as he thought conuenyente.

But how it was for lacke of wyse ordrynge of hys people or other negligence/at a place called saint Albynys he was taken of hys aduersaryes/ & so by the kyng commaunded to pryson to the castel of Byturicēce, where he remayned lōge tyme after. It was nat longe after, that Marymylyan the whych had maryed duke Charles doughter of Burgoyne, gathered hys soudpours to haue relieued the forsayd duke of Orleaunce out of pryson / but he preuayled nat. Durynge whyche warre, Fraunceys duke of Bryteyn dyed/whose doughter named Anne & enheritour of that duchye, Marymylyan hadde before trouth plyted for hys lawfull wyfe. wherfore he herynge of the deth of ꝑ sayd Fraunceys / shortely entred the terrytory of Bryteyne, and seased it for hys. But Charles with his Frēchmen wythstode hym, by suche force ꝑ he was constrayned to axe helpe of our soueraygne lord kynge Henry ꝑ vii. The whyche in moste bountreous maner ayded & assysted hym bothe wyth men and money/to the kynges exceedyng great charge and coste. Howbe in the ende the French kyng had his entent/& than maryed ꝑ said Anne ducheſſe of Bryteyne, and refused Margarete ꝑ doughter of Marymylyan, whyche he before had maryed at Imbasy/as before I haue shewed to you in the ende of the story of hys father Lowys. After whych tyme thus optayned by thys Charles in Bryteyn/he made clayme and pretence vnto the lande of Scicilia or Scicilie. And by the exortacion and styrryng of the pope Alexāder the. vi. he wyth a strong hoste entred ꝑ same bothe by lande and by water. To whome was a great ayde the duke of Mylayne/by whose meanes he shortly wan a stroge citie or towne named Campania and diuers other townes and in procesſe Naples the chyef citie that belonged vnto the kyng of Naples. In so moche that he constrayned Alphounce that than was kynge of Naples and of Scicile to forsake that countre/and so had the dominiō of the more parte of bothe the sayde countrees.

countrees. The whyche when he had set in suche order as he thoughte conuenyent/he toke hys iournaye homewarde into Fraũce thorough Italy. In whyche passage thys Charlys was beset of the Venecyans & other Italyans, the whyche entendyd to haue stoppyd hys waye/and metyng wyth hym at a place called in latyne Fornouences, gaue vnto hym batayle. wherof as sayth myne authour he wan the victory to hys greate honour, consyderynge his fewe soudyours agayne theyr multytude and strength.

But to thys sayenge repugne the Italyans dwellyng in London/and say that yf the sayd Charlys had not spedde hym fastly into Fraunce, he had not comen there that yere. But how so it was he retourned home in sauete.

And soone after pope Alexãder forsayd toke such displeasure agayne ỹ sayd Charlys, that he styrred almost all crysten pyrnces of the worlde agayne hym/he hadde such hatred to the great honoure of ỹ Frẽche kynge as sayth myne authour Gagwyne, ỹ whyche in all hys werkes rehersleth the dedes of Frenchemen forther thã maye be verifyed in moch of his wrytynge. But what so he wryte of the pope/it is to be demyd that he wolde not take so great partye agayne this Charlys, and erite other pyrnces to do the same, excepte it hadde ben for great and veget causes / and not for malyce as he affermeth onely.

And thus the sayde Gagwyne endeth the story of the sayd Charlys, in the yere of our lorde god. M. iiii. C. xcv/and the. xi. yere of the reygne of the same Charlys thanne pryncely reygnynge and gouernyng the realme of Fraunce/ whyche was the. x. yere of our most redoutyd pryncē kynge Henry the. vii.

Henry the seuenth.



Henry the. vii. of ỹ name sonne vnto the erle of Richemõut, began his domynyon ouer the realme of Englande, the. xvii. daye of Auguste, in ỹ yere of our lorde god. M. iiii. C. lxxxv/and the secõde yere of the. viii. Charlys then kynge of Fraũce. And the. xxx. daye of October folowynge with great solempnyte ỹ sayd Henry was crowned at westmynster.

And here accordynge to my fyrste sayenge in the begynnynge of thys rude worke, I make an ende of the vii. parte and hole worke, the vii. day of Nouember in the yere of our lord Jesu Crystes incarnacyon. M. v. C. and. iiii/and the. xx. yere of our moste crysten and dread soueraygne lorde kynge Henry after the conquest of ỹ name the. vii. For whyche erpedyciõ and good erploy t that I haue hadde in the accomplysshyng of thys worke, wherin is included to reherse from the landynge of Brute in thys ile of Albyon, vnto the fyrste yere or begynnyng of the reygne of our moste dread sayd souerayne lord, v. M. vi. C. and xx. yeres: I here agayne salute and gyue thankes vnto that moste excellent vyrgyn our lady saynt Mary with the last and. vii. ioye of the fore sayd. vii. ioyes, begynnynge,

Gaude virgo mater pura &c.

Be ioyfull and glad virgyn and moder pure/ Be voyfull mary
For ferme and stedfast thy ioye shall abyde
And these. vii. ioyes shall euermore endure,
And neuer hereafter mynysshe by tyme nor by tyde
But euer shall encrease fleryssre and abyde,
By worlles all, euer in one to laste
Tyme to come, tyme preset, & tyme that is past.

And thus than endyth thys seuenth part, the which from the fyrst yere of wyllyam Conquerour to ỹ laste yere of Rycharde the thyrde includeth. iiii.C.xvii.yeres.

Lenuoy.

Limas adest, præcessit opus, ne liuidus asit.
Lector habent menda, denia presa suas
Quoduis ingenium, quadam vel parte refundat
Vel rudũ, vel mancũ est, vel grane vel sluidũ
Concio crebra tibi, culpatur furta Maronis,
Est Cicero elumbis, pes tibi naso celer.
Non satis historiæ, Crispi præfatio quadrat,
Nisi adeo cultum, liuor iniquus habet.
Non minus hoc poterit tantillum capere morsor,
Læserit illustres cum sera lingua viros.
Sed quid agas resides, taxabit inertia mutum
Scriptorem risor, extenuabit iners.
Audendum tamen est, spernendi misse latratus
Occidet a busto murmur & inuidia.

The whyche verses to them that ben vnlettered may be Englyshed in maner and fourme as folowethe.

In ende of thys boke, or of thys rude warke
Here is now fyned / wherof the sence precedyth.
Thou that shall it rede, be thou laye or clerke,
Be not enuyous / consyder how it ledyth
The reygne of prynces. And where as mendement nedyth,
If thou experte be, the fawtes therof amende /
And hym alcrybe no sclaunder, that dyd but well entende.

Consyder euery scyence, in parte that it is suche,
To rude or to curyous, to breef or to longe.
Some blamyn Liuius for that he wrote so moche /
Some other Vyrgyle / and Cicero amonge
For he was to scarse. Salust that dytyes longe
So excelently, yet is he not vnblamed /
So that to all men nothynge is duely framed.

Than syn the olde wryters whyche were so excellent,
Myghte not all men please wyth theyr famous wrytynge /
No maruayll though I whyche neuer connynge hent,
Myghte order thys mater to euery mannys lykynge /
And specyally to suche as haue theyr delyghtynge,
Euer wyth dysclaunder moste wryters to lacke,
And barke whyle they maye to sette good wryters a backe.

But though that ignorraunce and deryson ben mette,
And reproue the maker in all that they can /
why shulde any good worke for theyr malyce be lette.
For though they grudge & scorne / yet euery wyse good man,
wyll take the entent and prayse the maker than /
And hym allow for hys laborous dede /
And requyre of god that he maye haue hys mede.

Anno domini. M. iiii. C. lxxvb. Anno domini. M. iiii. C. lxxvi.

Johñ Tate.

Hugh Bryce Goldsmyth. Anno. i.

Johñ Swan.

In thys

IN thys yere a prest was made to the kynge of .ii. M.li/ of the whyche the mercers, grocers, & drapers lent.ix. C.xxx.vii.li. and .vi.s. The coronacyō was holden at westmynster the.xxx. day of October. And this yere whete was at .iii.s. ꝑ busshell, & bape salt at the same prycc.

Anno domini. M.iiii. C.lxxxvi. Anno domini. M.iiii. C.lxxxvii.

Johñ Percyuall.

Syr Henry Colet Anno.ii.

Hugh Clopton.

IN this yere the kynge maryed kyng Edwardes eldest doughter named Elizabeth. This yere was slayn at Stookfelde the erle of Lyncolne. And in the moneth of Septēber was borne prynce Arthur.

Anno domini. M.iiii. C.lxxxvii Anno domini. M.iiii. C.lxxxviii.

Johñ Fenkyll.

wyllyam Horne. Anno.iii.

wyllyam Kempyngton.

THys yere was the quene trowned at westmynster vpon saynt Katheryns daye. And this yere was a prest of.iiii. M.li/ wherof mercers, grocers & Drapers lent.xvi.C. & xvi.li. And thys yere was an other prest of two thousād. And thys yere Johñ Ashley wyth other two were putte in execucyon at the Towre hylle.

Anno dñi. M.iiii. C.lxxxviii. Anno dñi. M.iiii. C.lxxxix.

wyllyam Isaak.

Robert Tate Mercer, Anno.iiii.

Rafe Tynley.

IN thys yere the comons of the Northe slewe the erle of Northumberlande / and Chamberlayne theyr capptayne wyth dyuers other were after at yorke hanged. Thys yere was the taske of the tenth peny of mennes landes and goodes. This yere was the felde of Dykylmew in Flaunders foughten by the lorde Dawbeney.

Anno dñi. M.iiii. C.lxxxix. Anno dñi. M.iiii. C.xc.

wyllyam Capell.

wyllyam whyte Anno.v.

Johñ Brook.

IN this yere one named Roger Shawelok slew hym selfe. For whose goodes was debynelle bytwen the kynges amner and the sheryffe. But the amner optayned.

Anno dñi. M.iiii. C.xc. Anno dñi. M.iiii. C.xci.

Henry Coot.

Johñ Mathew Mercer. Robert Reuell. Anno.vi.

Hugh Pemberton.

IN this yere dyed Robert Reuel shyrryfe/& in his stede was chosen Hugh Pēberton. And in March syr Robert chāberlayne knyght was behedyd. And thys yere was a great benyuolence graunted vnto ꝑ kynge for his iournay into Fraūce / where vnto the felysshyp of the Drapers graunted more than any other felysshyp of the cytye/and euery aldermā of London that tyme beynge, payed volente & nolente two hundreth pound. Ouer whyche somme the comoners somme extēdyd to.ix.M.vi.C. lxxxii. li.xvii.s.iiii.d. And this yere was a busshell of whete at .xxii.d.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.xci. Anno domini.M.iiii.C.xcii.

Thomas wood

Hugh Clopton Mercer. Anno.vii.

wyllyam Browne.

IN thys yere a poman of the crowne named was put to deth at Tybourne for treason. And in thys yere was the cytye of Garnad gotte by ꝑ kyng of Spayn. And i this yere was syr Jamys Parker knyght slayne in iustynge at Rychemont, with a gentylman named Hugh Vaghan. Also in the moneth of September the kynge toke hys vyage towarde Fraunce.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.xcii Anno domini.M.iiii.C.xciii.

wyllyam purchase.

wyllyam Martyn Skynner. Anno.viii.

wyllyam welbek.

IN thys yere vpon the.ix. daye of Nouember, was red a letter in the Guyldhall, ꝑ shewed of a peas cōcluded bytwen the kynges of England & of Fraūce. And the.xvii. day of December folowynge, the kynge landed at Douer. And the saterdaye before Crystmas he came to westmynster. Vppon the.xvii. daye of Maye were.viii.men put to deth at Tyborn for treason. And thys yere in the moneth of October and ende of thys mayres yere, was the fray made vpon the Estrelynges by the comons of the cytye, and specyally mercers seruauntes.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xciii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xciiii.

Robert Fabyan.

Rake Astry Fysshemonger. Anno.ix.

Johñ wyngar.

IN this yere in ꝑ beginnyng, an enquery was made for ꝑ ryot forenamed/for the which many yong men were punysshed by long imprysonment. Also vpō the.xxii. day of February, were regnyd at ꝑ Guyldhall iiii. persons named Thomas Bagnall, Johñ Scotte, Johñ Heth, and Johñ Kenyngton/which were taken out of saynte Martyns seyntuary. wherof.iii. were put to deth at Tyborne/& Thomas Bagnall was had vnto the towre of London. And the xxvi. day of the sayd moneth, with ꝑ forsayd.iii. persons was put in execucyon willyā Bulkley a yoman of the kynges chāber, and a duche man. Thys yere whete was at.vi.s.a busshell, and bay salt at. iii.s. od. And thys yere doctor Hylle bysshop of Lōdon pursued greuously Persy than prysour of Crylles chyrch in Londō.

And

And in thys yere was the royall feste kept in westmynster halle by ꝑ kyng. This yere in the ende of Apryll was brent in Smithfelde an olde woman for heresye, whych was called moder

to the lady ponge. And thys yere the xv. day of August were reyned at the Guyldhalle one named Johñ Norfolk, & an other named Johñ white/ & cõuict for baudry & set vpõ ꝑ Pillory.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.xciiii. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.xcv.

Nycholas Alwyn.

Rycharde Chawry Maier. Anno.x.

Johñ warner.

THis yere the daye that ꝑ mayre toke hys charge, in ꝑ afternone came thorugh the cytye Henry duke of yorke a chylde about .iiii. yeres of age towarde westmynster rydynge vppon a courser, with many goodly gentylmen to conuey hym. And vpon the .xv. daye of Nouember folowyng, was holden a goodly iustyle within the paleys of westmynster. wherof were chalengeours syr wyllyã de la Pool then duke of Suffolk, therle of Eller, syr Robert Curson, & Johñ Pechy esquyre. Also this yere about Crystmas, sir Robert Clifford whych before was fled the land/ came agayne & appechyd syr wyllyã Stanley than chamberlayne to the kynge of treason. which syr wyllyam vpon the .xvi. day of February folowynge, for the sayd treason was behedyd at the Tower hyll. And ꝑ same season was adiudged to deth at the Guyldhall the deane of Poulys a famous doctour & precher, the prouyncyall of the blak freres, and ꝑ pryour of Langley, the person of saynt Stephyns in walbrode named doctour Sutton, syr Thomas Thwaytys knyght, Robert Ratclyffe, wyllyam Dawbeney, willyã Cressener esquire with syr Symond Mouñford knight, & mo other/ wherof ꝑ more part was pardoned. And this yere was whyte herynge at .xl. ð. a barel. And this yere began the fyrst trouble of syr wyllyã Capell alderman. And in July Perkyn with his rebelles arriued in Kent which named hym selfe Rychard seconde sonne of Edward the .iiii. And in ꝑ same moneth was doctour Draper perforce borne out of Poulys, & so ladde to Lãbehyth for varyaunce that than was betwene the bysshoppes of Caũterbury and Londõ. And soone after was hanged in sundry costes of Englande an .C. and odde persons of the forenamed rebellys. And thys yere was a perlyamente holden at westmnynster. Also in the moneth of October was an excedynge thunder.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.xcv. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.xcvi.

Thomas kneyfworth.

Syr Henry Colette Mercer. Anno.xi.

Henry Sompr.

IN thys yere in the .xvi. daye of Nouember, was holden the sergeaũtes feste within the bysshop of Elyes place. This yere was the body of Rychard Hakendyes wyfe takyn vp in saynt Mary hyll chyrche hole, ꝑ had lyen in the groũd ouer .C. ꝫ .xx. yeres. And thys yere was great bysynesse for the entercourse betwene Englande and Flaunders. And this yere the kynge of Scottes made sharp warre vppon the marches. And this yere many lollers stode wyth fagottes at Poulys crosse.

Pp. iii. Anno

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.xcvi. Anno domini.M.iiii.C.xcvii.

Johñ Shaa.

Johñ Tate Mercer. Anno.xii.

Rycharde Haddon.

THe latter ende of October, by great counsayll holden at west mynster/was graunted to the kynge for the defence of the Scottes. C. xx. M.ii. The.xviii.daye of Nouembet was Poulys chyrch suspendyd by a fraye of two yonge men. And in the same moneth was graũted to ỹ kyng a pyest of the cytye of.iiii.M.li. And the same moneth at Calys was dehe dyd the lord Fitzwater. The.xvi.day of January a parlyament beganne/ wherby was graunted two dymes & a halfe, two aydes and two fyftenys, to leuy the forsayd. C. xx. M. li. And in the moneth of Juny and.xvii. day were the Cornyshmen dyscõfyted at Blakheth. And vpon the.xx viii.daye of Juny, the Smyth a gentylman named Flãmok two cappytaynes of ỹ sayd rebelles, were put in execucyon at Tybourne. And shortely after the lorde Audeley, which was hed cappytayne of the sayd rebelles, was put to deth at ỹ Towre hylle. And this yere was concluded a marryage bytwene my lorde prynce & the kynges doughter of Spayne. Thys yere also the kynge sent into Scotland an armye, vnder ỹ guydyng of the erle of Surrey and the lord Aeuple/ the whyche made sharpe warre vpon ỹ Scottes. And ỹ moneth of October Perkyn landed in Cornwayle, and assayled the towne of Exceter & other townes But fynally he toke the sayntwary of Beawdely/and after was pardoned of hys lyfe.

Blakheth feilde.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xcvii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xcviii.

Bartholomewe Rede.

wyllyam Purchace Mercer. Anno.xiii.

Thomas wyndowght.

IN this yere vpõ the.xx viii.day of Nouẽber, the sayd Parkyn was brought thorugh the cyty vnto the Towre, & there left as prysoner. And with hym a tall yemã somtyme sergeaũt ferrour to the kyng/ whych ferrour & one named Edwarde, were shortely after put to deth at tibourn. Upon saynte Nycholas daye was a proclamacyõ made thorugh ỹ cytye, of a peas bytwene the realmes of England & Scotland for terme of both kynges lyues. And in December a carpenter called Godfrey, toke downe the wedercok of Poulys steple & set it vp agayne. And this yere in Crystmas weke was a part of the kinges palayes of Rychemonde brent And this yere vppon the. xx. daye of Juny, the forenamed Parkin beyng at large in the kynges court, went secretely awaye/and lastly went to the fader of Spon. And after the second pardon to hym by the kynge graunted, he was shewed at westmynster & in Chepps syde, with moch wonderment/and fynally had to the Towre and there keped.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xcviii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xcix.

Thomas Bradbery.

Syr Joñ Perryuale. Anno.xiiii.

Stephyn Jenyns.

In thys

IN thys yere vpō the .xxv. daye of Octobre, came my lord prince through ꝑ cyte wyth an honorable cōpany toward westmynster. And vpon shroue tuysdaye was put in execucio at saynt Thomas watrynge .x. trepelyng of .xx. yeres of age/whych had auaūced hym selfe to be the sonne & heyre to the erle of warwykes lan-

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. xciv.

Jamys wylforde.

Nycholas Alwyn.

des, & was the sonne of a cordyner of Londō. And thys yere mayster Johñ Tate alderma begā ꝑ new edefynge of saynt Anthonies church. And this yere vpō the .xvi. day of July beynge sonday & vpō the sonday folowyng, stode .xii. heretykes at Poules croslle shrynes wyth fagottes.

Anno dñi. M. v. C.

Rychard Bzond.

IN this yere the .xvi. day of Nouēber, was areyned in ꝑ whyte halle at westmynster the forenamed Parkyn & .iii. other. The whych Parkyn and one Johñ Swatyr were put shortly after in execucio at Tybourne. And soone after was the erle of warwyke put to deth at the towre hylle/& one Blewet & Attwood at Tybourne. And thys yere in May the kyng & the quene sayled to Calays. And thys yere was Babram in Northfolke brēt. And in July was an olde heretyke brēt in Smythfelde. And thys yere was a great deth in Londō/whereof died ouer .xx. M. of all ages. And this yere dyed doctour Morton cardynall and chaunceler of Englande in the moneth of October.

Anno dñi. M. v. C. i.

Johñ Hawys.

wyllyam Kempyngton.

Anno .xvi.

wyllyam Stede.

IN this yere the .xvi. daye of Decēber, in the nyght was an hydous thūder. And this yere was the name of the kyngs palays of Whene chaūged, & called after ꝑ day Richemōt. And this yere in August depar ted secretly out of this lāde, the duke of Suffolke. And the .xiii. daye of October lāded at Plymmouth Katerin doughter of ꝑ kyng of Spayn. And thys yere was kynglshed by mayster Tate the church of saynt Anthony.

Anno domini. M. v. C. ii.

Syr Laurence Aylemer.

Anno .xvii.

Henry Hede.

IN this yere began the mayre & hys bretherne to ryde to the barge & other places. Upō lait Crēe waldes day, was my lord prince mayed to the kyng of Spaynes doughter. And this season the duke of Buk kyngham wyth other was chefe chalēgeour, at a royall iustyce & turney holde in the palays of westmynster. And thys yere came a greate ambassade out of Scotlād/by reason wher of cōclusion of mayage was made betwene the king of Scottes & dame Margarete eldest doughter to oure souerayne lord. Also thys yere was an exceadyng great fysshe taken nere

Syr. iiii. vnto

vnto Maynbourgh. And in Marche ſyr wyllyam of Deuyuſhyre, ſyr Jamys Tyrell, & his eldeſt ſon, & one named welborne, were areſted for treaſon. And in Aprill folowyng dyed ꝑ noble prynce Arthur in the towne of Ludlow. And vpō ꝑ laſt day of Aprill were ſet vpō ꝑ pyllory.ii.pōgmen, for defampyng of ꝑ kynges coūſayll/ and there erys cut of. Alſo aboute thys tyme ꝑ gray freyers were cōpelled to take theyr old habit ruſſet, as ꝑ ſhepe doth dye it. And the.vi. day of Maye Jamys Tyrell & ſyr Johñ wyndhā knyght, were beheded at ꝑ towre hyl And a ſhyppmā for the ſame treaſon was the ſame day drawē to tyborne & there hāged & quartered. And ſoone after a purſeuaūt named Curſon, & a yoman called Mathew Jonys, were put in execucīō at Guyuys/ & all was for aydyng of ſyr Edmōd De la pool. Alſo thys yere about mydſomer was take a felowe whych hadde renewed many of Robi hodes pageātes/ which named him ſelfe Grenelef. And this yere begā the new werke of ꝑ houſes offyce wythin the Guyldhall of London. And in the ende of October, was proclaymed a peas betwene the king & the archeduke of Burgoyne. And ꝑ ſonday before ſaint Symōd & Jude was ſhewed a bull/ by vertue wherof were denoūced at Poules croſſe as accurſed, ſyr Edmōd de la pool late duke of Suffolke ſyr Roberte Curſon knyght, & .v. other perſones. And all ſuch as ayded any of thē agaī ꝑ king.

Anno domini. M.v.C.ii.

Goldſmyth.

Bartholmew Rede.

Anno domini. M.v.C.iii.

Henry Kebyll.

Anno.xviii.

Nycholas Aynys.

IN this yere begā the new werk of the kynges chapell at weſtmynſter. And vpō the.xi. daye of February, dyed quene Elizabeth within the towre lieng in chyldbed. And vpō the ſyrſt ſonday of lēt, was ſolemply accurſed at Poules croſſe wyth bel & candell, ſyr Edmōd de la pool, ſyr Robert Curſon & other, & all ꝑ thē ayded agayn the kyng. And in thēde of the moneth of marche, was ꝑ pryour of ꝑ Charterhous at Shene ſinfully murdered wyth an other mūk of the ſame houſe, by ſynyſter meanes of a munk of the ſame place named Goodwyne & other miſcheuous ꝑſones. And this yere the feliſſhyp of taylours of Lōdon purchaſed a graūt of the king to be called marchaut taylours. And ꝑ viii. day of Auguſt, was the kynge of Scottes maried vnto ꝑ eldeſt doughter of ꝑ kyng. Alſo in July were atteyned at the Guyldhall Oliuer ſaynte Johñ, Robert Simpſon, wellyſhorſ̄ beforē named, Pool bayly of Thorok & .iiii. other all beyng caſt for treaſon, wherof the ſayde Oliuer and Pool wyth twoo ſhyppemen were putte in execucion at Tyborne, and the other were pardoned.

Anno dñi. M.v.C.iii.

Draper.

Syr wyllyam Capell.

Anno dñi. M.v.C.iiii.

Chriſtoffer Hawys.

Robert watteꝰ.

Thomas Granger.

Anno.xix.

IN thys yere the.xiii. day of Nouēber in the palays of ꝑ archebyſſhop of Cāūterbury at Lābethyth was holde the ſergeāūtes feeſt. And the.xv. day of Nouēber in the begynnyng of ꝑ nyght, was a dredeful fyre vpō the northende of Londō brydge. And vppō the.vii. daye of January

were

were certeyne houses cõsumed wyth fyre agayn sayne Botulphis churche in Thamys strete. Upõ the .xv. day of January, begã a parliamẽt at west mynster. And ỹ .xxvii. day of March, was an house bỹrẽt agayn sayne Martyns le graũt. And the same day was hurt done wyth fyre in the paryshe of sayne Peters the porze. And in the forenamed parlyamẽt was ordeyned a new coyne of syluer as grotes, half grotes, & shyllynges with half faces. And in the forsayde parlyamẽte was graunted to the kynge an ayde of xxxvi. thousand. li. And a correccyon was dyuysed for clipped grotes.

Anno domini. M. v. C. iiii. Anno domini. M. v. C. v.

Grocer. Roger Achylley.

Johñ wyngar. Anno. xx.

wyllyam Browne.

IN thys yere the eytezyns of Lõdon graũted to the kyng. v. M marke for confermacyõ of theyr lyberties. wherof a. M. marke was payde in hãde, & .iiii. M. mark in. iiii. peres next ensuyng. Upõ sat Georges day ỹ kyng went in procession in Poules church/ where was shewed a legge of sayne George closed in syluer, whych was newly sent to the kyng. And vpõ the. xv. day of Aprill, was a money maker one of the coyners of the towze drawẽ to tyborne, & there hanged. And in ỹ later ende of thys yere, came the thyrde cappe of maynteynaunce from the pope.

Anno domini. M. v. C. v. Anno domini. M. v. C. vi.

Fyshemonger. Rycharde Shorze.

Thomas kneyswozth Anno. xxi.

Roger Grove.

THys yere vppõ. xii. euyn, the kinges chãber at Rychemoũt was bỹrẽt. And vpõ the euyn of sayne Maury begã an hydious wind/ which endured vppõ. xi. dayes folowynge more or lasse, in cõtynuall blowyng/ by meane whereof the wedercok of Poules was blowẽ downe, & moche other harme done. And by force of thys tempest the archeduke of Burgoyne was dryuẽ to lãde in the west coũtre. And vpõ the second sonday of lẽt stood at Poules crosse the pryour of sayne Oloes. & .v. other heretykes. And in ỹ ende of ỹ moneth of March syr Edmõd de la pool was conueyed through the citie vnto the towze, and there left as prysoner. And in Maye moneth was the lord of Burgeueny cõmytteth to the towze, for a certayn displeasure whych cõcerned no treason. Thys yere a new bylded galerey fyll in the nyght at Rychemoũt. And thys yere in the ende of July was a gracyous myracle shewed by oure Lady image of Barkyng, by a mayden chylde that a carte laden wyth stone yode ouer.

Anno domini. M. v. C. vi. Anno domini. M. v. C. vii.

mercer. wyllyam Coppynger.

Syr Rychard Haddon. Thomas Johñson. Anno. xxii.

wyllyam Fyts wyllyam.

IN thys yere aboute Crystmas was the bakers house in warwyke lane bỹrẽt. And thys yere was a wonderfull lealy & softe wynter, without stormys or frostes. And this yere the kyng of hys goodnesse delyuered oute

out of all prysons in Lõdõ, as many prysoners as laye for .xl.li. & vnder. And this yere was Thomas Kneslworth late mayer & hys .ii. shyrefes condẽpned to the kyng in great sommes of money/ouer paynfull prysonement by theym in the marshalsy sustcyned.

Anno domini.M.v.C.vii. mercer.
wyllyam Browne.

Anno domini.M.v.C. viii.
wyllyam Butler.
Anno.xviii.

Johñ Kyrkby.

THys yere in the ende of Aprill, dyed the sayd wyllyam Brow ne / and for hym was immedyatly chosen syr Laurence Aylemer, for the residue of that yere/

Anno supradicto. Draper.
Syr Laurence Aylemer.

Anno supradicto.
wyllyam Butler.
Anno predicto.

Johñ Kyrkby.

IN thys yere vpon the last daye of Juny, was an house in Southwarke nere vnto the brydge consumed wyth fyre. And thys yere was syr wyllyam Capell agayne put in veracyon, by sute of the kynge, for thynges done by hym in the tyme of hys mayralte.

Anno dñi.M.v.C.viii. Taylleour.
Stephyn Jenyns.

Anno dñi.M.v.C.ix.
Thomas Ermew.
Anno.xviiii.

Rychard Smyth.

IN the begynnyng of the mayres tyme, syr wyllyam Capell after his prysonement in the coũtour & shyrefes house, was by the kynges counsayll commaũded to the towre/ where he remayned tyll the kynge dyed / & shortly after was delyuered wyth many other. And in lykewyse was syr Laurẽce Aylemer dalt with/ & cõmytted to the warde or house of Rychard Smyth shyrfe / & there remayned as prisoner by ỹ space aboue sayd. Thys yere vppõ the saterdaye next before saynt Georges day in the nyght, whych saterdaye was the .xxi. daye of Aprill, dyed the kynge oure soueraygne lorde at hys manour of Rychemount/ vpon whose soule and all chrysten Jesu haue mercy. Amen.

And so thys forsayd noble prince reygned .xxiii. yeres and. vii. monethes, and one daye therof lakkynge,

THys magnyfycent & excellent prynce Kẽry the. viii. thus payed to deth his dette of nature as before is sayd. Of whome suffycient laude & prayse cannat be put in wrytyng, cõsyderyng ỹ cõtynuall peace & trãquylete whyche he kept thys his lande & comons in/ wyth also the subdurnge of hys outwarde enymyes, of the realmes of Fraunce & Scotland by hys greate polycy & wysedome, more thã by shedyng of cristẽ bloode or cruell warre. And euer ruled so myghtly hys subgectes & mynystred to them suche iustyce, ỹ nat allonely they loued and drad hym/ but all crysten prynces herynge of hys glorrous fame, were desyrous to haue wyth hym amyte & allyaunce

allyaunce. And for that he in all tẽporall polycies & prouisions exceded all prynces by hys tyme reygnynge/ dyuers popes, as Alexander the syxte, Pius the.iii, & Julius the.ii. nowe beynge pope, by theyr tymes eyther of the sunderly wyth auctoryte & cõsent of theyr spyrytuall & deuyne coũsayll, elected & chase thys excellente prynce, and admytted hym for chyefe defensour of Chrystes church, before all other crysten prynces. And for a confirmacio of the same/ sente vnto thys inuyncibyll prince by.iii. sundry famous ambassades, thre swerdes with.iii. cappes of mayntenaunce.

what myght I wryte of the stedfaste contynẽcy, great iustyce, & mercyfull dealyng of thys prynce. what myght I report of hys excellẽte wysedome & moste sugred eloquence, or of hys inmouable pacience & wonderfull dysscressyon. Or what shuld I tell of his most beautyfull byldynges, or excedyng charges of manifest reperacios and ouer all thys of hys excedynge treasoure & rychesse innumerabyll. But as who wolde saye, to consider in order all his notabyll actes, which wolde aske a lõge tract of tyme, with also the lyberall & somptuous endowemẽt of the monastery of westmynster & other, to wryte/ I myghte conclude þ hys actes passed all the noble actes of hys noble pgenytours syne the conquest/ and may moste cõgruly aboue all erthly prynces, be lykened vnto Salamõ kyng of þ Israelytes and be called the seconde Salomon for hys great sapience & actes by him done hys tyme executed. All whyche premysses tenderly considered, every naturall Englysshmã now lyuyng hath cause & ought deuoutly to pray for the soule of this moste excellent prynce Henry the.vii, that he maye attayne that celestyall mansiõ, whych he and all trew crysten soules are enheritours vnto/ the which god hym graunt. Amen.

And the rather because of the excellẽt vertuous bryngyng and lernynge vnto vs by goddes ayde and prouydyon, of our moste gracyous and moste dradd souerayngne lord Henry þ viii. of that name, as ryghtfull enheritour vnto the.ii. crownes of Englande and of Fraunce. The whyche began hys moste gracyous reygne þ xxii. day of Aprylł, in the yere of oure lord god. M.v.C. and.ix.



Eury the.viii. of that name and second sonne of the forenamed excellente prynce Henry the seuith began his moste gracyous reygn ouer the realme of Englande the.xxii. daye of Aprylł, in the yere of our lord god M.v.C. and.ix. To whome by all honour, reuerẽce, & ioyfull contynaũce of prosperous reygn, to the pleasure of god & weale of thys hys realme. Amen.

Thus endeth Fabyans cronycle. Prynted by.w. Rastell, & fynysshed the laste daye of December, in the yere of our lorde. M.v. C. and. xxxiii.

CVM PRIVILEGIO.